



Rise of the Demon God

Demonic_angel

Table of Contents

[Chapter 1 - 1 : Beginning](#)

[Chapter 2 - 2 : Deadly Fight](#)

[Chapter 3 - 3 : Dead Or Alive?](#)

[Chapter 4 - 4 : A Dragon Is Always Superior](#)

[Chapter 5 - 5 : Going For A Walk](#)

[Chapter 6 - 6 : First Fight](#)

[Chapter 7 - 7 : Seeing A Beauty](#)

[Chapter 8 - 8 : First Meeting](#)

[Chapter 9 - 9 : Together](#)

[Chapter 10 - 10: Daughter In Law?](#)

[Chapter 11 - 11: In Danger](#)

[Chapter 12 - 12 : Caught In A Scheme](#)

[Chapter 13 - 13 : Perfect Plan?](#)

[Chapter 14 - 14 : Heavenly Cliff](#)

[Chapter 15 - 15 : A Ring?](#)

[Chapter 16 - 16 : Inside The Ring](#)

[Chapter 17 - 17 : A Dream?](#)

[Chapter 18 - 18 : Breakthrough To Spirit Establishment](#)

[Chapter 19 - 19: Heavenly Demon Wings](#)

[Chapter 20 - 20 : Chaos In Dragon City](#)

[Chapter 21 - 21 : Mana Crystal](#)

[Chapter 22 - 22 : Martial Soul](#)

[Chapter 23 - 23 : Meeting Tu Yue](#)

[Chapter 24 - 24 : Another Dream?](#)

[Chapter 25 - 25 : Rapid Breakthroughs](#)

[Chapter 26 - 26: Getting Back](#)

[Chapter 27 - 27 : Unknown Cultivation?](#)

[Chapter 28 - 28: Answering Without Answering](#)

[Chapter 29 - 29 : First Killing](#)

[Chapter 30 - 30 : Entering The Formation](#)

[Chapter 31 - 31: 5th Level](#)

[Chapter 32 - 32: Fighting 10th Stage Spirit Beast](#)

[Chapter 33 - 33: King's Sword](#)

[Chapter 34 - 34: From The Royal Clan?](#)

[Chapter 35 - 35: Entering Black Forest](#)

[Chapter 36 - 36: Meeting The Royals](#)

[Chapter 37 - 37: Bonfire](#)

[Chapter 38 - 38: Massacre](#)

[Chapter 39 - 39: Courting Death](#)

[Chapter 40 - 40: Big Mistake](#)

[Chapter 41 - 41: Using The King's Sword](#)

[Chapter 42 - 42: Mantis Stalks Cicada](#)

[Chapter 43 - 43: Slaughtering Long Su](#)

[Chapter 44 - 44: Treasure](#)

[Chapter 45 - 45: Mask Of Mischief](#)

[Chapter 46 - 46 : Reason](#)

[Chapter 47 - 47: What To Do](#)

[Chapter 48 - 48: Assaulted By A Beauty\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 49 - 49 : Mysterious Void](#)

[Chapter 50 - 50: Bloodline Temple, Guiding Spirit](#)

[Chapter 51 - 51 : Strange World](#)

[Chapter 52 - 52: Human... Legend?](#)

[Chapter 53 - 53: Fighting Another Life Form](#)

[Chapter 54 - 54: Monsters?](#)

[Chapter 55 - 55: Trouble In Paradise](#)

[Chapter 56 - 56: Two Hawks With One Arrow](#)

[Chapter 57 - 57: Law Of Slaughter](#)

[Chapter 58 - 58 : Impossible Challenge](#)

[Chapter 59 - 59: Law Of Wood Or Law Of Slaughter](#)

[Chapter 60 - 60: First Meeting](#)

[Chapter 61 - 61: What 's In The Egg](#)

[Chapter 62 - 62: Having A Treasure Trove](#)

[Chapter 63 - 63: Riding\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 64 - 64: Meeting The Queen](#)

[Chapter 65 - 65: Farewell](#)

[Chapter 66 - 66 : Let's Steal It](#)

[Chapter 67 - 67:Commencing Plan A](#)

[Chapter 68 - 68: Crazy Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 69 - 69 : Monster City](#)

[Chapter 70 - 70 : Monster Emperor](#)

[Chapter 71 - 71: The Decision](#)

[Chapter 72 - 72: Red Core Realm](#)

[Chapter 73 - 73: Caught?](#)

[Chapter 74 - 74 : All Of You Forced My Hand](#)

[Chapter 75 - 75 : Kill](#)

[Chapter 76 - 76: Destroying](#)

[Chapter 77 - 77: Hunting](#)

[Chapter 78 - 78: War](#)

[Chapter 79 - 79:It's Not The Law Of Slaughter](#)

[Chapter 80 - 80 : Bad News](#)

[Chapter 81 - 81: Infinite Space](#)

[Chapter 82 - 82:Asking For Help](#)

[Chapter 83 - 83: Strange Barrier](#)

[Chapter 84 - 84: I'm Not Sharing](#)

[Chapter 85 - 85: The War Begins](#)

[Chapter 86 - 86: If You Want A Fight](#)

[Chapter 87 - 87: Congratulations](#)

[Chapter 88 - 88: Law Seed](#)

[Chapter 89 - 89: Learning Another Law](#)

[Chapter 90 - 90: Blood And Destruction](#)

[Chapter 91 - 91: You're Finally Here](#)

[Chapter 92 - 92: Far Worse Than A Monster](#)

[Chapter 93 - 93: Law Of Wood](#)

[Chapter 94 - 94: Mysterious Killing Intent](#)

[Chapter 95 - 95: You Will All Die For Your Sin](#)

[Chapter 96 - 96: Can You Hurry](#)

[Chapter 97 - 97:One More To Go](#)

[Chapter 98 - 98:Promises Are Made To Be Broken](#)

[Chapter 99 - 99: Escaped](#)

[Chapter 100 - 100: That's Not For Me To Worry About](#)

[Chapter 101 - 101: I Just Want To Leave](#)

[Chapter 102 - 102: Reason](#)

[Chapter 103 - 103: They Were Real](#)

[Chapter 104 - 104: Farewell](#)

[Chapter 105 - Chapter 105: Rewards](#)

[Chapter 106 - 106: Choices](#)

[Chapter 107 - 107: Second Reward](#)

[Chapter 108 - 108: Last Reward](#)

[Chapter 109 - 109: Lucky Day?](#)

[Chapter 110 - 110: Are You Doubting Me?](#)

[Chapter 111 - 111: Even If You Killed Him](#)

[Chapter 112 - 112: What Happened In The Last Three Years?](#)

[Chapter 113 - 113: Selection](#)

[Chapter 114 - 114: Engagement](#)

[Chapter 115 - 115: Establishing A Contract](#)

[Chapter 116 - 116: A Son Like That](#)

[Chapter 117 - 117: For You](#)

[Chapter 118 - 118: Can I Touch It? \(*\)](#)

[Chapter 119 - 119: Guests Arrive](#)

[Chapter 120 - 120: Qin Ruo](#)

[Chapter 121 - 121: Royal Clan](#)

[Chapter 122 - 122: Spar](#)

[Chapter 123 - 123: Showing One's Prowess](#)

[Chapter 124 - 124: Against The Prince](#)

[Chapter 125 - 125: Your Turn](#)

[Chapter 126 - 126:What's Your Real Cultivation?](#)

[Chapter 127 - 127: Learning](#)

[Chapter 128 - 128: Demon Monarch](#)

[Chapter 129 - 129: I'll Tell Her Myself](#)

[Chapter 130 - 130: Journey](#)

[Chapter 131 - 131: Desire\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 132 - 132:You Took Mine! I'll Take Yours\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 133 - 133: Third Floor Of Skill Hall](#)

[Chapter 134 - 134: Richest Young Master](#)

[Chapter 135 - 135: Leaving Dragon City](#)

[Chapter 136 - 136: The Heart Of Evil](#)

[Chapter 137 - 137: Thief](#)

[Chapter 138 - 138: Slaughter](#)

[Chapter 139 - 139: I'll Kill Them All](#)

[Chapter 140 - 140: Familiar](#)

[Chapter 141 - 141: That Could Be My Family](#)

[Chapter 142 - 142: 5th Stage Earth Realm](#)

[Chapter 143 - 143:I Need To Buy It](#)

[Chapter 144 - 144: I Have Kids Of My Own](#)

[Chapter 145 - 145: Troublesome Kid](#)

[Chapter 146 - 146: I'm The One Being Disrespectful?](#)

[Chapter 147 - 147: Destroying Saintly Reputation](#)

[Chapter 148 - 148: Alchemist Rank](#)

[Chapter 149 - 149: Are You Stupid?](#)

[Chapter 150 - 150:Duan Clan](#)

[Chapter 151 - 151:Divine Oracle Physique](#)

[Chapter 152 - 152: Introductions](#)

[Chapter 153 - 153: The Promise](#)

[Chapter 154 - 154: My Baby](#)

[Chapter 155 - 155: History Is Repeating](#)

[Chapter 156 - 156: Disappear Forever](#)

[Chapter 157 - 157: Seer Of Destiny](#)

[Chapter 158 - 158: Exposed](#)

[Chapter 159 - 159:Vision](#)

[Chapter 160 - 160:I Can't Help You](#)

[Chapter 161 - Ch 161. I Don't Lose Control Around Her](#)

[Chapter 162 - 162: A Dream Of The Beginning](#)

[Chapter 163 - 163: Cruel](#)

[Chapter 164 - 164: Merciless](#)

[Chapter 165 - 165: You Can't Leave](#)

[Chapter 166 - 166: Another Law](#)

[Chapter 167 - 167: Xun's Confession](#)

[Chapter 168 - 168: Family Against Family](#)

[Chapter 169 - 169: Against Tian Shen](#)

[Chapter 170 - 170: Cruel Pill](#)

[Chapter 171 - 171: Fortune Teller](#)

[Chapter 172 - 172: Ling](#)

[Chapter 173 - 173: Misunderstanding](#)

[Chapter 174 - 174: A Kiss](#)

[Chapter 175 - 175: Brutal Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 176 - 176: The Egg Hatches](#)

[Chapter 177 - 177: Offer](#)

[Chapter 178 - 178: Practicing Alchemy](#)

[Chapter 179 - 179: Bad Deeds Of Long Chen](#)

[Chapter 180 - 180: Such Enmity](#)

[Chapter 181 - 181: Against The Earth](#)

[Chapter 182 - 182: Is He Dead?](#)

[Chapter 183 - 183: End Of The Road](#)

[Chapter 184 - 184: Betrayal?](#)

[Chapter 185 - 185: Rare Ability](#)

[Chapter 186 - 186: Together](#)

[Chapter 187 - 187: Love In A Carriage\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 188 - 188: Pure Heart](#)

[Chapter 189 - 189: A Candidate](#)

[Chapter 190 - 190: A Bad Dream?](#)

[Chapter 191 - 191: Blocked Path](#)

[Chapter 192 - 192: Stronger Than Him](#)

[Chapter 193 - 193: Charmed By Him?](#)

[Chapter 194 - 194: Killer Of Darkness](#)

[Chapter 195 - 195: Terror](#)

[Chapter 196 - 196: Hunter](#)

[Chapter 197 - 197: Awaken](#)

[Chapter 198 - 198: Fighting The Devil Hunter](#)

[Chapter 199 - 199: Taming Devil Hunter](#)

[Chapter 200 - 200: Missing Little Snow](#)

[Chapter 201 - 201: Beast Region](#)

[Chapter 202 - 202: Xuan Kingdom](#)

[Chapter 203 - 203: Attacking The Yu Clan](#)

[Chapter 204 - 204: If Only](#)

[Chapter 205 - 205: Potential](#)

[Chapter 206 - 206: Once In A Millennia Genius](#)

[Chapter 207 - 207: Impossible!](#)

[Chapter 208 - 208: Invitation](#)

[Chapter 209 - 209: Second Stage](#)

[Chapter 210 - 210: You Can't Fool Me](#)

[Chapter 211 - 211: Wind Essence](#)

[Chapter 212 - 212: Total Control](#)

[Chapter 213 - 213: Long Jun](#)

[Chapter 214 - 214: They Took My Father?](#)

[Chapter 215 - 215: Inheritance Of Saint King Xianwu](#)

[Chapter 216 - 216: Free Pass](#)

[Chapter 217 - 217: Is There A Rule?](#)

[Chapter 218 - 218: Flame Essence](#)

[Chapter 219 - 219: Too Brutal](#)

[Chapter 220 - 220: What If I Accidentally](#)

[Chapter 221 - 221: Leave My Disciple Immediately](#)

[Chapter 222 - 222: Trapped?](#)

[Chapter 223 - 223: Isn't It Too Fast?](#)

[Chapter 224 - 224: I Was Late](#)

[Chapter 225 - 225: Unfilial Son](#)

[Chapter 226 - 226: New World](#)

[Chapter 227 - 227: Leaving](#)

[Chapter 228 - 228: Caught In The Act\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 229 - 229: Strange Village](#)

[Chapter 230 - 230: Double Sacrifice](#)

[Chapter 231 - 231: Not A Saint](#)

[Chapter 232 - 232: Life Devouring Insect](#)

[Chapter 233 - 233:I Lied](#)

[Chapter 234 - 234: Taming Another One](#)

[Chapter 235 - 235: You Will Become The Herb](#)

[Chapter 236 - 236:Thunder Giant Sect?](#)

[Chapter 237 - 237: Law Of Fire](#)

[Chapter 238 - 238: Strange Cauldron](#)

[Chapter 239 - 239:A Stone?](#)

[Chapter 240 - 240: Change Of Plans](#)

[Chapter 241 - 241: Man From The Sky](#)

[Chapter 242 - 242: Alchemy](#)

[Chapter 243 - 243: Plan For The Night](#)

[Chapter 244 - 244: Are You Sure? \(*\)](#)

[Chapter 245 - 245: You Are Ready\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 246 - 246: Identity](#)

[Chapter 247 - 247: Companion?](#)

[Chapter 248 - 248: Soul Devouring Wolf](#)

[Chapter 249 - 249: Master](#)

[Chapter 250 - 250: Nine Rivers Transfusion](#)

[Chapter 251 - 251: Attack On The Camp](#)

[Chapter 252 - 252: I Was Wrong](#)

[Chapter 253 - 253: Ji Shan's Strength](#)

[Chapter 254 - 254: I Thought You Would Join](#)

[Chapter 255 - 255: Real Target](#)

[Chapter 256 - 256: Bad Times Are Ahead](#)

[Chapter 257 - 257: Searching For God Beast](#)

[Chapter 258 - 258: Test?](#)

[Chapter 259 - 259: Using Orion](#)

[Chapter 260 - 260: Wives](#)

[Chapter 261 - 261: Beast Forest](#)

[Chapter 262 - 262: War Preparation?](#)

[Chapter 263 - 263: Black Robed Men](#)

[Chapter 264 - 264: Dream](#)

[Chapter 265 - 265: Tian Shen's Weakness](#)

[Chapter 266 - 266: Don't Leave](#)

[Chapter 267 - 267: Entering The Forest](#)

[Chapter 268 - 268: New Beast](#)

[Chapter 269 - 269: Facing The Sun Destroying Condor](#)

[Chapter 270 - 270: Battle Continues](#)

[Chapter 271 - 271: Destiny Of Long Chen](#)

[Chapter 272 - 272: Decided To Die](#)

[Chapter 273 - 273: 10th God Beast](#)

[Chapter 274 - 274: Tracking The Beast](#)

[Chapter 275 - 275: Under Attack](#)

[Chapter 276 - 276: Massive Force](#)

[Chapter 277 - 277: I'll Handle The Rest](#)

[Chapter 278 - 278: Killing](#)

[Chapter 279 - 279: Plan](#)

[Chapter 280 - 280: One Against Many](#)

[Chapter 281 - 281: Battle Against A Sky Realm Cultivator.](#)

[Chapter 282 - 282: Deadly Struggle](#)

[Chapter 283 - 283: Long Chen No More](#)

[Chapter 284 - 284: I'm Dead Again?](#)

[Chapter 285 - 285: Kill Him](#)

[Chapter 286 - 286: Not In The Open](#)

[Chapter 287 - 287: Rank](#)

[Chapter 288 - 288: New Badge](#)

[Chapter 289 - 289: Another Law Orb](#)

[Chapter 290 - 290: Bloodline Trial](#)

[Chapter 291 - 291: Mingyu's Reaction](#)

[Chapter 292 - 292: Ranking Battle](#)

[Chapter 293 - 293: Peak Sky Realm?](#)

[Chapter 294 - 294: Law Of Gravity](#)

[Chapter 295 - 295: Cutting The Hand](#)

[Chapter 296 - 296: You Leave Me No Choice](#)

[Chapter 297 - 297: I'll Kill You](#)

[Chapter 298 - 298: Poison](#)

[Chapter 299 - 299: Meeting The Emperor](#)

[Chapter 300 - 300: Meeting At Beast Hall](#)

[Chapter 301 - 301: Demon Of The Sect](#)

[Chapter 302 - 302: Skill Space](#)

[Chapter 303 - 303: Nine Steps Of Xianwu](#)

[Chapter 304 - 304: Mu Zheng](#)

[Chapter 305 - 305: Looking For Orion](#)

[Chapter 306 - 306: Your Father](#)

[Chapter 307 - 307: Real Boss](#)

[Chapter 308 - 308: Cured?](#)

[Chapter 309 - 309: Specialty Of Snake Monarch](#)

[Chapter 310 - 310: Ghost](#)

[Chapter 311 - 311: Crafting](#)

[Chapter 312 - 312: Test](#)

[Chapter 313 - 313: Rankings](#)

[Chapter 314 - 314: Kill Her](#)

[Chapter 315 - 315: Real Demon](#)

[Chapter 316 - 316: Finding Law Orb](#)

[Chapter 317 - 317: Glimpse Of The Dark Future?](#)

[Chapter 318 - 318: Clash With Mu Zheng](#)

[Chapter 319 - 319: Martial Soul Awakens!](#)

[Chapter 320 - 320: Mission](#)

[Chapter 321 - 321: Failed To See Mount Tai](#)

[Chapter 322 - 322: Best Skill](#)

[Chapter 323 - 323: Kill Him](#)

[Chapter 324 - 324: Chasing Strength](#)

[Chapter 325 - 325: Darkness](#)

[Chapter 326 - 326: Law Seed](#)

[Chapter 327 - 327: Complexities](#)

[Chapter 328 - 328: Forcing The Emperor](#)

[Chapter 329 - 329: Assassination Attempt](#)

[Chapter 330 - 330: Demon Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 331 - 331: Crashing The Prince's Party](#)

[Chapter 332 - 332: Power Of Heart Devouring Insect](#)

[Chapter 333 - 333: Beast Hall Plan?](#)

[Chapter 334 - 334: Heavenly Lotus](#)

[Chapter 335 - 335: Trapped In Darkness?](#)

[Chapter 336 - 336: Caught](#)

[Chapter 337 - 337: He Lied To Me](#)

[Chapter 338 - 338: Exposing](#)

[Chapter 339 - 339: Infiltrating The Palace](#)

[Chapter 340 - 340: Kill](#)

[Chapter 341 - 341: Dealing With The Crown Prince](#)

[Chapter 342 - 342: Against The King](#)

[Chapter 343 - 343: Nine Swords Destruction](#)

[Chapter 344 - 344: Time To Die](#)

[Chapter 345 - 345: Wrong Place At The Wrong Time](#)

[Chapter 346 - 346: Harmful](#)

[Chapter 347 - 347: Blood Essence](#)

[Chapter 348 - 348: Against Peak Sky Realm](#)

[Chapter 349 - 349: Orion](#)

[Chapter 350 - 350: Meeting In Beast Region](#)

[Chapter 351 - 351: Arrogance](#)

[Chapter 352 - 352: He's Master Chen?](#)

[Chapter 353 - 353: Selection](#)

[Chapter 354 - 354: Divine Heaven Sect](#)

[Chapter 355 - 355: The Dead Awakens\(I\)](#)

[Chapter 356 - 356: Secrets Of The Token](#)

[Chapter 357 - 357: Meng Arrives, Disaster?](#)

[Chapter 358 - 358: Long Chen Returns](#)

[Chapter 359 - 359: Long Chen Escaped?](#)

[Chapter 360 - 360: Reunion](#)

[Chapter 361 - 361: Night Of Desire\(*\)](#)

[Chapter 362 - 362: Instant Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 363 - 363: The One That Took All The Lives Universe](#)

[Chapter 364 - 364: Marriage](#)

[Chapter 365 - 365: Devil Worshipping](#)

[Chapter 366 - 366: It's Not Love](#)

[Chapter 367 - 367: Kidnap](#)

[Chapter 368 - 368: That Trash Was Your Brother?](#)

[Chapter 369 - 369: Running Away](#)

[Chapter 370 - 370: Meeting Meng](#)

[Chapter 371 - 371: Inside The Box](#)

[Chapter 372 - 372: Call Him Out!](#)

[Chapter 373 - 373: Scheme Against Me!](#)

[Chapter 374 - 374: Fight Against The Head Disciple](#)

[Chapter 375 - 375: Fighting With Beasts](#)

[Chapter 376 - 376: Transformation](#)

[Chapter 377 - 377: Did Not Lose](#)

[Chapter 378 - 378: Disappeared \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 379 - 379: Search](#)

[Chapter 380 - 380: Barrier](#)

[Chapter 381 - 381: Control Yourself](#)

[Chapter 382 - 382: Stairs Of Heaven](#)

[Chapter 383 - 383: Little Brother Chen](#)

[Chapter 384 - 384: Tests](#)

[Chapter 385 - 385: Natural Qi Pond](#)

[Chapter 386 - 386: Herb Garden\(I\)](#)

[Chapter 387 - 387: Unexplored Region](#)

[Chapter 388 - 388: He's Dead](#)

[Chapter 389 - 389: True Demon](#)

[Chapter 390 - 390: Real Treasure](#)

[Chapter 391 - 391: The First Kiss](#)

[Chapter 392 - 392: The Words Of Tian Shen](#)

[Chapter 393 - 393: Spirit](#)

[Chapter 394 - 394: Spirit Weapon](#)

[Chapter 395 - 395: Attacked](#)

[Chapter 396 - 396: Rising To The Top](#)

[Chapter 397 - 397: You Aren't My Son](#)

[Chapter 398 - 398: She's Dead](#)

[Chapter 399 - 399: Secret Of Heaven](#)

[Chapter 400 - 400: Trapped](#)

[Chapter 401 - 401: Heaven Divination](#)

[Chapter 402 - 402: Treasure Hall?](#)

[Chapter 403 - 403: The Tower](#)

[Chapter 404 - 404: We Were Wrong](#)

[Chapter 405 - 405: The Trapped Man](#)

[Chapter 406 - 406: Ancestor](#)

[Chapter 407 - 407: Growth](#)

[Chapter 408 - 408: The Necklace](#)

[Chapter 409 - 409: Gone?](#)

[Chapter 410 - 410: Walking In Air](#)

[Chapter 411 - 411: The Reward](#)

[Chapter 412 - 412: King Versus King](#)

[Chapter 413 - 413: Chu Miao](#)

[Chapter 414 - 414: Death](#)

[Chapter 415 - 415: Stupid](#)

[Chapter 416 - 416: Misunderstood](#)

[Chapter 417 - 417: Little Snow's Strange Behaviour](#)

[Chapter 418 - 418: King God Beast](#)

[Chapter 419 - 419: The Mysterious Song](#)

[Chapter 420 - 420: Skill Hall](#)

[Chapter 421 - 421: Torture Chamber](#)

[Chapter 422 - 422: Something's Happening \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 423 - 423: Impossible To Kill](#)

[Chapter 424 - 424: Earth](#)

[Chapter 425 - 425: I'm Not A Skill](#)

[Chapter 426 - 426: Desert Of Bodies](#)

[Chapter 427 - 427: You All Must Die As Well](#)

[Chapter 428 - 428: I Killed Them](#)

[Chapter 429 - 429: Most Of Them](#)

[Chapter 430 - 430: Blood Rain](#)

[Chapter 431 - 431: Using Flute Of War](#)

[Chapter 432 - 432: Effects?](#)

[Chapter 433 - 433: Lie](#)

[Chapter 434 - 434: Give Up](#)

[Chapter 435 - 435: Verdict](#)

[Chapter 436 - 436: Another Plan](#)

[Chapter 437 - 437: Trying Again](#)

[Chapter 438 - 438: Mission Successful](#)

[Chapter 439 - 439: Slaughter Aura](#)

[Chapter 440 - 440: Soul](#)

[Chapter 441 - 441: Future \(V.I\)](#)

[Chapter 442 - 442: Choice](#)

[Chapter 443 - 443: Xia](#)

[Chapter 444 - 444: Settling Scores](#)

[Chapter 445 - 445: Murder](#)

[Chapter 446 - 446: Come With Me](#)

[Chapter 447 - 447: Blame](#)

[Chapter 448 - 448: Leaked?](#)

[Chapter 449 - 449: Your Family Will Die](#)

[Chapter 450 - 450: Discovered \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 451 - 451: Race Against Time \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 452 - 452: Out Of Control](#)

[Chapter 453 - 453: Toying](#)

[Chapter 454 - 454: False Accusations](#)

[Chapter 455 - 455: Wrong](#)

[Chapter 456 - 456: Caught](#)

[Chapter 457 - 457: Arrival](#)

[Chapter 458 - 458: Battle](#)

[Chapter 459 - 459: Dark Sacrifice \(Part 1\)](#)

[Chapter 460 - 460: Dark Sacrifice \(Part 2\)](#)

[Chapter 461 - 461: Carnage](#)

[Chapter 462 - 462: Slaughter Aura](#)

[Chapter 463 - 463: Another Wife](#)

[Chapter 464 - 464: Joining Others](#)

[Chapter 465 - 465: Four Women?](#)

[Chapter 466 - 466: Fake World](#)

[Chapter 467 - 467: Request Of The Snake Monarch](#)

[Chapter 468 - 468: Found Them?](#)

[Chapter 469 - 469: Xue Ying](#)

[Chapter 470 - 470: Meeting The Holder Of 20th Token](#)

[Chapter 471 - 471: A Name I Will Never Forget](#)

[Chapter 472 - 472: The Real Truth \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 473 - 473: Envoy](#)

[Chapter 474 - 474: Ling's Condition](#)

[Chapter 475 - 475: Xia's Question](#)

[Chapter 476 - 476: The Port City](#)

[Chapter 477 - 477: Xu Shen](#)

[Chapter 478 - 478: Betting](#)

[Chapter 479 - 479: Lucky](#)

[Chapter 480 - 480: Victory?](#)

[Chapter 481 - 481: Unorthodox Master Mu](#)

[Chapter 482 - 482: Cheating?](#)

[Chapter 483 - 483: Tricking Mu Fan](#)

[Chapter 484 - 484: Special Physique](#)

[Chapter 485 - 485: Rich](#)

[Chapter 486 - 486: I Was Defeated](#)

[Chapter 487 - 487: Secret Master](#)

[Chapter 488 - 488: Fear](#)

[Chapter 489 - 489: From The Past Life](#)

[Chapter 490 - 490: Effects Taking Place](#)

[Chapter 491 - 491: Attack Of The Sea Monster](#)

[Chapter 492 - 492: Lang Jing's Father](#)

[Chapter 493 - 493: The Choice](#)

[Chapter 494 - 494: Pirates](#)

[Chapter 495 - 495: Infiltration](#)

[Chapter 496 - 496: Pirate King](#)

[Chapter 497 - 497: Little Elder](#)

[Chapter 498 - 498: Xu Aoxin](#)

[Chapter 499 - 499: Hiding](#)

Chapter 500 - 500: Exposed

Chapter 1 - 1 : Beginning

'Is this it? Is this how my life ends?'

That was the first thought that came to Long Chen's mind. That day was supposed to be a day of celebration for him.

It was his 19th birthday and after much hesitation; he had finally gathered up enough courage to propose to his childhood friend. A proposal, to which Lin Yin responded in kind and accepted; the feelings they had for each other were mutual. The girl he had loved for such a long time had finally become his girlfriend.

Unfortunately, things don't always go the way we want them to be.

On the way home, a man ran towards him. Catching up from behind that man was a middle-aged woman screaming 'THIEF' at the top of her lungs.

Long Chen was able to tell that the man running away was a thief. He wanted to step aside and let the guy pass through to save himself some trouble, but his conscience wouldn't let him do so. When he saw the woman's sad and tearful expression, running after the thief, his heart grew soft.

Long Chen decided to try to stop the thief by blocking his way. But things didn't go as he planned. He was young, naive, and rather inexperienced. As soon as he stood in the thief's path of escape, the thief swiftly took out a knife from his pocket without Long Chen noticing. As soon as he grabbed hold of the thief, the knife was fiercely thrust into Long Chen's chest. The pain made him tremble and made it difficult for him to breathe, but he didn't release the thief even when he was under such agonizing pain.

More people came to help, and together, they brought down the thief. But as soon as the thief was restrained, Long Chen collapsed on the ground, blood flowing out of him endlessly. He was experiencing an extreme amount of pain, and he knew he wouldn't survive long. He wondered, was it the right choice for him to intervene? Had he let the thief pass through, he would've been alive, unhurt.

Tomorrow was Sunday, and he could have had enjoyed his very first date with his girlfriend; but now, it was all nothing but a far-fetched dream.

'I wonder how sad my mom will be if she finds out. Will Yin'er be sad too?'

'Sorry Dad, you were right, your son is stupid. Can't even stop a thief without dying.' He wanted to laugh at his current situation, but under extreme pain, it came out only as a grunt.

Before he even noticed it, his vision suddenly started to darken slowly until he could finally see nothing but pitch black. He could only hear the sound of an ambulance siren coming near. Then abruptly, everything ended. No sound, no light, no pain.

He wondered if he had already died, for he could feel nothing. He felt like he was in that state for eons before even able to barely feeling something. He could feel again, albeit what he felt was pain, but this was a pain different compared to what he experienced before. Compared to the pain he felt when dying, it was nothing.

He could also feel his body, smell, and hear the sound of air flowing in the room. He was lying on something soft, probably a bed. He wondered if he was in the hospital and was somehow saved by a doctor.

He carefully tried opening his eyes, and thus slowly, they opened. He could see things around him. He then tried looking at his body but found no wound, nor a scar on his chest. He grew confused, and tried looking around, but what he saw made him even more confused. He was in a luxurious but ancient-looking room. There weren't many things in the room, except for a bed and a few more items, including some books.

Before his thoughts could start to stray, his head started hurting again, as if it was about to burst. That was before strange and foreign memories started appearing in his mind. After a few moments, everything ended; the pain that is. He was smart enough to understand what was happening. He died on Earth, came to a new world, and occupied the current body that he was moving.

Now, he had two sets of memories. One from his original life on Earth, and the other from the person whose body he was occupying. He stood up and walked to the front of an ancient-looking mirror hung on the wall, and sure enough, what he saw was the unfamiliar appearance of the guy from which he got his second set of memories from.

From those memories, he understood a few basic things. He lived in the kingdom known as the 'Shui Kingdom' in its capital city called Dragon city. The person he took over was named Long Tian, and he was 12-years-old this year. Even he was astonished by how handsome he looked.

He had long dark hair, a chiselled face, a perfect nose, and a beautiful smile, but what attracted him the most was the set of beautiful yellow eyes. His pupils were light yellow. He had seen countless people on Earth with blue or brown eyes, but never had he seen the light golden iris, similar to the blazing sun.

After admiring himself for a few minutes, he went back to bed and started to think about everything he knew. Long Tian was the grandson of the clan leader of the Long Clan. The Long Clan was one of the three major powers occupying the capital city of Shui. The other two being the Qin and the Gu clan.

These three clans were said to possess power almost as much as the imperial clan of Shui, and Long Tian's Grandfather, Long Ren himself, was one of the strongest cultivators in Shui. His cultivation was only slightly less than the emperor himself.

Long Tian's father, Long Jun, was the second child of Long Ren, and he was said to possess the highest talent amongst all of Long Jun's children. At the humble age of twenty-nine, he had already reached a cultivation base at the peak of Gold Core. Everyone praised his talent and it was almost given that he'll become the next clan leader. That is until the tragedy struck.

One day he was assassinated. Rumors circulated that three assassins attacked Long Jun, all with a cultivation base higher than him. He fought fiercely, killing one assassin and injuring the second one, but alas, he died during the fight.

Long Ren was furious, and he tried to find the culprit, but every investigation he had done, arrived at a dead-end.

Long Jun only had one son, Long Tian, who possessed even better talent than his father, and he could've taken the Long Clan to greater heights.

Long Tian was hailed as a genius appearing only once in a million years. He started cultivating when he was six and achieved the peak of the body refining realm after just two years. It was a feat that ordinary people would have taken at least four to five years to achieve.

The world he arrived in seemed to practice cultivation and had ten stages of cultivation in every realm before you could break through to the next one. Long Tian was already at the peak of the Body Refining Realm. He would've broken through to Spirit Establishment in the next six months, but things didn't go as everyone thought.

For he too became an assassination target.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2 - 2 : Deadly Fight

Long Tian was merely eight years old when he achieved the peak of the Body Refining Realm, which was the tenth stage. Throughout the entire country, he was at the top, his talent matchless amongst the people of his generation. Even the kids from the Royal Clan weren't a match for him. But even then, he never grew complacent and always kept working hard.

There was only one source of motivation behind his hard work. After his father's death, he wanted to be stronger. Strong enough so that his mother won't have to worry about him. He wanted to have the strength to uncover the identity of the people behind his father's death and take his revenge. He wanted to be strong enough to protect everyone; so that none of his family members would ever be endangered just as how his father was. Even as a child, Long Tian knew the importance of strength.

He continually strove to better himself, working hard every day to achieve his goals. Every time he made a breakthrough, he would happily run to his mother and tell her everything about it, just to see the proud and happy look on her face. Long Tian felt comfortable every time his mother praised him. Another thing he liked was reading. He had already read every book his clan had by the time he was eight. Whenever he wasn't cultivating, he could always be seen reading.

That very day was the same, he went to the national library to read. The Kingdom's national library boasted of having the most extensive collection of books in the entire country. Although the Long Clan also had a considerably extensive library, it was more focused on the aspect of quality rather than the quantity. The national library, on the other hand, qualified in terms of quantity, and it even housed several rare books that were hard to be found elsewhere. Thus, he went to the national library often. After spending a few hours reading, Long Tian would leave.

Since he was the young master of the Long Clan and more importantly a genius, he had two protectors arranged for him, both at the peak of the Spirit Establishment Realm. They would secretly follow Long Tian to protect him as per the clan master's order. At that time, Long Tian was in his clan's golden carriage, which had a grand dragon symbol on it, representing the Long Clan.

Normal bandits wouldn't even dream of approaching that carriage as they knew what the symbol represented. The Long Clan was one of the top powers in the nation. Normal bandits wouldn't even dream of stealing any of their shipments, much less attacking a carriage carrying a clan member.

Long Tian was in his carriage, pondering on the things he had read in an old book back in the library. It was a book detailing the myths and legends of the continent. Suddenly, the carriage stopped abruptly. Only dead silence ensued in the area outside the carriage. Confused, Long Tian went out of the carriage to figure out what had happened. But as soon as he left the carriage, he was shocked by the sight which greeted his eyes.

His carriage driver lay dead on the ground, and a masked man could be seen standing in front of the carriage. Even though he was at the peak of Body Refining Realm, he still couldn't judge another person's cultivation.

Only cultivators starting from the Spirit Establishment Realm could see another's cultivation level. There was always a wide gap between the peak of Body Refining and the Spirit Establishment Realm, but even then, Long Tian still knew that he was in danger. The person in front of him was undoubtedly stronger than him since he was unscathed in front of his carriage, which meant he had effortlessly killed his driver and guards.

He knew that his guards had already died at the hands of the masked assassin because even after all that had happened; they didn't come forward to protect him. There was only one possible answer; they were dead. Long Tian instinctively knew that he was the main target; his driver and guards were just collateral damage. It was a trap to kill him, and it was one with no possible means of escape for him.

Long Tian hid his hands behind his back; within his grip, a red jade meant for emergencies. He secretly crushed it as he faced the masked man.

It was a jade gifted to him by his grandfather for his protection after his father was assassinated. It was a part of a relatively expensive pair of jades, one being in the hands of his grandfather, the other with him. When one of the jade gets crushed, the other would be destroyed as well, alerting the other holder.

While gifting it to him, his grandfather made him promise that he would always carry it with him and use it whenever there was even the slightest hint of danger.

"Do you feel safe after crushing that jade?" Mocked the masked man. His eyes were full of delight at the scene in front of him.

"Who are you?" asked Long Tian. Although he knew it was a stupid question and the guy probably wouldn't answer, but he had to delay the enemy so that his grandpa could come and save him.

"Those tactics won't work on me, boy; I know the purpose of that Jade. I assume your grandfather will be here in around 5 minutes. But the thing is, boy. That's just enough time for me to kill you a hundred times." The masked man laughed hysterically.

'How did this masked man learn about not only this jade's existence but also its function?' Long Tian thought.

He was shocked to learn that his only saving grace was discovered. It would take his grandpa some time to arrive at his location. This was currently the most dangerous moment of his life. He had to somehow survive against an enemy who was probably in a realm higher than Spirit Establishment. In other words, two full realms higher than him!

"Why do you want to kill me?" Long Tian asked carefully.

"Is there a need for me to tell you, boy? You should be glad that you are dying at the hands of someone like me." The masked man sneered.

"At least, tell me your name? Are you scared of a person who will soon be dead? Or is it that you aren't confident that you can kill me?" Long Tian mocked.

"Hahaha! Me? Afraid of you? Kid, are you trying to make me die laughing?" The masked man rebuked back.

"Enough chit chat; it's time for you to die, boy!" The masked man shouted as he lunged towards Long Tian.

Even though Long Tian was standing at a distance of 50 meters from the assassin, he could still feel his killing intent. The assassin probably had already slaughtered countless people to have such a strong killing intent.

Long Tian got ready to fight as he knew that the only option he had was to survive until his grandfather comes to help him. He had to endure for just a few more minutes.

Although these five minutes looked like a short period, Long Tian felt as if it was an eternity. Especially when the one he was facing was an elite assassin two full realms higher than his. Long Tian put one of his hands in his pocket and grabbed a talisman.

Just like that, two people faced each other. A masked killer at the early stages of the Gold Core Realm going against a boy only slightly older than eight years and who was at the peak of the Body Refining Realm. A fight for his life was about to start; his survival depended on the outcome of this battle.

Chapter 3 - 3 : Dead Or Alive?

Eventually, the masked man moved. He disappeared from Long Tian's sight. Without wasting any time, Long Tian crushed the talisman in his hand.

In this world, medicine, treasures, weapons, and talismans were all categorized by grades. The lowest grade being mortal grade, above which came Spirit, Earth, Sky, and more. Long Tian had only heard about Sky Grade and above but he had never seen any treasure of such a high grade. There was no Sky grade treasure in all of Shui. Even in a nearby kingdom, there was a similar case. The highest grade treasure in all of Shui was only at Earth grade.

The talisman that Long Tian had used was a mid-level Spirit grade talisman called Divine Protection Talisman. It was so expensive that ordinary people couldn't even afford it. Only large clans were able to buy one. Its primary advantage was that it could stop the attacks from early gold core realm cultivators.

Although, after repeated attacks, it could be broken. It would nevertheless provide some protection. This talisman was another life-saving treasure given to him by his grandpa for his protection. It cost a great fortune, but the Long clan could still afford it

Long Tian could only hope that his grandfather would arrive to save him before his shield got broken through. The assassin kept attacking in all likelihood because he knew that it could be broken.

After being attacked repeatedly for 2 minutes, cracks finally started to appear in the shield.

'It would not hold out longer.' Long Tian thought.

"I'll see how long you can hide in there, kid." Said the assassin.

The masked man stood in front of Long Tian with his Knife in his hands. This knife was a low-grade Spirit treasure as well, but it was still weaker than the mid-grade Spirit talisman of Long Tian. Long Tian could now feel qi in the air, getting restless.

"Sky Shattering slash!!" Roared the masked man as he used his Martial technique. Before Long Tian could ready himself, a blinding knife slash came towards him.

Although this skill was not pretty strong in the eyes of a stronger cultivator, from Long Tian's point of view, it looked like a skill that could stir the heavens, destroying the sun and the Moon. As soon as this attack touched his barrier, the barrier broke like shattered glass. Although this attack was strong, Long Tian knew that his shield could've broken off at least one attack like this, but since it was already cracked after being attacked so much, it shattered instantly.

"Flash steps!" Long Tian used his movement skill and dodged the attack, but as the attack was too fast, it was still able to cut graze shoulder. Blood began flowing from the cut.

Although this was Long Clan's movement skill that Long Tian had practiced since the beginning and had high success in, it still wasn't fast enough to save him from the onslaught of a Gold Core Realm cultivator ultimately.

Long Tian grunted from the pain after being injured; blood flowed from his shoulder continuously. Long Tian knew that if he wasn't at the peak of Body Refining Realm and had a strong body, it was a high possibility that his whole shoulder would've been cut off.

Long Tian turned back to look at the assassin, but he wasn't there. He looked around but couldn't find the assassin. He felt someone's gaze lock onto him like a poisonous snake that was looking at his prey.

"Playtimes over, kid," Said somebody from the back.

He turned around, but before he could do anything, a large hand caught him by his neck. He fought to free himself, but couldn't do anything. That masked man smashed him on the ground again and again.

Long Tian felt like every bone of his body was broken. He was shedding blood all around.

"Time to go, he'll be here soon," muttered the masked man before he tossed Long Tian in the air.

Before Long Tian could fall to the ground, a voice came. It was the assassin's voice.

"Roaring Tiger Fist." A fist landed on Long Tian's chest, making him fly off like a broken kite smashing on tree after tree, before finally landing on the ground. His pulse and breathing had stopped.

The assassin checked his body before smiling.

"Mission accomplished," The assassin muttered, but suddenly his face changed. He could feel a tsunami of killing intent coming towards him.

'Looks like he'll be here in a few seconds,' the assassin thought as he looked towards the south. Without wasting any time, he disappeared from that spot.

After nearly 10 seconds, somebody else arrived at that spot. An older man. He possessed a head full of white hair and a long shiny white beard. He was wearing a bright robe with dragons on it. He was Long Clan's Patriarch and Long Tian's grandfather Long Ren. Although he looked old, he was full of vitality and strength.

He looked around and soon caught the view of Long Tian. He immediately appeared beside him. He held him in his arms as he checked on him, but he couldn't feel any heartbeat. He got scared. If anyone else were there, they would be shocked after witnessing one of the strongest men in the kingdom with such expressions. But he wasn't frightened of any enemy; he was scared for Long Tian's safety.

"Although I couldn't save your father, I'll save you Tian'er. You deserve to live and witness more of this world," muttered the old man as he looked at Long Tian.

He brought out an ordinary-looking box from his spatial ring and opened it. Abruptly, a vast amount of Qi spread in the atmosphere. Within that box was an ancient-looking pill with some strange patterns wriggling around. He instantly took it out and put it inside Long Tian's mouth.

"I truly hope that this pill is as miraculous as that person described," Long Ren muttered to himself. This pill was something that Long Ren had received after saving the life of a Mysterious cultivator.

That mysterious cultivator was being trailed by a group of people and was heavily injured. At that time, Long Ren was just passing by from there, and when he noticed it, he decided to lend a helping hand.

He was taken aback to see that the people chasing him were all above the gold core realm and only slightly weaker than himself; they were probably not from the Shui kingdom. But even so, since he was stronger, he killed them all with ease and saved that person.

That guy was extremely thankful and gave him this pill as thanks. He said that this pill was called 'life-giving pill.' Long Ren had never heard of this pill, but the description made him shocked. That mysterious cultivator said that this pill

could cure most of the injuries and even revive a dead person, if that person hadn't been dead for more than 2 minutes and if no vital part had been cut off like the head.

Long Ren waited with eager breath for the effects to take place, and finally, it did. He could see the wounds healing with naked eyes. Long Tian's breathing returned as well; his heart started thumping again.

Long Ren was now very happy.

Eventually, Long Tian opened his eyes slowly.

Chapter 4 - 4 : A Dragon Is Always Superior

"Everything is fine now, Tian'er. Grandpa won't let anybody hurt you anymore. Let's go home now; your mother must be waiting for you," said Long Ren while smiling at Long Tian. However, to his dismay, he received no response.

He looked at Long Tian only to see him looking back at him, but his lifeless eyes had no focus, and his face was expressionless. He was just lying there limply.

"Tian'er??? Are you alright? Say something..." Long Ren said in a tender voice. Unfortunately, he received no reaction at all from Long Tian. All he saw was a pair of lifeless eyes, staring back at him.

"Alright, let's go home. You're probably tired, you need some rest."

After saying so, Long Ren flew towards the Long Manor while carrying Long Tian in his arms.

Long Ren entered the mansion with Long Tian in his arms and straightaway went to Long Tian's courtyard. His courtyard was beautiful and huge, which was to be expected as it was, after all the dwelling of the genius young master of the Long clan.

The outside was covered with a beautiful garden. Having a wide variety of colorful flowers, Long Tian liked looking at them whenever he came out of his room. There were many capable servants assigned to the task of tending to the garden, and they did their work with full dedication as they knew how much their young master liked this garden.

"Father in law, what happened to Tian'er? Why are you carrying him like that?" Just as Long Ren entered the courtyard, came the worried voice of Sima Ziyi. She was the Mother of Long Tian, and the daughter-in-law of Long Ren.

She had another identity. She was from the Sima clan. In addition to that, she was the daughter of the Sima clan's leader, making her of high standing although her clan wasn't as strong as the three super clans 'Long, Gu and Qin', it was still amongst the top 5 most influential clans in the nation.

"Ziyi... Someone attacked him; there was an assassination attempt. Thank the heavens he's still alive." Long Ren said in a worried tone

Ziyi ran towards him and took Long Tian's frail, limp body from her grandfather's arms into hers.

"Tian'er, are you alright? Say something to me, look, its mother. Please, say something!" Ziyi had beads of tears drop from her eyes as she looked at her son. She kept talking to him, trying to get him to speak, but there was no response.

"Let him rest first; he needs it. I'll tell you everything that happened later," said Long Ren. Only then did Ziyi came to her senses. She took Long Tian into the house, put him to bed, and covered him with a golden blanket for him to rest. After looking at her son for a while, with tears in her eyes, she came out.

She went straight to where Long Ren was standing.

"Who did this to Tian'er?" she asked with a voice filled with grief.

"Unfortunately, I don't know who it was, or I would destroy everyone and everything related to them and make them wish they were never born on this planet!!" Said Long Ren while looking in the direction of Long Tian's room.

Then, he described everything that happened in great detail, how he knew Long Tian was in danger, what he saw when he got there and how he saved Long Tian. Ziyi was shocked to learn that her child was dead for a few moments. Tears kept pouring out of her eyes as she imagined what her son must have had faced for the past few hours.

Long Ren had already sent someone to get the royal physician with his seal in tow. The physician he invited was the best physician in all the nations. He mostly treated members of the royal family and the three super clans. He was called Physician Zhang.

After the physician arrived, he went to check on Long Tian. After a long and thorough inspection, he came out and said, "I don't think there is anything wrong with Long Tian. His body is pretty much healthy other than a few minor injuries."

Physician Zhang stopped for a moment and then continued.

"I'm not sure how or why it happened, but Long Tian has lost his intelligence and has become retarded." He quickly realized that he had said something wrong and hastily corrected himself.

"I mean, he has become slow. He can't process what's happening around him. It's just like when you try talking about complicated matters with a 2-year-old, you won't get any response."

"Is there a solution?" asked Long Ren in a heavy tone.

"I am not sure what will work. Maybe he'll be fine after a few days of rest, or perhaps he won't ever recover. Anything can happen, and I can't say anything for sure as I've never seen this condition before, but I'll pray that he gets better soon."

"I should go now," said the doctor.

"I'll follow you out," said Long Ren with a heavy heart as he escorted physician Zhang out.

As Long Chen accumulated these memories, he also felt sad thinking about what the 8-year-old child had to face. What made him especially upset was what happened after Long Tian lost his intelligence and became dull and not to forget how the people in his own clan treated him.

His cousins constantly bullied him. His cousins could only be jealous of his talent but couldn't take it out on him due to his strength and position before; but now that he had lost everything, they could finally do so to their heart's content.

They would take him out with the excuse of playing and bully him. They would make him sit on his hands and knees and use him as a table, sometimes even kick him from behind to make him fall and get injured, but whenever they were inquired regarding the injuries, they would give excuses, saying that he fell while coming home. He did nothing as he couldn't even understand that he was actually being bullied.

Even the servants stopped showing him respect when no one was there to supervise them. They would treat him like they were the masters instead of the opposite.

That was how four years passed. By then, he was 12 years old, and his cultivation still stagnated at the peak of the Body Refining Realm; but that wasn't so special anymore as he was no longer the strongest in his generation.

Many of his peers had reached the 10th stage of the Body Refining Realm by the time they reach 12.

Even in his clan, there were 5 of them. There were also a few who had already broken past Body Refining and were at Spirit Establishment, with the strongest in his clan's younger generation being the son of his eldest uncle. He was only 13 this year and was already at the 3rd stage of the Spirit Refining Realm.

"Hah, now that I'm here, time to get everything back. I'll show them that a Dragon is always superior to wolves, no matter how injured. I must assess the situation for a few days first before I let everyone know that I've recovered. Got to see the friends and enemies." Long Chen smiled as he got off the bed, ready to start his journey in this new world.

Author Note: Please Vote for this novel if you like it or wish to support me. Each vote counts :)

Chapter 5 - 5 : Going For A Walk

After getting up from bed, Long Chen walked towards his wardrobe. There were many luxurious clothes inside with varying designs for specific occasions. Long Chen picked a few out of them to wear. As he got dressed, he decided to wear a golden robe just like the one that Long Ren often wears, the robe with dragons embroidered on it.

After getting himself ready, Long Chen looked at himself in the mirror. He had to admit that he certainly did look like the prince of an empire. No wonder the others were so jealous

'If I was as handsome as I am in my right now in my previous life, how amazing my life would have been,' thought Long Chen as he laughed.

He had long hair and thin lips, golden pupils, and a beautiful smile. His luxurious yet straightforward clothes, coupled with his handsome appearance, mesmerized even himself.

After admiring his appearance for what seemed like a long time, Long Chen decided that it was finally time to go out. He opened the door and took his first step out. He was greeted with a fresh breeze of air. Outside, he saw a large and beautiful garden. It was his garden, and it still looked so beautiful.

Although the servants no longer respected Long Tian, they still took care of the garden for him with all due care, as this was the place where Long Tian's mother often passed by whenever she went to Long Tian's room.

They could treat Long Tian however they wanted when no one was around because he wouldn't be able to understand anything, but it was a different matter if his mother or other family members found out about it. That is why they had to maintain a respectful attitude when taking care of their young master in front of others.

Long Chen strode through the garden while enjoying the scenery and the smell of fresh flowers when he suddenly heard someone say laughingly,

"Hahaha. There goes little Dumbo retaking his stupid evening walk. Why are we even tending to this retard's garden anyway?" Long Chen faced the voice and saw that it was a servant working in the garden.

'He probably said that since he does not know that I am not Long Tian and that I can understand him' Long Chen thought

'Whatever, I'll let this go on a little while longer, I still have to see what the people's attitude towards me is before I can decide how to deal with them in the future.' Thought Long Chen as he continued to walk past the garden.

He walked near 'his' mother's courtyard, but before he could walk past it, the gate opened, and a beautiful woman came out. She had long, lustrous black hair, black eyes, and a perfect figure. She was Long Tian's mother, Sima Ziyi.

Although he knew that his mother was probably only a few years younger than 40, he couldn't tell from her looks. She looked like she was not a year older than 25. That was probably because she cultivated as well, since female cultivators could keep themselves looking young longer, the higher their cultivation bases were.

"Where are you going, Tian'er? Are you going out to play?" While Long Chen was lost in thought thinking about 'his' mother's looks, she suddenly asked him in a gentle tone.

Long Chen looked at her but didn't say anything. He did not know what to say to her. Should he keep walking, ignoring the question, or talk?

'What if she finds out that I'm not mentally sick anymore or worse, that I'm not her son?' He thought.

In the end, Long Chen decided not to say anything. When it's time for him to show off with a bang and shock the clan, his mother would automatically know that he's back.

She then walked closer to him.

When she was just in front of him, she got onto her knees and put her hand on his cheeks and gently spoke.

"You're looking so amazing, Tian'er, like a heavenly prince. Ling is such a lucky girl. Okay, go on now, Mother won't take your playtime anymore." She kissed his cheeks as she said.

Long Chen turned back and walked away.

"I wonder who is this 'Ling' that she talked about. I can see nothing important relating to that name in any of the memories," Long Chen muttered to himself

while walking. After a while, he put that thought to the back of his head and continued towards his destination

There was an extensive practice area in the Long clan's mansion. It was more than a few hundred meters long. The training grounds were made expansive so that all of the Long clan's descendants could practice any Martial skill freely here, and there was even a fighting stage where clan members could have friendly bouts with one another.

Be that as it may, no one was allowed to injure their opponents as they were all from the same clan. These spars were only meant as a way for them to exchange some moves and gain battle experience. Every intentional injury was punishable by clan law, while accidents were allowed. Though only to a certain degree.

Long Chen was shocked at how big it was and how many people there were. Although he had already seen it in Long Tian's memories, it was an utterly shocking experience seeing it personally. Over 100 kids were practicing their moves at the training grounds.

He could only see people from the younger generation there. He knew that adults practiced somewhere else, as even the residue energy of their Martial skills might injure these kids as collateral damage. That was why only members of the younger generation practiced there. Long Chen could see kids ranging from 7 to 15 there.

Although he couldn't see the 'strongest prodigy of Long Clan's younger generation,' his eldest uncle's son, many of his other cousins were there. He could still see a few well-known faces and some strong guys. Most people here were below the 9th stage of Body refining and were weaker than Long Chen. However, he could also see a few at the peak of Body refining just like him.

He could also see a boy practicing in an empty area. He was shocked to see the power contained within the boy's martial skills. He could control qi in the air as well as force Qi out from his body to attack his opponents. His attacks had a strange fighting spirit, one that made all his attacks seem alive. Long Chen knew why it was as such. The boy was one of the few who broke through to the Spirit Establishment Realm.

He recognized the boy. He was his 4th uncle's son, Long An. He was the same age as Long Tian, being of 12 years of age. However, he was already at the 1st stage of the Spirit establishment realm. Before Long Tian's assassination

attempt, this guy was like an ant in front of Long Tian, but now, he had become stronger than him.

Long Chen slowly walked towards him.

Chapter 6 - 6 : First Fight

Long Chen took his first step inside the Martial arena. After walking a few steps, Long Chen had realized that some people had started noticing him and were staring at him now.

"Everyone, we are so lucky today. We have the privilege to see our Clan's youngest generation's strongest genius, Young master Tian.... hahaha." Someone's mocking voice came from nearby. Long Chen looked in that direction and recognized the guy who spoke. He was called Long Mantian. He was also part of the Long clan but was from a small branch family.

Long clan had quite a rich heritage in this kingdom. It had quite a few branch families spread throughout the nation while the main family resided in the capital. A competition was held in those branch families every year to see the performance of the younger generation, and the winners of those competitions were rewarded with a chance to come to the main family for cultivation and get better opportunities and resources in life.

Long Mantian was one of these few branch family kids present in Long Clan. He was not very good looking. He had short black hair, a round face with a sharp nose, and was dressed in average clothes. At first glance, no one would think of him as anything good.

Although he was not as talented as most kids from the main clan, he was still good enough that he was able to win the opportunity to come to the main clan to cultivate. As soon as Long Mantian arrived in the main clan, he came into contact with Long An and became his follower. Right now, he was 14 years old and at the early stage of the 10th stage body refining realm.

"Young master Tian? Why are you dressed so nice today? Is today your marriage? Who is the unlucky girl? You should go fast and marry her before she knows the reality about you and kills herself," Long Mantian said as he laughed loudly.

'Such childish insults.... can't he come up with anything better?' Long Chen thought as he gazed at Long Mantian walk near him.

"Or is it that you are going to fight in some holy war as a Commander? Hahaha... Even if they let you join a war, what are you going to do? Stare at your opponents until they surrender?" Long Mantian mocked Long Chen as he kept laughing while putting his hand on to Long Chen's shoulders. He brought him towards a boy practicing in a corner.

Long Chen recognized him as one of his cousins.

'I need to find an opportunity to teach this guy some manners.' Long Chen thought as he occasionally looked at Long Mantian, who was pulling him.

While they were passing through the field, a lot of members practicing their skills stopped and looked at them. Some looked at Long Chen with pity in their eyes for what he had become and how he was treated now, while some looked at him, enjoying his misfortune and were happy that this genius fell.

Quite a few people ignored him as well, like he wasn't worth their attention anymore.

"Master An, look who is here to meet you... Your cousin, Young master Tian," Long Mantian said as he brought Long Chen near Long An.

He wanted to bring Long Chen here so that Long An could play with him for a few minutes as well. That way both of them could get some entertainment.

"Don't call this piece of trash, my cousin. Bring him away. That trash isn't worth my attention, so take him out of here and play with him yourself. Don't interrupt my training, Mantian!" Long An said without even looking back. He kept practicing during the whole conversation.

'Huh, it looks like this guy looks down on me a lot. Well... he does have a right to be this arrogant. I am not a genius anymore, and I am not stronger than him. I don't think I can even fight on him at the same ground as I am right now.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he gazed at Long An.

"Alright Master An, I'll take this trash out. People like him don't have the right to enter this Martial arena made for true warriors," Long Mantian laughed as he took Long Chen back. But inside, he was still disappointed that Long An didn't go along with him. He kept pushing Long Chen as he brought him towards the exit.

After Long Mantian brought Long Chen out, he took him to a secluded area. He was having an evil smile on his face. He looked around to make sure no one was nearby before pushing Long Chen from behind. But he couldn't move Long Chen in the slightest.

Long Chen was ready for their little tricks as he knew how things happened, and he had already spread his strength throughout his whole body. Long Mantian was shocked to see that he couldn't move Long Chen even the slightest. Before today every time he tried it, he was able to do it without any

trouble or effort, but today he couldn't do it even after using his early 10th stage cultivation.

Long Chen knew why it was. Before, although Long Tian was stronger than most from the younger generation, because of his injured mind, he never utilized his cultivation to stop his bullies. And although he was at the peak of the body refining realm, he had been at that realm for four years. Even if he didn't cultivate in the last four years, he still ate many medicines provided by his mother for his recovery.

Although Long Mantian was at an early stage of the 10th stage body refining realm, he was still way weaker than Long Chen.

Long Mantian kept trying to move him, but he got no success. Long Chen was laughing in his mind at Long Mantian's futile struggle.

Finally, Long Chen turned back to look at him with a smile on his face. Long Mantian was shocked to see Long Chen smiling, but he felt even more shame and anger than the shock.

"You little crazy piece of trash, How dare you laugh at me, your father!!" Long Mantian roared as he punched towards Long Tian's stomach. He used his full 10th stage cultivation behind that punch.

Long Chen saw that punch coming towards him and could see a strong force and momentum behind that punch. It was a swift punch, but this speed was nothing in front of him. He also unleashed his full cultivation of the peak body refining realm and punched back.

As soon as Long Mantian's punch connected with Long Chen's punch, his expressions had a wide variety of change. From angry to shocked, to pained. Just after a brief moment of contact, Long Mantian flew away like a broken kite and crashed 20 meters away. He felt like the bones of his hand were cracked. He got up after much difficulty. After getting up, he looked ahead and saw Long Chen standing just 1 meter ahead of him.

Long Chen grabbed him by his throat and pulled him up in the air. Long Mantian tried to get him to loosen his grip but couldn't do anything.

"Uhu... Uhu ...Young Master. Y-you! Please release me. I was wrong, forgive me, don't kill me, m...master. I can be of use to you. I can be your slave, even

your dog, just don't kill me," Long Mantian said through many difficulties and with a fearful expression, worrying for his life.

Long Chen smiled as he gazed at him, but Long Mantian felt like it was a devil smiling at him.

Chapter 7 - 7 : Seeing A Beauty

"Oh?... And just why would I need a slave like you? Wouldn't it be even better for me if I just crush you right here and right now?" Long Chen said with his charming smile still on his face. His words scared Long Mantian even more.

"Please... please forgive me, young master Tian... I would never do it again." Long Mantian said, but by this time he already had tears in his eyes.

"Don't hurt me, Master Tian... it... it... it is against the clan rules to hurt a clan member, especially killing. Even if I am from a branch family, you'll still get punished if you do it," Long Mantian said as tears kept falling from his eyes.

"Tell me two things. Firstly, how would anyone know that it was I who killed you? We are all alone here right now. Secondly, I can't even kill a fly in the clan's eyes. I'm just a harmless little guy. No one would even think that I killed you," Long Chen stopped for a moment and then continued.

"And most importantly, you know even if I'm not a genius that I once was in my clan members' eyes, I'm still the grandson of the Patriarch. With my position, even if I kill you, do you think I would be killed? Are you really sure anything serious would happen to me?" Long Chen smirked as he said that.

'I might have said all that, but it is indeed true that killing him would attract quite a bit of unnecessary attention. That would hinder my plans.' Long Chen thought.

Long Mantian was scared out of his mind as Long Chen tightened his grip around his throat. After a brief moment, Long Chen closed the distance between him and Long Mantian. He brought his lips closer to Long Mantian's ears and spoke.

"If anyone found out that I'm better now and that I'm the one that beat you up. I do not think that I have to explain what could happen to you, do I? The clan might save you for a while, but not even the clan would be able to save you forever," Long Chen said with an innocent smile on his face.

As soon as Long Mantian saw this smile, he knew that now he was in the hands of a devil. He promised to himself in his mind that he would never do anything like this again and stay far away from him if he could survive.

"Although I don't need a servant right now, you were right in saying that you could be of use to me someday. I think so as well, but not right now. I will meet you on the day I need you. Till then act like you often do, but never cross me again." Long Chen said to him.

Long Mantian finally felt relieved and knew that he wouldn't die.

"I... I promise!" said Long Mantian with tears in his eyes. After a moment, Long Chen finally put him down.

"Go on now, if anyone asks how you got hurt, I'm sure you'll think of some excuse like... you fell while walking," Long Chen said with a slight smile on his face.

This was the same excuse they gave every time Long Tian was injured in the slightest during their bullying.

After saying that, Long Chen started walking towards a different location. He was planning to roam every part of Long Mansion for once.

As Long Chen walked away, Long Mantian's eyes never left him until he was far away. Finally, he breathed a sigh of relief. He looked below and noticed that his pant was slightly wet... he then hurriedly ran towards his room.

As Long Chen was roaming around the mansion, he saw many incredible things. This place was huge and had many important places.

There was a Skill Hall in Long clan containing many Martial skills. When Long Tian was younger, he had personally gone there and seen many skills. Hundreds of mortal grade skills were there and quite a few Spirit grade skills as well, although Long Tian didn't have a chance to see them.

This building was golden in color, and it had four floors and covered an area of a few hundred square meters. Its door was around three meters wide and five meters high. There was also a dragon symbol on its doors, similar to most of the important places of the Long clan.

The first floor contained mortal grade skills. From low-rank mortal grade skills all the way up to the peak rank mortal grade skills, there were hundreds of them. While the second floor contained only Spirit grade Martial skills. Once someone broke through to Spirit refining realm, only then were they allowed to choose Martial skills from this floor.

If Long Tian had not suffered that horrible accident, he could have been the youngest person to go to the second floor and choose a Spirit grade Martial

skill as he would have broken through to the Spirit refining realm soon. But everything changed after that accident.

As for the third floor, it was believed that it contained gold grade Martial skills. As for the fourth floor, No one other than the Patriarch and a few high-ranking elders was allowed inside. But it was said that this place contained highly sought after Earth grade techniques. Long Chan thought so as well. This could be the only possible explanation that made sense to him about what the fourth floor contained.

"It's not the right time to go inside, even if they allowed me to enter, I already have mortal grade skills from inside, and I wouldn't be allowed to go to the second floor as I have yet to break through to Spirit refining realm," Long Chen muttered to himself before deciding to walk past it.

He walked for a few minutes and saw the next big building.

The next place that made him amazed was also a huge building. It only had three floors, but it was even broader and more extensive than the skill Hall. It was called treasure Hall. There were many treasures inside for cultivators, especially weapons. It also contained many mortal weapons as well as Spirit treasures.

Long Chen did not know if it contained Earth grade weapon as well, as he had never heard about it. But he was sure that there must be Earth grade treasures in Long clan somewhere, looking at the Clan's strength.

Every clan member could choose a mortal grade treasure after they reached the 7th stage of the body refining realm, and they could select a Spirit grade weapon only when they reached the stage above the fifth stage of the Spirit Establishment stage.

Whether they would get a Low level, mid-level, high level, or peak level treasure depended on themselves. Which level treasure they would get was decided by a particular test inside the treasure Hall.

When Long Tian had first gone through this test, he was only seven years old and at the 7th stage of the body refining realm. After going through this test, he received a peak level mortal grade sword called "Mountain destroyer." Unfortunately, he did not have the habit of carrying it with him whenever he

went outside, that's why he did not have it with him when a masked man attacked him

But even if he had it with him at that time, Long Chen knew that it would not have been of much help as his opponent was two cultivation realm higher than him and had a low-level Spirit grade knife.

Just as long Chen was about to pass by treasure Hall, a beautiful young girl was coming out from inside.

Chapter 8 - 8 : First Meeting

Just when Long Chen was about to pass by treasure Hall, he saw the doors of the treasure Hall open and a beautiful young girl came out of it. Long Chen was able to recognize her. She was the daughter of the Grand Elder of the Long clan, Long Mu. Her name was Long Xue Ying.

Long Mu was one of the most influential members of the Long clan. In terms of strength, he was only weaker than the Patriarch and the supreme elder of the Long family. Long Mu only had one daughter and his wife had died when his daughter was only 12 years old due to sickness. Long Mu doted on her a lot and tried to fulfil every wish of hers.

Long Xue Ying looked to be about 16 - 17 years old. She had flaming red hair, which was long and shiny. She was wearing a bright red gown, which ended only slightly below her knees, showing her Jade like milky white legs below.

Long Chen was amazed as he glanced at her. She was big at places where she should be and thin at places where she should be. Her tight gown wrapped around her chest tightly, making it look even bigger.

She looked proud and aloof. She had some light makeup on her face, had arched eyebrows, and beautiful eyes, and also a perfectly chiseled nose that made her look even more attractive. But her expressions were of excitement. She looked like she wanted to go somewhere fast.

Long Chen was amazed as he had never seen a beautiful girl like her. He wasn't sure if it was the effect of cultivation or the natural Qi that nourished their body. He wanted to look at her from even closer, so he decided to walk towards the treasure Hall. As Long Chen was walking towards her, he kept his eyes on her as she was walking out of the treasure Hall. It somewhat looked like they were walking straight towards each other.

Long Chen kept looking at her while walking. Just when the distance between them was about 5 meters, an accident happened. Long Chen suddenly tripped on something. As he was walking towards her at a fast pace, this accident made him fall forward even faster. As it happened, she was only about two meters away from him.

He fell towards her. As he was falling, as soon as his body touched hers, he wrapped his arms around her subconsciously. He didn't think much about it as his mind subconsciously made him grab something that was near him when he was falling. And she was the only one near him. Thus they both fell.

Long Chen was stunned by his accident as he found himself on top of the girl. He felt something soft poking on his chest. He understood what it was. He realized that it was Long Xue Ying's bulging chest that was roaring to come out of her tight-fitting dress and show its full glory. He could feel the softness. He tried sitting up.

Long Xue Ying had been waiting eagerly for a long time to choose her weapon from Treasure Hall. She wanted to get a Spirit grade weapon, and she put all her effort into breaking through to the 5th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm just for this. Finally, today was the day she passed the last hurdle and reached the 5th stage Spirit Establishment Realm, but she did not rest.

She went to the treasure Hall straight away after breaking through and got her first Spirit grade weapon after passing the test. The weapon she received was a low-rank spirit grade weapon called 'Flaming Butterfly'.

It was said that the artificer that made this weapon had named it in memory of the woman he loved. The woman he loved liked watching butterflies fly in her garden, and she would stay in her garden for hours watching them. Unfortunately, she died in a fire, and in her memory, he named this weapon 'Flaming Butterfly' to always remind him how he couldn't help her. It was his most prized possession.

Long Xue Ying was happy after getting her first Spirit grade weapon and wanted to show it to her grandfather as soon as possible. But as she was walking out of Treasure Hall and towards her courtyard, a stranger struck her. He made her fall down, and he even wrapped his arms around her. She had never been touched by anyone other than her family, but now she was.

Long Xue Ying's blood started boiling. She wanted to kill this guy right here and right now thus she started utilizing her full cultivation.

While Long Chen was trying to get off her, the qi in the air started getting restless. Until a fist suddenly struck Long Chen and made him fly far away like a broken kite. He crashed on the ground after traveling some distance. He coughed up a mouthful of blood as he tried getting up. He was injured, but it

wasn't life-threatening. He felt pain all over his body. Finally, he stood up after some effort.

"HOW DARE YOU TOUCH ME!!!!!" Long Xue Ying roared.

She moved to attack Long Chen again. Long Chen also got ready to protect himself, utilizing his full cultivation. He was prepared to use his Martial skills as well for his protection.

"Stop!" But before she could hit Long Chen, a voice came from behind.

Chapter 9 - 9 : Together

Long Xue Ying turned back towards the direction that voice came from and saw that it was Elder Yang. He had a head full of white hair and a white beard. He was a little chubby, as well.

He was the Elder in charge of the Treasure Hall. Although he wasn't as strong as her grandfather, Long Mu, he was still one of the top few in the Long clan when it came to strength and responsibilities.

"Greetings, Elder yang," She calmed herself down and greeted him politely. Seeing her calm down, Elder yang couldn't help but praise her nature in his mind.

"What happened? Why are you attacking him?" Elder Yang asked as he looked towards Long Chen.

"He... He..." Long Xue Ying stuttered. She wasn't sure about how to describe it to an elder. She felt shy. She couldn't say that Long Chen had taken her in his embrace.

"He what?" Elder Yang asked again in a questioning tone

"He touched me inappropriately!" At last, she finally gathered the courage and said it, although she simplified it a lot. Because she still couldn't describe the event in full detail.

"Are you sure he did that? Do you know who he is?" Elder Yang asked with a weird expression on his face.

"What has this got to do with who he is?" Long Xue Ying asked with a confused look on her face as she gazed at Elder Yang.

"Have you heard about Long Tian?" Elder Yang inquired.

"Who hasn't? Of course, I did, as well. He is the grandson of the patriarch, and the fallen genius of Long Clan who lost his intelligence after the assassination attempt on his life," Long Xue Ying said like it was a matter of fact.

"The person you're trying to attack is him. He is Long Tian. You should know that since the accident, his brain is like that of a 2-year-old child now, although his body is that of a 12-year-old boy's. I do not think he would do it intentionally. Isn't there a good possibility that there was an accident that resulted in you misunderstanding him? What do you think?" Elder Yang said in a questioning tone.

"He is Long Tian? The guy who lost his intelligence after the assassination attempt?" She looked at him clearly and could see some similarities. She had heard about him before, she had even met him a few times before his accident, but in these last four years, she didn't see him much. So she couldn't recognize him at first glance.

Now that she knew who it was, she felt that it must have been an accident. Now she felt terrible and guilty for attacking him without truly understanding the situation before she felt like she was a victim, but now she felt like she was a bully.

"Elder yang, I think you are right. It was probably an accident. I am so sorry for attacking him; I even injured him," She said as her eyes got slightly moist.

"I will bring him to his courtyard so that he could rest, and then I will also ask for Aunt Ziyi's forgiveness for injuring Long Tian," Long Xue Ying said in an apologetic tone as she grabbed Long Chen's hands with her soft hands and took him with her.

Elder Yang looked at them, walking together for a while, then walked back to his Treasure Hall as well.

As all three left, no one noticed a guy standing at some distance watching everything with an ugly expression on his face. This person looked to be about 18-19 years old. He had long black hair and dark eyes like the abyss.

He was Long Su. His cultivation was at the 8th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. Although he was young as well, he was not considered a member of the younger generation as he already passed the age of 18 quite a while ago. He was the son of the supreme Elder of the Long clan, Long Hua. Although Long Hua was the second strongest in the Long clan, he was still weaker than Long clan's patriarch Long Ren by a lot.

Long Hua mostly only got involved whenever there was a need to take care of the Clan's essential matters. Other than that, he would always be cultivating in his room. He had two sons, one Long Su and the other was only five years old right now. He did not get involved in their matters much unless exceptional circumstances.

At this moment, Long Su was filled with hatred towards Long Chen. He liked Long Xue Ying ever since he first saw her in skill Hall 5 years ago and had always been trying to make her fall for him, but she never gave him any importance. Whenever he approached her, she always talked to him politely, but he could see that she was trying to keep her distance from him.

Today he was going to Skill Hall to choose another Martial skill for himself when he saw Long Xue Ying come out of the Treasure Hall. He stopped in his tracks and just as he was about to approach her, he saw Long Chen fall on her.

The scene of her being in his embrace kept stabbing in his heart like a needle again and again. He wanted to go there straight away and crush that guy to a pulp, but he recognized who it was and didn't dare to.

He had seen him before. He knew it was the Grandson of clan patriarch Long Ren. Even if his grandfather was strong, he knew Long Ren was way stronger.

When he saw Long Xue Ying attacking Long Chen, he was praying that she would kill him in anger, and then he will save her from the consequences by saying he witnessed Long Chen molesting her and her retaliation accidentally killed Long Chen. He thought that Long Ren would not be so narrow-minded as to come after him if he knew that it was his grandson's fault and the crime he committed.

But things didn't go as planned. Elder Yang came out and stopped her and also told her about his identity. Long Chen survived this calamity.

Even after a long while, Long Su's anger did not subside, and he decided to make a plan to get rid of Long Chen.

'How dare that bastard touch my Xue Ying,' Long Su thought in his mind while gritting his teeth.

While there was a deadly plan being hatched against him, a plan that will forever change his life, Long Chen had no idea about it. He was happy walking with Long Xue Ying. She kept holding his hand while she brought him towards his courtyard. Long Chen enjoyed the smoothness of her Jade-like hand. Many people saw this along the way and were filled with jealousy towards Long Chen.

'That bastard! Why is he so lucky to hold Miss Xue Ying's hand?' Many people thought as they lost themselves in their jealousy.

Long Xue Ying was bringing him towards his courtyard but stopped before that as she noticed that his mother's courtyard had arrived. She decided to bring him there first and clarify the misunderstandings and ask for forgiveness for hurting her son.

She knocked on her door a few times. The door opened, and a beautiful woman came out. She was Sima Ziyi. Long Chen was again amazed.

'Every time I see her, she looks even prettier than before,' Long Chen thought in his mind. Although he considered her pretty, there were no inappropriate thoughts on his mind.

He also felt sad after thinking about his father. Although Long Jun was Long Tian's father and not his, he still felt terrible as he shared the memories of Long Tian as well as some of his feelings.

Chapter 10 - 10: Daughter In Law?

Sima Ziyi was sitting on her bed, thinking about something, when she suddenly heard someone knock on her door. She walked over and opened the door. She then saw a beautiful girl standing there, holding Long Chen's hand.

Since she had seen the girl before, she knew who this girl was. Sima Ziyi knew that it was Long Xue Ying, the only daughter of the Grand Elder of the Long clan, but she couldn't imagine what was happening in front of her.

'Why is she here and why is she holding his hands?' She thought.

'Did he already find a lover?' Sima Ziyi thought in her mind as she gazed at them.

Long Xue Ying saw Sima Ziyi standing on the door looking at her. She did not know what to say now that she was actually here. When she was coming here, she thought about everything she would say and how she would apologize, but now that she was here, she was silent, looking for words to say.

Suddenly she noticed that she was still holding Long Chen's hand in front of his mother. Her face turned red like a tomato, and she hurriedly freed her hand from his.

"Ah... Aunt Ziyi... Actually," She stuttered as she tried to find the words to explain.

"Why are you both standing outside? Come on inside; I'll bring you some tea." Before Long Xue Ying could say anything, Sima Ziyi stopped her and invited her in. After Long Xue Ying and Long Chen entered her room, she closed the door and went inside as well.

"You do not need to bother Aunt Ziyi," Long Xue Ying said, but Sima Ziyi did not stop. After a few minutes, she came out and served tea to Long Xue Ying before sitting near her.

"It's rare for a beautiful girl such as yourself to come here with my Tian'er. Did you fall in love with him? Are you finally mesmerized by his charm? My Tian'er is pretty handsome, so there is a pretty good chance. I'll give both of you my blessing." Sima Ziyi said with a smile.

Long Xue Ying couldn't help but turn even red. In the backdrop, Long Chen was enjoying seeing her turn red and this conversation, although he knew that his mother was probably just teasing her.

"I am just teasing you, little Ying," Sima Ziyi said with a smile as she finally ended the charade.

"So tell me, why are you here today?" Sima Ziyi asked in a gentle tone.

"Aunt Ziyi... I am here to apologize to you. I am sorry. Actually, what happened was that there was an accident. This morning, near the treasure Hall, Long Tian tripped and fell on me, I didn't know he was Long Tian and thought that he intentionally did it. In retaliation, I hurt him." Long Xue Ying explained in a guilty voice.

"Although it was a total misunderstanding and not his fault, still it's the truth that he got hurt because of me. I am here to bring him back and to apologize to you, Aunty," Long Xue Ying said apologetically as she bowed her head. Then she told her the whole story in great detail.

Sima Ziyi was so shocked after hearing the whole story. When she saw Long Chen and Long Xue Ying stand there together with hand in hand, she didn't expect there was such a story behind it.

She brought Long Chen closer to herself, trying to look for any injury with a worried look on her face, but there wasn't any serious injury, just a few light injuries. She breathed in relief. Long Xue Ying saw her worried look and felt even more guilty.

"It is fine, little Ying. I understand that it was a misunderstanding, and Long Tian isn't seriously hurt. So it's fine, little Ying. I appreciate you bringing him back and telling me everything honestly." After some time, Sima Ziyi finally said, trying to calm Long Xue Ying and decrease her guilt.

"At least, because of this incident, he got to meet such a pretty girl" She teased her again and touched Long Xue Ying's cheeks with her hand as she said this in a gentle tone.

Long Xue Ying finally felt relieved as she heard it. She immediately thanked Sima Ziyi

"Thank you, Aunt Ziyi," Long Xue Ying said with a beautiful smile on her face.

"You don't need to thank me, little Ying," She stopped her as she got another idea in her mind and continued.

"Still, if you want to thank me, there is a way you can do it," Sima Ziyi said while smiling.

"Which way?" Long Xue Ying inquired with a confused look. Long Chen was also wondering what his mother was talking about.

Sima Ziyi looked at Long Chen tenderly for a moment, then she looked back at Long Xue Ying.

"You know, my baby changed after the attempt on his life. He had always been alone since then. Although he goes out to play often, I have known for a long time that he does not have many friends in the clan." Sima Ziyi said.

"I think that's true. He was alone when he met me, and no one greeted him along the way when I brought him here," Long Xue Ying said while thinking and looking at Long Chen.

'Well, that's true. At least they are not totally oblivious, I do not have any friends here. In fact, they should be glad not everyone targeted Long Tian before, and only a few did,' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"Can you be a friend to him, little Ying?" Sima Ziyi asked as she looked into her eyes.

"You do not have to say that Aunt Ziyi, even if you did not say that, that is what I would have done." Long Xue Ying replied to her.

After talking for some more time, Long Xue Ying left the courtyard and went back.

'How amazing it would be if Long Xue Ying became my daughter-in-law, she's pretty and kind. But there is already Ling, and if he married Long Xue Ying, it would be polygamy.' Sima Ziyi looked at her leaving, as she wondered to herself.

Although polygamy was normal in this world and many strong people did it and had many wives like the emperor of the Shui Kingdom. But it was different for Long Chen. She thought that he was not strong anymore. If there was an argument between his wives, he would not know how to solve it and would not be able to do anything, leading to a tense life of all three.

So she thought that it was better for Long Chen to be with only one woman until some miracle happened and he returned to normal. If that happened, then she would be happy even if Long Chen brought her many daughter-in-laws.

"Why am I thinking about it? It is all in the distant future, no benefit worrying about it now. Also, it's not like Long Xue Ying would even agree to marry my

Tian'er," Sima Ziyi muttered to herself before taking Long Chen towards his room.

Long Chen heard her muttering but did not know whether to laugh or cry at her thoughts. Although on the outside, he kept his normal expression.

After bringing Long Chen to his room, Sima Ziyi went back towards her courtyard, leaving Long Chen alone in his room.

Long Chen then sat on his bed alone, thinking deeply to himself.

Author Note: Please Vote for this novel if you like it or wish to support me. Each vote counts :)

Chapter 11 - 11: In Danger

After Sima Ziyi left Long Chen's room, he sat there alone, thinking. But this time, he was not thinking about Long Xue Ying or any other women. Instead, he was thinking about himself and his cultivation.

"Although I am stronger than many other kids in the clan, there are still quite a few who can crush me like an ant whenever they want," Long Chen thought as he touched his lips with a finger, lost in deep thoughts.

It had only been a day since Long Chen had arrived in this world, but he already knew how weak he was and could see his weakness.

In the Martial arena, he had seen many people practicing, and quite a few of them were in the Spirit Establishment realm and were way stronger than him. He was sure that it would be tough to win a fight against them the way he was right now, but he also knew that he had yet to see some of the true strongest genius kids of the clan like his eldest uncle's son, who was only 12 years old and at the 3rd stage of Spirit Establishment Realm. Long Chen could already judge his own weakness.

"Even Long An alone can beat me to a pulp, let alone people who are stronger than him. And I can't even hold on for long if I actually had to fight someone like Long Xue Ying when she is serious. Although she is older than me, only strength matters in this world." Long Chen thought.

"I should start cultivating and try to break through to the Spirit Establishment Realm first. Then I'll have some defense in case of an emergency," Long Chen muttered as he said to himself.

Although he had never actually cultivated by himself before, he had all of Long Tian's memories and experiences like he had experienced it himself personally. So he felt like there wouldn't be any difficulty in his cultivation. He was sure about it.

He sat in a meditating position and started absorbing Qi from the outside air in his body.

There were many realms in cultivation in this world. Starting with the Body refining realm, Spirit Establishment, Gold core, Earth, Sky, Heaven, and higher ones. The body refining realm mainly focused on the cultivation of the body, making it strong and resilient.

The body refining realm's main focus was on absorbing Qi from the air and refining the body using it, to make it as strong as a weapon.

Whereas Spirit Establishment Realm focused on absorbing the Qi from the air, making it pass through the meridians and cultivating a small Martial soul inside their body.

This Martial soul could help cultivators control the Qi in the air to attack their opponents and also in using their own qi to attack the enemy standing at a distance from them. Also, having a strong Martial soul could provide some level of protection against mental attacks.

To break through to Spirit Establishment Realm first, Long Chen had to establish a soul seed in his body using the Qi from the air and a part of his spirit. After cultivating that seed, they had to nurture it with their Qi to make their soul seed grow and become an actual Martial soul. Long Chen cultivated for a few hours before he decided to stop.

"It's not as easy as I thought, but not difficult either. I'll probably break through to Spirit Establishment Realm in the next two months," Long Chen said to himself with a smile.

As he was tired after cultivation, he straightaway went to sleep after that. He slept soundly that night.

Long Chen woke up early in the morning the next day and got ready to go out again.

"Last time, I could not see the whole Long mansion because of Long Xue Ying's interruption. I should continue this tour today." Long Chen thought as he opened the door and walked out. He was once again greeted with the sweet smell of his garden. He walked past it happily.

As he passed by his mother's room, he noticed that she was not outside today.

'She is probably cultivating right now,' he thought as he quickly went past it.

After walking for a while, he reached the destination where his tour had stopped abruptly yesterday, the treasure Hall. He continued walking ahead, and after some distance, he saw a nice looking building. Although it was not as fancy as skill Hall or Martial fall, it was still quite amazing.

This was the library of the Long clan. It had many unique books, but Long Tian had already read most of them before the attempt on his life. He

remembered in Long Tian's memory that he often used to come here. Long Chen decided to go inside this time and roam around.

As he walked inside, Long Chen noticed a long row of shelves containing books.

"There must be more than a few hundred of them." Long Chen thought as he gazed at the books

The elder in charge of the clan library noticed him, but decided to ignore him.

Four years ago, this elder used to flatter Long Tian a lot whenever he came there to read the books, but now that this genius fell, he did not consider Long Tian to be worthy of his attention.

The elder snorted as he continued reading the book in his hand. After roaming inside for a while, Long Chen came out of there, but the elder in charge didn't even move his eyes as Long Chen left.

Long Chen continued walking on this path, and after he had walked for a while, he was stopped by someone.

"Little brother Tian, where are you going alone?" The person asked. It was an 18-19 year old boy.

Long Chen recognized this guy. He was Long Su, son of the Supreme Elder of the Long clan. Long Chen was confused about why this guy stopped him and started talking to him suddenly.

As far as he could remember, Long Su never talked to him before. Long Tian didn't have any kind of friendship with him, but there weren't any wrong feelings between them either, and Long Su was one of the few who never bullied him. Long Chen found it confusing why he would suddenly stop him.

"Come with me, little brother Tian; your elder brother is so happy today. I finally succeeded in cultivating the Martial skill I was stuck at for so long. I wanted to share my happiness with someone when I found you. Let's go to my courtyard," Long Su said with an excited expression on his face. Long Chen thought that this guy was quite strange but didn't say anything.

Long Su brought Long Chen with him towards his courtyard. He had already used his followers and cleared the road ahead of them, because of which no one saw Long Chen walking with Long Su. While walking with Long Chen, Long Su was laughing in his mind but kept an innocent smile on his face.

Chapter 12 - 12 : Caught In A Scheme

While Long Chen was walking with Long Su, the entire duration of the walk, he wondered what was happening today. Why would Long Su, who had never talked to him, start talking to him now?

He had heard about Long Su before. He was a genius of the Long clan and the grandson of Long Hua, Supreme Elder of the Long clan. Long Chen could never have imagined that a person at such a high level of strength would talk to him because of a breakthrough in his own Martial skill cultivation.

'Was it actually just as he said? He was in a happy mood after he achieved a breakthrough in his Martial skill, so that Martial skill must be pretty amazing for him to be so happy if it is true.' Long Chen thought to himself.

Although he thought that the chances of this actually being the reason were pretty low, there was still a small possibility of it actually being true.

He did not think that Long Su would scheme against him as he never had any enmity with him in the first place. And Long Chen thought that he wasn't even strong enough for him to scheme against.

Their cultivation was worlds apart. While Long Su was at the 8th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm, Long Chen was only at the 10th stage of the Body Refining realm. So while Long Chen did not think Long Su would scheme against him, he kept having a dangerous feeling since the first moment he met Long Su.

While walking along the path, Long Chen was also confused as to why he never saw anyone walk by them. No clan members, no servants, no one in the path leading to Long Su's courtyard. Every place he walked through was empty. No person could be seen walking near them.

His bad feeling started getting even more intense, but Long Chen could not put his finger on it as these were only his doubts, and at the end of the day, strange coincidences always happened in this world. Even on earth, where he was originally from, this happened quite often. Sometimes crowded streets would be completely empty, so Long Chen ignored his doubts again.

After walking for a little over 15 minutes, Long Chen saw a beautiful courtyard. Although it did not have a big and beautiful garden outside like Long Tian's courtyard had, it still looked just as luxurious as his.

'No wonder he's the grandson of the Supreme Elder and a top Spirit Establishment realm cultivator. Of course, his courtyard would be nice,' Long Chen thought as he gazed at Long Su.

Long Su brought him inside and sat on a chair. Long Chen also sat in a chair in front of him. There was only a table placed between them. After they were both seated, Long Su asked a servant to bring tea for them. As the servant went back, Long Su smiled and started a friendly conversation with Long Chen about random things.

"You know, little brother Tian. I have been cultivating this skill for a long time. It is called Lion's roar, and it's a sound wave attack type Martial skill. Finally, I achieved minor success in it," Long Su said to Long Chen with a smile.

Long Chen knew about this skill from Long Tian's memories. This skill was said to be a mid-rank Spirit grade technique, and it was just as Long Su had described. It was a pretty hard skill to successfully cultivate without years of effort, and only a few people chose to cultivate this skill.

Long Su kept talking about things like how he was so happy, and that Long Tian should share his happiness by having a drink with him. And that after he achieves more success in it, he'll invite him again to celebrate with him.

Finally, the servant entered the room with tea. There were two cups neatly placed in a beautiful tray.

"Take one, little brother Tian," Long Su said with an eager look.

Long Chen noticed these small changes in his expression. Long Chen glanced at those cups but didn't pick them up, wondering if there was anything harmful mixed in them. He couldn't help but doubt Long Su from his expressions. Long Su noticed his hesitation and started laughing.

"Hahaha, does little brother think that I poisoned the tea for some reason? I wouldn't even dare to do it in my dreams, as I do not want to die so young in the hands of your old man," Long Su said, talking about Long Chen's grandfather and Patriarch of the Long clan, Long Ren, while trying to make himself look innocent.

Even after that, Long Chen did not pick the cup up, as he would not dare to play with his life and take chances.

After seeing things change and take this unexpected turn, Long Su still did not lose the smile on his face. He tried another plan that he had made just in case something like this happened. Even though he knew Long Chen was stupid now, every stupid person can sometimes do the smart thing by accident. So he had done long and proper planning, taking every situation that may arrive into consideration.

He picked up one of the cups in the tray and drank it completely without taking a break.

"Now do you believe me, little brother Tian?" Long Su said with a smile.

Long Chen thought that maybe he was worrying too much as he also picked a cup that was left on the tray and started drinking the tea. After drinking a few sips, he felt that something was wrong. He suddenly started losing focus and feeling sleepy.

"Brother Tian, are you ok? You look sleepy?" Long Su said with a worried look on his face, but he was laughing on the inside.

Long Chen realized that he was drugged and caught in Long Su's deadly scheme. He did not know why Long Su would do this to him.

Long Chen wanted to stand up and go outside, but he couldn't; he was so sleepy he couldn't do anything and fell asleep.

"Hahaha... Long Tian, you should be glad I just added a little medicine that makes you sleep for a day and not poison because I am such a nice person. I am just making you sleep for a while," Long Su said as he gazed at the sleeping Long Chen.

Although Long Su said this, there was actually a reason behind why he did not poison Long Chen and only made him sleep.

Chapter 13 - 13 : Perfect Plan?

Although Long Su had said this, there was actually a reason why he did not poison Long Chen and only made him fall asleep.

He could not kill Long Chen in the Long Clan Mansion as things would have gotten worse if someone had found Long Chen's dead body. That might have somehow resulted in people getting to him, so he had to do it outside. And for that very reason, he needed to bring Long Chen outside the Long Clan's mansion first.

Long Su knew Long Tian never went outside the Long clan mansion since his accident. In fact, in the last four years, he had not gone outside even once, so Long Su knew that he would not go with him even if Long Su had invited him.

On the other hand, even if he killed him and tried to get his body out of the Long clan through his connections, it would be a dangerous situation if anyone saw him moving Long Tian's dead body outside and, on checking, found out that he was dead. If that happened, Long Su would be the next person to die as Long Chen's grandfather Long Ren would bury him alive, and not even his grandfather, Long Hua, would be able to save him.

Only if Long Chen was sleeping when they brought him out, would there be a chance of success with the least amount of danger to himself. He would still use his connections to leave a backdoor open in the Long Clan's security, through which he would bring Long Chen out of the Long Clan mansion, but this time things would be different.

As even if someone noticed him bringing Long Chen out, Long Su could just give the excuse that he was bringing Long Chen out with him to show him their city and its new entertainment places that opened up in the last four years in Dragon City when suddenly Long Chen somehow felt sleepy and fell asleep.

Long Su would say that he thought Long Chen was just a little sleepy and would wake up when they reached their destination outside. Although they might doubt his story, they would not be able to accuse him of anything.

The medicine Long Su gave Long Chen would not leave even a trace after half an hour, but its effects would last for over 12 hours. If anyone were to check Long Chen, they would just find Long Chen breathing and sleeping like a normal person, no drugs or poison in his body. So Long Su would be safe.

Long Su laughed as he saw his plan working. As for why he was not affected even after drinking that tea, which was also due to his meticulous planning. There was no safe tea in either cup. Both cups had this sleeping medicine in them. Long Su did this to have another contingency, in case he did not need to use his second plan of drinking the first cup to convince Long Chen and if Long Chen picked a cup first.

Even if Long Chen had picked a cup before Long Su picked one to prove that there was no poison, Long Chen would still get the drugged tea. This was because both cups were drugged.

The only difference was that Long Su had already taken the antidote that countered the sleeping drug's effects. That was why he was not affected in the slightest and was laughing at the success of his perfect plan now.

"Now, it's the time for the next step of my plan, the most crucial step in the plan. Getting him out of the mansion," Long Su muttered with a thoughtful expression.

"Dugu!" Long Su said in a loud voice.

A servant entered the room hurriedly. It was the same servant who served the drugged tea.

"You did good today. Here, take this," Long Su said as he gave his servant a silver coin.

The servant hurriedly accepted the silver coin with an excited look on his face. Although a silver coin was nothing for Long Su, it was still worth a lot for his servant. His servant earned 20 bronze coins after working for a month, and one silver coin was worth 100 bronze coins. So just for doing the simple task of following his master's orders, he had earned what he would normally have earned after working for five months. He was so happy.

"Thank you so much, master," The servant happily said as he gazed at Long Su with a grateful expression on his face.

"You don't need to thank me, just keep following me like my loyal dog, and your life will keep getting better," Long Su said in a superior tone.

"But most importantly, if anyone ever finds out what happened here today, I will personally kill you and your whole family. I heard you have little kids; you wouldn't want anything to happen to them, right?" Smiled Long Su as he said this to his servant with a smirk on his face.

His servant was so scared that he kept promising that he would keep all secrets to himself and would never disclose any of Long Su's secrets ever. Long Su gave him a satisfied smile and told him to go back.

After his servant went back, there was a knock on the door. Long Su looked like he knew who it was. He opened the door and saw a tall woman standing there. She was wearing a normal black dress with some light makeup on her face. Although her face wasn't anything special looking and was pretty average, what made her alluring was her more than moderate-sized chest sticking out proudly.

"Come inside, Yue," Long Su said with a smile on his face, his focus staying on her proud chest.

She entered and walked towards his bedroom. She sat on his bed. Long Su walked behind her, looking at her perfect looking ass in her tight fitted outfit with a greedy expression.

"Is everything I asked for ready?" Long Su inquired as soon as he entered his bedroom.

"Yes, young master Su. Everything is ready as per your instructions. I have arranged for everything. After 3 hours, the guards in the South gate of the Long mansion will leave their position for a change of shift. And I have ordered the guys who will take their place to come 20 minutes late today. So for these 20 minutes, there won't be anyone protecting the South gate of the Long mansion. You can pass through there easily during this time," The alluring woman said as she gazed at Long Su tenderly.

Her Name was Tu Yue. She was the supervisor of the security of the South gate of the Long clan and handled the guard's shifts and timings.

Although she was over 25 years old already, she was still at the 7th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. She was considered very much talented in cultivation.

She was given this supervisor position because she had excellent management skills and the people of the Long clan were happy with her performance so far.

Long Su laughed while going towards his bed, and sat near Tu Yue as his shoulder touched hers.

"So that means I have three hours to waste. Hmm, what should I do in these three hours...? What do you think I should do, Yue?" Long Su said as he

started moving his hands all over her slim back while looking into her deep eyes.

Chapter 14 - 14 : Heavenly Cliff

"So that means I have three hours to waste. Hmm, what should I do in these three hours...? What do you think I should do, Yue?" Long Su said as he started moving his hands all over her slim back while looking into her deep eyes.

Slowly, he brought his face closer to hers. Tu Yue didn't stop him and just closed her eyes. Finally, Long Su's face was so close to hers that he could hear her fast-paced breathing. Just a little closer and his lips would touch hers.

He finally closed that distance and kissed her sweet lips. As Long Su kissed her, he put his hands on her bountiful chest and started playing with them. As soon as he touched her chest, she moaned a little, slightly opening her lips. Long Su took advantage of this small opening and slid his tongue inside her mouth, trying to find her tongue.

After his tongue found hers, he started playing with it while slowly moving his hands inside her dress on her soft chest. She kept moaning softly, and now there was no clothing between his hands and her chest as he started rubbing her breasts gently. He could fully enjoy the sensation of her soft chest. They both fell on the bed, lost in each other.

While this was happening in Long Su's room, Long Chen was still deep asleep on the chair outside. Just like this, 2 hours passed. Finally, the door of Long Su's bedroom opened. He came out smiling and full of vigor, and behind him was Tu Yue with a pleased smile on her deep red face. Her hair and clothes were in a mess. After saying her farewells to Long Su, she kissed him on the lips before she left the courtyard.

"That bitch Tu Yue. Although she's not as beautiful as Long Xue Ying, she's pretty amazing in bed and useful whenever needed. What a pity she's not my type, and only Long Xue Ying deserves me. But she's a good option to have occasional flings with to satisfy my needs," Long Su muttered to himself as he laughed and thought about the things that happened in his bedroom. After coming to his senses, he walked towards Long Chen.

'It's only been 2 hours; there is still about one more hour left. I should cultivate for a while and start moving when the time is right,' Long Su thought as he sat down.

After sitting down, Long Su began his cultivation and started absorbing Qi from the air to nurture his Martial soul.

Every cultivator who had a higher cultivation than the body refining realm had a Martial soul that they nurtured using Qi in the Spirit Establishment realm. All Martial souls had one similar quality - they looked just like the cultivator whom they belonged to.

In the first stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm, the cultivator would just have a soul seed, which was the requirement of breaking through to the first stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. Whereas to reach the second stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm, they needed to nurture their soul seed until that seed became a Martial soul, which looked like a little version of themselves.

In the second stage of the Spirit Establishment realm, this Martial soul would only have a little resemblance to their cultivators. As their cultivation increased, these similarities would also increase until the 10th stage, where this Martial soul would look exactly like the cultivator with no difference between them.

Long Su's Martial soul was just like this. Although it looked mostly similar to him, there were still a few minor differences that could be noticed, signifying that he wasn't a peak Spirit Establishment Realm cultivator, which was true, as he was still only at the 8th stage of Spirit Establishment Realm.

Long Su cultivated for over half an hour, absorbing the Qi to nurture his soul, and the similarities between him and his Martial soul started increasing, albeit at a very slow speed.

'Huh, I can sense that I am still a long way to a breakthrough. I need to work harder and reach the golden core soon. Then I will ask my grandfather to talk to Ying's grandpa regarding her marriage with me,' Long Su thought.

"It's about time to go," Long Su muttered as he looked towards Long Chen.

He stood up and walked towards Long Chen. He put one of Long Chen's arms on his shoulders and one of his arms on Long Chen's back, and then dragged him using his shoulder like he was helping a drunk guy walk, who was too drunk to walk properly.

He had already made arrangements, and he was using a path where usually no elder or core member of Long Clan passed through. As for the servants, his followers had already made sure that none were on this path at this time.

After walking for a little over 15 minutes on this path, Long Su finally reached the vicinity of the South gate of the Long clan.

"As expected of her, she sure did a good job," Long Su muttered with a smile on his face as he noticed that, just as Tu Yue had said, there were no guards on sight. This area was completely empty as planned.

He walked outside easily while being careful of his surroundings. After walking out of the Long clan, he breathed out in relief and got inside his personal carriage, which was waiting right outside for him. He immediately ordered the carriage driver to take it towards a certain direction south of the Long clan.

The Long clan resided in the Southern territory of Dragon City, while the Qin clan resided in the Eastern territory, and the Gu clan resided in the Western territory. All three major clans had vast land belonging to them and many businesses throughout. The Royal Palace was located in the center portion of the Dragon city, with the Royal clan residing there.

There was a large cliff on the Southern edge of the Dragon city. It was called the 'Heavenly cliff'. Its ravine was so deep that no one could even see the end of it. No one knew why there was such a scary cliff South of Dragon city, but they only knew that it had existed even before the Shui kingdom was established there.

Although no one could see how deep it was, one could only imagine by looking at the darkness at the bottom that it was scarily deep. It was assumed that it was more than a few kilometers deep. No one knew what was at the end of it.

Although people were curious about it, no one ever entered it to search through it as they weren't qualified. Only cultivators having a cultivation level of sky realm or above could fly in this world.

Although there were many cultivators in this world having a cultivation level of the Sky realm or even stronger, there were none at this level in the Shui kingdom. Even the king of Shui himself wasn't in the Sky realm and only in the Earth realm, let alone other cultivators. That was why no one from Shui ever entered there.

Meanwhile, stronger cultivators of even stronger kingdoms were not interested in weaker kingdoms like Shui and its little resources and mysteries. So no one ever ventured deep inside Heavenly cliff. The direction Long Su's carriage was driving in was exactly towards the Heavenly cliff.

Chapter 15 - 15 : A Ring?

Long Su's carriage traveled for a little over an hour while he was sitting inside comfortably looking at Long Chen, before his carriage finally stopped.

Long Su came out of his carriage and looked around. He could see that he had reached the Heavenly cliff and finally smiled. He got Long Chen out of his carriage and brought him closer to the cliff. As he was dragging Long Chen, Long Su noticed Long Chen's eyelids moving slightly.

"It looks like this drug's effect was not as good as he had described. It hasn't even been 5 hours, and he is already about to wake up," Long Su muttered to himself.

"Hah. Whatever. It's fine. Even if he wakes up, we are already outside of the Long Clan. At least now he can see how he died with his own eyes," Long Su laughed as he brought Long Chen closer to the edge of the cliff.

Long Chen slowly but steadily opened his eyes. As soon as his eyes opened, the first thing that he saw was Long Su's face. But before he could register what was going on, he felt someone push him as the gravity around him changed. Long Su smiled as he pushed Long Chen over the edge of the Heavenly cliff.

"Goodbye, little bastard! Say hi to your dad in hell for me," Long Su said loudly, like he was worried that Long Chen wouldn't hear him.

Long Chen could see Long Su's laughing face as he fell down. There came one thought in his mind.

"Why... Why..... Why did he do this to me? I never did anything wrong to him. I had never even met him before; why would he do this to me? My own clan member is killing me? Is this the reality of this world? The true face of relations?" Long Chen thought within his heart as he started feeling disappointed.

"Long Su!!! I will kill you with my own hands if I ever survive this calamity! I promise you!!!" Long Chen screamed as his disappointment turned into anger.

Long Su could only see Long Chen's mouth moving, but he could not hear what he was saying. He was enjoying the view of Long Chen falling down the cliff and stayed there with a smile on his face until Long Chen finally disappeared from his view.

He told the carriage driver to take him back to Long Manson. The driver saw everything that had happened there, but he ignored everything as he was only loyal to Long Su. He then started driving back.

While Long Su was going back towards Long Mansion, Long Chen was still falling. After falling for over five minutes, Long Chen had calmed down. At this speed and from the height he fell from, he started wondering if he could even survive this fall on impact. He had already thought that it was nearly impossible for him to stay alive.

Finally, he fell below the fog covering the Heavenly cliff. As he looked below, he could see the ending of the Heavenly cliff. There was a lake just below him at the bottom. The lake seemed to contain water, but at the same time, it looked different from water.

Although the water looked as transparent as normal water, it was slightly green in color. Instead of being relieved, he grew even more anxious. Long Chen realized that if he fell from such a height, even if he fell into the body of water, he would most definitely be crushed to death.

He thought to himself, 'If I keep falling like this, I will certainly fall inside this lake and die because of the heavy impact.'

He started praying for a miracle to happen, praying that he would survive the impact. Just as he was 5 meters above that lake, he closed his eyes.

He fell into the lake, but strangely enough, there was no solid impact as he predicted. Long Chen felt like he hadn't even fallen into the water. Once he realized that he was in the water, he started swimming upwards towards the lake's surface.

He was so happy that he learned how to swim on the Earth. The original Long Tian did not know how to swim. If he did not know either, he would have drowned right here and right now.

Long Chen started swimming towards the edge of the lake. After swimming for a few minutes, he reached the shore and came out of the water.

After getting out of the water, he laid on the ground.

"What a strange lake... Why was the impact so soft?" Long Chen wondered. He sat up after a brief moment and gazed at the lake. Even after thinking for a while, he couldn't come to a conclusion.

'It looks so normal... Nothing like I ever assumed the bottom of the Heavenly cliff to look like.' Long Chen thought as he looked at his surroundings, and what he saw did not amaze him in the slightest. There were only trees as far as his eyes could see, and he couldn't even see what was on the other side of the trees. He just assumed there were more trees.

"It looks like there is only this lake and forest below the Heavenly cliff. It's so disappointing that there isn't anything interesting," Long Chen muttered to himself.

After looking around for a few seconds and finding no traces of anyone else, he took off all of his wet clothes and put them on a stone to dry.

He then started looking for something to eat. After walking for a few minutes, he finally found a fruit tree. The fruits looked like apples but were golden in color. Long Chen had never seen or read about this kind of fruit, so he couldn't help but be wary about eating them.

"I wonder if these fruits are poisonous? I should probably look around more. I can probably find something else to eat that isn't so intimidating," Long Chen thought as he continued his wander.

As Long Chen was looking around for trees with more common fruits, he found a beautiful ring that caught his attention. This ring looked old and ancient, and there were a few strange patterns on it. Long Chen picked the ring up and looked at it closely. Other than a few ancient patterns that he wasn't able to recognize, he couldn't find anything else on it.

"Why is there a ring here? It looks so ancient and expensive. It must be worth a lot," Long Chen questioned as he examined the ring closely.

Long Chen knew from the memories he had inherited that this world contained some special rings called storage rings. The rings could be used to contain various items inside them. He wondered if this was one of those rings. Long Chen tried sending his Qi inside the ring, but nothing happened.

Long Chen had read about storage rings and how they were used. Storage rings often needed someone to send a bit of their Qi inside them to open up the ring or put things inside, but nothing happened when he sent his Qi inside the ring.

'This ring probably isn't a storage ring, but it still looks pretty good,' Long Chen thought with a disappointed look on his face. He decided to wear the ring, anyway.

He decided to place the ring on his right middle finger. Just as he put the ring on his finger, he felt a sensation inside him that was connecting him to the ring.

He knew a lot about storage rings, but he had never read or heard anything about there being a mental connection that occurred between a cultivator and his storage ring.

This time, he tried to send a thought to the ring without using any Qi, and just as he did it, he was able to access the space inside it. He realized that this ring was truly a storage ring, but it worked on a different principle than the ones used in this world.

Long Chen was amazed as he saw the space inside it. It was filled with things that he had never heard about or could ever imagine existing in this world. The most expensive storage ring he had heard about was said to have a storage area of a few hundred meters, but there seemed to be over a few square kilometers of a storage area that was available inside this ring.

Long Chen also noticed that there was something already inside the ring.

Chapter 16 - 16 : Inside The Ring

As soon as Long Chen saw the things that were inside in this storage ring, he was amazed. Only a few things could be seen inside the huge space that this ring contained, making it seem almost empty.

The first thing Long Chen saw inside this ring was a beautiful and transparent crystal necklace. It looked so shiny and beautiful that Long Chen couldn't help but gaze at it for a long time. He brought it out from his storage ring and held it in his hand. He could feel its smoothness and texture. Without thinking much, he decided to wear this crystal necklace around his neck.

The second thing that Long Chen noticed inside the ring was a strange egg. He had never seen an egg as strange as this. It looked to be the size of a football from his previous world.

Long Chen brought this egg out of the storage ring and tried to study it. The only special thing that made it look strange were the strange ancient characters that were present on its shell which only made it look even more mesmerizing.

Long Chen tried sending some of his Qi to it through his fingers, but he was shocked to see that this egg absorbed all of his Qi like a hungry wolf that hadn't been fed for a long time.

After sending a little more Qi to this egg, he decided to stop sending Qi as he noticed that his Qi had started depleting. After he stopped sending his Qi to this egg, he noticed that there were no changes in the egg and no movements could be felt inside.

Long Chen decided that he would feed this egg a little Qi every day, and maybe this egg might hatch later. He couldn't help but wonder about the beast this egg contained.

This world was vast and other than cultivators, this world also contained many more creatures that Long Chen did not know about.

Amongst these creatures were animals and beasts. Although beasts had similarities to animals, they were different as they were a lot stronger.

Beasts had their own rankings. The weakest beasts were called Wild beasts. Although they were the weakest amongst beasts, they still had the strength similar to a Body Refining Realm expert of the human race. Wild beasts were also divided into stages. The weakest wild beast was a first stage wild beast,

whereas the strongest was the 10th stage. This was also a piece of common knowledge in this world that a beast was normally always stronger than the Normal human cultivator at a similar level of cultivation.

Stronger beasts were called Spirit beasts; even stronger ones were called golden beasts, earthly beasts, sky beasts, and heavenly beasts. Their classification was mostly similar to human's rankings. This was the strength system that the humans had decided. It was to make it easier to categorize the beasts based on their cultivation.

Beasts also had various bloodlines. Beasts were also classified based on their bloodlines. While the weakest beast bloodline was called a normal bloodline, the stronger ones were called King grade, Emperor grade, Saint grade, and finally God grade bloodlines.

Beasts with Saint grade bloodline were only a legend in this world, let alone God grade bloodline, which was only said to be a myth.

Bloodlines played an important role for beasts, as these described their potential for cultivation and strength. Sometimes a King grade bloodline demonic beast was way stronger than a normal bloodline Spirit beast at a similar cultivation level. They also had a faster cultivation speed and an easier time reaching the higher Realms. It was similar for stronger bloodlines, which had even better potential.

Long Chen wondered which beast this egg contained, if any. He was excited thinking about the moment it would hatch so he could see the beast who was inside.

Other than these two things, he could not find anything else in such a vast space. He decided to put the egg back in his storage ring and started looking for something to eat again.

Even after looking around for a long time, he could not find anything to eat, so he decided to go back. On the way back, he passed through the same tree containing golden fruits. This time he decided to pick them up and put them in his storage ring on the way back.

Long Chen reached the lake.

"That's better," Long Chen muttered when he saw that his clothes had already dried up. He did not like being naked in this jungle for long, so he decided to put his clothes back on.

After wearing his clothes, he sat down on a stone and started looking upwards, wondering how he could get out. Unfortunately, he could not see any path out.

While Long Chen was looking upwards, he did not realize that the transparent crystal in his necklace had started turning violet in color very slowly.

Finally, night arrived and Long Chen was so hungry that he could not help but take a golden fruit out from his storage ring.

"Fuck it, I'll be here for a long time. I'll die if I don't eat anything. Better to take the risk now than suffer from hunger and still end up eating it. I will take the risk of eating it," Long Chen said as he stared at the fruit.

He decided to take the risk, as he thought that dying from poison would be better than dying from hunger.

As soon as he took the first bite of the fruit, Long Chen felt that all his tiredness was gone. In fact, he felt even stronger than before.

"These fruits are so amazing, only one bite and I'm already feeling so energetic. And they are quite tasty as well," said Long Chen as he took another bite and slowly finished this fruit happily.

Although he liked eating this fruit, he decided to only eat one tonight, as he did not know how long he would have to stay down here. After eating, Long Chen began cultivating and his speed of cultivation was just as fast as before.

He thought that he would break through to the next realm soon. After a while, he finished his cultivation and decided to sleep. He spread a few tree leaves on the ground and went to sleep on them.

While Long Chen was trapped at the bottom of the heavenly cliff, his clan was searching for him madly.

When Sima Ziyi went to Long Chen's room to give him his food, she found that his room was empty. She thought that he probably went out to play again, but even after evening arrived, her son hadn't returned.

She started getting worried. She began searching for him everywhere but could not find him anywhere. At least she decided to inform Long Ren about this. Long Ren was cultivating, but as soon as he heard about Long Chen going

missing, he stopped his cultivation immediately and issued a clan wide order to search for Long Chen.

After searching for a while, they finally found some clues. They found out that a few people had seen him inside the library, but no one saw him after he left.

Everyone started searching for Long Chen, including Long Xue Ying who was actually worried about him. Even Long Su started searching for Long Chen and he looked really worried about his safety, but inside he was laughing happily.

After searching every corner of the Long Clan Mansion and even searching in everyone's room, they still did not find Long Chen anywhere.

Inside Long Ren's courtyard, every important member of the Long Clan was there trying to come up with ways to find Long Chen. Long Ren was sitting in deep thought while Sima Ziyi was crying in a corner, worried for her child.

Chapter 17 - 17 : A Dream?

While Long Chen was sleeping soundly near a beautiful lake at the bottom of the Heavenly Cliff, a strange event was happening in that beautiful transparent crystal necklace that he received from this ancient storage ring. That transparent crystal had turned completely violet as if it was the purple thunder of Heaven itself.

As soon as this crystal became violet, it changed from a crystallized form to a liquid form. It took the shape of a droplet of blood, but it was different from a normal human blood drop. It was a completely violet blood drop, pulsating with extraordinary energy.

This blood drop seemed like it contained immense power that could change the Heavens and Earth itself. It also looked like it contained a strange power that was resonating with that ancient ring. Too bad no one could see it, as the only person there was Long Chen and he was still sleeping soundly on the ground. However, even if others were here and could see it happening themselves, they would not be able to understand what was happening.

After changing its shape completely, this violet blood drop started moving and suddenly entered Long Chen's body, going inside his heart as it slowly integrated itself with Long Chen. This process lasted for nearly an hour.

After this process ended, there was a slight change in Long Chen's body. The original blood of his body had started turning violet. Although it was happening at a very small pace on a molecular level, if it continued changing, every drop of his blood would be converted. It would probably take a long time for this to happen, but all of his blood would eventually turn violet.

If Long Chen knew what was happening with his body, he would not know whether to be amazed at the events that were transpiring or to be scared about it. However, Long Chen had no idea that it was happening as he was still sleeping.

That night the violet blood drop entered Long Chen's body, Long Chen dreamt of something interesting.

In Long Chen's dreams, there was a handsome man with long, flaming red hair and golden eyes sitting on a chair. This man had a handsome face that looked unordinary when paired with the demonic charm that he possessed. This person looked to be only 25-30 years old and was wearing a pretty luxurious blood-red robe.

Although Long Chen could not feel the slightest bit of cultivation from this guy, he could feel that this person was a really strong existence and one whom Long Chen was not even eligible to come in contact with.

While Long Chen was observing this man curiously, this red-robed man was focused on writing something in a book. The strange thing was that he was not using ink to write inside the book.

He was using his Qi to write in this book, and his Qi looked like nothing he had ever seen before. It was very dense and powerful. Its purity was nothing like Long Chen had ever seen before.

He could feel that just this negligible amount of qi that he used for writing, was many times stronger than the amount of Qi used in his grandfather's strongest attacks. Similarly, the Qi contained in the attacks of the King of Shui was too weak to compare. Long Chen knew this because he had once seen his grandfather spar with the Emperor of Shui.

Although it was a friendly spar, they both used everything they had, and Long Chen's grandfather was defeated in the end. At that time Long Chen was amazed at their strength, but right now he felt something different.

He felt like comparing this man with the Emperor of Shui would be an insult to a strong person like the man in front of him. Long Chen thought that in front of this person here, even the strongest person in his kingdom, the Emperor, would be like an ant. Long Chen could not even imagine how strong this person would be in reality.

As Long Chen was thinking about it, he realized that he was inside a dream as he could remember himself being near the lake at the bottom of the heavenly cliff, and now suddenly he was here.

Long Chen walked towards this guy until he stood right in front of him, but that person did not look at him in the slightest. It was like he could not even see him.

Long Chen tried talking to him and waving his hands in front of the man's eyes, but he received no response, which confirmed his conjecture that it was all just a dream. Instead, this man was only focused on writing.

After a while, this red-robed man stopped writing and closed his book. He looked at this book for a while with a thoughtful look on his face and just as he was about to get up, there was a sudden knock on the door.

Long Chen saw this red-robed person get up as he put the book in his hand on the table nearby. He then walked towards the door.

As this guy opened the door, Long Chen was able to see the person standing outside. He saw that there was a young girl standing there. The girl looked to be in her early twenties. Although Long Chen could feel that this girl was very strong as well, it was not at the level of this man. From the way she looked at him and the expressions of this woman, Long Chen could guess that she was this man's servant.

The girl gave the red-robed man a letter. After getting this letter, this red-robed man said something to the girl as she left. But he did not close the door, instead he stood there as he read the letter. He smiled a little after he finished reading it. Long Chen could feel that this man was happy about something.

"Such a nice smile," Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the red-robed man.

When the man smiled, Long Chen could see how handsome this guy looked with a smile. He thought that if this guy was in his world, no girl would be able to control herself in front of him if he smiled and would fall in love with him instantly.

After reading the letter, this person kept the letter in his storage ring and went outside. Long Chen was shocked when he saw all this.

Long Chen noticed that the storage ring that was used by the red-robed man looked just like the ancient ring that he had found while roaming around this evening inside the forest at the bottom of the heavenly cliff. He was stunned at the discovery.

He wanted to go after the red-robed man as he walked towards the exit, but he was unable to pass it.

"Ahh... this strange barrier! Looks like I can't leave this room," Long Chen muttered as he felt a barrier preventing him from exiting the room.

"Let's see what I can find inside," Long Chen muttered with a smile as he decided to give up. He knew that he would not be able to exit the barrier, and even if he could exit, he wouldn't be able to keep up with such a strong existence.

"I wonder why that guy did not keep this book inside his storage ring before leaving. There could only be two possibilities as far as I can guess. Firstly, either the person who wrote that letter or the content inside was very

important to that man which made him leave in a hurry. In his hurry, he forgot to take the book with him." Long Chen muttered as he gazed towards the book on the table.

"The second possibility could be that this book might not be that important in his eyes, and he casually wrote something inside. So he didn't bother putting it in his ring as he went out. Whatever the reason, I should check the book out." Long Chen continued with a thoughtful look on his face

Long Chen walked towards the table as he looked at the book. He picked it up and observed it carefully. He could see that the book was made of some really good material, but there were no actual words written on its cover.

He opened this book and started reading it. It did not take him much longer to finish reading it, but his expressions became strange as he read it. After reading the book, Long Chen closed the book and placed it on the table just as it was.

He was shocked when he read what was inside.

Chapter 18 - 18 : Breakthrough To Spirit Establishment

As soon as he read this book, Long Chen was amazed.

After reading the book, he found out that written inside it was a cultivation technique. Long Chen could feel that there was something special about it.

"Although I do not know much about cultivation techniques other than the ones that I read in the Long clan, I can feel that this one is pretty extraordinary compared to our Clan's cultivation technique!" Long Chen muttered to himself.

Although there was nothing written on the cover, Long Chen had already seen this red-robed guy in front of him write inside this book a few minutes ago. He understood that this red-robed person had made this technique.

He wasn't sure if it was a cultivation technique that this guy had cultivated with and decided to write down, or if it was something he had made up just now. If the second case was true, then this guy would truly be a heavenly genius, as he was creating his own cultivation technique.

'This man is really amazing to be able to write such a cultivation technique. Did he just think of this technique and write it down, or was he always cultivating with this amazing technique and decided to make a copy of it for someone?' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"Whatever the case, as this is just a dream, I should not think too much. It is good enough that I get to learn it. I should be thankful to him for this opportunity. It's too bad that it's just a dream and I cannot interact with him and thank him personally," Long Chen said to himself.

Long Chen stood there trying to understand this method better. Although this cultivation method had similar cultivation levels, Long Chen could feel that it was a completely different approach.

Long Chen did not know what to call this technique as there wasn't any name written on it anywhere, so he decided to think about it later and name it then.

'As there is no name for it, I will just call it Nameless Cultivation Technique for now, and name it when I think of a name later.' Long Chen thought as he looked at the book.

Long Chen decided to test this cultivation technique. He sat down right there and started moving Qi according to the method described in this unnamed cultivation technique.

Just as he did that and started cultivating, he found out that all of the surrounding Qi from the air was entering his body at a speed faster than anything he had ever seen before. If he were to guess, he would probably think that it was more than a hundred times faster than his previous cultivation speed.

While Long Chen was cultivating inside his dream, in the real world his body was greedily sucking all the surrounding Qi from the air at an incredible pace.

Also, there was a slight increase in the pace of his blood conversion from red to violet, but it was negligible and would take long to convert his blood fully.

In his dream, Long Chen was still cultivation according to the Nameless Cultivation Technique. Long Chen was already at the peak of the Body Refining Realm for a long time, and now he wanted to take advantage of this increase in cultivation speed to break through to the Spirit Establishment Stage in one go.

He kept his focus on cultivation and followed every step that was mentioned in this cultivation technique. The surrounding Qi kept entering inside his body and moved along the specific places that Long Chen directed according to the Nameless Cultivation Technique.

After cultivating for a while, a small soul seed started taking shape inside his body. It slowly got bigger and denser.

After a while he felt like a barrier was broken, and a complete soul seed came into existence in his dantian. Long Chen knew at that moment that he had broken through. He smiled and opened his eyes.

"Finally, I have broken through to the Spirit Establishment realm, I have my own soul seed now!" Long Chen smiled happily as he tried to use his consciousness to look inside his dantian. Long Chen could use his consciousness now, as he had broken through to the Spirit Establishment Realm.

As his consciousness entered his dantian, Long Chen could see a small soul seed floating there. Although it was called a soul seed, it looked less like a seed and more like an eggshell. Long Chen was shocked as soon as he saw it clearly.

This soul seed was nothing like he had ever heard about. Long Tian's father, Long Jun, had already told Long Tian a lot about Spirit Establishment and the changes that occur with it.

Long Tian's grandfather Long Ren had also done the same and told Long Tian about cultivation when Long Tian was at the peak of the Body Refining Realm, before his accident. And Long Tian himself had read many books about cultivation. Through Long Tian's memories, Long Chen knew a lot about the Spirit Establishment realm. That's why he was shocked as he saw his soul seed.

"Why... Why is it like this...?" Long Chen muttered to himself, feeling shocked.

Long Chen knew that the soul seed of a cultivator was always white in color with no exceptions, but the soul seed that Long Chen had was vastly different.

Long Chen was shocked to see that his soul seed was golden in color, and he could also see there were a few violet patterns on his golden soul seed. He did not know why this was happening.

"Why is it golden? Normally it should have been white! Was it because of this cultivation technique? And what's with these violet patterns?" said Long Chen to himself, but he could not think of the answers to his own questions.

'I do not feel anything wrong with my body. In fact, everything is better than I could hope for, I am really in the Spirit Establishment realm. It's fine even if my soul seed is different, it is mine and there is nothing wrong with being an exception.' Long Chen thought as he looked happily at his soul seed.

"The main question is that since I am in a dream, I probably won't have this same cultivation in real life, but as long as I remember this technique, I can always breakthrough in the real world as well." Long Chen said to himself with determination.

"I should look around this room more. Maybe I can find some other techniques or books as well. Although I feel bad looking at this man's things without his permission, it's a dream, so it's probably okay." Long Chen said to himself with a guilty look on his face.

After thinking for a while, Long Chen decided to do it. He started looking around the room. He looked around everywhere, but he could not find any

book. And there were even a few drawers that were locked, so he was not able to look inside them. Even after trying for a long time to open them, they did not open and Long Chen decided to give up on trying to open them.

Just as Long Chen was about to give up completely, his eyes fell on the trash can in the room, and he could see the edge of a book extending from it. Long Chen quickly ran to it and when he reached it, he could see clearly that it was truly a book. He wondered why this book was thrown inside the trash can.

He picked this book up, but this time there were a few words written on the cover.

Chapter 19 - 19: Heavenly Demon Wings

Just as Long Chen picked up the book, he could see that it was a little different from the previous book. Its material was different from the previous one and did not feel as good, although it was still more superior than anything else he had seen back home.

One more thing that was different about this book compared to the previous book was that there was actually a name written in the book.

'HEAVENLY DEMON WINGS' were the words written on this book in large letters.

"Heavenly demon wings....what a good name for a skill. I hope that this technique is just as good as its name suggests," Long Chen said to himself while looking at this book.

Long Chen liked reading such a dominating name, and he was already impressed with the name of this technique. Long Chen thus decided to read it.

Long Chen opened this book and started reading. As he was reading this book page by page, his expressions were constantly changing regularly, from curious to amazed, then to shocked, and then to thoughtful.

As Long Chen read the last page, he finally had a smile on his face, and after finishing reading it, he closed the book.

"Amazing... such amazing Martial skills. If this Martial skill was made available in my world, empires would wage wars over it. Why was it thrown in the dustbin?" Long Chen was talking to himself, but he couldn't be sure of the reason.

'Maybe this person doesn't like this technique as he thinks it is weak and not worth his attention, or he has bad memories attached to this technique. There is a good chance that it is related to the author who wrote this technique, but it is only a guess at this moment as I don't know anything about it.' Long Chen was thinking, trying to make sense of things, but since he could not be sure, he gave up.

Long Chen gave up on trying to find the reason for it to be thrown in the trash can and decided to focus on the content only.

As Long Chen could see, this book contained a flying type of Martial skill. Long Chen was happy as he got a flying type of Martial skill. Flying-type

Martial skills were very rare in the world Long Tian was from, and only very few people possessed it. There was none in the Shui kingdom who had one, including the emperor himself.

As only cultivators having Sky Realm or above could fly without any flying type Martial skills, these skills were very useful for people weaker than the sky realm.

The importance of these techniques could be understood from something Long Tian had read in a book about them. All the flying type techniques available were core inheritances of some of the largest clans in his world and sharing them with the others was prohibited and punished by death.

Although average flying type Martial skills were useful until the Earth realm, Long Chen knew that these 'Heavenly Demon Wings' were even better than those techniques and would only grow stronger as his cultivation grew and his mastery in this skill increased.

As this Martial skill's name suggested, after using it a cultivator would be able to make wings using his own Qi and would be able to fly with the help of those wings. After learning it, Long Chen would be able to fly as long as his Qi lasted, and as his mastery in this Martial skill increased, his Qi consumption would simultaneously decrease, allowing him to fly for longer durations without rest.

Long Chen wanted to start learning and practicing this skill right here, but just as he was about to, there was a loud crash heard outside the room. Suddenly, heavy knocks started resounding from the room's door. Before he could understand anything, his dream broke and he woke up.

He found himself lying on the ground just like he was last night. There was a cold breeze flowing around, probably due to the cold lake water.

He got up and yawned. The sun was shining brightly in the sky. He noticed a few changes in his body and had a big happy smile on his face.

Long Chen was a little taller than the last time, and even though it was only by a small margin, it still did not escape his observation. His skin also looked even better than it did before, but these were not the changes he was happy about.

Long Chen was smiling about a completely different thing. As he got up, he noticed that he still had the same strength that he had in his dream after he

broke through to the Spirit Establishment realm. Long Chen tried sending his consciousness inside again, and his golden soul seed was still inside.

Long Chen was so happy after finding out that he was still in the Spirit Establishment realm. He wondered how it was possible that a breakthrough achieved in a dream was able to make him a Spirit Establishment cultivator, but Long Chen could not think of a reason and did not think too much about it. Long was happy as long as he had made a breakthrough.

After celebrating for a little while, his stomach started making noises, indicating that he was hungry, and it was time to eat.

Long Chen sat down on a nearby stone and took out a golden fruit from his storage ring. He then started eating this golden fruit slowly.

He was feeling a little bit of sadness as he looked at the lake while eating the golden fruit. He could not help but remember the time when he was back on Earth when his father and mother had once taken him camping near a lake.

Just like today, Long Chen was eating in front of a lake, and his father and mother were around him. But this time he was all alone, sitting at the bottom of a cliff because of someone's scheme.

Long Chen could not help but think of his father and mother. He felt sad that he had died on Earth and left them all alone, and how sad they must be after hearing of his death.

Long Chen missed those innocent days of school where he did not need to worry about schemes and threats of death all the time. The girl who sat beside him in school was also his childhood friend, and he missed how they both enjoyed their school life. His melancholy filled the atmosphere.

Hours passed just like this. Finally, he decided to stop thinking of such depressing thoughts and decided to focus on getting stronger and getting out of here now he had a tool to do that.

He decided that he would use this Martial technique to get out of here.

Chapter 20 - 20 : Chaos In Dragon City

As Long Chen was trapped in that place, the whole dragon city was in chaos. Warriors of the Long clan could be found everywhere in the city looking for Long Chen.

They were asking everywhere if anyone had seen Long Chen, and even checking the places they suspected he might have gone to. They were spread throughout Dragon City looking for Long Chen's whereabouts.

There were even a few clashes between cultivators of the Long clan and the other two major clans, the Gu clan and the Qin clan during this time. Although there were only a few minor clashes, things didn't escalate too much, and everything was handled by higher-level authorities of all the major clans.

Although these three clans were kind of rivals, the other two clans had decided not to interfere in Long Clan's search unless they trespassed their Clan's properties.

Even the emperor himself had called Long Ren to his royal palace, asking him about what was happening in his city. After Long Ren told him everything, he gave his consent to keep searching, but he specifically told him that there should be no damage to any property or else the Long clan would have to pay for those damages from their own pockets. And if an innocent was killed during this search, then the person responsible would be punished as per rules as well, even if he was a warrior of the Long clan. Long Ren had agreed to these conditions instantly.

"Why are the Long clan warriors everywhere creating a disturbance?" A drunk, scar-faced person was talking to his friend in a restaurant.

"Don't you know anything? A young master of the Long clan, Long Tian has gone missing yesterday. The Long clan is using all of their forces to find him," His friends told him while drinking beer.

"Long Tian? Isn't that the crazy guy? Shouldn't the Long clan be happy that they got rid of such a dumb kid? They have so many talented members. Why search like crazy for such useless trash who cannot even think like a normal person?" The scar-faced guy asked him.

"Shhh... Do you want to get us killed? Warriors of the Long clan are everywhere. If anyone of them heard you, we will both die without a grave," his friend closed this scar-faced guy's mouth with a scared look on his face as he whispered.

"Although Long Tian is not the best in the Long clan, he is still one of the main bloodlines of the Long clan. Most importantly, he is Long Ren's grandson, and you know how protective Long Ren is of his clan members, let alone his own grandson. Also, I heard Long Ren blames himself for his son, and Long Tian's father Long Jun's death and not being able to protect him, so he cares for Long Tian a lot." That person said to this scar-faced guy.

Many people were curious as to why the Long clan was behaving like this and conversations about this were going on almost everywhere. Slowly, everyone in the city knew of Long Tian's disappearance, but since those people had nothing to do with it, they continued going on with their work as usual.

While things were in chaos in Dragon City, inside the main hall of the Long clan, Long Ren was sitting on the main seat while other elders were sitting on the other chairs. Even Supreme elder Long Hua and Grand elder were here, sitting on Long Ren's left and right.

"Where the hell is Tu Yue, and why can't she be found anywhere?" Long Ren slammed the table as he asked in a loud voice.

"Master Ren, we tried looking for her everywhere, but no one has seen her since yesterday evening after she went out," a subordinate informed Long Ren.

"Are you sure it was her? Why would she do it?" Supreme elder Long Hua asked Long Ren.

"It is clear it was her, I already found out about the security lapse on South gate the day Long Tian went missing. One of the guards informed me today about the 20 minutes delay of shift change on the southern gate on that day, which was due to Tu Yue's orders," Long Ren said in a serious voice, while looking towards Long Hua. Long Hua fell into deep thought.

While the Long clan was searching all around the property for Long Chen, the guards that were delayed on that day due to Tu Yue's strange order started doubting this event and relating it to their delay to their posts. All other gates were heavily guarded on that day except their own. Most of them did not say anything and kept it to themselves, except one.

One of the guards found one of Long Ren's subordinates and informed him of this event, and this subordinate informed Long Ren straight away. Long Ren immediately ordered for Tu Yue's arrest to bring her in for questioning, but they found out she was missing too. She had not returned since she went out last evening.

Because of this event, they started doubting her even more, and now Long Clan's warriors were searching for her throughout the city along with Long Chen.

While lives were being affected due to his absence, Long Chen had no idea about it at all. Long Chen was simply focused on learning this technique so that he could get out of there.

He kept trying to get his Qi out of his body just the way this Martial skill suggested, but halfway through, just as his wings were about to take shape, his Qi would dissipate. He thought that this skill was tough, so he would need to spend more time on it.

Long Chen kept practicing for 4 hours, and finally, he could form his wings and achieved initial success in this Martial skill. Now Long Chen was able to bring his Qi out of his body to form heavenly demon wings.

"This skill is so tough, it took me 4 hours just to get the wings to appear," Long Chen muttered to himself. But if he were to know that even heavenly geniuses took more than a day to achieve the same as he did in four hours, he wouldn't know what to think.

Long Chen looked at his own reflection in the lake and was amazed. Although these wings were formed using Qi and could dissipate, they still looked so real in his reflection. What was even more amazing was how beautiful and unique they looked.

Long Chen could see that one side of these wings were shiny golden in color, while the other side was completely black, like that of the darkness. They formed such a beautiful contrast with each other, which made them look so beautiful and unique.

Long Chen thought that this Martial skill was really amazing.

He then decided to fly up, as it was finally time to go back home.

Chapter 21 - 21 : Mana Crystal

Before Long Chen flew upwards, he decided to grab some of those golden fruits for the future. Long Chen went towards the tree containing the golden fruits and picked them all up, keeping them inside his storage ring.

After putting all these golden fruits in his storage ring, Long Chen went back towards the lake. It was now time for him to fly back home.

Long Chen looked at the scenery below the heavenly cliff one last time, trying to save this image in his mind as it was an experience that had changed his life.

Finally, Long Chen started utilizing the heavenly demon wings. Two beautiful wings formed at his back, one golden and the other black in color. Long Chen finally started flying, as he could feel his flying speed increasing and the rush of air on his face.

Long Chen was so happy that finally, he was about to go home. He wanted to see the expression on Long Su's face as he entered the Long Clan. He thought it would be priceless.

But just as Long Chen flew up to a height of 50 meters, his heavenly demon wings dissipated and he fell back on the ground. Fortunately, he was a cultivator and at the Spirit Establishment realm, so he wasn't hurt too much.

"Ahh, these few seconds of flying have consumed all my Qi, how can I go back home if it is like this?" Long Chen said to himself with a crestfallen and angry expression.

Just as Long Chen was 50 meters in the air, his Qi supply had ended as the heavenly demon wings consumed so much energy. When the supply was disrupted, these wings dissipated. Long Chen realized that this skill had consumed all his Qi in just a few seconds of flying.

"Although this skill is godly, its Qi consumption is also really high. To get back home, I'll need to get stronger. Only then will I have enough energy to fly to the top of the heavenly cliff," Long Chen muttered to himself.

'That works out as well, as I need more strength to kill Long Su, ' Long Chen thought.

As all his plans of going back were delayed because of him not being strong enough, Long Chen just sat there on a stone for a while. After a while, he

decided to go for a swim in this lake to refresh his mind before starting cultivation.

Long Chen took all his clothes off and jumped into the lake. After swimming for a while, Long Chen found out that there was something strange about this lake other than its slightly greenish color.

When Long Chen first fell inside this lake as Long Su had thrown him down the Heavenly cliff, Long Chen did not notice this about the lake as his mind was more focused on surviving and also because he wasn't at Spirit Establishment stage. Now that he was swimming inside this lake, he could feel that this lake was full of pure Qi which could directly be absorbed, and would decrease cultivation time.

"Why is the Qi inside this lake much more than in the air outside?" Long Chen started wondering.

Long Chen finally came to a conclusion after thinking for a while. Either it was a godly lake, or there was a source from where this lake was getting this pure Qi from. Long Chen believed that the chances of it being the second option was higher, so Long Chen decided to find that energy source.

If he had an energy source, Long Chen could use it to increase his cultivation at a rapid pace by absorbing the pure Qi naturally from its source rather than cultivating and absorbing the Qi from the air. This way, he would be able to go back home faster.

Long Chen dove right inside this lake to look for the energy source. Since he was now in the Spirit Establishment realm, he could hold his breath longer and could dive deeper without having to breathe. Just as he entered around 100 meters deep, he could see a blue light shining at some distance.

Long Chen instantly started swimming towards that light. After diving another 50 meters, Long Chen was able to see where that light was coming from. There was a shining blue crystal lying there at some distance from him at the depth of the lake.

Long Chen picked this crystal up and put it in his storage ring as he started looking for more. After searching for longer, Long Chen found one more crystal just like the previous one. Long Chen picked it up as well and started looking for more. But no matter how much Long Chen searched, he could not find any more crystals. He also started feeling that he would not be able to hold his breath for longer.

Long Chen decided to give up and started swimming upwards towards the surface of this lake. After reaching the surface, Long Chen climbed out of the lake and wore his clothes.

After wearing clothes, Long Chen took one of those 2 blue crystals out and observed them.

"Finally, something here that I could recognize. Now that I have these, I have the hope of going back home faster," Long Chen said to himself, smiling.

Long Chen had recognized these crystals as Mana crystals. These Mana crystals were the crystallization of pure Qi of nature. These crystals were highly sought after as they could be used for cultivation and could be used as the currency amongst cultivators.

But the Mana crystals that Long Chen had were unique. Long Chen had read about them in a book. He knew that there were many grades of many crystals in this world, but most cultivators generally used poor grade Mana crystal, above which were high grade, then peak grade, and lastly supreme grade Mana crystals.

Most Cultivators generally used poor grade Mana crystals as higher grade ones were pretty rare. In this world's conversation rate, a high-grade Mana crystal was worth a thousand poor grade Mana crystals, and a peak grade Mana crystal was worth 100 high-grade Mana crystals.

As for the legendary supreme grade Mana crystal, it was like a legend as they were the rarest to find, and a supreme grade Mana crystal was almost impossible to see nowadays. The last supreme grade Mana crystal was seen in public over 100 years ago. If it were to be put up for auction, it would be worth over 100 peak grade Mana crystals.

What Long Chen had in his hands were these very supreme grade Mana crystals. He decided to use them wisely.

Chapter 22 - 22 : Martial Soul

Long Chen now had two supreme grade Mana crystals in his hand.

"If I exchange these two supreme grade Mana crystals, I will have around twenty million poor grade Mana crystals. If I use these as money, I'll probably be the richest person in this kingdom, and not even the emperor will be able to compare to me. But their main value is their help in cultivation." Long Chen was amazed as he wondered how much these two crystals were worth.

After considering for a while, Long Chen decided not to use this crystal as money but as a cultivation resource. Long Chen needed to break through faster so that he could fly up and go back home.

"Using these Mana crystals, my strength can be upgraded a lot," Long Chen thought, looking at these deep blue crystals.

Long Chen sat down and took one supreme grade Mana crystal in his hands as he started cultivating as per his unnamed Cultivation technique. He kept absorbing the Qi, but the Qi inside Mana crystal was vast and would last for a long time.

Long Chen knew that he needed to upgrade his soul seed into a Martial soul to break through to the second stage of Spirit Establishment realm, so he kept cultivating. Hours passed as Long Chen kept absorbing the Qi from Mana crystal and using his cultivating method.

Long Chen cultivated for 6 hours before there was a slight change in his soul seed. His soul seed started increasing in size. After a few minutes, its increase in size stopped, but the change did not stop there. Small cracks started developing on the surface of his soul seed. These cracks kept extending slowly until they covered the whole surface of his soul seed.

After these cracks covered the soul seed completely, there was a blinding flash of light. After everything returned to normal, there was no soul seed there, only a small humanoid spiritual body. Long Chen stopped as he smiled and used his consciousness to look at his Martial soul.

"Finally, I'm in the second stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. But why is this Martial soul so different from what I've heard?" At first Long Chen was happy at his breakthrough, but when he looked at his Martial soul, he was amazed as well as confused.

Long Chen knew that when a Martial soul of a cultivator came into existence, it would be wearing a normal cultivator's robe and wouldn't have anything else. But Long Chen's martial soul was different. It had golden armor on its body, and a blood-red sword in its hands, looking like a war god ready to fight against the world.

Long Chen had never known about anything like this happening before. There was nothing like it written in any of the books Long Tian had read. But Long Chen thought that maybe it was because of his cultivation technique. Long Chen thought that it was even better if he had a unique Martial soul as there might be some benefits to it.

"Putting aside its armor and sword, what is more, confusing is its looks. I thought it would look more like me since now my soul is in Long Tian, but it still looks like him?" Long Chen looked as if he was talking to himself.

Long Chen was confused about the looks of his Martial soul. He thought that since it is his soul in Long Tian's body, his Martial soul would look like him from his original life, but it looked more like Long Tian. It had shiny golden eyes, black hair, and a beautiful face.

But Long Chen's Martial soul still looked a little bit different when compared to Long Chen's original appearance, and Long Chen knew that he would need to break through more for the similarities to increase. Long Chen decided to continue cultivation and stopped using his consciousness to observe his Martial soul.

As Long Chen got his consciousness out, he could not notice his Martial soul's eye color changing from golden to red for a microsecond and returning back to normal.

Long Chen looked at the Mana crystal in his hand and noticed that it was only depleted by around 20 percent and there were plenty more to be used for further cultivation. But Long Chen didn't know that even a normal gold core cultivator would only be able to absorb 20 percent Qi in a supreme Mana crystal after cultivation for three whole days, while Long Chen only took 6 hours.

Long Chen did not know this, but some of this fast absorption speed was due to his own talent, some due to his godly Cultivation technique, but mostly because of his violet blood. Although only a small portion of Long Chen's blood had turned violet, it was still enough to increase his speed of absorption by a lot.

Long Chen didn't know anything about it, as he continued his cultivation.

While Long Chen was cultivating at the bottom of the heavenly cliff and becoming stronger, the Long Clan was searching throughout the city for him and Tu Yue. There was someone else who was worried as well, but not for Long Chen, rather for his own safety.

Inside the Long clan in his own courtyard, Long Su was walking back and forth with a worried look on his face.

'That stupid Tu Yue, it's all her fault for not controlling her people properly. If she weren't so incompetent, I would not need to be worried today. How can she have such stupid people in her squad who told everything to Long Ren? If they were doubtful, they should've just stayed silent until that trash Long Chen's search ended!!' Long Su thought in anger while walking back and forth.

Long Su was staying in his own courtyard, while everyone was searching for Long Chen. He wasn't worried as he thought no one would find Long Chen, as he was already dead at the bottom of the heavenly cliff. He wasn't worried until Long Su heard the Long clan had started searching for Tu Yue as well.

Long Su was frightened and went to his father's courtyard. Before entering the house, Long Su changed his expression from worried to calm. He asked Long Hua about the search for Long Chen, acting like he was worried about Long Chen.

Long Hua told him every update, from a soldier doubting Tu Yue to that soldier informing Long Ren about it and about those 20 minutes lapse of security at the South gate.

Long Hua also told him that he thought that there was a good chance Tu Yue was the one responsible for Long Chen's disappearance, but he could not understand why she would do such a thing. Long Su acted oblivious as he excused himself and went back to his own courtyard. Since then Long Su was walking worriedly around his courtyard.

Suddenly, there was a knock on the door.

Chapter 23 - 23 : Meeting Tu Yue

Long Su was worried after hearing the knock on the door, but acted calmly as he asked his servant to open the door. His servant opened the door and came back with a letter after a few minutes.

"Master, it was a guard. He said that someone gave him this letter and asked it to be given only to you. He said that it is really important and that he will regret it if you found out he did not give you this letter," Long Su's servant told him as he handed over the letter.

"It is alright, you can go back now," Long Su said after looking at it for a few seconds. Long Su opened this letter and started reading it. This letter wasn't very long, but Long Su's expressions clearly changed as he read it.

The words written in this letter were:

'Master Su,

I went outside the Long clan to do something last night when I was informed by one of my subordinates that one of them betrayed me and told clan master Long Ren about me. And now everyone in the Long clan is searching for me.

I know that I can't come back to the Long clan anymore and I'm going to some other city to escape their pursuit. But before going there, I wanted to meet you one last time.

I am really grateful for all the great moments I spent with you, and I will always cherish you and those memories. But I want to make one last memory with you and see you one last time before I go.

I will be waiting at the Brave Warrior's tavern in West of dragon city for you until tomorrow morning. Please come meet me one last time.

Yours, Tu Yue'

Long Su finished reading the letter and burned it. Then he looked towards the West of dragon city with a thoughtful expression.

"At the Brave Warriors' tavern in the West... Although that place is very crowded and full of wild people, it's a good place to hide. Still, it is really lucky that Tu Yue could escape the Long Clan's pursuit till now," Long Su said to himself in his mind.

'The Long Clan's warriors are everywhere looking for Long Tian and Tu Yue. It is dangerous to go outside right now, and it might bring suspicion to me. But there's a need for it to be done. You helped me a lot till now, so I will be there to meet you one last time.' Long Su thought.

After thinking for a while, Long Su decided to meet Tu Yue and go out. He told his father, Long Hua, that he was going outside to buy some materials. After preparing everything, Long Su went outside and sat in his carriage telling the carriage driver where to go.

While Long Su was involved in his own troubles, Long Chen was cultivating in peace.

Long Chen had already reached the peak of the second stage of the Spirit Establishment and was close to a breakthrough.

Long Su entered the Brave Warrior's tavern with his face covered in a mask. Long Su had already changed his clothes from Luxurious clothes to normal ones. Also, Long Su did not come here in his carriage.

As soon as Long Su's carriage reached near the center of Dragon city at an empty place, he told his carriage driver to go on without him and take a tour of the city, and meet him back in three hours right here as he got out of the carriage.

Long Su had already changed his clothes inside his carriage before getting out so that no one would recognize him as he entered the Brave Warriors tavern.

Inside the tavern, Long Su could see a large crowd drinking and talking.

"This place is so messy and crowded," Long Su thought in his mind as he continued his search for Tu Yue. No one paid him any special attention for wearing a mask as there were many warriors who liked to come here with their faces covered and it wasn't anything special.

Long Su looked around for a while before he saw someone. That person was covered in a black robe and had a mask as well. But Long Su could see that this person's figure looked familiar, and that it was a woman. Hence Long Su decided to check.

Long Su walked towards that woman. After getting near her, he stood on her side and said, "Yue?"

"Master Su?" that person said in a surprised voice.

"Yes, it's me. Finally, I found you," Long Su said to Tu Yue as he put his hands on her shoulder.

"Master Su, let's go to my room upstairs so we can talk freely," Tu Yue said to Long Su as she brought him towards her room, holding his hands.

After getting inside the room, Tu Yue closed the door and took off her mask and robe. Her body looked just as amazing as before, Long Su couldn't help taking a few glances at her bountiful chest.

"It had been such a tough time hiding from the Long Clan's warriors. But at last, I found this tavern to hide as it is a confusing place and it provides rooms for staying without any identity verification as long as you pay them enough money. The Long Clan warriors had already checked it before when I was hiding in some other place," Tu Yue told Long Su all about her troubles and how she hid from the Long clan in great detail.

Long Su was amazed and understood how she could hide for so long. But Long Su knew that if she stayed here, she would not be able to hide for much longer.

"Tu Yue, I am sorry you got in trouble all this time because of me," Long Su said in an apologetic voice.

"It is fine master Su, I can do anything for you. Although I cannot stay in this city anymore, I'll go to some other city in the meantime and come back after everything calms down," Tu Yue said to Long Su.

"I wanted to go right away, but waited to see you one last time before I go. I wasn't even sure if you would come. I am so happy to see that you did," As Tu Yue said this, she hugged Long Su tightly.

Long Su could feel her big and soft chest pressed tightly to his body. Long Su could not help but put his hands around her as he hugged her back.

"You can always have faith in me, Yue'er," Long Su said as he kissed her.

While Long Chen was busy in cultivation and Long Su was busy with Tu Yue, two beautiful girls were flying towards Dragon city from a faraway place on two beautiful Moonlight swans, which were spirit grade beasts.

Chapter 24 - 24 : Another Dream?

Long Su started kissing Tu Yue as he started moving his hand on her back slowly until he found his way to her butt and started playing with it. After kissing her for a while, their lips separated, and they both looked into each other's eyes

Long Su started taking Tu Yue's clothes off as well as his own until they were both naked. Long Su looked at her body greedily as he picked her up in his arms and brought her towards the bed.

At the bottom of the Heavenly cliff, Long Chen was still cultivating and had already broken through to the 3rd stage of the Spirit Establishment realm a little while back.

"Even after breaking through to the 3rd stage of Spirit refining realm, I have only consumed about 60 percent of this mana crystal's Qi. There is still about 40 percent left. And there is also one more supreme grade Mana crystal left. I can probably break through more," Long Chen smiled as he said to himself and looked at the Mana crystal in his hands. Long Chen then continued his cultivation.

Long Su was lying in bed with Tu Yue in his arms. After spending an hour with each other in bed, they were both tired. Long Su looked towards Tu Yue while she looked back at him with love in her eyes.

Long Su kissed her lips once more, playing with her chest with his free hand during the meantime. After a few minutes, he separated himself from Tu Yue and stood up.

"It is time for me to go," Long Su said as he got dressed. While Tu Yue looked like she wanted more, she gave up and got up as well.

"I had a great time with you Tu Yue, I will miss you," Long Su said as he hugged her.

"I'll miss you too young master Su, I ..." Tu Yue looked like she wanted to say something but stopped midway as her expression changed, from infatuated a moment ago to heartbroken and sad.

She looked down and could see blood coming out of her chest, where a knife had been stabbed.

"Why..." Tu Yue could barely speak and had tears in her eyes as she looked at Long Su with a pained expression.

"You are a really nice and beautiful girl Tu Yue and I would have loved to use you for longer, but now you are a danger to me as well, as you are the only link that Long Ren can use to get to me. For me to survive, you need to die," Long Su said to Tu Yue with a cruel expression on his face.

"Thanks for the last hour, I really enjoyed playing with your body," Long Su said as he smiled.

Tu Yue touched Long Su's cheeks with her fingers like a loving wife and looked like she wanted to say something, but could not continue and collapsed on the ground.

If Tu Yue was alert, she could have survived and felt his killing intent, as she was only one rank below Long Su in cultivation, at the 7th stage of Spirit Establishment while Long Su was at 8th stage Spirit Establishment. But Tu Yue had no defenses against Long Su, as she could not even imagine Long Su killing her.

"Now there is nothing left that can be used to get to me, but I should get out of here first," Long Su looked at Tu Yue for a while before he put the mask back on his face and went out.

Long Su walked out of the tavern without any trouble and started walking towards the place his carriage was supposed to be waiting.

Long Su's carriage was waiting for him at the exact spot he had told his driver to stand at.

Long Su entered the carriage and took off his mask and clothes as he put his luxurious golden clothes back on. Long Su told his carriage driver to bring him back home. The carriage started moving towards the Long clan mansion

At the bottom of the Heavenly cliff, Long Chen was still cultivating and had reached the peak of the Spirit Establishment realm before his first supreme grade Mana crystal was fully consumed.

Long Chen decided to stop cultivating for today and continue tomorrow as he thought that he was breaking through too fast and should consolidate his realm a little as well as it was already night now.

Long Chen got up and stretched his body a little before walking towards the lake and sitting on a stone facing the lake. Long Chen was wondering how his absence from the Long clan would have affected everyone's life. He also thought that Long Tian's mother and his grandfather must be very worried for him.

"Although I am not your son, now that I am in Long Tian's body, his family is my family. I won't let you be worried for long," Long Chen said with a determined face as he looked in the direction of the Long clan.

Suddenly, Long Chen's stomach started making noises, and he knew it was because he had not eaten for a while. He smiled as he took out more golden fruits from his storage ring and started eating them.

After Long Chen finished eating, he decided to go to sleep.

That night, Long Chen had another dream. But it was a different one from his previous one. Last time he dreamt that he was in a room. But in this dream, Long Chen was in a beautiful city. There were massive buildings, all made from a material he had never seen before, but they looked really beautiful and strong.

There was chaos in this city. He could see hundreds of strong cultivators in golden armor and swords flying towards a person. Long Chen could not even judge their cultivation level but he knew they were really strong, as they could fly at such high speeds.

The person they were running towards was a man with blood-red irises, red hair, and a handsome demonic charm.

It was the same person he had seen in his last dream, just that his golden irises had turned blood red now. In his last dream this guy looked like a handsome scholar, but this time this guy looked like he was bloodthirsty and very angry at something or someone. He slaughtered his way through the realm of Gods, killing every god he could find standing in his sight as if they were just obstructions. He continued moving forward towards the large palace at the center of this city.

Chapter 25 - 25 : Rapid Breakthroughs

Long Chen only had one thought in his mind, as he saw this Red-haired man killing all his opponents. His thought was that this man was like a demon god when he was angry.

The man had a blood-red sword in his hand, which had a few ancient characters on it. Long Chen could not understand the meaning of the characters that were shining brightly. There was destruction wherever this sword passed through. No one could survive its attack.

Space warped as this man swung his sword towards his enemies, and spatial cracks appeared everywhere whenever his sword moved. He slashed towards the enemies, killing tens of them with a single move.

These golden armored cultivators kept attacking this demon god, even using formations powered by their combined strength, but they could not stop this man's advances.

The ground cracked as this red-haired man with blood-red eyes walked towards a certain direction, destroying every obstruction in his way. Long Chen could only think that he was so powerful, he was just like a reincarnation of death itself...

He was also able to see an ancient storage ring on his fingers. It was exactly the same as the one Long Chen had on his finger. The ancient symbols on it were just like the ones on Long Chen's ring and the one he had seen on this guy's finger in his last dream.

After slaughtering hundreds of heavenly warriors along his path, that guy reached a majestic looking palace. He slashed towards the door with his red sword. Space warped and the door was blasted apart.

Just as this red-haired man was about to enter the palace, a large energy wave came crashing out from inside the palace, and a heavy aura enveloped the area, but it was quickly countered by the red-haired man's own aura before it could even get near him. Long Chen could see a silhouette of a person walking from inside the palace towards this golden-haired man. Before Long Chen could see who it was and what happened next, his dream broke and he woke up.

Long Chen was confused at all these events happening in his dreams.

"Who was that person and why was he slaughtering everyone in his sight? In my first dream, he just looked like a proper scholar with a beautiful smile... What was it that he was so angry about, is there a reason I am seeing the dreams related to that guy? Was this really just a dream?" Long Chen talked to himself.

Long Chen's head started aching the longer he thought about it, so he gave up and decided to cultivate and get out of here as soon as possible.

Long Chen got up, took his clothes off, and jumped into the lake to take a bath. After a while, he came out and got dressed.

Long Chen started cultivating using his second supreme grade Mana Crystal.

He was already at the peak of the third Stage Spirit Establishment Realm, so he easily broke through to the fourth stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm after a short cultivation period.

He continued cultivating and finally broke through to the 5th Stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm as well before night fell.

He did not stop as he wanted to use the remaining Qi of his last supreme grade Mana crystal to break through to the 6th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm as well.

He cultivated all night. His supreme grade Mana crystal finally got exhausted in the morning. Long Chen looked at this Crystal and was disappointed.

"If only it could have lasted a little bit longer..." Long Chen said in disappointment

He had already reached an advanced level of 5th Stage of Spirit Establishment Realm and was so close to reaching the peak level. He was just a single step behind another breakthrough, but the crystal had been exhausted before that could happen.

Long Chen sent his consciousness inside his body to look at his Spirit Sea. It was a place that contained all his Qi reserves. He could see that its size had increased by a lot, and his Martial soul was standing at the very center of this sea.

Long Chen's Martial soul's eyes were closed as it held a blood-red sword in his hands, dressed in golden armor. It just stood there like it was a god of this

land. Its facial features started looking a lot like Long Tian. And he could see that the similarities had increased a lot more compared to the time he first broke through to the 2nd Stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm.

Long Chen brought his consciousness out and put this exhausted supreme grade Mana crystal in his storage ring as he stood up and looked upwards. He could feel his body filled with energy. He was already at the 5th Stage of the Spirit Establishment realm and was only 12 years old.

If Long Chen wanted to, he could claim in Long Tian's stead that he was a genius before and was still a genius, but he had his own plans.

"Although I am at the 5th Stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm, I'm not sure if my spirit sea is enough to sustain heavenly demon wings until I reach the top of Heavenly cliff. Time to test it out," Long Chen muttered to himself.

Long Chen started using his Heavenly Demon Wings Martial skill. Two beautiful angel-like wings made from Qi appeared on his back, one golden and one black.

Long Chen started flying upwards. He could feel his Qi depleting fast, but now that his spirit sea was bigger, he was able to fly for longer.

Just as Long Chen was about to reach the top, he could feel that his Qi was almost exhausted. He wasn't even sure if he would be able to make it to the top.

Long Chen put all his efforts into flying and reaching the top, and finally, he succeeded. Long Chen reached the top of Heavenly cliff the moment his wings disappeared.

"If this cliff was a little bit taller, or my Qi reserve just a bit smaller, I would have failed and fallen. Survived by perfect timing," Long Chen sighed in relief as he looked at the bottom of Heavenly cliff, but he couldn't see the bottom as it was covered by fog.

"I am finally coming home," Long Chen said with a smile as he looked in the direction of the Long Clan and started walking towards the North. Long Chen had already known that the Heavenly Cliff was on the South of Long clan, and to go back he would need to go north.

After walking for a few hours, he finally reached the Long Clan's Gates.

Chapter 26 - 26: Getting Back

Long Chen reached his Clan's South Gate, the gate where he was taken out from in the first place. But this time, this place wasn't empty; there were many guards stationed there this time. As soon as the guards saw who was entering, they were very shocked and one of them immediately went to inform his superior.

All of these guards had recognized Long Chen as during the time he was missing, his portraits were everywhere. Before his disappearance, there might have been a few people who didn't know how he looked, but now there was probably no one in the house who didn't know Long Chen.

The guards opened the gate for him and stood aside as he entered.

"Young master Tian, by heaven's grace, you are safe and sound! I knew nothing could happen to you. How could anything happen to the grandson of our great clan master?" a person with a white beard came towards him as he said happily.

Long Chen didn't recognize him, but he could imagine that this person was probably the one in charge of security or an elder as they would be the one guards would inform first. Long Chen was right as that bearded man was the newest person in charge of security after Tu Yue, and although he was not an elder yet, he was way stronger than Tu Yue and was in the gold core realm. His name was Long Jin.

Long Jin was in his room eating comfortably when a guard stationed at South gate came running towards his room and started knocking like crazy. Long Jin was then informed by him of Long Tian's return through Long Clan's South gate.

Long Jin sent one of his subordinates to inform the clan master Long Ren as he rushed to welcome Long Tian.

"Let's go, young master, your mother has been worried sick. She had not eaten anything since the day you went missing. Even the master has been worried and has been trying everything to find you. The whole Long clan was worried. We are so happy you are safe," that bearded man said.

He tried to put his hands on Long Chen's shoulders to bring him away, but Long Chen moved to the side.

"I know the direction of mine and my mother's courtyard. You do not need to show me the way," Long Chen said as he started walking ahead.

Long Jin was so shocked when he heard Long Chen talk. Long Jin started stuttering as he said, "Yo... Yo... young master Tian, y... y...you just talked?" Long Jin had heard that Long Tian had become muddle-headed after the assassination attempt on his life.

Long Jin also knew that Long Chen had never talked since then, and probably could not since he was not able to process his thoughts. After being shocked for a while, he thought of a possibility and became excited as he started following Long Chen.

Long Chen walked towards his courtyard while Long Jin kept following him, talking about how the clan had searched far and wide for him, but Long Chen paid him no interest.

Finally, he reached his mother's courtyard, but before he could knock on the door, Long Jin stopped him.

"Young master Tian, madam isn't in her courtyard. Since you went missing, she has been staying in your courtyard missing you," Long Jin told him as he pointed towards his own courtyard.

"Oh," Long Chen said to Long Jin as he stopped himself from knocking and looked towards Long Jin, nodding in approval. Long Chen's one action was enough to confirm Long Jin's thoughts.

Long Jin realized that the young master Long Tian could talk and think now, meaning that he was not mentally sick anymore. Long Jin knew what it implied. To him, it implied that Long Tian had recovered.

Long Jin decided to get on the good side of Long Tian, as he knew that Long Ren loved Long Tian the most amongst all his grandsons. Now that Long Tian had recovered, he could utilize Long Ren's love for him to the fullest and Long Jin could get some benefits as well for being with him.

Long Chen started walking towards his own courtyard, and as he neared, Long Chen could see a beautiful woman sitting in his garden on a chair, looking at the flowers. This beautiful woman looked sad, which filled the atmosphere with melancholy.

As Long Chen entered this garden, the beautiful woman turned her eyes towards him. As she looked at Long Chen's face, her sad expression changed

into happiness, and tears kept falling from her eyes as she ran towards Long Chen and hugged him. Long Chen knew that this beautiful woman was Long Tian's mother, Sima Ziyi.

Long Chen felt content as well when she hugged him. Although she was not his mother since his soul and Long Tian's memories were with him, she was like a family member to him, and she was someone important to him.

Long Chen could feel her love for her son. Long Chen felt sad as well when he saw her tears falling from her eyes. Long Chen thought about how sad she must have been when he was missing and he couldn't help but hug her back as he said in a gentle voice, "It is fine mother, look, I am safe and sound. You do not need to cry anymore. If you cry, I will be sad as well."

"Yes, yes, I am just so happy that you are back, I won't make you sad anymore. Mother..." Sima Ziyi said to Long Chen, but she stopped mid-sentence as she noticed something unusual and her eyes opened wide.

"Tian'er you... you...? Have you recovered?" She said she hugged him tight and had a look of uncertainty and anticipation on her beautiful face.

"Yes mother, I have never been better. Now that I have recovered, I will never make you worry anymore," Long Chen said in a soothing voice.

"Mother is so happy. This is the happiest day of my life!" Sima Ziyi said to Long Chen

Sima Ziyi smiled as tears started falling from her eyes even faster as she cried while hugging him. These were tears of happiness. She had waited so long for her son to recover and enjoy a life like normal kids. She prayed daily for a miracle to happen and finally; it did.

While Long Chen and Sima Ziyi were hugging, Long Jin was outside the courtyard, standing at the corner. Even he was feeling emotional and happy at their reunion.

Suddenly there was the sound of someone running: Long Ren entered the courtyard as well.

Chapter 27 - 27 : Unknown Cultivation?

Long Ren was in a meeting with other elders about what to do next. The meeting included the Supreme Elder and Grand Elder, and the topic of finding Long Tian. One of Long Ren's trusted subordinates entered this room and passed on the information he received from a guard about Long Tian.

Long Ren came running as soon as he was informed that Long Tian had come back and was safe. All the other elders were shocked as they heard Long Tian was back and saw Long Ren hurriedly leaving the meeting.

Most Elders in the meeting decided to go with him. In their eyes, Long Tian was useless since he had suffered a misfortune 4 years ago, and they didn't place any importance on him. However, since Long Ren was worried for him, they needed to seem so as well, at least on the outside.

Long Ren entered the courtyard and saw Sima Ziyi hugging Long Tian tightly as she kept crying. Long Ren sighed in relief as he saw with his own eyes that Long Tian was back, safe and sound.

"Tian'er, you are safe! Grandpa missed you so much. You worried this old man to death," Long Ren said to Long Chen in a voice filled with relief.

Long Ren did not ask him anything about how he went missing and what happened, as in his mind, Long Tian could not answer even if he was asked. Long Ren had decided to keep searching for the answer himself. He had to find Tu Yue.

Long Chen stopped hugging Sima Ziyi as he noticed Long Ren, they then separated. By now other clan elders were there as well.

"It's actually Long Tian. He is back safely!" The Elders said to each other in shock.

'If he is safe and not hurt, that is good, but why couldn't we find him throughout the city when we were searching for him?' Supreme Elder Long Hua was wondering how someone like Long Tian, who couldn't even think properly, stayed missing for so long and found his way back so suddenly. He was curious as to what this whole matter was about. He still did not know that it was all because of his son that Long Tian was missing.

"Father... Our Tian'er has rec..." Sima Ziyi looked towards Long Ren as she said, but Long Chen's voice came midway and interrupted her.

"Of course, grandpa. How can I get hurt so easily? I am your own blood after all," Long Chen said, smiling as he looked towards Long Ren. His golden eyes shone brightly as always.

"Hahaha... Of course. You're as brave as your father was." Long Ren said with a smile, but he suddenly stopped as his expressions changed. All the other elders noticed this as well.

Long Ren went close to Long Chen and kneeled. He faced Long Chen as he asked if he had recovered. Long Chen answered him with a confirmation.

All the elders were shocked when they found out that Long Tian had recovered. The previously hailed once in a millennia genius had returned and was back to normal. Some of the elders were hopeful and looking forward to his future achievements, while some were looking at him with condescending eyes.

Long Tian's golden years have already passed, what can he do even if he's recovered, these were the thoughts in many of the elder's minds.

While everyone was shocked at Long Tian's recovery, there were a pair of eyes looking at him with malicious intent, but no one saw it.

"It is so good that you have recovered... Wait a minute... why can't I see your cultivation?" Long Ren tried looking at Long Tian, trying to find if he was healthy when he noticed an odd thing. He was not able to see Long Tian's cultivation.

After Long Ren pointed it out, all the elders started checking it out and confirmed they couldn't see his cultivation either

Previously, every time Long Ren tried, he was able to see Long Tian's cultivation at the 10th stage of the body refining realm, but now he couldn't see it at all.

"Did someone kidnap you to destroy your cultivation and then release you? Tell Grandpa who it was. I will make sure that a person dies without a burial," Long Ren said angrily.

According to Long Ren, there were only 3 cases in which he would not be able to see a person's cultivation. One is that they were mortal and did not have cultivation, or a cultivator whose cultivation was destroyed.

Second, being that person had stronger cultivation than Long Ren. But Long Ren knew that Long Tian couldn't be in a stronger cultivation realm than his.

The third being that a person had an artifact that could be used to hide cultivation. But that was impossible for Long Chen, as Long Ren didn't think it was impossible that Long Chen had gotten one. Long Ren knew that the artifacts that could hide a person's cultivation were rare and the weakest grade an artifact like that could be was sky grade.

Long Ren did not believe Long Tian would have an artifact at sky grade or above as he himself only had a few Earth grade weapons. So, he thought that only the first scenario was plausible. As Long Chen wasn't a mortal, in Long Ren's eyes there was only one explanation. It was that his grandson was crippled.

"What? You can't see my cultivation?" Long Chen said with a shock. Even he himself didn't know about it as it was the first time he heard that his cultivation level couldn't be seen.

Long Chen started wondering if it was because of his special cultivation technique or because of the secrets of the ring. Long Chen would have also doubted his necklace, which he got from the ring and wore, but he had dropped it somewhere and he couldn't find it, or that's what he thought. Long Chen didn't know that this crystal had already entered his body and was changing his life

"I promise grandpa, I am not crippled," Long Chen said to Long Ren.

"Let us go inside grandpa, we can sit down and talk about everything that happened. After that, I need to go meet a friend as well and take back the stuff that they owe me," Long Chen said to Long Ren in a calm voice as he thought about Long Su and what he had done.

Long Ren agreed and went inside his courtyard with Long Chen and Sima Ziyi. Other elders decided to disperse and go back. As they walked back, the only thing that could think about was that Long Tian had recovered.

Chapter 28 - 28: Answering Without Answering

Long Jin saw Long Chen entering the house and decided to go back as well. He decided that he would meet Long Chen again later and get close to him.

Long Chen entered his room with Long Ren and Sima Ziyi followed behind them closely.

"So tell me, what actually happened? Where were you and how did you recover?" Long Ren asked Long Chen with curiosity in his eyes as he looked towards Long Chen.

"I won't tell you," Long Chen said straight away.

"Why?" Long Ren didn't get angry and just asked curiously, as he could not understand why Long Chen wouldn't tell him anything.

"Grandfather, do you want to hear the truth or a lie?" Long Chen asked with a straight face.

"Of course, the truth. Why?" Long Ren asked, feeling baffled and trying to understand the meaning behind Long Chen's words.

"I won't tell you anything, because I do not want to lie to you since you are my family," Long Chen said, looking straight at Long Ren. Before Long Ren could say anything, he continued.

"It's not that I do not trust you. It's just that there are some things I want to keep to myself. And as for those who tried to hurt me, I will take care of them on my own. At that time you will find out who it was." Long Chen said with determination filling his eyes

Long Ren did not know what to say as he heard this. Long Chen had answered everything he wanted to ask without giving away anything, basically just saying that it was a secret. Long Ren just looked at Long Chen with his mouth open.

"What are you saying, Tian'er? Tell your grandfather everything, he will take care of everything for you. I do not want to see you in danger anymore." Sima Ziyi said to Long Chen worriedly as she held his hands tightly. Long Chen could feel the warmth of her hands.

"It is fine if you want to solve this problem yourself. I won't ask you anything, but just tell me this one thing. Can you handle it yourself without being in danger? Do you need my help to deal with anything? You have just recovered,

and there is nothing wrong with asking for help. You are only 12 years old, you do not need to put yourself in danger Tian'er." Long Ren said, trying to convince Long Chen.

"It's nothing serious mother, you don't need to worry. And I can take care of it, grandpa, I will be safe. I promise," Long Chen said to them both with a voice filled with self-confidence and determination.

They both finally gave up after trying to convince him a few more times. After conversing about a few more things, Long Ren decided to go back, as a servant came with food. Long Chen had already told a servant to prepare food for him, as he had heard that Sima Ziyi hadn't eaten anything since he went missing from Long Jin.

When the food came, Long Chen started eating with his mother. After they finished eating, Sima Ziyi wanted to stay for longer, but Long Chen sent his mother back saying that she needed to go to her room and rest as she hadn't had a peaceful rest in the last few days.

As Sima Ziyi went back, Long Chen decided to check her cultivation level, as Long Chen was always curious about it. Now he could finally check it himself as he had stepped into the Spirit Establishment realm.

Just as Long Chen saw her cultivation, he was shocked. Long Chen saw that Sima Ziyi was already at the peak of the gold core realm, the same realm his father, Long Jun, was at when he died. He never knew that this woman was so strong.

Long Chen closed the door and went back to his bedroom. He lay on the bed for a moment, as he felt so comfortable lying on the bed after sleeping on the ground for two nights.

After lying down for a while, Long Chen got up and decided to take a bath and change his clothes, as his clothes were already dirty after being in the wilderness.

After getting dressed, Long Chen decided it was finally time for him to go find Long Su. He stepped out of his courtyard and started walking towards Long Su's courtyard.

As Long Chen was walking in the Long Clan, some people ignored him as they still thought that Long Tian was a retard, while some people were whispering about him as they had already heard a rumor that Long Tian had recovered.

While Long Chen was walking, a person came running towards him.

"Young master Tian, there is a rumor that you had recovered and aren't dumb anymore' going around the mansion. I swear I didn't expose you! I don't know how people found out." That person said with a worried look on his face

Long Chen looked at him and smiled as Long Chen had recognized this person. It was Long Mantian, the person who mocked Long Chen when he went to the Clan's practice area on the first day of his arrival in this world. Long Mantian was the same guy Long Chen had beaten and exposed to that he wasn't a retard.

Long Mantian heard that Long Tian had come back home today, so he decided to stay away from him. But just as Long Mantian was walking outside later, he heard someone saying that Long Tian wasn't a retard. As soon as he heard it, he was scared.

Long Mantian thought that if Long Chen heard it, he would misunderstand him and think that Long Mantian exposed his secret and got revenge. That's why Long Mantian was running towards his courtyard, trying to clarify this.

"I know you didn't expose me, I did it myself." Long Chen smiled as he said to Long Mantian.

"But... But why... Didn't you tell me not to reveal this to anyone?" Long Mantian asked him confusedly, as he had first thought that Long Chen wanted to keep the fact that he recovered a secret, which was why Long Chen threatened him to not reveal this fact to anyone.

"You do not need to know why." Long Chen said as he continued walking towards Long Su's courtyard without looking back. Long Mantian kept looking at him as he walked away, feeling confused.

After walking for a while, Long Chen finally reached Long Su's courtyard. Long Chen knocked on his door for a while until someone opened the door.

Long Su's servant opened the door, but he was scared silly as soon as he saw who was standing outside.

Long Chen smiled as he saw the person who opened the door. It was the person he wanted to meet the most after Long Su.

But to this servant, this smile looked like a smile of a demon as he was the same servant who had given Long Tian that drugged tea on Long Su's orders.

Long Chen grabbed this servant by the throat as he entered the room and closed the door behind him.

Chapter 29 - 29 : First Killing

"We meet again, why don't you give me another cup of your famous tea? I liked the previous one a lot. Helped me sleep really well," Long Chen said to this servant as he tightened his grip around his throat with a smile on his face.

"Mmmm... Mmm... For... Give..." That servant kept trying to ask for forgiveness with tears in his eyes as long Chen kept tightening his grip.

"LONG SU! COME OUT WHEREVER YOU ARE!!!" Long Chen said loudly as he kept looking for Long Su while still holding the servant in his grip.

"Last time you said you broke through a technique and wanted to celebrate! This little brother is here to witness its might. Won't you show me?" Long Chen said loudly, taunting Long Su.

Long Chen looked everywhere, but could not find Long Su anywhere. Long Chen started wondering, 'Did Long Su run away after finding out that I am back? He can't leave the Long clan just like that.'

"Speak! Where is Long Su!!!" Long Chen finally started concentrating on the servant he was holding up by the throat. Long Chen released his grip as he asked. The servant fell on the ground just as Long Chen released him, and he started coughing loudly.

"Will you speak or not?" Long Chen asked with anger clearly showing on his face. Long Chen did not know, but while he was angry, his blood conversion speed had increased, although only by a little bit.

"I... I will speak. Don't kill me, young master Tian. I was only following orders," the servant said, grovelling as the tears kept falling from his eyes.

Long Chen grabbed him by his throat again, but this time Long Chen just threw him towards the wall. The servant crashed heavily into the wall, but he wasn't badly hurt. Long Chen had already seen that this guy was a 7th stage Body Refining realm cultivator.

"That is not what I asked, I asked where Long Su is!!!" Long Chen asked him again as he walked towards him.

"Northern Black Forest!!! Master Su went towards the Northern Black Forest in the North of the capital city this morning with some of his friends to hunt some demonic beasts!! That is all I know... Please forgive me, master Tian." Long Su's servant told him everything as he continued asking for forgiveness.

Tears kept coming out of his eyes, but in his mind, the servant was only thinking one thing.

'Little bastard, you can only show your measly strength to me, but you are nothing in front of master Su. I am sure you will die when you enter the Northern Black Forest if you find master Su. I just need to endure only for a little longer and survive as you won't ever be returning.'

"You know, I feel pity for you. You were just following orders, I don't even want to kill you anymore." Long Chen said as he turned back.

"But you know, I read a quote somewhere in a book. It said something like 'the soul that had conceived wickedness, can nurse no good thereafter.' I'm sure you're not one of those, right?" Long Chen stopped and looked back at him as he asked. The servant started moving his head up and down like a broken machine.

"Whatever, I guess I won't take the risk. Who knows, you guys already technically killed me once by drugging me and throwing me down a cliff. I do not want to be the one releasing the evil in this world. I am sure you guys deserve it," said Long Chen as he took out his peak mortal grade sword, 'Mountain Destroyer' from his storage ring and slashed forward, separating his head from his body.

Until the moment this guy's body fell to the ground and he died, he didn't believe that Long Chen would actually kill him.

Long Chen realized that he had just killed someone, but he felt strange that he didn't feel bad or sick after taking a life, just as he had thought he would feel in the beginning. Long Chen didn't think about it for too long.

After killing him, Long Chen kept his sword in his storage ring again as he walked out of Long Su's courtyard.

Long Chen had decided that he needed to go to the northern Black Forest and find Long Su. But before that, he decided to go to Treasure Hall and choose a spirit grade weapon as he was already in the 5th stage Spirit Establishment realm now and he knew Long Su would most probably have his spirit grade weapon with him as he had gone hunting the demonic beast.

Long Chen started walking towards Treasure Hall and soon reached it. Long Chen entered the treasure Hall and could see the interior looking as luxurious as always. Although Long Chen already knew how it looked from inside, he was still amazed.

Just as Long Chen took a few steps inside, he noticed Elder Yang sitting on a chair next to the entrance. Elder Yang was the Elder in charge of Treasure Hall.

Long Chen had a good opinion of Elder Yang, as he still remembered that Elder Yang had saved him last time and cleared up the misunderstanding with Long Xue Ying. But Long Chen knew that he couldn't thank Elder Yang for that, as then Elder Yang would know that Long Tian had recovered at that time.

Long Chen started walking towards Elder Yang.

"Little Tian, I heard that you recovered. Is it true? I wanted to come to congratulate you but thought that I should let you rest for a while as you have just gotten back. How come you are here?" Elder Yang asked Long Chen, looking at him.

"Uncle Yang, it is true. I am way better now. By the way, I am here this time to go to the second floor of Treasure Hall and pass through the test and choose a Spirit grade weapon for myself," Long Chen said with a smile on his face.

Elder Yang tried looking at Long Chen's cultivation, but he wasn't shocked when he could not see his cultivation, as Elder Yang had already heard from other elders about this anomaly.

"Little Tian, you know that to go to the second floor, you need to be at least at the 5th stage in the Spirit Establishment realm. I cannot give you any special privilege." Elder Yang said to Long Chen calmly.

Elder Yang didn't even think of a possibility that Long Chen had broken through to the 5th stage of spirit Establishment from the 10th stage of body refining in the 2 days that he was missing.

"You do not need to worry, Uncle Yang. I don't want any special privileges. You know there's a barrier at the entrance of the second floor, and only those who are qualified can pass through. I just want to try it. You do not need to change any rules for me," Long Chen said to Elder Yang while looking towards the entrance of the second floor. A green barrier was shining brightly at the entrance.

"If you still want to do it, then you can go ahead. If you pass that barrier, I will bring you to the place of the test." Elder Yang said to Long Chen as he got up as well.

Chapter 30 - 30 : Entering The Formation

Long Chen started walking towards the entrance of the second floor with Elder Yang following closely behind. Long Chen soon reached near the energy barrier of the second floor of Treasure Hall.

Long Chen took a deep breath and started walking towards it, and passed through this barrier easily. Long Chen didn't even feel like there was any obstruction there for him.

Long Chen knew that he could pass this barrier easily as he was in the 5th stage of the spirit Establishment realm, but he did not know that it would be so easy.

Elder Yang was standing shocked in his place as he saw Long Chen pass through this barrier. He couldn't believe that Long Chen had passed through it.

Elder Yang had thought of two possibilities for this to happen, one being that Long Chen used an artifact that allowed him to pass through the barrier and cheated, and the second being that Long Chen actually broke through 5 cultivation realms in just 2 days.

Whatever the case, Elder Yang knew that he couldn't stop Long Chen from taking the test and he couldn't even search him for any artifacts as if he did not find anything, Elder Yang would just end up offending the patriarch Long Ren for doubting his grandson of cheating.

"You have passed it, now come with me."

Elder Yang decided to give up thinking and bring Long Chen to the testing site as he passed through the barrier as well and started walking in a particular direction.

Long Chen kept following him and looking around curiously as this was the first time he came to this floor. Long Chen could see various low-level Spirit grade treasures lying on shelves as they passed by.

"Elder Yang, why have I only seen low-level Spirit grade treasures? Are the better ones deeper?" Long Chen asked Elder Yang.

"Hahaha... Of course, stronger treasures have their own special place. Just like a king does not stay in a commoner's house, we keep stronger weapons in

their own designated areas. You will have a chance to see them if you perform better." Elder Yang laughed as he continued.

After walking for a while, they reached the entrance of a room. It was tightly shut and had a completely black door.

"This is the room where you will go through your test. The test is simple but different from the one you faced when choosing your first weapon previously on the first floor." Elder Yang told Long Chen.

"Last time's test was about your talent. You were a peak grade talent, and your strong cultivation at such a small age proved it at that time, so naturally you passed. But this time, the test is about pure strength and potential." Before Long Chen could ask anything, Elder Yang continued talking.

"Uncle Yang, can you tell me more?" Long Chen asked politely.

"Of course, little Tian. Since you are about to go through it, I will tell you about it. This test is pretty simple and yet pretty difficult. There is a formation inside this room. As soon as you enter this room, the formation will start and your test will begin."

"You will face 5 spirit beasts one by one. It starts from the one that is one stage higher in cultivation than the challenger, and their cultivation will increase by a stage each. The 5th beast you face will have the cultivation of 5 stages higher than yours, but all your 5 opponents will be in the initial level of their cultivation rank." Elder Yang told Long Chen about the test with a straight face.

"So if I am at the 5th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm, the 5th beast I faced will be at the initial level of the 10th stage of the spirit Establishment realm? And I need to defeat him to get the best score available? So if I was at the 8th stage spirit Establishment rank, I would have to face an initial level 3rd stage gold core realm beast at this test?" Long Chen was shocked as he asked.

"That is only if you passed the previous test. You do not need to defeat all of the 5 demonic beasts in this formation to get a Spirit grade weapon, just the first one. But the more levels you pass in this test, the better grade your Spirit weapon will be."

"What is the farthest anyone has reached in this test?" Long Chen asked Elder Yang with curiosity in his eyes.

"Amongst your generation, it was the supreme elder's son, Long Su. He defeated a beast which was in a cultivation realm 2 stages higher than his while he was at the 6th stage of Spirit Establishment realm."

"I am sure you know that beasts are mostly stronger than humans in the same cultivation realm. Till now, no one has passed the third level of this test in your generation. As for the previous generation..." Elder Yang stopped and looked at Long Chen for a moment before continuing.

"In the previous generation, it was your father, Long Jun. He was in the Spirit Establishment realm who held the record. He passed the third level in this test and reached the 4th, but even after staying in the 4th level for a long time, he could not pass it." Elder Yang told Long Chen.

"Wow, father was really amazing, wasn't he? Alright, I will be going inside. Let's see how I perform." Long Chen said as he started walking towards the door.

Just as Long Chen was about to open the door and enter, Elder Yang stopped him and continued saying.

"One more thing, as soon as you finish the test, if you passed the second level or above, this formation will stop and a door will open right there in that room after your defeat."

"According to your performance, it'll lead you towards the place of the grade of the weapon you deserve based on your result. I wish you all the best." Elder Yang said.

Long Chen opened the door and entered. There were 5 transparent crystals at the top of the black door, and as soon as Long Chen entered, one of them started shining with a yellow light. Elder Yang knew that the test had started. He waited there as he wanted to see Long Chen's result.

As Long Chen entered the room, he saw the formation at the bottom of the floor begin to shine brightly, before everything turned white. When his vision returned, Long Chen found himself standing in a large field.

Long Chen knew the test had started.

Chapter 31 - 31: 5th Level

Long Chen found himself standing in a vast field, and in front of him was a spirit beast. It looked like a bull, but Long Chen could see that it was a spirit beast as it had a cultivation level that was at the 6th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm.

Long Chen recognized this beast and knew it was called Stone crushing bull, and that it had a normal grade bloodline, so it was a pretty average spirit beast in Long Chen's eyes. It was mostly known for its raw strength, but low agility and intelligence.

Long Chen took out his Mountain crushing sword from his storage ring and got ready to attack this spirit beast.

"Seven forms of saint sword, 1st form Cleansing!"

As soon as the beast started running towards him, Long Chen used his sword Martial skill and slashed forward.

A bright golden light came slashing towards this Stone crushing bull. Before this Spirit beast could actually get closer, he was slashed apart and died. Long Chen had finished the test as soon as it started. But even Long Chen himself was shocked by the strength of this attack.

What Long Chen used was a Martial skill. Although he had never been to the second floor of Martial Hall and didn't choose a stronger Spirit grade Martial skill, his father, Long Jun had gifted him this sword skill called 'Seven forms of saint sword' when he was in the body refining realm.

Long Jun had told him that this Martial skill was pretty extraordinary and Long Chen should learn it wholeheartedly, only then will he be worthy of this skill. Since then, Long Chen had been learning it wholeheartedly.

This skill had seven sword forms with every higher move being stronger than the previous one, and Long Chen only used the first one to defeat this first spirit beast.

Long Tian had used this skill a lot of times before when he was in the body refining realm, that's why Long Chen knew how strong this skill was. But today its power was beyond his expectations. He wondered why it was so strong

Long Chen knew this first move of this skill was strong, but he didn't recall it being so strong that it could defeat a 6th stage spirit beast so easily in one move. There must be something else going on for its strength to increase so much.

After a while, Long Chen's second opponent appeared. It was a 7th stage Spirit beast. Long Chen defeated it as well and passed the second level of this test. After a little more time and effort. Long Chen defeated his next opponent as well, which was an 8th stage Spirit beast and passed the 3rd level.

As Long Chen was finishing trial after trial, Elder Yang was standing outside stunned, staring at three of the 5 transparent crystals glowing with bright green color, signifying that Long Chen passed the third stage as well. He could not believe what was happening.

"Tiger father begets tiger son! He is just as impressive as you Long Jun. You have a promising son, you can rest in peace in heaven, my friend." Elder Yang mumbled to himself as he looked upwards.

While Elder Yang was waiting for Long Chen to finish the test and come out, he thought passing the third level would be Long Chen's final round. But the 4th crystal turned green, astonishing Elder Yang once more.

"Amazing!!! Maybe... Maybe he can do it and pass the 5th level as well!" Elder Yang became expectant.

While Elder Yang was amazed looking at Long Chen's results, he was sitting tired inside the test. The fight with a 9th level Spirit beast was the hardest he had so far.

Long Chen had to go all out to win that fight, even using the third form of 'Seven forms of saint sword - Destruction' and finally achieved victory after fighting for over 15 minutes. He had exhausted a lot of his Qi in this short time and now was trying to rest and recover his qi.

Long Chen believed that it was a good thing that his qi recovery speed has been increasing day by day, ever since the day he had found that ring. He continued resting like this for 10 minutes until the next Spirit beast appeared. It was a 10th stage spirit beast and looked like a tiger.

Long Chen recognized this Spirit beast as well. It was called Spirit devouring tiger. It was a normal bloodline beast and it was said that its speed, strength, and defense were all strong. But that wasn't the most frightening part - the scary part was that it was a beast that was proficient in spiritual attacks.

Although it mostly killed its prey through pure strength, when it faced a stronger opponent, the spirit devouring tiger targeted their Martial soul through spiritual attacks to trap them in a mental prison while he killed them on the outside.

Long Chen understood that it was going to be a hard fight. He clutched the mountain shattering sword in his hand as he started running towards the spirit devouring Tiger. His sword struck the Tiger, but Long Chen could see that there wasn't any heavy damage to this Tiger.

The battle kept going on for a while, with their clashes mostly ending with Long Chen flying like a broken kite and crashing onto the ground. Long Chen could discern that if he kept taking damage like this, he would be going to lose pretty soon.

'Seven forms of saint sword - second form Devastation!' Long Chen attacked with his Martial skill, and finally, there was some damage. But Long Chen could see that if it continued this way, it would take him pretty long to defeat this tiger.

The Spirit devouring tiger opened its mouth wide, and Long Chen knew what was coming. Long Chen knew that the Spirit devouring beast had a Martial skill called the tiger's roar. If he was hit by it, he would end up in a pretty bad condition.

"Heavenly Demon Wings," Long Chen immediately used His Martial skill as two beautiful wings appeared on his back. Long Chen flew in the air just a moment before the tiger's roar passed where he was standing.

Long Chen knew that he could not stay in the air for long, so he decided to utilize his advantage while he can. He kept assaulting the Spirit Devouring Tiger with seven forms of saint sword from the air.

The Spirit Devouring Tiger was getting furious as he wasn't able to attack Long Chen physically in the air and utilize his full physical strength. As his Long-distance Martial skills were easily being evaded, he was getting frustrated.

The Spirit devouring tiger looked towards Long Chen as his eyes turned black. Long Chen felt a splitting headache as he felt like a void was sucking his consciousness and soul, trying to imprison it. Long Chen knew it was the Spirit devouring beast's spiritual attack, but Long Chen couldn't do anything about it at the moment.

Just when Long Chen felt like he couldn't hold on for longer, Long Chen's Martial soul opened his eyes and looked in the direction of the Spirit devouring beast, its eyes completely blood red.

Chapter 32 - 32: Fighting 10th Stage Spirit Beast

After a while, Long Chen had crashed onto the ground from the air as soon as the Spirit devouring beast used its spiritual attack. While his consciousness was holding on by a thread, trying not to be devoured, the Spirit devouring beast was running towards him at its full speed.

Long Chen was feeling like his consciousness was being devoured. His head was hurting so bad, that he could barely open his eyes.

Long Chen looked at the Spirit devouring beast struggling to stand up, but he couldn't stand up. Long Chen could only see Spirit devouring beast running towards him. He felt like it would be the end of this test as he knew that this formation won't kill him.

"Is this the end? The limit of my strength?... No!... I will fight for it. I will not give up. I will take the strength I need to defeat my enemies with my own hands. Absolutely nothing will stop me!!!" Long Chen roared as he gathered all his power and barely stood up with a sword in his hand and slashed out.

But this attack could do nothing to the Spirit devouring beast as Long Chen could not use all his strength in this attack as his qi was pretty much drained trying to hold on to his consciousness.

Spirit devouring tiger attacked Long Chen, making him crash far away. Long Chen felt like a few of his bones were broken and his consciousness at its most vulnerable state. Just as he felt like it was the end.

Suddenly Time seemed to stop, as Long Chen's Martial soul opened its eyes and looked in the direction of the Spirit devouring tiger, its eyes turning blood red from their usual golden color. A large amount of Spirit energy spread in the atmosphere and returned back to normal as soon as his Martial soul closed its blood-red eyes a moment later.

The splitting headache Long Chen was having disappeared without a trace, and so did that void that was trying to suck his consciousness inside.

After a while, Long Chen opened his eyes and looked around. He could see Spirit devouring tiger lying on the ground, dead. Long Chen knew that a large amount of spiritual energy had come from inside his body, just as he was about to lose his consciousness and saved him.

Long Chen understood it was because of his Martial soul but he couldn't understand how it could do this, why it was so strong that it could kill a 10th

stage Spirit beast, spirit devouring tiger in just a few seconds. Long Chen had never heard something like this happen before.

Before Long Chen could think more, the illusion disappeared, and he found himself sitting back in the formation room.

Long Chen could see that the formation had stopped working. He knew it was because he had passed all 5 levels. Long Chen sent his consciousness inside his body and inspected his martial soul, but he could not discover anything unusual.

Long Chen's Martial soul was still standing with a sword in his hands, eyes shut. There was not a single trace of any strange spiritual energy that could be felt from it.

While Long Chen was going through the 5th trial, Elder Yang was standing outside looking at the top of the door of the formation room. There were 5 crystals there, 4 being green, one still yellow.

When the 5th crystal did not turn green for a long time and Long Chen didn't come out either, Elder Yang could guess that Long Chen was going through a tough battle inside the formation.

Although Elder Yang knew that this formation was safe, he could not help but worry about Long Chen.

Elder Yang still decided to wait for longer, but soon he sensed a large quantity of spiritual energy coming from the room, which shocked even himself. This spiritual energy was nothing like he had ever seen before, there was something powerful in it.

He wondered if there was a problem with the power source of the formation. Just as he was about to break the door and enter that spiritual energy disappeared like it was never there. He could see that the 5th Crystal had turned green.

Elder Yang entered the room and saw Long Chen sitting at the core of the formation, exhausted.

"Are you alright, little Tian? What was that energy wave just now?" Elder Yang asked as he looked at Long Chen for any injury.

"I don't know what it was, it just appeared out of nowhere as soon as I passed the 5th level. It might have been from the formation." Long Chen said with a confused look, looking at the formation.

"Uncle Yang, is it supposed to do that if someone finishes the 5th level?" Long Chen looked at Elder Yang as he continued asking, trying to divert his thinking.

"I do not think it's supposed to do that, but as no one has ever passed the 5th level, I cannot say for sure." Elder Yang didn't have any explanation for this phenomenon himself.

"Anyways, how did you pass the 5th level, it was supposed to be a 10th stage Spirit beast right?" Elder Yang changed the topic and asked another question that he was confused about.

"I was lucky, I guess, I..." Just as Long Chen was about to give an excuse, suddenly the door opened inside the room.

"I think that's for me. We can talk later, uncle Yang." Long Chen said as he started walking towards the door.

"Go on, your destined weapon is waiting for you at the end of this door, I am sure it will be a high-level Spirit grade weapon, seeing your results." Elder Yang stopped his questions and said looking towards the door.

Long Chen entered the door, and after walking in the passage, he finally reached a room, Long Chen could see inside the room there were a few Spirit grade weapons floating in their place.

Long Chen was amazed to see that all these weapons were peak Spirit grade weapons. When Long Chen passed the 5th level of this trial, he knew that he would get a high-grade Spirit weapon, but all the weapons in front of him were king of Spirit grade weapons, peak level Spirit grade weapons and he could choose anyone from them. He could not help but smile.

Long Chen started walking towards the weapons, looking at them one by one. Long Chen could see that there were many kinds of weapons. There were weapons including swords, blades, saber, ax, staff, spear, there was even a hammer shining brightly.

Just as Long Chen was looking at these weapons and wondering which one to get, he noticed that at the farthest corner of the room, there was a weapon floating there alone. It looked like no other weapon dared to go near it.

Long Chen started stepping towards that exact weapon.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 33 - 33: King's Sword

Long Chen noticed that there was a Spirit weapon floating in solitude, and no other weapon dared to intrude in its area. Long Chen knew that there must be something unique about this weapon. It was a golden, heavy sword.

Long Chen started walking towards it, and as soon as he reached in front of it, Long Chen could see this golden sword clearly. Long Chen could feel that there was something special about it.

Although physically it looked just like any other heavy sword floating there, there was something unique in it. A kind of arrogance and pride. Long Chen decided that he will get this sword.

Long Chen put his hands on its hilt and As soon as he gripped this sword, he could feel a strong resistance coming from this sword.

Long Chen utilized his full cultivation and kept this sword in its place. But it was getting difficult for him to hold this sword with time. Finally, this sword got out of his hands and slashed towards him. Long Chen dodged this attack on time but was still grazed by it.

Just as this sword wounded Long Chen, some of his blood touched the sword. Although it was completely red, if one were to look very closely, they could see a small particle of violet inside. This sword then stopped in its place, doing nothing.

Long Chen kept looking at this sword for a while, but when this sword did nothing, Long Chen decided to get closer to it, while being ready to dodge at a moment's notice. As Long Chen got closer, there was still no movement.

Long Chen finally decided to touch it's hilt again. As soon as he did it, he noticed that there was no resistance this time. Instead, Long Chen felt like this sword was scared of him when accepting him as a master.

Long Chen wanted to put this sword in his storage ring, but he decided against it after thinking for a moment. Long Chen was sure that Elder Yang would be waiting outside for him and would want to see the weapon he chose.

If Long Chen did not have a weapon when he came out, Elder Yang might suspect that he had a storage ring.

Although Long Chen knew that Elder Yang was an honest man and wouldn't steal his ring, Long Chen nonetheless felt like it was better to not expose his secrets.

As Long Chen looked back after thinking about everything, he noticed that there was no weapon in the room. All the other weapons had disappeared.

"Interesting, Maybe this is to stop people from taking more than one weapon out. As soon as you choose one, other weapons go out of the room." Long Chen noticed a small opening in the room and could guess that all other weapons had entered that opening, going to some unknown place for the moment. Long Chen then decided to walk outside.

While Elder Yang was waiting in the formation room, he saw Long Chen come out from the entrance. He noticed the weapon Long Chen was carrying, and could not help but open his mouth wide.

"Uncle Yang, why are you so shocked? Although I got a peak Spirit grade weapon, it's nothing worth being that shocked about?" Long Chen laughed as he looked at Elder Yang.

"Little Tian, so you know what this sword is?" Elder Yang asked with a weird expression on his face.

"No? Can you please explain more, Uncle Yang?" Long Chen realized something was wrong from Elder Yang's expressions.

"Have you heard about Saint King Xianwu?" Elder Yang asked Long Chen while looking at this sword.

"Of course I have, uncle Yang, in this world who hasn't heard about Saint King Xianwu?"

"He was the first ruler of this continent. The heroic king, known for his bravery and strength. He was the one who brought salvation to humans," Long Chen continued talking. He had known all these from the memories of Long Tian.

"Exactly. Many centuries ago, humans were nothing. We were at the bottom of the food chain amongst all races on this continent. Although humans were able to cultivate and become stronger, we were still nothing in front of other races, especially beasts.

Although we were able to live in coexistence, humans had no territory. That was until Saint King Xianwu came to be." Elder Yang continued telling Long Chen the story.

"Saint King Xianwu was strong and talented since childhood. He was a miracle child, achieving feats that no other human could. When he grew up, he was the one who established the first human kingdom and protected it against invasions.

In fact, Saint King Xianwu was so strong that he even kept extending human territory and made humans into a prominent race. But that's only the simplified explanation." Elder Yang finished explaining.

"Uncle Yang? What has this sword got to do with Saint King Xianwu?" Long Chen still did not understand why elder Yang was talking about Saint King Xianwu when the topic was about his sword. He couldn't help but think, was his sword somehow related to Saint King Xianwu.

"This sword... It's called the king's sword. It is said that it is the sword Saint King Xianwu used when he was in the Spirit Establishment realm and above." Elder Yang told Long Chen, shocking him as he continued.

"Really? Why is it here in the Long clan?" Long Chen asked, shocked. He did not expect that the Saint King's sword could be in the Long clan waiting just beneath the trial of spirit weapons.

"I am not sure. It is said that the Long Clan's first patriarch found this sword from someplace. He allowed every Spirit Establishment and gold core realm expert to make contact with it, and become this sword's master if they were worthy of it. Many geniuses tried, but none could make this sword accept them as the master."

"Long Clan's first patriarch was disappointed, he placed this sword with other peak Spirit grade weapons, and decided on the test to access those peak Spirit grade weapons."

"Only those who passed the 5th level of the test could come in contact with this sword and try to make it accept them as the master. Maybe it was his way to find someone worthy of this sword, but unfortunately no one passed the 5th level since then." Elder Yang finished telling Long Chen.

"Even though you passed the 5th level of this test, I still cannot believe this arrogant sword recognized you as master." Elder Yang continued looking at this sword.

This sword started buzzing like it was getting angry at someone calling it arrogant. Long Chen couldn't help but smile at this childlike behavior.

"Maybe it's my lucky day." Long Chen joked as he looked at Elder Yang.

"Uncle Yang, it is getting late, I have something else to do, I should be going now. I will see you later." Long Chen decided to say his farewell as now that he had the weapon it was time to finish what was left.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 34 - 34: From The Royal Clan?

As Long Chen walked out of the treasure Hall, Elder Yang stood there silently. After a while, he walked out as well, going towards the center of the Long clan, the place where Long Clan's patriarch Long Ren lived.

Long Chen walked out of Treasure Hall and started walking towards his mother's courtyard as he wanted to tell her before going, since Long Chen did not want to worry her and realized that this trip may take a long time.

On his way, Long Chen noticed the skill hall but decided against going inside. As he had faith in the skills he had, and also because Long Chen thought that even if he chose a Spirit grade Martial Skill now, he would not be able to master it in such a short time.

As Long Chen reached his mother's courtyard, he knocked on the door. As soon as Sima Ziyi opened the door, Long Chen told her that he will be going out for a while, Long Chen told her that since he has recovered now, he wanted to continue training. Long Chen told her that he wanted to go to the northern Black forest and fight some wild beasts and increase his strength and that it might take a few days at most until his return.

Sima Ziyi was against it, but Long Chen lied to her saying that grandfather had given him permission and 2 peak golden core protectors this time for his safety. He affirmed to her that he will be fine and that she has no need to worry.

"Alright, since father-in-law had already agreed and gave you two peak gold core protectors and the northern black forest don't have any beast stronger than in the spirit realm. I will allow it this time." In front of Long Chen's constant requests, Sima Ziyi finally agreed.

"Wait for a little bit, I will get someone to pack some food for you. When are you leaving?" Sima Ziyi asked.

"Ahem... Right now if possible." Long Chen asked, looking in her eyes.

Sima Ziyi was shocked but calmed herself down and hurriedly left the room and got the food prepared and packed. Long Chen was amazed when he saw how much food was prepared. It was probably enough to say that this food would last him longer than a week.

Long Chen said his farewell to Sima Ziyi as he walked towards the North exit of Long Clan. His luxurious carriage was already prepared and waiting there

for him as he had anyway told a servant before going out today to get everything prepared. Long Chen entered the carriage as it started driving towards Northern territory of dragon city.

As Long Chen left the mansion, Elder Yang was coming back from Long Ren's courtyard. He went there to tell Long Ren about what happened on the second floor of Treasure Hall, and his grandson's wonderful achievement.

Just as Elder Yang reached Long Ren's courtyard, he was informed that Patriarch Long Ren had left the clan a little while ago.

Elder Yang was told that Long Ren went to a nearby city for some important purpose and that they did not know when they'll be back. Elder Yang could do nothing but come back to treasure Hall and wait for Long Ren to return.

While Long Chen's carriage was going towards the Northern black forest, he was comfortably sitting inside reading a book. When Long Chen was on Earth, he did not read many books in his free time, except the ones related to his studies, that too only when the exams neared.

But now Long Chen realized that reading books and gaining knowledge had become one of his hobbies. He felt like maybe it was the influence of Long Tian's memories that made him like this but for the moment he enjoyed this hobby.

While Long Chen was reading, his carriage was passing through streets without any problem. No one dared obstruct Long Clan's carriage. After a while, this carriage finally entered the northern territory of dragon city.

Long Chen opened the window of his carriage and looked outside.

Long Chen noticed that this territory wasn't as flourished as the southern territory that the Long clan resided in. Long Chen knew that it was because there were no great families residing in this territory and managing it. As Qin and Gu clan had occupied the Eastern and Western territory, respectively.

Another reason being that this territory was not that rich in resources. Although it was not bad, it was not great either. The houses were not luxurious and fancy, but they weren't poor and weak either. Since it was still a part of the royal city of Shui, the Royal family somewhat maintained the standard of living here.

After riding through the northern territory for a while, Long Chen's carriage finally reached the northern territory's edge, where the northern black forest was located.

Long Chen got out of the carriage, told his carriage driver to stay here and wait for his return. As Long Chen looked nearby, Long Chen noticed there were two more carriages already present here.

He recognized both these carriages through the symbol inscribed on them. One carriage had a dragon symbol on it and looked just like Long Chen's carriage. Long Chen guessed that it was Long Su's carriage, proving that he was here.

What shocked Long Chen the most was the second carriage. Long Chen could see that there was a moon symbol on this carriage.

"Why are they here?" Long Chen muttered to himself as he looked at this carriage.

Long Chen knew what this moon symbol signified. It was the symbol of Yue Clan, the symbol of the royal family of the Shui kingdom.

'Someone from the Royal family is here too, but why? It will be problematic if whoever it is, is with Long Su. I need to find out who it is.' Long Chen thought to himself as he started walking towards this carriage.

He could see the carriage driver sitting there with his eyes closed.

"Excuse me. Can you tell me who arrived in this carriage?" Long Chen asked the carriage driver as he got closer.

"Get lost, can't you see it's the royal family's carriage," that carriage driver scolded as he opened his eyes. But as soon as he saw Long Chen's luxurious clothes and the dragon symbol on his golden robe, he shut his mouth.

He looked around and noticed the third carriage that just arrived there. Sure enough, it was from the Long clan. Although he was a driver of the royal family's carriage, he did not dare offend someone from the main bloodline of the 3 major clans. He realized this after seeing that this 12-13-year-old kid was allowed to have his own private carriage, there was no way that this kid wasn't someone important. He knew that this person in front of him was probably from the main bloodline of the Long clan.

"Young master Long, I apologize for not recognizing you. Since I arrived here, there had been many people who entered this forest, but before entering they

all asked me this same question. I thought it was someone like that again. I did not realize it was someone from the Long clan." The carriage driver said to Long Chen while apologizing

"It is alright, I am Long Tian from the Long clan, so can you tell me who arrived in this carriage? I noticed someone else from my Long clan arrived here as well. Did they go inside together?" Long Chen continued asking.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 35 - 35: Entering Black Forest

That carriage driver was shocked when he heard Long Chen calling himself Long Tian. He had been a servant of the royal family for a long time, so of course, he knew who Long Tian was.

The heavenly genius of the Shui kingdom who was destroyed before he could flourish. The most favourite grandson of Long Clan's patriarch, Long Ren. He could not understand how Long Tian could be standing in front of him talking to himself.

"You must be jesting young master Long. Everyone knows that young master Long Tian is... I mean that he cannot mentally function like a normal boy anymore, I am sure you also know Young master Long Tian had never come out from his clan mansion in the last 4 years since the attack on him." Long Chen understood that this guy was about to call Long Tian a retard, but controlled himself, noticing that he was in front of a long clan member.

"Hahaha, you are right, you are pretty smart. I am Long Chen. I have been training alone in the Long clan since the start so I am sure not many people will know about me." Long Chen changed the topic agreeing with that carriage driver as Long Chen did not want to waste any more time trying to prove his identity.

"Indeed, young master Chen, I have never heard of you, but since you can use that golden carriage, you must have an important position in the clan?" Long Chen could see that this carriage driver was trying to get information about his identity out of him.

"Just so-so." Long Chen replied.

"Anyway, you did not tell me who arrived in this carriage, and did they go inside together with someone from the Long clan?" Long Chen continued asking.

"No. When we arrived then the Long Clan's carriage was already there, we don't even know who arrived in it. As for our carriage, His highness the second prince and the 3rd princess both arrived in this carriage together. As for what purpose they came here, I wouldn't be able to tell you even if I knew." He answered Long Chen's questions as he looked at him.

"Oh, second prince and third princess. Thanks for informing me, I will be going now." Long Chen said as he walked inside the forest as well.

"Since he's from the main bloodline of the Long clan and is brave enough to come here, he must be pretty strong. Still, it's strange that I was not able to sense any cultivation from him." That carriage driver looked Towards Long Chen as he muttered to himself.

Long Chen entered the forest. He could see that there were various plants and trees in the forest. Long Chen spread his divine sense around him, which covered an area of 200 meters, but Long Chen could not sense any presence.

Divine sense was an ability that every Spirit Establishment cultivator had, it was mainly used to sense the surroundings and keep an eye on nearby areas, but its uses increased with an increase in realms of their cultivation. Long Chen had read about the range of divine sense in every stage of the Spirit Establishment realm.

First stage Spirit Establishment realm cultivator having divine sense range of 10 meters, its range kept increasing with the increase in cultivation. But Long Chen knew that his divine sense was different as well.

As generally a 5th stage Spirit Establishment realm cultivator will have a divine sense range of 50 meters, but Long Chen already had a range of 200 meters while being in the same realm. In terms of divine sense range, Long Chen knew that he was already slightly Superior to normal 10th stage Spirit Establishment realm.

As Long Chen didn't find anything near him, even after spreading his divine sense, Long Chen knew there were no beasts or humans nearby. Long Chen guessed it was probably because he was still on the outer edge of the forest. Long Chen decided to go deeper as he needed to find Long Su.

Long Chen walked for 10 minutes but still did not find any beast, but he found many medicinal herbs on the way, as Long Tian read a lot, he always had good knowledge about the medicinal plants. With the help of this knowledge, Long Chen kept picking up useful medicinal plants and putting them in his storage ring.

After walking for a little more, Long Chen met his first beast. It was a stone crushing bear having a strength of the 4th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. Long Chen knew that stone crushing bears had a high defense and attack but less agility. Still, instead of using his agility to defeat this Spirit beast, Long Chen decided to use his strength.

Long Chen was pretty confident about his strength against a 4th stage Spirit beast, stone crushing bear. That's why Long Chen did not even bring out his

King's sword and only took out his Mountain destroyer. Long Chen stood still with a sword in his head.

"Seven forms of saint sword: first form - cleansing."

Long Chen attacked with his sword before this beast could even understand what was happening head was separated from his body and it had died. Long Chen decided to keep the body of this stone crushing bear in his storage ring as Long Chen had a lot of free space in there and if he needed it in the future, he could sell it for a good amount of money in the market.

After putting a stone crushing bear's body in his storage ring, Long Chen continued his journey forward.

While Long Chen was entering the northern black forest and killing beasts, Long Su and his party were going even deeper in the forest.

"Dammit, All we faced in this forest were a few 6th and 7th stage Spirit beasts, where are the stronger ones, how can we strengthen ourselves without a good fight." Long Su muttered to himself as he continued walking.

There was another important pair of people in the forest.

A handsome boy was walking inside the forest. He looked to be around the 17-18-year-old boy and had dark black hair and light blue iris, a prince like face. This black-haired boy was wearing a light blue robe, with a moon symbol on it and he was walking with a 15-16-year-old girl.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 36 - 36: Meeting The Royals

Long Chen kept walking in this forest deeper and deeper. On his way, Long Chen met many spirit beasts and killed them without any hesitation, till now he hadn't met any Spirit beast stronger than the 7th stage of the Spirit refining realm

"Till now I have met many spirit beasts, but there is no clue about Long Su, I need to increase my speed to catch up with them. Too bad I cannot use heavenly demon wings right now as this forest is full of people, and I do not want too many people to know about it." Long Chen increased his speed as continued onwards.

Long Chen kept advancing and killing spirit beasts as fast as he could and kept increasing his battle experience at an astonishing speed.

"After all this fighting, even my skills are improving at a fast speed. No wonder people come here to fight Spirit beasts." Long Chen said to himself as he noticed his progress in Martial skills.

After a day of fighting and running, Long Chen finally decided that it was time to find a safe place to sleep as the sky turned dark.

"A formation? I guess someone is here," As Long Chen was walking he noticed that he had entered a formation. But he wasn't worried as Long Chen knew that it was just a warning formation, which notified the person who cast it that someone entered their surroundings.

Long Chen kept walking towards the core of this formation and noticed two people standing there in battle formation.

'Hmm... those two?... I guess we finally meet.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he recognized these two people from their clothes. One of these two was a handsome youth who looked somewhat sharp. This young boy had a head full of dark black hair and having light blue iris making him look even more handsome.

But what attracted Long Chen was the second person. It was a young girl looking somewhere around 15-16 years old. She had a cute, and somewhat naïve looking face while she had a head full of long shiny blue hair. She also had deep blue eyes just like that boy, but they were full of innocence like she had never seen or done any wrong in all her life.

"Someone from the Long clan? You look so young. What are you doing here?" That boy asked Long Chen as he noticed his clothes.

"Your Royal Highness second prince, 3rd princess. It is really surprising to meet you here, to say the least." Long Chen said as he greeted them both.

"Oh? Do you know about us? I am sure you guessed by our clothes that we were from the Royal family, just like we guessed from your clothes that you are from the Long clan.

But how did you know that I am the second prince Yue Luan and that she is my sister and third princess of the kingdom, Yue Fei?" Prince Yue Luan asked Long Chen as he smiled and kept his sword.

"Our King only has 5 sons and 4 daughters. While the Crown prince is already above 18, and you do not look that old. And the 4th prince is only 12 this year, so you could only be either the second prince or the third prince.

After that, it was quite simple as the third prince has red hair which he inherited from his mother. While the second prince has long black hair." Long Chen lied about how he knew that he was the second prince. But even if that carriage driver had not told him, based on his observations, Long Chen knew that he would have easily realized that in front of him was Yue Luan, the second prince.

"Pretty good thought process, but how did you know that I am the son of the king? Our Royal family does not consist of only my Royal father. There are many uncles and other family members and even more kids in the Royal family. How did you know that I was not one of them?" Yue Luan kept asking while looking into his eyes.

"What would you say if I tell you that I guessed it from your Royal aura? You had the king's aura around you." Long Chen answered, lying shamelessly.

"Hahahaha good answer, I like you, little friend." Yue Luan laughed proudly as he said.

"As you said, I'm the second prince Yue Luan, this is my dear sister Yue Fei, Third princess of the kingdom. What is your name, little friend?" Yue Luan introduced himself as he asked.

"My name is Long Tian, your highness." Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Long Tian? Really?" Yue Luan was shocked. In the back, even Yue Fei's expressions changed.

"Why is it so shocking? Are there any bad rumors about me?" Long Chen smiled as he asked.

"Not bad rumors, I would say, but the things I heard about you are quite different. Are you really Long Tian?" Yue Luan asked with a doubtful gaze.

Although Long Chen knew why they would be doubting him, he still decided to continue.

"Oh, what things?" Long Chen asked.

"Just things that probably everyone in the kingdom knows about young master Long Tian. I had heard about your achievements a lot of times before. About your breakthroughs, your talent which is quite normal considering that you achieved a peak of body refining at just 8.

My Royal father even used to joke about how amazing it would have been if you were his son and part of the Royal clan." Yue Luan said.

"But things changed when you were attacked. There were rumors that your mental health deteriorated after that. Even royal doctors were not able to heal you. I also heard that you went missing two days ago. Long clan was going crazy searching for you. I am sure the whole kingdom knows about you by now. So it is pretty shocking to see you here," Yue Luan continued.

"It is pretty normal for people to recover, your highness. As for the missing part, that problem is solved as well, I am coming here straight from Long mansion today." Long Chen said as he smiled. Long Chen could not help but glance at Yue Fei in between while talking to Yue Luan.

Yue Luan noticed it as well.

Chapter 37 - 37: Bonfire

"Young Master Tian, is there something you want to say to my sister? You have been looking in her direction a lot since we met." Yue Luan asked in a serious tone.

"Ah. Oh right, I was just curious about why the third princess would be here with you in this forest. Also, she is still pointing her weapon at me," Long Chen gave a wry smile as he said.

"Ahh. I apologize, I forgot to keep my weapon." Yue Fei finally said as she blushed and hurriedly put her weapon back as well.

"Hahaha... Oh, I thought it was something else." Yue Luan laughed as he looked at Yue Fei then back at Long Chen.

"It's fine, your highness. Anyways, what're you both doing in this forest?" Long Chen asked.

"As you might have known, Little Fei has strong cultivation but not much fighting experience as she had always been in the palace. I thought it would be a good experience to get some practice in this forest, and she suggested coming with me.

Our Royal father agreed to this request after her constant pestering. Although there are beasts here, none of them are stronger than the 10th stage of Spirit Establishment. So it's a good practice ground. By the way, why are you here?" Yue Luan continued.

"I am here for the same reason as you. To get some practice." Long Chen smiled as he said.

"I can't believe your clan agreed to you coming here. Although this place isn't dangerous for us, this place is basically a death ground for someone in a body refining realm like you. You should go back, little friend." Yue Luan suggested.

"I can handle it, your highness, I broke through to the Spirit Establishment realm a while back. I am sure I can handle this forest."

'This Long Tian, he probably just broke through to the Spirit Establishment realm and came here to fight beasts. That's pretty stupid. But I somehow don't get a feeling like he is stupid. Does he have something to rely on?' Yue Luan thought.

"If you say so. Anyways, do you want to travel with us? Although you say that you can handle Spirit beasts on your own, it will be better for you to stick with us. I don't want Patriarch Ren to cause another chaos in dragon city if something happened to you." Yue Luan suggested.

"Well, I was looking for a place to rest tonight. But I can't travel with you guys. Only the battles I endured myself will make me stronger. So I want to go by myself," Long Chen said with confidence.

"Oh? Well, if you say so." Yue Luan said.

"I am sure you brought a tent with you. You can place it near ours. Our formation will inform us when someone enters our range, so it is pretty safe here. You can decide what to do in the morning."

"I will accept your highness' kind offer then." Long Chen said as he started laying his tent nearby.

After preparing his tent, he noticed that it was already pretty dark. And Yue Luan and Yue Fei were sitting outside near a bonfire.

"The view here is pretty nice." Long Chen said as he sat near Yue Luan.

"I have something I am curious about. We never met each other before today, and don't know each other that well. Why did his highness allow me to stay here without worrying for his, and third princess' safety?" He decided to ask.

"Hahaha, why? Do you think there is a need to worry? Firstly, our Royal father would never allow us to go out alone without any protection. So although you can't see them, our Royal guards are nearby observing your every move, young master Tian.

And secondly, no offense, but even if we were alone, I don't think you could even hurt us. You're not strong enough." Yue Luan laughed as he said.

'I already sensed that there were 2 warriors nearby through my divine sense, both in the gold core realm. Since I couldn't sense any malicious intent from them, I guessed that they were from Royal guards here to protect Yue Luan and Yue Fei. Now I've confirmed it.

I need to go alone and be fast in finding and killing Long Su. If these guys somehow catch up and meet Long Su and his friends, I wouldn't be able to kill him under the observation of Royal guards without being found out.' Long Chen thought to himself.

"Why do you look so serious? Don't worry little friend. They won't hurt you." Yue Luan smiled as he said.

"Ah, it's nothing. I was just thinking about something. Anyway, I have only heard the third princess speak once. Does she not like to talk much?" Long Chen asked in a low voice.

"Hahaha, she doesn't like to talk much?? She is like a chatterbox when she speaks, never stopping. It is just that she is shy around people she doesn't know well. You'll see if you stay with us." Yue Luan laughed as he said.

"Brother! You are badmouthing about me again. I won't talk to you again." Yue Fei said in a low voice as she looked at Yue Luan. But when she noticed Long Chen looking at her, she started looking down at the ground.

'Interesting girl. They are both really nice. I wonder how these two could be so kind when they were born in the Royal family full of schemes. Their father must be really kind as well to have kids like them.'

"I wasn't saying anything bad about you, Fei'er. I was just telling little brother Tian about the things I love about you." Yue Luan laughed as he said.

"Hmmpf ... I am going to sleep." Yue Fei got up and ran inside her tent.

"Hahaha, she is so easily embarrassed. Still, I am really lucky to have her as my sister."

"Anyways, I should go to sleep as well. See you in the morning little Brother Tian." Yue Fei got up as well and went inside his tent.

'Those two are so close. It is nice seeing such a close bond between Brother and sister. But that's probably because they are from the same mother. I wonder if it is the same between all the princes and princesses of the royal family born from different mothers as well.' Long Chen thought to himself.

"I should focus on my own matters. No need to think about the Royal family." He muttered to himself as he went inside his tent as well.

Long Chen started cultivating as soon as he went inside his tent. His cultivation kept advancing at an astonishing speed, but he knew it would still take a few more days to get to the peak of the 5th stage Spirit Establishment. Long Chen stopped cultivating after 2 hours and got outside to get some fresh air.

"Third princess Fei. You're not sleeping yet?" Long Chen came out of his tent and noticed Yue Fei sitting outside her tent looking at the stars.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 38 - 38: Massacre

"Ah, Young master Tian. Why are you up as well?" Yue Fei spoke in her cute voice.

"You should speak more often, your voice is really nice." Long Chen complimented her as he looked at her.

"I could not sleep well, so I came out to get some fresh air. Anyways, why is princess Fei here?" Long Chen decided to continue as he noticed Yue Fei's cheeks turning red at his compliment. He started walking towards her.

"I couldn't sleep either, I came outside. As I looked at this beautiful sky, I couldn't take my eyes off," Yue Fei said as she noticed Long Chen coming towards her.

Long Chen stopped just 5 meters ahead of her and sat down as well.

"Yea, this sky is really beautiful. Just like princess Fei. Even I can't take my eyes off." Long Chen said as he kept looking into Yue Fei's eyes.

Yue Fei's cheeks turned red as she diverted her eyes, but Long Chen still kept gazing at her.

"Princess Fei, the Second prince said that you proposed coming to this forest with him. Why would you do that?" Long Chen decided to change the topic.

"Oh, I just wished to look at the outside world more, I have spent most of my time in the palace. Even when I went outside, it was just to shops and places in the Royal capital.

My Royal father never permitted me to go anywhere else. When big brother said that he will be coming to this forest to train, I joined in on this opportunity." Yue Fei said as she kept looking at the sky.

"I never thought Princess Fei would have such a side to herself as well." Long Chen smiled.

"Ah... it is getting late, I should go to sleep or Brother will scold me when I get up late. Good night young master Tian"

"Goodnight princess Fei. I hope you have sweet dreams," Long Chen smiled as he got up as well. He watched Yue Fei enter her tent and entered his as well.

Early morning Yue Luan and Yue Fei woke up but noticed that Long Chen's tent was not here, neither was he.

"That little guy. He already left. Why is he in such a hurry? It's not like you will eat him up." Yue Luan said as he looked towards Yue Fei.

"You're always bullying me, brother". Yue Fei hit on Yue Luan's shoulders like a kid as she complained.

Long Chen continued advancing and defeating spirit beasts obstructing his path.

Long Chen was continuing walking ahead when he sensed 3 people hiding behind trees 150 meters ahead of him.

'Hmm. Those three hiding there? There are traces of fresh blood on the ground, but I don't see any bodies or any remains of people. Interesting.' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"Should I play with them? I haven't fought any human Spirit Establishment cultivators, and these three are a pretty good choice. One in the 7th stage of Spirit Establishment realm and two in 6th. If I can't even defeat them, how will I be able to kill Long Su?" Long Chen muttered to himself.

He kept his golden robes, having the Long clan symbol in his storage ring as he continued walking forward. He knew that if he kept wearing these robes, those bandits wouldn't even dare Target him and if they do not target him, they won't show their real selves giving him a perfect reason to kill them.

As Long Chen got closer, those three finally noticed him.

"Boss Guan, there's a kid coming, his clothes are pretty nice, he must be from a fairly Rich family," A bearded short guy said to the bald guy standing on his front.

"You're right, Wuya, he looks like a 12-13-year-old guy. He must be really weak, probably a naïve kid thinking he can survive here. I guess we should be kind enough to teach him a lesson of humility in the place of his parents. Take positions." Boss Guan said smiling.

'They are getting ready to attack, I guess my hunch was right.' Long Chen smiled as he kept walking forward.

"Hahaha, Little boy, this isn't the place you can walk into so easily," Wuya walked out from his left as he laughed while a muscular guy came out of his right.

"Right. Little friends, the world outside isn't so nice. Anything could happen when you go out, especially in dangerous areas like this. You could be killed and no one will know." A bald guy stood in his front as he said. He had an evil smile on his face.

"Oh? And you are here to teach me about this world?" Long Chen smiled as he looked straight at this bald guy.

"Yea, we are kind enough." Wuya took his knife out as he ran towards Long Chen utilizing his cultivation of the 6th stage Spirit spirit Establishment realm.

'This kid is so young, he won't even know how he got killed.' Wuya thought as he attacked but as soon as he covered half the distance, He could see his focus changing from Long Chen and a headless body running towards Long Chen.

Before Wuya could think anything, his vision turned dark, and he had died. His body fell a little ahead of his head.

Boss Guan was smiling the entire time as he noticed Wuya attack Long Chen, thinking that Long Chen was already dead. But as soon as he saw his body fall to the ground, he knew that he had provoked trouble. This boy in front of him wasn't normal.

"Dammit. This kid is strong. Tichuan attack him together with me," Guan screamed, looking towards the muscular guy as soon as he processed what happened. But as soon as he turned his face towards him, he noticed that this muscular guy was already lying on the ground dead.

Guan looked towards where Long Chen was standing but saw no one was there.

"And here I thought you guys could give me some fighting experience, but you guys are even weaker than 5th stage spirit beasts. I wasted my time needlessly." Guan heard Long Chen's voice filled with disdain from behind him, but before he could move, a sword pierced through his heart from the back.

Guan died regretting provoking this calamity.

Long Chen wore his golden robe back as he started walking forward like nothing happened.

Half a day later, two more people appeared at that site. They were Yue Luan and Yue Fei.

"Such a massacre! These are sword wounds, probably done by a human cultivator." Yue Luan commented after seeing the wounds of those three. While Yue Fei could not help close her eyes seeing a headless body.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 39 - 39: Courting Death

"These guys must have provoked someone whom they should not have. Anyways, these things have nothing to do with us, let's just continue onwards." Yue Luan held Yue Fei's hands as he brought her forward.

'I hope little brother Tian walked in a different direction. I don't want him to somehow accidentally provoke whoever did this.' Yue Luan thought to himself.

Long Chen kept experiencing various battles and even met an 8th stage spirit beast, but he killed them all. Another day passed and night arrived.

"It's been 2 days and still no clue of Long Su, I never expected this forest to be so big," Long Chen said to himself as he looked at the sky. He spread his divine sense to its limit, but seeing that the area was clear, he decided to rest at this place.

"It would be so good if I had a warning formation like that as well, I should have asked Elder Yang if he had something like that in the treasure hall before leaving." He muttered to himself.

'Still, it is good that I prepared something for myself before coming.' Long Chen smiled as he thought.

Long Chen decided it was time to use a little trick. He picked two nearby tall trees and brought out a hammock from his storage ring that he had asked his servant to get for him before leaving.

"Heavenly demon wings!"

Since it was night and Long Chen knew that no one was nearby, he used his heavenly demon wings and flew upwards, but not too high. Long Chen tied both ends of his hammock on two nearby tall trees so that no one sees him when in daylight.

"Hah, it is pretty comfortable here. I just hope there is no rain tonight, or it would really suck," Long Chen said to himself as he lay on his hammock and fell asleep.

'Mmmm... I can't even sleep in peace with all this noise,'

Sun was still rising in the sky when Long Chen was woken up by some noise from below. He got up and looked down.

"What is happening down there? 5 guys surrounding two girls? They do not look like bandits though." Long Chen muttered to himself as he kept looking down.

He could see that two 20-25-year-old girls were surrounded by 5 middle-aged guys. These girls were wearing normal clothes, they were probably from a commoner family while the other 5 who surrounded them were wearing matching clothes.

"That's interesting. Those two girls are at the 2nd stage Spirit Establishment realm. While one of those 5 is at 4th stage spirit Establishment and another 4 at 3rd stage of Spirit Establishment realm."

"You two! Stop making things difficult for Brother Chun. He said he wanted you since the moment he saw you in this forest. Why do you keep running away from us?" One of those 5 said.

"Yes, attracting Brother Chun is due to the good karma of your ancestors or someone like Brother Chun would not even look at you. Just come with us without resisting." Another one said.

"You should know Brother Chun is the son of the clan master of the Fu clan. It is one of the top 10 clans of the northern territory of dragon city. Many girls like you plead with our brother Chun on a daily basis just to spend one night with him. It is your good fortune that he is interested in you two!" 4th stage cultivator amongst the 5 said.

"Never! I will die, but I won't let me and my younger sister become playthings of that Fu Chun. Everybody in the northern territory knows your brother Chun and his evil ways!"

"Little girl, we were talking nicely till now just because we did not want to hurt you before brother Chun got to play with you. Do not force us to resort to violence." One of the 5 said.

"Yea, do not think someone can save you. No one would dare interfere in our Fu Clan's matters. People will pee their pants if they heard they obstructed Brother Chun's work."

"Oh, is that so?" Just as they were boasting came a voice from somewhere. They all looked around but could not see anyone.

"Who is it? Don't try to be a hero, or you will die without a grave!" The leader of those five said.

"Fu clan of northern territory? Isn't that just a third rate clan even in the northern territory? They aren't even in the top 100 when considering all of the dragon city. Never knew they'd be roaming around here with such pride," Long Chen said from above.

"Oh, there's someone who dares talk about my Fu clan like that?" An average-looking guy walked out from nearby as he said with a face full of anger. He looked to be about 20-25 as well. He was wearing black robes and had a pretty average looking face.

"Brother Chun!" Those 5 guys greeted Fu Chun as they kept surrounding those two girls.

'A 5th stage Spirit Establishment realm? And here I thought he would be a little stronger.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he looked at Fu Chun.

"This friend! Since you have so many things to say about my Fu clan, why don't you come outside instead of hiding? I promise I will only cut two of your legs and one tongue," Fu Chen said with an evil smile on his face.

"But if you don't come out, then I will have to come find you myself, and I promise your ending won't be well. Even your family will be buried with you."

"Cutting two legs? Ok, let me see how you do that." Long Chen said as he landed on the ground in between those two girls and those 5 guys.

He had already kept his hammock in his storage ring as he jumped down.

. "Kid! You dare talk bad about our Fu clan in front of Brother Chun! You're courting death!" One of the four 3rd stage Spirit Establishment cultivators said. He was so angry that he did not notice Long Chen's clothes as he scolded him. But as soon as he did, his face turned white.

"L... L... L... Long clan!!!" He fell to his knees as he realized who was standing in front of him. There was probably no one in the kingdom who did not recognize the Long Clan's symbol and clothing. Someone From the 3 supreme clans of the kingdom!

Fu Chun had his mouth opened as well, as his face was filled with fear.

'I... I just threatened someone from the Long clan that I will cut his legs! I even said I will bury his family with him.' Fu Chun wanted to cry, but no tears came out from his eyes.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 40 - 40: Big Mistake

"I am still waiting for my legs to be cut off since I came out myself. Who is going to do it?" Long Chen smiled as he looked at Fu Chun and asked.

"M... M... Misunderstanding. It was all a misunderstanding master Long," Fu Chun said as he waved his hands rapidly.

"Misunderstanding? I think someone said they will bury my family with me!" Long Chen said, as his expressions turned serious.

"M... Master Long. I apologize for disrespecting you. I did not know it was someone from the Long clan, or I would not dare to do it even in my dreams. I.. I had eyes but couldn't see the mountain. I hope you can forgive my mistake." Fu Chun apologized again.

"It's fine, everyone can make mistakes. Since I am such a kind soul, I wouldn't mind much and Will forgive you. Just cut two of your legs and I will let you walk back." Long Chen smiled as he said to Fu Chun.

'How can brother Chun walk when both his legs are cut off?' One of Fu Chun's underlings couldn't help but think in his mind.

Brother Chun! This guy is too arrogant. So what if he's from the Long clan. He is just a kid, we can kill him fast and no one will know.

As for these two girls, after you enjoy their bodies you can just throw them to us. All of us brothers will take our turns and make love to them and kill them after since they will see him being killed and be witnesses." Said the 4th stage Spirit Establishment cultivator taking his weapons out.

"How dare you talk about master Long like that!" Fu Chun slapped this guy, making him fly 50 meters back and crashing on a tree. After struggling for a while, he got up and came back to Fu Chun and apologized. He understood this point after seeing Fu Chun's behavior.

'That idiot! How can he say such things in front of this guy! There is no way a kid from the Long clan could come here without guards protecting him. They must be hidden somewhere nearby' Fu Chun thought.

"You're pretty clever, young master Chun. But you will still have to cut your legs for insulting my family. Oh, by the way, I did not bring anyone with me. There are no guards nearby." Long Chen smiled as he said.

'That idiot? Does he think I will believe him.' Fu Chun thought.

"Young master Long, that doesn't matter. I will never dare attack a heavenly genius like you. I have always admired you. If I had known that you were here, I wouldn't dare say what I said before." Fu Chun continued.

"I... Aaaaaahhhhhh" Fu Chun wanted to praise him some more, but before he could say anything he felt a terrifying pain coursing through his body as he fell on the ground. He could see that his legs had been cut off.

"You talk too much, young master Chun." Long Chen said, looking at him on the ground.

"YOU BASTARD!!! I don't care anymore, kill him!!!!" Fu Chun screamed, losing his mind in anger.

All of the four guys ran towards Long Chen holding their weapons in their hands. Long Chen brought his mountain crusher out and carried out a single attack before putting his sword back.

Fu Chun was lying on the ground with his face distorted in pain as he was looking at his men attacking Long Chen. But what he saw next scared him to his core. He saw Long Chen killing all four guys with a single sword move.

"How!!! How could you be this strong at this age!!!" Fu Chun screamed in fear looking at Long Chen.

"You made a big mistake. Although I am not sure if I would have left you alive if you didn't give orders to attack me just now, but now that you did, thanks for making the choice for me young master Chun."

Fu Chun could only see a sword appearing in Long Chen's hands and died just a second later.

'What's happening to me? Even after I killed so many people, although they were bad, there is no remorse in me. Although it might be because they were in the wrong, still why is killing becoming a normal thing for me. There's a part inside me that wants me to kill everyone that offends me, but there is another part as well that tells me to stay calm.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he turned back towards these two girls.

"What?" Long Chen asked with a weird expression on his face as he saw both girls looking at him like he was some kind of monster.

"Ah... Ah... Master Long. I and Mei would like to thank you for helping us today. If you weren't here, me and my sister would have been humiliated by

those guys." One of the two girls said as she walked ahead and thanked him. She had a black robe and wore cute glasses on her eyes.

"Oh. It's nothing. I didn't do it to help you guys. I did it because they offended me by saying no one would dare protect you from in front of him and ending at burying my family with me. I could not help but come down at this point." Long Chen said as he looked at the one with glasses.

"You should go back to your family, this place isn't safe for you girls." He continued.

"Oh, but Xue is right. We would like to thank you nonetheless. You saved our lives. Also, we don't have any family. We came here to kill some beasts and get some money to pay our debt." Mei explained.

"Good luck with that. I will cheer for you guys!" Long Chen said as he continued walking ahead.

"Master Long please wait!" Mei and Xue called out to Long Chen as they saw him walking forth.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 41 - 41: Using The King's Sword

"What?" Long Chen asked as he turned towards them.

"Master Long, as we have already told you, we owe a debt. We realized that we are not strong enough to achieve success in this beast forest by simply hunting, and worst, we may only bring endless trouble to ourselves." Xue said as she held Mei's hands.

"Yes, and since the great master is from the supreme Long clan, can we request of you to hire us as one of the servants of the clan? Although you already saved our lives and we should not be asking you any favors, can you please accept our one selfish request? We will work diligently and won't disappoint you, master." Xue and Mei asked in unison all the while their heads were bowed.

'Ah, they must have heard that the three great clans pay their servants handsomely, they want to use my connections so they can work for the Long Clan. I guess there is no harm in that.' Long Chen thought as he gave the two women a silent look.

"Alright, I will accept your request. My carriage is standing outside of the forest. Among the three carriages that you'll see, it's the one farthest from the entrance. Stay there until I come out." Long Chen told them prior to resuming his agenda.

But before he could even take a step, he spoke once more. "Fair warning, if you ever disclose what happened today in this forest, or spread any rumors related to it, you should know I would not forgive the two of you, even if you are mere women. You will end up just like those guys on the ground."

The moment that the two heard Long Chen's voice, their celebration had stopped. They couldn't help but shiver as they thought how long it had been since Chen killed all of the people in front of them.

After a while, they both started walking towards the exit.

Meanwhile, Long Chen continued to advance, deeper and deeper, until he finally sensed something. He then used his divine sense. As soon as he saw that a 10th stage spirit beast was running towards him, he was shocked. Adding to that, a meagre distance of 100 meters was separating them from each other. There was no one else nearby except for that Spirit beast.

"Heavenly demon wings!" Long Chen used his wings and flew upwards, sitting on a high branch of a nearby tree thereafter.

In a few seconds, that Spirit beast arrived there and began to roam its gaze around the surroundings.

'A Seven-Colored panther! This one is going to be tough! This is a peak level Spirit beast with peak offense and defense. Its speed is even better than mine. Should I fight it? If I do, I need to find the right opportunity.' Long Chen thought to himself.

'I have fought with a Spirit beast at the 10th stage in Treasure Hall formation. Hence, I know that the mountain destroyer won't have much of an effect on the defense of a Spirit beast of this level. I guess it is finally time to use that. I hope it won't disappoint me.'

Finally, Long Chen decided against using the sword he had been using until now.

"Let's see if you live up to your name, King's sword," Long Chen muttered to himself as he took out the king's sword from his storage ring. He had not used this sword up to that point in time, considering that he had not faced a tough opponent like today.

As soon as the king's sword materialized, the aura of the strong sword quickly spread in the atmosphere. It was like the king of swords had been awakened. Even the seven-colored panther sensed this aura, prompting it to look toward the skies.

The instant that it looked upwards, it saw a human with a sword coming towards it at a rapid speed. And his distance? Just right above it.

A layer of defensive armor appeared around Seven-Colored Panther as it tried defending against the attack. However, Long Chen's sword easily broke this armor, followed by the appearance of a long gash on its neck.

"ROAR!" The Seven-Colored Panther cried in agony as it felt the pain of having its neck wounded.

On the other hand, Long Chen put some distance in between him and the beast.

"Seven forms of saint sword- Fourth form: Desolation!"

Without giving the beast an opportunity to retaliate, Long Chen attacked the Seven-Colored Panther with his strongest offensive martial skill.

In just a few moments since his initial attack, the Seven-Colored Panther's head was severed and landed on the ground. It laid lifeless in front of Long Chen.

'Compared to the test in the 5th stage of Treasure Hall formation, this fight was much more comfortable.' Long Chen thought to himself.

"The last few days in this wilderness had been effective. I gained more proficiency in all of my skills and even mastered the 4th form of the seven forms of the saint sword after going through so many battles." Long Chen uttered, satisfaction brimming in his voice.

"Although this is the strongest offensive skill that I know -- it even played an essential role in killing this Seven-Colored panther -- most of the credit goes to this king's sword. Its strength far surpassed what I guessed before."

Long Chen then heaved a sigh as it gave the sword one quick glance from the tip of the blade down to the pommel.

"In the previous trial at Treasure Hall, I could barely make a dent on a 10th stage Spirit beast with my sword. But this king's sword was enough to kill it. Peak Spirit grade weapons are powerful. No wonder why so many desire them." Long Chen muttered as he picked up the Spirit beast's head and stored it in his ring.

With that, Long Chen continued on his journey until another night passed by.

'Dammit, just how big is this forest? I have been walking for over two days and still have not found them. To my knowledge, I have been traveling so fast. Yet still, I haven't caught up to them, which can only mean that they are passing through this forest pretty fast as well. But Why? Did they actually come here for the experience, or for something else that they are in such a hurry?' Long Chen thought, long and hard, as he used his divine sense to check his surroundings.

Sensing that no one was in his divine sense range of 200 meters, he, again, flew up using heavenly demon wings to set up his hammock.

'I feel like I can break through to the peak of 5th stage Spirit refining realm tonight.' Long Chen contemplated as he started his cultivation using an unnamed cultivation technique.

He had never stopped cultivating, making sure to do it every night after he entered the northern black forest. Long Chen cultivated for quite some time before he finally achieved success. He reached the peak of 5th stage Spirit Establishment realm.

"Hah... I can already feel myself becoming stronger than before. Just a little more and I will be a 6th stage spirit Establishment realm cultivator." Long Chen said as he smiled.

Long Chen started cultivating for a little longer before deciding to stop. He brought out the beast egg from his storage ring. He had acquired this item at the bottom of the heavenly cliff and started feeding it with his qi.

Long Chen did this at least once every day, for the reason that he knew this would help the egg in its hatching process. After doing it, he placed the egg back in his storage ring as he decided it was time for him to sleep.

The next day, Long Chen decided to wake up early and continue on his journey. After half a day had passed, he finally got a hint of the location of the one he was looking for through his divine sense.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 42 - 42: Mantis Stalks Cicada

'What are they doing standing near that pond?' Long Chen could see Long Su and 3 others standing near a pond.

"After following this map for 3 days, we finally found that marked location," One of the three people said looking at the lake.

"As you all know, we got this map through great luck, even though I don't know what the treasure at this marked location is. I am not even sure if someone got this treasure from here before us." Long Su looked at the other three as he said seriously.

"But since all four of us found this map together, we can only share the treasure. If it is something that can't be shared, I will take it and pay you your respective share using gold or Mana crystals. As you already know, my Long family can afford it as long as the treasure is worth it." Long Su said with pride on his face.

"Young master Su, of course, we know that the Long family can afford most treasures, and if the treasure is something even beyond their league, then it will only bring us disaster if we keep it, so we will accept your condition." Said a Chubby guy with a fawning expression.

"Hahahaha, you are a really smart guy, Chu Liang. Worthy of being the Young master of the Chu clan. Although it is not a supreme clan like ours, it is still in the top few 1st grade clans of dragon city.

I am sure when you become the clan leader after your father, you will bring your clan even more prosperity." Long Su laughed as he patted Chu Liang's shoulders.

"I am not worthy of such praise, young master Su. Still, I will accept this compliment, since you are the one giving it to me." This Chubby guy called Chu Liang smiled as he said that while looking at Long Su.

"What do you all think about this?" Long Su turned back and looked at the other two.

"We agree to your suggestions as well, Young Master Su." Both of them accepted this proposal after thinking for a while.

'Treasure map? Interesting. They must have got this map from somewhere, that's why they were hurrying here. It makes more sense now. Either coming

here for the experience was just an excuse, or they got the map after they came here and changed their plans.' Long Chen thought as he stood behind a tree nearby, just enough so that he was out of the range of Long Su's divine sense.

Long Chen knew that an ordinary 8th stage Spirit Establishment cultivator generally has a divine sense range of 60-70 meters, about one-third of Long Chen's divine sense range.

'The distance between us is 90 meters. If I got near him, there is a good chance that he might not notice me, but if he used divine sense randomly just to check his surroundings, I will be found. I should get a skill that hides my presence from skill Hall on my next visit.

For now, I need to see what they are doing before doing anything.' Long Chen thought as he kept observing Long Su through his divine sense

"According to the mark, the treasure is inside this pond, but there is one problem. There is a steel-backed alligator inside this pond. It's a 10th stage Spirit beast, we need to do something about it."

"Exactly, although it is a 10th stage Spirit beast and we could have taken it out easily if we fought on the ground. But it's inside the water, it will be tough winning a battle against it inside water." Chu Liang commented.

"Then we will just have to get it out of the water and kill it," Long Su smiled as he said.

"How can we make it come out of water?" Chu Liang asked.

"Simple, we will just give it something that it cannot resist. I have a vial of beast attracting liquid with me, made by a grade 1 alchemist of dragon city. I got it for pretty cheap in an auction since no one wanted it. No beast below Earth realm can resist it, let alone steel-backed alligator." Long Su took out a vial as he showed it to his friends proudly.

"You are pretty amazing, master Su. it is just what we needed," all three praised Long Su.

"Let's empty this place and wait nearby" Long Su dropped the vial on the ground as it broke. A strong smell started spreading nearby.

'Interesting, So they are after this treasure. Well, although it's not my birthday, it would still be good getting a free gift today.' Long Chen thought as he smiled brightly.

After a little over 10 minutes, Steel backed alligator finally started emerging from the pond. In a short time, all of its body was out of the water.

This steel-backed alligator was over 10 meters long and had steel-like spikes coming out from its back. Slowly it kept walking towards the spot where that beast attracting liquid was dropped.

'It looks pretty strong, although its speed is lower than the seven-colored panther I killed a day before, its defense is definitely better.' Long Chen judged looking at the steel-backed alligator.

Long Su and his friends finally started attacking the steel-backed alligator.

Steel backed alligator made a loud noise as it fought back, but after a fierce battle, they started pushing it back. Many wounds started appearing on the steel-backed alligator's back.

'Long Su is 8th stage Spirit Establishment cultivator, while the other three are in the 7th stage of Spirit Establishment. They're pretty strong.' Long Chen observed those 4 as they fought.

'Although its defense is the strongest out of all the Spirit beasts I have seen yet, under the combined attack of those 4, it won't survive for much longer.' Long Chen judged looking at the situation.

After a fierce fight, a steel-backed alligator finally felt like his life was in danger as it started retreating towards the pond.

"Kill it before it enters the water!!" Long Su ordered everyone.

Chu Liang was standing between the pond and a steel-backed alligator. As the steel-backed alligator was attacked by the strongest skills of all four cultivators, it couldn't handle it and died.

"This bastard's defense was pretty strong. It took us so much time to kill it, and it even injured us all. Finally, it died."

"Yeah, I heard before that steel-backed alligator's skin is pretty expensive and is a good material for crafting, let's harvest it."

"Stop! Don't waste time on those things. First, we need to look for whatever's inside this pond, after we get this treasure, we can think about what to do with the body of a steel-backed alligator." Long Su said as he focused on the pond.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 43 - 43: Slaughtering Long Su

"I will go down and look for that treasure," Long Su said while looking at the pond.

"We will come with you, Young master Su, it will be faster searching with the 4 of us compared to one" one of the three suggested.

"Ahhh..." Before Long Su could reply, he heard a grunt coming from behind. He looked back only to see that the guy standing farthest from them had his body lying on the ground dead with a large stab wound in his heart.

"Who is here? Show yourself!" Long Su took out his sword as he got ready to fight. The other two did the same. Long Su had a blue mid-level Spirit grade sword in his hand which he received from treasure Hall; we then passed the second stage of treasure Hall.

Although it was a mid-level Spirit grade sword, it was one of the weakest amongst them, as Long Su had only passed to the second stage of the trial.

"We just met a few days ago, and you already forgot me so soon seen elder brother Su. And here I thought I will get more treats from you after you achieve more success in your Martial skill "Lion's Roar" like last time." Long Chen said as he slashed apart another 7th stage Spirit Establishment cultivator, killing him.

'This king's sword is really nice. Makes it a lot easier to fight.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he held the king's sword.

"You... you here?" Long Su couldn't help but take a step back as soon as he saw the guy he had thrown at the bottom of the heavenly cliff and assumed dead, standing in front of him, perfectly safe. For a brief moment, he assumed it to be a ghost as he stepped back.

"You are alive? How did you survive and came back after falling at the bottom of the heavenly cliff?" After a few seconds, Long Su came back to his senses and had realized what was actually happening.

"Why can't I be alive, brother Su, do you want me to die so badly? And here I thought that we were part of a big happy family," Long Chen said with a sad mocking expression on his face.

'Looks like this trash recovered.' Long Su thought in his mind.

"How can this bastard survive such a fall and he even recovered?! His luck is really too great to be alive.' Long Su thought as he looked back at him.

"You survived and still came to me to die? Hahahaha... It's true that you are a retard." Long Su laughed as his expressions turned vicious.

"Young master Su, who is this kid?" Chu Liang asked as he pointed his blade towards Long Chen.

"Just a little trash that should have been long dead," Long Su said in disdain.

"Peak level Spirit grade sword!!!" Long Su suddenly exclaimed as he noticed the sword in Long Chen's hands. Even Chu Liang was shocked as well, as he noticed it after hearing Long Su's exclamation.

"So you got a new sword, that's why you were able to kill those two? But how can you get a sword like this?" Long Chen said, keeping his eyes on the sword.

"Patriarch Ren must have given you this sword, what a loving grandfather you have. And then there's my own father, always telling me to work hard for things, giving me nothing special except a few things even when I am his own son!!" Long Su commented with jealousy clear on his face.

"It's fine since you are here to deliver this sword to me, I will reward you by sending you to hell in one hit. It is a pity that I won't be able to take that sword out in public after I get it from you, but it will be very useful in life or death situations when away from the clan."

Before Long Su could move, he saw Long Chen moving towards Chu Liang. Chu Liang defended with his own blade but cracks started developing on his blade as he was thrown away more than 50 meters crashing into a tree.

"Now there won't be any distractions for a while," Long Chen smiled as he turned back facing Long Su.

"You little bastard!" Long Su roared as he started accelerating towards Long Chen.

"Flash steps!" Long Chen accelerated as well and he took Long Su's attack head-on.

Long Su was pushed back over 20 meters while Long Chen took 10 steps back and balanced himself.

'How... how can he be this strong! Isn't he an ant that anyone can crush? The genius turned trash of the clan! What is happening??

Even if he recovered, he should not be stronger than what he was before!! It's only been a few days!' Long Su thought after being pushed back by Long Chen.

"No matter what! You will be dying today!!" Long Su said, looking into Long Chen's eyes.

"Lion's Roar!!" Long Su used his strongest Martial skill as he attacked Long Chen.

"What? Just What? How????" Long Su couldn't believe his eyes as he saw two beautiful wings appearing behind Long Chen as he flew like an angel dodging Long Su's attack.

"That's the skill you achieved success in? It's a pretty strong skill, brother Su. Let me show you mine." Long Chen smiled looking at Long Su. Long Su couldn't help but shiver as he saw this smile.

"Seven forms of saint sword! Fourth form- desolation!"

As Long Chen used this move, air stopped flowing for a moment. Empowered by the sword aura of the king's sword, this devastating sword light moved towards Long Su at a rapid speed, spreading desolation wherever it passed through.

Long Su wanted to dodge, but he realized he could not dodge it in time as it's speed was too fast, he could only move his sword to counterattack Long Chen's sword light, but as soon as this sword light touched Long Su's sword, he felt like all the bones of his hands were broken as he flew away and crashed on a large tree behind.

"Ahhhh!!" Long Su cried in pain as he tried getting up, but the pain of broken bones was hurting him a lot. Suddenly he noticed Long Chen standing in front of him, his wings disappeared just like they appeared.

"Little Tian! No matter what happened, I am still a part of the clan, part of your family. I apologize for everything I did before. You can't kill me!" Long Su started apologizing, looking at Long Chen.

"I only have two family members, my mother, and my grandfather! I don't know anyone else." Long Chen said with a serious look on his face.

"My father is the supreme elder of the Long clan, don't kill me or there will be trouble!!" Long Su tried threatening Long Chen when he noticed his pleading not working.

"So what? My grandfather is the patriarch." Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Also, do I need to consider your backing when killing you? Did you consider my backing before trying to kill me? Anyway, even if I kill you, there is no proof I am the one who did it, isn't that right brother Su." Long Chen said while looking into Long Su's eyes.

"I... I..." Long Su tried saying something but noticed Long Chen already stabbed his sword in his heart. He died soon after.

'Hah, that felt good,' Long Chen smiled brightly as he turned back looking at Chu Liang.

Chu Liang had gotten up just then and was thinking about running away when he noticed Long Chen staring at him. He stood still on his spot.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 44 - 44: Treasure

"And where are you going?" Long Chen asked, looking at Chu Liang.

"Ah... Ah... Young master Tian, you and I do not have any enmity between us, there is no need to fight between us. In fact, I didn't even know Long Su that well. I hated that guy too. But not you, I like you. You are like my little brother, how about we let things go, Can I call you little brother Tian from now on?" Chu Liang said with a fawning expression.

"I am like your little brother? You remember that I killed someone like an elder brother from my own clan, right?" Long Chen smiled as he said scaring Chu Liang

Chu Liang took another step backward as he heard Long Chen.

"Little br... Ah... I mean young master Tian, I have never offended you, and I never will, I promise you. I won't tell anyone that it was you who killed Long Su and others, in fact, I will even say that they all died fighting against a Spirit beast as I ran away. Please don't kill me young master Tian!!!" Chu Liang fell to his knees as he said.

"Whatever you say about Long Su and others, how does that matter to me? As I've never met them, as I've never met you in this forest. How you all died has nothing to do with me." Long Chen smiled brightly and said.

"Give me one reason why I should not kill you?" Long Chen continued as he took a step forward.

"I... I... Although my clan isn't a supreme clan like yours, it is still in the top few, and as its patriarch's son, I have a few good things that I wanted to gift young master Tian to strengthen our friendship," Chu Liang continued.

"Oh? What things, that is a little interesting," Long Chen said as he looked at Chu Liang.

When Chu Liang heard Long Chen's first statement, he had lost all hope. But as soon as he heard what he said next, he felt like there was a little hope for his survival after all.

"So this demon understands the language of Treasures. If I can survive, I am even willing to give up all my belongings. The few treasures I carry are nothing in front of my life. It will be worth it.' Chu Liang thought.

"Here you go, young master. It is called the demon warding necklace. It is said that this necklace can decrease the chances of cultivation deviation occurring due to inner demons. It is useful up to the earth realm. My old man gave it to me on the day I started cultivation. It is pretty expensive as it is a low-level Spirit grade treasure and is useful." Chu Liang said as he took off the necklace around his neck, giving it to Long Chen.

This necklace had a green crystal at the center and a chain made from complete gold.

"It is quite good, I like it. What else do you have?" Long Chen said as he observed the Demon warding necklace.

"Ah right, I also have this blade here. It is called wind chaser. Although... Ah, it somehow cracked on its own today, but still, it is a low-grade Spirit weapon, a skilled artisan would be able to repair it to the way it was." Chu Liang said as he gave his cracked blade to Long Chen.

'Damn, if only I had not attacked so fiercely, this blade would not have cracked. But now that it happened, even getting a damaged Spirit treasure is good.' Long Chen thought as he looked at this 'wind chaser'.

"Young master, that's all the important things I have for now. I hope it's enough to show my sincerity," Chu Liang said after giving all the expensive things he had to Long Chen.

"Yes, they all are quite good," Long Chen said as he looked into Chu Liang's eyes.

"But not enough to make me take the risk of leaving you alive," Long Chen covered the distance between him and grabbed Chu Liang's throat before crashing him on the ground.

"You... you..." Chu Liang coughed out blood as he tried to say something but died before he could say anything as Long Chen stabbed his sword in his heart.

"I apologize, but that's the only option for me," Long Chen said as he looked at Chu Liang's body.

After some time, Long Chen buried all of them and kept their belongings in his storage ring.

"This map looks quite old, I wonder how they all got it. So whatever this map leads to, is inside this pond." Long Chen muttered to himself as he looked at the pond.

'Such a slaughter, it feels like the work of the same person who conducted the previous one. But this time, the victims are not nobodies, they're from a pretty decent clan. From the clothes, they look like they're from the Fu clan of the northern territory.' Yue Luan thought as he looked at the dead bodies.

"Such viciousness," Yue Fei couldn't help but comment.

"Looks like we're going on the same path as the guy who did this. We will probably meet him soon." Yue Luan muttered to himself with fighting intent in his eyes as they continued walking ahead.

Long Chen dived inside the pond as he started looking for the treasure.

'Strange, I had used my divine sense when I was outside, but I couldn't sense this being inside, but now that I'm inside, I can clearly see it through my eyes.' Long Chen thought as he looked at an object lying in the bottom center of the pond.

Long Chen picked up that object as he started swimming upwards until he was finally out of the pond.

'This mask, there is something special about it, I can't even sense it using my divine sense.' Long Chen thought to himself as he observed the mask he found lying at the bottom.

It was a golden mask with bright blue stripes going in random directions, like electricity was buzzing on its surface, making this mask look even more mysterious. Out of curiosity, Long Chen tried putting this mask on his face.

"What?" Long Chen was shocked as soon as he wore that mask on his face.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 45 - 45: Mask Of Mischief

As soon as Long Chen wore the mask, the knowledge about this mask entered his mind. He did not know if it was because of this mask or something else.

'Mask of Mischief, what a peculiar name,' Long Chen thought in his mind as he went through this knowledge.

§

After going through all the information, Long Chen finally understood a few things about this mask.

"So there are three things that I need to remember about this mask, first, that it can change my looks, making me look like a different person. I just need to imagine what I want to look like and it will change my looks.

Second, there is a time limit and it can only be used for ten minutes in a day and third, that this time limit will increase with an increase in my cultivation realms. So it will probably last longer when I am in the gold core realm compared to now.' Long Chen thought to himself.

"Too bad that there is nothing about its grade, I don't even know if it is Spirit grade or profound grade treasure. It could even be higher. There's another limitation as well, that it cannot change my body type. But it is still pretty good that I can change my face and hair with it." Long Chen muttered to himself.

"I can use it just as a normal mask too, but that will be too eye-catching," Long Chen thought as he took off the mask and looked at it.

Long Chen kept this mask in his storage ring as he decided it was time to go.

"Should I go deeper and gain more experience or go back?" Long Chen said to himself as he looked ahead.

"No, I should go back for now since I have done what I needed to do. There will always be a next time, I can come here later on," Long Chen muttered as he started walking back.

"I just hope that mother did not find out that I lied to her about grandfather allowing me to come here," Long Chen thought as he increased his speed. Long Chen kept using his divine sense at regular intervals to sense his surroundings.

He met a few Spirit beasts on the way but killed them easily as he continued.

After half a day of walking, as the sky turned dark, Long Chen decided to prepare his sleeping arrangement, but Long Chen finally smiled as he used his divine sense. He started walking towards a certain direction, intentionally entering a formation.

'Still using the same formation,' Long Chen thought as he continued ahead. After walking for a few seconds, he saw who he was looking for.

"We meet again. Greetings to your highness, the second prince and the princess." Long Chen greeted Yue Luan and Yue Fei as she smiled brightly.

'This little guy is even more handsome when he smiles.' Yue Luan thought as he looked at Long Chen.

"Little brother, do you intentionally wait until it is the night to meet us so that you can enter our formation and make us restless?" Yue Luan joked as he smiled back.

"I can only say that it is my luck that I can see two moons at the same time. That would not be possible during the day time, would it?" Long Chen said as he looked at Princess Yue Fei, who turned red at his words.

"Little brother, flirting with my sister in front of me. Do you not have any shame?" Yue Luan said, looking into Long Chen's eyes.

"You can call it for flirting, your highness. But in my eyes, it's just being honest," Long Chen smilingly said.

"Hahahahah... You are an interesting guy, my friend. Just the kind of person my sister likes... aagghh." Yue Luan laughed as he jokingly said, but could not help but scream like a baby when Yue Fei pinched him.

"Anyways, you are coming from that direction, right? That means you were ahead of us. Did you see the bodies on the way?" Yue Luan changed the topic as he asked.

"I saw them in two places. It was probably done by the same person," Long Chen said with a serious expression.

"Yes, I thought the same thing. Did you notice anyone ahead who could have done this?" Yue Luan asked again.

"Nope, I kept walking ahead, and saw quite a few guys. None looked out of the ordinary to me, and after some time, I finally decided that I should go

back home. I was on my way back when I met you guys." Long Chen said, looking at Yue Luan.

"Why? Don't you want to fight more and grow stronger?" Yue Luan asked.

"I have already fought to my heart's content. My family allowed me to be here for only a few days. They will be worried if I am late coming back." Long Chen looked towards the South as he said.

"If you say so. Anyway, you will stay with us tonight right?" He asked again.

"Of course, since it is the safest place in the whole northern black forest. I will have to impose on your highness for tonight,"

"Go on, you can set up your tent," Yue Luan said as he went back and sat down with Yue Fei, while Long Chen set up his tent.

After setting up his tent, Long Chen went and sat with Yue Luan as they started talking about their experience in this forest. Long Chen decided to hide most of the things and only said about the few weak beasts he met. After talking for a while, they all decided to walk back.

As he entered inside his tent, Long Chen decided to start his cultivation. He cultivated for two hours, making a significant improvement in his Cultivation before finishing his cultivation. Long Chen took out his egg and started feeding it his Qi like his usual routine.

Long Chen was not worried about Royal guards finding out about it if they used their divine sense, as long Chen realized long ago that this egg was immune to divine sense, just like his mask was.

"Come on, little guy, come out faster. How long are you going to make me wait?" Long Chen said while looking at the egg.

After feeding this egg, Long Chen kept it back in his storage ring and decided to go outside.

'I was hoping for this to be the case,' Long Chen thought to himself as he saw princess Fei sitting in front of her tent just like the day she was when he first stayed with them.

"You are here again. You must really like Natural beauty." Long Chen commented as he attracted Yue Fei's attention.

"Isn't that the case with you as well?" Yue Fei commented.

"Of course, I like natural beauty as well," Long Chen said with a smile to Yue Fei.

"Are you like this in front of every girl?" Yue Fei laughed as she asked.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 46 - 46 : Reason

"You mean honest? Not just girls, I am honest like this in front of everyone, girls and guys." Long Chen said, with a serious look on his face.

"Not that. I mean, do you always praise every girl you meet just like this?" Yue Fei smilingly said.

"Not at all, since the beginning, I have only praised one girl, and that is you, princess. And it is not just praising, it is the reality." Long Chen said as he sat just a few meters away from Yue Fei who looked a little flustered as she heard him.

"Oh? You both are still up? What're you both talking about all alone?" Just as Yue Fei was about to respond to Long Chen, came the voice of Yue Luan from behind.

"Oh, Princess Fei was just telling me a few stories about the great achievements of your highness, the second prince." Long Chen looked at Yue Luan as he said that.

"Oh? Little sister? I never knew that you admired me so much. I'll achieve more great things in the future so that you'll be more proud of your brother." Yue Luan said smiling.

'Pffff... Didn't you say that you're honest in front of everyone just now? And now you're lying to my brother in front of me. But Big Brother is really easy to please. He even believed it." Yue Fei couldn't help but laugh as she thought.

"What happened?" Yue Luan asked with a confused expression as he noticed Yue Fei controlling her laugh.

"Nothing, I'll be going now. Goodnight to both of you." Yue Fei wished them as she went inside her tent. She couldn't help but take one more look at Long Chen before she entered.

"Now that she's gone, I can only talk to you." Yue Lian smiled as he walked near Long Chen and sat beside him.

"What does your highness want to talk about," Long Chen asked.

"Enough with the honorifics. I don't want you to call me as the second prince or your highness." Yue Luan said seriously.

"What should I call you then?" Long Chen asked.

"Since I call you little brother, you can call me elder brother. And if you don't like it, you can just call me by my name."

"I can't call you by your name as you're older than me and as I respect you. So I'll call you Elder brother then," Long Chen while smiling.

"That's better. By the way, there's just one thing I'm curious about. I noticed the last time when we met, I couldn't sense your Cultivation. That only happens if your cultivation is way higher than mine, or because you're using an artifact to hide your cultivation." Yue Lian said, as long Chen looked at him.

"I didn't even consider the possibility of you having a higher cultivation than me, seeing your age. So the only possible explanation was that you were hiding your cultivation." Yue Luan continued.

'I think I can guess where this topic is going.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he listened to Yue Luan.

"It is still the same. I am really curious about how you did this and why you would hide your Cultivation. Can little brother enlighten me? You don't have to tell me anything if you do not want to." Yue Luan said.

'Just as I thought. I cannot tell him the real reason, and I can't even say that I can't answer, as that will just make him think that I am carrying a priceless artifact that can hide cultivation. That will be even worse.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he heard Yue Luan.

"There is no specific reason, Elder brother. It's just that I wanted something that could hide my cultivation when I went out so that I don't bring shame to my clan due to my low Cultivation.

After hearing my request, An Elder from the treasure Hall gave me a talisman. It was because of that treasure talisman that I can hide my cultivation." Long Chen lied to Yue Luan without a single change in expression.

"Too bad that it was only a one-time use item like most talismans are, and its effects only last for 1 week. There are only a few days left until its effects disappear." Long Chen continued without giving a chance for Yue Luan to continue.

"Oh, I have never heard about a talisman like this. It must be a pretty expensive talisman for having such miraculous effects. No wonder the Long

clan is one of the three supreme clans of our dragon city. They even found something like this." Yue Luan commented looking at Long Chen.

"Does little brother have another talisman like that? If you can sell it to me, I will pay a really good price," Yue Luan asked as he fell into a deep thought.

"I apologize, elder brother, as that was the only one in our clan, and I used it on myself. By the way, why do you need one?" Long Chen asked him with full sincerity.

"Ah... nothing. It is fine. I should go to sleep as well, it's pretty late. Goodnight, little brother. Also, do not disappear before we get up like you did last time." Yue Luan said seriously as he went back to his tent.

'There is definitely something he needs it for! Anyway, that has nothing to do with me. But I still need to do something about people not being able to see my cultivation. This may bring a lot of troubles for me.' Long Chen thought to himself as he thought about Yue Luan's expressions from before.

After staying there and thinking for a little longer, Long Chen went inside his tent to sleep.

'Time to get going.'

Early in the morning, Long Chen woke up as he thought to himself. He went outside as he started packing his tent.

"Trying to sneak away like last time?" Just as Long Chen finished his packing, came the voice of Yue Fei from behind.

"Princess Fei, how could I leave before seeing your beautiful face? It's not like I always have an opportunity like this. I was just packing my stuff and then I was going to wait for you guys to wake up before saying my farewell." Long Chen said as he smiled gently.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 47 - 47: What To Do

"You Little Liar." Yue Fei said with a cute angry expression on her face making her look even more beautiful

"Didn't I tell you, princess, that I am always honest? I am not lying," Long Chen said while smiling.

"Oh? So you were honest in front of my brother last night? I don't remember what great stories and achievements I was telling you about him." she said while smiling too.

"Ah... that. I was just kidding with him at that time. Anyway, when I said that I am always honest, I meant when I am praising someone." Long Chen said, keeping a straight face.

"Why is it that every time I come out, you two are talking secretly like little love birds? Oh, Little brother, you already packed everything?" Yue Luan said as he came out of his tent.

"It's nothing, I was just saying farewell to princess Fei. And yes, I think it is time for me to go. I was just waiting for you guys to wake up." Long Chen said with a smile.

"Oh, you are going now? Well, at least you didn't secretly sneak away like last time. That's good." Yue Luan said.

"Right. He sure didn't try to sneak away today." Yue Fei said as she looked at Long Chen.

"Ahh... Right. Of course, why would I sneak away?" Long Chen asked with a wry smile on his face as he noticed Yue Fei's expressions.

"Since my elder brother is up as well, I should get going now. I hope you both have a great journey ahead. I am sure we will meet again. I will be waiting for that moment." Long Chen said his farewell as he started walking away, but Yue Fei noticed him looking at her for a moment as he said his last line.

"We sure will," Yue Luan said as he smiled.

"Brother, why was he calling you elder brother just now?" As Long Chen walked away, he could still hear Yue Fei's voice talking to Yue Luan.

"How long do you think the young master will stay inside? It has been over 2 days?" Mei asked as she looked at Xue sitting near her.

They were the same girls whom Long Chen saved inside the forest. Long Chen told them that he would accept them as Long Clan's servant when they requested for it and asked them to wait near his carriage. They had been waiting for him here since then.

"You have asked this same thing to me over 10 times already, and I always answer the same. How would I know, it could be a day or a week? We will just have to wait and we will know how long it takes," Xue said with an annoyed expression.

"Young master was going deeper in the forest by the time we separated. You know that there are really strong peak level Spirit beasts in the depth of this forest. Young Master will be safe, right?" Mei continued asking, ignoring Xue's annoyed expressions.

Xue facepalmed herself and stopped talking, but Mei kept asking again and again. After a while, Xue stood up and got closer to Mei as she brought her face closer to hers. Xue brought her lips closer to Mei's ears.

"You know how easily young master killed them inside the forest in front of us. There is no way he will be defeated by some beasts. Have some faith in him!" Xue whispered in her ears.

Just at that moment, Long Chen walked out of the forest and started walking towards his carriage.

"Young master Long!" Long Chen heard a man's voice and stopped.

"Yes?" Long Chen replied as he noticed that it was the royal carriage driver who called out to him.

Xue and Mei also heard this guy's voice as they looked in that direction and noticed Long Chen. They hurriedly got up as they started walking towards him.

"Young master Long, did you meet my young master and young miss inside?" The Royal Carriage driver asked.

"Yes I met them, they were still going ahead as I walked out. They will probably take a little longer to come out," Long Chen said as he continued walking towards his carriage.

'Of course, they will come out later. My master and miss are really powerful. Since this guy is out this early, it must mean that he wasn't really strong.' He thought in his mind as he heard Long Chen's reply.

"Young master!" Xue and Mei both greeted Long Chen.

"Let us get inside the carriage, it is time for us to go." Long Chen spoke as he continued walking ahead.

Long Chen told the driver to bring them back as they all entered his carriage.

Xue sat on Long Chen's right as Mei sat on his left. Long Chen did not say anything as he took out his book and started reading, and ultimately he fell asleep.

He found himself in a dream when he was back in his old life. He was in the college and looked to be 22-23 years old. He was going to a college event with his 2 friends that looked exactly like Xue and Mei

All 3 of them were sitting in the back seat. While the car was moving, Xue and Mei's shoulders kept touching Long Chen's, who pretended to ignore that as he kept his eyes on his book. It was the same book that he was reading in the carriage.

"Ah... Long Chen?" After they covered half the distance, Xue said in a small voice.

"What is it?" Long Chen said without taking his eyes off the book.

"I wanted to thank you again for giving us a lift," Xue continued.

"You don't need to mention that... Hmmm?" Just as long Chen answered, he noticed Mei's head resting on his shoulders as she fell asleep. Xue noticed it as well.

"It is ok, let her sleep. I'll take her up when we are at the college," just as Xue was going to wake her up, Long Chen stopped her.

"I apologize for that. It's just that both of us haven't slept well in the last few days, so she fell asleep," Xue said with an embarrassed expression.

"It is fine, no need to worry about it." Long Chen smiled as he said.

Long Chen could feel Mei's big chest touching his arms as she slept on his shoulders, Long Chen did not move his hand and continued reading the book.

After some more time, Long Chen was suddenly distracted from his reading as he felt a shock running through his body. He noticed Mei was still sleeping on his shoulders, but her hands were now resting on his thighs, just about an inch away from touching his little guy.

Xue was looking at the scenery outside through the window, so she didn't see it either.

'What is going on! What should I do...? A part of me thinks that I should be a gentleman and take her hands off there, but another part of me wants it to stay that way and do nothing.' Long Chen thought in his mind about what to do.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 48 - 48: Assaulted By A Beauty(★)

While Long Chen was in a dilemma, he didn't realize that he was in a dream. Mei's hands moved and were now resting between his legs, right above his little guy.

'Ahh dammit, I should just remove her hand.' Long Chen gave up on thinking about it and decided on removing her hand. As Mei's hand rested there, he could feel the soft touch of her hand.

"It's taking so long today," as he was about to stop Mei, Long Chen heard Xue's voice. He instantly brought the book he had in his hands a little downward, blocking his lap from the view of Xue.

"Ahh, it is not too far now, just a little longer, and we will be there. It's just the traffic that's making us late," Long Chen said, keeping his normal expression, making it feel like there was nothing wrong.

"Oh, I am really excited. Hopefully, Mei will wake up before we get there," Xue said as she looked at Mei's face.

"Yeah, she might," Long Chen said, looking at Xue barely keeping his straight expression.

"Ah, So, what are your plans after graduation?" Long Chen asked, trying to distract her.

"I and Xue are both alone. Our mother died long ago because of a sickness, and father passed away a few months back. They have property back home, so we'll just shift back home," Xue said.

"Oh, I am sorry for your loss," Long Chen said as he smiled looking into Xue's eyes.

Xue felt her heart flutter as she heard Long Chen's words and saw his smile.

"Thank you," she thanked him.

"It's..." long Chen wanted to reply but suddenly stopped when he noticed that Mei had grabbed his little guy like it was a holy sword.

'What the hell is she dreaming about, is she doing it intentionally?!' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"Ah, sorry I was distracted for a moment, I meant that you don't need to thank me for that." Long Chen said smiling trying to focus himself on Xue.

"Of course, I do need to thank you. It's proper manners," she said, smiling.

After talking for a few moments, Xue again turned her attention towards the window and started looking outside.

'It doesn't look like she is faking her sleep from her breathing rhythm,' Long Chen thought as he looked at Mei, and saw that she was still sleeping.

Long Chen didn't remove his book from there as he kept holding it with his left hand. He wasn't sure when Xue might turn back suddenly.

While Long Chen kept looking back at Xue, trying to make sure that she won't turn back, Mei kept moving his sword here and there like she was playing with it. Long Chen tried his hardest to control himself from making a noise.

'I should just get her hands off me, although I am not doing anything wrong and just sitting still, that is still kind of wrong,' Long Chen thought as he brought his right hand below the book and grabbed her hand softly trying to free his little guy without applying much force as he didn't want to wake her up.

'If she woke up now, this situation will be really embarrassing for me.' Long Chen thought in his mind.

Mei was also having a dream in his dream. Mei was seeing that she was fighting sometime in the national sword tournament. Her sister and Long Chen were sitting in the stands cheering for her. She felt like she was about to lose when she grabbed her sword even more firmly as she started her assault and fought back.

After a long battle between her opponent's sword and her holy sword, her disadvantage seemed to have disappeared as she was now fighting on equal ground, until suddenly the enemy grabbed her hand by her wrist, trying to make her loosen the grip on the sword handle.

Long Chen kept trying to get her hands off of him without using much force so that he doesn't wake her up, but he wasn't achieving much success. Instead,

it was becoming even worse, her grip was tightening, as Long Chen tried moving her hand up, she kept bringing her hand down.

Long Chen felt like this situation was becoming really dangerous and really fast. While trying to be a good guy, he was actually becoming a bad guy as he felt like his efforts to get her hands off, worked completely opposite and at the moment it felt like she was just toying with him.

Long Chen suddenly noticed Xue turning back. He quickly got his right hand out, leaving Mei's hands where it was, still grabbing his manhood. Long Chen turned a page of his book, making it seem like he was still reading, while Mei kept playing with his thing below the book.

"Hey, you keep reading that book. Is that book any good?" Xue asked in an innocent voice,

"This book? Yeah, it is indeed good. It's an action-adventure story about a person with a tragic past," Long Chen could barely focus himself as he said to Xue. Long Chen was already starting to feel the pleasure of Mei's hands playing with his sword.

"Oh, I understand. I will tell Mei as well when she wakes up. Maybe we will read that too," Xue said smiling.

"That's better," Long Chen said, smiling.

This situation continued for a pretty long time, as Mei didn't loosen her grip, and kept moving his little guy around, Long Chen had already given up and was now just enjoying the sensation of her soft hands which continued for a long time.

"You can never defeat me." Mei whispered in her sleep as she had a victorious smile on her face. Finally, after a few moments, her head moved, Long Chen could feel that she was about to wake up. He did not know how he would handle this situation.

Mei came to her senses as she slowly opened her eyes, while her head was still lying on Long Chen's shoulders. Before she could think anything, she noticed something odd.

'Hmm, what's this?' she thought in her mind.

She could feel her hand holding onto something like it was a sword handle. She moved her eyes towards her hands and couldn't help but be shocked as she noticed what was in her hands.

"Ahh..." a voice escaped her mouth as her face turned red. Her voice attracted the attention of Xue, who saw where her hand was.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 49 - 49 : Mysterious Void

"W-what are the two of you doing!" She let out loud as she slapped Long Chen's cheeks.

"Shameless! I thought you were a decent person!" She scoffed.

"Hey, I'm a decent person!" Long Chen let out as he woke up from his dream.

"Young Master? Did you have a bad dream?" Xue said, looking at him with a confused look.

"Yeah, it was a bad dream, but I'm fine now," Long Chen said as he breathed in relief.

"Oh, it's good then," Xue said.

"It's fine, you can continue your sightseeing." Long Chen said, smiling. Xue accepted his words and again got lost in her own world.

He looked towards Mei, who was still sleeping.

'Such a weird dream,' he thought.

Long Chen wanted to say something, but no words came out of his mouth. After a few seconds, the carriage stopped.

'Looks like we are already there. Why do I feel like this journey took shorter compared to the one from before when I travelled from the clan to the forest?' Long Chen thought to himself.

"Let's go, we're there," Long Chen told them to get out as the carriage driver knocked on the carriage gates to inform them that they are home.

As they all got out of the carriage, Mei couldn't help but look at Long Chen worriedly like he was guilty of something.

"Young master you are back." The guards saluted him as they allowed him inside.

'Young master must have a pretty good position in the clan. Everyone respects him so much.' Xue thought as she looked at the situation while Mei just kept following silently with her head down.

"Mother!" Long Chen knocked on Sima Ziyi's courtyard and greeted her as soon as she opened it.

She hugged him tightly as soon as she saw him. Long Chen could feel the warmth of motherly love. Although it was not his own mother, he enjoyed this feeling.

"I am so glad you're home, welcome home! You are not hurt anywhere, are you?" After a while, she said as she looked carefully at him checking his body for injuries.

"Mother! I am fine, I am not that weak." Long Chen said, feeling her worry.

"Sure you aren't. You are the strongest." Sima Ziyi said, smiling.

After having a long affectionate mother-son talking, Sima Ziyi noticed the girls standing behind Long Chen.

"Hmm? These two are? Don't tell me they are your women, you already made a harem? Aren't you too young for that?" She asked with a shocked face.

Long Chen was shocked as well as he heard her. He looked at both of them and could see that Xue had her jaws open while Mei turned her face down.

"Mother, what nonsense are you talking about? It is nothing like that. Also as you said, I am too young for things like that!" Long Chen said, looking embarrassed.

"Oh? What a pity. I thought I got two pretty daughter-in-laws." Sima Ziyi laughed as she said jokingly.

"By the way, If they aren't your lovers, then who are they? Why did you bring them home with you?" She asked Long Chen.

"They are the girls I saved in the northern black forest from some Spirit beasts. As they needed safe work to pay off their debt, they asked to work here, and I allowed it and brought them back with me." Long Chen said.

"Oh? I thought you went there for experience, but you were there saving beauties? But I am so proud of you. You are brave just like your father was." She said as sadness could be seen in her face.

"Anyways, since you saved them and gave them this opportunity, you can have them as your personal servant," She said smiling.

"What are your names?" Sima Ziyi asked, looking at them.

"My name is Cheng Xue, and this here is my younger sister Cheng Mei. It is great being in your presence, respectable Madame." Xue said as she came forward and introduced themselves.

"Nice names. Anyway since both of you will now be working for him, I am counting on you to take good care of my little baby." Sima Ziyi said as she looked at both of them.

"We will Madame." Both of them said at the same time.

After spending over two hours there, Long Chen left his mother's courtyard with both sisters. He introduced them to the head steward of the Long clan as his personal servants and left them with her to show around and introduce the clan and its important rules.

Long Chen came back to his room and fell to his bed as he closed his eyes.

"Huh, finally back home. But it still doesn't feel like home. Although the room is wider than my old one, and the bed is more comfortable than my old bed on Earth, I still miss my old room more. Our small house, close family, my college. Would I never be able to see them?" Long Chen turned sad as his thought reached this point.

"No! If that world was real, and this world is real, there must be a way to get there. Although really small, there is still a possibility.

There are cultivators in this world who can fly, who can destroy everything. And they are not even at the peak of cultivation. One day, I will be the strongest. I will reach the peak of the world and no world boundaries will be able to stop me from achieving what I want." Long Chen said with a motivated face as he got up and started cultivation.

'I can feel that I will break through to the 6th stage Spirit Establishment realm soon.' Long Chen thought in his mind after cultivating for hours.

.

Long Chen cultivated until midnight, and he could feel that he will have another breakthrough in the coming days. Long Chen stopped cultivation as he took out his egg that he found inside his ancient space ring and fed it his Qi like his daily routine.

"I am not your portable feeding machine. Come out faster, little guy!" Long Chen muttered to the egg.

After finishing everything, he decided that it was time to sleep as he entered his quilt.

As Long Chen was sleeping, finally, a 1/100th part of his blood had turned completely violet. A mysterious void appeared near his chest as his consciousness was sucked inside it, while his body remained in the bed. It looked like Long Chen was still sleeping peacefully.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 50 - 50: Bloodline Temple, Guiding Spirit

Long Chen was sleeping peacefully when a void appeared right above his heart. As soon as it was formed, his soul was sucked in without even a little resistance.

As soon as his spirit came out of his body and before it was swallowed by that mysterious void, Long Chen could see his body lying on the bed, still breathing without any change from before. To him, it looked like he was still sleeping peacefully. Finally, everything turned blank.

"Wake up! How long are you going to stay like that?" Long Chen opened his eyes as he heard a cute voice of a girl.

"Hmm? Where am I? Is this another one of those special dreams?" Long Chen looked around, but he could see nothing except white clouds all around himself. There was only one thing that was visible. It was a big temple which was in front of him. This temple was completely black in color.

"It is not a dream, you idiot! I wonder how someone like you got his legacy. You look like the least worthy person to me." Long Chen heard that voice again. He felt like whoever that voice belonged to, was mocking him. Long Chen looked all around but could not see anyone.

"Where is that voice coming from? Show yourself!" Long Chen said, looking all around.

"You are really an idiot, aren't you? I am right here in front of you, why are you still looking all around." Said that voice.

"Why can't I see you?" Long Chen asked in a confused voice.

"Look upwards, idiot! You are partially his successor. Don't bring shame to him," said that cute voice in an angry tone.

"Wha... what are you?????" Long Chen was shocked as soon as he saw that a little girl was floating in the air above him, this girl looked to be around 14-15 years old and had short pink hair.

Her fluffy cheeks and jade-like skin made her look even cuter. But what highlighted her the most was that she had two beautiful transparent wings behind her as well. To Long Chen, she just looked like a little fairy.

"This great one is called Xun. I am your guiding spirit. I won't stop you if you want to kowtow to me." She said proudly while looking at him.

"Guiding Spirit? What is that?" Long Chen could not understand what she was saying and it only got him more confused.

"To know that, you'll first need to know where you are right now!" She said in a master like tone.

"Isn't that the same question I asked at the beginning? You are the one who still didn't answer me" Long Chen said as he facepalmed himself.

"Hush!!! Do not disturb me when I am speaking!" Xue said in an unhappy voice.

"Now where was I?... Oh right, to know more about me, you will need to know where you are first and why you are here." She said.

"Then tell me that first!" He said in a grumpy voice.

"This place is called Bloodline temple! Where everyone who received his bloodline will come to receive their inheritance and the knowledge about this bloodline." She told him in a serious voice.

"There was only one person who received his bloodline and even stepped here like you. Now you are the second one," She said, looking at Long Chen.

"Still, I must say, the last person, although wasn't anything great in my eyes, he was still a thousand times better and stronger than you."

"Can you stop insulting me so much and seriously tell me about where the f*ck am I and why am I here?" Long Chen said in a pitch higher than normal, barely containing his anger.

"Stop being a baby and keep listening without interrupting. As I was saying, the bloodline you now have is very special. It is from someone whose strength you can't even imagine. This Bloodline Temple is something you received with your bloodline. It is kind of a test that you have to pass to have a chance of having a more dense bloodline and gain more knowledge." Said that little girl.

"How did I even get this bloodline? I do not remember hearing about that from my father, mother or grandfather?" Long Chen asked her with a confused face.

"Although I can't see all your memories, I can see your memories up to the moment you first touched this ring, it is easy to judge for me. Do you remember the crystal you found inside that space ring of yours?" Xue said smiling.

Long Chen looked at his fingers and saw that his space ring was still there.

"That crystal was the crystallization of that supreme being's bloodline. Intended for the destined one. As soon as it entered your body, you received a little of his bloodline. It slowly started converting your blood and now that you have 1/100th of his bloodline, you were brought here to this bloodline inheritance temple." She said looking at him.

"Was that supreme being the guy I saw in my dreams? The one who had red hair and golden iris in my first dream and red iris in my second dream?" Long Chen remembered the demon-like guy who slaughtered everyone in his path.

"No. He was not. That was the second person who received his bloodline before you. He came here before you. If I remember correctly, it was around thousands of years ago." Long Chen felt like she was remembering about that day.

'Damn! At first, when she said I am nothing in front of the first person who came here, I thought she was insulting me. But now that I know it was him, there might be some truth to it' Long Chen thought as he thought about the words Xue said.

"So he was his first successor and I am his second? Anyways, who is he actually? You did not tell me anything about that supreme being." Long Chen said looking at her.

"You do not deserve to know it yet," she said, looking down at him.

"Why? Whatever! We are going off-topic now. Instead of being clear about the situation, I am even more confused about it. Let me ask one by one," Long Chen said as he got his thoughts together.

"If you want it that way, then alright." She pouted as she said, making her look even more cute.

"Tell me more about this temple? Why am I here?" Long Chen asked.

"You are here to participate in a test! As you already have 1/100th of his bloodline now. If you pass this test, your bloodline conversion will continue until its time for the next one.

However, if you fail it, you still won't lose his bloodline, but it will stay at 1/100th forever. But even that 1/100th will be very useful for you. Also, if you pass this test, you will be rewarded with more knowledge and rewards which I am sure you will like." She said looking seriously at Long Chen.

Long Chen thought for a while, trying to understand everything clearly.

"Ok, at least that is clear. Second question. What are you?" He asked again.

"I am your guiding spirit or you can say that I am the treasure spirit of that ring you are wearing on your finger." She said as she pointed towards his right hand.

"If you are the treasure spirit of this ring, why are you here in my blood temple," He asked as he touched his ring.

"I have been linked with this bloodline for a long time and now your bloodline, your soul and this ring are all interconnected." She said while looking at him.

"Did that Supreme Being make you?" He asked her, feeling confused.

"I cannot say how I came to existence, but I know that it is my purpose to guide his successor," she replied.

"Did you guide that red-haired guy as well? I saw he had the same Ring." Long Chen asked.

"Yes, I was with him as well," Xue said.

"What happened to him, and why were you below the heavenly cliff?" He asked again.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 51 - 51 : Strange World

"Everything will be made known to you when the right time comes." Long Chen felt like bashing his head on the ground as he heard her reply but controlled himself.

"Why won't you tell me now? Wouldn't that be easier?" Long Chen looked at her as he asked.

"Do you really want to hear why I cannot tell you now? I thought you said that you don't want to be insulted more?" She said with a cunning smile.

"Do not say anything then. I just need to go inside, right?" Long Chen looked towards the doors of the temple as he said that.

"Right." She replied in a straightforward manner.

"I will be going now then," Long Chen said as he started walking towards the door.

As Long Chen tried pushing open the door, but he couldn't open it. Even after trying for a while, it didn't even budge an inch. He stopped and looked back at Xue, who had a wide smile on her face.

"What? Do you know how to open it?" Long Chen said as he saw Xue mumble something.

"Didn't you tell me not to say anything?" She replied.

"Ah, forget that now I am telling you to tell me. I seriously need your help. I don't want to be stuck at the gate forever." He said in a gentle tone.

"Since I am not a little child who fusses over everything, I will tell you," She said with her head held high like someone who's above worldly desires.

"So what you need to do is..." Xue stopped for a moment as she said up to this point.

"You just need to pull that door to open it instead of pushing, you idiot. Hahahah!" She started laughing as she said.

"Since only someone from his bloodline can come here, there is no need to protect against strangers that is why there is no secret to opening this door. You don't need anything other than a simple common sense to open it." She

pulled herself back together after laughing for 5 minutes straight as she clarified in a senior like tone.

Long Chen stood there dumbfounded for a minute after which he turned back deciding to ignore that little girl as he pulled the door open. This time it opened without any effort. Long Chen entered this temple without wasting a moment.

"Amazing!" Long Chen couldn't help but say when he saw the interior of this temple.

All the walls were filled with various mysterious patterns which were shining with a violet light. These patterns kept changing constantly, never staying still.

Long Chen could help but be stunned the more he looked at the walls. He could feel there was a mysterious power in these patterns.

"You can't understand the mystery behind them the way you are right now," Xue said as she appeared near Long Chen.

"You are right, I can't understand them. But I can feel some connection with them," Long Chen said in a calm voice.

After a while, Long Chen took his eyes off the walls and started looking around. In the entire hall, all he could see was a door.

"Is there only one room in this big temple?" He said as he walked towards that room.

"Go on, enter that room. That is the place you need to enter to participate in the trial. If you can come out of there successfully, then you will be eligible to know more." Xue said as she pointed towards that door while looking at Long Chen.

"Since you are my self-proclaimed 'Guardian spirit', can you tell me what I will face inside and what I need to achieve to succeed?" Long Chen asked looking at her.

"Of course this great one will tell you. You just need to become stronger," she said while smiling.

"You mean I need to cultivate inside?" He asked with a strange look.

"Nope. Although you can cultivate and become stronger inside, but that is not what this test is about. You will need to increase your strength in a different way to succeed."

"Can you be more clear?" Long Chen asked her.

"I won't tell you too much for now. Just that you will need to increase your strength using your understanding and your potential. Now go inside, figure out the rest on your own." She closed her eyes and just stood there, not saying anything else.

Long Chen opened the door and entered the room. As soon as he entered inside, he didn't know what to think anymore. This wasn't a room anymore as he imagined it to be, it was a completely different world instead.

Long Chen could see a red sky above his head and a deserted soil below. As far as his eyes could see, Long Chen only saw the desert with no sign of any plantation or any living thing. There was no sun or moon in the sky, still, it was as bright as a normal day on Earth.

Long Chen could feel the coldness in the air. To him, it felt just like the winter was about to arrive, which contrasted the warm red color of the sky.

"Where is this place? It is so different from the world I am used to," Long Chen muttered to himself.

"What?" Long Chen was shocked as soon as he turned back. He saw that there wasn't any door behind him. The door from which he entered had disappeared completely without leaving any trace.

"Did that door disappear completely, or just turned invisible?" Long Chen thought as he tried moving in the direction where the door was supposed to be. Still, he achieved no success in finding it.

"Looks like it actually disappeared. What did she mean by the statement that I need to grow stronger through my understanding? I couldn't even imagine that I will arrive at a place like this after hearing her words. There is nothing here." Long Chen said as he looked around.

"For now, I can only choose one direction and travel that way, hoping to find someone or something related to this test. There must be something here, for me to come here." Long Chen said as he started walking in a random direction.

"It is really unusual that I don't feel hungry. I do not know the reason, but I hope it stays this way. Even after walking for half a day, I don't see anyone or anything. There is no way I would be able to find any food in this deserted world." Long Chen muttered to himself as he continued walking.

"Is that real?" Long Chen finally saw something after walking for another hour.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 52 - 52: Human... Legend?

Long Chen walked in this deserted place for more than half a day until he finally saw someone or something moving at the end of the horizon. He felt like it was a human, or at least that's what it looked like to him from such a distance.

"Finally there is someone," Long Chen thought happily as he immediately started running in that direction.

After running for a while, he could finally see a clear image as he neared his target, but he just came to a sudden stop as soon as he saw what was in front of him.

It looked like a human, at the same time it didn't. This person had a humanoid body and a human-like skin, but what made him different was that he had a third eye at the center of his forehead. While his height was over 3 meters tall, his build was actually thin.

This person was carrying a red bag on his shoulders while holding a big spear in his hand which was reeking of blood.

As Long Chen got near him, this three-eyed Person turned his attention towards Long Chen as well. His eyes couldn't help but widen as he saw Long Chen as he took a step backward.

As he saw Long Chen standing still and not doing anything, he found his bearing again.

"Are you a human? You look like what was described in our books," He said in a heavy voice as he looked towards Long Chen.

Long Chen was amazed that he could understand his language. Long Chen knew that this person wasn't speaking Chinese, English or any other language he knew from his new world, but still Long Chen was able to understand him.

"Ah yes, I am a human. Are there more humans here like me?" He asked in a calm voice.

"How can there be more humans here! Humans are only a legend that do not exist! Till now, I thought it was only a made-up legend." He said as he looked at Long Chen with curiosity in his eyes.

"Legendary humans...? can you tell me more about it ?" Long Chen asked again.

"Although you look like a human, I can't be sure that if you're just a similar life form which we haven't seen before, pretending to be one! You will need to prove if you are actually one!"

According to legends, Humans are the greatest warriors! I will fight you. If you can defeat me easily, I will believe that you are a human!" This three-eyed person said as he put his bag down from his shoulders and brandished his spear.

"What? You want to fight me? Shouldn't you at least tell me your name first?" Long Chen asked as he looked at him with a baffled expression.

'What the ***, this big guy looks really strong. Can I really defeat him? Anyway, why does he have such a good opinion of humans?' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"My name is Terra, and I am a 3rd level Spiritual Ascension realm warrior of my tribe," He said as he stood tall like a mountain.

'What is the Spirit Ascension realm? This place must have a different Cultivation system than ours' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"My name is Long Chen. And as my cultivation system is different from you, you won't understand even if I tell you. You can find out more by fighting me since that's what you want," Long Chen said with a slight smile as he took out his king's sword and got ready to fight as well.

As soon as his sword came out, a strong sword aura spread in the atmosphere. Even terra who was standing at some distance from him was able to feel it.

"Really good weapon! I can feel its strength even when standing far from you. A worthy weapon for a human," Terra said as he looked at King's sword.

"Let's see, if your strength is good enough to hold this weapon or not," Terra said as he stuck the tip of his spear in the ground.

Long Chen couldn't understand why he wasn't attacking directly and inserted his weapon in the ground.

'Was he giving up after such a brave declaration?' He thought.

But his thoughts changed as he felt the ground vibrate.

"Flash steps!" Long Chen used his movement technique as he shared in a different spot instantly. Long Chen saw a large amount of tree roots suddenly

grow out from the ground of this desert, at the spot where he was just standing.

"What the! Why are there tree roots there in this desert where there are no trees?" He muttered as he saw the roots return to the ground.

"Do not take your eyes off the opponent before the fight is over!" Long Chen heard a voice as he was looking at that spot where he was standing before. He turned back only to find terra thrusting his spear towards him.

"Block!" Long Chen used his king's sword to defend himself from that attack. Long Chen was pushed back one step as that attack struck his sword while terra was pushed back 10 steps before he found a stable footing.

"What the...? He is not as strong as I thought? Even with an unexpected attack and such a large body, he was only able to push me one step back while he himself was pushed back 10 steps?

I think his 3rd stage Spirit Ascension realm is weaker than my 5th stage Spirit Establishment realm.' Long Chen thought to himself.

"You are really strong! But not enough to defeat me," Terra said as he struck with his spear again, but this time Long Chen felt things were different as he again felt the vibrations from the ground. This time more than 10 tree trunks came out from the ground and towards him from the three directions while terra's spear came from the front.

"Heavenly demon wings!" Two beautiful wings, one golden and one black, appeared behind his back as Long Chen flew in the air.

As Terra saw Long Chen fly, he was so shocked that he stopped at his spot and did not notice the trunks coming towards him but at the last moment, before they struck him, he noticed them. Those tree trunks stopped where they were and disappeared in the ground, merging with it.

"Enough playing around, I guess it's time to defeat you for real," Long Chen said, looking down at Terra getting above. Terra felt his heart tremble as he heard Long Chen's words and saw a terrifying momentum appearing around him, Long Chen.

"Seven forms of sword saint: second form- Devastation!" Long Chen made a slash with his sword in the air as a terrifying attack was unleashed from it in the direction of terra.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 53 - 53: Fighting Another Life Form

"Seven forms of Sword Saint: Second form- Devastation!" Long Chen made a slash with his sword in the air as a terrifying attack was unleashed from it towards the direction of Terra. Terra could feel that this attack was filled with sword aura, making it even more terrifying.

Terra saw the attack coming in his direction, and felt like he could not move in front of this terrifying momentum. He waved his spear as a wall of plantation appeared in front of him protecting him like a shield, but they were slashed apart easily as soon as this terrifying attack touched them, it kept moving in his direction.

At the last moment, as this attack was about to reach him, Terra struck out with his spear as a last line of defense, but in front of this attack, he was sent flying along with his spear as he crashed far away on the ground making a small crater.

"Just as I speculated. His cultivation isn't particularly strong in front of me, he is probably even weaker than a warrior of 3rd or 4th stage of Spirit Establishment Realm if I judge him by our cultivation standards. I guess it was good judgment, only using the 2nd form of Saint Sword instead of the 4th or he would have been easily killed." Long Chen muttered to himself as he landed back to the ground.

His beautiful wings disappeared as his feet touched the ground. He started walking towards the place where Terra crashed at. As soon as Long Chen got there, he noticed Terra struggling to climb out of the crater.

"Are you alright?" Long Chen asked.

"I am fine. Thanks for showing mercy." Terra bowed as he thanked Long Chen.

'His physical defense must be really strong, for him to sustain only light injuries even after crashing that badly.' Long Chen thought as he stared at Terra closely.

"How do you know I showed you mercy?" Long Chen asked with a slight smile on his face.

"After seeing your strength, I am sure that you can easily kill me whenever you feel like it. You also had a reason this time as I was the one who initiated the fight, but you only injured me slightly. Also, I am sure that what you

showed wasn't your full strength at all." Terra stated as he patted the dust off his body.

"As you said, you might have been toying with me before, and there's a really good possibility that your last attack wasn't your strongest attack that you could have used. I feel that you could have killed me with one move if you were serious from the start" Terra continued as he stood tall looking back at Long Chen.

"Good observations. By the way, are you sure that I am a human now?" Long Chen smirked.

"There is no doubt about it in my mind, you are a legendary human!" He said as he tried to find his spear on the ground and picked it up as soon as he found it.

"Can you please stop saying legendary? Anyways, is your tribe nearby? You mentioned that you had books about humans here, are they at your tribe? Can you bring me to read them?" Long Chen asked Terra.

"Of course! Everyone in the tribe would be really shocked to see that I, Terra, brought a legendary human back with me," Terra looked proud as he said it.

"Let's go then, I will follow behind you." Long Chen suggested.

Terra picked up his spear and started walking towards the place where he placed his bag before starting the fight. Terra picked up his bag and started walking in a specific direction, gesturing to Long Chen to follow him.

"How do you guys know which direction you need to go to? All I see is desert sand everywhere, there is no sun or moon either to judge the direction." Long Chen asked as he looked around, finding every direction looked the same.

"What is the sun and the moon? We just use this thing for directions. It is something that everyone here has. They all use it for directions." Terra said as he took out a compass-like thing from his bag and showed it to Long Chen.

'Interesting, although it looks like a crude version of the compass, its functions are basically the same. It must be using a different principle compared to the compass on Earth, pretty interesting" Long Chen thought, feeling amused.

"Oh right, you brought those plants out from below the ground to attack me, how did you do it? Is that a specialty of your bloodline?" He asked after giving that compass back.

"No. Not everyone in our tribe can do it, we are not born with this ability, we can achieve it because of the mystical object of our ancestors. After going near and studying the mystical object of our ancestors for a certain amount of time, some of us gain enlightenment and unlock the ability to control plantation. Unfortunately, those who could do it are pretty rare." Terra replied.

"It is tough to describe it using words, I will show it to you when we reach my tribe. You will understand better then." Terra said as he glanced back at Long Chen.

"Okay, anyway, can you tell me about why humans are a legend mentioned in your book?" Long Chen asked again.

"Oh, it is mentioned in our holy book and the books of probably most of the tribes in this place, the Legend about a human who protected ours and countless other tribes of this world from the brink of destruction. He was the strongest being that ever existed in this world. He once casually told the chief of various tribes that he was a human when asked." Terra briefly explained the situation.

"That's only about one human? What about other humans?" He continued.

"No other human was seen in this world before and after him... That is until you appeared today." Terra replied to Long Chen's question.

'I think I have an idea of who the other human can be then!!' Long Chen thought as he remembered a certain golden-haired person.

"How did that person save your people?" Long Chen asked.

"I think our tribe elder can explain it much better than me. It won't take long, we are almost there." Terra said as he continued marching on ahead.

After walking for a while, Long Chen noticed that on the ground, he could finally see some signs of the plantation. There were patches of red grass that he passed by at regular intervals.

As Long Chen was looking at these small changes with great interest, Terra's expression suddenly changed into a fierce one as he gripped his spear with force, ready to attack.

Long Chen noticed these small fluctuations in Terra's posture as he brought out his mountain destroyer and attacked.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 54 - 54: Monsters?

The direction Long Chen attacked was not towards Terra but towards the direction to his right. Long Chen's Mountain Destroyer slashed apart towards his right. His sword struck something as the thing that was hit fell on the ground. A weird creature could be seen on the ground, dead.

Long Chen was using his divine sense at regular intervals throughout his journey, as he just wanted to stay aware of the surroundings. But this time, just as he used it, he noticed a shadow moving towards him really fast. Long Chen immediately attacked without hesitation.

Just as he slashed what was attacking him in two parts, he noticed Terra had killed one as well with his spear. Long Chen felt it once again behind him as he turned around and attacked the creature, pouncing at him, killing it as well.

"Hmm, that is something weird, I haven't seen one like this before. It is a skeleton, it kind of looks like it belongs to a rabbit, but those two skeleton horns on its head make this creature a lot more different." Long Chen muttered to himself as he saw what attacked him. It looked like a Spirit beast, there was no flesh nor skin, only bones. Its bones weren't normal either, they were pitch black in color.

"Do you know anything about this creature? What is this thing called? Is it a special type of spirit beast?" Long Chen continuously asked Terra with a confused look.

"What is a Spirit beast? This creature is called a skeleton horned rabbit. It can easily kill unsuspecting individuals using its stealth, speed and sneak attack, but it is pretty weak against strong individuals. You can say that its defense is its weak point.

This one here belongs to the species called monsters. You will find countless monsters here, some of which are really strong that even I pray that I don't cross their path." Terra said as he pointed towards the dead monster.

'Monsters huh, interesting. To me, it looks more like an undead, but it's a different world so anything can happen.' Long Chen thought as he placed his sword back inside his ring.

"Oh right, where do you keep your swords? It suddenly appears and disappears from your hands. Is it a unique special power of humans?" Terra asked with a confused look.

"You can say it like that, just like the thing with you and the plants, it's something that humans can do but not everyone." Long Chen said, smiling.

"Anyway, why didn't you inform me that there may be things like this on the way?" Long Chen asked.

"You are a human, even if I didn't tell you, these things are nothing in front of you! Let's continue ahead." Terra snickered.

'Divine sense is really useful if I hadn't noticed it attacking me, although I would have still killed it before I was injured. My victory wouldn't be as easy like this,' Long Chen thought as he followed Terra.

'It is really unfortunate that I can't constantly use my divine sense as it causes too much mental burden, or it would be even more useful.' He continued as he spread his divine sense once more.

After walking for a little over half an hour straight, Long Chen finally saw what he assumed to be Terra's tribe. There was fencing made of red wood on the parameter and two guards were guarding the gate, surprisingly they were both women. They mostly looked like Terra from the outside, the only difference being their bulging chest.

They did not wear much clothing. Only a small skirt and a small wrapping on their chest, which only covered their peaks, so their chest were mostly exposed.

'Does their tribe not like clothes? Terra is bare chested, and those two females' guards are barely wearing any clothes, but it is a nice view for me, so I don't mind. Their peaks are really big though, the biggest I have ever seen so far,' Long Chen thought.

"Are all the females here this gifted, physically?" Long Chen asked, looking at Terra.

"Of course they are! All of them are pretty strong, except for a few," Terra replied proudly as he misunderstood his meaning.

As they both got near the gates, the two female guards saw them. They just stood in place, dumbfounded, with their mouths wide open as their eyes fell on Long Chen that they even forgot about Terra's existence.

"Ahem, what are you doing standing there so shocked! Open the gates." Terra said as both of them finally regained their focus.

"We apologize for the delay, welcome back, Lord Terra. Greetings," they replied as they bowed in front of Terra and then in front of Long Chen.

'The girls here are pretty open.' Long Chen thought, as he could see more of their bountiful chest as they bowed.

Terra and Long Chen entered inside as the guards opened the gate.

"Was.... was that actually a human?" One of the guards asked, looking at the other.

"Looked like one, and lord Terra was so respectful towards him, there is a really good chance that we finally got to see a human. The legend might be true after all." The other one said with a cheerful tone.

"They were really respectful towards you and they called you Lord terra, you must have a good position in the tribe," Long Chen said as they continued walking, ignoring the shocked looks of the crowd.

"Of course! I am one of the strongest warriors in the tribe, there are only four who are stronger than me, my elder brother, my Old man, Uncle Xu and his daughter Xia." Terra replied.

"Which is the strongest amongst the four?" Long Chen asked.

"My father, the tribe leader is the strongest, after that uncle Xu, then his daughter Xia and lastly, my eldest brother." Terra answered.

'His father is the leader, hah... No wonder they were so respectful to him, calling him lord, also since he's the strongest in the tribe, I wonder how strong the tribe leader is, is he weaker than me just like him?' Long Chen thought as he glanced at Terra.

As they walked inside the tribe, everyone who saw them or passed by them stopped in their tracks, stunned at Long Chen's appearance.

"This one here is my father's residence, let's go inside. I am sure he will be delighted to see you." Terra smiled as he said

An old-looking guy with a head full of white hair opened the door.

"Where is my father right now?" Terra asked the one who opened the door.

There was no reply from the old man as he just stayed there looking stunned. Terra put his hands on this old man's shoulders and shook him a little, bringing the old man out of his daze.

"Ah, I apologize! Master is in the study, you can go inside." He said as he stepped aside.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 55 - 55: Trouble In Paradise

"Ah, I apologize! The master is in the study, you can go inside." The old man said as he stepped aside, allowing both of them to enter the residence.

After walking for a bit, they stood in front of a red door. Terra proceeded to knock on the door.

"Come inside." A Dignified voice came from the opposite side of the door.

Terra opened the door after obtaining confirmation and entered inside with Long Chen. As they both entered, Long Chen saw a middle-aged man, slightly taller than Terra, sitting on a chair reading a book.

Long Chen could feel that the person sitting down was stronger than Terra, but he couldn't tell how strong the middle-aged man was because he couldn't see anyone's cultivation after arriving in this world.

"What do you want this time?" This man asked without turning his head to look towards them.

"Father, can you just look at who I brought. You are being disrespectful! Be considerate towards our guest," Terra said in a weird voice.

"What guest?" The Middle-aged man turned to look towards the both of them. He stood up, shocked, as the book on his hands fell to the ground as soon as he glanced at Long Chen.

"I greet the great master! I should be killed for my disrespect," he immediately fell to his knees as soon as he saw Long Chen. Even while on his knees, Long Chen could see that this man was taller than him.

"Get up, what are you doing? It is fine, nothing to worry about, just get up." Long Chen said as he gestured to him to stand.

"How can I? You are a human just like our savior was. You are from his lineage, I should have treated you with proper respect and welcomed you myself." Terra's father replied as he refused to stand up.

"It is fine. You didn't know that I was coming. So get up! Anyways, how are you so sure that I am a human? Don't you want to check my fighting strength to know that?" Long Chen said as he looked at Terra whose face was filled with embarrassment.

"What are you talking about, great master? There is no need for that! In our books, there is a clear description of our savior! In fact, we even have a painted picture and statue of our savior! There is no doubt that you are from his lineage," Terra's father respectfully replied as he stood up.

"Oh? You have a painting of him? May I see that painting? And your history book as well? " Long Chen asked.

"Of course! You just sit here comfortably, I will go and get it! Terra take care of the great master properly while I am not here!!" He said as he ran outside the study in a hurry.

"We are in a study room, right? Shouldn't he keep that painting and that book here?" Long Chen asked Terra, feeling confused.

"That is something very special for our tribe. Every tribe leader safeguards it, keeping it in our treasure chamber! It is the safest place possible in this whole tribe as it is guarded by several guards and only the tribe leader can enter it using a special token." Terra replied.

"Oh? How long will it take for him to..." before Long Chen could even complete his question, the tribe leader was already back, holding a golden book in one of his hands and a yellow scroll in the other.

'That was fast,' Long Chen thought.

"I apologize for making you wait, great master," He said, placing the golden book and scroll in Long Chen's hands.

'Why is he so naïve and trusting? Giving his sacred book to me without asking anything? Just because that guy saved lives here, it doesn't mean all humans are good.' Long Chen inwardly thought.

"It is fine. You didn't make me wait at all. Anyway, what is your name? I don't know what to call you." Long Chen asked, looking at him.

"This little one's name is Tensha." The tribe leader named Tensha replied. Long Chen could hear his heavy breathing from all the running as he talked.

"My name is Long Chen. It's nice to meet you tribe leader Tensha."

"It's the good luck of all our tribe that we could meet you! By the way, should we leave so that you could read in peace?" Tensha suggested.

"It is fine, I don't even know if I could even read..." Long Chen stopped mid-sentence as he opened the book and noticed that he was able to read the characters perfectly fine.

"Actually, it might be a good idea. Can both of you give me some time to read in silence?" Long Chen suggested.

"Of course, we will leave you to it then. Terra come with me". Tensha gestured as he took Terra with him outside, gently shutting the door to avoid distracting Long Chen.

After Tensha came out of his own study, he immediately called for the guards and told them to guard this place and let no one enter inside or create noise around the vicinity of the study. He told them that there was a great entity studying in the room which could destroy their whole clan and that they should be respectful to him if Long Chen decides to come out.

Long Chen was sitting alone in the room, holding a book and a scroll. First, he decided to open that scroll to see if his assumptions were correct or not.

"Just as I thought, it is actually him. Although he looked very young compared to what I saw in my dreams, the similarities can't be ignored." Just as Long Chen saw this portrait, he was sure that this was the guy he saw in his dreams, only slightly younger.

In this portrait, he looked to be around 17-18 years old. Bright red hair, those golden eyes and a handsome face.

"This is a really good painting, I can almost faintly feel the vibe of his scary aura just by looking at it. The person who painted it must be really good." Long Chen muttered to himself.

'Let's see what adventures you had here, Maybe I can find a clue about how to get out of here through you.' Long Chen thought as he opened the book and started reading.

Long Chen's expression kept changing as he continued reading the story.

During the time Long Chen was inside the study, reading the contents of the book. People outside the residence were in a total mess.

After seeing a human, the entire tribe was in unrest. Everyone was talking about this event. Even the deputy chief Xu and his daughter Xia came to the tribe leader Tensha's house after they got to know about a human appearing inside the tribe.

"Come with me. I need to talk to you about something in private." Xu gestured to Tensha as he went straight inside Tensha's room.

"What do you want to talk about? Can't we talk in front of our kids? There's only Terra and little Xia here," Tensha replied as he smiled.

"No, it is not something we can talk about here! Come with me to a private room." Xu insisted with a serious expression.

"Okay kids, you can stay here, while I go talk with Old Xu. We will be right back." Tensha's expression turned serious as well as he told them both to stay back and went with Xu inside the room.

"Is it true that a human has appeared in our tribe? If it is, we have to consider things a little bit more seriously." Old Xu said in a low voice.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 56 - 56: Two Hawks With One Arrow

"Of course it is true. Didn't you hear the commotion outside? We can actually see what our ancestors saw." Tensha said with a smile.

"I did hear the commotion, but is he just like the one described in our history books? Did you feel his strength?" Xu asked Tensha with a serious expression.

"Really! Although I was not able to see his cultivation. It was just as described in the history books about that event. When Great Master Tian Shen appeared thousands of years ago, no one was able to see his cultivation either." Tensha replied.

"Terra told me that he fought the human before, as a form of test. He was defeated in one strike! Also, just as I saw him, I could feel that there's a terrifying strength hidden deep inside of him."

"Terra also told me that he saw him use those angel-like wings, one being golden and one being black. You know what that means, right?" Tensha said, as he tried imagining how that must've looked.

"Yeah, it is just as the book described. That great being thousands of years ago also had these angel-like wings, one golden and one black. There is no doubt about it. He is actually a human and as far as I can guess, he is from the direct lineage of that great being." Old Xu replied.

"I think we should send him to another tribe and not keep him here." Old Xu suggested in a heavy tone.

"Why do you think that? He is a human! Shouldn't we improve our relationship with him?" Tensha asked, giving Old Xu a confused look.

"You know about the history in great detail, right?" Xu said in a low voice.

"Of course I do, why do you ask that?" He asked, looking at the latter.

"You remember the last time a human appeared, right?" Old Xu asked again.

"There was no hint of any danger or trouble in this world until a human appeared. But just as they appeared, our ancestors found out that the monsters were planning to wipe out all life forms of this planet and take control of all the land. After which the great was started and great master Tian Shen saved us." Xu continued saying.

"That's right, but why is that important?" Tensha couldn't tell what Xu was trying to say.

"Although great master Tian Shen slaughtered almost all the monsters, most of our tribe members died as well during this fight."

"Now, after thousands of years later, the monsters have mostly recovered their strength. They are now probably as strong as they were before. Even if they are weaker than they were at their peak, they won't be much weaker than before." Xu said, looking at him.

"Who do you think the monsters hate the most?" Xu continued with a question.

"Tian Shen! A Human!" Tensha finally understood what Xu was trying to say.

"Exactly, I think if the monsters find out that another human has appeared, they might immediately get riled up and attack our tribe. Although we have the help of several other tribes and the human, we may emerge victorious, but at the cost of our tribe men's lives." Xu said with a grave expression.

"Yes, if a fight occurs near our tribe, we will suffer most of the losses. While other tribes will be left in better condition." Tensha agreed.

"So I think that we should send him to another tribe, so that they will suffer this fate, instead of us! When the monsters attack, we can just send some of our forces."

"With all the tribes and that human, we will definitely win this war and we won't suffer much loss either." Xu smiled as he said.

"I think I can understand what you are saying and your logic is right as well, but how can we send him away without offending him?! He might destroy our tribe completely in anger if we take the wrong step." Tensha cautioned with a grave expression.

"We can think about that later. The main thing is that you agree with me that we should send him away, right?" Xu asked again.

"Ah... right! I agree! We need to do it for the tribe." Tensha said with a sad expression.

"Whatever we do, we need a good excuse to send him off to another tribe. Which tribe would be the best to send him to?" Tensha asked again.

"What about the Banshee Tribe? It will be in our best interest if we send him there," Xu suggested.

"How is sending him there specifically, in our best interest?" Tensha asked.

"You know, the Banshee Tribe is the strongest tribe after the monsters. While we are the strongest after the Banshee Tribe amongst all the tribes. So if we can send this human there, they will take the full brunt of this attack, and there is a really good chance that they will suffer a big loss.

And if the Banshee Tribe grows weaker after this war and the monsters are defeated, we will be the strongest in this land. It is like shooting two hawks with one arrow." Old Xu smiled maliciously as he said.

"I feel that we are somehow doing something really bad and betraying the trust of our ancestors. But it is something that must be done for the tribe." Tensha said with a heavy expression.

"First, we need to contain the information that a human is in our tribe and stop it from spreading as much as we can, until we can send him away to the Banshee Tribe. I will take care of that, while you take care of that human and try sending him away without offending him." Xu said as he started walking towards the door with Tensha.

"You are back father, what were you two talking about?" Terra asked as soon as his father exited the room.

"Nothing serious. Your uncle was just telling me about a woman he has a crush on nowadays. He wanted me to hook him up with her." Tensha joked as Xu glared at him.

"What! How can you even think about it? Does Aunty know about it?" Terra said with a shocked expression.

"Your father is only joking you, idiot!" Xia said while she looked at him like he was an idiot.

"Oh, Good one." Terra started laughing.

"I will be going now, do you want to stay here?" Xu asked Xia.

"So early? Don't you want to meet that human?" Xia asked in a confused voice.

"It is fine, I have some important things to do. Also, he will probably take a long time before coming out of seclusion." He looked at Tensha as he finished his sentence.

"I will come with you then, I can see him tomorrow as well," Xia said as she left with Xu.

'I thought they came to meet him? Why was he in a hurry to leave suddenly?' Terra pondered to himself.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 57 - 57: Law Of Slaughter

While there were a lot of schemes being made outside related to him, Long Chen had no idea about it at all, he was simply focused on his reading.

'So that's what happened.' Long Chen thought as he finished reading the golden book.

"Tian Shen... God of heaven. A really nice name... At the very least, I know his name now." Long Chen muttered to himself.

"Xun! Come out." Long Chen said in a low voice.

"Stop playing, I know you're here. Long Chen said again as Xun refused to reply.

"How did you know that I was here?" Suddenly there was a female voice talking behind him. Long Chen turned back only to see this little 14-15-year-old girl, with pink hair standing there. She was Xun, his treasure spirit.

"Can I simply say that I am a genius, that's why I knew?" Long Chen laughed as he said.

"Tell me honestly, how did you know that this great one is here in this trial world with you," Xun asked Long Chen with curiosity on her face.

"I read it in this book," Long Chen said with a smile.

"You can't fool me with that excuse, I know all about that book, there is nothing related to me in there," Xun said, pouting.

"Are you sure? You see... Since Tian Shen was such a great entity here, there are a lot of things written about him here, even the smallest ones.

It was mentioned in the book that Tian Shen was often seen talking to someone, but there was no one nearby that he could've talked to. This event is just described as a legend of Tian Shen, saying that he was able to talk to gods who normal people can't see, but I know who he was talking to." Long Chen explained as he showed Xun the certain paragraph inside the book.

"You said it yourself before, that you were with Tian Shen before me. So it was easier to connect the dots, and if you could come here when he was being tested, I was sure you'd be here right now as well." Long Chen continued.

"Anyways, why did you hide from me and not from him?" Long Chen inquired with a confused expression.

"I hid from him as well, silently watching the test, but he somehow found out that I was in this world with him as well," Xun answered.

"How? I myself only found out because of this book and his mention, but how can he know?" Long Chen became even more confused as he asked.

"Don't compare him with yourself. I don't want your self-esteem to take a loss." Xun said with a smug smile.

"Anyway, even I don't know how he found out. He never told me!" Xun said pouting.

"Is everything written about him and the events true in this book?" He asked.

"Although some events are over-exaggerated, this story is mostly true," Xun replied.

"Tian Shen was sent to this world for this test, just like you are. As he arrived, he first met someone from the Barong tribe. That tribe was and still is the weakest. While the Banshee Tribe and Elphia Tribe that you're currently at was the strongest and still are.

Members of the Barong Tribe were really kind and welcoming of him, despite him being of a completely unknown race." Xun told him.

"As Tian Shen was staying in the tribe, studying under their tribal tome during the day, he continued his cultivation at night while trying to find a way to pass the test. Until one day when he heard a large commotion in the tribe. As he investigated, he found out that the tribe was preparing to go to war.

He met the tribe leader and found out that the monster's tribe had attacked and destroyed the Sunmi tribe and continued ahead. Their target was to conquer this whole land." Xun said, looking at Long Chen.

"All the tribes had decided to join their forces and go fight the final war against the monster tribe under the leadership of Elphia and Banshee Tribe. While the Barong tribe was the weakest amongst all, they still decided to help as well.

Tian Shen decided to go with them, thinking that this might be the event that is the key to passing this test. He kept watching the battle with great interest,

rarely participating as he knew that the real strong monsters hadn't participated yet." Xun said reminiscing about the event.

"As the Barong army was weakest, they were given the area where the enemy's numbers and strength were weakest. So Tian Shen didn't stay with them and prompted them to head towards the main area. He fought occasionally but never showed his true strength. Until..." she took a pause as she reached this point.

"Until he noticed that most of the warriors from the Barong Tribe were wiped out. A monster lord had appeared. He attacked and slaughtered them all. Little Shen was so heartbroken and enraged that he finally mastered what he needed to. In his rage, he finally showed his full strength and killed every monster that stood in his path." Xun told Long Chen.

"Without distinguishing between strong and weak. He finally mastered the Law of Slaughter as he slaughtered most of the monster's tribe, shocking every tribe present with his strength. Even monster lords and monster kings were slaughtered until the remnants of the monster tribe ran away. That day he was given the title demon monarch by the monsters." Xun smiled as she said that title.

"Really? The things about the Barong tribe aren't in this book as you described. They are only briefly mentioned as part of the tribes that joined the way against monsters. It didn't mention that they were the reason, Tian Shen was enraged." Long Chen asked as he looked towards that book.

"Of course, in this book, you won't find it. You will find about their side of the story in their books." Xun said as she smiled.

"He was pretty amazing in this battle, wasn't he?" Long Chen said with a serious expression, imagining how it must have felt.

"Yes, he was incredible," Xun said as she reminisced about the past events.

"Oh right, you said he mastered what he needed to. Do I need to master this law slaughter to pass this test as well?" Long Chen asked excitedly.

"Not exactly, but that is up to you to decide," Xun replied in vague terms.

"What do you mean for me to decide?" Long Chen asked, feeling confused.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 58 - 58 : Impossible Challenge

"You know what laws like the Law of Slaughter are, right?" Xun asked Long Chen.

"I'm not familiar with the Law of Slaughter, but I do know about the laws of nature. I read that people in the Earth Realm can start controlling the Law of Nature.

They are like special powers, giving you the control of an element. For example, the Law of Fire, Law of Earth, Law of Water, Law of Metal and the Law of Wood." Long Chen described what he read before.

"Right, but that's not exactly true. There are more laws than just these 5 Laws of Nature. There are many special laws as well, just like the Law of Slaughter. Don't fret, you will get in touch with them pretty soon." Xun said as he had a big smile on her face.

"Special laws? Like the Law of time and space?" Long Chen asked with a shocked expression.

"How do you know about the law of time and space?" She answered with a question.

"Ah, nothing, I just assumed that there must be one for it as well. So the ability of Terra to control plantation? Is that because of their understanding of the law of wood?" Long Chen said as he remembered the attacks Terra used against him.

"That is kind of true. This universe has a myriad of laws and generally, only Earth Realm Cultivators can learn laws as they have enough comprehension ability, but still, most people can only learn a single law in the Earth realm.

But there are a lot of the so-called geniuses who can learn laws while they are still in the Gold Core Realm or control more than one law while in the Earth Realm. But I do not think you will find any like those in the lower world you are at."

"What the h***? Did you just say that only rare geniuses can learn a law in the gold core realm? I am only in the Spirit Establishment realm! Isn't this test too tough for me?" Long Chen was startled.

"Those geniuses did not have the bloodline you have. Didn't Tian Shen also learn the Laws in this test?" Xun declared in a confident tone.

"What cultivation did Tian Shen have when he participated in this test?" Long Chen asked while smiling.

"Oh! Gold Core Re..." Xun replied but immediately shut her little mouth. Long Chen couldn't help but facepalm himself as he heard her.

"Whatever, if that is the only way to succeed, then I will give it my all." Long Chen said in a voice full of determination.

"That's like my good boy!" Xun smiled as she said.

"Well, since we are done here, let's go outside. And you! Stay with me and do not disappear since they can't see you either way," Long Chen continued as he looked at Xun before opening the door.

As soon as Long Chen came out of the room, the guards standing outside took a step back in surprise before bowing to him.

"Great master, Tribe chief did not know how long you would take, so he left us here to guard this place and make sure no one disturbs you. The master is in the hall with his son at the moment. I will take you to him, or inform him if you want him to come here instead." The guard respectfully said.

"It is fine, I will go to him instead. Go ahead, I will follow you." Long Chen stated.

Through the guidance of the guard, Long Chen found the hall really fast. As soon as he entered the hall, both Tensha and his son stood up to welcome him.

"Master Chen, why did you make the effort to come here yourself, you could have just called for me. Anyways, did you find what you were looking for in this book?" Tensha asked Long Chen.

"Oh, it's nothing. I was just curious about the history. Here, you can have these back." Long Chen said as he returned the book and the portrait back to Tensha.

"Oh Right, I heard about the mystical object of your clan from which you gain the enlightenment to control plants. Can I see it?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

'Ahh... that idiot son of mine! Why did he tell him this? How can I send him away if he decides to study there?' Tensha grumbled in his mind.

"That's... Okay." Tensha thought for a moment before agreeing.

"Come with me," Tensha said as he started walking in a specific direction, Long Chen followed behind until they came out of the residence.

He continued to follow Tensha throughout the tribe. After a few minutes of walking, they reached an old-looking temple.

"Is this the place?" Long Chen asked as soon as Tensha stopped in front of this temple.

"Yes, it is our ancestral temple. Every person in the tribe is allowed to come here and study under our ancestor's object for one month every year. But we have generally seen that people only gain enlightenment in the first two years if they can.

Those who can't learn in the first two years, no matter how much they try, even after coming here every year, none of them were able to gain enlightenment." Tensha explained.

"No one except the members of our tribe is allowed inside, that too without my permission, but you are special. Let's enter." Tensha said, looking at Long Chen.

As Tensha himself was leading Long Chen inside, the guards stepped aside without any delay, allowing both of them to enter.

"It is completely empty at the moment," Tensha said as he led Long Chen.

As they reached the center of the temple, Long Chen noticed a shining green orb lying quietly at an altar.

"That...?" Long Chen felt like he could feel closeness from the orb.

"It is our ancestral object. As Terra already told you before, it is the reason we are able to control plantation." Tensha said as he looked at the orb.

"Can I study here for a bit, alone? I want to try getting enlightenment as well." Long Chen asked in a polite tone.

"Ahhh..." Tensha didn't know what to say. As he wanted to send Long Chen out of his tribe without offending him. If Long Chen stayed here to study the orb, Tensha wouldn't be able to find an excuse to send Long Chen out of the tribe for a long while.

"What? Is there a problem with me being here?" Long Chen said as he stared at Tensha with an innocent look.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 59 - 59: Law Of Wood Or Law Of Slaughter

"Well... Ah... No there is no problem," Tensha said as he could not think of a way to stop him.

"Great. Therefore, I will study here for a bit. Do not let anyone inside for next one month." Long Chen said as he turned his back to Tensha.

'Right. I can try that method.' Tensha thought as he suddenly got an idea.

"Ah... Great master long, there is something that I think I should inform you about!" Tensha thought of something as he replied.

"What do you want to tell me about?" Long Chen turned back and looked at him with great interest.

"Although our ancestral object is the strongest for us, there is one in another tribe that would be even more beneficial towards you. That's something Great master Tian Shen himself studied. If you want, I can bring you to that tribe and maybe you can gain enlightenment from it." Tensha said as he smiled.

"Oh? Which tribe?" Long Chen asked with an interested look.

"The Banshee tribe. They have the ancestral orb from which master Tian Shen gained enlightenment from." Tensha replied.

"How is that possible? I know that Tian Shen stayed with the Barong tribe and studied there. How could he gain enlightenment from the banshee tribe's orb?" Long Chen raised a question looking at him seriously.

"Did the banshee tribe destroy the Barong tribe and took it?" Long Chen thought of a possibility as he asked in a serious tone.

"Ah... No, the truth is... After the great war, the Barong tribe grew really weak and after master Tian Shen left this world, another tribe got into a war with the Barong tribe over some dispute. Since they had no way to protect themselves, they asked us and the Banshee tribe for their help." Tensha answered.

"None of the tribe showed any interest in helping them, even when they offered their clan's treasures in exchange. Finally, when they could not bear the brunt of this attack, they offered the orb from which great master Tian Shen himself studied from, in exchange.

All the tribes decided to help them, even the one attacking them said that they won't attack them if they give it to them." Tensha told Long Chen.

"But the Barong tribe decided to choose the banshee tribe. Although this tribe wasn't the kindest, it was the strongest and had the reputation of following their promises. In exchange for this orb, they got the promise that the Banshee tribe will provide protection to them for the next five thousand years," Tensha continued.

"Oh, that is a pretty good deal. No wonder they accepted. They can build some strength in these five thousand years. Anyways, I will think about going there later, but for now, can you leave me here alone?" Long Chen told him.

"Alright. But I still suggest that instead of spending time here, being near that orb would be greatly beneficial to the great master." Tensha suggested trying to change his mind.

"It's fine, I will be the one deciding. You can go now, I will find you when I come out of this temple," Long Chen said as he looked at him.

"Alright, I will be taking my leave then," Tensha said in a downcast tone as he left.

"Xun, is it true that the Barong tribe's orb is more beneficial to me? Should I learn the law of wood that is in front of me or the law of slaughter that Tian Shen learned?" Long Chen asked.

"It's not totally true. You can use any of the orbs to learn a law. It's just that the law of wood is one of the most common natural laws that you can find back on your lowly planet as well. But still, learning the law of wood won't be any easier compared to the law of slaughter. But I would say that learning a special law would be a better use of your time." Xun said standing right beside Long Chen.

"Anyway, does everyone learn a law in the real world using these orb-like things?" He asked another question.

"No, most people gain the knowledge of a law through their own pondering and enlightenment towards an element. These items here are not what most people use as these aren't something that is present in a large quantity." Xun replied.

"There is only one orb of each law in the real world. Only a few of which were ever found. They are kept hidden like treasures," she continued telling him.

"How were these orbs made then?" Long Chen raised another question.

"I will tell you about that after you pass this test. But I can say that it is somehow related to you." Xun smirked as she said

"You little devil. Always being so mysterious," Long Chen brought his hands near her face as he suddenly pinched her cheeks shocking her.

"What the...! I can actually touch you?" Long Chen had subconsciously done this gesture but was shocked as soon as he realized that he could touch Xun. He could feel the softness of Xun's cheeks.

"You... You Bully!!! Even Tian Shen never dared to do this to me. I... I won't talk to you now." She said as she pointed a finger at him.

"Don't be a kid, aren't you the great Xun? I know nothing can faze you. You are the greatest in the whole world," Long Chen said, trying to butter her up.

"Hmph... At Least you know how great I am. I'll forgive you this one time." She said as she smiled proudly.

'She's so easy to please.' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"So now I guess I should go to the Banshee tribe. I need to pass this test as fast as I can." Long Chen said as he made a decision.

"Oh, can I bring an orb with me from here to the real world?" Long Chen said as he looked towards the green orb.

"Nope, actually the orbs in this world are not real. They were kind of like replicas, just introduced for the testing purposes. After years, they somehow became these tribe's ancestral objects. They will turn into nothing in the real world even if you put them inside that ring and try to bring them out." Xun explained.

"Oh, what a waste of such treasures. Let's go then," Long Chen said with a disappointed face as he got out with Xun.

"Did tribe leader Tensha go to his residence?" Long Chen asked the guards standing outside.

"Yes, he just left a little while ago. I'll bring you to him." One of the guards said.

"It's fine. I know the direction," Long Chen said as he continued walking ahead alone.

Long Chen was walking slowly this time as he wanted to see the whole tribe properly. After walking for a while he entered the marketplace, which he passed by before.

He did not stop to take a careful look at that time as he was in a hurry to see that mysterious object. But now that he was back again, he wanted to take a careful look.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 60 - 60: First Meeting

'They have such weird food here. It is really good that I don't feel hungry in this world, or I don't know how I would have eaten these things.' Long Chen thought in his mind as he entered a restaurant in that marketplace and saw some of the dishes that people were eating there.

He immediately got out, but even his brief arrival was enough to shock the customers.

"Hmm? That place looks interesting," Long Chen said to himself as he saw a man selling objects on a small stall on the street.

Long Chen quickly went there and looked around. He could see there were many objects there like strange coins, some swords, shields, etc. But what caught Long Chen's eyes was a beautiful necklace. Although Long Chen could feel nothing special from it to him, it looked really beautiful.

"What do you need great sir? I have many things here, take a look at this. It is a coin from the Sunmi tribe, the tribe which was exterminated by monsters in the last great war. It will only cost 30 Elphia coins. I don't think you will find something like this anywhere," After his initial shock, the seller immediately recovered as he started describing his objects to Long Chen.

"I don't need those. I just want this necklace." Long Chen told him.

"Oh, this one? Although it doesn't have any special functions, but it is made from one of the prettiest crystals that you can find on this land, Esliil. But unfortunately, I cannot sell it to you. It is already sold." He said looking at Long Chen.

"What are you talking about? It is sitting right there and I see no customer here at the moment." Long Chen asked with a confused expression.

"It was bought by Miss Xia, daughter of deputy chief yesterday. I apologize, I cannot sell it to you without her permission." That seller said with a worried expression.

"If it was bought by her, why didn't she take it with her?" Long Chen inquired/

"Well, I had one necklace here yesterday, she came and bought that. She asked me if I have more like that. When I said that I have one more at home, she

told me to reserve it for her and to bring it today." That seller said in a low voice/

"Oh, it's fine then. She can take it," Long Chen said as he gave up.

"I already have one. You can take that if you like it." Long Chen was just about to turn back and way away when he heard a voice from behind.

Long Chen turned only to see a girl walking towards him with a guard following behind. She was wearing a long sleek gown green in color which highlighted her perfect curves.

"Miss Xia. It's a pleasure to finally meet you." Long Chen said as he had already guessed who this girl might be.

"The pleasure is all mine," She said with a smile.

"You can sell it to him. I already have one, it is fine if I don't get a second." She said as she looked at the seller.

"Alright Young Miss. It will only be 15 Elphia coins." The seller replied to her before he turned towards Long Chen and told him the price.

"Ah...? I apologize, I don't have any Elphia coins." Long Chen said looking back at him.

"If you cannot pay, I can pay instead of you. Just consider it a gift from the Elphia tribe." Xia said while smiling at Long Chen.

"You don't need to worry about this, Miss Xu. I never said that I can't pay for it." Long Chen told Xia before turning back to the seller.

"Will this work?" Long Chen said as he tossed a coin towards the seller who immediately caught it.

"It is a coin we humans use. Will it be enough?" Long Chen said, smiling.

"Ah???" The seller stood there shocked as he looked at this coin with a feverish gaze.

"You don't need to pay that much! That coin will be enough to buy this whole market if it is sold in an auction!" Xia said as she kept staring at that coin.

'Really? A bronze coin is worth that much here?' Long Chen thought with a weird expression.

"It is alright. Let him keep it. Also, since you said it is enough to buy many things, you can pick up a few more things. Treat them as a gift from me. I will be going now, as I have things to do. See you later," Long Chen said as he smiled and picked up that necklace before walking away.

"This man..." Xia stood there dumbfounded, looking at Long Chen's back.

"Take these 100 Elphia coins and give that human's coin back to me. You know holding a precious thing without enough strength can bring a disaster, right?" Xia finally turned back towards the seller after long Chen disappeared before telling him.

"Ah... ok," He wanted to deny, but he could not go against the daughter of the deputy chief of the tribe so he accepted 100 Elphia coins and have that bronze coin back,

"Fascinating." Xia stood there studying this coin.

Long Chen entered the residence of tribe leader Tensha and entered without any problem as no one tried to stop him. Everyone had seen how respectful the tribe leader was towards him as well as the legends about humans continued to him being allowed everywhere.

"He entered our ancestral temple, I don't think he will come out before a month. We can't send him away now." Tensha said while looking at Xu.

"Ahh... it is a disaster. Why did you bring him there! What did you expect him to do once he reached there? It was obvious that he would stay there to gain enlightenment. I don't know how long this information about a human being here can be contained. I am not even sure if the information about a human appearing already reached the monster tribe." Xu said with a worried expression.

"I could do nothing about it. He already found out about our ancestral object before coming here. And when he asked me to bring him there, I had no way to deny him and now we are stuck here for one month. We can only do our best to contain this information and pray that monsters haven't found out." Tensha said in a downcast voice.

"Who is it?" Tensha asked as he heard knocking on the door.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 61 - 61: What 's In The Egg

"Who is it?" Tensha asked as he heard knocking on the door.

"It is me, father! I came to inform you that Master Long Chen is back. He is sitting in the main hall waiting for you." Terra replied from outside.

"What???" Tensha and Xu both stood up, completely shocked as soon as they heard it.

"How can he be back so soon? Did he give up on studying our ancestral orb? Or did he get tempted by the orb of the banshee tribe?" Tensha muttered as he remembered what he told Long Chen before he was asked to exit.

"Whatever the reason is, it is good that he did not stay there for long. Now we have our opportunity," Xu replied when he heard Tensha.

"That is right! The gods are on our side!" Tensha said with a smile as he walked toward the exit with Xu.

"Master Chen! Welcome back! How come you are back so soon? I thought you would take longer," Tensha greeted Long Chen as soon as he entered the hall.

"I need you to bring me to the Banshee tribe." Long Chen straight away said looking at both of them.

"Of course, I will immediately make preparations for your departure if that is your wish," Tensha said with a smile as he heard Long Chen.

"You look unusually happy. Was I such a bad guest?" Long Chen couldn't help but ask as he saw both of them smiling.

"Not at all... You were the best guest anyone can hope for!" Tensha said without any delay.

"Whatever! How long will the journey to the banshee tribe take?" Long Chen brought the topic back as he asked.

"If you walk, it will take over twenty days, but with Elphia horses, you will reach there in just two days," Xu replied before Tensha could.

"I haven't met you before. Who might you be?" Long Chen asked with curiosity.

"I haven't had the fortune to meet great master Chen before. My name is Xu. I am the deputy chief of this tribe." Xu said with a smile.

"Oh, I have heard about your great reputation before! The deputy leader of the Elphia tribe and the second strongest person in the whole tribe. It is nice to finally meet you." Long Chen said, smiling.

"Anyways you have horses here? How are they useful in this deserted land? Can they run in the sand? Also, when I met terra before, he was walking and not riding a horse, why?"

"Well, It is embarrassing to say, but this son of mine does not know how to ride an Elphia horse. I tried teaching him many times, but he just couldn't. Whenever we travel on a horse, he sits behind me." Tensha replied as Terra gave an embarrassed look.

"And secondly, although Elphia horses can run in the desert, its speed wouldn't be much faster. But the thing is that there isn't any desert between us and the Banshee tribe. So it is easier and faster traveling by a horse," Tensha told Long Chen.

"Oh, it is good then. I will travel on an Elphia horse. Who will escort me as I don't know the direction?" Long Chen asked Tensha.

"I have a suggestion! That idiot son of mine would only be a burden in your travel and sending you with just guards would not do enough Justice to your prestige. How about I send Old Xu with you or I myself can come if you want?" Tensha suggested.

"You do not need to do that. You both should stay here and handle your work. I am sure that both of you have lots of responsibilities in this tribe. I can just go with some guards." Long Chen smiled as he said.

"Absolutely not! What will other tribes think of us if they see someone from our Savior's lineage was allowed to be escorted without someone special from our tribe by us? Great master Chen, if you do not want to be escorted by us old men, I can have Terra and my daughter escort you with a group of some of the best warriors of our tribe." Xu interjected as he looked seriously at Long Chen.

"Yup, that is a good suggestion. What are your thoughts, Master Chen? You can be escorted by old Xu or by terra and Xia. There is no third option." Tensha said, looking at Long Chen with a smile.

"Ahh, Alright. if you insist, I will accept the second suggestion. Have Terra accompany me." Long Chen gave up trying to convince them as he said.

"It's decided then!" Tensha smiled as he said.

"We will make all the preparations. When do you want to leave?" Xu asked Long Chen.

"As it is already pretty late today, and you still need the time to prepare everything I was thinking about tomorrow morning. I will be staying for the night here." Long Chen replied.

"Alright then. I won't take much of your precious time. Everything will be ready by the time you wake up Master Chen. Terra quickly escort master Chen to his room," Tensha said as he looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen soon exited the hall following Terra.

"Such great luck! He himself asked about leaving our tribe." A few minutes after Long Chen exited the hall, Tensha couldn't help but smile widely as he whispered to Xu.

"Of course, it is our ancestor's blessings! They want to see us become the strongest tribe." Xu said while laughing.

"Have you ever been to the Banshee tribe?" Long Chen asked Terra as he followed behind.

"Yup, I once went there with my father when I was a child. It has been so long since I have been there. It is going to be a good trip, finally going there again." Terra said without looking back.

"Can you tell me some things about it?" Long Chen inquired.

"It is an interesting place is all I can say. You will see when you get there." Terra said, smirking.

'Interesting description.' Long Chen thought in his mind.

"We are here. This is the best room in the whole mansion after my father's. You can spend the night here. There will be a maid standing outside the door the whole night for you. You can tell her if you need anything." Terra told Long Chen as he stopped in front of a door and pointed at the maid standing near the door in the hallway.

"Alright, I will see you in the morning. Goodnight," Long Chen said as he entered the room and closed the door.

Long Chen sat on the bed as he surveyed his surroundings with his divine sense. After finding nothing unordinary, he brought out the mysterious egg from his storage ring.

"Xun, you have been with Tian Shen before. You must know what is in this egg." Long Chen asked.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 62 - 62: Having A Treasure Trove

"Xun, you have been with Tian Shen since he received this bloodline before. You must know what is in this egg. Can you please tell me?" Long Chen asked as he continued sending his Qi to this egg as normal/

"It's a... The truth is that even I don't know." Xun replied to Long Chen.

"It has been with master since I came into existence. There was never a mention of what was inside," She said.

"Oh? It is that old? How come it still didn't hatch after such a long time? Did Tian Shen have any thoughts about what could be inside?" Long Chen inquired.

"No, he never even knew about this egg," Xun proclaimed.

"Why not? It was right there in this ring? Of course, he would know about it." Long Chen said seriously.

"Not exactly. He wasn't given access to the space dimension you have in your ring, so he never saw this egg. His space dimension was completely different, although they both reside in this same Ring." Xun explained.

"Haven't you ever wondered why someone like Tian Shen only had these few things in his storage ring?" She smirked as she said.

"The truth is that he had many treasures that could make the world go mad. And many of those are still in this ring, in his space dimension. But just like he couldn't access your space dimension, you can't access his space dimension either," She explained further.

"What the...?" Long Chen stood up as soon as he heard this secret, still having this egg in his hand.

"So I have a treasure trove that can cause envy amongst the strongest and I can't even access it?" Long Chen wanted to cry, but no tears came out.

"Oh, wait. Aren't you my cutest and strongest guardian Spirit as well as the treasure spirit of this ring? Wouldn't you help this poor one out? Just let me take a little peek" Long Chen said as he looked at Xun with a cute smile.

"Hah, you wish! Even if I wanted to, I can't do it as it is against the rules set by the master! You can't access another's space dimension unless certain criteria

are met." Xun said as she folded her arms around her small chest with a haughty look.

"What criteria?" Long Chen asked.

"Telling you that is restricted as well," Xun replied with a smirk.

"You... Alright. I will leave that for the future" Long Chen finally gave up as he didn't get an answer even after asking again and again.

Long Chen suddenly felt a slight movement inside this egg as he wanted to continue talking about another thing.

"Xun! I felt a movement inside!" His expressions changed as he looked at Xun with a shocked expression and said.

"You can't fool me! I am not a child like you. There hasn't been a movement in this egg all this while. You are just trying to prank me because I am not helping you." Xun said with a confident smile,

"But seriously! I am not lying! I think this little one is about to come out pretty soon! I really felt some movement inside," Long Chen said with great confidence as he kept supplying his Qi. But he felt no movement after that. He stopped like usual as soon as the egg stopped absorbing his Qi.

"I hope you come out soon little one." Long Chen mumbled while looking at this egg with a gentle smile.

After putting the egg back in his storage time, Long Chen started cultivating. He was pleasantly surprised as he noticed that his cultivation speed was way faster here than it was in the real world.

After cultivating for the whole night, he had directly jumped from the cultivation of the 6th stage Spirit Establishment to the advanced level of the 7th stage Spirit Establishment realm.

"Amazing! Cultivating In this world is so fast for me." Long Chen thought as he continued Cultivating,

Long Chen opened his eyes as he heard a knocking on the door before realizing that it was already morning.

"Master Long, everything is ready. Do you want to rest longer or depart now?" The voice of Tensha came from the outside.

'It is already morning huh, I didn't even realize it.' Long Chen thought as he got up from his bed.

"Give me half an hour, I will get ready really fast and will be outside in a bit," Long Chen said from the inside.

"Alright, take your time. I will wait for you in the main hall," Tensha said and walked back soon after.

Long Chen got ready, as he wore newer clothes that he was keeping inside his ring.

Long Chen left the room and entered the main hall after walking for a little while. He saw that there were five people sitting inside the room

"Let me introduce everyone. You already know old Xu and myself, and this stupid son of mine. This is Xia old Xu's daughter and this one here is Tia, one of our strongest guards. He will be the one leading the guards on your trip for your protection While Terra and Xia would be escorting you." Tensha introduced everyone.

"Hello everyone. Let me introduce myself again. My name is Long Chen. It is nice to meet everyone. Miss Xia, it's good to meet you again. I hope you selected a gift last time." Long Chen greeted everyone before saying to Xia.

"Yes, I did. Thanks for that," Xia replied with a smile.

"I can feel it's going to be a good journey." Terra laughed as he said.

"Let's depart now without any delay," Long Chen said without waiting any longer.

Everyone stood up and walked towards the exit.

"What the hell? This is not what I expected when they said a horse," Long Chen said with a weird look on his face when he saw Elphia horses standing outside.

This horse had two heads and 5 tails, which gave a weird impression to Long Chen. It was way taller than a normal horse, at an abnormal height of over two meters.

"Master Long, What's wrong. Can you ride an Elphia horse?" Xu noticed Long Chen's expression as he asked, worried that Long Chen might change his mind about leaving Elphia.

"Ahh, I actually know how to ride a normal horse, but I don't know how to ride that," Long Chen said as he pointed at this horse with a worried look.

"Oh, It's fine. We already made preparations for such a situation." Tensha said with a smile

"Since Terra can't ride one either, he can sit behind Tia, while you sit behind Xia." Tensha continued.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 63 - 63: Riding(★)

Long Chen departed from the tribe with his companions after bidding farewell to Tensha and Xu.

Long Chen was sitting behind Xia, holding his arms around her slim belly tightly, while the leader of the guards had Terra sitting behind him. They traveled only for a little while until Long Chen realized that although these horses looked different than a normal horse, disregarding the looks, they were pretty similar. Long Chen could feel that he could probably ride one if he attempted.

'Dammit, I should've sat behind someone else! How long can I control myself here?' Long Chen thought in his mind as he tried to control his thing from rising.

Long Chen had only been traveling for a little while, but since he was sitting right behind Xia and holding onto her belly firmly, his little sword was in constant contact with her butt and the fast galloping of the horse was making the situation even worse.

He tried distracting himself by thinking of boring things like mathematical problems that he wasn't able to solve, but these constant rubbing against her butt kept obstructing his thoughts.

'Ahh, here it goes' Long Chen thought as he finally couldn't control his little guy from rising and poking against her. Xia suddenly felt something hard poking her butt from behind as her expressions couldn't help but change.

"Ah, Master long. Isn't that inappropriate?" she said in a voice low enough that only Long Chen could hear. Although she never had a lover or had an experience. but she knew about these things in general. She immediately understood what it was. Long Chen couldn't see her expressions as he heard her say.

"Ah, I apologize. I am not doing it intentionally! Can you just stop the horse, I can sit behind Tia, and Terra can sit here." Long Chen said to her.

"No, it's fine. You don't need to change places with Terra In the middle of this journey. And I can't be sure if I will face the same with Terra. Also, people will wonder what happened," She said in a low voice with a shade of pink on her face without turning back.

"Ah, alright. It'll go away soon... Probably." Long Chen said but his last word was almost inaudible even to himself.

Long Chen kept his hands wrapped around her as he did not want to fall, while his sword kept attacking her butt throughout the journey. Neither Xia nor Long Chen said a word after their initial exchange throughout the distance they traveled. Even Long Chen himself didn't know if he was enjoying the experience of their touch more or being tortured by it/

"Miss Xia, Can you stop for a minute. Allow me to sit at the front as I don't think this thing is going to go down anytime soon if I sit here. Also, I want to give this horse a try?" Long Chen told Xia as she was concentrating on the path ahead.

"Oh? You want to ride it? Is riding me throughout this journey, not enough for you anymore?" She said in a joke-like tone but inside she knew that she didn't want Long Chen to come to the front as she was also starting to enjoy the feeling of Long Chen's little guy rubbing against her. She had already started moving her hips against his little guy more while galloping, acting oblivious.

"Miss Xia must be joking. Anyways jokes aside, I wanted to give horse riding a try. I feel like I can do it." Long Chen said, smiling.

"Oh? How about you give it a try while sitting behind me? If you can control him for a little while, I will allow you to sit at the front." Xia told Long Chen.

"I can't even see what's ahead from here. I don't think I will be able to control it efficiently without being at the front." Long Chen said seriously.

"It's fine. There is nothing in front of us for over a mile. You can give it a try. I can stop this horse if I see an obstruction." Xia insisted.

"Alright, I will give it a try then," Long Chen said as he removed one of his hands from her slim tummy and held onto the reign of the horse. His hand touched her hands as he grabbed the reins. After grabbing with one hand, he removed his second hand as he grabbed the reins from that as well.

Xia withdrew her hands from the reins, allowing Long Chen to take full control of the horse as she just sat there looking ahead.

Others discovered Long Chen clutching the reins of the horse from behind, as he stuck close to Xia, but no one thought much of it. They just felt like Long

Chen was trying to gain horse riding experience, so it was normal. Everyone soon stopped looking in their direction as they continued.

Long Chen's hands kept brushing against Xia's breasts with each galloping of the horse, to which she said nothing. Sometimes even intentionally moving her chest forward, hoping for more contact.

"I think it is enough. Can I sit in the front now?" Long Chen asked again after riding for over a mile, breaking the silence.

"Ah, alright." She accepted as she had no reason to refuse anymore.

Xia stopped the horse, and with her, everyone else around her stopped as well/

"What happened? Why did you stop? Are you already tired?" Terra asked laughing as he sat behind Tia.

"You know I am not as weak as you, right?" Xia replied looking at terra

"It is just to allow Master Chen to sit in the front as he wanted to ride the horse for the rest of the journey," She told everyone.

Long Chen and Xia soon switched positions as everyone continued on their journey.

But things didn't improve much as Long Chen was again forced into a terrible situation. Unlike before, now it was Xia who was holding onto him. She was sticking so close to him that Long Chen could feel her chest against his back.

Although it troubled him as well, what made Long Chen's expressions change was something else entirely. It was because he saw what was ahead of him.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 64 - 64: Meeting The Queen

Long Chen saw a small river blocking their path which made him stop. This River was around 5 meters wide which obstructed their path ahead.

"How can we cross it?" Long Chen asked Xia.

"Simple! Just make the horse jump to the other side." Xia said, smiling.

"Are you crazy?" Long Chen couldn't help but say.

"Don't worry. It's pretty easy for an Elphia horse. We have traveled like this many times. But if you don't want to cross this river using this method, there is another method. There is a bridge which we can reach in just three days of time and cross this river from there. But that will increase our journey duration from two days to eight days." Xia explained.

"I do not have that much time to waste. Are you sure this horse can cross this river?" Long Chen inquired.

"I am two hundred percent sure! Let me handle it for a while," Xia said as she grabbed the reins and made the horse run towards the river. Just as it was at the edge of the river, it jumped.

Long Chen could feel like time had stopped for a moment when he was in the air at the center of this river but this sensation disappeared in the blink of an eye as their horse landed on the other side.

"Amazing! It was really good." Long Chen said smiling soon Tia and the others landed on the other side of the river as well.

As the sky turned dark, they all chose a place to stop and to set up their camp. In just half an hour their camp was set up.

Everyone sat together as they all took out the food they had prepared for this journey and started eating.

"Master Chen! Here's some for you." Xia offered him a portion as she noticed Long Chen eating nothing. Long Chen immediately refused her in a kind manner giving the excuse that he wasn't hungry.

They all entered their tent after eating, including Long Chen. Long Chen started feeding his egg, after which he started cultivation as he wanted to utilize the increase in his cultivation speed due to this environment.

Long Chen cultivated for half a night and reached mid-level of 8th strange of Spirit Establishment realm. Long Chen decided to sleep after that, as he hadn't slept last night either due to cultivation.

Morning arrived, and everyone continued on their journey for the day. Long Chen enjoyed the rush of wind on his face as he was controlling the horse this time as well but since now he had gained some experience with the Elphia horse, he was better than he was yesterday. They kept traveling at full speed with Long Chen in the lead and Xia guiding Long Chen about the direction to take.

After traveling for over ten hours, Long Chen could see the boundary of a tribe, made with white stone-like material. To Long Chen, it looked better and stronger than the boundary of the Elphia tribe.

Long Chen stopped in front of the gates with the other stopping right behind him as they got down getting their horses. Long Chen saw two kids standing at the door. There were two girls who looked 12-14 and were dressed in white clothes looking at Long Chen with a shocked expression. They had completely white-hair, but that didn't make them look weird, instead, it somehow looked even better on them.

"Little girls, what are you doing at the doors? Where are your parents and the guards?" Long Chen asked as he looked at them.

"Master Chen, they are the guards here?" Xia said in a low voice.

"Guards? How can the Banshee tribe keep little kids as guards? Or is it that I'm missing something?" Long Chen said with a confused expression.

"Ah... Master Chen... They may look like kids, but they are probably as old as my father." Xia told Long Chen.

"My greeting to both of you! I am Xia, the daughter of deputy chief Xu from the Elphia tribe and this is Terra, son of the tribe leader. We are here to bring Master Chen to meet your queen." Xia told both of them as she pointed towards Long Chen, but she saw Long Chen not looking in her direction in the slightest. She could see that he was distracted looking at an empty spot.

"Banshee tribe is a special tribe just like the Elphia tribe. You already know the special features of the Elphia tribe and the banshee tribe is unique on its own as well. They all have white hair and look to be around 10-18 years old, but their actual age is totally different. You can meet some 80-year-old girl who'll

look just like a 10-year-old. So they can't be judged from their looks." Xun explained to Long Chen as she appeared near him.

"Interesting. Thanks for the info." Long Chen mumbled as he looked back towards the gate.

He saw that Xia was already coming back after talking to both of the guards.

"Let's go. We are allowed entry." Xia said with a smile. All of them climbed back on the horses as they entered the tribe after the doors were opened under the guidance of the guards.

Amidst the strange looks of the crowd, they were brought to a palace at the center of the tribe. This palace looked similar to the Royal Palace and was completely white in color with no blemishes on the outer wall. Long Chen could see that this whole tribe was pretty luxurious, whereas Elphia was more modest in their living standards.

"Hmph, show-offs." Xia couldn't help but mutter under her breath as she arrived in front of the palace.

Long Chen and others were welcomed by two young girls dressed as maids who brought them towards a large hall. Long Chen noticed that this Hall was filled with many people and a large throne was placed at the end of this Hall, where a young girl was sitting with a curious expression looking at Long Chen. She didn't stand up even when she saw Long Chen unlike the tribe leader of Elphia, Tensha.

"You are actually a human. Interesting, a human appeared in the Elphia tribe and even I didn't know about it. You people are becoming better at hiding things, aren't you?" She said smiling.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 65 - 65: Farewell

"Greetings to you Queen Mia," Xia and others said as they all greeted her. Except Long Chen who just stood there silently looking at her.

"Also about your earlier statement, I am sure that you must be jesting as you already know that we are an honest tribe, unlike some other dishonest ones," Xia said with a smile.

"Oh, of course, I know all about you people." The girl sitting on the throne said with a smile.

"Answer me one thing. Since this human arrived here with you that means people from Elphia met him first. So my question is why did you all bring him here to my empire?" Queen asked as looking at Xia.

"There is no mystery behind it Queen Mia. Master Chen arrived in our tribe 3 days ago and we all welcomed him with open arms. He studied about this world and our history from the books and roamed around the tribe during the day. After that he told us that He wished to visit your tribe and so we brought him here." Xia explained to her what she was told by her father to say.

"Our tribe? We have an empire, not a tribe!" The Queen said with a serious look.

"Anyways I do believe your story somewhat. Anyone would get bored of that tribe of yours in a single day. It's not as good as our empire." The queen changed the topic as she said with a confident smile.

"A tribe doesn't have to be luxurious or complicated to be good. We quite like the way it is." Xia said, trying to control her voice from showing any anger.

"Isn't that little Terra? You have grown quite big since the last time I saw you. Why aren't you saying anything? It feels like she's the daughter of Elphia leader instead of you being the son of him," she ignored Xia as she turned her attention to Terra and asked.

"There's nothing wrong with it, your highness. She's the successor of her father's position and You know I'm not the one next in line for succession of my father's position, it's my elder brother and he's pretty talkative. I will tell him to visit next time." Terra replied, as he understood her meaning.

'She's quite arrogant, isn't she? I am finding her nature to be quite repulsive. If I could, I would like to stay away from people like her.' Long Chen thought as he heard their conversation.

"True, but I do not want to talk to your brother. I don't quite like him. He is quite a scheming person." Queen Mia replied.

"What is your name?" Without waiting for Terra's response, Queen Mia finally said looking at Long Chen.

"My name is Long Chen. It's good to meet you Queen Mia." Long Chen replied.

"Likewise! I am the queen of this empire. You can address me as Queen Mia or your highness." Queen Mia told Long Chen.

"Since we already brought Master Chen here and completed what we set out to do, it's time for us to depart," Xia said to the queen with a slight smile.

"Don't be in such a hurry little girl. It will be night pretty soon and you'll have to set up a tent. Just stay the night here. Spending the night at our palace is much better than spending the night in the wild." Mia told her as she heard Xia's statement about returning.

"Huh, although she is pretty arrogant and her words are sharp, she is not totally evil.' Long Chen thought as he smiled.

"Bring them to the guest quarters," Mia told their maids as she pointed towards the exit.

"Queen Mia, Can I talk to you in private for a moment?" Long Chen asked as the maids came forward to escort him.

"We can talk in the morning, I am very tired today. You must be tired as well after such a long journey." Queen Mia replied as she walked out of the hall.

"But..." Before Long Chen could reply she had already exited.

"Tomorrow then," Long Chen muttered to himself as he followed the maid towards guest quarters. Long Chen was amazed about how big this palace was as he passed by over 50 rooms to reach the room he was supposed to stay at. Xia and the others were given separate rooms as well but they were closer to the main hall.

"She is different than Tensha and way presumptuous. Will she allow me to access their orb? It is going to be a challenge getting her permission." Long Chen muttered to himself as he lied on the bed.

"Why are you worrying about it? If she doesn't give it to you, you can just take it." Xun appeared near him as she said.

"I am not going to steal their orb." Long Chen said to her.

"It's not stealing as all these orbs are already yours. They are all here just for you." she said with a deep meaning in her eyes.

"Whatever, we will talk about it when she actually denies me," Long Chen said as he ended the conversation.

Long Chen started his Cultivation for the night after he finished feeding his egg using his qi. After half a night of hard work, Long Chen went to sleep happy as he already broke through to the Initial level of the 9th stage Spirit Establishment realm.

Day arrived, and just as long Chen woke up, he heard knocking on the door. He got dressed quickly as he opened the door and found Xia, Terra and the whole entourage standing outside.

"Are you all leaving right now?" Long Chen asked.

"Right Master Long, we are departing and we did not want to depart without saying goodbye to you." Xia smilingly said.

"These two days of journey with you were some of the best experiences I had. I really enjoyed our trip and I would like to thank you for accompanying me throughout. Here is a gift for all of you. I was told that it is pretty expensive." Long Chen said as he handed out a bronze coin to guard Captain Tia and his team.

"Nothing for us?" Terra couldn't help but ask.

"I have something even better for the both of you," Long Chen told them.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 66 - 66 : Let's Steal It

"What gift?" Xia asked Long Chen.

"These are some gifts for the both of you," Long Chen said as two silver coins appeared in his hands which he gave to both, Xia and Terra.

"Stunning!! These silver ones are even prettier than those bronze coins." Xia couldn't help but exclaim.

"Of course they will be, as they are more expensive coins than the bronze ones." Long Chen replied.

"Fascinating. You people have different types of coins amongst yourselves? Shouldn't having a single currency be better?" Terra said as he intervened.

"That's not what's important, is it?" Long Chen couldn't help but say as he didn't feel like explaining.

"Thanks for the gift Master Long. We enjoyed the journey as well. I apologize that we don't have anything good to offer you but we will leave our Elphia horse here for you. So that if you need anything in the future, you can always come to our tribe." Xia replied as she thanked him, unknown to the fact that her father would probably die of anger if he heard that she invited Long Chen back to the tribe.

"Exactly! Our doors will always be open for you." Terra agreed as well.

"Thank you for your offer. I will definitely come there in the future." Long Chen said with a smile.

"Goodbye master Chen! I hope that we will meet again." Xia said as she bid her final farewell and left with others.

"Can you tell your queen that I want to meet her alone? Tell her that I have something important to talk about." Long Chen said to the maid standing near the door. After telling her, Long Chen went inside the room as he took a shower and waited for the response after getting ready and wearing a new set of clothes.

After half an hour, a knock was heard on the door. As Long Chen opened the door, the maid informed him that the queen had agreed to his request and told her to bring him to her.

Long Chen followed the maid. As he was walking, a little white-haired boy was coming from the opposite direction.

"Greetings your highness." As soon as the boy reached near him, the maid bowed to the boy as she said that.

"You are human! Wow, I couldn't believe when I heard that a human arrived in our tribe! I have read all about the legends of Great master Tian Shen and I am fascinated every time I read it! Master Tian Shen is my idol!! I can't believe I met a human." That man ignored the maid's greetings as he held Long Chen's hands and said with a bright shine in his eyes/

"It is nice to meet you as well. Are you Queen Mia's husband? The king of this tribe?" Long Chen asked.

"Oh, no no no! I can't be Aunt Mia's husband! It would be immoral if that happened! I am her nephew Alton." Alton replied hurriedly.

"Oh right, why weren't you there in the Great Hall yesterday. I didn't see you there?" Long Chen asked/

"I don't know why, but I wasn't informed about you appearing in our palace by aunt Mia or anyone near me! But I accidentally heard someone talking about it today, and then I found out everything after inquiring, I was just coming to your room to meet you." Alton said with enthusiasm.

'I think I can understand why she didn't tell you. You're such a fanboy of humans. If you were there, you would've spoiled all her high and mighty performance.' Long Chen thought as he smiled.

"Let's go to my room! I want to talk to you more." Alton said to Long Chen.

"I apologize Alton, but I have a meeting with your aunt right now. I will come find you later. I should be going now." Long Chen replied as he left.

"Ok," Alton replied with a dull expression as he watched Long Chen walk away.

Long Chen was walking in this long corridor behind the maid, and soon he was brought to a big room. Long Chen could see that a long table was placed at the center of this room, with two chairs placed opposite sides of the table. Queen Mia was sitting on one of them. Long Chen could see that her chair was higher than his.

'Is she intentionally trying to undermine me?' Long Chen thought as he walked ahead and sat on the other chair.

"What did you want to talk about?" Queen Mia asked.

"Queen Mia, I wanted to ask you about something. You know the orb of the Barong tribe that my ancestor studied, right? I heard that it's with you right now. I just want to study it for a little bit of time. Will you allow me this much?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"It used to be the Barong tribe's orb, but now it's mine! Why should I allow you to even go near it?" She asked in a serious tone.

"Queen Mia, you know my ancestor saved this world and all the tribes in it. Can't you show this Much gratitude to him and allow someone from his future generation to study a single orb?" Long Chen said with an upset look.

'Huh, Tian Shen, your ancestor? At least you're becoming better at lying.' Xun commented on the sidelines.

"Hahaha, you are right! He saved a lot of tribes and this world. But what Great Master Shen did has nothing to do with you, does it? Even if he is your ancestor, I owe my gratitude to him, not to you! You weren't the one to save us, and you did nothing good for our empire or any tribe. I don't see any reason I should show you gratitude and allow you to access our orb." Queen Mia said looking at Long Chen as she laughed.

"Why are you against it? I don't think you will gain anything by denying me or lose anything by allowing me." Long Chen said looking at her.

"Well... I can allow you to have access to our orb if you agree to one of my conditions," Queen Mia continued.

"What condition?" Long Chen asked.

I read in the books that Great master Tian Shen was able to fly using wings. Tell me the secret of the wings of humans! I think that you use some secret method to make those wings as according to the legends, they always disappeared after Tian Shen willed them too. Since you are from his lineage, you must know its secret as well. Tell me the method to form those wings and I will allow you to go near our orb." Queen Mia explained to Long Chen about her desires/

"Hah... So that's why you aren't allowing me access? Aren't you afraid that I'll destroy your tribe if you are this greedy?" Long Chen said with a serious look/

"I don't think you can! I saw the portrait of master Shen and after seeing you, I know that humans aren't like us whose looks halt at a certain age. As far as I can judge, you are way younger than he was. He was strong enough to slaughter monster tribe on his own, but that doesn't mean you are that strong as well. Considering the difference in your age, I'd guess that you are weaker than him." She replied with a smile.

"I never judged you to be this stupid. Do you want to give my strength a try?" Long Chen said as he stood up and looked into her eyes and released some of his aura.

"I don't want to fight someone from our Savior's lineage. I didn't invite you here to fight, just enjoy the breakfast," she said as breakfast was brought in by the maids.

"I will be going now, as I have things to do. But you should think about my offer. It's way better than fighting. Don't let your arrogance blind you." Mia said as she exited the hall.

"I hope that you won't regret this decision of yours," Long Chen thought as he left the food lying there as he exited this place as well and entered his room.

"Xun! We are stealing that thing." Long Chen said as he closed the doors.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 67 - 67:Commencing Plan A

"Hahaha. Finally spoken like a true man! So, how are you going to steal it?" Xun laughed as she asked.

"I am sure the location where they keep the orb will be heavily guarded. Openly infiltrating will be equal to declaring war on them. I would keep that as our last resort," Long Chen said.

"As for plan A, I will use a slightly different method. If any complication occurs or the plan fails, we can use force and take the orb when we leave this place. But I hope it won't come to that," Long Chen told Xun as he lay and stared at the ceiling.

"Aren't you making things unnecessarily complicated? There's no need for plan A; I like the second one better. Just thrash them!" Xun tried to convince.

"I am not afraid to fight, but I have two reasons to not declare war immediately. Firstly, Plan A is not only easier but faster than fighting the whole tribe. It won't leave a blemish on our reputation, either," Long Chen replied.

"Secondly, I am unaware of their strength. Without assessing and knowing your opponent, declaring war is like walking to your death. I can escape using Heavenly Demon Wings if I can't defeat them, but I don't want to run away if odds are not in our favor. But if there is a need for it, we will cause an explosion in this place," Long Chen smiled as he said.

"You still have a lot to learn. But I am interested to know how this will end. What is your Plan A?"

"It's pretty simple. Mia's beloved nephew, Alton, will be the key to my success," Long Chen said with a smirk.

"I know that he admires you, but I doubt he'd steal his tribe's orb for you," Xun said to Long Chen.

"Hah! Alton won't be the thief, but he will be the one who steals it," Long Chen said with a smile.

"I don't quite understand your meaning," Xun said, confused.

"You will understand very soon. But now, it's time to get to work," Long Chen replied.

"Tell Prince Alton that I am free to meet him now. Since I promised to talk to him, after I have conversed with the Queen, I'll fulfil on my promise," Long Chen said to the maid standing outside the door.

She was the same maid who had escorted Long Chen to the Queen and overheard Prince Alton's conversation. She immediately left and returned after a few minutes. No sooner had Long Chen opened the door than he saw her standing behind Alton.

'That idiot! Already spoiling my plans. Couldn't he just stay in his room and allow me to come?' Long Chen thought, disappointed.

"Prince Alton, why are you here? I was supposed to meet you, not the other way around," Long Chen asked Alton.

"As soon as I heard you wanted to meet me, I grew so eager that I could not wait and rushed to you," Alton replied.

"It's good. Come on inside," Long Chen invited him in. Alton entered the room, but the maid remained stationary outside as Long Chen closed the doors.

"Have a seat," Long Chen told Alton.

"Master Long, do you like this room? If you don't like it, I can arrange for a better room for you," Alton said as he sat on the chair.

"There is no need for that, Prince Alton. I quite like this place. It is really amazing. I can only imagine how great the royal quarters are if the guest quarters look like this," Long Chen said with a thoughtful expression.

"Of course, they are better! Do you want to see? I have the second-best room in this palace; the first belongs to my aunt. Although I can't bring you to my aunt's room, I can show you mine!" Alton replied with great enthusiasm.

"Sure, let's go then. We can talk on the way." Before Alton could fathom what Long Chen had said, he saw Long Chen already standing at the doors. He hastily got up and caught up to him as they exited the room.

"Prince Alton, you said that Queen Mia has the best room, while you have the second-best room in the palace. Then what about your father and mother?" Long Chen asked as they walked down the corridor.

"They are not in this world any longer. They died a few years after I was born," Alton replied with a sad smile.

"I am sorry for your loss," Long Chen said.

"Thank you. It happened years ago," Alton replied.

"So, you stay in your parents' living quarters?" Long Chen asked.

"No, they resided in the Queen's room. You see, my mother was the queen and she died. Aunt Mia ascended the throne after her, so she stays in that room now," Prince Alton explained.

"We are here. That's my room. Let's get inside," Alton suddenly said, interrupting Long Chen's train of thoughts.

Alton and Long Chen entered the room. Long Chen understood why Alton made this room sound so grand.

Long Chen saw that the room was more like a hall in a small house. Seeing the four doors, he could understand that this main space was attached to four separate rooms. The walls were covered in beautiful murals, making it look regal.

"Let me give you a tour of my room! This is the storage room, where I keep the stuff I collected." Alton opened the first door and showed Long Chen inside the room. The room was filled with shelves and boxes, but Long Chen was disinterested. He had another goal in his mind and he didn't want to waste his time.

"This is my bedroom. And that's my bed and others stuff!" Alton showed Long Chen the second room. Long Chen's praise made Alton even happier.

"I keep my clothes and accessories in this third room," Alton said as he guided Long Chen into the room. After exploring inside for a while, they exited the room and sat on the chairs in the hall.

"Master Chen, what do you think about my room?" Alton asked.

"It is really good. Actually, it is better than mine!" Long Chen said.

"I can get you a room like this if you wish! It's only slightly smaller in size than mine!" Alton said.

"It's fine. I'm quite happy in the guest quarters," Long Chen replied.

"If that's what you want, I respect your wishes. Oh right! Can you tell me more about the legendary place humans live in? There's not any mention about it in any of the records," Alton asked.

"Oh, we humans live in a secret place in your world and don't like to be disturbed, so I can't tell you where that place is. But I can tell you some things about it. There are many countries there: some big and some small; but even the smallest country is larger than your empire," Long Chen supplied some vague information that Alton listened to attentively.

After talking for over an hour, Long Chen left Alton's room and went back to his own.

"I thought you were going there to convince him to steal the orb? You didn't do anything of the sort. Instead, you stole something from him. Why?" Xun asked, perplexed as he watched Long Chen sit on the edge of the bed.

Long Chen looked at her with a smile as he told her...

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 68 - 68: Crazy Breakthrough

"I assumed you were going there to convince him to steal the orb? But you didn't do anything like that, instead, you stole something from him. Why?" Xun asked with a baffled expression as Long Chen relaxed on the bed.

"Nope, I didn't steal anything. I only borrowed some items. You saw what I borrowed from his room, right?" Long Chen glanced at her with a smile as he said.

"Yes, I saw it! While he showed you his clothes and accessories, you distracted him and placed a set of his clothes in your storage ring! You did the same for a pair of his shoes. Although he has enough clothes that he will never notice, I don't understand your reasoning," Xun said to Long Chen.

"It is actually very simple. You remember this, right?" Long Chen asked as he retrieved an object from his storage ring and revealed it to Xun.

"Of course, it is the Mask of Mischief you found," Xun said as she saw the mask in Long Chen's hands. She remembered that Long Chen had found it in the pond after killing Long Su.

"But what does it have to do with—oh! I understand now," she stopped midway as understanding dawned and she chuckled.

"It is good that you understand. At least you are smarter than you look," Long Chen said with a slight laugh.

"Of course, I am smarter than I look... Wait a minute... Did you just say that I look stupid?" she asked with an irritated look on her face.

"No, I mean that you look smart, but in reality, you're even smarter," Long Chen replied with a smile.

"Oh, it's good then," Xun said with a giggle.

"Since everything is ready, let's go steal it fast," Xun suggested.

"Not yet. The preparation has not yet finished," Long Chen replied.

"What's left to complete?" Xun asked.

"Strength! I need to become stronger and break through the Gold Core Realm! This world's Qi is really beneficial to me, and I am sure that I can breakthrough in a short amount of time," Long Chen told Xun.

"If you say so. I guess a short delay won't disrupt our plans," Xun stated.

Long Chen finished chatting and started cultivating. He cultivated for just over a day and had already reached the peak of the 9th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm.

Just as he reached the peak, Long Chen noticed that his Martial Soul had, once again, changed a little. It became completely identical to Long Chen to the very last details.

The golden armor shined lustrously on its body, while the sword in its hands exuded destructive energy. The eyes of his martial soul were still closed. Long Chen noted that he had never seen the Martial Soul's eyes, but had assumed that it would be golden like his.

'Finally, I have completed Spirit Establishment Realm. Time to take the next step in cultivation and breakthrough to the Gold Core Realm,' Long Chen thought.

Long Chen was about to continue cultivating, when he remembered that he had to feed his Qi to the egg. Long Chen retrieved it immediately from his space ring and transferred his Qi to the egg.

'It happened again!' Long Chen thought as he suddenly felt the egg pulse.

'No need to waste time telling Xun as she wouldn't believe me anyway.' Long Chen decided as he recalled her response when he informed her the first time.

Though the egg ceased absorbing his Qi, Long Chen didn't put it away. He looked at it carefully, trying to see if there were any changes. But he couldn't see any differences. He finally put it back inside the ring and decided to return to cultivating.

Long Chen knew that the Gold Core Realm—as the name suggested, consisted of forming a golden core inside one's body. This golden core was formed inside the Martial Space of a cultivator and the Martial Space was where the Martial Soul resided. This space was only formed when someone first formed their Martial Soul. It was said that the quality of the Martial Soul and Martial Space affected how the golden core formed.

Long Chen resumed his cultivation, and after a short period of time, he finally saw a speck of light appearing in his Martial Space, which kept increasing in size with time.

Long Chen could see that the Qi in the atmosphere was entering his body and disappearing inside this light. Long Chen didn't know what it was as the color of this light was completely red, unlike the golden core that should have formed.

He thought about stopping and asking Xun about this phenomenon but dropped the idea because he felt that stopping at this stage was dangerous. There was a possibility that it might destroy his foundation if he held back.

This process continued for a long time. It had been two days since the red speck of light first appeared and an exorbitant amount of Qi had continually been absorbed by this speck of light. After two days of continuous absorption, this speck of light, which was only the size of a dust particle at first, had already increased by countless times and kept expanding.

At first, the red speck of light was absorbed Qi from a 100-meter-wide area around Long Chen. Then, it kept increasing—going from a hundred meters to a kilometer, and then ten. Now, it covered a hundred kilometers around Long Chen and the Qi in the atmosphere thinned.

Queen Mia had already sensed something wrong when she began her cultivation. She could see a sharp decrease in her cultivation speed and it grew worse as time passed. After a day, she was going crazy as she wondered what was wrong.

When she tried cultivating, no Qi was absorbed into her body. She couldn't think of a reason why it was happening. She could not see the direction the Qi was actually travelling in. Otherwise, she would have known that it headed towards Long Chen's direction.

It was doubtful what her reaction would be.

This phenomenon continued for five more days before stopping.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 69 - 69 : Monster City

Thousands of kilometers away from the Banshee tribe was a beautiful city of thousands of beautiful houses, all made from the same material that the Banshee tribe used. The only difference was the color—a deep black. The city was filled with beautiful trees, as well.

The city was at least five times larger than the Banshee tribe and was protected by 10 kilometers of forested area on all sides. The existence of this city was a mystery from the other tribes. No one knew that within these dark forests lay such a magnificent city.

This was where the Monster tribe resided in. While the weaker monsters lived on the outskirts of the city, the truly strong ones resided at the center. Apart from the Monster tribe, no one else has stepped into this city.

When the tribe was at its weakest after the Great War and faced the massacre of Tian Shen, the remainder of the tribe escaped to the bowels of the forest.

Tian Shen didn't bother going after them and left this world, having completed his test. But other tribes sent squadrons of strong warriors in the hopes of utilizing the Monster tribe's misfortune and taking away their valuable resources and conquering their territory. Yet none of them returned alive. Instead of utilizing their full forces to infiltrate the Monster tribe, the other tribes grew wary of the unknown and backed away.

After thousands of years, this tribe had regained most of its strength.

It was the fourth day after Long Chen began cultivating to break through the Gold Core Realm.

A towering palace stood at the center of the Monster City. Inside the Great Hall, a meeting took place. Ten thrones were placed in a circle and on each sat the Monster Kings of the tribe.

"Old Tiger, why did you call a meeting in such a hurry? I had to leave the embrace of my concubine to attend! You better have a good reason," one of the monsters said as he looked fiercely at the Monster King sitting in front of him. This monster had the head of a bull and a humanoid body filled with sinuous muscles. Even as he sat, he was well over seven feet tall.

"I agree with Big Bull. I don't think there can be any matter that needs all ten of us present. Unless you want a life-or-death fight with one of the other

Monster Kings, you can handle all other matters on your own," said a black skeleton.

"Do you think your time is more important than mine? I'm not sitting idle at home, waiting to hold a meeting for fun! Of course, this matter is of great urgency. In fact, I would say that we need to inform the Monster Emperors about it, as well. I can only do that if all ten of us consider this matter important!" Said the Bull king, referred to as old Tiger. He had the head of a black tiger and a humanoid body just like the bull king. His body was covered in black fur.

After they heard Tiger King's words, everyone appraised him with a serious expression.

"What happened?" Asked the Skeleton King with a heavy voice.

"You must remember the calamity we faced during the Great War, right? It brought our tribe to the brink of extinction! Almost all of the Monster Kings and Monster Emperors were slaughtered by the human who appeared out of nowhere," Tiger King said.

"If one of our Monster Emperors hadn't stayed behind in our territory while the rest of the tribe went to war, the rest of the monsters who escaped the slaughter would have been killed by the coalitions. Monster Emperor Adolt, is the reason why we were able to kill the infiltrators and warned the rest from future invasions," Bull King said, his voice filled with emotions.

"Right! It was a good thing that the Human disappeared and didn't kill the survivors of our tribe. Otherwise, we wouldn't be sitting here now," Tiger King replied.

"Why are you bringing that up now? Is there a conspiracy to infiltrate our tribe again?" Asked one of the Monster Kings.

"It can't be. They aren't stupid enough to attack us when we're back to our full strengths," another Monster King chimed in.

"Exactly! We shouldn't be concerned about an attempt to group together as we can easily wipe them out. Old Tiger wouldn't waste our time on such a matter. It's not even worth our concern," Bull King affirmed.

"What I am about to say is more important! I just received information that a human was spotted in this world. He was seen entering the Land of Banshee!" Old Tiger exclaimed.

Everyone leaped to their feet in shock when they heard the Tiger King's words.

"Is he the same as the one before?" Skeleton King asked in a heavy tone.

"No, I was informed by my general that the human this time, although had the same build, was shorter and looked younger compared to the portraits of the human we faced during the Great War! We have an image of him in this Imaging Crystal. I think he's probably a little kid amongst humans," Old Tiger said as he showed everyone the image of Long Chen.

"How did your general know about him, and what was he doing outside the Land of Banshee?" Asked a Monster King, who looked like a bear but had the horns of a goat.

"He was returning from a mission that I assigned to him. While he was passing by the Banshee tribe, he spotted the human entering the tribe with some members of the Elphia tribe! Soon after, he spotted members of the Elphia tribe exit, while the human stayed behind. The general waited for two days, and when the human didn't come out, sent his trusted subordinate to inform me while he kept watch. He sent this Imaging Crystal as proof," Old Tiger explained.

"Now, I need your opinion on what we should do," Old Tiger said loudly.

"This matter is of great importance. I agree that we need to inform the Monster Emperors," Bull King said.

Everyone agreed that was the best course of action. When they left the hall, they walked towards a certain direction.

They left the palace towards a shabby house at the end of the city. They stood at the door and before they could knock, a deep voice came from inside, "Since you're all here, come on inside. Something significant must have happened to make you finally visit this old man."

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 70 - 70 : Monster Emperor

Tiger King pushed the door open. The Monster Kings saw someone sitting on the ground. They could be described as a tall and bony humanoid creature with disproportionately long limbs. As it squatted down, its bent knees reached over its head. He also had the head and feet of a horse.

"Emperor Balang, we have something urgent to discuss with you," Bull King said immediately.

"I know you do, or you wouldn't come to me. Tell me what happened," Balang said slowly.

"Emperor Balang, another human has appeared in our world! This is what he looks like," Tiger King said before he showed the Monster Emperor Balang the image of Long Tian. Monster Emperor Balang's eyes couldn't help but widen at this news. He looked at the image for a second before returning to normal before anyone could see.

"We know the human is a child compared to Tian Shen, so he can't be as strong. In the short term, he poses no danger to us, but we want the Monster Emperors to tell us what we should do!" Skeleton King said to Monster Emperor Balang in a low voice.

"Where is he right now?" The Monster Emperor asked, gazing at them.

"He is presently living with the Banshee tribe. The last we heard, he had been there for three days. He will probably stay for longer," Tiger King replied.

"All of you can leave now. I will talk to the others about this matter and come to a decision. Until then, don't let anyone else find out about this matter. I don't want unnecessary panic on our land," Balang told them. Soon, they filtered out of the house to go back to the palace, leaving Monster Emperor Balang alone.

"Another human has appeared after so long. It can either be good for us or a disaster. It depends on our choices and the human's decisions," Monster Emperor Balang muttered to himself as he stood up.

When he stood, he was over three meters tall. He was said to be one of the tallest monsters in the tribe. He walked out of the house and stood at the brink of the forest.

"Old friend, I know you don't like to be disturbed, but it is time I wake you up from your slumber. But first, I'll talk to him and bring old Shentia with me," Monster Emperor Balang muttered to himself before he stepped into the forest.

He walked for ten minutes before he reached the opening of a cave.

"Old Shentia? Aren't you going to invite me in?" Monster Emperor Balang shouted.

"Hahaha. Old Balang, even if I invite you, can you enter? I intentionally made the entrance of his cave small so that you old fogies can't disturb my peace." A heavy laugh could be heard from inside the cave. After a few minutes, someone finally emerged from inside.

He had a humanoid shape, with bowed legs, and long arms of varying size. His body was muscular and he had two prominent fangs peeping from between his lips. His facial features looked like the combination of an ape and a pig. His skin was a light grey, making him look ashen and weary. He carried a large hammer in his hands.

"I have always wondered why you prefer living in the forest when you could easily stay in the city," Monster Emperor Balang inquired.

"I don't find the city better. In fact, I like how peaceful and calm it is here compared to the city," Monster Emperor Shentia replied.

"But it is too peaceful! You don't know what troubles we are facing right now," Monster Emperor Balang said with a slight smile.

"Hahaha. Aren't you staying in the city to keep an eye on what's happening? I am sure that you would inform me if something important happened. Isn't that why you are here today, old man?" Monster Emperor Shentia laughed as he spoke.

"Of course, while the two of you enjoy your life, I am stuck keeping an eye on our tribe! But that is not important. A human was discovered in our world and he is staying with the Banshee tribe. We need to wake Taras from his sleep," Monster Emperor Balang seriously.

"I agree with you. Let's go wake that fella up. He had slept for a long time," Monster Emperor Shentia uttered as he got out from his cave.

They stood before a humongous stone half an hour later.

Monster Emperor Shentia shoved the stone away with one of his hands, revealing the entrance of a deep tunnel below. They entered the tunnel and found their way through various branches of the tunnel. Finally, they reached an open clearing underground that was at least a kilometer wide, the ceiling twenty meters from the floor. A creature lay inside the tunnel in deep sleep.

It was a gigantic lizard-like creature that looked like it came straight from the depths of hell. It was easily four meters tall and nine feet wide. Its form resembled a tyrannosaurus rex, but it was broader and more muscular, the shape of its head slightly different and its hands longer. The most significant difference was its blood red skin.

A glossy, black shell protected its back and tail. Spikes grew from its chin and the side of its mouth, the underside of its neck and the elbows of its front arms. The creature also had two pitch-black horns protruding from the crown on its head. It was Monster Emperor Taras.

"Wake up, old friend!" Monster Emperor Shentia screamed at the top of his lungs, trying to wake the creature up, but it didn't even stir. He kept trying but his words had no effect.

Finally, Shentia grew impatient and picked up a large stone and threw it at Taras. The stone shattered as soon as it touched Taras' shell. Still no response.

"I'll see how long you can sleep!" Shentia picked up his hammer, preparing to attack.

"You remember that you need to control your powers, right? If Taras is injured in the slightest, he won't be happy when he wakes up," Monster Emperor Balang warned Shentia.

"Don't worry. You know how strong his shell is. Unless I use my full strength, I won't injure him. He will feel a mild impact because I will use half my power," Monster Emperor Shentia replied as he swung his hammer in Taras' direction. The hammer made contact.

A loud roar shook the cave and Monster Emperor Taras opened his eyes.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 71 - 71: The Decision

"Do you want to die, Shentia!!!" Monster Emperor Taras roared as he stood up and an oppressive aura spread everywhere in the place.

"Hold on, big guy! I am not here to fight you! We have an important matter which needed you to be awake and I tried waking you up, but since you weren't waking up, I had to use that method to wake you up. You can ask Balang if you doubt me," Monster Emperor Shentia quickly said.

"He isn't lying." Monster Emperor Balang replied when he saw Monster Emperor Taras looking towards him.

"What happened?" Monster Emperor Taras asked after he calmed down and retracted his aura.

"After so many years, another human was seen in our world. He is staying with the Banshee tribe. We need a proper plan about how to approach this situation," Monster Emperor Balang replied as he showed him Long Chen's image.

"What is there to think about! We need to slaughter him for the crimes of his ancestor!!" Monster Emperor Taras said with an angry voice.

"No! That would be the wrong way to approach this situation! Both of you know what a single human did to all our tribes in the Great War! If we go to another war, we may suffer the risk of complete annihilation! I think we should get in contact with him and try to establish a friendship with him. He is not the same one from a thousand years ago! He doesn't have any enmity with us and if we do things carefully, we may get him to be our ally. That way we won't have to take any risk that may result in a threat to our tribe," Monster Emperor Balang suggested.

"Are you crazy Balang??? You know he is the descendant of a human! A member of the same species slaughtered most of our tribesmen before! My grandparents always told me about the terror our tribe faced when that human attacked us! I can never forget the looks on their faces when they described those events to me! I always wanted another human to appear so that I could personally wipe him out of existence and take revenge for our ancestors!" Monster Emperor Taras roared as he heard the words of Balang, anger clearly visible on his face.

"We don't need to make the same mistakes our ancestors did by making that human our enemy! You know the survival of our tribe depends on our decision!" Monster Emperor Balang said in a heavy voice.

"Don't change the story, Balang! Our ancestors made no mistake!!! They never offended that human! It was the Human who interfered in our war with other tribes and started attacking us for no reason! Our tribe didn't even know that a species like humans existed in this world until he started attacking us out of nowhere!!" Monster Emperor Taras replied immediately.

"I agree with Taras. I also heard the whole story from my parents. Our tribe didn't do anything bad to that human, it was him who suddenly attacked us out of the blue," Monster Emperor Shentia said, voicing his agreement to Taras' statement.

"Exactly! He was a crazy maniac who slaughtered our people for no reason! How can you even suggest friendship with his descendent" Monster Emperor Taras said looking at Monster Emperor Balang.

"I just don't want the same events as before to happen again. I care for the safety of our tribe. Don't let revenge cloud your judgment, my friend." Monster Emperor Balang said in a slow voice.

"Nothing like before will ever happen again! After hundreds of years of cultivation, we are as strong as our ancestors were! While that human is clearly weaker than that human from Thousands of years ago!" Monster Emperor Taras replied looking at Monster Emperor Balang.

"We need to slaughter him immediately, while he is still weak!" Monster Emperor Taras asserted.

"I don't understand why we need to fight him! I understand why you don't want friendship with a human! But why go so far as to create enmity with the human that appeared! We haven't attacked any other tribe in the last thousand years and stayed within our territory. Even if we leave him alone, why would he attack us! Eventually, he will disappear like that human as well," Monster Emperor Balang declared.

"What if he goes crazy just like the last human did? In the last Great War, that human attacked us out of nowhere! What if, after growing stronger this one goes crazy as well and attacks our tribe! Can you be sure that it won't be too late to stop him then?" Monster Emperor Taras said fiercely.

"I like both of you, but I agree with Taras more old buddy! I apologize but I think we should kill him while he's still weaker to avoid future troubles."
Monster Emperor Shentia told Monster Emperor Taras.

"But..." Monster Emperor Balang wanted to continue, but stopped himself as he saw their determined expressions. He knew that no matter what he said, he wouldn't be about to convince Monster Emperor Taras and Monster Emperor Shentia.

"I have been sleeping for so long! It is time I get out and kill some insects!"
Monster Emperor Taras let out.

"I still think it is a bad idea, but I don't think you will listen to me. I just hope it doesn't cause our tribe to suffer another tragedy" Monster Emperor Balang said.

"Why don't you stay behind, old friend, just like last time when Ancestor Alton stayed behind. You stay here in case something unexpected happens while we go kill that kid and the other tribes for scheming against us with the human." Monster Emperor Taras replied as he walked towards the tunnel leading to the exit. Monster emperor Shentia and Monster Emperor Balang followed behind as well.

After half a day, they all entered the monster city causing a heavy disturbance in the city.

"I saw that the three great monster emperors were walking together! Something of grave importance must be happening!" A monster with the face of a crow and the upper body of a bear said to his friend.

"I saw that as well! They were walking towards the monster palace! Our three great Monster Emperors haven't been seen together in the last hundreds of years! It was said that Monster Emperor Shentia and Monster Emperor Taras left the city and their whereabouts were a secret! Only Monster Emperor Balang stayed behind, but he too was never seen in public in the last hundreds of years!" His friend replied to him.

"I wonder what is going to happen. What can be so important that all the Monster Emperors appeared here together? Are we finally going to wage another war to conquer the lands?" The crow faced monster guessed.

"I think we will know very soon," His friend said, looking towards the monster palace.

This kind of conversation was happening all around the city, with most of the people guessing that they were going to war to conquer the lands again. Somehow a crazy rumor also started stating that four of the monster kings had started a fight against the other six monster king's over an argument and two of the monster kings had already died. The situation was so bad that the Monster Emperors themselves came here to control the situation. No one knew who started this rumor, but it was started to spread widely in the city.

Monster kings were sitting in the Great Hall still thinking about the options they had to handle, the situation involving the human and waiting for the response from monster emperors when the door was suddenly forced open. They all stood up and dropped down to a knee as they saw who it was.

"Rise! We already talked about the situation amongst ourselves and reached a decision! Prepare all our warriors! We will kill that human and slaughter the Banshee tribe who are keeping him!" Monster Emperor Taras said.

'Since both of you already decided to follow this path, I pray for your success, my friend! Since you are taking this step, our survival will depend on your success. I hope you are right this time' Monster Emperor Balang thought to himself as he saw the situation unfolding.

One day had passed since the Monster Emperors declared their decision to wage war on the banshee tribe and for killing Long Chen, but he was busy with his own troubles having no idea of the situation inside the monster tribe.

It was the fifth day since the red speck of light first appeared inside Long Chen's Martial space during his cultivation breakthrough to the Gold Core realm.

After five days of crazy absorption, it finally stopped. However, by that time, most of the qi around the Banshee tribe was sucked dry. It even got to the point where the Elphia tribe and others were starting to feel its effects.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 72 - 72: Red Core Realm

As soon as the insane absorption of the qi into Long Chen's body ended, he fell onto the ground, dead tired. He was barely holding on after these five days. Long Chen was beginning to feel like he would not be able to hold on for even one more day, but thankfully, the phenomenon stopped on time.

After resting for an hour, Long Chen woke up and dragged his tired body to his bed and swiftly, he fell asleep. He slept soundly for a whole day before eventually walking up. As he got up, he found Xun sitting on the bed next to him.

"About time you woke up! Congratulations on breaking through the Gold Core realm, or should I say, the Red Core realm," Xun told him with a gentle smile on her face.

Long Chen sent his consciousness deep into his Martial Space to observe the changes that happened to it after he broke through. There, he couldn't help but be amazed by what he saw. There was a blood-red core rotating at the center of his Martial space and above the head of his Martial Soul. It looked as if it was a blood-red sun, lighting up the entirety of his Martial Space.

His Martial Soul stood below that red core; his eyes were still closed, but Long Chen noticed a slight change in his Martial Soul. Before breaking through, his Martial soul looked like the 12-year-old boy whom he transmigrated into. But now, although it looked similar in terms of facial features, it was clearly older and taller. It used to look like a kid. However, now it looked like a teenager.

There were some changes to the armor of his Martial Spirit as well. His old, completely golden armor now had various patterns embellished upon it; all red in color. Long Chen noticed that the patterns looked similar to the patterns that Long Chen saw on the walls of the Bloodline Temple, the place where he entered in order to participate in this test. As for the sword in his Martial Soul's hands, although it remained mostly the same, somehow it now looked sharper and even more threatening.

Long Chen again turned his attention back to his core to observe it carefully. He was shocked when he saw three black lines already visible on his core. He immediately brought his consciousness back as he stared at Xun.

"There are three Spirit lines on my red core!! Did I actually broke through to the 3rd stage of Gold Core realm in a single attempt??" Asked Long Chen with a shocked expression written all over his face.

Long Chen knew that in the Gold Core realm, a person's core will have something called Spirit Lines on it. Just as how a cultivator at the first stage of the Gold Core realm has one Spirit Line, a ninth stage Gold Core realm cultivator would have had nine Spirit Lines on his core! Although his core wasn't golden but rather red. He couldn't help but be shocked when he saw the three Spirit Lines which had appeared on his core.

"That's right, you're a third strange Gold Core realm cultivator now! If you couldn't break through to the third stage of the Gold Core realm, after emptying most of the qi in the nearby areas, then wouldn't your talent truly be trash." Said Xun gave a light chuckle as she said to Long Chen.

"Amazing! I've never heard of someone breaking into the Gold Core realm at 12, won't I be a miracle if anyone in our kingdom finds out about this?" Long Chen smiled as he said

"Well... actually..."

Xun looked like she wanted to say something, but stopped herself.

"What is it?" Long Chen asked with curiosity.

"Ahem nothing," Xun said.

"Hmm, I'm in the Gold Core realm, but I don't have any suitable techniques I can use in this realm to fight Gold Core enemies other than Seven Forms of Saint Sword. Do you have any Martial skills you can teach me? I'm sure that Tian Shen's storage space inside this ring must have many awesome techniques. If only you could allow me to take a peek," said Long Chen slyly.

"Good try! Of course, there are many strong Martial skills in there, but no! You can't access Tian Shen's storage space!" Xun said.

"As for teaching you a skill, well... I do know quite a bit of skill but I can't teach you anything at the moment. You'll be getting many Martial skills after your pass this trial as a reward but other than that, I can't give you any Martial skills myself as that would be considered as me directly involving myself to help you in this test and that would break the Blood Temple's rules." Xun said in a serious voice, a direct contrast with her former attitude.

"So I can't learn a new Martial skill before passing this test?" Long Chen asked with a downcast expression.

"I apologize, but I can't help you with that," Xun told him.

"It's fine. I still have my old techniques. Although they won't be as effective as stronger ones, but with my Gold Core cultivation, I can at the very least bring out the best in them." Said Long Chen, radiating positivity.

Xun couldn't help but smile radiantly as she heard Long Chen's words.

"It's about time I get to work and do what we are here to do!" Long Chen said looking at Xun.

"This mask has a time limit of ten minutes, so I need to steal that orb in ten minutes or I would be recognized. Wait a minute... I remember now! It has a limitation of ten minutes, but this limit increases with the increase of the user's cultivation! Since I'm currently in the Gold Core, it can last twice as long. Ah... I almost forgot the most important part," Long Chen struck his head with a light punch as he remembered a rather important piece of information.

"Since I now have more time, I won't need to take as much risk as before. At first, I was planning to go within a hundred-meter radius of the orb's location without the mask, disguise with the mask on and enter to steal the orb. But now I can do it slightly farther away from the actual heavily guarded location," Long Chen said with a happy smile.

Long Chen got up from the bed and changed his clothes to his newer ones. After preparing himself, he exited the place. The maid which was still standing outside started following him as Long Chen walked ahead.

"You don't need to follow me, just stay there. I'm just going for a short walk in the hall and I'll be right back. You don't need to go back and forth with me as I'll be returning here soon," Long Chen said

"But..." The maid tried rejecting Long Chen.

"No buts. Why don't you get rest while I take a walk? You've been standing here all the while. Go inside my room and take a rest. The bed is really comfortable, you know? If I need anything, I'll wake you up when I'm back," replied Long Chen swiftly.

"But going inside the guest's room when he's not inside is against the rules." She meekly rebutted.

"If anyone knocks, don't open the door and no one will know. I'll be back soon," said Long Chen as he touched the maid's back and gently pushed her into the room.

The maid felt a current storm through her body as soon as Long Chen touched her back, her cheeks turned red as she stopped thinking and entered the room.

Long Chen immediately departed.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 73 - 73: Caught?

Long Chen had found out from Prince Alton the location where the Banshee tribe kept their orb. It was a temple behind the Royal Palace and it was heavily guarded. Long Chen learned from him that the whole temple was completely surrounded by the Royal guards. One could only enter after going through a thorough check; that too only if they had been given a token by a Royal family member. Only members of the Royal family could enter without any checks or formalities.

Long Chen continued walking in the direction which would lead him to the exit. Every time he noticed someone ahead of him, he would change his looks to that of a normal servant, walk by and quickly turn his face back to save the usage time of the mask. On his way to the exit, he also passed by the queen; who didn't even glance at him as she just saw a normal servant. Just to exit the palace, he had already used the mask for over 5 minutes.

After exiting the palace, Long Chen immediately found an empty spot as he swapped his clothes with the prince's and used the mask to alter his look to that of Alton's as well.

His hair turned snow-white while his face changed, looking a little pale. After a few seconds, there was practically no difference that could be seen between Long Chen's looks and the prince's.

All the royal guards saluted as they got down to one knee as soon as Long Chen reached the entrance of the temple. To them, it looked as if their prince had come to visit.

'It feels good.' Thought Long Chen as he smiled and entered the temple. Without wasting any time, he ended his transformation. Long Chen saw that there were two doors in the hall. He decided to enter the right door and found himself standing in a cold room covered with snow, of which at the center resided a white orb giving a chilling feeling.

"This must be the orb for the law of snow that the banshee tribe practices. The orb for the law of slaughter must be in the second room. Since I'm here, I might as well take it.' Long Chen immediately kept that orb in his storage time as he exited the room.

Without thinking much, he entered the second room, only to find a transparent crystal lying there. This whole room felt completely different from

the previous room. There was no cold, no hot, no wind and no sound. Long Chen felt like he was in a completely isolated space.

"Hmm... it seems different from the previous time. It's not the law of slaughter but-" Xun said

"We can talk later once we're back in the room. For now, we need to get out of here immediately. If someone comes in, we'll be in deep trouble!" Long Chen interrupted her as he immediately kept the orb inside his ring and hastily exited the room.

He used the mask and altered his face back to Prince Alton's as he exited the temple and left. The guards continued guarding the temple as usual without knowing that someone stole their tribe's treasure. The guards usually checked every person who came out of the temple thoroughly so that this kind of theft doesn't happen, but this didn't apply to the Royal family since, well, they ruled all the land, hence owned this tribe's treasures. There was no need to worry about them stealing what they owned.

Long Chen returned to his room soon after. He opened the doors with the key he had and found the maid soundly sleeping on his bed. He closed the door and walked towards the bed.

Soon after Long Chen left the temple after stealing the orbs, Queen Mia arrived and entered the temple.

"Everything feels weird since the last few days, I can't even feel the tiniest bit of Qi now. Since I can't cultivate at the moment, maybe I should instead improve my understanding of the law of ice. Everything might just return to normal by the time I come out." She muttered as she entered the right door inside the temple. But as soon as she saw the empty room, her face turned red with anger.

"Guards!!!" She screamed with killing intent clearly embedded in her voice.

The guards immediately rushed in as soon as they heard their queen's voice.

"Who stole my snow crystal!!! Why the hell am I keeping you all here if you can't even do your job properly!!!" Roared the queen in rage.

She suddenly thought of something as she quickly ran towards the door on the left. She entered it, but to her misery, she found it empty as well.

The guards kept staring at her in fear as she came out and gave them a deadly glare.

"Who was the last person that entered this place?" The Queen asked in a heavy tone.

"Your highness, half an hour ago, Prince Alton entered and left soon after." One of the guards said

"Are you trying to say that my nephew stole my crystals?" The Queen said with anger written all over her face.

"Y... Your highness, you can ask anyone here, Prince Alton was the only one who entered the temple before you came. I don't dare say that he stole the crystal, it's just that he was the last person who entered." The guards continued. All the other guards gave her the same statement. Although the queen simply couldn't believe them, she couldn't call all of them liars either.

"Go and stay in the prison, I'll punish you myself when I'm done with this!" The Queen said as she left.

She walked towards Alton's room. The Queen knocked only once on the door as it was soon opened by Alton.

"Little Alton, why did you go to the temple today?" Asked Queen Mia with a gentle smile.

"Temple? What are you talking about, Aunt? I didn't go there today. In fact, it has been months since I last stepped there." Prince Alton answered with a confused expression.

"Oh, that might've been someone else. I guess they mistook someone else for you. You can go back to what you were doing," She said as she turned back and left.

Instead of going back to her room, she started walking towards the guards on the corridor and asked them if any of them saw Alton leave the room. All of them denied.

'Alton didn't leave his room. Furthermore, he had absolutely no reason to steal the crystals as he could've accessed them anytime he wanted. The only one who would do this is that human! Since I denied him access, he chose to steal the crystal for himself! The guards said that Alton entered the temple half an hour ago, it's possible that what they saw was a fake Alton if that human has an ability to create illusions or shapeshift! Who knows what kind of strange ability he used! I'll only get answers there from him!' Her mind raced as she walked towards Long Chen's room.

As Long Chen entered his room, he intentionally made some noise to wake up the maid who immediately woke up, startled, and immediately apologized for falling asleep. After a while, the maid exited the room and Long Chen was left alone.

"We need to get out of here since our work here is done," Long Chen muttered with a smile.

'I should tell the people that I'm leaving or they'll think that I stole the orb and escaped once they find out about the missing orb. Although they'll doubt me when that happens, they'll doubt me even more if I sneak away.' thought Long Chen.

Long Chen opened the door, but just as he was about to leave, he found Queen Mia standing right in front of the door.

"Queen Mia, What're you doing here?" Said Long Chen with a smile on his face.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 74 - 74 : All Of You Forced My Hand

"Return my crystals that you stole. We let you stay here, right in our palace and you steal our stuff!" Queen Mia said in a loud voice, scaring away the nearby maid.

"What crystal? What are you talking about? I didn't steal anything!" Long Chen said as he feigned ignorance.

"You, come here!" Queen Mia pointed at the maid as she called her. The maid came forward with a scared expression.

"Don't worry, I won't do anything to you. Just tell me honestly, was he here in the room for the last hour?" Queen Mia asked.

"No your highness, he left for a walk a while ago, and only returned around half an hour ago." The maid turned her head towards him for a moment but decided to tell the truth.

"You let him go alone? I never expected such negligence from you! Cut off one of your fingers as punishment so that you won't make this kind of mistake ever again!" Queen Mia bellowed

"What the hell are you saying! I just went for a walk and I was the one who told her not to follow me. You don't need to punish her for that!!" Long Chen rebuked her.

But he was shocked to see that the maid actually cutting off one of her fingers with tears in her eyes as she desperately held herself from screaming in pain.

"You can go now!" Queen Mia said to the maid.

"Back to you, both of my orbs were stolen today, and the thief disguised himself as Alton to such a degree that none of my guards could even recognize that he wasn't. You're the only person who might have had such an ability. What's more, it also happened less than an hour ago! The exact time you went missing. I'll ask you kindly now, just return the orbs, and I won't punish you!" Queen Mia said slowly as she suppressed her bubbling anger.

"Firstly, I didn't steal anything! Secondly, you're just blaming me without any proof. Who knows if anything is actually stolen, it might just be an elaborate plan for you to destroy my reputation in the other tribes just because you don't like me! More importantly, are you even qualified to punish me?" Long Chen said with a smile.

"Since you're accusing me wrongly, I have no reason to stay here anymore, I'm leaving!" Long Chen said, as he started walking away.

"You think you can simply leave after taking my treasures? Foolish!"

Completely drowned in anger, Queen Mia brought out an ice spear and attacked Long Chen with it from behind. Long Chen immediately brought out his Mountain Destroyer as he turned back and blocked the attack.

"I've had enough!! Don't you dare make me angry! I don't want to leave your tribe in ruins and strewn around with corpses!!" Long Chen roared in anger as he pushed back Queen Mia with his sword.

Queen Mia brought out a crystal which she crushed. An alarm blared throughout the tribe as formation runes started shining. The whole tribe was soon wholly covered in a transparent barrier.

Everyone looked towards the barrier as chatters started erupting amongst the populace.

"Isn't that our empire's guarding formation? It prevents enemies from entering our empire. The only drawback is that no one from inside is able to exit either!"

"Right, although this barrier only lasts for one week and yet takes thousands of years to be recharged and used again, it is said that not even Monster Emperors can break it in less than a week! Last time, it was used in the Great War against the monster tribe. Are they attacking us again?"

"Of course that must be the case. The queen won't be wasting this formation on something weaker than a monster king," people in the crowd kept on commenting.

Long Chen left the palace and looked at the barrier.

"Don't think that just because I didn't fight you inside the palace, everything's resolved! I just don't want my palace to suffer from damage." Queen Mia's voice came from behind. She was still firmly gripping an ice spear on her hands, looking much like a Snow Queen.

Queen Mia attacked Long Chen again as he was walking towards the barrier but this time with much more power. Long Chen blocked the attack with his sword and created some distance between the two of them.

"I guess this means you're not going to let me leave peacefully today," Long Chen said as he rushed towards the queen. He could see that his speed had increased explosively after breaking through to the Gold Core realm as he was able to move at such an incredible speed even without using a movement technique.

Long Chen swung his mountain destroyer at Mia, who attacked with her ice spear as well. Long Chen felt the cold chill coming from his sword as soon as it came into contact with Queen Mia's ice spear. While Long Chen only felt a slight chill, Queen Mia was in a much worse situation, she felt a heavy pain in her arms as she was pushed back.

Long Chen again swung his sword at Queen Mia but stopped midway as he immediately stepped aside. A spike made of snow crashed right where he was standing before. If he hadn't stepped aside, he might've been hit. Long Chen turned to look at the person who attacked him from behind and found Prince Alton standing there.

"You too?" Long Chen said with an upset expression.

"I thought you were a good person like master Tian Shen! But I was wrong! A good person wouldn't have attacked my aunt! You are a bad human! You need to be punished for attacking my aunt!" Alton said as he stood there, his expression frosty.

All the warriors of the Banshee tribe came forward to help the Queen as well and without thinking much, they all attacked Long Chen.

Long Chen saw all this happening in front of his eyes and couldn't help but get angry.

"I wanted to leave this place peacefully and not have to do this. But all of you forced my hand! If a blood path is the one I must walk upon, then on it I shall tread!" Long Chen said as he deflected the attacks rushing at him with his Mountain Destroyer.

"Ice Prison!" The Queen pointed her spear towards Long Chen and used her Martial Skill. Four thick ice walls appeared around Long Chen, completely engulfing him. The opening at the top was closed as well as a thick ice slab formed on the top of the walls forming something like a room, albeit a deadly one. The four walls started closing in on him slowly but surely.

"Is that the rumored Ice Prison of the queen? It is said that it's one of the strongest skills of the queen. All four of these walls can take the full-powered

attack of a monster king without breaking and can even kill a monster king." Someone from the crowd commented, amazed as he saw Long Chen trapped.

"I've only heard about her using this skill against a monster king in the last Great War and killing him! But then, using this skill harmed her own vitality as well and she had to recuperate for a month before she could take part in another battle But by then, the battle had already ended," another continued.

"You can't break it! Now be buried in it until your flesh crumbles into smithereens for the sin of stealing my orbs." Queen Mia said, smiling as the ice prison continued to compress. It started to enter the ground as if to bury Long Chen eternally...

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 75 - 75 : Kill

Suddenly, the decrease in dimensions of the ice prison seemed to be much slower. In fact, it looked as if the walls couldn't even move an inch inwards despite how much they tried.

The smile on the Queen's face disappeared as she saw this scene. She started to have a bad premonition. Her premonition soon found its mark.

With a loud bang, the top of the ice prison was broken as Long Chen flew up to the sky. There was a golden sword in his hand radiating brightly while being surrounded by a dangerous sword aura. Long Chen had taken out his King's sword, which seemed as if it was happy at being chosen for this fight.

Queen Mia coughed up blood as her Ice Prison was broken through by Long Chen. Her already pale face turned even paler.

"I've already given you many chances since I don't want to fight, but all of you chose to ignore my words and kept on attacking me. As if that wasn't enough, you even tried to kill me! I would like to congratulate all of you. You've received what you vehemently asked for, your deaths!" Long Chen said in a deep voice. To Queen Mia, every single word of his was like the declaration of a death sentence.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: second form - Devastation!" Long Chen muttered, as he made a giant slash with his sword, moving towards Queen Mia. Queen Mia clearly saw the attack coming towards her since she tried to block it with her ice spear. Be that as it may, she didn't even have any strength to attack after her Ice Burial was broken.

"I won't let you hurt my Aunt! She's the only family I have left!!"

Ten walls of Ice appeared between Long Chen and Queen Mia as Alton made his way between the two of them, trying to protect her together with the other guards who surrounded her as well. However, even their combined strength failed to stop Long Chen's attack, which was supplemented by the power of the king's sword as well as his own strength.

The ice walls broke apart without even the slightest resistance as the attack struck Alton, who didn't move from the front of Queen Mia, the momentum hurling him far away. A large wound on his chest could be seen, neither his life nor death known.

Long Chen stood there in place, looking at the bleeding Alton.

"You idiot," Long Chen muttered, his expression grim.

He came down to the ground and walked towards the queen, whose eyes were wet with tears as she stared at the unmoving Alton.

Some of the guards standing near her couldn't help but take a step back when he saw him coming towards them. Though they held their ground and didn't run away.

"It's time for us to show our loyalty to the Empire and protect the queen!" One of the guards roared as he mustered all the courage he had and ran towards Long Chen with a sword in hand. After seeing one person move, everyone else started rushing towards Long Chen as well, attacking him with their weapons.

Despite their effort, before they could even get near Long Chen, he disappeared from his original position and appeared right behind their backs.

"I admire your bravery and love for your kingdom, but I'm sorry to say that the kingdom you chose to protect is now on the side opposing me. I'm still going to give you a chance to stand down, or you'll die a needless death." Long Chen said slowly as he continued walking towards the queen, not even sparing a look at the guards.

Most of the guards decided to run away, leaving only one, who against all odds, still decided to attack Long Chen from behind with his sword. A sword flashed and a head fell to the ground after being decapitated. It all happened in the blink of an eye.

There was a brief moment of silence as everyone looked at the scene, their eyes filled with disbelief.

"Wrong choice." A voice struck everyone's ears, sending chills down their spines. The imperial guard's body fell to the ground as blood splattered everywhere. Long Chen kept on walking towards the Queen, who looked at him with a frightful expression as tears continued to stream down from her eyes.

"I... Please forgive me! I have made some stupid decisions, You can keep the orbs! I... I mean you didn't steal anything, it was all a misunderstanding. I accidentally kept the orbs somewhere else and blamed the great master! I hope you can forgive the foolishness of this little one," The Queen said slowly as she begged for forgiveness with tears in her eyes.

"I told you that all I wanted was to leave and not hurt anybody. It was you who kept blocking my path and attacking me! Isn't the enmity between us already clear? I've already experienced many situations where, even after showing mercy, I was attacked from behind! The latest example is lying there." Long Chen said as he pointed towards the headless body of the guard who attacked him.

"I want to completely eradicate your existence, but I'll leave you with your puny life since Alton had sacrificed himself for you." Long Chen said with a thoughtful expression as he took a look at Alton's body.

"But then, just like what you did to that maid, you too deserve a punishment to always remind you of what you shouldn't do." Long Chen said with a heavy tone.

After a few moments, Long Chen left his previous spot and walked towards the barrier with one of his hands still holding his king's sword, with the other holding the ice spear of the queen. The crowd looked at him with a frightful expression as if they were looking at a demon.

Behind him, the queen was roaring in pain as two dismembered hands lay on the ground near her. They were her hands and the punishment Long Chen had decided upon.

Long Chen completely ignored her screams of anguish as he walked towards Alton's body. After inspecting it, he determined that Alton had died.

"You were the only one who helped me in this tribe, albeit unknowingly. You are gone now but I would still like to say, thank you! I'm truly sorry for killing you, it was not my intention to do so. However, I accepted your last wish and left your aunt alive! So, rest in peace, little friend." Long Chen muttered as he stood near his dead body with a heavy heart.

Long Chen turned away and without looking back, walked towards the barrier.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 76 - 76: Destroying

Long Chen turned away and without looking back, walked towards the barrier.

He threw a stone at the barrier to test it. The stone couldn't pass through and dropped to the ground. Observing that the barrier only prevented things from leaving, he couldn't note anything else noteworthy. He turned towards the populace and his eyes fell on someone.

"You! Come here!" The guard instantly fell to his knees when he realized Long Chen was calling him.

"Please, don't execute me! I—I have a child waiting for me at home!" The guard said, frozen to his place as tears streamed down his cheeks. His gaze was on Long Chen.

"Don't fret. I'm not going to kill you. Had I needed to, I could kill everyone present without moving from this spot. You just need to come here," Long Chen sighed with frustration at the guard's words.

After hearing Long Chen summon him again, he got up and staggered towards Long Chen.

"What do you know about this barrier?" Long Chen inquired.

"It's our Empire Protecting Barrier. It is meant to be used only during emergency situations. Usually, when we are under attack or facing a strong enemy, the barrier helps us stall them while we prepare," he replied hastily.

"Interesting. What else?" Long Chen asked, his gaze settled on the guard.

"It—it can only be used once every thousand years as it needs a massive amount of energy to be used. Hence, it uses up the thousand years' worth of energy that needs to be accumulated once again. Once the barrier is erected, it lasts for seven days, during which not even Monster Emperors can break it," he finished.

"Hmm... seven days huh? I can stay here for seven days and waste time, but I don't want to stay here a second longer. After all, it's a place where the Queen herself tried to destroy my reputation by accusing me of being a thief!" Long Chen's voice boomed as he used his Qi to amplify it.

Hearing his statement, the public started chattering softly amongst themselves.

"That's what happened? The Queen accused him wrongly?" Somebody amongst the crowd let out.

"It might be true. I saw the queen ask him to return her treasures and assault him first. Anyone would react this way if they were attacked and falsely accused. No wonder he retaliated! I am confident that even great master Tian Shen from thousands of years ago would have been outraged as if somebody accused him like this," another person whispered.

"That must be it! Why would he lie? He is so powerful that if he liked something, he could've just taken it by force. He would not do a shameless thing like stealing, right?" A girl in the crowd said.

Long Chen, who was listening to the crowd chattering, had a slight smile. But as soon as Long Chen heard the girl, his face turned beet-red and he coughed in embarrassment.

Xun started to laugh at this scene as she emerged near Long Chen. "I told you to take the path of the brave, but you chose the shameless one," she said. Long Chen was glad no one except him could see or hear her.

"You can go now," Long Chen told the guard, ignoring Xun's continued giggling.

Long Chen took a few steps back before crouching into a fighting stance.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword- First form: Cleansing!" Long Chen assaulted the barrier with his martial skill. Nothing happened as the attack landed on the barrier. It remained intact, not even a scratch to be seen.

"This barrier is really solid," Long Chen muttered as he inspected the area of impact.

'Let's see if I can shatter you with my strongest attack or not! If I can't, I'll just wait in this tribe for seven days,' Long Chen thought as he prepared to attack again.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword- Fourth form: Desolation!" This was the strongest attack he had learned so far.

An arc of light-filled with sword aura bolted towards the barrier. Everything that fell in its path turned lifeless as the contents disintegrated completely.

Although the barrier didn't shatter on impact, Long Chen couldn't help but smile. He saw a small crack materialize on the spot.

"It's clear that you are not invincible. I'll see how long you can last!" Long Chen declared. He struck the crack, making the crack grow even deeper. Long Chen estimated that with two more strikes of the same intensity, the barrier would break.

'Only a bit more and I can leave,' Long Chen thought as he continued his assault.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword- Fourth form: Desolation!"

The arc of light struck again. The barrier tried its best to withstand Long Chen's attack, but couldn't even hold on for five seconds. It shattered into thousands of pieces like glass. Yet the light from his attack didn't dematerialize completely and continued to move forward, cutting down the trees in its path before disappearing completely.

"Hah, finally!" Long Chen muttered with a gleam of joy. Long Chen did not walk towards the barrier. Contrary to the crowd's expectations he went in the opposite direction.

He appeared in the same spot after a while. Only, this time he was not alone. Long Chen sat on the Elphia horse that Xia and Terra left to ease his travel to the Elphia tribe.

'When you gave this horse to me you said that it was nothing special. But as it turns out, it is a really helpful gift,' Long Chen thought with a smile when he remembered Xia's words.

The horse galloped, taking Long Chen away from the tribe, bringing calmness back to it.

Some guards rushed forward with the royal physician to inspect the Queen's wounds. Although her hands could not be restored, the excruciating pain was alleviated.

A few hours before the battle at Banshee tribe, a monster concealed himself in the forest a long distance from it. The creature looked identical to a gorilla but with green fur and a menacing horn at the center of its forehead.

He glared at the gates of the Banshee tribe and kept an eye on all those who went in and out. He was Monster General Baek, the one who had informed the Monster Tribe of Long Chen's existence and appearance.

"What the he** is transpiring here! Why did the Banshee tribe use their life-saving formation? Do they already know I am hiding here? Wait, even if they did know, they wouldn't waste the formidable barrier on me," Monster General Baek muttered as he gawked at the barrier.

"What? It broke so soon. Shouldn't it last for a week? Is there something wrong with it?" He was shocked to see the formation shatter.

A few moments later, Monster General Baek grew alert upon seeing Long Chen speed out of the Banshee tribe lands. He watched until there was some distance between Long Chen and him and followed the human. His whole team stalked the human alongside their general.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 77 - 77: Hunting

Monster general Baek started following Long Chen with his whole team.

Long Chen took the same path that his entourage had taken while they were escorting him to the banshee tribe. He had already memorized the complete set of directions to get to the Elphia tribe.

After traveling for a while, he reached near the same stream they crossed before, but this time, he didn't stop. Instead, he increased his speed, making the horse jump high in the sky. Enjoying the rush of the wind on his face, he soon landed on the ground on the other side of the stream and continued on his journey.

Monster general Baek and the others also kept following from behind, keeping a safe distance between them. That was until Long Chen suddenly disappeared.

"Hmm... where did he disappear to?" General Baek thought.

He was shocked as Long Chen suddenly disappeared from his sight. They continued ahead, thinking that Long Chen reached too far ahead that they couldn't see him. Hence, General Baek traveled for over half an hour as fast as they could, but he still couldn't find Long Chen.

"You lost him, huh, maybe your stealth was a little too lacking that he couldn't help but find out what you were doing to him?" Someone suddenly said from behind.

"What the hell are you talking about! Are you courting death? My stealth was perfect!" General Baek shouted as he took out his blade and turned back to see who it was that dared to talk to him in such a disrespectful manner.

As soon as general Baek turned back, he saw a little black-haired boy sitting on a horse, looking at him with his attractive golden eyes and an evil grin on his well-defined face. He was utterly shocked to see the human he was chasing appear behind him. Long Chen looked at his constantly changing expressions with a smile on his face.

"You! How-... Wait, where is everyone else?!?"

General Baek found that other than Long Chen, there was no one else present. He looked around but found none of his subordinates there.

"Oh, are you looking for your friends? I saw them lying on the ground behind us when I was coming here. I think there is something wrong with them

as most of them were bleeding and some even had their heads missing. Wonder what happened to them." Long Chen said with a thoughtful expression.

"You can probably find them if you go backward for about ten minutes," Long Chen said with a smile.

"You...you killed them!!!" He roared in a loud voice as he stared at him with a shocked expression.

"Me? Why is everyone blaming me today, that too for things I haven't done? I didn't even touch a hair on them! Look at me! Do you think I could kill such strong people?" Long Chen said with a hurt expression.

"Stop toying with me! I know you killed them!" He said with his body trembling in both anger and fear.

Before Long Chen could even reply, Monster General Baek made his move. His horse started to gallop forward rapidly. With a blade tightly grasped in one hand, Monster General Baek focused on storming ahead as he increased his speed. But against Long Chen's expectations, the direction monster general Baek was going in wasn't towards him but was in the exact opposite direction.

"This person could silently appear behind me and kill so many of my people without me knowing! As I thought, this human is dangerous! I need to escape fast and survive!" Monster general Baek muttered as he kept increasing his speed.

"Huh, I thought he would get angry after seeing the deaths of his subordinates and attack to avenge his subordinates, but he proved me wrong, he ran away. What a poor leader. He doesn't even think about his subordinates. I guess that's a monster for you." Long Chen muttered as he saw Monster general Baek escaping.

"Oh well, I've already killed so many bad people, one more name to the list won't hurt much. It's time to hunt." Long Chen muttered as he started following monster general Baek on his horse.

The distance between Long Chen and monster general Baek didn't increase by much as the horse General Baek was using had speed similar to that of an Elphian horse. However, Long Chen didn't mind the ever-constant distance as he knew that he could kill Baek whenever he wanted. He was just enjoying the chase, toying with Baek in the process as he was going in the same direction as his destination.

After three more hours of Chase, Monster General Baek suddenly shifted his direction and continued advancing forward with Long Chen in tow behind.

"Oh man, what a stupid guy. He's going in the wrong direction. I guess it's time to end this." Long Chen muttered as he skillfully stood up on the back of his horse with the horse in motion.

A beautiful pair of wings appeared on his back. One golden and another black, beautifully contrasting each other, the black side making him look like an angel fallen from grace, tilting towards darkness while the golden side made him look like an angel of light who ruled the heavens and opposed all darkness.

Long Chen flew up to the sky, but never towards Monster General Baek. Only after reaching a high altitude did he go after the monster general. Long Chen's flying speed was many times faster, as he soon closed the distance and flew above the unaware monster general's head.

"Huh, Looks like that demon gave up. Now, I just need to maintain this speed and get out of this place and out of his reach." General Baek said smilingly after looking back and not finding anybody following him.

"Ouch, that hurt you know. But since you've already called me a demon, I might as well act like one," A voice came from the sky as General Baek was focusing ahead. He involuntarily shuddered in fear. The voice was somewhat familiar. He looked up towards the sky in the direction of the voice, but before he could even react, a sword impaled his head. His eyes were still wide open as he died staring at the one who killed him. He fell from the horse, dead, while the horse kept on running.

Without wasting any time, Long Chen plundered General Baek's belongings and stuffed them in his ring as he flew back to his horse. Soon he found his horse in the distance and continued on his journey ahead.

Night arrived as Long Chen decided to rest and feed his egg. Just as he did in the real world, he set up his hammock on the top of the trees and started taking out the egg he received. He started feeding his qi to the egg, which continued absorbing it. Long Chen again felt some movement, but he ignored it as it was already the third time. Long Chen knew that whatever is inside will soon come out. After the egg stopped absorbing the energy, Long Chen put it back inside his ring as long Chen started his cultivation.

While Long Chen was cultivating, in a faraway place, the city of monsters stood tall. But this city was anything but peaceful today. Every monster of the city is preparing for battle except the kids.

Everyone donned their armor and gripped their weapons in their hands as they stood tall, waiting for the order to depart. The Monster Emperors had already ordered their armies to be ready for departure at any moment's notice.

All three Monster Emperors came out of the palace, followed behind by ten Monster Kings. While Monster Emperor Taras and monster Emperor Shentia looked gallant and excited for the war, Monster Emperor Balang's expression looked more solemn than ever.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 78 - 78: War

Everyone turned their attention to the Monster Emperors and Monster Kings as they came out. They stood straight, their minds alert.

"Citizens of the brave monster tribe! I'm happy to see all of you prepared for the impending war and attend the conscription without being consumed by doubt because of our last failure. It is finally time we get our revenge!"

Monster King Shentia said with determination. Although he used a mild and calm tone in delivering his speech, every person could hear him clearly.

"When I say revenge, I don't simply speak about the tribes you think of. I also mean the demon that slaughtered our innocent citizens in the Great War. The demon who orphaned our children for entertainment. It is because of him we live in fear of extermination. Yes, that's right. I am talking about the human called Tian Shen!" Monster Emperor Taras announced loudly. Chattering erupted in the crowd.

"Silence!" Monster Emperor Taras shouted, quieting the people. Monster Emperor Shentia continued. "I know what you are thinking. 'That human disappeared thousands of years ago, so how can we get revenge? Can he still be alive?'"

He looked around the crowd at the hesitant expressions.

"Even our ancestors couldn't hurt him, how can we, who are even weaker, get revenge on him? If he is still alive, he must be stronger now! We stand no chance.' I will clear your doubts." Monster Emperor Shentia said slowly and quietly.

"Yes, you're right. If Tian Shen were standing in front of us, we wouldn't be able to scratch him, much less exact revenge. Over the thousands of years, he would have grown stronger beyond belief and we would stand no chance against him. But things are different now. We have been given a golden opportunity to avenge our people! Although the demon Tian Shen hasn't appeared, one of his descendants has! We must not be scared of this human. No! We must rejoice. Rejoice, for another human has appeared. He is but a child and weaker than Tian Shen. He is our opportunity to redeem our name and wash off our losses! No one shall call our tribe weak any longer," Monster Emperor Shentia declared.

"This is our opportunity to rewrite history! In this version, the human and slaughtering tribes will be defeated and we shall rule the world! Will you

follow me to fulfil this dream, the dream of the Monster tribe?" Monster Emperor Shentia roared as he raised his fist above his head.

"We are!" All The monsters chimed, mirroring his movement enthusiastically.

"It's time to set out. Everyone must remember this: this is a war against the world! Our goal is to destroy everyone who stands in our way. Whether it be the human or the banshee, any tribe that stands in our way shall be slaughtered!" Monster Emperor Terra shouted. In fact, his voice was so loud that the entire forest surrounding the city could hear him.

The army set out with the two Monster Emperors, while the Monster Kings followed hot on their heels with their own troupes. Monster Emperor Shentia rode on a heavily armored horse, while Monster Emperor Terra walked on his feet, unable to take on a humanoid form.

However, he didn't fall behind. Instead, he walked steadily so that the horses wouldn't be left behind.

"Old Terra, why don't you let me ride you? I am already trying very hard to keep up with you," Monster Emperor Shentia joked.

"Sure. You can try, but you'd be courting death if you tried. So, I'd suggest you change your mind. I wouldn't want you to miss out on a war because you got killed by my hands," Monster Emperor Terra replied in an annoyed tone.

"I was only joking, old man. You don't have to be so serious." Monster Emperor Shentia laughed.

"It would've been better if old Balang joined us too. He'll miss out on a ton of fun," Shentia said as he glanced at Taras.

"Let that stubborn guy stay in the tribe. He's too pessimistic. Is there need to be scared of a human child? Balang is worried that our young will be purged again. So, he wanted to stay back and protect them. Anyway, we won't need his help. It will be easy to eradicate the human and the tribes." Monster Emperor Taras snorted as the army continued marching forward.

Soon, morning arrived. The sky brightened magically in this world that lacked both the sun and the moon.

Long Chen stopped cultivating. He had already broken through the peak of the 4th Stage of the Gold Core Realm after a night of cultivation. He looked

at his resting place and started to pack the hammock. He placed the hammock back inside the storage ring and continued on his journey, unaware of the events that had transpired because of his presence in this world.

He moved forward for the whole day and by the time light disappeared and night arrived, he had already reached the gates of the Elphia tribe. The horse had been of great help in the journey.

The guards recognized him immediately and allowed him entry without checking his body or identity. He was easily recognizable. Seeing the familiar old scenery, Long Chen couldn't help but have a small smile on his face.

Without wasting any more time, Long Chen strode to the tribe leader's residence.

The horse arrived near the tribe leader's courtyard and slowed down into a trot. Long Chen, who was on its back, got off the horse and made his way to the door. He knocked and waited until an old man with a full head of white hair opened the door and allowed Long Chen inside.

The man probably did so because he didn't want to be discourteous.

"Where's Tensha?" Long Chen asked as he beamed, a wide smile on his face.

"Master is in the study, reading. I'll go and inform him that you've returned. I'm sure he'll be in a hurry to see you again." The old man smiled back as he spoke.

"No need to find him. I know exactly where the study is located. I'll go to him myself!" Long Chen declared, still smiling. He walked inside before the old man could answer. Soon, he was standing in front of the study. The door was closed, so Long Chen used his Divine Sense to peek inside the room.

What he sensed inside shocked him greatly, to the point that his face contorted into a grimace. He had never imagined that in the short time he would take to return to the tribe, this would happen and he would stumble upon such a scene.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 79 - 79:It's Not The Law Of Slaughter

Long Chen could see a naked Tensha reclining on a seat while an Elphian woman who wasn't wearing anything either, kept thrusting her hips in a vertical manner on his lap. Long Chen instantly shut off his divine sense after sensing such a lewd scene.

Long Chen chose to merely knock on the gate.

"What... ergh.. is it? " A voice alternating with heavy panting and moaning came from within the room.

"It's me. Are you busy right now?" Long Chen asked deliberately.

A loud crashing sound came from the inside as soon as Long Chen's voice was heard.

"Ah... Great Master Chen!! You... I'll open the door shortly, Ju- just wait a moment!" A voice hastily replied from inside.

"Don't worry about me. Take your time, I will wait for you here," Long Chen let out an answer.

Shortly, the door was opened by Tensha, who by then was already properly dressed.

"You must like reading a lot since you are always in the study," Long Chen asked smilingly as he entered the room and strolled around.

"Ah... that's right! I really do like reading a lot. You know what people say, right? Books are the gateway to the world and the way to escape from it. Haha," Tensha replied while laughing nervously.

"That's true. Anyway, what's she doing in your escape?" Long Chen pointed at the maid, who began cleaning dust off books.

"Oh, she? She is just here to clean the room." Tensha replied.

"What is she tidying up? As far as I can see, she's dusting the already cleaned section of the room," Long Chen pointed out, teasing the nervous man who was desperately trying to hide his recreational activity.

Just as Tensha was about to be rendered speechless and his whole affair uncovered, Long Chen continued speaking.

"Anyways, I don't have time to chitchat. I'll be going to your temple to cultivate for a while. I don't want any interference, so don't let anyone inside the temple!" Long Chen decreed as he left the room.

"Alright," Tensha answered back without thinking.

"Wait a minute, I was so caught up in hiding my affair that I didn't even remember to ask him why was he back, and what happened in the banshee tribe!" Tensha hit his head as he remembered. He hurriedly ran to the back of Long Chen.

"Master Chen!!" Tensha called out as he saw Long Chen almost on the verge of leaving his house.

"What?" Long Chen asked with an expression of curiosity.

"I apologize for taking your time, but I can't help but ask what is it that happened in the Banshee tribe, and how come you're back here so soon? The Banshee tribe is more luxurious than we are, and what's more, they have what you need! What actually happened there?" Tensha raised multiple questions at once.

"Why does it feel like you want me to stay in the Banshee tribe and not here?" Long Chen asked with a smile, his tone indicating the rhetorical meaning behind his question.

"This... Of course not! I was just curious about what happened there as you yourself wanted to go there." Tensha changed the way he phrased his words and inquired again.

"Nothing major happened there. The queen rejected me access to their orbs. Besides, I didn't like that place and started missing your tribe, so I came here. I decided to study your orb instead." Long Chen said while smiling.

"Oh, although I feel like you left out a lot of details, but I understand. You can go study in the temple, I will order the guards to not let anyone near our temple until you come out." Tensha said with a smile.

"You're more sensible than the queen." Long Chen said as he left the residence.

'What did he mean by the statement that I'm more sensible than the queen?' Tensha thought.

He called his personal guard and told him to ensure that no one enters the vicinity of the temple or creates noise around the area. After the guards left hurrying on a horse, Tensha left the house as well and walked towards Deputy chief Xu's house.

Long Chen continued walking and soon reached the temple. All the guards were informed of the decision of the tribe leader by his personal guard, who reached the temple first as he traveled on an Elphian horse. Long Chen effortlessly entered the temple as he closed the door.

"Hey, Xun!" Long Chen called out.

"What!" Xun shortly appeared near him as she said.

"I've just thought about something. Since I've received this bloodline, as a guardian Spirit, Although you can't hear my thoughts unless I intentionally want them heard, You can still see what I see, even if I don't want you to, right?" Long Chen asked, looking at Xun.

"That's right. I see what you see." Xun said as if she was stating a fact while she kept moving her little head up and down.

"So you saw what I saw earlier today as well?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her.

"I saw everything you saw, what are you talking about," She asked, feeling confused.

"The thing I saw happening with my divine sense," Long Chen let out.

"Oh that, yes I saw. So what? " She asked with a confused expression.

"Can you shut off your senses when you want to, so that you don't see the outside?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yes I can, but I never use it as I don't like the feeling," Xun said innocently.

"You should do this for a little while when I'm having private time in the future. You're so young! you shouldn't see such things." Long Chen replied with a serious look.

"Oh? I shouldn't ask things? Like the thing I saw when you were riding behind that girl from the Elphia tribe?" Xun asked, smiling.

"Th... that was an innocent reaction and nothing vulgar like what we saw before!" Long Chen coughed one with a red face as he said seriously.

"Don't worry little guy, I only look young but I'm way older! As for the things you are talking about, I've already seen it happen many times. I've seen Tian Shen do this hundreds of times with the girls he fell in love with. Unfortunately..." Xun said but stopped herself midway.

"Oh? You're so old but still watch young people make love? Aren't you quite shameless yourself? And here you were calling me shameless for stealing the orb?" Long Chen couldn't help but laugh.

"You can't change your words now! You've already confessed that you can shut your senses and also confessed that you saw Tian Shen do that with his lovers many times," Long Chen said smiling.

"You!!!" It was Xun's turn to turn red as she tried to find words to say.

"Leave that. I already know you're shameless. You don't need to give justification. Anyways How old are you?" Long Chen thought.

"You don't need to know that! Just know that I'm older than you." She replied in anger.

"Don't be angry, I was just messing with you! Anyway, can you tell me the best way to learn a law? I already have the orb for law of slaughter here," Long Chen changed the topic as he brought the transparent orb out from his storage ring/

"That's what I was about to tell you in the Banshee tribe when you said that we'll talk when we're back!!" She said with puffed up cheeks.

"Oh right, isn't it a good thing we escaped there fast? As someone found out of the stealth soon after. Anyways what were you saying?" Long Chen asked.

"I was saying that isn't the orb for the law of slaughter!!" Xun said with full confidence.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 80 - 80 : Bad News

"I was saying that it isn't the orb for the Law of Slaughter!" Xun said with a face full of confidence, shocking Long Chen.

"What are you talking about? Are you saying that Tensha lied to us about the orb that Tian Shen had studied from being there?" Long Chen asked

"That can't be it. I remember that when I met Queen Mia, I clearly asked her to grant me access to study the orb Tian Shen studied from. Although she denied me access, she never once mentioned that the orb Tian Shen used wasn't there.

"That's what I was thinking about as well. I don't think any of them lied. One of the possible explanations might be that someone stole the original orb and put the one you're holding there." Xun replied while looking at Long Chen.

"There's also the possibility that the Barong tribe didn't give them the orb you saw Tian Shen use and instead gave them this. There's no way the queen could ever tell which orb Tian Shen actually used, so tricking the unknowing queen could be pretty easy," Long Chen said with a thoughtful expression.

"That's true, that might actually be what happened, as fooling them was easier than stealing from them." Xun said with an enlightened look.

"We can only guess what happened. To know the actual truth behind it, we'll need to meet them ourselves. I'm also curious as to why they would have three orbs, the orb Tian Shen used, the orb for the law of wind that they use and the one that they gave Queen Mia. I'm also curious as to why they lied to her and have her be given a different law orb than the actual one." Long Chen muttered while looking at the translucent orb.

"Anyways, we can do that later. First things first, tell me, is this orb any good or do we need to go to the Barong Tribe right now and get the one you talked about?" Long Chen asked Xun.

You don't have to worry about finding them, as I don't think this law is any less valuable than the law of slaughter. In fact, it could only be stronger!" Xun said as a smile bloomed on her face.

"Stronger? What law is it?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"Of course I'll tell you, but since you don't know much about laws other than the basic ones, I'll have to explain them to you first." Xun let out a response.

"You already know about the five basic laws. Law of Fire, Law of Earth, Law of Wind, Law of Wood and the Law of Water. While people with the law of fire can control the element of fire, those with the law of Earth control the ground and the same goes for all the other elements. But other than these five elemental laws, there are many more laws in this world which are categorized as special laws." Xun explained.

"I remember that you told me before that the Law of Slaughter is a special law," Long Chen responded.

"Right, but that wasn't the proper description. What I didn't tell you was that the special laws are further separated into different ranks. There are Lower-rank Special laws like the Law of Snow that you stole from the Banshee tribe. Then, there are intermediate-rank special laws and finally high-rank special laws. The Law of Slaughter that Tian Shen comprehended was a high-rank special law." Xun explained.

"Oh, then what rank is this law?" Long Chen asked.

"There is another layer above high-rank special laws. The supreme rank laws. If I'm not wrong, the orb you're holding contains a supreme-rank law!" Xun told him.

"What the..." Long Chen's mouth opened wide as he was rendered speechless and just kept staring at Xun.

"Can you please tell me what law it contains?" After a long pause, Long Chen asked.

"It's a Law that contains the whole world and yet it is the law that contains nothing. This orb contains the supreme Law of Space!" Xun explained.

Long Chen just kept staring at the orb blankly before turning his attention to Xun.

"The Law of Space? If that's how it is, then tell me one thing honestly. The stronger the law, the tougher it is for it to be comprehended right?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"Yup, you're really lucky. I've only seen a few people succeed in cultivating the law of space. You're really lucky you received this orb making it easier for you!" Xun said with a slight smile/

"Oh really? Aren't you forgetting something?" Long Chen said with a smile.

"Me? What am I forgetting?" She asked confusedly.

"Right now, we're trapped in this world, with the only way to escape being by learning law in this world. A basic law that in your words, only genius gold core realm cultivators can learn. And here you are congratulating me on receiving a supreme law, three ranks higher than basic laws. To that, I'll have to ask you, how long will it take to learn a supreme law based on your calculations?" Long Chen asked as he looked at Xun with a smile that continued to widen.

"The people who comprehended the law of space before you took over five hundred years to gain the initial comprehension. But since you have this orb to help you, if everything goes well, you will probably comprehend it in less than hundred years" Xun replied innocently. Long Chen face-palmed himself as he heard her reply.

"So, I need to stay in this room for the next hundred years to get out of this world. What bountiful luck I have." Long Chen then laughed as he found his situation funny.

"Whatever, if that's what it takes, I'll do it. Besides, a supreme law will be a good compensation for the troubles I'll have to go through." Long Chen muttered as he looked up.

"That's a good boy! As long as you don't lose hope, you can achieve anything," Xun encouraged Long Chen /

"Wait a minute, I have a question on my mind. Are there laws above supreme laws?" Long Chen asked while looking at Xun.

"Of course there are. There are ancestral laws above the supreme laws but you don't need to know about them currently." Xun said.

"I have another question. If this is a trial, then where are the difficulties? If we have an infinite amount of time to stay in this world, then even the stupidest of mankind will learn a law after trying for hundreds of years. Where's the challenge in that?" Long Chen asked curiously /

"Oh, that's some good observation you have there. The truth is, you don't actually have an infinite amount of time. You know that while you're here, your real body is still in the real world, and considering the difference in the speed of time between this dimension and the real world, if you don't want to be an old man by the time you get out, you should probably be fast. If you

take too much time it's even possible that you might die of old age in the real world while you stay 12 in this realm." Xun explained.

Long Chen's expressions contorted as her words reached his ears.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 81 - 81: Infinite Space

Long Chen's expression contorted as he heard her words.

"Are you serious?" Long Chen asked again.

"I'm not lying." Xun replied with a straight face.

"Why didn't you tell me before!! I've been wasting my time all this while. Had I known, I would've just learned the law of wood and escaped instead of playing with my life!!" Long Chen said furiously.

"I didn't tell you because I knew you'd react like this. To learn a law, you need a peaceful mind. If there's chaos in your mind while you try to do so, you won't be able to learn it in a short time!" Xun said in a low voice.

"I can believe your words if it's about the calm mind, but why did you make me go to the Banshee tribe for a different orb, when you knew how important time is for my survival!!" Long Chen asked as he stared deep into her eyes.

"I didn't want you to miss out on the opportunity to learn a special law. You need to remember that the higher the level of the law that you learn in this world, the better the rewards you'll receive when you succeed. So, I suggested that you choose the orb Tian Shen used," Xun gave her explanation while looking down at the ground, hiding her face as she was ridden with guilt.

"Huh, I feel like you're gonna be the death of me one day." Long Chen couldn't help but say with a wry smile.

"Forget it, all I can do now is try my best to succeed. I'll leave success or failure for the future to decide." Long Chen mumbled.

'What's the worst that could happen? I'll die? I've already died once before.' Long Chen thought in his mind but Xun couldn't hear him as he had blocked her from accessing his thoughts.

"How much time do I have before I die in the real world?" Long Chen asked.

"That depends on your cultivation. Although you're currently cultivating here, your real body is also gaining the same cultivation in the real world." Xun replied.

"Oh, right. I know about this. While mortals can live up to 80 to 90 years generally, Body Refining Realm cultivators can live up to 100 years, whereas humans in Spirit Establishment Realm can live up to a hundred and twenty

years. In the meantime, humans in the Gold Core Realm can live up to one hundred and fifty years, while an Earth Realm Cultivator has a general life expectancy of two hundred years. But what does that mean in the time of this place?"

"Don't worry about it, as that'll just create an additional burden. You just have to keep doing your best in learning the Law of Space while cultivating to increase your cultivation realm. With a good balance and luck, you'll escape this world as a winner!" Xun replied while smiling, Giving Long Chen the assurance and encouragement he needed.

"I need some time to get into the proper mind-set, calm down and think things through." Long Chen muttered as he kept the orb back in his ring, went to the corner of the room, sat down in a comfortable position and soon closed his eyes.

After closing his eyes, Long Chen started to go through the memories contained within his mind, remembering everything he went through ever since he was born. His days on Earth, his death, the things he faced in this new world and all the events that transpired in between. His whole life slowly flashed before his eyes.

Just like this, four hours passed in an instant without Long Chen moving in the slightest. Suddenly, he just looked up and stood up with a gentle smile on his face.

"I'm ready. Tell me how to learn the law." Long Chen asked.

"Just sit in the cultivating posture and place the orb in front of you," Xun said and Long Chen followed her instructions.

"Keep your left hand on the orb and calm down. Try to get in contact with the element of this orb. Stay in this position and don't let any unnecessary thoughts enter your mind. Nothing else exists in this world other than you and the element. Stay in this state and you'll succeed. Best of luck, little guy," Xun said softly as she disappeared.

"Long Chen stayed in that position for over two hours, with a completely blank mind, trying to feel the element of the orb. Slowly, Long Chen felt his surroundings change. He could feel himself floating in a somewhat void empty space.

He couldn't help but open his eyes. He was amazed since as soon as he opened his eyes, he found himself floating in a vast space where no life nor land existed within it. As far as the eyes could see, there was only a vast space.

"Xun! Xun! What should I do next?" Long Chen said loudly but received no response. He kept trying again and again but no reply came, only a seemingly endless echo of his voice chimed in.

"Looks like I am alone here and even she can't come here." Long Chen muttered to himself.

"So I did what she said and found myself here. The law of space... This space... This place must be the key to learning the law of space. I'm here in this vast space with no life, looks like I need to stay here and try to understand the concept behind space until I gain the necessary comprehension." Long Chen muttered as he started looking around.

While Long Chen was trying to learn the law, the monster tribe was advancing towards the Banshee tribe. On their path, they encountered several other minor tribes whom they wiped out easily as they continued their march ahead.

A day passed, it was the third day after Long Chen left the Banshee tribe. The Queen was sitting on the throne alone in the central hall as she told everyone to not disturb her. Although she had slightly recovered, her hands were still missing.

Be that as it may, that didn't incite any feelings of regicide amongst any of her subordinates as everyone knew that even without her hands, the queen still was the strongest person in the tribe. After all, she didn't need her hands to use the Law of ice in the first place.

The only thing that still affected her was the backlash of her ice prison being broken by Long Chen but that still didn't make her much weaker as after the first Queen suffered from the backlash when her ice prison was broken in the last great war, she and the future generations of queens sought for the rarest of medicines to help decrease the backlash and after thousands of years, they had already collected enough for the medicine to be used once. That's why Mia's backlash time decreased from one month to three days.

Today, she'll truly be able to recover and use her ice prison once again if needed. However, she wasn't happy. She couldn't help but look at her shoulder and remember the worst moment of her life.

Suddenly, a heavy knock was heard on the door of the hall. Mia ordered for the door to be opened and soon, many royal court members entered the hall with anxious expressions on their faces.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 82 - 82: Asking For Help

Suddenly many royal court members entered the hall with a nervous expression.

"What are you so anxious about?" The Queen inquired.

"We have some horrible news, your highness! Our scouts have noticed the monster army advancing towards us. They'll be here in less than three days!!" One person amongst them said.

Queen Mia couldn't help but stand up as soon as she heard this news.

"The timing couldn't be any worse! Our barrier is broken and we can't use that to buy us some time! Tell everyone to prepare for war as quickly as possible! We don't have much time! Send one person to every tribe with a letter telling them about this news and to ask for their assistance. Don't forget to mention that if the monster tribe wins, then after us, it'll be their turn!" Mia ordered a girl wearing Luxurious clothes.

She was the queen's closest aid and royal advisor. She was the one who was the highest in the tribe's hierarchy after the queen and the now-deceased Alton. The girl hurriedly departed as soon as she received the orders of the queen to make arrangements.

"You make sure that all our soldiers get proper weapons and equipment! It's the war for the survival of our empire. Also, place all of the stronger siege weapons we have near the entrances. We'll blast them out as soon as they enter." She orders another subordinate who departed after receiving the orders/

"You get out the best Masons and craftsmen and prepare as many killer traps as you can! We need to give them as many losses as we could at once before they even reach near our boundary! Make sure the traps are deadly and unpredictable!" Queen Mia ordered another one who followed suit.

"You! Take all the kids of our tribe and bring them to the Elphia tribe! They're the strongest after us and they most probably have that human there! The kids will be safer in the Elphia tribe than staying here." Queen Mia ordered another one who with tears in her eyes left to carry out her orders/

Soon she gave everyone their orders as they all left, leaving the hall again empty with her alone sitting in deep thoughts/

"I made a huge mistake by using our Empire protecting barrier on the human. If we had that barrier, we would have had plenty of time to prepare ourselves and to wait till other tribes arrive. If only I wasn't clouded by anger." Queen Mia thought with a sad look as she remembered the events that transpired.

"I need to make some preparation myself." Queen Mia stood up from her throne and left.

The messengers of the Elphia tribe travelled day and night as needed so that they could reach their destination tribe as fast as possible and bring the much-needed help. Many of the nearby tribes had received the letter of the Banshee tribe asking the other tribes to come and unitedly fight the monsters.

Every tribe that received the letter decided to send their warriors to take part in the war as they know that if they didn't help, and the Banshee tribe survive, the Banshee tribe will forever remember them and might even take their revenge. And even if the Banshee tribe is wiped out and the monsters win, even the best outcome for their tribe would be nothing more than to be the slaves of the Monsters. So everyone decided to fight the monsters with the Banshee tribe.

It was the second day since the messenger of the Banshee tribe left the Banshee tribe to deliver the letter to the Elphia tribe leader to ask for their help. As the queen knew that the Elphia tribe was the strongest after them, and now that they had the human who broke their holy barrier with them as well, they were a force to be reckoned with. If they helped them, the Banshee tribe would survive. So in their letter, the queen had very polite words written by her retinue to ask for the help of the Banshee tribe leader.

"I have an urgent letter for Tribe Leader Tensha from Queen Mia! It's a matter of life and death! Please bring me to him immediately!" The messenger told the guards guarding the entrance of the Elphia tribe. After checking the Royal Mark of Banshee tribe on the letter, one of them immediately brought the messenger to the residence of the tribe leader Tensha.

Tensha was sitting in the hall with Xu, playing a board game while his Son Terra and Xu's daughter Xia were sitting at some distance from them.

"I can't believe he came back and entered seclusion without even meeting us! Although I know that we aren't that close, but we still traveled together for a while. It's rude to not even meet us after coming here!" Terra kept complaining as he sat in front of Xia.

"Why would he waste time on us? He and we are from two different worlds! I'm sure he must have a different set of priorities than us!" Xia said with a slight smile as she looked in the direction of the temple.

"Maybe, but I still think he should've met us once. I want to know why he came back so soon. Did he not like the Banshee tribe? Or did he miss the friendly nature of the Elphia tribe? And even after coming here, why did he straight away go into seclusion. He could've done so in the Banshee tribe as well! There is something strange in all this," Terra muttered.

"You don't need to think too much. You can ask him yourself when he comes out! I don't think he'll forever stay in that temple." Xia gave a light chuckle.

Suddenly the door of the room was knocked. Terra opened the door and found an old white-haired man standing outside. The old man entered the hall as he looked at Tensha

"Master, a messenger from the Banshee tribe is standing outside. He said he has some important message for you and that is a life and death matter," The old man said.

"Bring him in. Even if it wasn't a life or death matter, I still couldn't send the messenger of the Banshee tribe back without hearing what he had to say." Tensha thought for a moment and said. The old man left and entered with a little white-haired boy who looked to be 16.

"Tribe leader, Tensha! This is the letter my queen sent for you. I hope that you accept and read it right now and make a decision as it's an urgent matter." The boy said.

"Give me the letter," Tensha said with a serious expression.

The white-haired boy immediately handed him the letter.

Tensha started reading the letter, and soon his expression changed.

"What's written in the letter?" Xu Asked as he noticed his expression.

"Queen Mia asked for our help," Tensha said with a grave expression.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 83 - 83: Strange Barrier

"Queen Mia asked for our help," Tensha told Xu with a grave expression.

"Why would she need our help?" Xu asked with a confused look on his face.

"A large Monster army is advancing towards the Banshee tribe with the intention to take over the world. They are slaughtering the smaller tribes in their path. Queen Mia asked for our tribe's help to fight against the monsters," Tensha explained.

"We will need to seriously talk about it. Stay here, we'll be right back." Xu said to the messenger after thinking for a while as he left with Tensha, leaving Xia and Terra behind.

Inside a secret Hall, Tensha and Xu sat on opposite sides of the table as they started their discussion.

"Looks like although the human left the Banshee tribe in a short time, the monster tribe probably somehow found out that the human was staying there. I'm sure they're coming to get revenge for the last Great War. Our decision to send Master Chen there worked in our favor as planned. Now the war will occur in the Banshee tribe's vicinity and our innocent citizens will stay safe." Xu said with an expressionless face.

"How can you be sure that they are declaring war because of Master Chen?" Tensha inquired.

"What else could it be? He stayed there for a while and returned to us a few days ago. The monster tribe that didn't attack in the last thousands of years suddenly decided to attack the strongest tribe, especially the one that housed a human. It's easier to guess," Xu replied.

"You're right. But although it's good that the war won't occur in our vicinity and the kids and elderly of our tribe won't die in the crossfire but I feel bad for the innocent citizens of the Banshee tribe. They must have kids as well." Tensha said, looking upset.

"You don't have to feel bad about it. It was only a matter of time before the monsters found out about the Human and the monsters would definitely have attacked us when that happened. It was either us or another tribe. And for us, the safety of our tribe members come first!" Xu said, looking at Tensha.

"And amongst other tribes, the Banshee tribe is the only one who can hold out for longest against the assault of the Monsters with their Protection barrier until the other tribes prepare and come for help." Xu continued with a determined expression.

"You're probably right. But now that we achieved our goal and drew the war away from our lands, it's time we go to their aid and fulfill our responsibility." Tensha said with a slight smile.

"Of course we can't let them be wiped out completely. I don't want us to be the strongest tribe because the other tribe was wiped out, but I wouldn't mind us being the strongest because another tribe was weakened. So tell me your official decision about this matter so that I could prepare." Xu said with a smile.

"The Elphia tribe will go help the Banshee tribe but if the situation looks bad, we'll escape as the lives of our members are of utmost priority!" Tensha said gravely.

"Alright, let's go tell the messenger of the Banshee tribe our decision and get things ready," Xu said as he got up and walked towards the door with Tensha behind him.

As they entered the hall, they saw the messenger of the Banshee tribe was still standing right there and Terra and Xia stood near him as they kept asking questions about the monster army that was seen. As soon as the messenger saw Tensha enter the hall, he looked at him with a hopeful expression.

"We have reached the decision that we will go help the Banshee tribe and give our best to fight against the Savage monsters." Tensha declared with a determined look.

"Old Xu, You will get our army ready in three days and we will depart. Till then the messenger can stay in our tribe," Tensha said looking at Xu.

"Tribe leader Tensha. I hope you can prepare as fast as you can as the monster army will soon reach the tribe and any delay can cause our whole tribe to be destroyed. I plead you to take this matter seriously as if the monster tribe is standing outside your door." The messenger said emotionally.

"You don't have to talk like that. I'm not ignorant enough to not know about the barrier you guys have. For seven days, even monster Emperors won't be able to enter. So I want to make our preparation the best we possibly could since we have time." Tensha replied.

"We don't have the barrier anymore. There's nothing protecting our tribe and the innocent members who can't even fight." The messenger said as he kept looking at Tensha with pleading eyes.

"What happened to your barrier?" Tensha asked confused.

"It was destroyed by someone," the messenger said with a wry look.

"Who could be strong enough to break the tribe protecting barrier of the Banshee tribe? Did a monster emperor come before the army could? Why didn't you inform us sooner then?" Tensha asked with a shocked expression.

"It wasn't done by a monster emperor... It was done by the human whom they escorted to our tribe," Messenger said as he looked towards Xia and Terra.

Everyone's mind turned blank while their mouths opened wide as soon as they heard his words, especially Terra and Xia.

"That can't be possible... He didn't stay there for even a week, how could he break the barrier? Also, why would he do such a thing!" Xu blurted out loudly as she stared at the messenger.

"He didn't need to stay there for a week as he broke the barrier in just three strikes." The messenger replied as he remembered the scene he saw that day, again shocking the others.

"As for why he did it? He and our Queen had some... misunderstanding that led to a fight between them." The messenger carefully phrased his words as he said.

"I knew he was strong but never knew he could be so strong," Tensha muttered as he stared at the messenger.

'It's good that we acted courteously with him.' Xia thought as she stared at the messenger.

"Alright, we'll make our preparation faster, but it will still take more than a day as we need to be fully prepared to fight against the monster tribe. Till then you stay here. Terra, make the preparations for his stay." Tensha said.

"Let's go, we need to tell great master Chen about this matter. Old Xu, you get the army ready while I Inform great master Chen. Although he had a problem with the queen, but he's so strong I'm sure he'll help us in this tragic situation." Tensha said to Xu as he walked outside.

Soon Tensha reached the temple. He just wanted to knock on the door as he didn't want to enter without Long Chen's permission so as to not anger him. He was even more considerate since he learned the tragic fate of the barrier of the Banshee tribe.

But as soon as he reached near the door, he felt a strange invisible barrier surrounding the temple stopping him from taking a step forward. As soon as he took a step towards the temple, he found in the blink of an eye, the world changed around him as his back now faced the Temple. He turned back and tried again but the same situation kept happening.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 84 - 84: I'm Not Sharing

Tensha attempted this repeatedly but nonetheless couldn't go anywhere near the entrance of the temple no matter how much he tried. Eventually, when he grew exhausted, he gave up attempting to go near the temple. He tried utilizing his voice and shouted loudly so that Long Chen could hear and come out.

People nearby couldn't help but be astonished at the sights of their tribe leader standing in front of the temple and calling out 'Master Chen'. But even after struggling for a long time, Tensha didn't receive any reply, nor the door opened. He gave up and told the guard to stay here and to keep screaming at the door. He also told the guard to inform him whenever Long Chen came out as he departed from that place dead tired.

"I have told the captains to prepare the soldiers for war and transport as soon as possible. We will soon be ready to go." Xu informed Tensha as soon as Tensha reached his residence.

"How did your talk with Master Chen go? and why are you looking so tired?" Xu inquired as he noticed Tensha's exhausted look.

"I did not talk to him as I can't even go near the temple. There's a barrier that prevents me from going near, and it is the strongest barrier I have ever seen. It was able to switch my direction every time I took a step inside. Every time I took a step forward, I ended up where I started, with my back facing the temple." Tensha explained to Xu with a downcast expression /

"How can this be? I will go check myself!" Xu couldn't believe Tensha, so he himself went outside to check.

Tensha ignored him and went back to his room as he sat on a chair and started resting.

"Father? Are we actually going to fight monsters?" Terra approached Tensha as he asked.

"Yes, we are. We need to save the land and the people. It is a war of existence which we must go through. But you, little guy, aren't a part of that we! You and all the little ones are staying in the tribe!" Tensha said seriously.

"Why?? I want to fight for our future as well!! Are you thinking that I am weak and that I will drag you down?" Terra asked with a sour look.

"No, son. I know you are really strong, but I don't want you to be killed in this war. There will be monster kings and monster Emperors in the war, It is too dangerous for you. Also, someone needs to stay in the tribe as well. To protect the tribe in case any unpredictable situations occur!" Tensha said with a gentle smile as he looked at his son.

"Don't take this situation lightly, son! Our tribes' safety is our biggest priority and I'm leaving you here to ensure that it's safe! You're not staying away from the battlefield, instead, you're staying here to protect our tribe!" Tensha continued.

"Alright father, I'll stay here," Terra said with a downcast expression.

"Is there any information about my elder brother?" Terra asked with an expectant look as he gazed at Tensha.

"No, he hasn't contacted us since he left two weeks ago. Since then, there has been no information about your elder brother. I've sent people everywhere, but no tribe had any information about him. I'm so worried for him," Tensha replied with a grim expression.

"Don't worry, father. Brother is really strong, he must still be training in the wild. You should properly punish him when he gets home!!" Terra said with a slight smile hiding the worries in his heart.

"I'll go now, you have a proper rest," Tensha said.

Tensha stayed there for two hours when he suddenly noticed Xu come back looking dead tired as well.

"Old Xu, you look even worse than I did. So how much success did you have?" Tensha smilingly said.

"Don't make fun of me. I believe you, there is actually such a strange barrier there which is impossible to pass. I don't know what else we could do." Xu said with an annoyed expression.

"What else can we do, just prepare and go to war ourselves without great master Chen! We can't delay, as, if the Banshee tribe is wiped out, we'll be in big trouble. We can leave Terra and Xia here who can inform Master Chen about this matter whenever he comes out. If everything works out, he'll be there for help." Tensha said with a sad smile.

"Our army will be ready by tomorrow night and then will depart," Xu straight away said. He stayed there for a little more to talk about strategy for the war. After a while, he stood up as he left.

A Day promptly passed as the monster tribe reached near the Banshee tribe.

"We will soon be in the land of Banshee. I am so excited. Finally, I will get to savor their blood." A monster king who looked like a wolf said with a wide grin.

"You can have your fill, but what I am more interested in is their queen. I heard she's a real beauty. I will take her as my new concubine and bring her to my harem to enjoy her every night." Bull king said with a pervy smile.

"Hey, not fair. I wanted her too." Bear king interfered in their conversation and said loudly.

"You can't have my concubine, old bear!" Bull king said as he stared at the bear king.

"She is not yours yet!! I will be the one who she belongs to!!" Bear king said with an angry look.

"Stop arguing!! Why don't you both have her!! You both can have her for a week each and take turns." Skeleton king said as he laughed.

"I am not sharing anything with him!!" Both of them replied at the same time.

Skeleton king wanted to say more but suddenly a loud Commotion started. A large number of pits kept being revealed at various spots as large amounts of monsters kept stepping on the trap zone. These pits had many sharp spikes that protruded from inside and pierced the flesh of the fallen monsters. There was chaos in the formation as more and now monsters kept dying. In a matter of a few seconds, thousands of monsters had died.

"Everyone stop overreacting! These little tricks of the Banshee tribe shouldn't be enough to create turmoil in your strong heart!! Be brave and keep walking!! And be careful where you step. There might be more traps, ahead." Monster Emperor Shentia said as he saw the situation of their army.

Although most of the Monsters calmed down and continued ahead, more and more Monsters kept dying as more and more traps kept being unveiled. After

a long time and the losses of tens of thousands of soldiers, the monster tribe finally saw the view of the border of the Banshee tribe.

"So that's the army of the Banshee tribe? Nothing special. I see the queen but not the human though? Did they already run away?" Monster Emperor Taras said.

"They must be inside the tribe. We will soon see them," Monster emperor Shentia commented.

The army of the Banshee tribe stood outside their entrance in proper formation with various weapons, while the army of the monster tribe stood at the opposite side of the battlefield

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 85 - 85: The War Begins

"Oh, my heavens!! Such a massive army! Even after going through all the traps, they still have such an enormous army left? It is at least ten times bigger than ours!" Warriors of the Banshee tribe were alarmed as soon as they were able to catch a glimpse of the monster army.

"Is that big lizard a monster King or monster Emperor? He has such a horrifying aura!!" A Banshee warrior remarked as he gazed at Monster Emperor Taras. The warriors kept talking amongst themselves.

The Queen kept staring at the monster army with a grim expression on her face.

"You guys can march ahead! We are not going to involve ourselves in this war until the human interferes! It's time for you little ones to take the lead, manage this army and prove your strength!" Monster Emperor Shentia decreed as he glanced at the ten Monster Kings.

"Don't disappoint us," Monster Emperor Taras said to the Monster Kings.

"We won't," All the Monster Kings said in one tone. They immediately ordered the army to advance. The army commenced their crusade towards the army of the Banshee tribe at a steady pace while the Banshee army stood in Proper formation without taking a step backward.

As soon as the Monster army covered half the distance, hundreds of ice arrows came flying towards the monster army from the right side. The monsters finally noticed that thousands of warriors hidden on the right side of the battlefield in the dense jungle with a bow in their hands as they again fired. The arrows kept showering at the monster of the monster tribe, which kept killing monsters in large quantities.

"I'll take care of it," Bear King said as he couldn't help but frown after seeing this happen. He immediately started moving in the archers' direction. The arrows kept coming at him, but he easily kept deflecting them as he proceeded towards the archers with strong killing intent. Suddenly an arrow came towards him at five times the speed of a normal arrow. He tried deflecting it, but the arrow easily grazed him giving him a bloody wound on the skin of his left arm.

He looked in that location the arrow came from and saw an old man with Brown hair standing there with a Yellow Bow in his hands. He was around 6

feet tall and had a blue color skin. He also had two ears on both sides of his face, which was a clear indication of someone from the Barong tribe!

Barong tribe, the tribe of the wind also known as the weakest tribe but that didn't mean that the strongest person in the tribe was weak as well. The strongest person in the Barong tribe, the tribe leader Bala was said to be the best archer in all the land and using the law of wind with his arrows was even more lethal.

When it came to fighting, he was only weaker than a few of the strongest tribe leaders like Queen Mia of the Banshee tribe, leader of Elphia tribe Tensha and the leader of the Mulan tribe, Mazumas. Mulan tribe was also the tribe that attacked their tribe, almost bringing it to the brink of extinction so that they had to give an orb to the Banshee tribe for protection.

"That blue skin and such strength. If I am not wrong, you are tribe leader Bala of the Barong tribe. I am the monster King of the Monster tribe. You should be glad you get to die by my hands. Also since we are using laws, how about you see mine as well." Bear King said with a wide grin as a sphere of fire appeared in his hands which he hurled at the tribe leader Bala.

The sphere of blazing fire advanced towards Bala at rapid speed. Bala made a Vortex of wind around himself which absorbed the fire and protected Bala. But he couldn't help but sweat heavily because of the heat of the fire trapped in his vortex. He increased the diameter of the vortex and when it was wide enough, divided it into four little vortexes all moving in a different direction leaving himself behind and safe.

"Nice, I can do that too," Bear King said as a large vortex made of fire appeared in front of him and advanced towards Bala. But it didn't stop with one, a second vortex appeared, a third and a fourth came as well, all moving towards Bala from different directions.

While Bear King was busy fighting the tribe leader of the Barong tribe, monsters kept dying under the shower of arrows by the Barong army who had already arrived to help the Banshee tribe a long time ago and were hiding as per the plan discussed by all tribes.

The rest of the army kept advancing towards the Banshee tribe, leaving the bear King's army behind to take care of the Barong warriors but again the same situation occurred. This time instead of the barrage of arrows, Heavy boulders fell from the sky crushing the monsters who kept dying in the Number of hundreds each minute.

"Looks like it's my turn now. If I'm not wrong, it's the tribe leader of the Mulan tribe, Mazumas." Bull King looked in the direction where the boulders kept coming from and saw a large army standing there with siege weapons and attacking them. Standing in the front was the tribe leader of the Mulan tribe, Mazumas.

Mazumas was short and four feet tall but he didn't look young like the Banshee tribe members, instead, he looked like an old man with a wrinkled face. Except for his face, his whole body was covered in brown shells. Although his muscles were big and strong, his height deformed his shape. He had four hands, two on the left and two on the right.

"You are one of the people I wanted to fight, tribe leader Mazumas. You are said to be the strongest when it comes to physical strength and physical defense. Let's see how long your body can survive." Bull King laughed as he said.

"Oh, you know of me? I apologize for not knowing about you." Tribe leader Mazumas said smilingly.

"But then again, if I don't know about you, you mustn't be anyone special," Just as Bull King was pleased as tribe leader Mazumas apologized to him, Mazumas' next words shocked him.

"You're courting death!!!!" Bull King said as he ran towards Mazumas and punched out. Mazumas punched as well. Both used no laws or Martial skill and just their physical bodies. While the Bull King only felt a slight impact, Mazumas was forced three steps back.

"As I expected, A monster's physique is definitely powerful. But too bad, I don't just have it to rely on." Mazumas said as a punch came out from the ground made completely of stones and attached Bull King.

Bull King punched back, blasting the hand apart, but things didn't end as two thick walls made of stone appeared front and back of bull King and instantly closed in on him but they couldn't do anything at all as were easily broken by the bull King.

"You are stronger than I expected," Mazumas commented.

"I am, but let's see if you are or not," Bull King said with anger visible on his face as four walls made of fire appeared on four sides of Mazumas and started closing in. Bull King smiled as he used a similar attack as Mazumas and was about to kill him with his flaming walls.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 86 - 86: If You Want A Fight

While the Banshee tribe comprehended the law of ice, the Mulan tribe comprehended the law of Earth instead. The Elphia tribe comprehended the law of wood, whereas the Barong tribe comprehended the law of wind.

Law of ice being the low-level special law was slightly stronger than the law of fire that monster tribe comprehended which would've given them a slight edge in the battle but the monster tribe didn't just have a history of being able to comprehend only one law. The Monster tribe had two law orbs, and they were the only tribe whose members were able to successfully comprehend a different law.

Many amongst the monster tribe had comprehended two laws. Law of fire and law of strength. Together with these two laws and large monster army, they were the strongest tribe in the land. Especially their Monster Emperors who had the strongest cultivation in this world.

While two Monster Kings were fighting the tribe leaders of Mulan and Barong tribes, their armies were engaged in a fearsome fight as well. However, the eight other Monster Kings kept advancing forward with their armies.

"Those two are already enjoying the fight. I want to fight as well!! But they already grabbed the decent opponents and I don't want to bully their opponent with numbers." Tiger king said smiling.

"Let them have their fun. We can enjoy the fight against the queen of Banshee and the leader of Elphia. They are the strongest two amongst our enemies. It'll be even more fun fighting them," Skeleton king said with his heavy voice.

As they continued ahead, many other tribes kept coming out from their hiding place, engaging them with their sneak attacks from a distance. The Monster Kings kept nominating themselves to fight, but the other tribe had a plan as well. Mostly using the tactics of two to three weaker tribe leaders against a monster king, since the other tribe leaders were weaker than Mazumas and Bala.

Just like this, most of the monster army was engaged in the fight, whereas, only a small portion of the army continued to advance towards the Banshee tribe's army with only two Monster Kings in the lead, Tiger king, and the Skeleton king. But even this small part of the monster army was a few times bigger than the entire army of the Banshee tribe.

"I have seen the army of most of the tribes, but still haven't seen the army of the Elphia tribe. Did they not come?" Tiger king muttered.

"Even if they come, it wouldn't change anything. As today is the day we rewrite history and rule the land. Even if Elphia hides, they can't survive. After we slaughter everyone here, we can go to the Elphia tribe and have our fun there." Skeleton king commented in a malicious tone.

"Go on little ones, have your fun." Skeleton king ordered his army of skeleton monsters as they reached close enough distance from Banshee warriors. The monster army started rapidly advancing towards the Banshee army.

"You can go as well, show them the strength of my army." The Tiger king ordered the army he controlled as well.

As the armies accelerated, they soon started running towards the Banshee army with bloodthirsty expressions. The Banshee Army all started doing the same gesture resulting in the ground between them turning to ice, making most of the Monsters fall, while some stood their ground. A huge wave of fire appeared, melting the ice and attacking the Banshee army who made a wall of ice individually to survive the sea of flame. The fire melted the ice, but not before vanishing itself.

Both armies engaged in fierce battle as the battlefield became filled with ice and fire. Mist covered the entire area, reducing the visibility of the battleground.

"Queen Mia, are you just going to watch your army getting slaughtered while you stay there? Don't you want to have fun on this battlefield with us?" Tiger King said laughing as he took pleasure in the view of the battlefield.

Queen Mia stood near the Banshee tribe, seeing her army suffer losses with Grave expressions. She was wearing a white robe encircling her body below her shoulders.

"You are intelligent, by not striking my army personally, as that would force us to be involved in the battle of the little ones as well, which won't be good for your army." Skeleton king said in a deep expression.

"But won't you fight us yourself! Why waste time standing there? Are you waiting for someone?... Let me tell you, we are getting bored here. All other Monster Kings are getting to fight, except us. Since you are the strongest tribe leaders amongst our enemies, show us your strength and let's start our fight soon." Tiger king said.

"Don't worry, even if you lose, I won't kill you. Both old bull and old bear want to take you as their concubine and give you their sweet love." Tiger King Further said, looking at Queen Mia with a slight smile on his face.

'Why isn't help from the Elphia tribe here yet. It has been such a long time since the Messenger left to deliver the message. I'm sure they must've received the letter at least three days ago, are they really not coming.' The queen thought with a grave expression as she started at Monster Kings.

"Answer me!" The tiger king roared loudly.

"If you want a fight, you'll get it!" The Queen stared at the Tiger king as she said slowly.

The Queen looked up as her pupils turned white. Snow started falling from the sky as it started combining and soon took the shape of a huge arrow made of ice. In a blink of an eye, the arrow fell towards the Tiger king who stared at the falling arrow.

"Heavenly Flame finger!" Tiger king roared as he pointed his hand towards the arrow. A huge flaming finger appeared in front of him, which attacked the ice arrow. As soon as the ice arrow came into contact with the flaming finger, they collided for what seemed like a short moment. While the finger completely faded away after this collision, the ice arrow melted quite a bit as well, but it still continued in its path toward the tiger king.

As it reached the tiger king, he Punched out with just his hands, which collided with the ice arrow, completely shattering it. While Queen Mia's attack was shattered, the tiger king felt a sharp chill on his hand, which came in contact with the arrow. A Flame appeared on his hands, giving him warmth as he stared at the queen.

"That was a good display. Time for me to get serious as well!" Tiger king laughed.

In The Elphia tribe, inside the temple, Long Chen was sitting with his left hand placed on top of a transparent orb which was placed in front of him. There was no movement from him. His eyes were open, but he wasn't blinking, Time continued passing. Long Chen stayed there for what seemed like a long time. All concepts of time were lost.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 87 - 87: Congratulations

'SPACE... The beginning of the universe and the end of it. One of the most mysterious forces in existence which rule every domain and influenced the world in the most mysterious of ways.'

Long Chen spent what seemed to be like an infinity inside the vast space which contained billions of stars. All these stars had a unique kind of beauty amongst themselves.

A long-time passed inside this vast empty space. Long Chen stayed there for a long time comprehending the space, occasional spatial cracks could be seen in the space which increased Long Chen's perception by a small margin. Newer stars kept coming into existence and while old ones kept getting wiped out of existence. This cycle of destruction and creation continued with long Chen at the center of it. He saw everything and felt the mysteriousness of space.

As Long Chen spent more and more time in this space, his comprehension kept increasing. And as Long Chen's comprehension of space kept increasing, spatial cracks appearing inside the space also kept intensifying.

After an unknown amount of time passed, the entire space was filled with spatial cracks throughout. Long Chen stayed at the center of everything, surrounded by spatial cracks and dimensional warps all around him. He had his eyes opened as he kept gazing at the spatial crack flickering in front of him.

He had forgotten all awareness of his purpose and lost all sense of time. He wasn't even sure if there was any concept of time in this space. Was the time passing every second like usual, or was the time staying still? Did time even exist here, Long Chen had no idea. He just kept the focus on understanding the mysteriousness of space, which in turn increased his comprehension.

In the Trial world, Long Chen's body was still sitting with its eyes open. Still inside the temple of the Elphia tribe, but an unusual event started taking place. The color of Long Chen's eyes changed as now a vast space filled with billions of stars and countless flickering space cracks could be seen in his eyes.

Inside the space, spatial cracks kept increasing while outside in the trial world the crack started appearing on the orb of the law of space that Long Chen had his hands on. The space Long Chen was in, kept getting unstable as long Chen's comprehension of the law of space kept rising, which matched the pace of the cracks increasing on the law of space orb.

The space kept getting more and unstable the longer Long Chen stayed inside. Long Chen had no idea of what was happening near him and of his improving comprehension of the law of space by leaps and bounds. Long Chen just kept his focus on the space crack in front of him, forgetting the existence of everything other than it. Soon as Long Chen's comprehension reached a specific point, the whole space collapsed.

Long Chen gained focus as he found himself sitting back in the temple. He saw what lay in front of him and felt even more chaotic. The orb for law of space was broken and its crushed pieces lay in front of him looking rather ordinary unlike before. Just like ordinary stones, Long Chen could feel nothing special from it.

He looked around and saw Xun sitting beside him, gazing at him.

"You really amazed me, little one. Congratulations on successfully comprehending the law of space," Xun said with a big smile.

"Oh, how much time had passed." Long Chen looked at her with a slight smile as he said.

"For you? I'm not sure as I don't know what you saw since the moment your consciousness entered in a locked-down state after you began trying to cultivate the law of space. But outside here, only a few days had passed." Xun said with an uncertain look.

"Only a few days? Didn't you say I will have to spend around a hundred years to learn a supreme law?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face.

"I never know what people go through to learn a law from the various Law orbs. I only know how much time it generally takes, as although I've seen Tian Shen go through it, I always lost contact with him as his consciousness was locked down as he started cultivating the orb just like yours did after you began." Xun said as she looked at Long Chen.

"Tian Shen never told me what he faced after it happened. Even I'm not sure what will happen after the process begins. I can't be sure how you were so fast as I didn't see what you faced. Tell me what happened since the moment you touched the orb of law of space." Xun asked as she gazed into Long Chen's eyes.

Long Chen gazed at Xun for a moment before continuing.

"I can't properly explain it, I found myself in a vast empty space filled with stars and some spatial cracks. I roamed around for what felt like years and years as I saw the birth of newer stars and the destruction of older ones. I lost track of time and wasn't even sure if I stayed there for ten years or a hundred or a thousand. I slowly started understanding space, only a little bit though. I don't know what happened after as the next thing I saw was me back here, talking to you right now." Long Chen said as he remembered the experience.

"Interesting... Although I can't be sure that my guess is correct, but I can only imagine that the place you are describing, either, had no concept of time there or had a really slow speed of time, almost negligible, almost as if time was paused. That's all I am getting from your description as according to you, you stayed there for years. I know that supreme elements all have their unique characteristics, but I didn't imagine the law of space could achieve that," Xun said as she put her finger on her red luscious lips as if she was thinking.

"Why couldn't others learn the law of space so easily since we get so much time in there?" Long Chen couldn't help but ask.

"I don't think anyone gets that much time since these are the orbs made by my supreme master and contained his laws. Only ones with his bloodline could get the most out of it. And I think the law of space had an advantage of time for you since you have his blood." Xun replied with a thought.

"Did the Supreme ancestor make all the orbs in the real world as well?" Long Chen Inquired with a doubtful expression.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 88 - 88: Law Seed

"Did the Supreme ancestor make all the orbs in the real world as well?" Long Chen Inquired with a doubtful expression.

"It is precisely what you said. Master comprehended a myriad of laws. I don't know the mysteries behind his actions, but at one point in time, he placed each of his laws in a separate orb and sent them to the parts unknown of the universe. He also placed drops of his blood essence, each drops having a unique ability of its own He places other things as well inside the ring you're wearing on your hand right now." Xun said as she gazed at the roof/

"He made different spatial dimensions for each inheritor inside the ring and threw the ring into the void. He planned everything and set various restrictions and conditions on the ring about how a person could access the various dimensions." Xun told Long Chen as she gazed at him.

"He also created me as a treasure spirit of the ring and set some restrictions on me as well. That's why I can't disclose too much critical information, allow access to other spatial dimensions in the ring or teach you Martial skills that could help you in the various trials of the inheritor other than some basic things. There are other restrictions as well, but you don't need to know about that." Xun said to Long Chen.

"Then he sent the ring and the orbs to various unknown parts of the universe using his law of space. Even I don't know the actual location of the orbs unless I'm close to it." Xun continued as she reminisced about the past.

"As you know, Tian Shen got access to one of the space dimensions when he found the ring and received the supreme one's bloodline and all the trials ahead. That moment changed his life completely. I don't know if that was a good thing or a bad." She said as she looked upwards with a slight melancholy in her eyes.

"Amazing, the Supreme ancestor was so strong! One day I'll be that strong as well. I'll be even stronger." Long Chen couldn't help but say as his heart filled with determination, unknowing of the fact how much weight his words carried.

"Wait a minute, why did this orb break?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at the broken pieces of the orb.

"Oh, that? You remember when I said the orbs of laws here weren't real and just made for trial purposes?" Xun asked.

"Yes, you also said that I can't take these orbs out of this world as they aren't real and that the real ones exist in the real one." Long Chen replied.

"Right. There is only one real orb for each law that Master had comprehended. If I had to guess, I'd say that those orbs were made for his successors as they get destroyed after someone who had his bloodline comprehends the law." Xun explained to Long Chen.

"Doesn't that mean that I can never comprehend the laws that Tian Shen already learned as those orbs are probably destroyed?" Long Chen asked with a confused expression.

"Not exactly, but that should be your concern for later," Xun said mysteriously.

"You can't tell me because of restrictions or is it something else?" Long Chen inquired, but Xun just smiled.

"Forget it, back to the topic, since you wanted me to use the law of slaughter, that must mean that the orb Tian Shen studied from wasn't destroyed. Why didn't that orb break when he comprehended it? He also had the Supreme ancestor's bloodline." Long Chen said as he pointed out a problem in Xun's explanation.

"That's because that orb wasn't a real orb, it was just a replica of a law of slaughter orb made by the bloodline Temple for the trial purposes like all the other orbs that exist here," Xun explained.

"So this one was real? Why was a real orb for the law of space in this world!" Long Chen asked as he stared at the broken pieces of orb lying in front of him.

"Even I don't know about that. I don't have any control over Bloodline Temple and what it does but maybe the real law of space was always in Bloodline Temple which it used this time and you received luckily." Xun said, smiling.

"There's something really strange about all this." Long Chen muttered as he stared at the orb pieces. He had a strange feeling about all this.

"What's the difference between the replica Tian Shen comprehended from and the real orb since they both do the same job?" Long Chen asked.

"There is actually a big difference. The same difference that exists in the real world as well. No matter which one you comprehended from, you'll gain similar control over that element, but there's one advantage of comprehending

from the real orb made by the master for you. The real orbs give the person who comprehends the law a unique skill related to that law, whereas replicas that are made by bloodline Temple in this trial world don't." Xun explained.

"What do you mean by 'the same difference that exists in the real world'? do the replicas exist there as well?" Long Chen couldn't help but ask.

"I haven't seen any. But what I mean by my statement is not because of the orb, but because of the person. In the real world when a person who doesn't have Supreme Master's bloodline tries learning the law from the orb, he'll only gain a slight understanding of the law, but he wouldn't be able to comprehend the law just by the orb, he'll have to comprehend most of the law himself without the orb also he won't gain any special skills, but on the positive side, the orbs won't break either. Also, most people can only learn one or two laws like this before they are old enough and die. Whereas those with master's bloodline can gain a unique skill with each law And will gain more In terms of comprehension and control of their specific element, that too at a faster speed." Xun further explained.

"Amazing, I guess there are a lot of perks of receiving this inheritance. Oh right, I have a skill in my mind that I didn't have before. Is it the same thing you were talking about? It must be because this is the real orb!!" Long Chen said with excitement.

"Exactly. I don't know what skill you received, but it must be really good. But don't be too happy. Although you can control space to some extent, you're only in the initial stages. You have to know that you haven't comprehended the law of space completely. You have formed a space law seed in your Martial space. You have to increase your understanding and comprehension of the law of space further which will result in this seed becoming a plant and growing until one day it becomes a beautiful tree. The day when this law seed becomes an ancestral tree of space, that will be the day you become the ruler of space. Master had many ancestral trees of various laws." Xun said with a subtle smile.

Long Chen used his consciousness to enter his Martial space and could actually see a seed-like thing floating near the ground. An entire space filled with stars could be seen inside this seed which just floated a few inches above the ground. His Martial soul stood far from it, still with eyes closed but now it had a new symbol on the dorsal side of his left hand. It looked like an ancient Character but Long Chen couldn't understand its meaning. He could only guess what it meant.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 89 - 89: Learning Another Law

This ancient character was pitch black in color but occasionally a few specks of light could be seen shining inside the darkness. Seeing the pattern, Long Chen had the feeling that it somehow represented space.

Long Chen looked at his red core but it still looked the same, like a red blazing sun lightening up his Martial space. He got his consciousness out of his martial space after having a thorough observation.

"There's a new pattern on my Martial soul's hands. What's that?" Long Chen looking at Xun.

"You don't have to worry about it. That just means that you've learned space law. The character on your Martial soul's hands represents the law of space and that it gained an affinity with space." Xun casually replied to Long Chen.

"Oh, by the way, when you said people take many years to learn law, you meant that's just the time taken to form a law seed of that element?" Long Chen asked.

"Yup, People who comprehend the law themselves without any external help all start by having a law seed after their years of hard work. Those who don't have the bloodline of Master and use a law orb for comprehension don't even get the law seed. The orb only helps them get half the way. They learn many things about the law from the orb except the main thing, the essence of that Law. After that, they need to put in the work required themselves to understand the essence of that law, complete their comprehension of the law and finally form a law seed. But in both situations, the law seed formed is normal. Whereas since these orbs were specially made for master's successors, the law seed you have is special." Xun explained.

"What's special about it?" Long Chen asked.

"You will know when the time comes. Anyway I'm tired of speaking so much. We have spent so much time here. Aren't you going to go outside?" Xun replied as she gazed at Long Chen.

"Since I learned the law and passed this trial. When will I be able to exit this land?" Long Chen asked curiously.

"You'll exit this world three days after you form a law seed. It's already night outside. Do you want to go to the house of the clan leader and rest or stay here to talk all night long?" Xun said with a cheeky smile.

"Since it's already night, I can just stay here and Cultivate. I can go there in the morning." Long Chen replied.

"But before that... I feel like it's been ages since I did it." Long Chen said as he looked at Xun and took it out in front of her eyes.

"I can't keep this little guy hungry," Long Chen said smiling as he started feeding his Qi to the egg he took out from his ring. After finishing it, Long Chen put the egg back and began his cultivation.

Eight hours passed. Long Chen was already at the peak of the 4th stage gold core realm before and after the night's cultivation, he had already broken past the 5th stage of gold core realm and was reaching near the peak of the 6th stage of the gold core realm. He continued ahead and broke through to the initial level of the sixth stage gold core realm before stopping his Cultivation.

"I'm going to miss this world and this superfast Cultivation speed I have here," Long Chen said with a slight smile.

"Ooh ... I don't think you will," Xun said with a mysterious expression on her face.

"Can I learn another law in the next two days? The ice law is pretty good." Long Chen said .

"You can try," Xun said as she grinned.

"Hmm? Where is that orb?" Long Chen said, shocked as he looked everywhere in the room, not finding the ice law orb. He even looked inside his ring but didn't find the orb for the law of ice inside.

"Forget about that, why don't you go and try the law of wood." Xun laughed as she said.

Long Chen hurriedly went towards the orb for the law of wood which was placed at the center of the hall with a doubtful expression and tried picking it up but his hands straight away passed through the orb like it was illusory.

"Why don't you tell me straight away," Long Chen said to the still grinning Xun with an annoyed expression.

"Alright Alright, I'll tell you. You can learn a law in this world to pass the trial, but that's the limit to it. Since you already passed the trial, you can't access any other orb. If you desperately want to learn the law of ice from the orb, you will have to find it in the real world," Xun explained.

"I understand what's happening with the law of wood orb, but what about the law of ice? How come it disappeared!" Long Chen inquired.

"It didn't disappear. It went to its original position since you already learned a law. It went to the place you picked it from. I imagine it went to the temple of the banshee tribe." Xun explained.

"Huh, so many unnecessary restrictions. What a disappointment. Since our work here is done. Let's go outside." Long Chen said as he walked towards the exit.

Long Chen opened the doors and saw the guards sitting at some distance from the temple, looking exhausted. Some of them noticed the door open and Long Chen coming out. They immediately stood up as they ran towards him like hungry wolves who had seen their prey. Long Chen watched everything happen with a confused expression.

"Great... Great Master Chen!!! Finally, you're out." The guards said breathing heavily in a sour voice.

"What happened to you all? Why are you looking so tired and your voice... have all of you been screaming all day?" Long Chen asked with a confused look.

"Not all day, just from last few days, we changed shifts screaming," One of the guards said/

"Why?" Long Chen inquired.

"Great master Chen. We were screaming to call you out as we couldn't enter the temple because of the barrier. You need to urgently go to the tribe leader's residence. It's really urgent," The leader of the guards said.

"What barrier?" Long Chen asked as he looked around.

"It... where did it go?" The guards looked around shocked as they noticed that they already passed the place that the barrier stopped them at, all stood in front of the door.

"It... It was just there... Before." The guards pointed out blankly.

"Forget about the barrier. We already prepared your horse here so you could reach there as soon as possible," The leader of the guards said as he informed Long Chen.

Long Chen hurriedly climbed the horse as the horse rapidly started moving towards the residence of Tensha. In a short time, Long Chen reached the residence of the tribe leader of the Elphia tribe. He got down from the horse and knocked on the door. As soon as the door was opened, without waiting, he entered.

"Where's tribe leader, tensha?" Long Chen asked the old man who opened the door.

"Master went to war with the army. I'll bring you to the young master as he can inform you more. He's inside," The old man said as he escorted Long Chen, who kept wondering about the words the old man said about war. He thought he would get proper answers only from Terra.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 90 - 90: Blood And Destruction

Terra and Xia were sitting in the hall, both in deep thoughts when Long Chen entered following the old man.

"Why are both of you looking so down," Long Chen said with a slight smile as soon as he entered.

Both Terra and Xia looked up and as they saw Long Chen there, they both stood up from their seats excitedly.

"You're finally out!!! Thank heavens. Please!! You need to help us." Terra said as he looked at Long Chen with a pleading expression.

"What actually happened? All I heard is that tribe leader Tensha went to war with the army of the Elphia Tribe." Long Chen asked, surprised before promising anything.

"The monster tribe has again waged a war. They attacked the Banshee tribe. All other tribes have gone there to take a stand against the monster tribe, but the chances of us being victorious is really low." Xia said with a sad expression as she clenched her hands tightly.

"So the army of Elphia is there as well? Fighting with everyone?" Long Chen inquired with a serious expression.

"Yes, the battle of this time is really important, as the freedom of every tribe depends on it. My father, uncle Tensha, and most of our warriors went there to take part in this war to protect our freedom," Xia said as worry could be seen on her face.

"I know you won't be affected by the outcome of this battle as you are so strong, but I beg you. Please save everyone." Terra said in a pleading tone.

Long Chen fell into deep thought as he heard the both of them.

Back at the Banshee tribe, the war was raging on. Destruction and blood could be seen everywhere on the battlefield with hundreds of Warriors from the other tribes and hundreds of monsters being killed every moment. Fire and explosion could be seen at every corner of the battlefield.

Monster Emperor Taras and Monster Emperor Shentia stood at the other corner of the battlefield watching the war with great interest.

"That human still hasn't come out. As expected, he is scared since he knows he is about to die. Let's go inside the Banshee tribe and find him ourselves," Monster Emperor Taras said to Monster Emperor Shentia.

"You don't have to be in such a hurry, let's stay here and enjoy the little ones slaughter everyone. We can go inside with everyone and watch that humans be killed in front of all our tribesmen. He can't run either way." Monster Emperor Shentia casually commented as he watched the war.

"Aren't you forgetting that the human was our main Target, not these little insects?" Monster Emperor Taras said with an annoyed expression.

"Oh come on, since the human is in hiding and isn't here taking part in this war, it proves that he is scared and weak. We don't have to hurry so much. Let's give the little ones the time to win the war and kill that human themselves. The history glorified Tian Shen a lot, he killed so many monster Emperors of our tribe, and with such ease. It would be interesting to see his descendant be killed, not by a monster Emperor, but just by our monster king." Monster Emperor Shentia replied with a laugh.

"I like that. We will wait then," Monster Emperor Taras said as he changed his focus from Monster Emperor Shentia to the battlefield.

On the other side of the field, Tribe leader Bala was fighting a fierce battle with the Bear king.

"Hahaha, it's getting fun. You're like an unkillable insect. Always surviving," Bear king laughed as he kept attacking Bala who kept dodging. Although Bala was able to survive until now, he was heavily wounded and burned at a lot of places. But the Bear king wasn't completely safe either. He had wounds everywhere on his body as he barely dodged the arrow whenever Tribe leader Bala had an opportunity to attack but it could be seen that his condition was definitely better than tribe leader Bala.

"I'm enjoying this fight so much that I don't even want to use my second law to crush you straight away. Also, you're not giving me the opportunity to use that either, you're smart. Always keeping a safe distance." Bear king commented with a laugh.

"What can I say, the habit of an archer I guess." Tribe leader Bala replied as he kept trying to find opportunities to attack.

"I want to enjoy it more but I need to get to my wife Mia before Old Bull gets a chance to steal her from me. I will finish it now." Bear king said as he blurred.

His speed was suddenly many times faster than before, so much so that his speed was catching up to Bala who was using the law of wind.

"Are you using the law of strength on your body?" Bala couldn't help but comment. He had an arrow ready on his bow as he kept trying to create distance between him and the bear king.

"Not just the law of strength." Bear king smiled.

"What the..." Tribe leader Bala sensed something as he looked back. He saw a bear made completely of fire attacking towards his direction. Bala changed his direction and barely dodged the attack but his expressions changed as he saw the Bear king's fist coming towards him.

Tribe leader Bala released the arrow from his bow and propelled himself backward with the help of wind but the fist struck him making him fly far away. He crashed on the ground far from the bear king. His arrows penetrated the bear king's shoulder who couldn't help but give a painful grunt.

He stared in the direction Bala crashed at and started walking towards him.

Bala tried getting out of the crater his fall created as he coughed out a mouthful of blood. He could feel many of his bones being broken but his eyes were still full of fighting spirit.

At another part of the battlefield, Tribe leader of Mulan tribe, also known as the earthen tribe, Mazumas was fighting against Bull king who kept crushing every defense or offense Mazumas tried.

All of Mazumas' attacks were easily being broken by Bull king who utilized the law of fire and law of strength at the same time. Although Mazumas was able to protect himself against the attacks using the law of fire, the law of strength was what gave him real trouble. Mazumas' long-distance attacks weren't working as the bull king broke his attacks utilizing law of Earth with his law of strength, and as for was close-range fight, he was at an even bigger disadvantage.

The distance between him and the bear king kept decreasing as he noticed the bear king's speed had a sharp increase. Before he knew it, the bear king held him by his throat and picked him up from the ground. He felt difficult to

breathe and tried attacking the bull king with all four of his hands but the bull king simply crushed him on the ground. Mazumas' coughed out a mouthful of blood as his face turned pale. Even some of the shells on his skin were broken.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 91 - 91: You're Finally Here

In a place filled with mist, where the ground was covered with blood. Battle of fire and ice was taking place for a long time.

Large monsters were fighting small warriors. The large number of monsters was giving their side a slight edge over the well-trained warriors of the Banshee tribe. Martial skills were being used left and right. While the monsters were filled with bloodlust, the Banshee warriors were filled with determination to protect their land and their home. Every one of them is fighting for a reason, for their tribe, to protect their family... to protect their land.

The Battle raged on as hundreds of lives kept perishing on this bloody day.

At some distance from the battle, a different type of battle was taking place. A battle between the Queen of Banshee tribe and the monster king of the monster tribe. After a long battle, it seemed like the Queen was giving a fair fight to the monster King, not lacking one bit.

'I don't know how long this can go on, only one monster King is so strong, and the skeleton king hadn't even joined the fight. I can't even use Ice prison to kill the tiger king, as I'll turn useless in this war from the backlash of using Ice prison. The Elphia tribe still isn't here with that human to help us. Is this going to be the fall of my empire? The fall of our thousands of years of heritage?' The Queen thought in her mind as she kept attacking Tiger King.

"Old Tiger, I never thought you'd take so long to take care of a little girl. Looks like you've grown weak in your old age." Skeleton king laughed by the side.

"She's the strongest of our opponents, wouldn't it be bad if I ended this fight too soon without having proper fun." Tiger King replied in a calm manner.

"If you don't take care of her soon, I will have to join in on the fun. Don't forget Monster Emperors are watching. I don't want this battle to last for long." Skeleton king said, staring at the tiger king.

"Alright, alright... I'll end it. You're such a pain, Skull." Tiger king said in an annoyed expression.

"Three suns of blazing destruction!" Tiger king roared as the sky above him turned flaming red. A huge wave of fire appeared above his head, which started compressing. Soon a Sun made of fire appeared above him, then a second and a third. All rotating above him like planets around the sun.

"Looks like you are finally getting serious." Skeleton king laughed as he saw tiger King use his martial skill.

"It... Looks like I have no choice. It's the end either way, so I'm going to take him down as well." Queen Mia let out as she gazed at these three suns.

"Ice Prison!" Queen Mia's eyes turned white as she muttered lightly.

Four huge walls appeared around the tiger king, rising up so high that they even covered the three suns orbiting above the tiger king. The opening at the top was closed as well as a thick ice slab formed on the top of the walls forming something like a room, albeit a deadly one that completely engulfed Tiger king. The four walls started closing in on him, slowly but surely.

Queen Mia felt like she lost all her strength as she used Ice prison. Weakness engulfed her and she knew the fight was over for her as she couldn't use any other Martial skills.

Skeleton king's expressions changed as he saw the ice prison engulf the tiger king.

"Inferno!" He made a slight gesture and a small fire appeared on the ground. This fire kept enlarging and changing shape until it finally took the form of a giant skeleton over three meters tall. This giant skeleton had a hammer made of fire in his hand as he started moving towards the compressing Ice prison.

"You think you can stop me with this little prison of yours? I have heard that the ice prison of Banshee Queen is so strong that a single monster king can't break them. Let's see if there's a truth to it." Tiger king said fiercely as he made a gesture. One of the suns orbiting above him moved forward and crashed on the front wall.

A large impact took place which shook the whole Ice prison but Tiger king noticed that the wall was still standing strong without a single sign of damage.

"It is really strong. But I'm not weak either!!" The tiger king roared in anger. The remaining two suns orbiting about him moved towards each other as they combined. Their size increased by fifty percent and their flames turned even darker in color, looking even more threatening.

Tiger king made another gesture as this sun of fire started moving towards the front wall as well.

The flaming Skeleton made by Skeleton king waved his large fiery hammer as he attacked towards the wall of ice prison. Strangely enough, this large fiery

hammer and Tiger king's Burning sun attacked the same spot, but on the opposite sides of the wall. The wall of ice prison broke apart as it wasn't able to handle the full strength attacks of two monster kings at the same time, giving the tiger king the path to freedom.

Queen Mia Coughed a mouthful of blood as her ice prison was broken. She dropped to her knees with a pale face.

Tiger king came out and saw the flaming Skeleton disappearing with his large hammer.

"I never asked for your help! I could have handled it myself" Tiger king said in a grumpy voice.

"Sure sure... I just got worried since you were taking so long, but you were probably just having fun inside watching the walls close in." Skeleton King said with a laugh.

"Hmph!" Tiger king snorted and started walking towards Queen Mia.

"I enjoyed our fight, but it's already over. But as I said, I won't kill you, I'll just tie you up and give you to old bear and old bull to be shared." Tiger king said with a slight smile.

Queen Mia gazed over the whole battleground and saw most of the tribe leaders defeated. Mazumas was lying on the ground inside a crater as Bull king stood near him with a casual expression. On the other hand, Tribe leader Bala was bleeding all over as Bear king kept brutally attacking him even when Bala was defeated. The same scenery could be seen everywhere on the battlefield.

'It's over. We are defeated. Even though they didn't come to help us, I hope the Elphia tribe will survive, and with the help of that human achieve victory when monsters attack them. Only then can the young ones I sent to the Elphia tribe have a chance at survival and a safe life. I pray that they stay safe and continue our legacy in the future.' Queen Mia thought as a little tear fell from her eyes.

As the Tiger king was walking towards Queen Mia, he suddenly stopped as his expressions altered.

"Looks like you're finally here," Skeleton king said laughing as he noticed something.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 92 - 92: Far Worse Than A Monster

As the Tiger King was walking towards Queen Mia, he suddenly stopped as his expression changed.

"Looks like you're finally here," Skeleton King said while laughing.

A wall made of plants appeared between them and Queen Mia, obstructing their view.

"Why wouldn't we be here? Since everyone else is here, how can we stay behind? Our warriors are not cowards." A voice filled with determination could be heard while a large army led by two people riding Elphian horses could be seen walking from the right side of the battlefield.

All other monster kings turned their gaze towards them, including Bull King and Bear King who were about to deal a killing blow to Mazumas and Bala but stopped.

"So they are here as well. Saves us the trouble of going to find them later," Bull King laughed.

"Now only that human is the one missing," Bear King muttered as he gazed at the Elphian army.

"Huh, interesting. They are using distraction to achieve their goal and the little ones are falling for it." Monster Emperor Shentia commented with an amused expression.

"Exactly, these guys need to learn a lot. Never take your eyes off your opponents. But let them learn this lesson themselves and don't inform them." Monster Emperor Taras said slightly.

Unbeknownst to the monster kings, as their focus was on the Elphia tribe, a little plant grew near most of them that quickly grew in size and swallowed other tribe leaders who were lying half-dead after the fight. But once the monster kings noticed this, it was too late as the plant had already entered the ground.

Soon those plants grew again, but this time near Queen Mia who was kneeling on the opposite side of the wall made of plants. All the tribe leaders were thrown out of these plants, heavily injured, near Queen Mia.

The Elphia army soon joined the Banshee army as the Banshee army regrouped.

"I never thought I would see Queen Mia on her knees in front of the enemy." Tribe leader Tensha commented as he stood near her.

"I see that you're punctual as usual, Tensha," Queen Mia said sarcastically.

"Of course, a gentleman always arrives on time. Here... Get up!" Tensha laughed as he gave a helping hand.

Tensha reached his hand out towards the queen, hoping for her to grab his hand and get up, but the queen just stared at him with a blank expression. Since her body was still covered in a robe and Tensha didn't know about her hands, he did this gesture unknowingly.

Tensha awkwardly retracted his hand, thinking she didn't want to hold his hands.

Queen Mia stood up by herself with great difficulty, even in such a weakened state. She looked around as if trying to find a person.

"That human isn't here? Why are you the only ones here?" Queen Mia asked with a strange expression.

"Ah. Master Chen was busy in cultivation and we couldn't contact him. Since we lacked the time, we came here without him. We left people there to inform him about this calamity as soon as he comes out so he'll help us." Tensha explained with an awkward smile.

"I appreciate your gesture to come help us, but are you here to increase the dead count? Most of the war is lost, all the monster kings are standing tall with only light wounds while the monster Emperors didn't even take part in this war, whereas, on our side, most of the tribe leaders are either easily defeated or seriously injured. You should've just stayed there and survived. At least the monsters wouldn't get the satisfaction of killing all the tribes." Queen Mia said with a downcast expression.

"I... Apologize?" Tribe leader Tensha didn't know what to say as he replied awkwardly in a confused tone.

Xu hit Tensha's back with his elbow as he stared at him with a strict expression, as if reminding Tensha to act with the dignity of a tribe leader.

"Without him, there's no hope for us to win, or even survive." Queen Mia commented.

"Since you're here, now all the dishes are served on the table for us to enjoy. Only the dessert is missing... That human kid." Bear King laughed as he joined the Tiger King and Skeleton King.

"Yeah, how come he still hasn't come out? Is he so scared that he's still hiding inside, watching all of you facing death alone? No worries, we'll let him enjoy your death and when all of you die, he can watch his own death." Tiger King said with a slight smile.

"What are you talking about? That human is not here." Queen Mia said to Tiger King.

"Do you think you could fool us so easily? We have specific information that the human was staying in your tribe!!" Skeleton King said in his heavy voice.

"He was here but he left not long ago. Since you have the information of him staying here, how come you don't know of him leaving?" Queen Mia said in a mocking tone to Tiger King.

"If he was here, do you think you'd still be standing there with your head intact?" Queen Mia said to Tiger King with a fierce expression.

Hearing her words, every monster king's expression changed and even the monster Emperors couldn't help but be shocked.

"Come to think of it, I haven't seen my monster general who was staying here to keep an eye on the human!!" Tiger King couldn't help but let out as every monster king heard him.

He looked around extensively, trying to find someone.

"Baekk!!! " He roared loudly, but no response came from anywhere on the battleground.

"If he's not here, there's only one explanation. He was killed." Tiger king said with a grim expression.

"Queen Mia, you killed our monster general to help the human escape!! You deserve death!!" Skeleton king said with anger clearly written on his face.

"Do you think I need to help him to kill a puny monster general?" The Queen laughed loudly as everyone stared at her.

"Aren't you curious why we didn't use our barrier to delay you?" The Queen asked with an amused expression on her face.

"Why?" Bear king couldn't help but ask.

"It was broken by someone! Can you guess who could've done it?" Queen Mia asked with an interested expression.

All the monster kings looked at Monster Emperors, who in turn looked at each other. Both shook their heads to each other as if saying they weren't there one who did it.

"Don't look at each other, it wasn't a monster... But someone far worse than a monster," Queen Mia said as she remembered the worst moment of her life.

.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 93 - 93: Law Of Wood

"Don't look at each other, it wasn't a monster... But it was far worse than a monster." Queen Mia said as she remembered the worst moment of her life.

"...That human?" Monster Emperor Taras let out softly in a questioning tone.

"As always, monster emperors are smarter than the monster kings," Queen Mia acknowledged with a smile shocking everyone other than Tensha who already knew about it.

"I don't believe you!!! You're obviously lying to try and scare us so that we will go back in fear of that human!! But it won't work!!" Bull King said in a disbelieving tone.

"Oh, you think I'm lying?" Queen Mia gave a sad smile as she said that.

"Aia, can you take this robe off me?" Queen Mia said as a little girl walked towards her. Everyone watched intensely as Aia took Queen Mia's robe off.

As the robe was opened, everyone could see her missing hands. She was just standing there with a melancholic air around her as everyone stared at her.

"This... This..." Tensha stuttered as he saw it. Even he didn't know of this happening. He just kept staring at Queen Mia with his mouth wide open.

"H... How ..." Even heavily injured Mazumas and Bala were shocked as they found out about this.

"You think I would cut off my own hands for this lie? Are you really that stupid?" Queen Mia said as she started laughing like crazy.

"What do you mean? What does it have to do with the stories you made up about that human?" Bear King asked. Although he was shocked seeing Queen Mia like this, he couldn't understand what it had to do with that human.

"I clearly didn't cut my hands off myself, neither did the monsters. And none of the other tribe leaders have the strength to. Who do you think this did to me? Take a guess. I want to see how smart the monsters actually are." Queen Mia said sarcastically.

"The..the human?" Tiger King said in a serious voice.

"Oh, I thought you'd take longer. Looks like monster kings aren't as stupid as I thought." Queen Mia said with a slight smile.

"She's obviously lying!! Why would the human do it? Tian Shen had a good relationship with all the tribes, this human being is his descendant. He wouldn't cut off her hands. She's clearly lying!! It's an elaborate plan to make us believe the strength of that human and retreat in fear!! She knew she couldn't defeat us even after getting help from every tribe so she planned everything. She even had her own hands cut off when she found out that we were coming!! What an evil scheme!!" Bear King said proudly as if he uncovered a big scheme.

Most monster kings couldn't help but think that his words made sense. Even the monster emperors fell in deep thought hearing this.

"Enough time-wasting! We'll think about everything after killing you." Bull King said seriously as he stopped thinking.

"Can you fight?" Tensha asked every tribe leader there, most of whom stood up bravely ready to enter another combat while some of them stayed there with serious injuries.

"I can't fight physically as most of my bones are broken but I can use my Law of Wind to help." leader of the Barong tribe, Bala said with a face full of determination.

"I'm the same, I can't even stand up, but I'm ready to help in other ways." The leader of the Mulan tribe, Mazumas replied with a downcast expression.

"I am facing the backlash and I can't use any attacks since my Ice Prison was broken. I'm a dead burden for everyone as I can't even fight physically," Queen Mia told Tensha with a sad look on her face.

"So we have ten monster kings against the bunch of us. Our odds are looking really good aren't they?" Tensha joked as he looked at everyone ready to fight.

"This is the final battle. The battle for survival and the battle of existence! Brave warriors! Think of your family! Think of your friends! Think of those who stayed back!! To protect them all!! We must fight!! We must fight to our death until either we or the enemy are the only ones left standing!! I'm ready to put my heart and soul into this battle till the moment I die!! Will you all do the same?" Tensha roared loudly as his voice echoed in the entire battlefield.

"Yes! Yes! Yes!" Every warrior present there started roaring loudly as they were filled with fighting spirit. No matter which tribe the warrior belonged to, Mulan, Barong, Elphia, Banshee, every warrior joined in.

"Using the Law of Wood to increase their morale... Impressive trick!" Monster Emperor Shentia commented from the sidelines as he saw plants appear throughout the battlefield. As they started spreading a gentle smell in the atmosphere increasing the morale of their opponents

"Of course. Although the Law of Wood isn't known for its strength, it's mostly known for its versatility. This little guy there is using this law really well." Monster Emperor Taras said to monster Emperor Shentia.

"Attack!!" Tensha roared as his army started attacking the monsters using the Law of Wood. Although their attacks were weak in front of the Law of Fire, through their good utilization, they were able to give a proper fight to the monsters.

All other tribe leaders did the same and ordered their army to battle, which they did with great spirit. Monster army and the coalition army had finally started fighting fiercely. Although the monsters still held the advantage, because of the addition of the Elphia army, this advantage was reduced by a large amount.

"What do you say we get involved as well? It's boring watching them fight." Tiger King said fiercely as he gazed at Tensha.

"Why don't you fight me then?" Challenged Tensha.

"Xu, you help Mazumas and Bala take care of those two," Tensha said as he pointed towards Skeleton King and Bull King.

Tensha soon informed the people of the fighting plan as everyone took to their opponents while Tensha started fighting against Tiger King.

Plants kept appearing trying to attack Tiger King, but Tiger King kept burning those plants with his fiery flames.

"Earth Breaking Fist!" Tensha roared as he threw a punch out.

Tiger King threw a punch out as well, but just before impact many vines appeared and grabbed Tiger King's hands and changing its momentum in a different direction but just a slight variation. This small disturbance was enough to have a large impact on the battle's outcome as Tiger King's punch missed while Tensha's punch struck Tiger King's head making him fly far away and crash on the ground.

Tiger King soon got up with his face covered in dust as he coughed out a mouthful of dust. Tiger King stared at Tensha with great anger.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 94 - 94: Mysterious Killing Intent

Tiger king soon stood up with his face covered in dust as he coughed out a mouthful of dust. Tiger king stared at Tensha with great anger.

"You are going to die!!!" Tiger King roared in resentment as he rushed towards Tensha and punched out. Tensha again punched back. Just like before, vines appeared at the last moment, trying to change the trajectory of the tiger king's punch.

"Won't work, twice!" Tiger king said with a straight face as flames appeared around his fist. As the vines grabbed his hand trying to change his trajectory, but they weren't able to do anything as they were immediately torn apart as Tiger king had used the law of strength in this punch as well. The remnants of the vines holding his hand were burned to ashes.

Tiger king's fist met Tensha's fist, but only after a momentary contact, Tensha was sent flying away like a broken kite falling on the ground and continued to slide for quite some time before actually stopping. Tensha's clothes were torn apart and blood could be seen coming out from the wounds on his back.

"As expected of a monster king. Your strength is top grade," Tensha said with a painful smile as he stood up, trying to act brave.

"You should be happy that you get to die by the hands of a monster king like me. You must have done some good things in your past life to have such good fortune," Tiger king said as he stared at Tensha.

"Yes, I did many good things in past lives, but it's this life I did many wrong things in. I should never have slept with your mother, I never knew she'd get pregnant so easily giving birth to something like you." Tensha replied mockingly.

"HOW DARE YOU TALK BAD ABOUT MY DEAR MOTHER!? YOU ARE LOOKING TO DIEEEEE!!!" Tiger king roared as anger covered his face.

"Demon of flaming hell!!!" The tiger king made a fist and punched out. But this time not towards Tensha, he punched at the ground. As soon as his fist touched the ground, a large crater appeared as a few cracks started developing in the nearby area. Heavy flames came out from the cracks, these cracks kept widening releasing even more fire.

All this fire was collected in front of the tiger king, which started taking the shape of a demonic tiger. It looked like a flaming tiger but two demonic horns

could be seen coming out from its head. The two flaming tails behind him made it look even more mysterious. It stared at Tensha as two large fangs could be seen protruding from its mouth.

"He finally used it, his strongest skill. I guess that guy is already dead now and here I was hoping to get an opportunity to fight him." Skeleton king said as he looked disappointed.

"Go and have a fill to your heart's content!" Tiger kind said with a brutal smile as he stared at Tensha with deep anger.

'Oh, f ***. Looks like I screwed up, I went too far and made him even angrier.' Tensha thought as he stood at his ground bravely.

The flaming tiger roared as he jumped high in the sky In the direction of Tensha.

"Guardian of the forest!!" Tensha muttered as he made a few gestures with his hands. His eyes could be seen turning green for a slight moment.

A large tree suddenly grew up on the battlefield from nowhere between the flaming tiger and Tensha. It kept growing and enlarging. A few branches protruded out of it and took the shape of two hands. All of it happened in a short moment. On the previously completely empty space, now stood a tall humanoid looking tree.

As the flaming Tiger reached near the tree, it instantly swung one of its paws. The tiger was pushed back as it landed on the ground, whereas a fire started burning in the hand of the tree that touched the tiger. The tree immediately tore off that hand with its other hand, before the fire reached its other portions. A burning piece of wood fell on the ground, which soon turned to ash. A new arm grew in its place, looking exactly like before.

"You think that little puppet of yours can protect you?" Tiger king snorted.

The flaming tiger kept attacking while the large tree kept trying to protect its master. However, it didn't take the flaming tiger long to prevail and exterminate the giant tree. Which burned down to its roots leaving nothing behind, but after this battle, the flames of the tiger dimmed slightly.

The tiger rapidly advanced towards Tensha and swung its claws towards Tribe leader Tensha's chest.

"Nature barrier!" Tensha said, as a light green shield appeared in front of him. As the tiger's claw touched the shield, his flames dimmed even further. The

shield was broken after lasting for a moment. Although Tensha retreated backward as the shield was being, the claws still grazed him. Claw marks could be seen on his chest as he crashed on the ground. Blood started flowing from his chest.

The flames of the tiger dimmed so much, it could be seen that it won't be able to exist for long before disappearing completely. Still, this flaming tiger jumped at Tensha trying to bite his head off before disappearing. Many new vines appeared grabbing the flaming tiger in its place, but in a short moment, it soon burned to ashes. But this short moment was enough for Tensha as the tiger's flames dimmed even further before it completely disappeared.

"Is that the dignity of a tribe leader of Elphia? Comfortably lying on the ground in the middle of a war?" Came a voice from nearby.

Tensha looked at the person and smiled slightly. He tried getting up but the pain he was feeling could be seen in his eyes.

"You saved me old Xu," Tensha said, looking towards Xu .

"Of course I would save you. No matter how bad, you are still our tribe leader" Deputy leader Xu said in a mocking tone.

Xu walked towards Tensha to give him a helping hand, but his eyes opened wide as a hand penetrated his chest from behind.

"Aren't you forgetting someone, little insect? How dare you interrupt my fight! "Tiger king said in a brutal voice as he took his hand out from Xu's chest, leaving a big hole behind.

"Xu!!!" Tensha screamed as he saw all this happen. Xu fell to the ground with his eyes still open.

"T...take Ca..." He looked at Tensha and gave a slightly painful smile as he tried saying something but the light in his eyes disappeared before he could complete his words as he died.

"Don't worry my friend, I'll take care of your daughter like she's my own daughter." Tensha muttered to himself as he stared at Xu lying on the ground, lifeless.

"Hah, now no one will interfere in our fight. If I don't create an example out of someone, no one will take me seriously," Tiger king laughed as he said.

"Oh, I apologize for separating you two. You can go to meet him in the afterlife." Tiger king laughed as he walked towards Tensha who kept gazing at Xu.

"It's so easy that it's getting boring." Bull king said as he thrashed Mazumas to the ground. The situation reverted to the way it was before. Every tribe leader lying on the ground bleeding all over while monster kings stood tall.

"Enough playing around! You should kill your enemies fast?" Monster Emperor Taras said from the sidelines.

All monster kings heard his words loud and clear.

"Exactly. Time to finish it." The Monster kings said as they decided to give the decisive blow to every tribe leader except Queen Mia who was left alone for the moment.

Before they could deal the killing blow, they stopped Midway as they looked upwards. Even monster Emperors looked upwards feeling shocked. A wave of mysterious killing intent appeared and spread in the atmosphere.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 95 - 95: You Will All Die For Your Sin

All the monster kings stopped where they stood as they looked upwards. Even the monster Emperors couldn't help but look upwards as a shocked look appeared on their faces. A wave of killing intent spread across the atmosphere. Every person started looking upwards including the heavily wounded tribe leaders and Queen Mia. Even Tensha stopped for a moment as he changed his focus from Xu to what was above him.

"Such fierce killing intent!! How strong," Tensha couldn't help but mutter as he felt the killing intent.

"This killing intent!" Queen Mia murmured to herself feeling like she has felt it before. Then her expression changed as she remembered where she had previously felt this killing intent.

"What... what is that?" All of the monster kings stared at the thing above their heads trying to understand what was happening.

"I've never heard anything like this happening before. What is going on?" Monster Emperor Shentia cried out as he kept staring at it intently.

"Such killing intent coming out from it. It's so... strong." Monster Emperor Taras said without taking his eyes off the sky.

A big spatial crack could be seen in the sky. The strong killing intent was coming out from it and slowly increasing. Soon two hands could be seen emerging from the spatial crack and grabbing onto both sides of the spatial cracks and forcing the gap to widen from the inside. Soon this spatial crack was over a meter wide.

Someone stepped out from this spatial crack. It was a boy who looked to be around 12 years old having dark hair and beautiful golden eyes making him a beautiful sight to behold.

Two wings could be seen on his back which helped him fly after he emerged from the spatial crack. His left wing being a pitch-black while the right wing being completely golden which gave him both an almost demonic and angelic appearance at the same time.

The killing intent in the atmosphere reached its peak as Long Chen emerged from the spatial crack. The spatial crack soon disappeared like it was never there as the space returned to normal. Long Chen was flying above everyone like a fierce god, looking down on mortals.

'He... he's here,' Queen Mia thought as she subconsciously took a step backward, remembering the day she made the foolish mistake of fighting this demon.

"Ma... Master Chen you're finally here," Tensha cried out as he watched Long Chen flying like an immortal king. He still had a tear in his eyes.

Long Chen noticed Tensha and the tear in his eyes. He looked around and soon saw Xu lying behind the Tiger King without any life and a large hole in his chest. He looked at the Tiger King and noticed the still fresh blood in his hand. His anger increased as he disappeared from his spot. He soon appeared in front of Tiger King and before Tiger King could even understand anything, a hand penetrated his chest and ripped his heart out.

Long Chen brutally crushed the Tiger King's heart. The last thing that Tiger King saw before he fell to the ground lifeless was his own heart being crushed before his very eyes.

"You made a big mistake by killing him." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Tiger King's body lying on the ground.

"I'm sorry, I was late," He turned his attention back to Xu and said in a low voice filled with sadness.

"You... You killed Tiger King!!" Bear King who was standing closest to Tiger King took a step back as soon as he saw Tiger King's body fall to the ground.

Ignoring Bear King, Long Chen walked towards Tensha and gave him a hand, helping him to get up. After getting up, Tensha went towards Xu with shaking steps and fell to his knees right next to his body.

"Old man Xu, you died because of me. You always said I need to be dignified as the leader of Elphia but you were the one who was the most dignified. How can I handle anything without you, my friend?" Tensha said in a shaky voice as tears filled his eyes.

"I apologize for not being here on time." Long Chen said softly.

"You don't have to feel bad Master Chen. It's not your fault. You were busy cultivating, how could you have known. I'm sure you came here as soon as you found out. For that I'm thankful to you." Tensha replied to Long Chen.

Long Chen stopped looking at them as he turned back without saying anything.

"You're finally here!! Since you're here, you will never go back." Monster Emperor Taras finally moved his large body from the spot where he was standing since the war started as he walked towards Long Chen with his heavy feet while having a sinister smile on his face.

"I must say you surprised me. You killed a monster king so easily, which is no small feat. We underestimated you... a lot." Monster Emperor Taras continued saying as he walked, while Monster Emperor Shentia still didn't move as he was wondering what he should do.

'That fierce killing intent, appearing from nowhere and killing a monster king so easily. Just looking at him is enough to give me chills, I'm not even sure if I could defeat him in a fight. Did I actually take a wrong step in agreeing to Taras' plan of revenge and going to war since the human was a kid instead of Balang's plan to pull this human towards us and establish a friendship with him? What should I do now...? Old friend, I wish you were here right now,' Shentia thought as he kept gazing at Long Chen from far away.

"The human tribe is really amazing, even a kid is strong enough to kill a monster king! Too bad there's a big difference between a monster king and a monster Emperor and you're just a kid. I'm sure you used all your tricks to kill little tiger." Monster Emperor Taras said as he looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen moved his lips as a softly spoken promise was made. Although it was said in a low voice, there was no one who didn't hear what he said.

"You will all die for your sin." That was the only sentence that could be heard far and wide. It shocked everyone present there when Long Chen said it in his heavy voice. To many people, this scene looked like the King of Hell giving his judgment on sinners.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 96 - 96: Can You Hurry

"Aren't you getting a bit too overconfident, little guy? Now that you have killed a monster king, you dare have the courage to talk to a monster emperor like that? Let me tell you, you have yet to grasp the power difference between an emperor and a king." Monster Emperor Taras snorted as he saw Long Chen standing motionless before him, looking at him with disdain.

"Oh, why don't you tell me the difference then?" Long Chen said in a dismissive tone.

The man was brazen enough to look down on the Monster Emperor as if it was no less than insignificant.

"You..." Monster Emperor Taras was filled with anger, a scary aura beginning to exude from his body.

In the next moment, Taras used his aura on everyone on the field except his own monsters. Almost all of the creatures who were affected couldn't help but feel fear. The terror that they had sensed from the aura was a tad overbearing.

Many of the warriors fell to their knees. Meanwhile, those who were able to keep standing had a difficult time of preventing themselves from falling. Even the tribe leaders were affected by the aura. Seeing the struggle of their enemies, the monsters began to laugh at the warriors who fell to their knees by simply taking the brunt of the Monster Emperor's aura. However, their celebration didn't last for long. As soon as their gazes landed on Long Chen, they shut their mouths.

Long Chen merely stood there, glowering at Monster Emperor Taras with an amused smile on his face. Again, it was as if he was watching an entertainer performing a trifling act.

"Are you done trying to show off?" Long Chen asked with a slight smile. "But even if you aren't, it is my time to show off now!"

The moment that Long Chen was done speaking, he went on to release his aura.

All of a sudden, the monsters seemed to have forgotten to breathe. No, it's more like, Long Chen deprived them of the air in their surroundings. Every single monster fell to their knees, feeling their heartbeats slow down at the same time. The tables were turned in that very second. It was the monsters' time to endure the terrifying aura of their opponent.

The Monster Kings stood from afar watching their army fall. Strangely enough, they couldn't feel the slightest bit of aura. Unbeknownst to the kings, Long Chen didn't target them. Monster Emperor Taras merely watched the struggle of his minions, his face heating up from the anger that rose from the pit of its stomach. He wanted to scare Long Chen by using his aura but Long Chen wasn't affected in the least. Instead, the man used his move against him. He felt ashamed that Long Chen was able to make all his army drop to their knees with just his aura.

"You're a good kid! Why don't you use that aura on me as well? I want to experience its strength as well!" Monster Emperor Taras said as he stared at Long Chen. He knew that Long Chen didn't use his aura on him since he wouldn't even feel the slightest bit of it.

"I didn't use it on you and those little guys. You might be wondering for what reason, right? It's because I didn't want you and your people to be scared of facing me. I want to slaughter you when you're at your best, not when you're scared." Long Chen replied to Taras, concurrently pointing his finger at the Monster Kings.

"You bastard! After killing the Tiger King when he wasn't paying attention, you think you can kill us as well? You think we'll be scared of you?" The Bull King roared, unable to stop himself from being angered.

'Hmmp, He is so deceitful! He must know that his little aura is only slightly strong and can't affect me and those little guys. To not get found out, he didn't use it on us and still refuses to use it on us.' Monster Emperor Taras said to himself.

"Do you want to die or watch your army be slaughtered first?" Long Chen said playfully. Once his attention shifted from Taras to the Bull King, his expression became serious.

"You have a really big mouth, haven't you? You think you can kill everyone here, including me?" The Bull King laughed, outraged all the while glaring at Long Chen.

"I can, but my time would be wasted on worthless creatures like." Long Chen replied casually as he looked at the Bull King.

The man didn't want to wait for the Bull King's reply. Thus, for a second time, he scanned the entirety of the Monster Kings with his gaze before speaking up again.

"Enough talking. I don't have much time to waste. I think I'll finish you guys first and then move on to the two big ones after."

"You are all not worthy enough to confront 'that' sword. I'll just use this one." Long Chen muttered as he held Mountain Destroyer in his hand. It was the same spirit grade weapon that he had received from the Long clan.

"I'll see how you kill me!! Give me my sword!" The Bull King roared.

In an instant, two monsters, carrying a heavy sword in their hands conjointly, could be seen running towards their king.

"Here, master!" One of the two monsters said as they gave this sword to Bull King.

The sword appeared to be over one and a half meters tall and forty centimeters wide. It also had a thickness of approximately five centimeters.

The Bull King picked the sword up effortlessly. He then held the sword with both of his hands. The monsters, who had carried the sword for the Bull King, were amazed when they saw their master picking the heavy sword up so easily. It was because they knew that it weighed roughly a thousand kilograms. It just showed how strong their master was.

"Can you hurry up? I want to end you as soon as possible, since that guy might be waiting for you in hell. I don't want to keep him waiting for long." Long Chen said as he pointed at Tiger King's dead body.

"You..." The Bull King felt like coughing up a mouthful of blood all the while he was listening to Long Chen. Fuming with anger, he started to run towards Long Chen.

He used his Law of Strength at the start of his attack along with his sword. However, the sword didn't even make contact with Long Chen. It just swung down an empty space.

The Bull King realized that Long Chen had slightly moved and his sword only hit the man's after image. He immediately turned back thinking that Long Chen would appear behind him to retaliate. But there was no one behind him. He looked around the area, yet he couldn't see anyone.

"Stop hiding you coward!" The Bull King roared in anger. Once more, he roamed his gaze in his surroundings and finally, he noticed that everyone else was looking at him from the ground. He went ahead and looked up, only to

see a sword coming down at him. It penetrated his head at the very center. Just like that, he died without believing how easily he was killed.

Long Chen was up in the air, looking like a demonic angel with his black and golden wings. He then took his bloodied sword out from the Bull King's head. Following that, he diverted his attention to the appalled Monster Kings.

After seeing their comrade die in an instant, the Skeleton King felt the most afraid for its life. Still, it wanted to instill in the minds of the other kings how powerful their enemy was. With that in mind, the Skeleton King shouted to make himself heard.

"Everyone! He is a tricky one! We need to attack him together so that we don't fall for his tricks!!"

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 97 - 97:One More To Go

"Everyone, listen! He is a tricky opponent! We need to strike him concurrently so that we don't fall for his tricks!" The Skeleton King's voice resounded loudly in the area, garnering the attention of the monster kings nearby.

They all shouted in acknowledgment and assumed their own attacking stance shortly after.

Soon, Long Chen was bombarded with the attacks of eight monster kings, four of whom chose to use their weapons in order to engage Long Chen in a physical fight. Meanwhile, the other half decided to use their Martial skills to attack Long Chen. The Skeleton King was part of the latter four. He had decided to use the same martial skill that he used to free Tiger king from the ice prison.

"Inferno!" The Skeleton king roared.

Right then, a huge wave of fire spread out on the ground before taking the shape of a three-meter tall skeleton. It was carrying a large hammer in its hand. With heavy steps, it began to make its way towards Long Chen.

"Sword of judgment!" Another monster king hollered.

Latterly, a large flaming sword, having the length of over five meters, appeared above him.

The other monster kings decided to utilize a similar nature of attack. Once they had called forth their abilities, a crow and an ax made of fire materialized in the air.

On the other side of the battlefield, the monster kings, who opted for a physical fight like the Bear King, gave way to the attacks of their comrades. In a haste, they stepped aside in order for the attacks to land directly on Long Chen. They determined that it would be the best strategy, considering that they could finish off Long Chen once he had received damage.

Regrettably for them, Long Chen wasn't the least tad intimidated. He just stood there with a slight smile on his countenance all the while watching the attacks en route him.

First came the flaming sword that was advancing rapidly towards him. But the instant that it was merely a few inches away from Long Chen, the sword

stopped from moving. It appeared as if it was frozen, trapped by an invisible force in the air.

All the monster kings who were watching with anticipated gazes were, beyond a shadow of doubt, stunned at what they had just witnessed. Every single one of them thought that, at the least, Long Chen would act to defend himself.

Clearly, Long Chen didn't move an inch yet the flaming sword couldn't even touch him, let alone inflict an injury on his unbothered body.

"He's using some kind of barrier on himself." Monster Emperor Taras muttered in disbelief.

"Hmph! Even the barrier of the Queen of the Banshee tribe was broken when two monster kings attacked together. I refused to believe that this barrier will be able to stop all four of our attacks." The Skeleton king said with confidence. He was on the edge of his seat, waiting for his Fiery Skeleton to take its turn in attacking Long Chen.

The second attack to take a chance on damaging Long Chen was the crow made of blazing flames. However, it arrived at the same fate that the flaming sword had gotten itself into. It couldn't even quiver out of the situation.

Long Chen stood there calmly, gazing at the battlefield with mirth in his eyes. All he could see were the shocked reactions of the audiences, and that included Queen Mia.

'I thought that only his offensive power was strong since he was able to break the barrier protecting our Empire. However, his defense seems to be strong as well. I didn't know.' Queen Mia thought as narrowed her eyes on Long Chen.

In less than no time, the Fiery Skeleton had reached Long Chen. Almost immediately, it attacked the man with its blazing hammer. Unfortunately, it also became stuck in its position when it entered Long Chen's range. The fiery skeleton struggled to move the hammer, but it couldn't no matter how much it tried. The ax made of fire was immovable as well.

The whole battlefield went completely silent. Everyone was staring at Long Chen, their mouths wide open out of astonishment.

"He... He can take the attacks of four monster kings so easily. He made it look like he's playing with them," Mazumas muttered with shock written all over his face.

The fire that created the skeleton, the axe, the sword, and the crow began to lose its lustre. No sooner than a minute did it totally disappear. The fire of the skeleton, ax, sword and the crow all started dimming before eventually disappearing.

Carefree and unscathed, Long Chen merely watched as the attacks of the monster kings came to their pitiful end.

"Oh by the way, since the four of you attacked me first, you'll be the ones dying first as well." Long Chen now decided to address the monster kings who had been his initial aggressor.

Instead of the monster kings, a creature in the distance was the one to grab a retort at Long Chen.

"Before that, you'll be the one dying!"

Long Chen turned his head and saw a giant fist covered with flames coming towards him. Without a second of hesitation, Long Chen moved from his spot in order to dodge the attack.

"Well, aren't you an ugly looking Bear." Long Chen uttered mockingly.

"Why are you running! Come face me!" The Bear King roared in anger as he looked at Long Chen with all the malice it could muster.

"I'm not running. I just don't want to kill you accidentally. I already promised that they'll be the ones dying first."

Long Chen then pointed a finger towards the Skeleton King. Obviously enough, it incurred the fury of the monster kings.

"You...! Just because you can counter our attacks, do you think you can kill all four of us?" One of the monster kings snorted in retaliation.

Long Chen didn't want to bother himself by fighting the monster kings with words. A smirk soon appeared on his face, sending a chill down the spines of his opponents. In an instant, Long Chen vanished from his spot and reappeared in front of the monster king that snorted at him.

The man held the king by his neck, two wings appearing on Long Chen's back simultaneously. He flew towards the sky with the monster king in his hand. Once he had reached the height of a hundred meters, he released the monster king from his grip. The king howled for his life as he felt his descent accelerating by the second.

While everyone had their gazes on the falling monster king, Long Chen disappeared from his spot.

The moment that the monster king hit the ground, the sound of flesh colliding with a hard surface reverberate loudly in the area. Mixed in with the sound was someone's hampered screaming. They looked around only to search for the source, only to see two monster kings lying on the ground, though they were beheaded. Their heads could be seen near their bodies, their eyes still wide open.

Of course, the perpetrator, Long Chen, was standing near one of the dead monster kings with a bloody sword in his hands.

He slowly began walking towards the Skeleton king. Afraid for its life, the king attempted to retreat when he figured that he was the next target.

"Three gone, one more to go." Long Chen muttered as he continued walking towards the Skeleton King.

"What're you doing watching?! Help me!" The Skeleton king roared at the other monster.

Freshly coming out of his musing, the Bear King made a run for Long Chen with the rest of the monster kings in his tow.

"Enough! I've seen enough!" Someone abruptly screamed, "You've already destroyed the reputation of us monsters! At this point, do you think you can defeat him?!"

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 98 - 98:Promises Are Made To Be Broken

"Enough!! I've seen enough!" Came a loud voice gaining everyone's attention.

"You've already destroyed the reputation of us monsters! Do you think you can defeat him?" Monster Emperor Taras couldn't help but say loudly as he saw the monster kings being killed one after another.

"I promise we can defeat him!" Bear king said as he continued ahead without stopping.

'I can't stop now! It's time for me to prove myself!!' Bear king thought as he continued ahead. Other monster kings stopped but after thinking for a moment, they also followed the bear king.

"I told you that I'll get back to you later, but it looks like you're eager to die. Your time will come," Long Chen said as he watched the bear king coming towards him.

'Since he made a statement that he'll kill the skeleton king first, He'll be his Target. I can attack him and kill him easily.' Bear king thought as he continued advancing.

"I'll see if your strength is stronger or my law of strength!!" Bear king, full of fighting intention, still continued running towards Long Chen as he punched out. But Long Chen instead of dodging his attack and attacking the skeleton king like the bear king thought he would, stood there as he gripped his sword tightly.

As the Bear king reached near Long Chen, not seeing him move, the bear king was confused but didn't stop as he attacked towards Long Chen's head.

As Bear king's attack neared Long Chen, Long Chen did a footwork as he slightly dodged to the side. He saw the bear king's fist pass by from the sidelines. Time seemed to have stopped as he moved his sword and slashed twice.

"Ahhhhhhhh" A loud pained roar echoed out in the battlefield, which everyone heard. Bear king's hands fell to the ground, detached from his body as his body continued ahead because of the momentum. Bear king soon stopped as he dropped to his knees and roared in pain.

"Brutal as always," Queen Mia muttered as she saw Long Chen cutting the bear king's hands. She couldn't help but look downwards as her expressions became downcast/

Long Chen walked towards the bear king while the bear king tried controlling his screams of agony.

"You Lied!!! You said you'll kill those four first!!! You're Unjust!! What type of person are you that you don't even keep your words!!" Bear king roared like crazy.

"I never promised anything and even if I did, Haven't you heard that promises are made to be broken?" Were the last words bear king heard as he saw the world rotating, the sky changing to the ground while the ground became the sky. He could see Long Chen holding a sword who turned upside down as well, soon the ground hit his head. His vision blurred as he could only see Long Chen's legs. His vision darkened as he died.

"This... this," Skeleton king stuttered as he lost even the little bit of confidence he had retained as he saw Bear king being killed.

Long Chen moved and immediately appeared near the skeleton king and punched out. Skeleton king who was thinking about a plan to survive was shocked when he suddenly saw Long Chen disappear from his original spot and appear near him before he could even turn around, a fist stuck his head.

As Long Chen's fist connected with the Skeleton king's skull, it was blasted into smithereens which flew everywhere. The headless body of Skeleton king fell to the ground lifeless.

"Hah, now I'm free to handle you little guys," Long Chen turned around and looked at the remaining monster kings.

"That's seven, three more left!" Long Chen walked away from the headless body of the bear king as he looked at the remaining three monster kings.

The entire battlefield soon saw Long Chen slaughter the remaining monster kings brutally before shifting his gaze to Monster Emperor Taras.

"I'm amazed that you didn't try to stop me when I killed that bear and the others," Long Chen said with a slight smile.

"Why would I save them? Since they didn't hear my orders they deserved their deaths!! If you hadn't killed them, I personally would have," Monster Emperor Taras said softly.

"You know, it's still not too late for you to kill them now," Long Chen said with a slight smile as he gazed at Monster Emperor Taras.

"What do you mean? Aren't they already dead?" Monster Emperor Taras inquired with a confused look.

"Nope, they're alive in the underworld now. I'll send you there as well. You can then personally kill them there. If you hurry, you can meet them and fulfill your wish sooner." Long Chen said seriously as if he was actually telling the truth.

"You dare mock me. You're courting death!!" Monster Emperor Taras fumed in anger as he heard Long Chen's words.

"You know it feels like I've seen you somewhere. Looks like your species is going to be extinct in this world as well" Long Chen muttered as he stated at monster Emperor Taras which reminded him of the long-extinct dinosaurs on Earth.

"You'll be the one going extinct!! Field of fire!!" Monster Emperor Taras roared as a ring of fire was formed around them preventing Long Chen from exiting.

"Ahhh ... you remember I can fly right?" Long Chen asked as he saw the ring appear.

"Of course I know, that's why I made this." Monster Emperor Taras smiled slightly as he replied

"Fall of eternal destruction!" Monster Emperor Taras roared as the sky above then turned red. Many suns appeared above their head probably more than a hundred, all made of fire. They looked similar to the suns tiger king created to break Queen Mia's ice prison but their numbers were way more than the three tiger king had created. Also, they looked much larger and much stronger as well. These suns covered the complete sky as they even spread a little outside the ring of fire

"I should give you some credit. Looks like you planned everything. This ring to prevent me from exiting and those suns to prevent me from flying as well as your crush me. Don't you feel that you're not as stupid as you look," Long Chen said smiling as he looked at Monster Emperor Taras.

"Of course, I don't want you to live a single day more in this world!! This will be the moment you will die." Monster Emperor Taras replied with a malicious grin.

Monster Emperor Taras gazed at the sun with his red eyes as he gestured slightly. All the Suns started dropping towards Long Chen at rapid speed

.

Monster Emperor Taras turned to look back towards Long Chen but found the spot empty. Before he could do anything, all the Suns dropped on the empty spot, creating loud explosions and craters. The whole ground was filled with them, but the ground below monster Emperor Taras was safe and sound

As monster Emperor Taras knew that Long Chen wasn't there, he looked around and saw something which made him cough a mouthful of blood due to anger.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 99 - 99: Escaped

As monster Emperor Taras knew that Long Chen wasn't there, he looked around and saw something which made him cough a mouthful of blood due to anger.

When he found that Long Chen had escaped his ring of fire, he thought that Long Chen would either try to attack him or run away in fear of him but he didn't expect what he saw.

Monster Emperor Taras looked everywhere, only to find Long Chen doing something opposite his expectation.

Long Chen was slaughtering the monsters on the battlefield ignoring Monster Emperor Taras who roared in anger as he saw Long Chen have time to slaughter little monsters in between the battle with him. He felt like Long Chen was making fun of him.

"How dare you insult me!!" He roared at Long Chen who turned back with an amused expression as he continued slaughtering monsters by hundreds every minute while staring at Monster Emperor Taras with a smile.

"Oh, I was bored with your performance, so I decided to have my own fun. Although these guys aren't strong, watching your face turn red is pretty fun." Long Chen laughed lightly as screams of monsters kept echoing on the battlefield.

"Oh, by the way, what was that ring of fire? Was that really to stop me, or just a joke? It was funny if it was the latter," Long Chen said in a mocking tone.

Monster Emperor Taras was filled with Shame as he turned crazy in anger and ran towards Long Chen, not caring about the monsters being crushed below him.

"Hmm, I guess it's time to end it." Long Chen muttered as his expression suddenly turned serious as he got in an attacking stance with his sword.

'Better finish it fast,' Long Chen thought as he kept the mountain destroyer back in his ring and brought out his king's sword. He held the king's sword in his hands as a fierce sword aura spread in the atmosphere.

"Seven forms of saint sword: Fourth form- desolation!" Long Chen let out loudly as he slashed with his king's sword. An Arch of bright light could be

seen, filled with terrifying power, which passed monster Emperor Taras as it continued ahead killing everyone who came in its path whether it be a monster or a tribe warrior before it disappeared in the horizon.

"A..." Monster Emperor Taras stood there as his eyes were opened wide. He coughed out black blood before his body split into two parts from the center, falling to the ground. Many couldn't help but vomit as they saw this gruesome scene.

"Ahh... hope you can get your last wish to kill them fulfilled in underworld," Long Chen said in a gentle tone as he turned back, shifting his attention from half split body of Taras.

"There was one more wasn't there?" Long Chen looked around trying to find the monster Emperor he saw standing at the corner of the battlefield since the beginning, but he couldn't find him anywhere.

"Where is he?" Long Chen looked at Queen Mia, who was standing there in a daze watching the dead monster Emperor Taras. She couldn't believe that one of the most terrifying existence of their world was killed so easily by Long Chen. She came out of daze as she heard Long Chen's voice before turning to him.

"Where is that ugly monster who was standing there?" Long Chen asked as he pointed towards a specific direction.

Queen Mia looked in that direction and was stunned to see that it was the spot where Monster Emperor Shentia was standing. She also started looking around but couldn't find him anywhere on the battlefield.

"Ah... He might have ... escaped?" She replied in a doubtful tone as she herself couldn't believe that a monster Emperor would escape leaving his entire army behind.

"It's fine, I want to see how he could escape," Long Chen muttered.

"Where is the place the monster tribe resides in?" Long Chen asked, looking at the Queen.

"Ah... That way. There's a large forest after a few days of travel. It's the place the monster tribe resides in." Queen Mia let out with a blank expression as she looked towards a specific direction.

"Hah, a large forest. That makes it easier for me." Long Chen said in an unnatural tone.

"Here, great master, take this. It's something we use to determine directions. You can go in the direction where the pointer with the square end points at and You'll reach the monster tribe." Tribe leader Bala said as he gave Long Chen an object that looked like a compass.

"Now that's something useful... You guys take care of those remnants of the monsters. I'll be right back in a short time," Long Chen muttered as he walked away. After looking around for a while, he soon found an Elphian horse on the battlefield but he gave up on his plan to use that horse soon after as he thought that it would waste too much time, which he already lacked in this world as he had already passed the trial.

"I'm sure I'll be able to catch up to him with my demonic wings even if I take breaks in between because of my depleted qi. He couldn't have gone much farther than I'm sure I saw him standing there not too long ago. Too bad I can only use 'Spatial Travel' Only once in a day, that too to only the places I have visited before and are within a hundred kilometers of range. I'll be sure to improve this ability in the future as it's really useful," Long Chen thought as he gazed towards his destination direction.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" He muttered as two beautiful wings appeared behind him as he flew up in the sky and immediately disappeared from everyone's view.

"So fast! If he learned the law of wind, I can only imagine how fast he'd be." Tribe leader Bala thought amazed as he saw Long Chen fly away.

"Don't waste time! Kill all the monsters!!" Queen Mia ordered her warriors.

"Let them know the result of initiating an unjust war on the world!!" Tribe leader of Barong tribe, Bala said loudly.

"Wipe them all Out!!" Tribe leader Mazumas told the army of the Mulan tribe.

Similarly, every leader ordered their troops as the slaughter began.

Although the monster army was still slightly stronger than the coalition army since they didn't have the support of the monster king or monster Emperor whereas the enemies had the support of tribe leaders who were involving themselves in the fight. Soon the numbers of the monster army kept decreasing and decreasing. Thousands of monsters kept dying every minute.

"Come on, don't hide. Let me finish it fast! I want to utilize the time I have left on this world doing cultivation, not playing hide and seek with you!" Long

Chen let out as he flew at a really fast speed but he couldn't see Monster Emperor Shentia.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 100 - 100: That's Not For Me To Worry About

"Come on, don't hide. Let me finish it fast! I want to utilize the time I have left on this world in cultivation, not in playing hide and seek with you!" Long Chen let out as he was flying at a really fast speed but he couldn't see monster Emperor Shentia.

"Looks like I'll need to take a break soon. Long Chen muttered as he could feel that his qi was about to be depleted. He was just about to stop when he noticed someone at the far end of the horizon, running away with heavy steps.

A smirk appeared on Long Chen's face as he increased his speed. He was soon above his head but the person running didn't know.

"You were right old friend Balang. We shouldn't have antagonized that human. We should have formed peace with the other tribes and that human. But instead, we chose to ignore you and choose the path of destruction. We screwed up my friend. We just might have begun the process of extinction of our tribe." Monster Emperor Shentia kept running as he muttered to himself.

"That friend of yours sounds like a sensible person. I'm amazed that your monster tribe has someone who's sensible." Came a voice from above.

Monster Emperor Shentia stopped running as he had already guessed who it was.

"As expected of a human. You've already reached me. Are you going to kill me now?" Monster Emperor Shentia said without looking up as he stopped running.

Long Chen came down from the air as his heavenly demon wings disappeared. He stood behind Monster Emperor Shentia.

"No monster who took part in this war shall leave alive," Long Chen said in a heavy voice.

"What about those monsters who didn't take part in this war?" Monster Emperor Shentia said without looking back.

"Why didn't they join the war?" Long Chen asked

"All of the monsters left behind are either kids or elderly." Monster Emperor Shentia said.

"There is no monster king or monster Emperor there? Who's this Balang you were calling old friend," Long Chen asked, feeling interested.

"He's the only monster Emperor still alive other than me. He was against this war and instead wanted peace, whereas Taras wanted revenge. In the end, I favored Taras' plan, thus a war was declared." Monster Emperor Shentia explained.

"Oh, since it was two against one and war was decided upon, why didn't he take part in the war? Did you feel like you two were enough so he stayed behind?" Long Chen inquired with a slight smile.

"No, he was against the war and didn't want to take part in it, so he decided to stay behind to take care of the younger generation of monsters," Monster Emperor Shentia said in a deep voice.

"Hah, you think I'll believe you that he doesn't want war? He won't come for revenge as well?" Long Chen asked with a thoughtful expression.

"He won't. He believed that revenge would cause destruction of the monster tribe, so he won't do it," Monster Emperor Shentia replied.

"I have no reason to believe you. After I kill you, I'll go to your tribe to exterminate every monster, just like you declared this war to slaughter everyone." Long Chen replied in his heavy voice.

"You... Even if I die, I won't let you kill the innocent of my tribe." A strong fighting intent appeared in monster Emperor Shentia as he turned back instantly and punched out with his muscular hand.

But strangely enough, he saw no one standing there as no one was behind him. His fist only hit the air. He turned back but before he could don't turn, a fist landed on his face making him fly far away.

"You think that you can stop me?" Long Chen asked with a slight smile on his face.

"Even if I can't stop you, I won't let you kill innocent people who had nothing to do with this war!" Monster Emperor Shentia roared.

"Hell of Titan!!" He roared as his eyes turned blazing red. The ground suddenly became a sea of fire. This fire was blazing red in color. They were near the small stream, but the water kept evaporating rapidly.

"That was a good one. If I didn't have wings, I would've been in serious trouble." Long Chen smiled as he said,

Monster Emperor Shentia gazed at Long Chen who was flying in the air with his heavenly demon wings.

"We know that you're really strong. So why don't you face me like a man!! Why are you using your wings to dodge my attacks?" Monster Emperor Shentia said as he looked up to Long Chen.

"Why would I? I'm using my own strength against yours, Still, I'll come down," Long Chen said with a slight smile as he got down to the ground in the middle of the blazing sea of fire. A Strange phenomenon was seen as the flames which were in a few inches range on Long Chen's body kept being frozen in space, not harming him in the slightest.

"You are using the same barrier you used to protect yourself against the monster king attacks!!" Monster Emperor Shentia couldn't help but say loudly.

"Whatever I use, is my own choice. Anyway, since we're playing like men, why don't you take my attack without dodging as well?" Long Chen laughed as he said.

"Seven forms of saint sword- Second form: devastation!" Long Chen got in his attacking stance as he attacked with his King's sword towards Monster Emperor Shentia.

"Internal Armour!" Monster Emperor Shentia said as blazing armor appeared around his body, which soon turned to a steel-like structure.

"Barrier!" Monster Emperor Shentia also used a barrier on his body to prevent Long Chen's attacks.

The attack landed on the barrier, breaking it immediately and continued ahead. Monster Emperor Shentia, seeing his barrier broken, attacked with his sword as well, but his sword was broken as soon as it came in contact with Long Chen's attack. The barrier resisted for a moment before completely breaking, but this was enough to diminish the power of Long Chen's attack.

The attack, although weakened in power, still landed on Monster Emperor Shentia's chest, making him fall to the ground as a huge sword wound appeared in his chest.

"It's time for you to die," Long Chen appeared near monster Emperor Shentia who was on the ground roaring in pain.

"You... you can kill me as I've made the mistake of not stopping this war but... But don't kill people in the monster forest. They weren't involved in this war, specially Balang who was against it" Monster Emperor Shentia said, controlling his pain.

"You don't need to tell me what I should and shouldn't do. It's for me to decide. You can die for now." Long Chen said as he separated monster Emperor Shentia's head from his body with his sword.

"Actually, you don't need to worry about it as I don't want to kill the ones not involved in it, more importantly, I don't have enough time to go find the monster tribe and exterminate them. I only have a few more days left so that I can stay in this place. I want to utilize the cultivation advantage I have in this place as much as possible while I'm here." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Monster Emperor Shentia's body.

"That Balang, if what you said is true, does sound like a good choice that will bring your tribe towards a peaceful future, until a few more degenerates like you are born. But that's not for me to worry about." Long Chen said lightly as he started walking back.

<gdiv></gdiv>

Chapter 101 - 101:I Just Want To Leave

After a day of ruthless slaughter, every monster on the battlefield was lying dead on the ground as their blood changed the color of the field. Red could be seen everywhere. Many people could be seen cheering as they celebrated surviving this disaster

"Everyone! I have something to say" Queen Mia said loudly but since she wasn't able to use any Qi because of the backlash, she couldn't use qi to increase the range of her voice. Her voice was only heard by a few nearby people, while most remained unaware

"Everyone!!" Mazumas roared loudly gaining everyone's attention.

" The Queen of banshee tribe wants to say something! But since she's suffering a backlash, she can't get her voice to reach those standing farther. Since there are so many of you, even if all of you come closer, Many of you won't be able to hear her! So I'll be the one getting her words to you!!" Mazumas said loudly

"Thank you Mazumas."The queen thanked

" I don't want to take much of your time and just wanted to say a few words."The queen said which Mazumas repeated in his loud voice

"First of all, I would like to thank you all for participating in this war and congratulate you on winning this historical battle. Although we won this war, we have lost many of our comrades in the process. I hope everyone can properly bury them as we make this place the graveyard of our bravest. " Queen Mia continued

" Secondly, We will have a big celebration for winning this war after one month. we had all our citizens evacuated before the War, so the arrangements will take time. That's it"Queen Mia said as she finished her speech

" Thank you Mazumas" Queen mia thanked Mazumas for helping her

"You don't need to thank me for that! All of us have just survived this terrible war which taught us the strength of unity! We can't maintain that unity if we don't help each other out" Mazumas said to Queen Mia with a happy smile

" Hmmp, where was your unity when you waged a war on us and almost ended our lineage?"Tribe leader of Barong tribe, Bala, snorted

"Hmmpf, who told your tribe member to insult my daughter!! And instead of giving that person to me to punish, you protected him!! Of Course, I'll punish you for that!" Mazumas said as he glared at Bala with an angry expression

" Of Course I'll protect my tribe member. Especially if he was accused wrongly! " Bala said in a non-wavering tone

" Are you calling my daughter a liar?" Mazumas said in a heavy voice as he stared at Bala

" I..." Bala was about to reply when he was interrupted by the Queen

*Both of you! It's not the time to fight!" Queen Mia interrupted them as she said

"You are all injured. Come with me, I'll make arrangements for you all to rest in my palace " Queen Mia said with a slight smile to all the tribe leaders present

" Aia! " Queen said as a girl came forward and put a robe on her. Everyone felt sad as they remembered that the queen had lost her hands, and the one who did it was their savior

"Thanks. By the way, make proper arrangements for our guests to stay in the palace" The queen said as she continued ahead.

" Yes, your highness. " Aia replied

" Ahmm... Queen Mia, can you make proper arrangements for Xu's body to be brought to the Elphia tribe? I just want to leave with Xu and bury him on our own soil. I would really appreciate it if you arrange for a spacious carriage? I'll purchase that and send you the money after I'm back at the tribe with Old Xu "Tensha said as he stood still

"Ah, I'll get it ready. Also, you don't have to pay for anything, you came here to help us, that is already more than anything " Queen Mia replied straight away

"Alright, You guys can go ahead. I'll stay here till then and depart as soon as it is ready. I apologize for not participating in your celebration" Tensha replied

" What celebration? I'm so tired and in so much pain that I just want to rest! Their only celebration go be held will be after one month as Queen Mia said" Bala Said to Tensha

" You can bring him to the palace if you want?" Queen suggested as she looked down

"It's alright, there's no need for that" Tensha said as he rejected straight away

" I... alright. " The Queen said as she walked away while everyone followed her leaving Tensha behind

In just two hours, a carriage was arranged, in which Tensha departed with Xu's body. The army of Elphia tribe followed behind the carriage, albeit at a slower speed

After four hours of travel, Long Chen finally returned to the battlefield in which the war took place. Everywhere he saw, he could only see blood and bodies of dead monsters that were being collected in one spot by the banshee army with the help of a few other armies. He couldn't see any bodies of the warriors of any tribe making him guess that they were all properly buried.

Long Chen couldn't help but be amazed at the fast working of the warriors who buried tens of thousands of bodies in just a Few Hours.

"Where did all the tribe leaders go?" Long Chen asked the first Person he wandered to on the battlefield, who turned out to be a warrior of the Mulan tribe.

"Y...You... Great Master, they all went inside the banshee tribe towards the royal palace." He got stunned seeing the person who killed a monster Emperor standing in front of him and talking to him but soon he controlled himself and answered Long Chen's Question.

"Why don't I see the warriors of the elphia tribe here?" Long Chen inquired

" They all left with their tribe leader some time ago" The warrior replied.

" Oh, and other tribe leaders? did they leave as well?" long Chen asked

"No, they went inside the palace with the queen" He replied

"Alright" Long Chen gave a slight nod as he flew towards the palace. He passed the boundary of the tribe easily as he landed in front of the palace.

'I won't be able to leave in satisfaction until I do it' Long Chen thought as he entered the palace

Chapter 102 - 102:Reason

Long Chen walked inside the palace asking directions from the servants along the way. Although no one dared to stop him, most of them immediately informed the queen that Long Chen had entered the palace and the direction he was going in.

"What does he want to do? " The Queen walked back and forth with a thoughtful expression

"Should I make someone follow him or do it myself? No! He can do anything he wants, I don't want to be involved with that calamity anymore" she thought as she gave up and sat back on her throne and told the servants to let Long Chen do what he wants without antagonizing him

Long Chen knocked on a door which was soon opened

"Gr... great master Chen" A servant opened the door

"Where's your master?" Long Chen asked

"He's inside resting. I will inform him of your arrival? " The servant moved as he hurriedly ran inside. Long Chen entered the room as well and followed the servant

"Master!! Great Master Chen is here to see you!" Long Chen heard the voice as he was in the hall

" Wh... what... I'll be right there" Came a hurried response.

Soon Tribe leader of the Barong tribe, Bala, came out of the bedroom followed behind by the servant

"Ah... Great master Chen. I apologize for making you wait. please sit master" Bala hurriedly walked towards Long Chen even with his injured body

" You don't need to take the trouble to come out. But since you're already out, let's sit down. I need to talk to you about something important" Long Chen said lightly as he sat down and gazed at the servant.

" Ah sure sure. Maz, can you leave the room so that great master and I could talk? " Tribe leader Balang told the servant who soon left the room

"Here, I would like to give it back to you. Thank you for giving it to me as it helped me a lot" Long Chen said as he gave the compass back to Bala which he received to find the location of monster tribe

"Did... did you reach the monster tribe and are back? It was so fast. Are they all dead? " Tribe leader Bala asked shocked

" So you consider me as someone who mindlessly slaughters? why would I eliminate the entire monster tribe? "Long Chen responded with a slight smile

" ah No No ... That's not what I meant. I was just curious about how it helped you"Tribe leader Bala hurriedly clarified

" Of Course it helped me to find the monster emperor I was looking for. I knew he would go in the direction of the monster tribe and this helped me to find him. Also before you ask, Yes, he's already dead"Long Chen said with a smile

" Amazing" Tribe leader Bala couldn't help but say with a stunned expression

"We are getting off-topic. That's not what I'm here to talk about. I'm here about the orb you gave to the queen in exchange for her protection" Long Chen said with a slight smile

" That... what about that" Tribe leader Bala muttered with a slightly nervous expression

" I'm sure that we both know that it wasn't the same orb Tian Shen had comprehended from. Why did you lie and where is the real orb?" Long Chen asked

" This... The truth is that it wasn't my intention to lie. I didn't want to lie to the queen but I had no choice" Tribe leader Bala said with a downcast expression

"What do you mean? There's a reason you didn't give her the real orb?" Long Chen inquired

" Right, it's not because I didn't want to, but the truth is that I didn't even have the orb. Right after Great master, Tian Shen disappeared from this world, that orb went missing with him. It's written in our history books that When our ancestors went to the temple where the orb was placed, it was empty. We don't know where it went either " Bala replied in a deep tone

"So you had three orbs, and the one Tian Shen studied from disappeared when he went back to his real world? Did you find any broken pieces in that place?" Long Chen asked with a thoughtful expression

" There were no broken pieces in that place and it was completely empty. Also, we didn't have three orbs, we only had two orbs before great master Tian Shen appeared. As for where the orb we gave Queen Mia came from? I can give you the answer to that. It was found by our previous tribe leader who one day returned to the tribe from his journey with that orb" Bala explained to Long Chen

" Oh, Thanks for telling me. I need to leave now" Long Chen said as he stood up

" Will you tell the Queen about this?" Bala asked with an anxious gaze

" I have no need to tell that girl anything" Long Chen smiled slightly as he left.

Long Chen walked towards the exit as he kept thinking

"There are many mysteries in this world, too bad I don't have the time to think about all of them. Cultivation is what matters" Long Chen muttered

'If I go back to the Elphia tribe, it would take some time as I can't use Spatial travel before tomorrow. Oh right, there's a good place to cultivate here as well' Long Chen thought as he exited the palace. He walked towards the back of the palace and entered the temple where he found the orb of ice and orb of space

"No guards are here now, I guess since there were no orbs, Mia felt like this place wasn't worth protecting anymore. I wonder how long She'll take to realize that her orb is back where it once was" Long Chen thought as he gazed at the orb of ice inside the temple. Long Chen ignored the orb as he knew that he won't be able to gain anything from it

He sat in the ground as he took out the egg from his spatial ring and started feeding it with his qi. After finishing it, Long Chen finally began his Cultivation once more

Chapter 103 - 103: They Were Real

Long chen was lost in his cultivation inside the temple while the outside world had finally retained it's calm.

After a day, the burial process ended, All of the tribe leaders left with their army. They were provided with luxurious carriages by the banshee tribe to make their travel, in their injured condition, as comfortable as possible. The Banshee tribe also sent their people to the Elphia tribe to escort their young and elderly back as the danger had passed.

Although the queen found out that Long Chen had entered the temple, she decided against getting involved in it and left Long Chen free to do whatever he wanted as she knew that Long Chen was a god-like existence in this world since he could even kill a monster emperor so easily

In the monster city, Monster Emperor Balang had found out about the result of the battle and the crushing defeat of the monster army. He knew that he couldn't do anything about it. After regretting this and his inability to stop Taras and Shentia from taking this foolish decision, he decided to do something to prevent something like this from happening again in the future.

He made a decree that no monster was ever allowed to exit the monster forest or interact with any other tribe. They were to stay within their region peacefully for eternity. Anyone who didn't follow this order was to be killed brutally by every monster.

He also decided to write about this tragedy in a book to warn future generations against taking a stupid decision like this which could cause their downfall. He made it compulsory for this book to be read by every monster when they turned of age.

After doing everything, Monster Emperor Balang walked to the monster forest and started waiting. Waiting for a disaster to arrive.

Another day passed.

Inside the Elphia tribe, A burial was taking place. The burial of deputy chief of the elphia tribe.

Xia could be seen in the front as tears kept falling from her eyes at the sight of her dead father.

She was eagerly waiting for their army to return and was excited when she heard that it had returned. Her eyes couldn't help but look for her father but her whole world turned upside down as the tribe leader tensha exited the carriage and called for her. As she saw her father lying inside the carriage, she couldn't believe that this was actually happening.

The burial was soon arranged.

Hours had passed since that moment but her tears never stopped. Tribe leader tensha walked towards her from behind as he put his hands on her head.

"I'm really sorry, little Xia. It is true that your father died trying to protect me. So in a way, I'm the culprit who caused his death. I ask for your forgiveness" He said in a sad voice

" It's not your fault uncle Tensha. You were fighting with your life on the line for our tribe and so was my father. He did what he thought was right, so I can't blame you. " Xia said in a coarse voice

" I want you to shift in my residence. I'll arrange everything. Although he couldn't complete his last words. I know what he wanted to tell me. It was to take care of you and I fully intend to keep his last wish "Tensha said as he gazed towards the burial taking place

"It's fine uncle Tensha. You don't need to do that. I want to stay in our old home" Xia replied

"I... Alright, I'll respect your wishes. But whenever you need anything, just tell me. Till now I Only had two sons, but now you're a part of that family as well" Tensha said softly as he walked back deciding to give her some space

Terra kept standing in the back unsure of what to say. He wanted to go forward and console Xia but didn't know how to. He didn't want to disturb her when she needed peace but he didn't want to leave her alone as well. He kept standing wondering what to do.

Soon the burial was finished and after saying what everyone wanted and sharing their greatest memories of deputy chief Xu. everyone walked back.

Back in the temple inside the banshee tribe, After over two days of cultivation, Long Chen finally opened his eyes with a smile on his face.

"The peak of the 8th stage gold core realm. Amazing If I could stay here, I could achieve the peak of cultivation easily" Long Chen muttered with a smile.

" Hah, you dream! "Came a mocking voice from nearby

"why? Don't you think that I could do it?" Long Chen asked confused

"You can do it if you could maybe maintain the same speed. But... did you forget about the time dilation? Also, even if there wasn't anything related to time, you still couldn't do anything as the peak of the gold core realm is the best you could achieve in this world. " Xun explained

" Why? " Long Chen inquired

"The Qi of this world is not sufficient. Although you can cultivate fast in this world, this speed will decrease by a large amount as the Qi of this world starts depleting. This place is not like the cultivation world of yours where large amount of Qi is generated daily" Xun further explained

" Isn't this an illusory world made just for the trial? Why can't the qi be unlimited here? " Long Chen asked confused

" Who said it's an illusory world?" Xun said in a confused voice

"Ahmm.. you? When you talked about the orbs, you called it illusory" Long Chen pointed out

"Ahem...I don't remember what I said but I was talking about the orbs, not this world! " She coughed once as she replied

" So it's a real world? And the monsters I killed...? " Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun

" They were real as well! " She smiled as she said, shocking Long Chen

"Why didn't you tell me before?" long Chen asked

"This topic wasn't raised before" She replied

" Wait a minute... My real body is back home, how can I interact with real people in a real world with my spiritual body? " Long Chen asked as he grew more confused

Chapter 104 - 104: Farewell

" Wait a minute... My real body is back home, how can I interact with real people in the real world with my spiritual body? " Long Chen asked as he grew more confused

"The one you're using is not a spiritual body but more like a clone that your spiritual body is possessing. Its a clone made just for this trial by bloodline Temple. It will disappear when you exit this world" She replied like it was a matter of fact

"What are you talking about!! How can a drop of blood make all of this happen? A clone, a trial, a new world? " Long Chen let out loud

" This world is more complex than you think little boy. And my master was at the top of it so of course, anything is possible" Xun said with a smile

"Whatever, I don't even feel like giving a response anymore" Long Chen stopped talking as he lay down on the ground.

" So Tired after sitting for two whole days," Long Chen said as he gazed at the roof

" Who don't you go to the palace and rest on the bed? " Xun asked

" It's fine here as well, I'll be leaving soon enough."Long Chen replied

"By the way, Exactly how long till I leave this world? " Long Chen asked as he looked at Xun

" An hour " She replied looking at him

" Hah, Not much time left now. Let's go meet Tensha and others one last time to say our goodbyes before we leave" Long Chen muttered as he stood up

" The ability I received from the space orb is really amazing. Traveling within a hundred kilometers range though space travel is so awesome. Too bad it has so many limitations" Long Chen muttered

" What limitations? You only told me about the two. It could only be used to travel in a hundred Kilometers range and that it could only be used once a day. Is there any other limitation?" Xia asked confused

" There's another limitation. The place you need to go to must be the place you've been to before. There's one more thing, although it can't be called a

limitation, its something which affects me a lot. It is that You can't be sure of the place the spatial crack will bring you. Although it will be really close to the place you want to travel, it can be any spot in that area, even the spot you haven't visited before" Long Chen explained to Xun

"Just like before, I wanted to travel to the banshee tribe, inside their boundary, but the place I exited was right above the battlefield outside their boundary. Although that worked out in my favor. By the way, My entry was pretty badass, wasn't it?" Long Chen asked with a cheeky smile

" Yes, it was pretty bad... But why add ass? It wasn't that bad, right? " Xun said innocently

" Y... That means pretty awesome, not bad!" Long Chen couldn't help but cough as he heard her words

"Oh...You should be glad you have such awesome...I mean badass ability like space travel. Even though it has some limitations" Xun replied with a smile

" You're right. It's a pretty useful ability. I should go now" Long Chen said as he gazed at Xun

" Warp! " Long Chen muttered as he waved his hand in empty air. A spatial crack appeared which Long Chen widened as he entered. Soon the spatial crack disappeared from that spot

A spatial crack appeared inside the Elphia tribe. Long Chen exited from it as he looked around but his eyes opened wide as he saw what was in front of him.

"Oh f***," Long chen thought

He saw that he was inside a room and a girl was standing in front of him with her back towards him but what made him opened his eyes wide was the fact that this girl wasn't wearing anything. He could see her amazing figure but he didn't have time to think about it. He realized that he was in deep trouble now. The door was in front of the girl so long Chen couldn't exit through the door and he couldn't use Spatial travel either as he had already used his ability

His heart started beating faster as he saw the wet body of the girl. He had guessed that she had just finished taking a bath but his expressions turned weird as he thought about something. He knew that all his reputation was about to be destroyed today as a towel was hanging just near him. He could

guess that she would turn around to get that towel and that will be the moment that a dark stain will be placed upon his honor

His biggest fear turned true as the girl turned around extending her hand towards the towel but her eyes opened wide as her expressions changed. She covered her bountiful breasts with one hand and used her other hand to cover something else. She was just about to scream when Long Chen closed the distance between them and a hand covered her mouth

"M... mammm yemmm?" She said shocked as she saw who it was. But since her mouth was covered by his hands, nothing was clear to Long Chen

"Miss Xia, I... I apologize that I accidentally entered your bathroom. Please don't scream. I was testing an ability and accidentally appeared here "Long Chen brought his lips close to her ears as he said lightly. Xia could feel her heart beating faster as long chen neared her. Her face couldn't help but turn red as her breathing fastened

She nodded her head as long Chen slowly removed his hands from her red lips but didn't move back

"M...Master Chen. I believe you. You are not the type of person who would do something like this intentionally"Xia said softly with her face still turned red

" Your eyes.... Were you crying? " Long Chen asked as he saw that her eyes were slightly red. She nodded in affirmation

"I'm sorry that I couldn't protect your father. I was late and couldn't save him" Long Chen said lightly

" You could do nothing about it, but the one who killed him...?" She asked

"He died a brutal death. All the monsters who took part in this war were slaughtered" Long Chen replied as he gazed into her eyes

" Thank you," She said as she hugged Long Chen

" Ahh... you can wear clothes now" Long Chen muttered as he gazed towards the door

After Long Chen's reminder, Xia remembered that she wasn't wearing anything. She immediately pushed Long Chen back as she picked up the towel and covered her sensual body

Long Chen hurriedly exited the bathroom without Looking Back and walked towards the chair in the room attached, waiting for Xia to come out.

Xia soon came out after getting properly dressed and sat in front of Long Chen gracefully.

"I'm here to bid you farewell. I am leaving this place and I don't know when and if I'll ever meet you again. I wanted to thank you for all the help you all provided me" Long Chen said straight away before she could even say anything

"Y... Alright. Thank you for giving us a chance to get to know you and saving the people of this world. You, humans, are like the guardian entity of this world. Just like Master Tian Shen saved this world the last time, you saved it now. We should be the ones thanking you" Xia said with a smile hiding her true emotions

Chapter 105 - Chapter 105: Rewards

"You told uncle Tensha and Terra yet or am I the first one?" Xia asked as he gazed at Long Chen

"Not Yet. You are the first one I've told so far. I should go and tell them as well. I don't have much time left" Long Chen said as he got up

"I'll come with you then" Xia smiled slightly as she heard him and stood up as well but Long Chen somehow felt like her smile looked quite different than her usual bright smile

" Ah... alright. can you walk ahead? I don't know where the exit to your house is " Long Chen gave a wry smile as he said looking towards the door

" Alright," Xia said as she walked, followed behind by Long Chen

After a short trip, both of them reached Tensha's residence.

Tensha was sitting on a chair in the hall writing something while terra was sitting nearby reading a book.

"I never took you as an intellectual person who liked reading, terra" Long Chen commented with a smile as he and Xia walked inside

Both terra and Tensha got up shocked to welcome him.

"Keep sitting, I won't take much of your time. I'm just here to bid you farewell. I'm leaving and I don't know when I'll be back so I wanted to tell you and thank you for taking care of me before I leave. " Long Chen said with a smile without waiting for their response

" This... Just like before when great master Tian Shen left after saving this world. Are humans really the gods of this world? You always appear in times of danger, protect us and then disappear" Tensha gazed at Long Chen as he said in a low voice

"I'm no god. But I'm glad that I was able to save ...the most of you" Long Chen replied but by the end, his voice almost became inaudible as he remembered about Deputy chief Xu. He gazed back at Xia but she had no expressions on her face like she didn't hear him

"Can't you stay for longer?" Terra asked looking at Long Chen

"Unfortunately I can't. But maybe we'll see each other again in the future"
Long Chen said with a slight smile on his face as he gazed at terra

"Now that I have done everything I wanted to, it's time to leave. Goodbye everyone" Long Chen said in a soft tone as he walked towards the exit.

"Wait!" Came a voice from behind which made Long Chen stop in his tracks

He turned back and gazed at Xia who came running as she closed the distance between her and Long Chen.

"Yes?" He asked after a brief moment

"I...I know it's inappropriate but... Can I come with you as well?" She said in a low voice

Long Chen gazed at her for a short moment before words finally came out of his mouth

"I apologize that I can't take you with me even if I want to. As far as I know, the place I'm going, only a human can enter" Long Chen replied

" Oh, alright. Sorry for making such a weird request" She laughed awkwardly as she said diverting her eyes

Long Chen gazed at her for a moment before turning back. He exited the residence

"Heavenly demon wings" After exiting the residence, Long Chen used his Martial skill as two wings appeared behind his back. He looked back once before he flew in the air and soon disappeared into the horizon

"Things changed so much in the last few days" Tensha muttered as he saw Long Chen leave

" Father, Where do you think the humans disappear after saving us? "Terra asked as he looked at Tensha

" Who knows, maybe they're out there helping another world in need, "Tensha said as he looked towards the direction Long Chen departed in

"I hope we will meet again" Xia muttered in a soft voice before walking towards her residence

Long Chen was flying in the middle of nowhere when suddenly a portal appeared in front of him. As he couldn't stop, he entered the portal.

"Back here" Long Chen muttered as he found himself back in the bloodline Temple

"Xun! What now? I passed the trial, Why am I not back in the real world yet?" Long Chen asked as he stared at the walls

"It's the right place. Don't you want it?" Xun appeared near Long Chen as she said while gazing in Long Chen's eyes

"What?" Long Chen asked confused

"Your rewards dummy. I told you that you'll get the rewards when you pass the trial" Xun gave a cheeky smile as she said

" Oh right, where are the rewards?" Long Chen remembered as he asked excitedly.

"Enter the room in front of you," Xun said with a smile

"That room? Isn't it the doorway to the trial world? Are you trying to fool me? " Long Chen asked as he stared at Xun

" You think I'm lying? You can choose not to enter if you don't want to" Xun puffed her cheeks as she said

" Alright alright, I trust you little girl" Long Chen said with a smile as he pinched Xun's cheeks.

" You!!!!" Xun's face turned red in anger but before she could say anything, Long Chen had already entered the room. She disappeared and entered as well

"You're the little girl! Your whole family is the little girl!! I'm older than your oldest ancestor! How dare you talk to me like that! " Xun let out loudly with puffed up cheeks as she gazed at Long Chen.

"I was just messing around. You know, People say that the wise ones ignore the mistakes of the younger ones. I'm sure you'll ignore my mistakes since you're so wise. Right?" Long Chen asked with a bright smile as he looked at Xun

", Ah... yes that's right!! I'm really the wise one, I'll forgive you for your mistakes! " Xun said as she nodded her head up and down with proud expressions on her face

"Tell me about my rewards," Long Chen asked her

"Look at the shelves in front of you. There are some Martial skills in there, you can choose any one of them. For now, you can only open the first page and read the summary of the book but once you choose one, you'll gain the complete knowledge of that skill in your memory. Then you can Cultivate that when you're back" Xun explained as she glanced at Long Chen

" Are they the strongest skills in the Bloodline Temple? " Long Chen inquired

" Of course not. Since you've just passed the first trial, you're getting the lowest grade of skills in bloodline Temple. But even this lowest grade will be considered a treasure in a lower world like yours" Xun replied to Long Chen.

" First trial? There will be more?" Long Chen asked in a loud tone

" Yup, there will be more. And every trial will be different than the first one. " Xun told Long Chen.

" When will be the next trial? " Long Chen asked as he glanced at xun

" When your bloodline density reaches 5 percent. You've only unlocked the ability to gain 5 percent bloodline after passing the first trial. When you reach that limit, the second trial will begin" Xun explained to Long Chen

" Whatever, I'll think about all that later. First, it's time to choose a suitable skill for myself" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he gazed at the books on the shelf

Chapter 106 - 106:Choices

"Wild Steps- A Martial skill that can increase the speed of a normal mortal comparable to that of a wild beast with even more miraculous effects on the cultivators" Long Chen muttered as he read the first book's introduction. Without thinking for long, he picked up the next book

" Blink- A movement skill that can make you change your position in a range of one meter within a blink of an eye. Not useful for long-distance movement but pretty useful trick during a life or death battle" Long Chen thought about the next skill as he finished reading

Long Chen kept reading books one after another before he finished reading the shelf completely and realized that all the skills in it were movement skills

"I quite lacked a good movement skill as the level of flash steps was too low. It came at a good time but all these movement skills are so amazing, it's tough to choose. Some have good versatility while others have high effectiveness. Some are effective for short-distance whereas others for longer distance. Every skill has the use of their own. I think I have a few choices in my mind though

"Earthly Monarch Effect! Although I like blink as well, but if I had to choose, I'll take Earthly Monarch Effect" Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the book

" So you've decided on this one? " Xun asked as she stood in the back

" Yea. It is something that I find more useful. Although it can't increase my speed on a burst like some of the other skills, it's the one which will grow stronger with me. This movement skill strengthens the muscles while increasing the overall speed by once twenty percent. I've known that my speed had gone up by a lot as my cultivation increased. Any fixed increase will become useless after I reach a certain cultivation. But compared to other movement skills, the usefulness of earthy monarch effect will keep increasing as my cultivation increase " Long Chen explained with a smile

" So you're investing in this movement skill for the long run. Do you think you should think as much? You'll get even stronger skills in the future " Xun laughed as she said

" Of course I am investing in the future with what I have as I'm not ready to place everything on hope. Every skill of bloodline Temple is extraordinary and I don't want this chance to be wasted but it's just a decision about movement skills, there are more shelves and books in this room. I need to learn more to

decide which skill is more important for me" Long Chen said as he gazed at Xun

Long Chen moved to the left shelf and picked up books one by one and putting them back after reading their introduction

"Steel body- A body Cultivation technique that makes your body as hard as steel, no mortal weapon will be able to cut your skin even the slightest when cultivated to the completion of the first stage. No Spirit grade weapon will be about to cut your skin when cultivated to third stage...." Long Chen muttered

"Heavenly Snake body - A body Cultivation technique that increases the flexibility of your body by softening your bones when needed while increasing the defense as well. It'll be easier to avoid opponents attacks with a more flexible body" Long Chen talked to himself as he read another description

" Dragon Transformation - A technique that when cultivated to the finest, can make the bones and skin as tough as that of a dragon. This once looks pretty useful " Long Chen thought as he put the book back

He finished reading all the books in this shelf except one. He opened the last book and read its name.

"Demon Monarch Physique! A very dominating name" Long chen said as he picked up the last book. He opened the book and read it's description

"Demon Monarch Physique- A demon is within all of us, a hidden strength and a hidden weakness. After Cultivating the Demon monarch physique to the peak, The strength of a demon monarch will flow through you. You shall make everyone tremble just by your name. Every stage comparable to a Qi cultivator. Most Suitable for the Cultivators who have high patience, calm mind and a strong will" Long Chen let out lightly as he read

"It's description is as powerful as its name. Xun, Do you know about this skill?" Long Chen asked as he looked back

" I have heard of it once. It's a really powerful body cultivation technique but its drawbacks are pretty good as well" Xun explained with a smile

" What drawbacks?" Long Chen asked looking at Xun

"You remember the last words you read? Most Suitable for Cultivators who have high patience, calm mind, and a strong will? Don't you wonder why? " Xun asked with an interested expression on her face.

" Simple. It's probably because it's hard to cultivate it in a short period of time so the ones with better patience have a better chance to cultivate it "Long Chen replied

" Nope. Although it's true that it's one of the hardest skills to cultivate amongst the body cultivation technique present here but that's not the reason for that warning. It has something to do with the drawback I was talking about" Xia told Long Chen

" Can you tell me straight away without all this suspense?" Long Chen asked annoyed

" Alright alright, I'll tell you. The thing is that you can cultivate this technique even if you don't have any quality involving calm and patience. It'll be just as hard for any person cultivating it whether it be a calm minded person or the one who always stays angry. It's what comes after Cultivating this technique" Xun said as she gazed at Long Chen

" After you cultivate this technique, you'll have a hard time controlling your emotions. When you're angry, you'll have an urge to slaughter and only through sheer will, can you have a chance to control yourself. The higher you cultivate this technique, the more effort it will require for you to control yourself and there's a good chance that you'll lose yourself to your emotions and anger is not the only emotion it will strengthen. If you can't control, you'll be just like a demon who does what his heart wants" Xun explained further

" Wow. That's...." Long Chen couldn't find words to explain his astonishment as he heard Xun's description

" Other than the negatives, there are many positives as well. Your physical strength will improve explosively and you'll be able to take on Cultivators without using any cultivation or Qi and your defense will improve a lot as well while cultivating this technique"Xun said with a smile

" This sounds like a pretty good Martial skill, it's just the side effects that are making me worry. I don't know if I should choose it or not. I'll decide later, first look through the last shelf"Long Chen muttered as he turned back

" How many books am I allowed to choose by the way?" Long Chen asked

Chapter 107 - 107: Second Reward

"How many books am I allowed to choose by the way?" Long Chen asked as he looked at Xun with expectations.

"Go through all the books first, decide which ones you want. When you're done, I will tell you how many you can take" Xun replied with a smile

"There are only three shelves here, if I'm not Wrong, this third one should contain either an Attack, defense or flying type Martial skills" Long Chen muttered as he picked the first book on the third shelf.

"Earth cracking fist- A fist is enough to destroy life, A fist is enough to crack the earth. When cultivated to the peak, a single punch can break a mountain to pieces! This one can be really useful after I cultivate a body cultivation technique and increase my strength" Long Chen said lightly as he finished reading the description of the first book

"Heavenly Elephant strike! Hmm... It's a good one as well. Making a heavenly elephant avatar using qi and using him to attack the opponent. Weaker opponents can't even stand a chance" Long Chen muttered as if wondering to himself

"Thunder blade! Making thunder fall From the sky at the opponent, cleansing all sins and destroying even soul. I like this one as well" Long Chen muttered as he put the book back

"Hah, is there anything that you don't like?" Xun asked in a teasing voice

"Fire prison! Fire Can burn anything, reduced to ashes! A prison made of fire to trap your opponent preventing their escape. They can do nothing but wait for their imminent demise" Long Chen said as he finished reading about book without responding to Xun

"It feels more like the skill that the monster emperor used to trap me. Could be useful in certain situations as well" Long Chen muttered with a smile

After a short while Long Chen was finished reading all the books on this shelf as well

"All the Martial skills on this shelf are remarkable offensive type Martial skills. There are so many that I want for myself. Is there no flying to Martial skill in this place?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun

" I don't think a flying Martial skill is here this time but I don't think that you need one either as you already have a pretty good flying skill"Xun replied looking at Long Chen

" Alright, anyways, I've read all the books. Can you tell me how many books I can choose now? " Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun

" I've chosen three books, for now, one from each shelf. If I can choose more, I have other skills in my mind as well" Long Chen said to Xun

" Pretty lucky, As that's the exact number of skills that you could take as your reward. Three shelves, three books. So which one did you choose? Pick them up, we're leaving this room"Xun said as she stretched her arms

" I chose these three. Thunder Blade, Earthly Monarch Effect and ... Demon Monarch physique"Long Chen said as he picked up the three books he named

" So you've chosen Demon Monarch physique even after my warning. You must have a lot of confidence on yourself" Xun asked as she looked at Long Chen

" I believe I can control myself, "Long Chen said with a smile

" If you say so. Since you've picked the three, leave this room now. Those books will disappear and the knowledge on how to cultivate them will appear in your memory" Xun Said as she pointed towards the door

"I know that I shouldn't be greedy but Are there no other rewards? " Long Chen asked glancing at Xun

"There's more that you'll receive, " Xun said mysteriously as she disappeared

Long Chen walked towards the exit with a thoughtful expression before finally exiting the room.

He saw Xun standing in front of him

"Now time for your third reward. Enter that room" Xun said as she pointed towards the door Long Chen came out of.

Long Chen with a tired expression entered the room again without asking

As he entered the room, the view was again different There were no shelves or books. The entire room was completely empty. He gazed at the walls but only strange patterns were there

"What am I supposed to get in this room?" Long Chen said as he gazed at Xun

"The walls," Xun said with a smile

"What about the walls?" Long Chen asked back

"You see the patterns on there? Just touch any pattern that you like and you'll gain some interesting knowledge. What knowledge you get depends on the pattern you chose" Xun explained

"What knowledge are you talking about?" Long Chen inquired

"You'll know when you touch one. I can't help you on this one" Xun said with a slight smile.

Long Chen walked forward and looked at all the patterns. He could see that there were over Twenty patterns on different walls. He understood nothing about any pattern and could only take a chance by choosing a random one.

"This one I guess" Long Chen walked towards the left wall towards the corner most pattern which somehow looked kind of like a plant. Xun watched him with an eager expression on her face

Long Chen touched the pattern but fell unconscious on the ground immediately

"That's a good choice. I guess you really are walking a different path than Tian Shen" Xun muttered as she looked at the sword-like pattern on the right wall

"Ahem? Where am I" Long Chen muttered subconsciously as he opened his eyes

"Oh right, Bloodline Temple" He let out as he gazed at his surroundings and saw Xun sitting there

"What just happened. wait a minute... This knowledge in my mind... it wasn't there before. What the..." Long Chen muttered as he grabbed his head tightly

"Calm down. I know it's tough absorbing so much information but it'll pass in just a few seconds after you assimilate the knowledge" Xun said in a soothing voice

"This knowledge! It is alchemy!! The techniques of making pills, various herbs, recipes... so much!!" Long Chen let out shocked as he assimilated all the memories

"This much knowledge!! I'm sure not even the best alchemist in our empire will not know so much!!" Long Chen said with a wide smile

" This is your second reward. What you have is just theoretical knowledge. Also, comparing this knowledge to a lowly alchemist of a lower world is like an insult to this knowledge! " Xun told Long Chen

" By the way, although you have just gained the knowledge of a great way of Alchemy. You can reach the top in alchemy but only if you can apply this theoretical knowledge practically. That is the actual tough part. If you can succeed, then you can become one of the greatest alchemists ever known" Xun further explained

" So the pattern I chose represented alchemy knowledge? So in a sense, now I have the same knowledge the best alchemist in the universe may have? Awesome" Long Chen said with a bright smile

"Well... Not exactly" Xun stood as she looked at long chen

Chapter 108 - 108: Last Reward

"So the pattern I chose represented the Great way of alchemy? So in a sense, I now have the same knowledge the best alchemist in the universe may have? Why do I feel this knowledge is not all there is to it?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun

" You're right. The knowledge you have is something a Spirit grade 9th rank Alchemist should possess. As you know, there are many grades above Spirit grade alchemist" Xun explained.

"Yea, I know a few. The lowest grade being Mortal grade Alchemist, Spirit grade alchemist and then Saint grade alchemist. Every grade is divided into 9 ranks, with first Rank being the lowest" Long Chen said to Xun

" Yup, the knowledge you received makes you a 9th stage spirit grade Alchemist, but only theoretically" Xun laughed as she said

" That's a good reward as well. I've only heard about mortal grade alchemist being in our kingdom and now I'm Superior to him" Long Chen smiled brightly as he said

" Not yet, but you will be if you learn to use the knowledge you have. But it'll take a lot of practice though" Xun replied to Long Chen

"Oh right, the pattern I chose represented the path of alchemy, what about other patterns?" Long Chen asked as he looked at the other walls but realized that there were no patterns on any wall now

" Don't bother looking for them. They disappeared since you made your choice. By the way, They represented other great knowledge like the great strategist, painter, poet, Physician, Artisan, oracle, appraiser, Tamer, Formation Master, etc" Xun explained

" I don't want to compare myself to him, but I can't help but be curious, What did he choose? " Long Chen asked as he looked at Xun

" He? Oh, you mean your senior Tian Shen! "Xun laughed but stopped after Long Chen glared at her with an annoyed expression for over a minute

" He chose the wall on the right, the corner most pattern. The knowledge was something similar yet totally opposite to the one you chose. While your path as an alchemist can help you as well as help others. The path he chose was

most helpful in creating destruction" Xun said to Long Chen as she reminisced about the past

" What was it? " Long Chen couldn't help but ask

"Since we're done with this room, let's exit" Xun changed the topic as she disappeared

Long Chen exited the room with a confused expression and found Xun standing there.

"Both the rewards were really nice, makes up for the effort of going through the trouble but are there any other rewards?" Long Chen said as he gazed back at the door of the room he exited from

"Yup, there one more! It's s the best amongst all three" Xun said with a bright smile

" What?" Long Chen asked with an excited expression

"Oh Right, I probably need to enter the room again to get that" Long Chen said as he walked towards the door again

"You don't need to go there to get your last reward," Xun said with a smile

" What is it?" Long Chen stopped as he turned back to look at Xun

"Me! " Xun folded her arms around her tiny chest as she said with a proud expression

"You? Is that a joke?" Long Chen tilted his head and asked with a confused look

"Nope. It's totally not a joke. If you had failed the test, we couldn't meet again but you passed it and now I'll be with you as your guiding spirit" Xun Said with a smirk

Long Chen's expressions changed as he smiled and he walked towards her

"You said that you're my reward? Does that mean you're mine now? " Long Chen asked in a soft voice as he closed the distance between them and caressed Xun's cheeks with his fingers.

"Y... you ..." Xun's face turned red as she stuttered to find words but before she could say anything, Long Chen started laughing and walked back

"You're really cute Xun," Long Chen said while still laughing

"You're Cute! Your whole family is cute! You idiot" Xun Said annoyed as she disappeared with a red face

"Hey, you forgot to tell me, how can I go back to my world!" Long Chen said loudly in the empty temple

" Exit the temple, you'll wake up at your right place" Xun's voice echoed in the temple

" That girl, " Long Chen smiled as walked towards the exit and passed through the door into the white light

"Hmm..." Long Chen felt hungry as he slowly opened his eyes and looked around

"Same old room, looks like I'm really back" Long Chen sat up and looked around. Nothing had changed and everything is as before. Xun must be messing with me before" Long Chen said as he stood up from the bed but he felt something was different

He looked at his hands and found that they were longer, and so were his legs. He could feel that he had grown taller as well

He hurriedly walked towards the mirror and looked at himself but his mouth opened wide as soon as he saw his reflection in the mirror

Although he still had golden eyes and dark hair, his face had become even more mature. He looked to be around 15-16 years old now and his height had increased a lot as well. From the initial height of five feet, his height had increased to 5 feet 7-8 inches now.

"Xun was right, it looks like quite a few years had passed in the real world. Well, it could've been much worse. Hah, Now I've grown up now without having to wait" Long Chen smiled optimistically

" Wait a minute... I wasn't wearing these clothes. Who changed them? " Long Chen muttered as he looked at the clothes he was wearing currently.

"It was your mother" Xun's voice came in Long Chen's mind

"She... She saw?" Long Chen's face turned awkward as he understood what it implied

"So what? I saw as well... It's quite good I must say" Xun laughter could be heard by Long Chen as he was looking at the mirror

"Why aren't you Appearing outside?" Long Chen changed the topic as he asked

"I'm resting. It was so tiring teaching you so many things in bloodline Temple. I'll come outside when I'm free" Xun replied to Long Chen

"If you say so. Anyways, How much time has passed?" Long Chen inquired

Chapter 109 - 109: Lucky Day?

"If you say so. Anyways, How much time has passed in this world since I entered that land?" Long Chen inquired as he looked at Xun

"Three years if I'm not wrong" Xun replied

"Hmm...I guessed it was somewhere in that range" Long Chen muttered as he stared at his reflection

"I should go outside and tell her. She must be pretty worried in the last three years..." He said as he turned back but he suddenly thought of something

"First, I need to wear proper clothes" Long Chen muttered as he walked towards his wardrobe.

"Since the clothes I am currently wearing fit me, there's a good chance that my mother got larger clothes for me. Maybe there's a proper outdoor dress in there somewhere" Long Chen muttered as he opened his wardrobe

"What the? They're still here. " Long Chen smiled as he said. He saw that his older clothes were still here, placed just like they were before. He saw that more clothes were placed in a newer compartment without disturbing the clothes he used to wear before.

'This one... kind of looks good' He picked the newer clothes one by one until he picked a set for himself which he liked and thought.

He wore a luxurious blue dress covered by a golden robe with a dragon embroidered on it.

"Much better now" Long Chen looked at himself in the mirror as he walked towards the door. He pushed the door open

"Ah..." Came a sound followed by a crashing noise as soon as Long Chen pushed the door open

He Hurriedly exited the room and saw a Cute girl who looked like she was in her early twenties lying on the ground while another similarly aged girl was picking up the plate and a pill that fell on the ground

Both of them simultaneously looked at Long Chen and their expressions become that of shock as a wide smile bloomed on their beautiful faces

"You woke up!!!" The girl picking the plate left the plate on the ground as she immediately ran to Long Chen and hugged him tightly. Long Chen could feel the soft chest of the girl being squeezed between their bodies as she hugged him. Long Chen didn't know what to do with his hands which awkwardly stayed in the air

"Ah...Mei?" Long Chen said lightly.

"Yes, young master! The girl said as she looked into Long Chen's eyes with her slightly wet eyes but her face turned red as she realized how close she was to Long Chen. She could feel Long Chen's light breathing as their lips were only a few inches apart. Long Chen gazed at her luscious lips as a part of him told him to move his face just a few inches forward and kiss those red lips of hers

"Xue... You're here as well" Long Chen gazed at the girl standing behind them. It was her sister Xue who had fell down to the ground. She had picked herself up and was gazing at the both of them.

"Ah..?" Mei hurriedly created some distance between her and Long Chen but didn't take her eyes off him.

"Sister..." Mei wanted to say something but before she could say much, she saw Xue going forward and embracing Long Chen as well

'Is this my lucky day or what?' Long Chen thought as he was shocked by Xue who was usually more well mannered, hugging him.

"I am so glad that you're alright..." Xue said in her soft voice as she held him tightly

"Ah... thank you." Long Chen replied as he finally gave up and put his hands on her back. Mei gazed at her sister with jealousy

"I apologize for doing it but can I stay like this for just a moment longer?" Xue muttered as she kept hugging him

Long Chen didn't say anything as they stayed like this for a little longer. Long Chen could feel her heartbeat while she could feel his. After a few seconds, she separated from him

"I am extremely sorry for such misconduct. I hope that the young master could forgive my rudeness" Xue said as she bowed slightly

" Ah...Me too" Mei hurriedly said as she bowed as well

"It's fine. You both did nothing which requires you to apologize to me" Long Chen replied with a smile

" Oh right, what's that pill," Long Chen said as he looked at the pill on the ground.

" Ah...I completely forgot about that! " Mei said as she hurriedly picked up the pill

"It's a very incredible pill the family had been giving you to provide you nourishment since you fell into... the coma for so long," Xue said to Long Chen as she gazed in his eyes

" Oh right, since I couldn't eat anything myself. This pill must be pretty expensive though" Long Chen muttered

" I heard that it's made by a great alchemist of the kingdom. It's pretty expensive but I'm sure the family can afford it" Mei replied as she held the pill

" Oh, By the way how much time was I asleep for?" Long Chen asked them

" 3 years 2 months and 21 days " Xue and Mei both replied at the same time

"Wow... so much time had passed. You know, I feel like You two have become even more beautiful in the last 3 years." Long Chen replied with a bright smile as he gazed at their well-curved body.

"You've become even more handsome as well Young master," Mei said with her head down hiding her bright red face

" Hahaha.... is that right? " Long Chen laughed as he replied

"Is my mother in her room by the way?" Long Chen asked looking at them

"Not at the moment. Madame is in the Great Hall at the meeting of the patriarch and the elders. She heard that many of the elders wanted to talk to Patriarch about something related to you. So she went with the patriarch to attend the meeting" Xue said with an odd expression

" Oh? What about me? " Long Chen inquired

"I apologize young master, but I don't know the details," Xue said with a sorry expression

"It is fine, I'll go meet them myself. You two can stay here" Long Chen smiled as he walked away

" We're coming with you Young master," They both said as they started following him

"Alright, but you can't enter the Great Hall," Long Chen said as he continued walking ahead

He walked through the huge Long clan mansion. Most of the Clan members didn't even recognize him as they haven't seen Long Chen in the last three years and even barely seen him before that. The ones who barely recognized him, were shocked as they kept staring at him walk past them.

Long Chen soon reached near the Great Hall. He walked near the door and just as he barely opened the door, he was able to hear the voice from inside. The more he heard, the angrier he got.

Chapter 110 - 110: Are You Doubting Me?

Long Chen soon reached near the Great Hall. He walked near the door and just as he barely opened the door, he was able to hear the voices from inside. The more he heard, the angrier he got.

"Patriarch, I want you to think about it carefully, after all, the Clan's future depends on it" A voice came from inside

"What think about it carefully? Aren't you just talking about killing my son?" A female voice roared in anger

"Madam Sima, it's not what we are saying! Also, we are only talking about this because we care for the clan and even more for him" An Elder said.

"The clan had been feeding him such an expensive pill every day for the last three years. Although we have the capacity to feed him the pill for the rest of his life, think of the burden it will place on the clan. We're a supreme clan but still, our resources are limited. We could use the resources we will use to buy those pills for him for the next hundred years to a much better use and build a greater future for our clan" The same elder let out

"What care for my son? You're just greedy and worried about the resources and your benefits!! Are you that poor that you want to take the life of my son just for a few resources?" Sima Ziyi roared in anger

"Little Ziyi, Think about it with a calm mind. He had been in that condition for over three years. Every physician had come to check up on him, but they all said that they don't know what had happened and they can't treat him. Even if we think of it as a coma, just consider the torment his soul must be going through as we're keeping him in this world in such a condition. Even if we keep him alive for the next fifty years using the pills, there won't be any benefit. He won't wake up, he will just stay in that state with his soul trapped in his body because you weren't ready to release him from this cruel fate" Someone else said. Long Chen recognized it as the voice of the Supreme Elder Long Hua

"As a mother, Think for the welfare of your son. Free him of this cruel fate" Supreme Elder Long Hua further said

"You're not god!! Stop thinking like you know if my son will wake up or not!! You're just worried that your second son won't get enough resources when he grows up" Sima Ziyi said with an anger-filled tone, not caring about the politeness even a little bit

"Patriarch, Only you can make a decision on this matter as you are the Patriarch of this clan and his grandfather as well! You need to make a choice. Peace for his soul and saving resources or wasting the resources to keep tormenting his soul" Supreme Elder Long Hua said as he looked at Long Ren

"My decision is very clear. As long as I'm alive, my grandson won't die because of a lack of resources! The clan has many resources and we can earn even more if there's ever a lack of it! But no one should ever think about my grandson and what he's getting! " Long Ren said in a deep voice that was able to instill fear in the elders.

"But..." Supreme elder wanted to say something but stopped as he heard a voice

"Supreme Elder, didn't you hear the Patriarch's order? You should know that his order is the law of this clan which everyone must follow" Everyone heard a voice. They looked towards the door and saw Long Chen entering the room with a slight smile on his face as he opened the doors completely

Everyone stood up from their seats shocked as they looked like they had seen a ghost

"Aren't I right grandfather?" Long Chen asked in an innocent tone

" Hahaha Right Right!! About time you woke up" Long Ren said with a burst of hearty laughter as relief could be seen on his face.

Long Chen turned his face towards her mother but as soon as he turned, A person came running into his arms as he was hugged tightly

Sima Ziyi kept hugging Long Chen tightly. She felt like he would disappear like a dream if she left him. Tears kept falling from her eyes onto his shoulders making his shoulders wet

He put his arms on her back as he hugged her back

"Everything is fine mother. You don't need to cry" He said in a soothing voice as he tried to calm her down but her tears didn't stop, instead, they increased

"Young Nephew, it's a miracle that you have woken up. I'm so happy for you" Supreme elder said with a smile as he neared them

Every elder started congratulating but the ones who were speaking with supreme elder just a few moments ago had an awkward expression on their face

"Young Nephew, I wanted to talk to you about something. I've been waiting for three years for it " The supreme Elder said with a smile

"Oh? What is it? I don't want to make you wait more so You can ask me right now? Long Chen said with Sima Ziyi in his arms still hugging him tightly trying to believe that it wasn't a dream

"Do you remember the time just before your coma? " Supreme elder asked

"Yes, I do, " Long Chen replied

"It's good. So my question is that the day before you left the mansion for the Northern forest, did you go to my son Long Su's room and killed his servant?" Supreme elder asked

" Yes, I was walking near brother Su's courtyard when I heard that servant talking bad about grandfather. So in anger, I killed him" Long Chen replied with a smile

" Oh, are you sure? why would he talk bad about patriarch?" Supreme elder Long Hua asked as he glanced at Long Chen

" Right, I'm sure it happened. You wouldn't be trying to call me a liar, would You?"Long Chen asked with an innocent look

Long Ren gazed at Supreme elder with a slightly angry look

"Of course not. I was just asking. " He hurriedly replied

"Anyways, after you killed...I mean punished him for his crime of bad-mouthing patriarch, you left for the Northern black forest." Supreme Elder continued

" Right" Long Chen replied.

" I wanted to ask, did you meet Long Su inside the forest? He didn't return from there and couldn't be found anywhere. I believe that he was somewhere in that Forest" Supreme elder muttered

" Are you doubting me of killing him? Supreme elder, I'm just a First stage formation Establishment realm cultivator. I can't even hurt a hair on his head" Long Chen muttered

" I'm not blaming you for killing him. I just wanted to ask if you met him or seen him with someone?" Supreme Elder inquired

" I apologize, but I wasn't able to meet bother Su" Long Chen said as he looked at supreme elder with an innocent look

" Oh, alright, " Supreme elder said with a doubtful tone as he slowly walked back

" Patriarch, since thankfully young Nephew is up, there's no need for this meeting. I'll be going back" Supreme elder said as he left the Great Hall. Other elders left the hall as well but congratulated the patriarch before exiting.

After a brief moment, only long Chen, Sima Ziyi and Long Ren was left in the room

Chapter 111 - 111: Even If You Killed Him

"Ahem... Mother, I'm not going to disappear. Can you free me now?" Long Chen asked after staying in that position for a few minutes and seeing that she wasn't freeing him

"I don't think she will. You know, you're such a troublesome child! You worried your mother so much in the last three years. I've never seen a smile on her face in the last three years but I have seen tears in her eyes almost every single day.

"She spent most of her day in your room looking at you sleeping. She barely left your room and never left the house even once in the last three years." Long Ren said in a heavy tone.

" I apologize for worrying you" Long Chen replied as he hugged her tightly as well.

"Don't apologize. Just let mother hug you" Sima Ziyi replied.

"I promise I'm fine now." Long Chen said as he hugged her and lost himself in the warmth of familial love

She finally freed Long Chen from her embrace but still held onto him by his shoulders as she gazed in his eyes

"I'm so thankful to the gods that my baby is safe. Whenever you're feeling like there's something wrong, you need to tell me! I don't want to lose you again. My heart won't be able to bear it a third time" Sima Ziyi said as a relaxed smile bloomed on her beautiful face which contradicted the tears in her eyes

"I promise! " Long Chen smiled as he said

"Oh, I forgot!! You must be hungry!!! Mother will bring the food here right now!! No, I'll prepare your favorite dish myself!! I'll be right back" She said as she hurriedly ran towards the door

"There's no..." Long Chen wanted to stop her but he saw that she had already exited the room.

"She's just excited that her son had woken up after all these years," Long Ren said lightly as he patted Long Chen's shoulders

" So young man...I know that you've just woken up and I shouldn't talk about this but Ziyi told me that you went into a coma right after coming back from

the northern black forest. And surprisingly, I was the one who allowed you to go there. Can you tell me when did I give you permission to go to the northern black forest?" Long Ren asked with a smile on his face

"This... This... I'm sorry grandfather. I lied to mother" Long Chen said with an embarrassed look on his face.

" I wanted to go to the forest to practice against real beasts but I knew that mother wouldn't allow me to go there and even if I left she would still be worried. So I... lied to her that you allowed me to go there and gave me special guards" Long Chen explained to Long Ren

" Did you kill Long Su? Was he the one who plotted against you when you went missing? The person you said you'll take your revenge on without my help? You passed the fifth stage in the trial of Treasure Hall which no one was able to do. So I feel like you had the strength to do it if you found the right opportunity to attack him" Long Ren said in a serious tone

" I feel like there's a hidden reason for you to kill that servant and straight away going to the northern black forest " Long Ren further continued

"I don't need to find the opportunity to kill him. He's not tough to kill anyways. By the way, Do you really want to hear the truth?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"It doesn't matter. Even if you killed him, never accept it! Even if the whole clan is against you, your grandfather will protect you!" Long Ren said in a low voice.

" Thank you grandfather" Long Chen smiled as he genuinely felt happy in his heart.

"You don't have to thank me. Just take care of your mother. She had faced a lot in the last decade including your father's assassination and you're the only reason she's able to smile" Long Ren said as he gazed towards the door with a sad expression.

"Looks like this Great Hall will become a dining room today.. it doesn't matter though. It's a happy occasion" Long Ren grinned as he said

"What is your actual cultivation, since you are able to pass the test of Treasure Hall and dared to go to the northern black forest to... practice? " Long Ren asked with a smirk

"Somewhere in the spirit Establishment Realm" Long Chen smiled as he lied without a single change in expression

" Which stage?" Long Ren asked again

"The fifth stage" Long Chen answered.

"Amazing!!! When Elder Yang told me that you passed the barrier to the second floor of Treasure Hall, I thought of this possibility but it was difficult to believe it completely. So How did you do it? Since you recovered, to the moment you went into a come, it had only been a few days. How did you reach that level so quickly? " Long Ren asked with an astonished expression.

"Through luck I guess. When I recovered, I found that a lot of medicinal essence was stored inside my body. I used it all up during Cultivation and barely reached the fifth stage of Spirit Establishment Realm before all that medicinal essence was used up" Long Chen replied

" Hmm... It's right. Pills contain plants that are filled with Pure Qi. So the reason the medicines were not effective was because of their essence? Instead of being used, it was being stored inside your body. It's possible that the hundreds of medicines we fed you in the four years after your accident were able to provide enough energy for you to reach a higher realm, but reaching the fifth stage, it's really amazing. I feel like it's more because of your talent that you reached this level while the essence provided you with help" Long Ren said with a thoughtful expression

"We're back! " A happy voice came from outside as the door opened and Sima Ziyi walked inside followed behind by Xue and Mei who both brought food with them.

The food was soon placed on the table.

"You won't eat? " Long Chen asked as he looked at Long Ren who was walking towards the exit.

"I've already eaten. You enjoy your food while I go and make preparations for a large feast tomorrow night in celebration of your health. I need to invite so many people." Long Ren happily walked out the door

" You've eaten as well?" Long Chen asked as he looked at Sima Ziyi

"I have eaten as well," Sima Ziyi said with a slight smile. All this food is just for you

Long Chen looked towards Sima Ziyi and could see Xue and Mei behind her shaking their heads. Long Chen understood their meaning as he smiled.

"You shouldn't lie. Come and eat with me. Or I won't eat either" Long Chen said as he glanced at Sima Ziyi. She looked at him for a moment before sitting down. They both started eating while Xue and Mei kept serving whatever they needed. Long Chen felt happy in this moment and could be seen smiling occasionally

Chapter 112 - 112:What Happened In The Last Three Years?

As they finished eating, Long Chen walked back towards his courtyard with his mother followed behind by Xue and Mei.

"Go, rest mother. As far as I've heard, you haven't rested properly in the last few years, " Long Chen said as he reached near Sima Ziyi's courtyard with her.

"I don't need rest. My baby has recovered after so long, I want to spend more time with him" Sima Ziyi said with a beautiful smile on her face.

"Nope! You need to rest. I'm not going to disappear, I'll be here in my courtyard for you to find me whenever you want" Long Chen said with a smile.

" But..." She wanted to say something but Long Chen interrupted her.

"No buts! Go take a rest now! We have a long life ahead of us to talk " Long Chen said with a smile.

" Alright," She said dejectedly as she walked towards her courtyard.

" Xue! Mei! " She suddenly turned back and called out.

"Yes madam" They both replied as they hurriedly walked towards her. She brought them towards her door as she created a long distance between them and Long Chen.

"He might ask you to inform him of the happenings in the last three years. Don't mention to him about what happened three years ago involving her." She whispered as she got closer to them.

" About the thing involving miss ling? " Xue asked in a low voice.

" Yes, I'm just telling you. Don't mention that to him. He didn't know about her and it's better he doesn't know what happened and live his life in ignorance" She whispered in a low voice as she gazed towards Long Chen who was standing far away, gazing at the scenery.

" Alright Madam," They both said together as they nodded.

"You can go now. Stay with him and take proper care of him" She said as she opened the door and entered her room. Both, Xue and Mei, walked back towards Long Chen.

"What was mother talking about?" Long Chen asked with a slight smile.

"Oh.. nothing. Just some minor things" Xue said with a straight face.

"Oh, Alright. Let's go then" Long Chen said as he started walking towards his courtyard.

' Who is this ling that they were talking about? And what happened three years ago? I remember she mentioned that name once before as well' Long Chen wondered as he continued walking.

Although Sima Ziyi had created a long distance between him, Long Chen was still able to hear her whispers clearly. Long Chen had noticed that his senses were better than they should've been since he formed his Martial soul. He was able to hear things that he normally shouldn't be able to. He wondered what the reason was.

He was able to hear his mother talking about Ling and couldn't help but think about it throughout the way.

Long Chen finally reached his courtyard and entered it, followed behind by Xue and Mei.

He sat on the chair and asked Xue and Mei to sit on the chairs in front of him. They immediately sat down.

"So... Tell me what major things I missed in the last three years. Start from the beginning" Long Chen said as he gazed at them with a smile.

" Many things happened in the last three years, master. I will start with our family first. The eldest son of supreme elder Long Hua went missing three years ago when he went to the Northern Black Forest. Supreme Elder himself went to the forest to find the clues and ask around but he didn't find Long Su anywhere. People saw him enter the northern black forest but no one saw him exit. Even his carriage driver said that Long Su never came out. " Xue said as she looked at Long Chen.

" Also, the news of young master falling to a mysterious coma spread throughout the city. The family called all the famous physicians to cure you but None of them was successful. The family even declared a reward for

someone who could find a cure to wake you up, but it has no effect. " Xue continued.

" Also, Last year, Your Eldest Uncle's son, Young Master Long Zheng successfully broke through to the fifth stage of Spirit Establishment Realm and got a Spirit grade treasure after passing the trial of treasure Hall. Your eldest Uncle wanted him to be named the youngest in the clan to achieve this feat in the current generation but the patriarch denied him without giving a reason." Xue further said.

"And finally, A few months back, the third prince of the kingdom expressed his wishes to marry the daughter of Grand Elder Mu, Miss Xue Ying but your cousin, Miss Xue Ying denied. The third prince still occasionally sends gifts to miss Xue Ying in an effort to win her heart but she always sends them back without even opening them" Xue said as she gazed at Long Chen.

" Oh, Prince Zhu wants her? Interesting. It's too bad for him that" Long Chen muttered as he thought about his first meeting with Long Xue Ying and his first kiss.

"What else?" Long Chen asked again as he ended his previous sentence abruptly.

"That's everything major that happened in our clan. Other than this, A few of your cousins broke through to the 4th stage Spirit Establishment Realm but nothing worth mentioning" Xue said as she looked at Long Chen

" Now I'll tell you about the major things that happened in the dragon city," Mei Said with a smile.

" Go on," Long Chen said to her.

"The Royal family went through major changes in the last three years. Many things happened in the Royal family that shook the entire kingdom " Mei said with a thoughtful look.

" Like what?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"The crown prince decided to give up on his right to the throne for reasons unknown which caused a large chain of reaction throughout the Royal family?" Xue said.

" Not fair! It's my turn to tell master!!" Mei protested in her cute voice

" Alright Alright. You can say" Xue said with a wry smile on his face.

Mei smiled as she looked back at Long Chen and found him in deep thoughts.

"The crown prince took a decision like this? There seems like a pretty big storm brewing in the Royal family" Long Chen muttered.

" You can continue" Long Chen gazed back at them and said.

Chapter 113 - 113: Selection

"You can continue" Long Chen gazed back at them as he said.

"Alright, So since the First Prince has given up on his right of the crown prince, the other princes have been having various internal struggles in between them to get ahead of their brothers and win the right of succession. " Mei further said.

"The main contenders for the crown are the Second Prince, Yue Luan, the Third Prince Yue Zun and the Fourth Prince Yue Wei who just turned Fifteen years old.

"While the Second prince has the support of half the royal court, the third prince has the support of the other half. Although the Fourth Prince who just turned Fifteen isn't supported by the Royal court but he has a good chance as well because of his mother.

"I heard that the mother of Fourth Prince, Noble Consort Gu Yin, is from the Gu Clan. The Gu Clan is one of the three supreme clans of this kingdom along with the Long Clan and the Qin Clan, so of course, he has a good chance to fight for the succession" Long Chen muttered as he thought about the whole situation deeply.

"Right, What's the stance of the Qin Clan and our Long Clan? " Long Chen Inquired as he looked at Mei.

"It's obvious that the Gu Clan will support the fourth prince but the other two supreme clans have stayed neutral throughout everything. I feel like both the clans want to test the waters before actually taking a decision" Mei said as she glanced at Long Chen.

"I'm pretty sure that the clans will choose to support the second or the third prince as none will support the fourth prince. He's too inexperienced and hadn't proven his worth. Although I'm not interested in the Royal family politics, but It will be interesting to see what happens" Long Chen muttered as he thought.

"What else?" Long Chen asked again.

"There's another major news that has been going around in the capital city lately," Xue said as she thought about something.

"What News?" Long Chen inquired.

"It's about the selection of disciples in a sect," Xue said in her light voice.

" That?" Long Chen said with no change in his expressions.

"Tell me in detail" Long Chen said as he looked in her eyes.

"Last week a news started spreading in the capital city like fire. It stated that the various sects of the Xuan Kingdom will have a joint sect entrance exam. The candidate who performed well will get an invitation from one or more sects to join them. They can decide the one they want to join. Just Like previous times, People from Second and third-ranked kingdoms can participate in their entrance test this time as well" Xue said looking at Long Chen

"Oh really? What's so shocking about it? I read that the sects of first rank kingdoms have an entrance exam to select newer disciples every three years. Although it's the first time they're all doing it jointly, there shouldn't be such a big Commotion " Long Chen muttered to himself. It was a piece of common knowledge. He couldn't understand why this news was spreading in this city this year, unlike other years.

Long Chen knew that the kingdoms in this world were divided into three categories. First rank kingdoms, Second rank kingdoms, and third-ranked kingdoms. He had read that a Kingdom was classified as a third rank kingdom if they had no Earth realm cultivators while a second rank kingdom was one which had at least one Earth realm Cultivator residing there. First rank kingdoms were considered the most powerful kingdoms as they had more than ten Earth realm cultivators residing there and had many sects established on their soil.

Shui was considered as a second rank kingdom as it had Earth realm cultivators and Long Chen's grandfather was one of them.

"It's not only because of the sect entrance exam! It is because of the other news associated with it. " Mei said as she looked at her sister.

" What's that?" Long Chen asked Mei.

"There's a rumor that the daughter of one of the Earth realm cultivators of Xuan kingdom was selected as a disciple of a Supreme Sect from an Empire many years ago. As her father is an Elder of one of the sects of Xuan Kingdom, he invited her to come and watch the Entrance examination as well as to meet the family. I don't know how it spread, but everyone knows that she will watch the sect entrance exams of this year and will come with her senior sister from the Supreme Sect" Mei explained.

"Supreme Sect... Sky Realm Cultivators..." Long Chen fell in deep thoughts.

" Interesting... So people are excited because they think that if their performance is good, then they have a chance to attract the attention of the girls from the supreme sect and get a chance to join their sect" Long Chen muttered with a smile.

" Exactly! Many Geniuses from the various clans are working hard to increase their cultivation to have a better chance to get selected" Mei said with a smile.

"Idiots... Do they really think that they can enter a supreme sect through the recommendation of two girls?" Long Chen snorted

" They are not normal girls master! I heard that the girl and her senior sister are personal disciples of the Supreme Elder of that supreme sect?" Xue interrupted Long Chen as she said.

" Hmm? " Long Chen's eyebrows arched as he was shocked.

"A girl from Xuan kingdom became the personal disciples of someone who's most probably in the Sky Realm? She must be really talented. I wonder how it happened. Whatever, it has nothing to do with me" Long Chen smiled.

" Aren't you going to join the entrance exam master? " Xue asked as she heard him.

"There's still three months for the exam. That's a long time for the exam. The journey will take around 15 days so I have plenty of time to think about it. If I'm in the mood, maybe I'll go check it out. Is the criteria, to take part in the examination, the same as in previous years?" Long Chen said with a smile.

" Yes, master. One must be not be older than 18 years old and must have reached the fifth stage of the Spirit Establishment realm" Xue replied to Long Chen.

" Is there anything else that happened?" Long Chen asked again.

"N... None master " They both replied as they both glanced at one another

"Oh? But you didn't mention what Ling did, did you?" Long Chen asked with a smile on his face as he shocked both the girls.

"M...master, how do you know about that?" Mei asked with a nervous expression.

" It doesn't matter! Tell me the whole thing" Long Chen said as he looked at both of them.

Chapter 114 - 114: Engagement

"It doesn't matter! Tell me the whole thing involving ling" Long Chen said as he looked at both of them.

"We... We can't tell you, master! We promised madam that we won't say anything. I am extremely sorry" Xue said with a worried look on her face.

"You?" Long Chen asked as he shifted his gaze to Mei.

"I... I will keep my promise as well, master. This is for your own good! It's better that you don't know about it" Mei said as she looked down.

"So you're both not following my orders" Long Chen stood up as he gazed at both of them.

He started walking towards them and just after a few steps, he was standing near them.

"Keep sitting" Long Chen ordered as he saw them getting up. They both sat down again.

He got on his knees in front of Xue and Mei.

"Are you really going to hide things from me?" Long Chen gazed straight in Mei's eyes as he brought his face closer to hers and asked.

"I...". Mei stuttered as she thought about what she should do.

"You think I'm so weak that I can't handle a piece of news?" He shifted his focus and gazed at Xue as he said. Long Chen immediately stood up and started walking towards his bedroom.

"If you can't tell me, then it's fine. You two can go now." Long Chen said in a disappointed tone as he walked towards his room without looking back.

"Wait, master! I'll tell you!!" Mei let out as she stopped Long Chen.

"Sister?" She gazed at Xue who nodded in affirmation.

Long Chen turned back and sat back on his chair.

"Go on," Long Chen said.

"It all happened three years ago when two girls came flying like immortal maidens on spirit beasts. One who looked to be 13-14 years old while the other

one looked slightly older in age and had a more mature aura around her. Since you had gone into a coma and Madam was taking care of you, the other elders welcomed them. The younger girl said that her name was Ling and asked to meet the patriarch and the madam. "Mei started telling the whole story to Long Chen.

"After the patriarch and madame came out, Sister was left behind with you to take care of you while I was with madam and saw everything that happened," Mei said in a low voice.

"The younger girl was apparently your fiancée and she had come here to cancel the engagement," Mei said as she occasionally glanced at Long Chen.

"What? Since when did I have a fiancée?" Long Chen's expression changed as he became astonished by the things he heard.

"I don't know the inner details, but after her insistence, the engagement was canceled by patriarch and your mother. Both the girls left on their flying Spirit beasts" Mei explained as she looked at Long Chen trying to see his expressions.

"That's it? That's what this whole thing was about? I don't even know her to care about her canceling the engagement and if she hadn't canceled the engagement and if I knew about it, I would have gone there to cancel it myself! I don't want my life to be decided by others, especially my love life" Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"I don't know why you were afraid to tell me about this matter. It's nothing major," Long Chen said to both of them with a smile.

"Alright, I'll go cultivate for now. You two can do anything in the meantime." Long Chen smilingly said as he walked in his bedroom.

"Young master is so mature and manly" Mei muttered lightly as she looked at the door of Long Chen's bedroom.

"Hah, little Mei, why are you looking at the door so intensely? Do you want to open the door and jump into young master's arms?" Xue said with a light chuckle as she looked at Mei.

"How did you know? Do I have the same expression as the one you had when you saw master outside his room when he woke up? 'Can I hug you for longer master?'. If I remember right, that's what you said." Mei laughed as she replied to Xue, whose face turned red as she remembered what she had done.

"But sister... I seriously like young master. I wish I could be his lover, but it will just be an unfulfilled wish as he's in a completely different world than us" Mei muttered as her tone became melancholic.

"Me too. In Fact, I don't think there will be any girl who wouldn't think like us when they stay with master" Xue said with a smile as he looked at her sister.

Not caring for what was happening outside his room, Long Chen sat on his bed.

Long Chen took out the egg from his ring as he started looking for the changes in it after coming back to the real world. Long Chen noticed that the patterns on it were slightly brighter than before and its golden color looked even more prominent.

Long Chen put his hands on the egg and started feeding him his Qi. He could feel that the hunger of this egg had increased from previous times as it was absorbing his Qi at a faster rate and did so for a longer duration than previous times.

"Take as much as you need Little guy" Long Chen muttered as he continued supplying Qi.

After half an hour, the egg stopped absorbing and returned to normal.

" This time it was longer. Looks like it is actually growing. I feel like it will actually come out soon. You should probably establish a contract with it as soon as possible. Although I think that a newborn will consider the person who fed them as their family, but it's still better to take precautions and establish a contract first so that it could not betray you on the off chance" Xun said in a heavy voice as she appeared.

"I've heard that Beast Tamers establish contracts with the beasts to keep them loyal but I don't know how to do it," Long Chen said as he glanced at Xun.

"Hmph... Maybe you can ask someone for help. Someone smart. Someone who's knowledgeable with years of experience ." Xun said as she folded her arms and tilted her head upwards while standing with a proud look on her face.

"Hmm... Someone smart. I feel like mother and Grandfather will be knowledgeable. Maybe they'll know" Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful look on his face

"There's not a good chance that they will know about the contract method of taming a beast as all those who know such method are beast tamers who have a beast. Think carefully, You must know someone smarter whom you can ask for help. Like someone who's close to you," Xun said again with a smile

"Umm...I don't think I know someone smart like that" Long Chen gazed at Xun carefully but soon shook his head as he muttered with a thoughtful expression. Xun was dumbfounded as she stared at Long Chen.

Chapter 115 - 115: Establishing A Contract

"Umm...I don't think I know someone smart like that" Long Chen gazed at Xun carefully but soon shook his head as he muttered with a thoughtful expression. Xun was dumbfounded as she stared at Long Chen.

"You... Am I not smart? Are you calling me stupid? " Xun said in a voice filled with anger as her face turned red.

"You?... Oh right, I totally forgot about you!! You're the smartest person I know. " Long Chen said as if struck with the realization

"umm hmm," Xun nodded with a prideful look on her face.

"Can you help me? " Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun.

"Hmm. Since you know about my greatness and are asking so sincerely, I'll help you out. Just do as I say" Xun said with a light smile on her face.

"Cut one of your fingers lightly or stab it with a pin to make it bleed, as you need to make a symbol on the egg with your blood. " Xun said to Long Chen.

Xun touched Long Chen's forehead with her finger as an image of a strange symbol appeared in Long Chen's mind.

"Make the pattern you see on the egg with your blood. If the contract is successful, the blood will be absorbed by the egg but if it fails, the blood will stay there, doing nothing" Xun said with a smile.

Long Chen thought about that for a moment but soon did as she said and made a slight cut on his finger making it bleed. He then started carving a pattern on the egg with his blood. As soon as the strange symbol was carved on the egg, Long Chen started looking at the egg with great expectations.

"How is it? I wasn't able to make it perfectly " Long Chen muttered.

"It's good enough to work," Xun said with a smile on her face.

" Something is happening" Long Chen muttered as he saw the symbol he carved shine with a violet light and soon after, it was absorbed by the egg without any trouble.

"It is successful!! " Long Chen exclaimed with a smile.

"Of Course it would be. Your blood is no ordinary blood now, so there wasn't a chance of failure unless there was a legendary beast inside who hated you

enough that it would die rather than establish a contract with you." Xun said with a smile.

" Hmm, so there's no legendary beast inside" Long Chen muttered.

"I never said that. I meant that if there was a legendary beast inside and he didn't want to establish a contract with you. Even though I'm not sure what's inside but if it's a legendary beast, you're really lucky" Xun said with a chuckle.

" I can feel a link being established," Long Chen said.

"Can you see it? Do you have the beast's image in your mind? Allow me access to your thoughts! I want to see it too!!" Xun eagerly said.

" It's not like that. Whenever I try to look at the other side of the link, I only see mist everywhere. I can't see anything clearly" Long Chen said with a confused look on his face.

"Oh, it's alright. We will know what's inside soon enough anyways. I feel like it won't take long" Xun said as she stared at the egg.

"I'm going to start my cultivation for the day. I'll see you later" Long Chen said as he began his cultivation.

"Hmmp... Alright," Xun muttered as she disappeared while puffing her cheeks.

Long Chen began his Cultivation as he started absorbing Natural Qi, making it pass through a certain path before it was all absorbed by his Martial soul. His cultivation slowly kept increasing. Although the increase was at a much slower pace than it was in the trial world, he knew that this rate was pretty abnormal as well. The increase in cultivation he was achieving in an hour was something average people took days to achieve.

As Long Chen was lost in Cultivation, His grandfather had reached the Royal Palace where he was immediately allowed entry.

The king of Shui, Yue Han was sitting on his throne in the Royal court talking about official matters when an Eunuch came and whispered something in his ears.

"Hahaha, That old man will never change. We always tell him that he can enter the royal court anytime he wants without informing us, but he still follows the formalities. Go call him in" Yue Han laughed as he heard the

Eunuch's words before he ordered the Eunuch. The Eunuch hurriedly walked out.

The doors of the Royal Court opened, as Long Ren stepped inside and walked towards the king, Yue Han.

"What brings you here today?" The king asked as he looked at Long Ren.

"Your majesty, I'm here to invite you and all the royal family to the feast at our house in celebration of my grandson waking up from his coma after three long years," Long Ren said with a smile.

" Hmm? He woke up? how? We believe that every physician in the kingdom had given up. They all said that there was no cure for him. Is there a new miraculous physician in our kingdom we don't know about, who managed to do something that our top physicians weren't able to?" The king's brows arched as he said.

"Your Majesty is right. No physician was able to do anything but the greatest physician in the world graced us and Tian'er woke up" Long Ren said with a smile.

"The greatest physician in the world? Who? What is he doing in our kingdom" Yue Han asked with a confused look.

"I meant God, your Majesty. By God's Grace, Tian'er was able to wake up without needing any cure" Long Ren said as he clarified.

" Ha ha ha, so you were talking about god. You really confused us there for a moment" The king said with a laugh.

"Alright! We accept the invitation. We will attend the celebration tomorrow" The king said with a smile as he accepted the invitation.

Long Ren looked around and invited the court members as well.

"Your Majesty, I will take my leave now. I apologize for interrupting your important matters. "Long Ren said as he looked at Yue Han.

"Alright. You may leave. " The king said. Long Ren left the Royal court and soon exited the palace as well as he entered his carriage. The carriage started driving towards the east.

Chapter 116 - 116: A Son Like That

There existed a large Mansion in the East of dragon city. A carriage having a luxurious dragon symbol arrived at the front of this large Mansion.

The guards at the door saw the carriage and one of them immediately entered the mansion to inform someone.

"Hahaha Old Ren, what brings you here today?" A man in a white beard and a head full of white hair, filled with enthusiasm came out from the mansion wearing a Luxurious green attire. He was followed behind by a black-haired middle-aged man who looked to be in his early thirties. A few servants were following behind as well.

"Hahaha, You're still so quick even at such an old age. I just arrived and you are already here. " Long Ren laughed as he vacated the carriage and walked towards the old man in green.

"Of course, how can I not come out personally to welcome someone of your caliber " The man laughed.

" We're both in Earth Realm, so our caliber isn't much different. Isn't that right old Wen" Long Ren replied with a smile.

" That's true. I've gotten stronger than before. I'll prove my growth the next time we fight. Last time you were able to defeat me and won the title of the second strongest person in the kingdom after his highness, but next time you won't be able to defeat me" The man said with a smile on his face having eyes filled with determination.

"We'll see about that when the time comes. Today I'm here for a different matter by the way. " Long Ren said with a smile.

" What matter? Come inside, we can talk in peace" The man asked with curiosity clear on his face.

"Old Wen, I apologize as I can't rest today. I have to go to many places. By the way, This time I'm here for a happy matter. My grandson, Long Tian, had woken up from his coma after three years. I've decided to throw a feast in celebration. I'm here to invite you and your Qin Family to the celebration" Long Ren said with a smile.

The man he was talking to was called Qin Wen. He was the patriarch of one of the three supreme clans of Shui, the Qin Clan of the East. Although they

were the leaders of their respective families who argued sometimes, but there was no clash between the Qin and the Long clan. At Least on the outside.

"Oh, The little one woke up? Congratulations Old Ren. Since you've come to invite us personally we will definitely come. " Qin Wen accepted the invitation with a smile.

"Thanks, old Wen. I will be leaving now. I need to go to the west as well" Long Ren said as he looked towards West.

" You're inviting the Gu Clan as well? I thought everything wasn't good between your two clans?" Qin Wen asked with a thoughtful expression.

"Our clashes are a different matter but this is a happy occasion. Also, I can't single out the Gu Clan, when I'm inviting others. Old man Zian will cry to his highness about it like a little kid and I'll be considered a petty person by the whole kingdom" Long Ren said with a smile.

"Hahaha... Your right. You should invite them as well" Qin Wen started laughing as he heard Long Ren's words.

"I will be taking my leave now. I will see you at my house tomorrow. Don't be late like you always are" Long Ren laughed as he walked to his carriage, entering it.

The carriage started driving towards the Western part of Dragon City.

"Father, are we going to their feast?" The middle-aged man following behind Qin Wen asked with a straight expression.

"Yes, We have to. He came to invite us personally, Do you think we can deny his personal invitation. Can we? Also, I would like to see this fallen genius who keeps appearing and disappearing from the light of the dragon city with my own eyes. It is funny that he can make old Ren so restless. " Qin Wen said with a smile.

" We can't take everyone, who are we taking with us!" The middle-aged man asked.

" Bring your wife and daughter. We four will go" Qin Wen replied with a smile.

" Alright, I'll inform them," The man said as he walked back inside the mansion. Qin Wen soon followed suit and entered as well.

Long Ren's carriage reached the Gu Clan mansion in the West of the dragon city. This mansion was just as big as the Long and Qin Clan's mansions.

Long Ren came out of the carriage and saw a black-haired man coming out of the mansion with the servants and guards behind him. This man looked to be in his forties. He had a fat belly that complimented his chubby face nicely.

"Gu Lin, where is your father? I'm here to meet him " Long Ren said as he looked at the person and recognized him as the son of Gu clan's Patriarch, Gu Lin.

"Senior Ren, I apologize but I can't fulfill your wish to meet him. The thing is that father had just entered the closed-door cultivation. I can't disturb his Cultivation. So if you need anything, or have anything to talk about, you can tell me" The man said with a smile.

"It is alright. It's not like I have anything important to talk to your old man about. I'm just here to invite the Gu family to the feast we are having tomorrow in celebration of my grandson walking up from his three years of slumber" Long Ren said with a smile as he gave a card to the man.

"Thank you for the invitation. We'll send someone to attend " The man said with a smile.

" Whatever suits you. I'll be taking my leave now. Many important people to invite" Long Ren said with a smile as he walked back and entered the carriage. The carriage drove away.

"His grandson waking up from the coma after three years? What's there to be so happy about. He was a genius but without cultivation for the last seven years, he's just trash now and he will always be trash as seven years gap in Cultivation, especially in their golden years, isn't something anyone can overcome. I wouldn't be happy if I had a son like that. "The man muttered in a low voice as he saw the carriage driven away.

"Whatever, it's their family. They can celebrate even trash if they want, nothing to do with me" The man muttered with a straight expression as he walked back inside the mansion followed behind by his servants.

That day, the Long clan's carriage could be seen through the dragon city going from one part of the city to another.

Chapter 117 - 117: For You

Long Chen was cultivating in his room when a knock was heard.

"Master! The dinner is ready. Madam is waiting for you at the dinner table"
"Came a voice. Long Chen recognized that voice as the voice of Mei. He finished his cultivation and stood up.

"It's already night? Time passed so fast during Cultivation. I can already feel that the breakthrough is imminent. I already achieved the peak of the 8th stage of the gold core realm in the trial world, soon I will be in the 9th stage of the gold core realm. When I reach the Earth realm, Grandpa would be so astonished if at that time he knows that I'm in the same cultivation realm as him" Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the door with a smile.

Long Chen opened the door and saw Mei standing outside. She wore a light blue dress that wrapped around her body, highlighting it even more.

"You look good in blue" Long Chen commented with a smile. Mei couldn't help but smile as she heard his words. She gazed at her blue dress with a red face.

" Alright, let's go. Can't keep mother waiting for long. " Long Chen commented with a smile. He left the room and closed the door.

"By the way, where is your sister? I've never seen one without the other " Long Chen asked as he followed Mei.

"Sister was with madam getting things ready when I came here to inform you. Oh right, I noticed that there were no medicinal herbs left in your washroom for your morning bath, I'll bring more of them in the morning. " Mei said turning back as if she remembered something important.

"It is alright. You can do it in the morning" Long Chen replied with a smile. They soon entered the courtyard of Sima Ziyi where a rectangular table was placed and a few chairs surrounding it. Sima Ziyi was sitting in one of the chairs while Xue stood behind her

"Hurry, the food will get cold!" Sima Ziyi said with a beautiful smile on her face as she saw Long Chen enter. Long Chen sat near her. The plates were already placed in front of them as Xue started serving the dishes. Sima Ziyi and Long Chen continued talking about random things during their meal.

"By the way, What's the matter with Ling. I heard some guards talking about it today. I should tell you right now, that I myself don't want to marry a girl I don't know. Anyways, About the supposed broken engagement. Can you tell me about the whole matter, I'm curious about it" Long Chen muttered in between their dinner.

"This.... you already know...I thought it would be better if you didn't know about it, but it looks like it can't be hidden" Sima Ziyi said in a low voice.

" Its fine mother. It's not like I care about it, it's just out of curiosity that I want to know about it" Long Chen muttered as he gave an assuring smile.

" The whole thing started before you were even born. Your father was just 18 at that time and had already reached the peak of Spirit Establishment Realm. He went to the Xuan kingdom to participate in the Sect Entrance Exam of Glorious blossom sect. I heard that his performance was one of the best amongst all the participants. He was easily selected. Amongst the selected Cultivators, was another person whom your father had befriended. It was Yu Tianhao. They stayed in the sect and cultivated there. Their friendship grew over the years. One day they were both drunk when your father and Yu Tianhao made a promise to each other. " Sima Ziyi started explaining.

" Was that promise about my engagement?" Long Chen inquired.

" Kind of. They promised each other that just like they are brothers. If they both had a son, they will be considered brothers as well and if one had a son while the other had a daughter, they will be considered engaged and will be married when they become of the right age." Sima Ziyi said with many expressions clear on her face.

" When your father was 23 years old, he left the sect for some reason. Although he never told me the reason, I heard that he had some trouble with one of the elders of that sect, that's why he left. Anyways, Even after leaving, your father occasionally kept going to Xuan Kingdom to meet his friend. And just after you were born, you were engaged to Yu Tianhao's daughter, Ling, who was just 2 years old at that time. It was promised that the both of you will be married when you turn eighteen." Sima Ziyi continued.

" A few days after you went into a coma, The girl you were engaged to, arrived here. Maybe she had just found out about her marriage or some other reason, but She wanted to cancel the engagement. Although it was the promise your father made, I didn't want to force a girl. So I agreed to her request." Sima Ziyi said with a sad smile on her face.

"Its alright mother, you don't need to worry about it. That's what I would have suggested you do as well " Long Chen smilingly said.

"Thanks for the food. I'll be going back now" Long Chen said as he stood up.

" Alright. Have a good night." Sima Ziyi said as she gazed at Long Chen with love in her eyes. Long Chen left her courtyard walked back to his courtyard.

As he reached his room, he changed his clothes and wore more comfortable clothes before he lay on his bed.

"I'm not sleepy at all. Hah, I've technically slept for over three years, how could I be sleepy now" Long Chen laughed as he muttered seeing that he couldn't sleep.

"I should cultivate instead"Long Chen muttered as he sat up and started his cultivation.

Night passed and day arrived. Long Chen didn't realize the time he spent during his cultivation. He finished his Cultivation as he opened his eyes.

"Hmm., The night passed so quickly. So today is the feast grandfather was talking about. I should probably get ready fast " Long Chen muttered as he walked towards his wardrobe. He chose a nice pair of clothes, placed them on his bed before taking his old clothes off. He walked towards the bathroom hoping to take a bath first.

He opened the door of the bathroom towards himself but stood there dumbfounded seeing someone already inside.

Chapter 118 - 118: Can I Touch It? (☆)

Mei woke up as early as she could today. After collecting some herbs from the clan, she hurriedly walked towards Long Chen's room.

She was just about to knock on his door when she noticed that there was already a small opening on the door.

"Hmm... Looks like master forgot to close the door last night. Although I don't think someone will be stupid enough to try to steal something from master's room, but still, it's better to take precautions. I will tell him about it later. It's good for today though, as I don't need to disturb his sleep to complete my work " Mei muttered with a cheeky smile as she entered the room after opening the door. She straight walked towards the bathroom from the hall and started mixing the medicinal herbs in the large bathtub inside which was filled to the brim with water.

"Completed" She muttered with a smile after finishing her task. She stood up and started walking towards the door. As the door of the bathroom was already unlocked, She moved her right hand forward to push the door open, as she continued walking forward but strangely enough, just before her fingers touched the door, the door opened. Instead of landing on the door, her hand landed on something else. Her eyes opened wide as she saw what happened.

Long Chen opened the door but saw a slim hand coming towards him which landed on his bare chest. He was dumbfounded as he saw Mei standing in front of him. Her soft hand placed on his chest. Long Chen gazed at her, only to see her mouth opened wide while eyes were looking downwards.

He looked down as well, only to see that she was staring at his little guy. He started feeling embarrassed but didn't show it on the outside. He wanted to close her eyes, but he pretended to act confident and just kept standing there.

He somehow found this situation awkward and exciting at the same time. Her soft hands on his chest while her focus on his little Chen. He realized that something was about to go wrong. He tried controlling it, but couldn't. His little guy kept enlarging until it stood tall like a mountain.

"Th... it increased" Mei couldn't help but mutter as she stared at it in a daze

"Yes, it sometimes does that in the presence of beautiful women. It would become even bigger if it was touched by a one" Long Chen couldn't help but comment with a wry smile on his face.

"Ah.." Mei gazed upwards. Her eyes met Long Chen's eyes as her face turned even redder. Her eyes looked left and right trying to find the path she could exit from, but she found no success. Long Chen was standing in front of the opening, with no other path to escape from.

Even during that time, she couldn't help but steal a few glances at Long Chen's erect sword.

"You can take a good look if you want" Long Chen muttered as he tried to look more confident but he felt at a loss when Mei actually took him up on his offer and started looking at it openly without hiding her gaze.

"It is the first time I'm seeing a man without clothes. It ... grew bigger in front of my eyes. How miraculous!" Mei muttered in a mosquito-like voice with a red face as she kept looking Long Chen's lower body.

"It does that when I'm sexually excited, which is often out of my control."

"Y... you're excited by me?" Mei couldn't help but ask as she looked in his eyes.

"Who wouldn't be? I'm standing here naked in front of you while your soft hand is on my chest and your eyes looking at my manhood." Long Chen said as he looked at her.

"I...I apologize" She hurriedly took his hands off from his chest.

"You can go unless you want to take a bath with me." Long Chen muttered with a smile.

"I.. I'll go but." Mei said in a low voice but stopped in between as she looked left and right.

"Oh right!" Long Chen exclaimed as he stepped aside giving her the path to exit.

She hurriedly walked past him but stopped after taking a few steps.

"Can... can I touch it?" Long Chen was just about to step inside the bathroom when he heard a voice coming from behind him. He stopped as he turned around. He saw Mei standing there, looking at him with an anxious expression on her beautiful face.

"What?" He asked with a confused look on his face.

"Ma... master said that it will... it will ... grow even bigger if I touched it. Can... can I try touching it?" Mei said with a red face making Long Chen dumbfounded. Long Chen didn't know what to say. A part of him wanted to say yes, while another part of him told him to be a good guy and deny her.

"This... alright," Long Chen said as he agreed to her request.

Mei started walking towards him with small steps. Soon she was standing in front of him.

Her heart was beating rapidly as she moved her hand forward slowly. Her hand soon touched Long Chen's manhood. She kept touching his little guy here and there making Long Chen enjoy the touch of her hand.

"The... there's a better way to do it" Long Chen couldn't help but mutter.

"What way? Can you tell me, master?" Mei asked as she looked in his eyes.

"Get on your knees," Long Chen said softly as he looked in her eyes. Mei did as he said and got down to her knees.

Her face was right in front of Long Chen's manhood. Long Chen grabbed her right hand softly as he brought it towards his little dragon making her hand grab it firmly.

"Try moving your hands back and forth while grabbing it" Long Chen muttered as he held her hand which was holding onto his little dragon. He started moving her hand back and forth a few times before leaving her hands and left her to do it herself.

Mei continued playing with Long Chen's rod like this with her soft hands for over ten minutes. Long Chen felt like he was in heaven and hell at the same time as he enjoyed the sensation of her touch.

"I feel like it grew even more" Mei commented in a low voice as she continued moving her hands.

"Yes, it's giving you respect for your great service" Long Chen muttered but soon stared regretting his words, feeling like it was a cheesy thing to say.

"Try moving your hands faster." Long Chen said as he closed his eyes, lost in the sensation.

Mei increased her hand speed as she continued moving her hand back and forth even faster. It continued for over ten minutes

"I...I can't control..." Long Chen muttered with closed eyes.

Mei couldn't understand what Long Chen meant, she just opened her mouth to ask him when a white liquid came out from the mouth of Long Chen's little dragon. Before Mei could understand what was happening, this liquid entered her mouth, while a part of it landed on her luscious lips. Mei hurriedly closed her mouth as she swallowed in shock. She felt like her whole mouth had become sticky as this white liquid was swallowed by her unintentionally.

"I... I'm sorry" Long Chen muttered as opened his eyes and saw Mei's red lips covered with his stuff.

"It... it's warm and salty." Mei let out as she looked in Long Chen's eyes with her lips still covered by the white liquid.

"You... did you swallow it?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her.

" Yes... accidentally. Is it dangerous, master?" She asked with a worried look on her face.

" Not really... It's actually pretty good for health. " Long Chen said as he gazed at her lips. Mei heard his words and sighed in relief.

"Since it's good for health, I shouldn't waste it" Mei muttered as she licked her lips and swallowed the left out portion as well. Long Chen kept looking at her with his mouth slightly open the whole time.

"Y... did you want some of that as well?" Mei asked with a worried look as she looked at Long Chen.

Chapter 119 - 119:Guests Arrive

"Y... did you want some of that as well?" Mei asked with a worried look as she looked at Long Chen.

" Ahem ahem...Me? No... it's only for girls" Long Chen couldn't help but cough a few times with an awkward expression on his face before he said as he gazed at Mei.

"Oh," Mei smiled as she again began moving her hand back and forth.

"Ah... it's alright. You can stop doing that" Long Chen said to Mei.

"Ah.. is anything wrong master? Did I make a mistake? I apologize, it's my first time touching it" She asked with a confused look on her face.

"Well... technically...Ah, nevermind" Long Chen was about to say something as he remembered the moment Mei used his thing as a holy weapon during their journey from northern black forest to the Long Chen but he stopped himself from speaking.

"Well... the thing is that I need to take a bath and get ready as well. If I stay here, we'll be late for the party. " Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"Oh, Right. I'll stop for the day" Mei muttered as she stood up.

" That's better," Long Chen said with a smile.

"I'll be taking my leave now master" Mei muttered in a low voice as she turned back, but not before taking one last look at Long Chen from top to bottom.

Long Chen entered the bathroom as he saw Mei walkout. Soon, finished with his bath, Long Chen came out of the bathroom and walked up to his bed. Wearing the clothes he had chosen, he got ready.

"Hah, The beginning of the day was interesting. Let's see how it ends" Long Chen said with an interested look on his face as he took his first step outside his courtyard. He walked through his garden but noticed a servant watering the plants. Long Chen recognized him as the guy who made fun of him on the day Long Chen had first arrived in this world.

With an amused smile on his face, Long Chen walked towards this servant.

"Good morning young master" The servant wished Long Chen with a smile.

"Oh? Since when did I become your young master?" Long Chen asked with a chuckle.

"Since the beginning, young master." The servant smilingly replied.

"Oh? How long have you been working here?" Long Chen inquired.

"I've been working in the clan for the last twenty years, young master. I've been working for you since you were four though." The servant smilingly said.

"You can pack your bags and take your leave. Since today, you don't work for the clan anymore" Long Chen ordered with a smile.

"But... but why master? Did I make a mistake?" The servant asked with a confused and worried look on his face.

"Let me just tell you one thing." Long Chen said as he started walking towards the servant.

"Do you think I don't remember the things, since the assassination attempt on me till the moment I recovered?" Long Chen said in a low voice and a serious expression on his face. The servant started sweating as he heard Long Chen's words.

"You're lucky that my morning was good and that I'm in a good mood today, or I would be treating my plants with your blood instead of water" Long Chen said with a demonic smile on his face. His servant's trembling increased as he heard Long Chen's words and tears started coming out from his eyes.

"Get out as fast as you can before I change my mind and crush you right here and right now" Long Chen muttered in a heavy tone as he gazed at this servant.

The servant started running without thinking and soon disappeared from Long Chen's view.

Long Chen continued on his journey as he left the garden. He noticed that the whole clan was decorated and servants could be seen walking here and there in a hurry.

Long Chen knocked on Sima Ziyi's courtyard as he reached there. Xue opened the door letting Long Chen inside.

"Oh...You're here." Long Chen asked as he saw Xue.

"Mei is here as well. She is helping madam get ready" Xue said with a smile.

"Mother must've taken a liking to both of you. She keeps you close to herself" Long Chen couldn't help but say with a smile as he sat on the chair.

"You're already here? I was just about to send Mei to bring you here and wake you up if you were sleeping" Sima Ziyi walked out of her bedroom as she said gazing at Long Chen. Mei could be seen following behind her. She smiled brightly as she saw Long Chen. Long Chen smiled back as he gazed at her.

"She already woke me up in the morning. " Long Chen said with a smile.

'Oh? So that's where she went early in the morning. But how come she didn't tell me that she went to wake up master? I would've went with her as well. Also, when she came back, her face was all red. Even after asking, she didn't say what happened. Something isn't right ' Xue thought to herself.

"Oh, that's nice of her. These girls are so nice. We're lucky that you brought them to our clan. "Sima Ziyi muttered as she praised them both.

"Anyways, it's good that you're ready. Let's eat breakfast first then go to the main hall. The guests will start coming in an hour or so. As the host, and the man of the focus, You need to get there before them. " Sima Ziyi smilingly said.

"I'm ready to go. I was just waiting for you. You took so long to get ready. I heard that women take a long time to get ready, looks like it was a correct statement" Long Chen said with a chuckle.

" Where are you hearing such nonsense from. I didn't take long." She said as she walked towards the table and sat in front of Long Chen.

Without her saying anything, Xue and Mei served breakfast. Finishing it soon, they all left for the Main Hall together.

The Main Hall of the Long Clan was so big that it was said that it could house over a thousand people inside comfortably. Long Chen followed behind Sima Ziyi and took his first step inside the main hall. He saw that there were many round tables placed in the hall, covered with a clean white cloth. four chairs surrounding all the tables each. There were many tables towards the right wall of the hall, which housed all the amazing food Long clan had prepared, while the left side of the hall housed the Alcohol and glasses arranged like a beautiful pyramid.

Long Chen noticed that there were quite a few clan members already present in the hall. Some of his cousins were already there. His grandfather and many of the elders were there as well. Long Chen walked further inside, following behind Sima Ziyi.

Long Ren saw Long Chen enter the hall. He left the elders he was accompanying after excusing himself and walked towards Long Chen.

"Here's the man of the hour. Come sit at the front with me. The guests will be here soon. " Long Ren laughed as he said.

"I apologize father but I can't do that. I'll be at the nearby table as I don't like to sit in the front. Go stay with your grandpa. Enjoy the party! " Sima Ziyi said to Long Ren before she turned back and said to Long Chen.

"My apologies grandfather, but I can't let mother sit alone, "Long Chen said as he denied the invitation of sitting at the front table as well. After the insistence of Long Ren, they decided to sit on another table which was closer to the front table.

Five minutes passed as the clan members kept arriving. Long Chen kept looking at the ones entering with an interested look on his face.

"Hahaha, Little Nephew is already here. Uncle wanted to visit you yesterday when I heard that you woke up, but I couldn't because of some pressing matters. It's good that I can finally see that you're safe. " A loud laughter came as a middle-aged man entered the Hall. He was wearing a golden robe covered with dragon patterns of the Long clan. All right of his fingers had a gold ring which shone just as brightly as his golden clothes.

Long Chen recognized that person as his Eldest Uncle, Long Xuan. He was the eldest son of patriarch Long Ren and the elder brother of his father. He was someone who had the greatest chance to become the next patriarch. He was walking with a luxuriously dressed woman who looked to be in her late twenties. Long Chen recognized her as his aunt and the wife of Long Xuan.

They were followed behind by a young boy who looked to be just as old as Long Chen. But unlike Long Chen, He had a haughty aura surrounding himself. Long Chen could feel that this was a boy who was a little too proud of himself and arrogant. He had black hair and a face that looked quite similar to his father. Long Chen recognized him as Long Wei, the son of his Eldest Uncle Long Xuan.

"It's alright uncle. Thank you for your care though" Long Chen said with a smile as he stood up.

"Hahaha, Little Nephew is so smart and well mannered. Wei, say hello to your cousin" Long Xuan said as he looked at the boy standing behind him with a smile.

"Hello, Little Tian. Congrats on recovering. Keep working hard and maybe you can still reach the Spirit Establishment realm one day. You've only lost seven years of your life. Stay happy and don't lose hope. Enjoy the day" Long Wei said with a proud look in his eyes.

Long Ren arched his eyebrows as he heard Long Wei's words but didn't interrupt. He just looked at Long Chen and waited for his response.

Long Chen gazed at Long Wei with a wry smile on his face.

"Hah, Time really changes. The one who used to call me brother Tian, now calls me Little Tian. The one who used to ask for cultivation advice is giving me advice now. I had heard that ignorance is bliss, but not always it seems. Oh, how I pity the ignorant ." Long Chen said in a sarcastic tone as he looked at Long Wei.

This time it was Long Xuan's turn to be shocked. Long Ren couldn't help but smile as he faced at Long Wei, waiting for his reaction.

Long Wei heard the sarcastic tone of Long Chen and was about to say something when a loud voice came from behind.

"Hahaha, Old Ren! You said that I'm the one who's always late to a party? I'm already here and no one has arrived. Doesn't that mean that I'm the most punctual" A laughter came from the direction of the door.

Chapter 120 - 120: Qin Ruo

"Hahaha, Old Ren! You said that I am the one who is always late to a party? I'm already here and no one has arrived. Doesn't that mean that I'm the most punctual one" A laughter came from the direction of the door.

"Hah, Who came late at his Majesty's birthday celebration? Being on time once doesn't make you punctual, my friend! " Long Ren said as he looked at the person who arrived.

'The Qin Clan' Long Chen thought as he saw the green robes covered with distinguishable patterns, of the people who arrived. The man in the lead looked just as old as his grandfather. He was followed by three people. A middle-aged man with a head full of black hair, who looked to be in his early thirties was walking together with a well-dressed woman who looked to be in her late twenties

The one who attracted Long Chen's gaze the most was the third person. A beautiful girl in a beautiful dark green gown, who looked to be younger than eighteen, was walking behind the middle-aged man and the woman. She had a slim face, thin eyebrows, and long dark hair which were folded into a bun behind her head. A slim bang of hair could be seen in front of her left eye making her look somewhat enchanting. It looked to be about ten centimeters of length which fell just a little short of reaching the tip of her tiny nose.

Long Chen gazed at her but not for long as he shifted his focus.

"Welcome to my humble abode. I'm so glad that you were able to attend with your family. Little Ruo is here as well. You have a nice daughter, old Wen. I had heard so many good things about her. She is just seventeen years old this year and had already reached the 8th stage of the Spirit Establishment realm. An amazing talent" Long Ren said with a smile as he gazed at the girl behind them.

'Oh, So she is Qin Ruo. The granddaughter of Qin Clan leader. She is pretty I must say and talented as well. If what I heard is correct, she is just seventeen and her cultivation realm is the same as Long Su had, the eighth stage of Spirit Establishment realm.' Long Chen thought as he again took a look at Qin Ruo.

"Hahaha, You're right. She is the pride of this old man and she had never once disappointed me with her talent and hard work" Qin Wen said with a laugh.

" You have a good younger generation as well. I had heard that your grandson Long Wei had broken through to the fifth stage of Spirit

Establishment Realm and that he is only fifteen. That's a great achievement. You must be proud of him as well. " Qin Wen said with a smile.

Long Wei couldn't help but smirk as he heard Qin Wen's words. He gazed at Long Chen with a prideful look on his face. His father and mother also had a pleasant expression on their faces as they attentively looked at Qin Wen.

"Of Course. And not just him, I am proud of all the younger generation of my Long Clan. " Long Ren said with a smile as he used this opportunity to praise his clan.

"Oh Right, Speaking of pride, Which one of them is your grandson, Long Tian? " Qin Wen said as he looked at the two boys standing near Long Ren.

" He is my grandson Long Tian and she is his mother, and my daughter in law Ziyi" Long Ren said as he pointed towards Long Chen and Sima Ziyi.

"This one here is my son Long Xuan, his wife Meng and this little one here is the one you were talking about, Long Wei" Long Ren pointed towards Long Xuan, his wife, and Long Wei as he introduced everyone with a smile.

"Oh, So you're him! I think my granddaughter is a fan of yours. She said that she wanted to meet you when we told her that we were coming here" Qin Wen said with a chuckle. Long Wei's expressions turned ugly as he heard his words.

'She's a fan of his? Is there something wrong with her head?' Long Wei thought as he looked at Qin Ruo and then at Long Chen.

"You flatter me," Long Chen said politely with a slight smile.

"Father is not kidding. Little Ruo, Don't you have something you wanted to say? " The woman standing behind them said with a smile as she gazed at her daughter Qin Ruo.

"When I was little, I used to hear all about your achievements and miracles. You were younger than me but still so far ahead of me. Your cultivation realm was miraculous and so was your intellect for that age. You motivated me so much. I realized the hard work you must have put in to reach that level. You were the light that always inspired me to work harder. Not just me, you were shining so brightly that I'm sure you inspired many more people like me throughout this kingdom. I wanted to thank you. " Qin Ruo gazed at Long Chen as she said with a slight smile.

"Thank you, but that was all in the past. Now you are the light inspiring others to work harder, not me." Long Chen replied to her with a smile.

"No, I can feel that you're still the same. Even though your cultivation realm had fallen so behind due to the terrible things that happened to you, but still, you can smile so positively. That in itself says a lot. No matter what your cultivation realm, you will always be the prodigy of Shui in my eyes" Qin Ruo said in a low voice as she looked at Long Chen. Long Wei's expressions kept getting uglier the more he heard her.

"Thank you, Miss Ruo. You are really too kind" Long Chen said with a gentle smile. He liked the gentle nature of Qin Ruo.

"Exactly, You are too kind Miss Ruo. He used to be good, but now he's even worse than my servants" Came a voice from the door.

They all looked towards the door only to see two people entering, followed by a group of servants.

"Oh? You are entitled to think whatever you want but It is really unfortunate if you actually think that, young master Nanli" Qin Ruo looked at the newcomer as she muttered in a low voice.

From her words, Long Chen recognized that boy as Gu Nanli, Grandson of Gu Clan patriarch Gu Yong.

'That Chubby man in the lead must be his father, the eldest son of Gu Clan patriarch, Gu Lin ' Long Chen thought to himself as he gazed at the guy.

"Gu Lin, where is your father, Gu Yong? Is that old man not coming? Is he still ashamed of being defeated by me last time? " Qin Hua asked the middle-aged man in lead with a smile.

"I apologize but father is in secluded cultivation so he couldn't come. We came in his stead. " Gu Lin said with a smile.

"You must be Long Tian. Congrats on waking up. You are really lucky to have survived so many disasters" Gu Lin muttered with a smile as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Thank you. You are right though, I really am lucky. The unlucky ones would be the ones who plotted against me " Long Chen replied with a bright smile as he gazed at Gu Lin.

"Hahaha...Sharp words for someone in the Body Refining realm. You think that you can take your revenge with that measly bit of strength of yours" Gu Nanli said as he started laughing.

"You look like a good person so can I be honest with you? I apologize for saying this but you look really ugly when you laugh like this, I'm not sure but that might just be your face though. " Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Gu Nanli with a thoughtful expression on his face.

Everyone started looking at Long Chen with a shocked expression while a pearl of laughter started echoing in the hall.

" I... I'm sorry but I couldn't control myself," Qin Ruo said as she tried controlling her laughter.

Seeing her face, Qin Huo also started laughing loudly as well.

Long Chen gazed at her with an amused look on his face while Gu Nanli and his father had an ugly expression in their face.

Chapter 121 - 121: Royal Clan

"Tian'er! You shouldn't be Rude to Guests" Sima Ziyi Chided Long Chen.

"Your...! You are lucky that we're in your clan right now! If you had dared to say this to me outside, You would've come home with so many broken bones" Gu Nanli said to Long Chen with an angry expression.

"Oh? You really think too much of yourself, don't you Young Master Nanli?" Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"Of course I do. I have the right to, as I'm not a body refining realm trash" Gu Nanli said with a smile.

"You shouldn't underestimate anyone, Young Master Nanli. You can never know someone's true self. Wouldn't it be shameful if you were crushed by a Body Refining Realm trash?" Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Gu Nanli with a smile.

"Hah, are you always this delusional?" Gu Nanli said as he stared at Long Chen.

"Not as much as you" Long Chen replied back.

"Enough Nanli! Senior Ren, We are not here to argue! Can you control your grandson as well?" Gu Lin said as he looked at Long Ren.

"Hahaha, It's not an argument. Just the younger generation playing around. Don't be so serious Lin, have fun. Your old man would understand it if he was here" Long Ren said with a smile.

"Hah, right. I remember your old man used to argue with old Ren just like this when we were younger. Our elders never interfered." Qin Wen said with a smile.

"Take a seat everyone. Don't be standing for so long." Long Ren said with a smile.

When Long Chen and Gu Nanli were arguing inside the Great Hall, Four Luxurious carriages with the Royal Moon symbol on them arrived in front of the clan. The Grand Elder of the Long clan was already standing at the front door waiting for these specific carriages.

A White-haired man, in Luxurious Blue Robes, exited the first carriage.

"Your Majesty, the king !" Grand Elder Long Mu greeted as he bowed slightly. The man was the King of Shui, Yue Han.

The door of the second carriage opened as a well-dressed man exited. He looked to be just seventeen-eighteen years old. He had long black hair when came up to his shoulders. He had light blue eyes matching with his clothes beautifully.

A young girl looking somewhere around 15-16 years old exited from the same carriage after him. She had a cute somewhat naive looking face while her long shiny blue hair agreed to her beauty. She also had deep blue eyes just like that boy.

"Your highness the Second Prince and the Third princess. Welcome" Grand Elder greeted the boy and the girl as he recognized them as the Second Prince, Yue Luan, and the Third Princess, Yue Fei.

The doors of the third carriage opened simultaneously as a boy and a girl exited as well.

The boy looked the same age as the second prince but had bright red hair while the girl looked to be just slightly older than Third Princess, Yue Fei. She had Long black hair coming down to her lower back. She was wearing a tight blue gown with some expensive-looking jewelry, unlike the third princess which was going with the minimalist approach with no jewelry.

"Your Highness, the Third Prince and the First Princess. Welcome to the Long clan" The Grand Elder, Long Mu welcomed them as he recognized them as the Third Prince, Yue Ding And the First Princess, Yue Miao

The door of the fourth carriage opened soon after. A 14-15-Year-old boy wearing the Royal robe exited the carriage followed behind by a man who looked to be in his early thirties.

"Your highness, the Fourth Prince and Royal Tutor Zhu! Welcome" The grand elder again said as he recognized them as fourth prince Yue Ming... and his royal Tutor Di Zhu.

"Lead us" The king, Yue Han said with a smile.

Everyone had just seated when the Grand Elder, Long Mu entered the Hall with the Royal family. Everyone stood up as they greeted the king, Long Chen did so as well but Long Chen couldn't help but gaze at the Third Princess and the Second Prince behind the king.

"Long Ren, Qin Wen, hmm... Did Gu Yong not come? " King Yue Han asked as he didn't see the Gu clan patriarch anywhere.

"Hahaha, your highness. He is 'supposedly ' cultivating... but we all know that he is just embarrassed since he came last at our friendly spar a few months ago. " Qin Wen said with a laugh as he looked at the king.

"Hahaha, He will be quite upset if he heard you say that. Anyways, let's sit and start the celebration. I hope you have good wine, Ren" King Yue Han said with a smile as he looked at Long Ren.

"Of Course. I have prepared a special wine for Your Highness. Let's sit there" Long Ren said with a smile as he pointed towards a table.

" Go enjoy yourself," The king said to his kids before he left with the patriarch of both clans. The third prince and the first princess selected a table as they say together while the Royal Tutor and Fourth Prince chose a separate table that was near the table of the Third Prince. The Second Prince also selected a table nearby and was about to sit when Long Chen came up to them

"We meet again," Long Chen said with a smile.

"Hahaha, of course, we did little brother. Sit please" Second Prince said with a smile.

"You look good Prince Luan and you look even more beautiful than before, Princess Fei. Your beauty keeps growing day by day" Long Chen said with a smile as he gazed at Yue Fei who couldn't help but smile at his comment.

"Hah, you're just as glib as you were in the forest. I like your personality but aren't you to brave? Flirting with my little sister when our Royal Father is nearby?" Second Prince, Yue Luan said with a chuckle.

"I feel nothing wrong with stating the truth. If that's what people call flirting, then I hope that I can always flirt with the third princess like this" Long Chen couldn't help but smile. Yue Fei's face turned red the more she heard Long Chen compliment her.

"Hahaha... You have wide ambitions, don't you? My sister is the jewel of the kingdom, and you want to flirt with her? What if she fell in love with you... Ouch... sister...I was..ouch kiddingouch ... stop it.... it hurts" Yue Luan said with a laugh but started groaning as Yue Fei started punching his waist in between his sentence.

"I don't think I have such luck as to win the heart of Princess Fei. " Long Chen said with a smile.

" I don't see Xue Ying here, Is she not well?" Long Chen heard a voice coming from nearby. He turned back only to see the Third Prince talking to Grand Elder nearby.

"Ying is perfectly fine. It's just that she is in secluded Cultivation for more than a week in preparation for the sect entrance exam. " Grand Elder, Long Mu replied to Yue Ding.

"Oh... Alright?" Third Prince Yue Ding muttered with a disappointed expression as he walked back to his table.

"Little brother, You have fallen so deeply in love with Long Xue Ying. She's a lucky girl" First princess, Yue Miao said in a soft voice as she gazed at Yue Ding.

"I can't understand why she tries to avoid me so much. I've never once misbehaved with her. Is there something wrong with me, Sister? Will my love always be Unrequited?" Yue Ding asked with a sad look on his face.

"Not at all. My little brother is the best man in the world. I'm sure she will soon fall for you and you two will get married. " Yue Miao said as she gazed at Yue Ding.

"You're looking at that table quite attentively little brother. Are you interested in the first Princess? Already breaking the heart of my poor sister....ouch.... not... again ... kidding..." Yue Luan joked as he looked at Long Chen looking towards the table of Third Prince but soon started regretting opening his mouth as the pinching again began.

Chapter 122 - 122: Spar

"You're looking at that table quite attentively little brother. Are you interested in the First Princess? Already breaking the heart of my poor little sister....ouch.... not... again ... kidding..." Yue Luan joked as he looked at Long Chen looking towards the table of Third Prince but he soon started regretting opening his mouth as the pinching again commenced.

As the Second Prince didn't lower his voice, First princess, Yue Miao heard his words. She frowned slightly but decided to ignore them.

"Third princess is so beautiful. I don't think any guy will have the guts to break her heart" Long Chen said with a smile.

"Hahaha, You're really good with words little brother. If only Third Prince was this good, he wouldn't be so desperate now" Yue Luan Chuckled as he looked at Long Chen.

Princess Miao and Third prince heard their words and couldn't help but stare at them with a frown.

"Second Prince Luan, I urge you to control your mouth. You should think a little before you speak" Princess Miao said lightly as she gazed at Prince Yue Luan.

"It's fine sister. Second brother is just using what little time he had left to say whatever nonsense he wants to about me. He knows that he won't be able to say anything after I become the crown prince" Third Prince, Yue Ding said with a smile as he looked at the Second Prince.

"Hah, Third brother might have quite a few shortcomings but his sense of humor isn't one of them" Yue Luan ignored them and said to Long Chen with a smile. Long Chen could feel the disharmony between them but he decided to stay out of it.

"My strength isn't one of them either, Second Brother" Third Prince muttered as he looked at Second prince.

"I never said you aren't strong, third brother. I am sure that you will show your true strength in the little competition we will have later on" Yue Luan said with a smile.

"What competition? " Long Chen couldn't help but ask.

"You don't know about it? Oh right, You were only interested in cultivation and studies when you were younger and your last 7 years weren't spent well either" Yue Luan muttered as he looked at Long Chen.

" At every large gathering of families, a small Competition is held at the end. To see the performance of the younger generation. It's more like a friendly spar. It had been a long tradition to do such things on occasions like this. I'm sure today will be the same. " Yue Luan ate the fruit on his plate as he explained to Long Chen.

"Oh? Interesting" Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he heard about it.

"I'm sure third brother will shock everyone with his performance today. Whether that will be a positive shock or negative, is to be seen though." Yue Luan Chuckled.

"Do you really feel superior just because you are one cultivation realm higher than me? I'll soon break through to the 9th stage of Spirit Establishment realm as well. So keep feeling Superior as long as you can, Second brother" Yue Ding said to Yue Luan as he drank the wine on his glass.

"I will be happy if you can reach that realm, third brother. First brother broke through to 9th stage Spirit Establishment realm a few months before he turned eighteen while I reached the 9th stage Spirit Establishment realm two weeks before I turned eighteen last month. I hope you don't break this tradition. You'll turn Eighteen next week. If you can't break through to 9th stage Spirit Establishment realm, that would be really disappointing " Yue Luan said with a smile.

" You'll see. There's no point in arguing with you. " Yue Ding muttered as stopped looking towards the Second prince. He started eating as well.

The feast continued as people kept socializing. Gu Lin and his Son, Gu Nanli sat at the same table as the fourth prince and the royal advisor. They could be seen talking and occasionally laughing.

While the Second Prince and Third Princess enjoyed the Companionship of Long Chen. Occasionally a few other clan members also came to greet them.

Qin Ruo and her mother spent time with Sima Ziyi. Although Qin Ruo kept glancing at Long Chen occasionally, she didn't walk towards them.

The Third Prince mostly stayed with his Sister on their table not socializing much.

'Looks like Second Prince is on good terms with him. It looks like he's not that good after all. Selecting such trash as a friend shows his bad judgment. Not a good quality for the future king' Long Wei thought to himself with a poisonous smile on his face as he saw Long Chen spending time with Second Prince Luan and the Third Princess Fei.

'I'll go with the Third Prince. I'm sure he'll be looking for the support of one of the supreme clans as well. With my status in the clan, I'm sure he'll be interested in forming a friendship with me and if he became the King, that will be even better for me in the future. Hmm, Second Prince Luan, you have lost a good opportunity by choosing a wrong friend' Long Wei thought to himself as he started walking towards the Third Prince.

"Greetings Prince Ding and the Princess Miao. I hope you are enjoying your time in the Long Clan" Long Wei greeted them with a smile.

"Hmm... and who might you be?" Yue Ding asked with an uninterested look on his face.

"I am Long Wei" He introduced himself as he sat on one of the chairs on that table. Yue Ding frowned at his behavior but didn't say anything.

"Long Wei...Hmm ... If I'm not wrong, You're the Grandson of Long Clan Patriarch" First Princess said in her soft voice.

"It is nice to meet you Young master Wei. I have heard quite a few good things about you" Princess Miao politely said.

Their conversations continued. Although the Third Prince didn't talk much, Princess Miao was much more sensible and knew how to make allies. She talked to him nicely as she knew that if she could get the Long clan's support for her brother, It would be really helpful in his path to the throne.

Just like this, Time slowly passed. The king, Long Ren and Qin Wen finished with their drinking, stood up.

"Looks like everyone is done with the feast. Let's get to the fun part of the evening" King Yue Han said loudly in the hall attracting everyone's attention.

"Everyone! Let's go to the Martial arena. It's time for the younger generation to show their skills." Long Ren said following Yue Han's statement.

"Come, I will show you the direction. You can follow me" Long Chen said to the Second Prince as he stood up. The second prince and the Third Princess

stood up as well and started following him. Soon, everyone started walking towards the Martial Arena of the Long Clan.

Everyone was standing in the Martial arena. A few chairs were already placed there. The king, Yue Han, Long Ren, Qin Wen, and a few other important guests and clan members sat in chairs while the other stood behind.

"Ming'er, Why don't you go first. You are the youngest " Yue Han said as he looked at the Fourth Prince.

"Yes father," Yue Ming said as he stepped into the center of the arena.

"I, Yue Ming, Would like to spar with someone. I'm a fifth stage Spirit Establishment realm Cultivator. Since I'm young and inexperienced, I'll only take challenges from people who haven't stepped in the 7th stage of Spirit Establishments Realm. I hope someone can guide me" Fourth Prince, Yue Ming said in a low voice as he looked towards the younger generation of the Long Clan.

"I would like to experience Prince Ming's skills" Long Wei smiled as he walked towards Prince Ming and stood in front of him.

"I'm fifteen as well and same cultivation realm as yours. Let's have a good fight" Long Wei said with a proud expression.

Chapter 123 - 123: Showing One's Prowess

"I am fifteen as well and same cultivation realm as yours. Let's have a good fight" Long Wei said with a proud expression.

"Alright," Prince Ming muttered as he got in his attacking stance.

"Drifting Motion! " Prince Ming let out as he started advancing in the direction of Long Wei.

"Flash steps!" Long Wei let out as he increased his speed as well but his speed seemed to have paled in comparison to Yue Ming's speed.

He decided to give up the defensive and go on the offensive as he suddenly stopped.

"Sky twisting Finger! " Long Wei muttered as he attacked in Yue Wei's direction who was rapidly coming towards him.

"Mighty Triumphant Fist!" Yue Ming said softly as he gathered all his Qi in his fist and punched out. Their attacks collided but soon Long Wei could be seen flying back and falling on the ground.

"Thanks for the amazing battle" Yue Ming smiled as he walked back. Long Wei with an embarrassed look on his face stood up as he patted the dust off his clothes and walked back as well.

"That was a good battle, fourth brother. Your skills are growing" Second Prince said with a smile as the Fourth Prince walked by him.

" Thank you second brother" Fourth Prince, Yue Ming answered back with a smile.

"Third brother, why don't you go now? " Second Prince said with a smile as he looked at Yue Ding.

" Alright," Third Prince said as he accepted. He knew that he would've denied to go before the Second Prince if only their father weren't near him. He didn't want to argue with Yue Luan in front of their father.

He took his first step out but stopped himself as he saw that someone else had already taken the lead and stepped in before him.

"I'm Gu Nanli from the Gu Clan. I am Eighteen and at the 8th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm. Anyone from the younger generation below the

age of nineteen can battle me. Is there anyone in the Long clan who wants to give it a try?" Gu Nanli said as he looked towards the younger generation of the Long Clan, especially towards Long Chen.

More than a minute passed but no one took the lead and stepped forward.

"Hah, what is it? Is there no one in the younger generation of the Long Clan who can fight me? The Long clan had disappointed me a lot" Gu Nanli said as he feigned a disappointed expression on his face.

"Unfortunately, we don't have any Cultivator above 7th stage Spirit Establishment Realm who is below nineteen years old. Did he know about it? Is that why he said anyone from the younger generation? If only Su'er was here" Supreme Elder muttered lightly.

" Young master Nanli, Why don't you fight me instead? " Qin Ruo muttered as she started walking towards the center but stood still with a shocked look on her face when she saw Long Chen already standing in front of Gu Nanli

" I apologize Miss Ruo, but since he called out my Long Clan, I would like to give it a try first. I hope you won't mind" Long Chen said with a smile as he looked at Qin Ruo.

The whole arena was shocked as they saw this scene and heard Long Chen's bold words.

" What is he doing? It's not safe!" Third Princess muttered with a worried look on her face as she gazed at Long Chen. Even Second Prince had his mouth open. He couldn't understand what was happening.

"Ren? Is he alright? The young shouldn't be so hot-blooded that they stop thinking about the consequences completely." King Yue Han looked at Long Chen with a frown on his face as he said to Long Ren who was sitting beside him.

"Come back!! It's dangerous!!" Sima Ziyi said loudly as she stood up with a worried look on her face

"Mother, Just trust me! " Long Chen said to Sima Ziyi with a confident smile.

"Trust....I..." Sima Ziyi decided to believe in Long Chen as she sat down again.

"He looks so confident. Does he really have a plan that can make him win or is he still Re.." First Princess Muttered as she gazed at Long Chen but didn't complete her sentence.

'hmm ... Looks like this guy has again become retarded. What an embarrassment to the clan' Long Wei thought as he snorted.

"Hmm... Strange..." The king let out as he used his divine sense on Long Chen.

"What's strange? " Long Ren asked with a confused look on his face.

" I tried using my divine sense on your grandson but I can't see his Cultivation. It feels like he is a normal mortal with no cultivation. How strange... Did you give him some special artifact to hide his cultivation? " Yue Han muttered in a low voice.

" What? ... Your majesty is right. I can't see this Cultivation either! " Qin Wen heard Yue Han's words and tried using his divine sense as well but he couldn't see Long Chen's Cultivation either.

"Oh, that's... Right... I gave him the family heirloom to hide his cultivation for the day. He was embarrassed about showing it to everyone, so I helped him and gave him an artifact just for today " Long Ren gave an excuse.

" Oh... Is that the real reason you gave him that artifact or are you trying to surprise us later? Looks like we'll see his strength soon enough" Yue Han Chuckled.

" Young master Nanli, I kindly accept your invitation." Long Chen said with a smile.

" Little kid... Are you making fun of me? You're three years younger than me and trash when it comes to the cultivation realm. Are you playing with me? Do you really think I would go easy on you just because we are in your clan? " Gu Nanli let out with a fierce expression on his face.

"Oh, I sure hope you don't go easy on me. That wouldn't be much fun, would it? I want you to show me your full strength Young Master Nanli" Long Chen replied as he smiled.

"Alright kid, since You're so desperately trying to get beaten, it will be my pleasure to fulfill your death wish," Gu Nanli said as his face covered in anger.

He started running towards Long Chen and punched out. He used no special skills, just his physical strength to attack Long Chen as he didn't think Long Chen was worthy of making him use his full strength.

Everyone couldn't help but be shocked as they saw what happened next.

Long Chen didn't even take a single step backward as he stood in his spot tall like a mountain. As the fist came close to him, Long Chen simply used his left hand to grab the fist of Gu Nanli, stopping the attack on its tracks. To the audience, it looked like Long Chen stopped this attack without using any effort whatsoever.

The king frowned as he gazed at everything happening in front of him with deep focus.

"Young master Nanli, are you playing with me? Didn't you say that you won't go easy on me?" Long Chen said with a chuckle.

Gu Nanli utilized all his strength to free his hands from Long Chen's grip but no amount of effort was able to help him. He used his other hand as he attacked towards Long Chen's face but Long Chen grabbed that hand as well.

"You shouldn't target the face just because yours isn't any good looking" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he tightened his grip on Gu Nanli's fist. Pain could be clearly seen on the face of Gu Nanli as Long Chen kept tightening his grip.

"Leave me you son of a..." Gu Nanli clenched his teeth with rage in his eyes as he muttered but before he could complete his sentence a palm heavily landed on his face making him fly far away like a broken kite.

"Keep things civil, Young Master Nanli, or I will be forced to teach you how to talk properly" Long Chen muttered in a low voice but everyone in the hall was able to hear him clearly.

Even the king couldn't help but gaze at Long Chen with his eyes wide open.

Chapter 124 - 124: Against The Prince

"Keep things civil Young Master Nanli, or I'll be forced to teach you how to properly talk" Long Chen muttered in a low voice but everyone in the hall was able to hear his words clearly.

Even the king couldn't help but gaze at Long Chen with his eyes wide open.

"This strength... He is physically stronger than that kid from Gu clan. I could see that none of them used any Qi. It was a purely physical fight, and your grandson clearly had an advantage" King Yue Han commented as he gazed at Long Ren.

" I like this little grandson of yours. He's pretty good. Is he cultivating a body strengthening technique? " Qin Wen said to Long Ren as he stared at Long Chen.

"Ah..." Long Ren couldn't decide what to say as even he was surprised at Long Chen's performance. He only knew that Long Chen was a Fifth Stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator but he himself never knew that he was a Body Cultivator as well. As only body Cultivators could defeat someone with a stronger cultivation than them with pure power. He didn't know that Long Chen wasn't a body Cultivator yet, it was just that his cultivation was already way too high for Gu Nanli, making his body even stronger.

"Yo... You Little bastard!" Gu Nanli stood up from the ground with various light wounds on his body. His clothes were covered in dirt, but what attracted the attention of most people was a large palm print on his cheeks.

"I tried to make you understand without violence but Looks like you'll never understand that way" Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful expression on his face. Many people couldn't help but roll their eyes as they heard his words. They wondered if that was Long Chen's 'without violence' then how would his violence be like.

"I will crush you! " Gu Nanli clenched his teeth as he let out in a loud voice. He started using his Qi, the Qi of 8th stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator. A shining green light appeared in his hands. He crossed his arms sending that green beam of light as quick as lightning towards Long Chen.

"Flash steps!" Long Chen used his footwork as he dodged that attack easily.

"Hmm... He used the same technique as your other grandson did, but his mastery in it seems to be way better. His use of this low-level movement

technique makes its performance closer to a higher-level one. Looks like people weren't wrong in calling your grandson a genius in his early days" The king complimented with a smile. Long Ren thanked him with a pleased smile on his face

'I want to finish it fast, but the only moves I know will kill him in one stroke. Looks like I can only use physical strength to crush him as killing him in this situation will be too troublesome' Long Chen thought as he gazed at Gu Nanli and then at the people watching them.

"Stop dodging, you coward!" Gu Nanli roared in anger.

"Shhhh... stay silent I'm not dodging because I'm afraid of you, Young Master Nanli, I'm just thinking of a way to not kill you with my first strike" Long Chen replied casually.

" You... You... " Gu Nanli's body trembled in anger as he heard Long Chen's words. He stopped attacking from long-distance as he used his movement skill to increase his speed and started advancing towards Long Chen.

"Great Earthly Fist! " A fist stuck out. This time instead of using only his physical strength like before, Gu Nanli used a Martial skill which used the Qi from his body to strengthen his attack. The attack carried a strong energy that quickly spread in the arena, causing the weaker clan members to take a step backward.

The fist moved like lightning towards Long Chen but before Gu Nanli could understand anything, he saw Long Chen disappear from his spot. His attack missed. He hurriedly looked backward but a hand gripped him by his throat and crashed him on the ground after picking him up in the air. It all happened in the blink of an eye.

"Enough!" Long Chen was about to attack again when a loud voice came. He looked in that direction only to see it was Gu Nanli's father who has spoken.

"It is just a friendly spar and my son is already defeated. You shouldn't be so cruel as to still attack him" Gu Lin said in a heavy voice as he walked towards Long Chen. Long Chen was already ready to attack in case he did something, but He did nothing strange. He just picked his son up and walked back. But before walking back, He muttered something to Long Chen in a low voice which Long Chen was able to hear clearly

"Don't make too many enemies, little guy" Gu Lin had said to Long Chen.

" Great performance! You're really talented. I can still see the genius in you. You're really sneaky Ren, hiding from us the strength of your grandson." The king openly praised Long Chen after which he looked to his left and talked to Long Ren.

"You flatter me, your Majesty. " Long Chen smiled as he said.

"Hmm? " Long Chen gazed at the Third Prince who had begun walking towards him and soon stood in front of him.

"I don't want to fight someone younger than me but your performance makes me excited to fight you! I hope you won't deny me" Third Prince Ding muttered in a low voice with eyes full of fighting intent.

" I don't know your cultivation realm, but I know that your physical body and movement skills are really strong. it will be a fun fight if you agree to battle me. I promise I will stop before I seriously injure you" Third Prince said with a serious look on his face

"It's not my injuries I'm worried about, Third Prince. It's about yours that worries me. You look like a nice person and I have no enmity with you. So I don't want to harm you accidentally. " Long Chen said with a serious expression on his face.

Second Prince couldn't help but chuckle as he heard Long Chen's words. Third prince's face turned sour as he noticed Second Prince laugh.

"It is fine, you don't have to worry about me. I can take care of myself. " Third Prince said with a confident look on his face.

"I Will try to go easy on you" Long Chen muttered in a low voice.

Chapter 125 - 125: Your Turn

"I will try to go easy on you" Long Chen muttered in a low voice. The Third Prince frowned at his words but didn't say anything.

"You are good at movement skills, but that's the area I am good at as well" Prince Ding muttered as he moved from his spot. He came whistling through the air towards Long Chen. But before closing in on Long Chen, he made a gesture with his hands as various spheres of blue light appeared in his hand. He threw them all towards Long Chen. Long Chen didn't move as he let all the spheres strike him. Sima Ziyi and many people couldn't help but stand up shocked as they saw Long Chen struck by Yue Ding's attack.

'Hah, Struck by his first attack, Pitiful. Looks like it's over' Long Wei thought to himself.

Unlike others, the King and both patriarchs kept gazing at Long Chen as that clearly saw that Long Chen, although struck by the Martial skill of Yue Ding was still standing unharmed in his spot, the same spot he was at since the beginning.

"That was ... a decent skill. You are quite strong compared to Gu Nanli" Long Chen muttered softly as he showed indifference on his face.

"Are you satisfied by the fight and concede defeat or should I make a move as well?" Long Chen said to Yue Ding.

"I accept that you are physically pretty strong and your defense is really good too! But how about we complete in real skills instead. I heard that you were a swordsman before and coincidentally I'm good with swords as well. Don't worry, I will stop my attack before I hurt you" Yue Ding said as he gazed at Long Chen.

" Alright... if you say so. Although it will be tougher with a sword, I'll still try to control myself so that I don't kill you accidentally" Long Chen muttered with a considerate look on his face.

'Hahaha, This little brother is really good at pissing people off' Second Prince thought with a bright smile clearly visible in his face as he saw the distorted expressions of Yue Ding following Long Chen's statement.

"My sword! " Yue Ding let out loudly. A servant quickly entered the arena with a sword and handed it to Yue Ding.

It was a light blue sword with a black hilt giving off a really strong aura. Long Chen realized that it was a high-rank Spirit grade artifact.

'Should I bully him with the big one? I feel like that will be too much. I'll use the weaker one' Long Chen thought.

"Xue, can you give me my smaller Sword?" He asked Xue who was holding something in her hands. Although it was properly wrapped, people could still understand that it was a sword or a blade from its shape. Right beside Xue, Mei was also standing not with a slightly bigger sword in her hands. Long Chen had already given them his swords before he entered the arena.

"Here master!" Xue said as she walked towards him and handed him his sword. Long Chen unwrapped it as he uncovered his peak mortal grade sword, Mountain Destroyer in front of everyone. He had decided to not use his Peak Rank spirit grade sword as he wasn't sure if his attack might accidentally kill Third Prince. He didn't want to kill anyone at the family gathering in front of the whole family, especially a Prince.

As the sword came out, people could feel a strong fierce aura excluding from it.

'Strange, I have seen this sword before... it never gave this strong feeling. Why does it feel like it's a sword that had drank the blood of countless people? It's just a peak rank mortal grade sword, how can it have a stronger aura comparable to a high-rank Spirit grade sword' Long Ren thought to himself as he saw the sword and the fierce aura excluding from it. Even the King and Qin Wen looked at the sword with an interested expression.

Yue Ding again showed his skillful steps as he used his movement skill, closing the distance between him and Long Chen and struck towards Long Chen's chest. Long Chen Skillfully used his sword as he blocked the attack and pushed Yue Ding backward. Long Chen noticed that there was a small dent on his Mountain Destroyer. Although it wasn't visible to the naked eye of a normal person, Long Chen with his high perception was able to notice it.

'Looks like the durability of the sword has a lot to do with the usefulness of a sword as well. Although the power a sword excludes depends on the user but it's durability can't be changed and a mortal grade sword is really not as durable as a high-rank Spirit grade sword.' Long Chen thought as he gazed at his sword.

"Alright, I will end it fast then "Long Chen muttered.

He restricted his cultivation to a Sixth Stage Spirit Establishment Realm as he believed that it was enough coupled with his sword technique to defeat Yue Ding. He felt like if he did a little more, he might accidentally kill Yue Ding whom he didn't want to kill as he didn't have any enmity with him.

"Alright, I'll fulfill your wish and end it fast" Yue Ding muttered as he took a sword stance.

"Convergence!" Prince Yue Ding took the initiative to attack as he slashed with his sword. A bright beam of light whistled through the air and moved in the direction of Long Chen. Immediately after the first slash, Yue Ding made a second and a third one, with each slash being faster than the previous one. All three slashes of lights combined along their path as they became even brighter as they advanced towards Long Chen.

Long Chen gazed at the incoming attack with an indifferent look on his face

"Seven forms of Saint Sword: First Form- Cleansing!" Long Chen muttered softly as he made a simple looking gesture from his Mountain Destroyer. A bright red beam of light moved towards Yue Ding at an even faster speed than his attack. It soon collided with the attack of the Third Prince. Immediately destroying it after a short collision with the attack as it continued moving forward.

Prince Yue with a stunned look on his face immediately used his sword to block the attack but instead of being able to stop the attack, he was tossed backward with a mighty force. He coughed a mouthful of blood as he tried getting up. He felt aching in many of his bones. With some effort, he stood up as he wiped the bloodstains off his mouth.

He stared at Long Chen for a brief moment before walking towards him.

"Although You're younger, You're really strong. I don't know what will happen if we fight a life or death battle, but for this occasion, I concede defeat." Prince Ding said to Long Chen before walking to his seat. Princess Miao gave him a healing pill as he sat down grunting.

"That was a good effort, Third brother" Second Prince Yue Luan said with a comforting smile as he looked at Yue Ding.

"It's your turn, Second Brother. I'm looking forward to seeing your performance" Third Prince Ding said with a smirk on his face.

Chapter 126 - 126:What's Your Real Cultivation?

"It's your turn, Second Brother. I'm looking forward to seeing your amazing performance" Third Prince Ding said with a smirk on his face.

"He's my little brother, why would I fight him? Also, You are not much weaker than me, Third Brother. If you are crushed so easily like a bug by him, he must be pretty strong. I don't think I can defeat him considering how helpless you were" Second Prince said to Yue Ding with a smile.

"Why don't you accept it, that you are scared? " Third Prince replied with a smirk.

" You can think whatever you like if that's what makes you feel better" Second Prince said with a chuckle.

" Little Sister, He is pretty good, isn't he? " Yue Luan whispered in the ears of Yue Fei as he saw her gazing at Long Chen intently.

"Yes, he is." Yue Fei muttered without focus.

Looking at the crowd and that no one was coming forward, Long Chen walked back to his seat. He gazed at Sima Ziyi who just stood there with a shocked look on her face like she was still trying to understand what was happening.

"Looks like the party's over. Your grandson is the bright star of the evening. " King Yue Han said as he gazed at Long Ren.

"Old Ren, tell me! Why did you hide his cultivation realm from us? There's no way he can do all that while only being a body Refining Realm Cultivator. Even if he had a good body cultivation technique, it's still tough as hell to defeat an 8th stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator. I believe that although he is a body cultivator, his cultivation realm is pretty good as well. Tell me, What his actual cultivation realm is!" Qin Wen said with an amused expression on his face as he looked at Long Ren.

"Did you lie to all of us about his brain being damaged and him being unable to cultivate or do anything since the assassination attempt on him? I can understand if you did that to protect him from the threat to his life. His cultivation realm, with the Qi he used in his last attack, I felt like it's the strength of at least a sixth stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator. Is that really the case?" Qin Wen inquired.

The king, being influenced by Qin Wen's words gazed at Long Ren as well.

"Why don't you call your grandson here. I'm interested to have a talk with him" Yua Han said with an interested look on his face.

After thinking for a bit, Long Ren decided to go with the flow as he called out for Long Chen.

Long Chen hearing his grandfather calling for him, immediately walked towards them.

"That was a good performance you showed us right there little guy. We are all interested in what your real cultivation realm is. Why don't you tell us?" Qin Wen gazed at Long Chen as he asked him.

Long Chen thought for a brief moment before he answered back with a smile

"8th stage Gold Core Realm" Long Chen replied.

Qin Wen, Long Ren, and Yue Han all looked at Long Chen with a blank look on their faces before Qin Wen started laughing loudly. Even King Yue Han and Long Ren couldn't help but chuckle.

"Old Ren, Your grandson really knows how to make people laugh," Qin Wen said in between laughter as he looked at Long Ren.

"Why don't you take the artifact preventing us from seeing your real Cultivation Realm? Let us have a look at your Gold Core Cultivation" Qin Wen said with a smile as he stopped laughing after much effort.

'What artifact are they talking about?' Long Chen thought with a confused look on his face.

"It's alright. You don't have to be ashamed of your real cultivation. It's already pretty good for your age, Just tell them honestly" Long Ren said with a smile.

"Ahh... Alright, I broke through to Sixth Stage Spirit Establishment Realm last night" Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

" As I expected. So you're still the most talented amongst the younger generation of Long clan. Same age as Long Wei but higher cultivation than him, as for your real fighting strength, I think we all saw a glimpse of it " King Yue Han said as he looked at Long Chen.

"Thanks for your kind words, your Majesty" Long Chen replied.

Many of the people who heard their conversation couldn't help but be shocked to their core. Some people like Sima Ziyi, Mei and Xue were happy

while others like Long Wei were upset. Gu Nanli and his father had already left long ago so they weren't here. Qin Ruo only gazed at Long Chen with a thoughtful look unlike everyone else.

The evening soon ended as people departed with various experiences of their own.

That night Long Chen walked back with his mother. When she asked Long Chen how he got this strong, Long Chen told her the same story he told Long Ren which made Sima Ziyi thank the heavens for giving Long Chen such luck which helped him overcome this adversity. After spending some time with his mother, Long Chen walked back to his room.

"Ahh what a day" Entering his room, Long Chen lied in the comfort of his bed, getting some rest. After staying in the bed for over an hour, Long Chen sat up again.

He began with his daily routine of feeding his egg before beginning his cultivation for the night.

Night passed as morning arrived. Long Chen ended his cultivation. He lay on his bed as he soon fell asleep, Eventually waking up in the afternoon, Long Chen got ready as he walked out.

"Good Morning sleepy head, I had Mei go wake you up but she came back saying that you were deep asleep, You must be tired from yesterday. I'll get food ready" Sima Ziyi said with a smile as she saw Long Chen enter her courtyard.

"Yea, I kinda slept late." Long Chen said as he sat on a chair.

Soon, the Lunch was served in front of Long Chen.

"Mother, I have something to tell you," Long Chen said as he gazed towards his mother.

"What is it?" Sima Ziyi inquired.

"I will be going to seclude myself in my room to cultivate for the next few days or so. So I won't be able to eat with you or see you for the next few days. I'll tell the servants outside to bring me food when I'm hungry. Just have Xue and Mei send the food in my courtyard. " Long Chen explained to his mother.

" This... Alright" Unable to deny Long Chen, She agreed.

Long Chen again went back to his Courtyard and closed the door.

"Hah, Time to work on the new techniques I received" Long Chen smiled as he sat on his bed

Chapter 127 - 127: Learning

"Hmm, Time to work on the new techniques I received" Long Chen smiled as he sat on his bed

" Where should I start with? I have three things to learn. Thunder blade, an elemental offensive skill. Earthly Monarch Effect, useful in movement and lastly Demon Monarch Physique" Long Chen muttered to himself.

"I need to take some time out to comprehend the law of space further as well, can't stay with a law seed forever," Long Chen said as if he was talking to himself.

"You have to learn more laws as well, not just the space law" Xun appeared out of nowhere as she told Long Chen.

"Great, You were the only thing missing from this seclusion" Long Chen said with a slightly annoyed expression.

"Do you know where I can get the next law orb from?" Long Chen inquired.

"Nope," Xun answered back.

"So... Was there a need to talk about something which we don't have a clue about? " Long Chen asked Xun.

" You can try learning without a law orb as well " Xun chuckled as she said.

" I don't have so much free time in my hand. I'm already running behind on the things I need to do" Long Chen replied to Xun.

" That's for you to decide, I won't interfere in your decision" Xun replied.

" Oh right! I remembered that I wanted to ask you about something" Long Chen exclaimed as he remembered something.

" What do you want to talk about? " Xun replied as she stared at Long Chen with an interested look on her face.

"This thing, with people not being able to see my cultivation... Will it always stay like this? " Long Chen asked her as he gazed at her.

" Yup, It's been that way since the moment you received the bloodline of Master. No one in this world is worthy to see the cultivation of his successor " Xun replied with a proud smile.

" Do you... ah... know a technique that can help me show a fake cultivation realm to others? I don't want to roam around like an awkward existence. People are starting to notice that they can't see my cultivation. I don't know what unexpected disaster this can cause" Long Chen said as he disclosed his worries to Xun.

"Oh, that? I know a technique. Tian Shen searched far and wide to find this technique. He faced a similar problem as yours. His cultivation realm was hidden as well and he didn't like that. Not because of the reason you are talking about... but because he wanted people to see his real cultivation. He always used to say that he didn't want insects bothering him because they didn't know their place. One day, his search came to fruition as he found what he was looking for. A Martial skill that was able to show people the cultivation realm he wanted. Though he never used it to show a fake realm. " Xun explained to Long Chen.

" Awesome!!! Can you teach me that technique? " Long Chen asked optimistically.

" I... can. But what will I get? I already helped you in establishing a contract with that egg for free before" Xun asked with a cheeky smile.

"You'll get a long kiss from me" Long Chen made a joke.

"Eww... who would want that?" Xun said in an annoyed tone.

" Many girls would want it. Anyways, what do you want? " Long Chen Chuckled.

" A promise" Xun gazed at Long Chen as she said seriously.

" A promise about what?" Long Chen asked with a confused look.

" A promise that you will help me once when I need it," Xun said to Long Chen.

" If I'm in a position to help you without risking my life, then sure," Long Chen told Xun.

" I'll take that as you accept," Xun said with a smile.

"Open your consciousness to me .. I'm transferring that technique to you," Xun said to Long Chen.

"Alright" Long Chen allowed Xun access to his consciousness and soon he felt like there was a new knowledge in his mind.

Long Chen unknowingly began learning that knowledge. Without him knowing, two hours passed as he finished reading.

"Wow... So it's called 'heavenly shroud'. Such detailed steps... Complicated yet easy to understand. Looks like this will be the technique I'll be spending my time to comprehend first" Long Chen said with a smile.

"As you might know since you went through that knowledge, This skill can help you show fake cultivation to others. But it's not that it's not without its limits either." Xun let out with a thoughtful expression.

"Yea, as far as I understand, I can only show a cultivation ranging from two major realm below my real cultivation Realm to one Major Realm above my real cultivation realm." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Xun.

"Exactly. If you were a 2nd stage Gold core realm cultivator, You could make others see your cultivation as 2nd stage body refining realm, all the way to 2nd stage Earth Realm, depending on your desires" Xun said with a smile.

"It's good enough as I only need it to show my cultivation realm. Though it can be pretty useful in the future" Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Alright, can you give me peace now? I need to comprehend this skill as fast as I can so that I can start comprehending Thunder b

Blade, Earthly Monarch Effect and Demon Monarch Physique" Long Chen said as he closed his eyes and started comprehending

"Hmph " Xun snorted as she disappeared.

Long Chen stayed in that position for over a day trying to understand heavenly shroud and trying to master it. He stayed like that until his stomach started growling.

"Looks like the human body can't keep up with the human mind" Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he stood up and walked towards the door of his courtyard. Long Chen opened the door and saw a servant who was already standing there.

"Bring me food" Long Chen ordered before closing the door again.

Right after fifteen minutes, a knock was heard on the door. Long Chen opened it only to find Xue standing outside with a tray in her hands.

Seeing the door open, Xue entered the courtyard as she placed the tray on the table. She just stood there as she watched Long Chen eat his meal. Not after

much long, she exited the courtyard with an empty tray in her hands. She didn't do much else as she didn't want to disturb Long Chen's calm mind through any of her actions.

Long Chen gazed at her walkout. He prevented himself from saying anything as he closed the door right after she exited and went back to his room. He again began his efforts of mastering Heaven's Shroud.

It took Long Chen two more hours before he completely mastered Heaven's Shroud.

"Perfect, One skill learned. Next up... Demon Monarch Physique" Long Chen said with a serious expression on his face.

Chapter 128 - 128: Demon Monarch

"If I can cultivate Demon Monarch Physique for myself, It can be really helpful in the cultivation of Thunder Blade and Earthly Monarch Effect. Without a strong body, those will be really difficult to Cultivate, especially Thunder Blade. If Thunder Blade's cultivation method was written in the description I read while choosing the rewards, I really doubt if I would have chosen it" Long Chen let out with a wry smile.

" Hah, Since everything is already done, I better stop worrying about the future " Long Chen muttered as he tried to gain focus.

"To cultivate Demon Monarch Physique, I need to create a heart demon first and connect that to my Martial Space. Hmm, This heart demon will collect the Natural Qi I provide it during my cultivation, It will supplement that Natural Qi with some of its Demonic Qi and provide it to my body to create a Demon Monarch Physique out of it. I'm a little worried about creating a heart demon though, as one of its side effects is that it will weaken my will. It can be really troublesome if I can't control myself and lose myself somewhere along the way... Should I go along with it? " Long Chen talked to himself.

"Alright, Be brave! To gain something, I'll need to take some risks as well. And If I can't even control a little heart demon of my own, how the hell am I going to reach the peak of this world? If I can't even have a strong will, how can I become eternal? " Long Chen let out with a voice full of determination.

He began the cultivation of the Demon Monarch Physique. He went through the steps mentioned in the Cultivation Manuel to create a heart demon. Although Long Chen knew the method to create a heart demon from the Demon Monarch Physique Manuel, it still took him over five hours to form one.

Henceforth, Four things existed in Long Chen's Martial space. His Space Law seed, his Red Core, his heart demon and his Martial soul donned in armor.

The heart demon which was created looked similar to Long Chen, the only difference was that it had two horns growing out of his forehead. He was wearing a

red robe when it came into existence. After forming his Heart Demon, Long Chen lay on his bed, tired from all the effort it took.

Unbeknownst to Long Chen, When the Heart Demon came into existence, Long Chen's Martial Soul finally had a slight movement after a long time.

As the Heart Demon appeared inside the Martial space, Long Chen's Martial soul which had a blood-red sword in his hands and a golden armor on its body slowly opened his eyes as it gazed at the heart demon with his blood-red eyes. After gazing at the heart demon for a short moment, the Martial Soul again closed his eyes like the heart demon was not worth his attention.

The Heart Demon felt a chill run down its spine only a few moments after it was born in Long Chen's Martial space. It felt like it was in grave danger. It slowly turned back only to find a Martial Soul standing at some distance from him with its eyes closed. He looked around but only saw a Red Core floating above his head and a seed-like thing floating right in front of the golden armored Martial Soul.

He tried looking everywhere but couldn't determine what caused him to feel scared.

Long Chen sat up after half an hour as he began absorbing Natural Qi from the atmosphere. He decided to give all the Qi to his Heart Demon which supplemented the Natural Qi with demonic Qi and sent it to Long Chen's body, strengthening it. Long Chen could feel that his strength was increasing. He could feel himself becoming stronger. He continued this process for over twelve hours before his stomach started growling again, yet, without stopping, Long Chen continued his cultivation for twelve more hours before stopping.

"Hah, Just after a day of Cultivation, I already feel so much stronger. My physical strength has increased by a significant amount. If I had such strength during the completion, the simple slap I hit Gu Nanli would have crushed his skull. If I continue like this, I can become the strongest in the world, slaughter everyone who stands in my path as I reach my goal... wait... what the hell am I talking about, why am I thinking about crushing someone's skull. What is this feeling... This thirst to slaughter someone" Long Chen smiled as he said but he soon stopped with a confused look on his face as he carefully thought about the words he said.

"It's nothing serious, just the effects of Demon Monarch Physique. Deep inside you hate Gu Nanli for insulting you, you are just saying all these words because your emotions are heightened by your heart demon." Xun appeared again as she explained.

" But... I just started cultivating it. how can it be affecting me this much right at the beginning? Shouldn't it be like this when I cultivate it to perfection? " Long Chen inquired.

" Nope, it's like this from the start and it will only continue to increase with time. " Xun explained.

"It's still not too serious... Just some heightened emotions. But What if I stop cultivating this technique in the future when I feel like I have reached the threshold and never cultivate further? " Long Chen asked as he gazed at Xun.

" You can stop cultivating this physique but what will you do about that heart demon that's already in your Martial Space? You can't banish it from your Martial Space now and even if you stop providing your heart demon with natural Qi but when you stop cultivating this physique, its when a worse problem will arise for you." Xun said to Long Chen.

" What problem? " Long Chen asked her.

"When you don't provide your heart demon with natural Qi for a certain amount of time, it will start absorbing Qi from your Martial space and send that to your body after supplementing it with his demonic Qi. It will result in your Cultivation realm decreasing while your Physical Cultivation realm increases. So in a way, once you started cultivating Demon Monarch Physique, all the exit doors were closed. It can't be stopped. All you can do now is keep your Will strong and keep that heart demon in your control. Don't let it use you, Use it for yourself instead. If you use it properly, you can become invincible " Xun said in a low voice.

" You... Why didn't you tell me all this before!" Long Chen roared in anger but he soon controlled himself. He understood that it was his heart demon that made him get so angry.

"I'm sorry for screaming at you... It was my fault for not listening to your words and selecting this skill without understanding the depths of your warning" Long Chen said softly as he gazed at Xun.

Chapter 129 - 129: I'll Tell Her Myself

"I'm sorry for screaming at you... It was my fault for not listening to your words and selecting this skill without understanding the depths of your warning" Long Chen said softly as he gazed at Xun.

"You don't have to worry about it. Although your heart demon will affect you, I'm sure you can suppress that. Just stay aware of who you are" Xun said in a low voice as she gazed at Long Chen.

"You're right. I can do it" Long Chen said in a voice full of determination as he looked at Xun.

"You have already finished the core part of Demon Monarch Physique. Now, all there's left is to increase your strength by providing Qi to your heart demon regularly, which you can easily do. So Which other skill are you going to learn next? " Xun inquired as she looked at Long Chen.

"I've already completed the initial cultivation of Demon Monarch Physique, Next I think I should cultivate Earthly Monarch Effect. My empty courtyard might not be good enough to practice it. I feel that this place is too small for it, I need to think of another solution. Maybe I can go to Northern Black Forest again. It will be tough convincing mother to allow me to go out again but it's a necessity for my cultivation " Long Chen muttered as he stood up. As soon as Long Chen stood up, His stomach started growling again making him realize that he hasn't eaten for over a day.

He walked towards the exit. As soon as he reached near the door, he could hear some of the voices.

"I... I am going to knock now! " One of the voices said. Long Chen realized that it was the voice of Xue.

"But... but what if master got angry. What if his cultivation was disturbed because of us. " Another voice came which sounded like Mei's voice

" Master hadn't eaten anything for over a day. He might be busy in Cultivation but eating is important as well. I feel like we should take the risk of getting scolded by master and remind him to eat. " Xue said with a voice filled with determination.

" But... there's a risk in it sister. What if master is at an important juncture of his cultivation and suffer a cultivation deviation because of our distraction. I...I

don't want to see him hurt " Mei said in an emotional voice. Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he heard them.

"I... You are right but I don't know what to do either..." Xue's confused voice sounded.

"How about both of you bring me some delicious food. I am really really hungry" Long Chen said with a smile as he opened the door and took a step out of his courtyard. Xue and Mei after their initial shock, hurriedly ran back with a bright smile to bring Long Chen something to eat.

Long Chen smiled as he walked back and sat on his chair leaving the door of his courtyard unlocked.

Xue and Mei soon came back with trays in their hands as they placed them all in the table in front of Long Chen.

Long Chen for some unknown reason felt intense hunger as soon as the food was placed in front of him. Without wasting a single second, He started eating the food. Even the girls were amazed as they saw Long Chen eating so fast, it looked like he was hungry for weeks. Everything was finished within a matter of a few minutes

After he finished eating, Long Chen reclined at his chair as he stretched his arms.

"That was some great stuff. I feel really better now" Long Chen said with a smile as he gazed at Xue and Mei. Suddenly, Unknown to Long Chen, the heart demon inside Long Chen smiled, like it had found something fun

"Wow, Now that I've satisfied my number, I noticed that both of you look really pretty in those clothes. " Long Chen let out as he gazed at the both of them from top to bottom.

Xue and Mei were wearing identical green dresses that looked like a gown from the top but it only came down to their knees, showcasing their beautiful legs. Long Chen kept gazing at them. He could feel a flame inside him, he didn't want to take his eyes off them and wanted to just keep gazing at the girls.

"Thank you, master." Both of them replied with a beautiful smile.

"We should be going out now. We shouldn't interrupt your cultivation any longer" Xue said as she walked forward to pick up the tray.

"It is fine... Why don't you stay here for longer so that I can gaze at your cute face all day long" Long Chen said with a smile.

" Really? Won't that disturb your cultivation? " Xue gave a charming smile as she asked.

"It is fine, I can cultivate a few hours later, just let me fulfill my wish for now. Stay here. Let's talk for some time" Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Only sister is allowed to stay? " Mei asked with an unpleasant tone.

"Of course not, I want you to stay as well. How can I let my lovely Mei go? I wanted to get some time to talk to you since the last time you came to my room" Long Chen said in a soft voice. Mei's face turned red as she remembered what she had done. She couldn't help but glimpse at her hands and Long Chen's lower body as she reminisced about the past.

Xue, unable to understand her reaction, just gazed at her with a confused look on her face.

"How was it?" Long Chen inquired as he gazed at Mei

"It was.. really good master," Mei said in a low voice with a red face.

"Good enough for there to be a next time? " Long Chen asked with an amused look on his face.

"If Master allows it," Mei replied.

"What are both of you talking about?" Xue finally asked Long Chen as she stood near Mei.

" Mei, you want to tell her? " Long Chen asked Mei with a smile.

"I... I can't" Mei let out in a soft voice as she lowered her head, hiding her Red face.

"I'll tell her myself then" Long Chen smiled as he said.

" Xue, come closer, " Long Chen said as he glanced at Xue.

Xue followed the command as she walked closer to Long Chen. As she reached near Long Chen, Long Chen stood up from his chair as he moved his face closer to hers. He could smell the sweet fragrance coming from Xue. Long Chen brought his lips closer to her ears

"Last time she walked inside my room when I was sleeping and.. " Long Chen whispered till here as he paused before he continued.

Chapter 130 - 130: Journey

"Last time she walked inside my room when I was sleeping and..." Long Chen whispered till here as he paused before he continued.

"... and being the considerate girl she is, without disturbing me, she went into the bathroom to prepare my bathwater. Want to know what happened next?" Long Chen smilingly asked.

" then..." Long Chen slowly began telling her the events of that day

"This...She... swallowed..." Xue's face turned red as she heard all this. She glanced at Long Chen's lower body and then looked back at Mei, but saw her standing there with her head down, not denying Long Chen's statement. She understood that it was true.

"Do you want to know how she did it? Have an experience of your own " Long Chen asked with a charming smile.

" I... I want to..." Xue said with a red face.

"How about you go ahead and open my pants yourself. We can recreate that scene" Long Chen said with a smile.

Xue after thinking for a brief moment decided to do it. With some hesitation, she moved her hands towards Long Chen. But before her hands touched Long Chen's pants, Long Chen grabbed her hand preventing it from moving forward.

"You... both of you can go now!" Long Chen said as he gritted his teeth trying to control himself. Xue and Mei both could feel that there was something wrong with Long Chen.

"Master... Are you alright?" Xue asked.

" I... I'm fine. Just go. I need to cultivate, I'll call for you when I'm hungry. " Long Chen walked away from them as he entered his bedroom and closed the door. He grabbed his head tightly as he felt like his head was going to burst.

"It's tough suppressing your Heart Demon. isn't it?" Xun appeared as she said in a gentle tone.

" It is... I almost lost myself for a moment there" Long Chen said in a heavy tone as he grabbed his head tightly.

"You know it would have been fine if you had went along with it. The Heart demon only intensified your inner desires. It was you that wanted to do that. And I don't think the girls would have denied you either. There was no need to go through such pain" Xun said as she looked at Long Chen with a concerning gaze

"Of course I had inner desires to do that with those girls but who wouldn't! I'm a guy and I have inner desires for many. I... I like those girls but... but I don't want to mess things up and lose myself to my Heart Demon by following its desires. Whatever I do, I want to do that by my own will. Not because of something's influence. Although Heart Demon only intensified what I myself wanted but it also weakened my reasoning as well." Long Chen said as he tried to control his headache.

"You need some time to get adjusted to the Heart Demon. I remember you wanted to go out. How about you go to someplace without any human. Just you, me and your Martial skills cultivation. You will have a long time to self reflect on yourself and get used to the slight influence and learn to control it as much as you can" Xun said lightly with a smile.

"Alright... I wanted to go somewhere to practice but it looks like that trip will have some other use as well" Long Chen muttered as he lay on his bed with relief. His painful headache had finally ended.

"Where will you go? " Xun asked with an interested look on her face.

"City of Thunder ... in the nearby Huanji Kingdom. That will be an important place for my Cultivation journey" Long Chen said lightly as he gazed at Xun.

"Huanji is a second rank kingdom just like Shui and is right beside Shui. We will just have to pass three cities of Shui to enter Huanji Kingdom. And a few more cities to get to the City of Thunder. " Long Chen explained with a tired expression.

"City of Thunder... Are you going there to cultivate Thunder blade? " Xun inquired as she looked at Xun.

"Exactly... You already know the cultivation steps of Thunder Blade. The city of Thunder will be the perfect place to cultivate it. And the journey will be a long one and mostly solitary. It will allow me to get used to my Heart Demon" Long Chen said with a smile.

"It's a good plan... but are you sure that your family will allow you to leave this residence ever again. You are a walking disaster in their eyes" Xun chuckled as she said.

"Hah... I know they won't give me permission, so I thought of another plan. " Long Chen said with a smile.

" What plan? " Xun inquired as she looked at Long Chen.

"Simple. Leaving without permission. I will leave a letter saying that I'll be going on a cultivation journey for a few months. Although mother will be worried, it's all for the best of the family. I don't feel like I should stay here with the strength that I hold and my emotions out of control " Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the door.

"Can you leave without them knowing? " Xun asked.

"Did you forget who you are talking to? " Long Chen smiled as he waved his finger creating a minor distortion in space. I am a Law of space Cultivator and Warp, the special skill I received when I learned the law of space, allows me to travel up to a distance of hundred Kilometers. Although it had limitations that I can only use it once a day, and that I can only travel to a place that I have visited before, but it's still enough for me to exit this mansion without anyone knowing" Long Chen said with a smile.

"Hahaha... Awesome! You are finally using what little brain you have. Looks like we're going on a journey" Xun said as she smiled.

"A journey filled with unknown dangers and adventures. My very own story is about to begin" Long Chen said with a smile.

Chapter 131 - 131: Desire(★)

"Ahem...What will you do about the money though? You'll need plenty of it to live comfortably on long travels" Xun looked like she remembered something as she asked.

"That... Right! I do have quite a good amount of money and since I am a gold core Realm Cultivator, I can hunt gold realm beasts as well. I can hunt along the way and sell them to shops. They are always in high demand because of their usefulness in alchemy and medicine whether it is their blood, their core or other components. They will sell for a pretty good price. That should be enough if there's ever a need for money" Long Chen at first looked like he had just realized about this issue but he soon thought of a proper plan as he told Xun.

"When are we leaving?" Xun asked with an excited smile.

" Tomorrow! I am pretty tired today so I will sleep first and then collect some necessities from the clan and get ready for the journey. Good night beautiful, I'll see you later " Long Chen said to Xun as he closed his eyes.

Long Chen soon fell asleep leaving Xun alone.

"Hmm... At Least you know I'm beautiful. He always called me cute and treated me like a child" Xun muttered as she gazed at Long Chen before she disappeared.

A few hours passed as morning arrived again. Long Chen woke up and got off his bed as he went to pick up his clothes from his wardrobe. After selecting a nice pair of clothes, Long Chen placed them on bed. He took his old clothes off as he walked towards the bathroom but just before opening his bedroom door.

"Oh wait... Did I forget to close the door yesterday as well? Better take precautions " Long Chen thought as he remembered something. He walked back to his wardrobe and selected a towel which he wrapped around his waist as he covered his essentials.

Long Chen opened the door as he left his bedroom and entered the hall which was attached to the bathroom. He saw Xue and Mei sitting in the chairs with their heads on the table, sleeping soundly.

'Those girls kept waiting here' Long Chen thought as he gazed at them. He walked towards them as he gently touched their soft cheeks with his fingers.

Long Chen suddenly felt like if he didn't leave soon, he'll have another problem at his hand as he won't be able to control himself. He could feel another fire beginning to burn inside him. He soon took off his hands from their cheeks as he began to step back but Mei and Xue both had woken up by this time as they saw Long Chen.

WARNING: ADULT CONTENT AHEAD!! Skip this chapter if you are a minor or don't want to read such content

"Master! Are you feeling better now?" They both said at the same time as they walked closer to them. Long Chen couldn't help but gaze at their curvy figure wrapped in a tight dress.

"It would be best if you stay away from me. If you walk any closer, I will have a tough time controlling my desires. " Long Chen said as he stopped and gazed at them.

"What desires? What are you talking about master? " Xue said as she gazed at Long Chen.

" The desire to ravish you right here and right now!" Long Chen let out loud enough for them to hear.

"R... really? " Xue exclaimed with a stunned expression on her face.

"Does... Does master find us attractive?" Xue asked again as she lowered her head.

" Of Course I find you attractive. Your perfect devilish figure, your unique beauty, Your big and soft breasts everything have a demonic charm that is making me harder to control myself. Just leave." Long Chen exclaimed with a voice full of impatience.

" Why master! I don't want to leave! If you want to ravish me, then I also want to be ravished by master. I... I want master to make me hers even if it's just for a day! " Mei exclaimed with a voice full of emotions as he ran forward and hugged Long Chen before Xue could say anything.

Long Chen gave up trying to control himself as he wrapped his arms around Mei's sizzling back. Long Chen gazed in Mei's eyes. His face was only an inch away from hers. He could feel her fastened breathing. He moved his face

forwards finally allowing his lips to touch her lips as he tried to savor the sweet taste of her lips. As Long Chen kissed Mei, He moved his hands down from her back to her butt which he grabbed with his hands.

Mei, unable to bear with the sensation, slightly opened her mouth as she moaned but Long Chen fully utilized this small opening as he slid his tongue inside her mouth. He began using his tongue to play with Mei's. Mei felt limp as she lost herself in the pleasure of kissing and allowed Long Chen to do whatever he pleased with her sweet sweet tongue

"This... this..." Xue stood there with a shocked expression as she stared at Long Chen kissing and playing with Mei's ass with his hands. She didn't know what to do. She didn't know if she was dreaming or was it all a reality, all she knew was that she wanted to be in that spot making love to Long Chen instead of Mei. She felt like she wanted him to do that to her.

Long Chen moved one of his hands from her butt as he placed it on Mei's breast and started rubbing it. After doing it for some time, Long Chen removed his lips off Mei's and picked her up in his arms like a princess as he started walking towards the bedroom.

"M... Master... I... I want... too..." Xue said with much effort as she saw Long Chen walking away from her and towards his bedroom with Mei. Long Chen stopped as he turned back with a charming smile on his face. He walked towards Xue with Mei still in his arms clinging to him.

"I was waiting for you to say these words love" Long Chen whispered softly as he stood near Xue. He slowly moved his face closer to hers as he lightly brushed his lips against her cheeks yet that was enough to send shivers down her nerves that made her tremble slightly. Xue's already fastened heartbeat increased even more as she felt Long Chen's breathing.

"Do you want me to stop?" Long Chen whispered as he gazed into her eyes. Before she could say anything, his lips had already touched Xue's lips closing her mouth. He separated his lips from hers just a few seconds after kissing her yet kept his lips at a distance of an inch from hers. He just gazed into her eyes without doing anything. Without taking long, Xue took the lead as she closed the distance between him and her and kissed his lips. Long Chen was amazed to see that Xue was even more passionate than Mei when it came to kissing. Their tongues kept intertwining savoring each other's flavor. Long Chen quite liked kissing Xue.

"Let's go to the bedroom." Long Chen said softly to the heavily breathing Xue as he separated his lips from here after kissing her for quite some time.

Long Chen walked towards the bedroom as Xue followed behind like an obedient girl.

Chapter 132 - 132:You Took Mine! I'll Take Yours(★)

SERIOUS WARNING: ADULT CONTENT AHEAD!! Skip this chapter if you are a minor or don't want to read such content. Skipping this chapter won't Affect the future story

Long Chen walked towards his bedroom as Xue followed behind like an obedient girl.

After entering the bedroom, Long Chen placed Mei on the bed gently before picking up the clothes he had placed on the bed and tossing them on the chair nearby.

He turned around as he grabbed Xue's delicate hand who was standing behind him and pulled her into his arms and began kissing her sweet lips again while he began playing with her soft round breasts with his hands.

"Take your clothes off" Long Chen separated his lips from hers as he gently whispered in her delicate ears. Xue somehow felt nervous and delighted at the same time as she heard Long Chen's command. After a brief moment, Xue slowly began undressing herself. A gown like dress fell down to the ground revealing the beautiful figure of Xue which was only in her innerwear.

"You missed something," Long Chen said as he sat on his bed. He brought Mei closer made her sit on his lap as he began playing with her soft breasts. His eyes never left Xue's body waiting for her to do as he said. Mei gazed at her sister as well making Xue feel even more embarrassed.

Xue Slowly removed her innerwear as well, revealing her body in its full glory. Long Chen took a good look at her elegant physique as he licked his lips.

"Come here," Long Chen said softly as he looked at Xue, who with shaky legs walked towards Long Chen while trying to cover herself with her small hands.

As Xue was walking towards Long Chen with her small steps, Long Chen didn't squander any time as he tore off Mei's clothes liberating her bountiful breasts from their cage.

"There's some left here. Can you remove it for me?" Long Chen muttered as he pointed towards the portion of the dress of Mei which was still covering her lower body.

Xue gazed at Long Chen before looking back at Mei with a red face who had her face lowered. Xue walked towards Mei and sat on her knees as she tore apart her remaining dress as well, completely freeing her from any clothing.

"Good work sweetheart! " Long Chen praised as he rubbed Xue's head.

"There's still standing left to be removed master," Xue said in a mosquito-like voice after gathering her courage as she reached her hand out towards Long Chen and pulled his towel off as she revealed something standing tall like a tower of heaven.

Mei gazed at it and immediately grabbed it by her hands without wasting any time as she started moving her hand up and down.

Long Chen turned his face towards Mei and kissed her as he intertwined his tongue with hers in her mouth once again while she continued playing with his sword.

"Mei!! Can you let me try?" Xue's voice sounded, attracting Mei's attention.

" But... I don't want to" Mei whimpered as Long Chen removed his lips leaving her breathing heavily.

"Just for a few minutes. I want to.. with it as well" Xue said in a mosquito-like voice

" Only for a short moment!" Mei said as she removed her hands with an unwilling expression. Long Chen gazed at both of them with an amused expression.

Xue came even closer to Long Chen while still on her knees. Her face was only a few inches away from Long Chen's Manhood. She used her soft hands as she touched his sword under the watchful eyes of Long Chen and Mei. She began moving her hands up and down as well but Long Chen's expression soon changed as he saw her next action.

Xue, while using her hands to play with Long Chen's Manhood, moved her mouth forward as she took little Chen inside her mouth. Slurping sounds began to originate as Xue started sucking Long Chen's Manhood with her red lips. Long Chen felt the sensation which made him let out a small voice. He

put one of his hands behind Xue's head as he made her take his sword deeper and deeper.

As Long Chen enjoyed Xue's service, he began kissing Mei again as he sucked on her sweet tongue while one of his hands kept playing with her peaks.

This continued for over ten minutes before Long Chen made Mei stand from her lap and made her sit on the bed near him. Xue kept playing with little Chen like a flute until Long Chen stopped her as well and made her stand. She gently threw her on the bed as he reached on top of her.

"How did you learn about what you did before?" Long Chen whispered in Xue's ears as his sword poked at the entrance of Xue's valley.

"I heard a married woman from the neighborhood talk about it with some of her friends. They were talking about their nights with their husbands" Xue muttered lightly.

" Hahaha... It's good that you know it. Anyways, does this mean I'm your husband now?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

" I'm not worthy of having someone like master as my husband. I'm just happy being with you. " Xue said softly.

" You're a good girl. But both of you are my woman. Even if not officially, I'm already your husband from now on" Long Chen said as he inserted his sword inside Xue and began his movement. Xue opened her mouth as soon as Long Chen inserted his sword in her but he closed her mouth with his as he began kissing her without giving her a chance to breathe. Long Chen separated his lips from hers after kissing for over twenty minutes and only moaning sounds full of pleasure was escaping from her mouth.

Mei, sitting nearby watched everything with a red face without closing her eyes. After doing it for over thirty minutes Long Chen took his sword out from Xue just before he sprayed his white fluid all over her stomach.

Mei with an eager expression walked towards Xue as she licked clean all the fluid from her stomach.

"That's a good girl. It should not be wasted" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"My turn master! " Mei said with a seductive smile as she gazed at Long Chen.

Long Chen gazed at her before looking at his sword. He walked towards Mei as he laid her on the bed and got on top of her, he kissed her lips before he

moved downwards and kissed the nape of her neck. He again moved lower as he began kissing her breasts and her mountain peaks, even playfully biting it sometimes making Mei moan. Long Chen played with her for over ten minutes before he felt like he was ready.

He again got on his position. He gazed in Mei's eyes as he inserted his sword in her and soon closed her mouth with a kiss. Long Chen kept thrusting back and forth, slowly increasing his speed. It continued for over ten minutes as moaning sounds filled the room.

Long Chen brought his sword out of Mei as he got off her body. He made her change positions. He made her sit on her knees with her back facing him before he told her to bow forward and use her knees and arms to stand like an animal. He adjusted her position until he felt like it was satisfactory.

After finishing, Long Chen again inserted his sword and started penetrating Mei from the back. Long Chen changed positions a few times during his endeavor until suddenly he removed his sword from her body and immediately moved towards her face as he sprayed his white fluid all over her face.

"You took mine, I'll take yours" Before Mei could use her hand, Xue was already there licking the fluid off of Mei's face. Xue noticed some of it was on Mei's lower lip as well. She used her lips and tongue as she touched her lips with hers and swallowed the remaining fluid as well.

Long Chen smiled as he saw all this. He again pulled Xue towards him as the night continued.

Night passed with moans echoing through Long Chen's Room but since his courtyard was pretty big, these voices weren't heard outside.

Morning arrived as Long Chen woke up. He opened his eyes only to find Xue's cute sleeping face next to him. He immediately sat up as he looked to his other side and found Mei sleeping there as well. None of them had any clothes on their body.

"What the hell did I just do" Long Chen Muttered as he remembered the previous night.

Chapter 133 - 133: Third Floor Of Skill Hall

"What the hell did I just do" Long Chen muttered as he remembered the night.

"Here comes the brain back" Xun appeared near Long Chen as she gazed at him with a smile.

"I lost myself in my desires," Long Chen said softly.

"Do you regret it?" Xun inquired as she stared in his golden eyes.

"Not even a second of it," Long Chen said softly as he gazed at the girls sleeping peacefully for a moment.

"So are the plans of leaving and going to City of Thunder canceled?" Xun said with a smile

"Not at all. Although I only lost myself in my desires and came out with something positive that I don't regret, but I never know if I'll do something stupid when I lose myself to my other emotions. I have family here and I don't want to see them getting hurt or see my dark side" Long Chen got off his bed and walked towards the bathroom as he said lightly.

"It's not that serious yet. I don't think you'll hurt them" Xun muttered with a smile.

"It is better to be on the safer side" Long Chen muttered as he exited his bedroom and entered the hall.

"On a lighter note, You fulfilled all your desires with those girls all night long, yet your thing is still standing tall. Haven't you had your fill yet" Xun chuckled as she teased Long Chen trying to lighten the mood while looking at his sword.

"How can I be satisfied when I haven't had you yet" Long Chen laughed as he said while gazing at Xun.

"Eww... Keep dreaming! This lady here isn't much interested in little boys" Xun let out as she disappeared with a red face without any further comments.

"Hah... We will see" Long Chen chuckled as he entered his bathroom.

Finished with shower, Long Chen walked back and found Xue and Mei still sleeping. He climbed on the bed as he kissed both of them on the lips lightly

before getting off. Long Chen had finished dressing when Xue finally opened her eyes with a sleepy look.

"We're late!! " Xue let out as she saw Long Chen up before then. Mei also woke up after hearing her voice.

"Late for what" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"To bring you something to eat," Xue said as she hurriedly got off the bed and got dressed. Mei also walked to the edge of the bed but she remembered something as she stayed there with a wry smile on her face.

"Xue, Why don't you bring Mei's clothes first. Her old ones are..." Long Chen said lightly as he understood her conundrum. He gazed at the torn off clothes on the ground.

Xue hurriedly left and came back with a new set of clothes for Mei.

"We'll be right back with something to eat," Xue said as she left with Mei.

" You haven't eaten anything either. Bring something for yourself as well. " Long Chen said just before they exited the bedroom.

Mei and Xue soon came back with trays in their hands which they placed on the table.

"Let's eat together." Long Chen said as he sat on a chair.

After their initial hesitation, they both sat as well. All of them finished eating soon.

"I have something to tell you," Long Chen said softly as he finished eating.

"What is it, master?" Xue asked softly as she gazed in Long Chen's eyes.

"First of all, you don't need to call me master. Our relationship had developed a lot more than that ... and secondly, I'll be leaving the city for quite some time. Don't tell mother, but I will be going on a journey to strengthen my cultivation through experience. I'll be back soon. I won't be able to see you for some time but I'll definitely be back before long. I can't tell others because they will obstruct me but I wanted to inform you before I go. Keep it to yourselves though" Long Chen said softly as he stared in their eyes.

They both gazed at Long Chen with a shocked expression but silently nodded their head albeit with a sad expression on their faces.

"Can you prepare some food for my long journey without anyone knowing? Just bring everything you can in my courtyard. I'll be getting others things ready "Long Chen said as he stood up and walked towards the exit.

He left his courtyard and went to the Skill Hall.

"Since the moment I broke through to Spirit Establishment Realm, I was allowed to choose a Spirit grade skill from Skill Hall. Unfortunately, I never had the time nor the opportunity to get one. I should utilize my time the best I can while I'm still here. " Long Chen muttered as he stood at the entrance of the Skill Hall.

He entered the hall and saw many people standing near bookshelves reading Martial skill books on the ground floor. Long Chen could see that all of them were body refining realm Cultivators. Skill Hall Elder sat on a chair a few meters ahead of the door.

"Young Master, you're here!" Skill Hall Elder stood up as soon as he saw Long Chen enter. He wouldn't have said that before, but Long Chen had recovered and most importantly once again proven a Genius so he had to be respectful.

"Elder Gan, I'm here to choose a skill for myself," Long Chen said with a smile as he faced the elder.

"Of Course you can! I was waiting for you to come here. You haven't arrived to choose a Spirit grade skill for yourself while everyone already knows that you have broken through to Spirit Establishment Realm a long time ago. It's good that you're finally here. Do you want my help in selecting a suitable Spirit grade skill for yourself? " Elder Gan said with a flattering smile on his face.

" It's fine Elder Gan, I can choose one for myself," Long Chen said lightly to Elder Gan.

" There's no test in Skill hall to choose a skill, unlike the treasure Hall. I can read for myself and select a skill. " Long Chen further said with a smile.

" Of course, It'll be as young master wishes. There are barriers at the entrances of every floor. You can easily pass three second-floor entrance barrier. You'll find Spirit grade skills there. Take your time but you can only select one skill " Elder Gan said with a smile as he pointed towards a barrier on one side of the hall. Stairs were partially visible behind that barrier.

Long Chen walked towards that barrier.

"I'm sure you'll know about it but I'll just remind you once again. Don't touch the barrier of third-floor entrance or you will get hurt by it. Only gold core realm Cultivators can pass that" Elder Gan said to Long Chen who continued ahead. He walked back to his chair and sat down.

"Never expected it to contain so many books! " Long Chen exclaimed as he saw the books on the second floor.

'It's completely empty. Hmm... I guess there isn't any Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator who hadn't chosen a spirit grade skill already.

Ignoring the second floor and the books, Long Chen walked towards the barrier of third-floor entrance.

Chapter 134 - 134: Richest Young Master

Ignoring the second floor and the books present there, Long Chen decided to walk towards the barrier of third-floor entrance instead.

Easily passing through it, He soon stood on the third floor. It was completely void of people as well and there were only two books here.

"There are only two books here? Nope, people must have taken them out to read before me." Long Chen muttered

"Divine Sword Formation!" Long Chen picked up one of the two books and read it's title.

" Making a formation of five flying swords to attack the opponents. Nice skill but it requires many resources to buy swords and materials to make them suitable for this skill "Long Chen muttered as he read its description.

He soon walked up to the next book and finished reading it as well.

"Hmm, I can take both of these, but I should be fair and leave one for the clan. I only like one of them anyways"Long Chen muttered as he selected one of the two books and placed it in his storage ring.

"I'm stronger than an average gold core realm cultivator so maybe..." He looked at the entrance of the fourth floor full of uncertainty on his face. In the end, he decided to give it a try as well.

He walked towards the barrier and touched the barrier but felt a sharp shock run throughout his body making him immediately retract his hand in a hurry. He gave up on the idea and walked back to the second floor.

He rummaged through the second floor before choosing a skill he liked. He walked back to the first floor.

The Skill Hall Elder once again stood up as he saw Long Chen come back from the second floor.

"Can I see the skill you chose?" Elder Gan asked. Long Chen immediately handed him the book he selected from the second floor with a smile. After reading its name, Elder Gan gave the book back to Long Chen. Without saying a word, Long Chen exited the Skill Hall leaving Elder Gan there alone with a thoughtful expression on his face.

Long Chen went to his mother's courtyard next. He had a casual talk with her without mentioning him leaving in the slightest.

After spending over half an hour with his mother, Long Chen left, but he didn't forget to take one last look at her before leaving her courtyard. Sima Ziyi had a weird feeling about all this but she couldn't understand why it was like that.

Long Chen then walked towards the Grand Elder house. Grand Elder Long Mu was the one who used to manage the finance of the entire amount of money spent on clan and its members.

"Grand Elder," Long Chen said as he saw the Grand Elder exiting his courtyard as soon as Long Chen reached near it.

"What are you doing here little guy" Grand Elder looked at Long Chen as he strode towards him with a smile.

"I'm here to get something from you" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"What do you need? " Grand Elder Long Mu asked with a confused look on his face.

" You manage the finance of the Long Clan Mansion, right? " Long Chen Inquired.

" Indeed, I do so" Grand Elder Long Mu nodded as he said.

"Every clan young master is given a certain amount of money monthly for their spendings by the Finance Hall according to their position in the clan. The grandsons of patriarch get twenty gold coins a month, right? " Long Chen inquired with a smile.

" That's right" Grand Elder Long Mu nodded again.

" So what I wanted was the gold coins I'm owed by the clan. You know I haven't collected my pocket money in the last seven years, right? " Long Chen asked with a smile.

" Hahaha.... so that's what you wanted? Seven years... that's 84 months. So you do deserve 1680 gold coins" Grand Elder Long Mu said with a smile.

" Right" Long Chen nodded with a slight smile.

"You know the medicines you were fed in these even years were way more extensive than that" Grand Elder Long Mu Chuckled.

"That's a different matter, isn't it? If one of my cousins gets sick, he'll be given medicines by the clan or by using his own monthly pocket money? Both are different expenses and separate from each other entirely" Long Chen grinned as he replied.

"Alright little guy, I'll give you the portion you deserve. Although it's a big amount, I've been collecting your Twenty gold coins pocket money separately every month just in case you recovered and needed it" Grand Elder Long Mu Chuckled as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Come with me," Grand Elder Long Mu said as he walked in a certain direction. Long Chen followed him and soon reached a huge residence. Long Chen recognized it as the Finance Hall. Grand Elder Long Mu entered inside and came out after a few minutes with a small sack in his hands.

"Inside it are sixteen white gold coins and eighty gold coins. As you know, a white gold coin is worth hundred gold coins so that brings the total sum inside to 1680 gold coins" Grand Elder Long Mu said with a smile as he handed the sack to Long Chen.

Long Chen opened the sack and checked for himself. After being satisfied, he thanked the Grand Elder.

"Oh right, Is Sister Xue Ying finished with her secluded cultivation?" Long Chen inquired from Grand Elder.

"Not yet. Did you need something from her?" Grand Elder Long Mu asked with a confused look on his face.

"Nothing, I was just curious," Long Chen said lightly as he left

"Hah, This little guy might be the richest young master in the clan at the moment" Grand Elder Long Mu chuckled as he walked away as well.

Long Chen walked back inside his residence only to find Xue and Mei there with plenty of food already placed there.

"Wow, good work" Long Chen said with a smile as he looked at them.

"When... when will you leave master?" Mei asked as she gazed at Long Chen with an emotional look on her face.

"Tomorrow morning. Everything is ready" Long Chen said softly as he gazed into her eyes.

" There's no need to be sad, I'll be back pretty soon. And I have the whole night to spend time with you two" Long Chen said as he saw the gloomy expression on their face. He walked near them and wrapped one of his arms around each of their waists and pulled them closer.

"Both of you are mine now, and my mother is here too. I'll definitely come back in no time" Long Chen whispered lightly in their ears.

Another night filled with pleasure passed away as early morning arrived. Long Chen sat up from his bed as he saw both of them sleeping.

After taking an extended look at their beautiful sleeping faces, Long Chen got off the bed and taking a letter out from his storage ring, placed it on the table nearby. He exited his bedroom and put all the food in his storage ring. He had already kept his clothes, money and other materials inside long ago. Long Chen walked inside the bathroom and shut the door.

His expression grew serious. His golden eyes turned starry dark as Long Chen waved his right hand and created a spatial crack inside his bathroom. Long Chen Widened the spatial crack with his hands and entered inside it disappearing from his mansion.

Chapter 135 - 135: Leaving Dragon City

It was around 4 am in the morning and the streets of the capital City of Shui were completely void of people except for some guards who were roaming around the city at some specific locations.

A Spatial crack appeared at a certain place in the city. The spatial crack widened until a person came out from inside and landed on the ground.

"It's so dark... am I inside someone's house?" Long Chen muttered as he looked around. The spatial crack behind him disappeared.

"Oh... so I'm in the national library" Long Chen muttered as he saw a long line of Bookshelves filled with books inside the large hall. Although it was visibly darker, Long Chen was able to see the stuff around him pretty clearly after a short time.

"I thought about exiting at the small Street near this library as I had visited that place before but unexpectedly this portal again screwed up by a small distance and sent me inside the library. If I'm not wrong, this library should be locked at this time " Long Chen muttered with an annoyed expression as he thought about his skill.

"Whatever, I will just exit this place even if I have to destroy some property. I'll pay them back later " Long Chen muttered.

He walked towards the door. Long Chen tried opening it but confirmed his suspicions as the door was actually closed just as he had anticipated.

"He felt irritation at being locked in a library. Without thinking anything, Long Chen blasted the door away as he comfortably exited the library.

Some of the guards heard the noise as they came running towards the library but they were startled to see the door of the library lying far away from where it sound have been. They looked nearby yet found no one there. Whistles started sounding loud as guards tried to notify others.

Some of them checked inside the library while others kept looking around trying to find the person who did it but the person who did it had already gone too far.

Long Chen flew through the empty streets rapidly as he kept using his divine sense to keep an eye on his surroundings. He didn't want anyone to see him fly yet couldn't waste much time either. So he took the risk to fly while

keeping his caution. Thankfully, he didn't find anyone along the path he took.

Soon, Long Chen was standing near the edge Western territory of Dragon City. He saw a tall wall covering the boundary. Long Chen knew there was a small checking point near here somewhere which kept an eye on people coming and going.

Long Chen made sure that he was far away from this checkpoint as he used his Heavenly Demon Wings once again and crossed the wall easily and reached the other side.

Long Chen found himself in a deep forest. He had already collected the map of Shui and knew that this forest was a shortcut to reach the next city on Long Chen's travel plan. Although the merchants and others used a proper and more secure path that was longer. Although passing through this forest was faster, yet it was full of danger as many Gold Realm beasts were said to reside in this forest.

Long Chen decided to pass through this forest to save time and also because he wanted to train himself through the beasts he would face. Long Chen was a Gold Core Realm Cultivator but he hasn't faced anyone with this cultivation. He thought that practicing with Gold Realm beasts will give him some idea of his strength.

Long Chen continued ahead and walked for over half a day. He met many wild beasts and spirit beasts whom he easily with just one strike.

"Where are all the Gold Realm beasts! " Long Chen let out loudly with a frustrated expression. He had been traveling for so long yet he hadn't met a single Gold Realm beast.

"Silence!! Are you trying to get us killed" Came a voice from nearby. Long Chen looked in that direction only to find an old aged man sitting behind a tree as he looked at him.

"Why?" Long Chen inquired with a confused look on his face.

"This is the territory of Profound ice bear! it's a Gold Core Realm beast. I am a first stage gold core realm Cultivator yet I'm afraid of that beast while you?... a Sixth Stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator thinks that he can face a Gold Realm beast. Youth ages, immaturity is outgrown, ignorance can be educated and drunkenness sobered but stupid lasts forever. I feel bad for your future kid" The old man commented in a condescending tone.

"A Gold Realm Beast? Long Chen gazed at that old man as he asked.

"Exactly, although profound ice bear is said to have low intelligence, it's strength is really Superior. Facing it bravely only means courting death. Only through traps are they hunted. I'm waiting here for a whole day for him to fall into the trap I laid. He's still sleeping nearby after he wakes up, he'll walk through this path to go to the water source nearby. He'll die by my trap and I'll get rich" The old man said with a proud smile as he looked at Long Chen.

"In which direction is he sleeping in?" Long Chen inquired again.

"That one, why are you scared? You should be! Don't go in that direction if you don't want to wake him up and die like an idiot" The man smiled as he commented and pointed towards a direction.

Long Chen smiled as he started walking towards the direction the old man pointed at, stunning the old man who watched him ignore his warning.

"Stupid, But it's fine. I was tired of waiting all day as well. Now profound ice bear will definitely wake up and look for water after eating him up" The old man smiled as he watched Long Chen's back getting further and further away.

"There it is" Long Chen spotted the profound ice bear through his divine sense after walking for a short while. He hurriedly strode in that direction and reached near the profound ice bear. The ice bear heard steps coming towards him as he woke up. Opening his completely white eyes, he gazed at Long Chen.

The profound ice bear had completely white eyes as well as Snow White fur while his claws were black in color contrasting his white color. It was over three meters tall with a chubby build.

"It's at that realm?" Long Chen thought with a wry smile as he looked at the bear's cultivation.

Chapter 136 - 136: The Heart Of Evil

"It's at that realm?" Long Chen thought with a wry smile as he looked at the bear's cultivation.

"He's only at 3rd strange gold core realm. It's not enough to make me utilize my full strength and get a good enough practice but I will look at the bright side. It's the right opportunity to test out my physical cultivation I guess" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he walked towards the Profound Ice Bear.

The bear roared as he saw a human walking towards him. It hurriedly started running towards Long Chen as he swung its claws towards him.

Long Chen dodged that attack as he tilted his body sideways and punched the chest of profound ice bear. Long Chen had decided to use his full strength which stunned him as he was able to push the profound ice bear a step back. Long Chen couldn't help but smile at this realization.

"So my physical strength is somewhat comparable to a gold core realm cultivator albeit a lower stage one. It's still quite good though, as I was able to achieve this strength so quickly, but the downsides are concerning as well" Long Chen smiled as he gazed at the Profound Ice Bear.

The profound ice bear roared in anger as he kept attacking Long Chen with all his strength. Their clashes continued for hours as Long Chen decided to not use his cultivation and practice with Profound Ice Bear to gain proper control over his physical strength.

The roars of profound ice bear kept echoing throughout a large section of the forest attracting the attention of nearby beasts. The weaker Beasts decided to stay away while some stronger beasts started going in that direction to check things out.

"Hmm... Why is he roaring for so long? Has another gold realm beast infiltrated his territory and attracted his attention? That must be it. Profound Ice Bear killed that kid and the smell of his blood must have attracted another gold realm beast. " The old man who told Long Chen about the profound ice bear heard the roars as well and made up his own assumptions.

"Whoever wins this battle, if he can fall into my trap, it would be so amazing. I'll get to claim two beasts at once" The old man chuckled as he said.

Long Chen continued his battle for quite some time enjoying his fight until the Profound Ice Bear fell to the ground unable to fight more. His body was full of wounds and his snow-white fur had become red because of his own blood.

"Hah... looks like this fight is over" Long Chen smiled as he walked towards the ice bear. He was about to attack him one last time but the profound ice bears eyes closed before he could even attack. Long Chen checked with a confused expression on his face only to find that the Profound Ice Bear had died.

"You fought a good battle" Long Chen let out as he kept the body of Profound Ice Bear in his storage ring.

Long Chen was about to walk away when he sensed more beasts coming towards him. Long Chen smirked as he took his mountain destroyer out and got ready to battle.

Two hours passed, The old man was still hiding and waiting behind a tree as he kept gazing in a certain direction. Suddenly, his eyes opened wide with shock and he couldn't help but stand up after he saw Long Chen coming back with his clothes covered in blood.

"This... this... how are you still alive?" The old man asked in a shocked expression on his face as he looked at Long Chen.

"Aren't you alive as well?" Long Chen answered with a smile.

"But... didn't you go to Profound Ice Bear? Oh... I understand. When you went there, he must have been fighting another gold realm beast and you decided to hide somewhere" The old man smirked as if he understood everything.

"Since you were able to walk back alive, it means that none of the beast won and both the beasts killed each other and the blood on your clothes... Did you search their corpses and take their beast core out? That must be it!! You can't leave such an expensive thing back!!! " The old man said with a wide grin on his face without giving Long Chen a chance to speak.

" You are quite lucky, You survived while also getting the cores of gold realm beasts. You know that this good luck can get you killed, right? If you went to a shop to sell those cores, they will just kill you to get those cores instead of buying them from you. " The old man said with a smile.

" I don't think they will" Long Chen let out as he gazed at the old man

"You can never understand the heart of evil people! I'll help you! Why don't you give those cores to me, I will purchase them from you. I'll give you two

silver coins for each core! " The old man let out with a smirk as he looked at Long Chen.

"Aren't cores of gold realm beasts worth more than at least ten gold coins? " Long Chen answered back with a curious look on his face.

" They are... but only for strong people. For you, they are worth nothing and will only attract your death sooner. I am being quite generous by giving you two silver coins" The old man said as he looked at Long Chen like a predator which was looking at its prey.

"Sorry, but I am not interested in selling anything," Long Chen said with a smile as he continued on his path.

"You'll have to leave those beast cores behind even if you're not interested!!! " The old man said as he took his sword out

"You were right. It is difficult to understand the heart of Evil people... in fact, it's much easier to wipe them off the face of this planet instead" Long Chen said with a smile as he disappeared from his spot for a brief moment and appeared again right where he stood.

He turned back as he continued on his journey.

The old man started groaning behind like he wasn't able to speak. A cut appeared in his neck which started spreading all around his neck. Blood started coming out from those wounds. The old man struggled to use his hand to hold his neck but by the time his hands reached his neck, his head had already fallen to the ground with eyes wide open.

Long Chen traveled through this forest for over a day, during which he faced many gold realm beasts. He fought most of the beasts with just his physical strength unless the beast was too strong and he feels like he would not be able to win. Only then would Long Chen take his sword out and slaughter those beasts. He spent the night on a tree as he used his hammock again. He fed his egg and cultivated. Morning arrived as he continued ahead.

After a short time, Long Chen finally exited the forest as he got the view of the road.

"The next city isn't far away now" Long Chen muttered with a smile. He walked far away from the road and used his divine sense to see if anyone was nearby but he did not spot anyone.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" Long Chen muttered as two beautiful wings appeared behind his back. He started flying ahead at rapid spread.

"The city walls of Moonsilver city! I'm finally here" Long Chen muttered as he saw the boundary of a city. He came down to the ground as his wings disappeared. He walked back towards the road and continued the journey ahead on legs.

_____End of chapter_____

IMPORTANT: Author note: The next three chapters(137,138,139) will have two versions. The real version will be released on webnovel on my daily schedule while the alternate reality version will be released on my discord.

Link: <https://discord.gg/vEXYCKM> (will only work when written with proper capitalization as mentioned)

Chapter 137 will only have a slight but important change in both versions while 138 is where the things really deviate. I hope you enjoy this small twist. I'm excited for you to see it. Especially 138 and 139

Chapter 137 (alternate reality) will be released on my discord an hour after the official release of chapter 136. Similarly, chapter 138(alternate reality) will be updated on discord half an hour after the official release of chapter 138.

Chapter 137 - 137: Thief

"The city walls of Moonsilver city! I'm finally here" Long Chen muttered as he saw the boundary of a city. He came down to the ground as his wings disappeared. He walked back towards the road and continued the journey ahead on legs.

He had already changed his blood-stained clothes and was now wearing a cleaner set of clothes. He had decided to not wear the Long clan robe on top of his clothes as he didn't want to become the center of attention. He wasn't afraid of anyone knowing his identity as he was already out of his city and had succeeded in his purpose. He reached the entrance of the city after walking for a short duration. As Long Chen reached the entrance, a merchant carriage was already in front of him waiting to gain entrance so he decided to wait.

"You need to pay the tax to enter the city. Five bronze coins" A short stout man stood in front of the carriage as he talked to the carriage owner.

"I don't think we need to" The carriage owner smiled as he brought out a paper from his pocket.

"It's permission from the royal family allowing our merchant company to gain entry and exit from every city of this kingdom without paying any money for entrance.

"Che... You can go inside!" The short man snorted with an annoyed expression as he said to that man with a grumpy voice.

The carriage owner walked back to his carriage as it entered the city under the watchful eyes of the guards.

"Hmph... We had such a good opportunity to gain some extra money but that permit ruined everything for us. Such a bad day for me. Not a single person entered the city today" The guard commented with an angry expression.

"Oh, you are here as well?" The guard noticed Long Chen coming towards him as his face changed to an indifferent one.

"You need to pay two bronze coins as tax to gain entry in this city" The guard commented with a grin on his face.

"I don't have any change, also, isn't the entrance fee to every city of this kingdom only a single bronze coin as decided by his majesty? Only royal

capital is allowed to collect more bronze coins" Long Chen said as he looked at the fat guard with a thoughtful look on his face.

'hmph... He's not someone special as he walked here. They're no worry about collecting more' the guard thought as he gazed at Long Chen.

" The tax money is decided by the city guards!!! You need to pay to gain entry. " The guard sneered as he let out.

" Can this allow me entry? " Long Chen said as he brought a golden medallion out of his pocket and showed it to the guard.

"This ... this golden medallion... dragon symbol... isn't it the golden medallion of one of the supreme clans, Long Clan? " Another guard standing nearby exclaimed as he noticed this medallion.

"Indeed... but isn't it only given to the direct descendants of the Long clan of Dragon City? The ones in the branch family are given silver medallions. He's a direct descendant?" The short guard exclaimed in disbelief.

" No... it's not possible. You think I am stupid? You think you can fool me?" The stout guard let out with a sneer.

"Where did you find this golden medallion? There's no chance that you are a direct descendant of Long Clan. Long Clan is one of the strongest and richest clans of this kingdom. They have many Luxurious carriages. One for every direct descendant. There's no way a kid from their direct bloodline will walk to get here. Even their branch family members travel by carriages. You didn't think of this when you lied, did you? Tell me the truth!! Where did you find this medallion? " The guard snorted as he said with a smirk like he understood everything.

' If I am able to get this medallion to its original owner, I'll definitely be awarded. I will be rich" The guard thought to himself.

" Oh... you caught me. I killed the real owner of this medallion with my weak cultivation and stole it" Long Chen snorted in annoyance.

" You dare joke with me!!! " The guard roared in anger.

" How dare you joke about killing a direct descendant of a supreme clan!! Even the strongest clan in our Moonsilver city treats them with respect and you dare joke about them!!! " The guard let out loudly as he stared at Long Chen with anger.

More guards slowly kept arriving at the entrance as they gazed at this scene trying to understand what was happening.

"Don't get angry. However he got it, but It's the truth that he brought out a supreme clan medallion. We must handle this matter carefully as we can't afford a mistake when it comes to a supreme clan. Let's bring him to the chief for interrogation. Let's not do anything stupid on our own" Another one of the guards commented in between as he saw his partner getting angry. In contrast to the short and stout guard, this guard was quite tall.

" We don't need to interrogate him He must have stolen it from somewhere. Arrest this thief" The stout guards didn't listen to his partner as he let out.

"You know, I am trying really hard to stay calm. I really hope you people don't make me angry as I don't want to kill all of you over such a stupid reason" Long Chen said as he started getting angry. His smile disappeared from his face as he faced the guards.

"You!!!!..." The stout guard's face turned red in anger as he gazed at Long Chen but a voice interrupted what he wanted to say.

"What's all this commotion about?" A heavy voice sounded. People looked towards that voice only to see a well-built man walking towards them from inside the city. He looked at the young boy standing outside and then at the guards facing him.

"What's happening here?" He asked the guards.

" Chief Heng! " The guards gazed at the man as they bowed slightly. This man was the chief of Moonsilver city guards

"Chief Heng! This guy here is impersonating a Long Clan direct descendant. He showed us the golden medallion of Long Clan to gain entry into this city without paying but he forgot that to impersonate someone from the Long clan, you need more than just one thing. He didn't have the Long clan carriage and got here by walking." The stout guard explained with an ugly smile on his face.

"A golden medallion of Long clan" The man frowned as he looked at Long Chen.

_____End of chapter_____

Important Note: Rise of demon god Chapter 138(alternate reality released) . This is where things start going crazy.

Link: <https://discord.gg/vEXYCKM> (will only work when written with proper capitalization as mentioned)

Also next novel sneak peek, read author note below

Chapter 138 - 138: Slaughter

"Give me that medallion, I will check it for myself. I have seen medallion of Long Clan before" He gazed at the medallion in Long Chen's hands as he extended his hand towards him and asked.

"You people are wasting my time." Long Chen commented in a serious tone but he still decided to throw the medallion towards him.

The chief of guards caught the medallion as he started observing it carefully.

"Hmm... it does look real. Some of the Long clan's direct descendants have come here before and thankfully I got the chance to meet them. It's the same medallion that they showed me on my request. There's no doubt that this medallion is real." He let out after observing the medallion for a brief moment.

"But... it is true as well that none of the Clan's direct descendants will walk to get here. It's a known fact that everyone who can afford to hold this medallion will have a special carriage assigned to them. It's strange that you don't. Why is that? Is it because It's possible stealing a medallion but impossible stealing a whole carriage from them? Maybe you found it somewhere?" Chief Heng commented as he gazed at Long Chen.

"You can't be the real owner of this medallion. I will keep this medallion with me and get it to its rightful owner. Guards!!! capture this impersonator for interrogation. I find him guilty of impersonating, stealing and of trying to cheat the city guards. Interrogation will make things clear " The man let out as he gazed at Long Chen. The guards started walking towards Long Chen.

The Chief gazed at Long Chen without taking his focus off him.

Long Chen was already pretty angry. He felt like he would lose control of his anger if things kept going on like this. He decided on a new plan. He decided to walk back as he thought that it was easier to pass this city through unofficial means then dealing with these irritating people. He decided to pass the city walls later using his Heavenly Demon Wings.

"Can you give my medallion back to me? I don't want to enter the city anymore. I will go back" Long Chen let out as he gazed at Chief Heng.

"Hahaha... You really think you can walk back? Now that you are caught, you want to escape? You have only confirmed what I already knew! You are an impersonator. Show this criminal the strength of us city guards. Capture him fast!" He ordered the guards with a smile.

The short and stout guard, who had stopped Long Chen before, was the first guard who started running towards Long Chen with a brutal look in his eyes.

Long Chen's Heart Demon gazed upwards as he smiled inside Long Chen's Martial Space. Long Chen's eyes were already filled with rage which intensified. Long Chen finally lost his control. Without thinking anything, he brought his mountain destroyer out and swung it towards the hand of the guard that was running towards him. Long Chen soon changed the direction of his sword as he swung it in another direction.

Before anyone could understand anything, Long Chen was already standing still with a sword in his hand. The hand which was reaching towards him fell to the ground detached from the body. But that wasn't enough as the head of that guard soon fell to the ground as well. His body was the last to fall to the ground as blood flowed everywhere. Long Chen wanted to walk forward and kill everyone standing in front of him but using his last bit of consciousness, he was trying to control his urge to kill. He just stood there with a sword in his hand fighting his inner battle. Long Chen knew that if anyone tried to attack him at this moment, he would lose to his urge to kill and will slaughter everyone here. He tried his hardest to stop himself while hoping that these people don't do anything silly.

Everyone present there couldn't help but stop in their tracks with a scared expression as they saw this scene yet all of them took their weapons out. The Chief of guard frowned as he stared at Long Chen.

"He dared kill one of us!!! Protect this city!!! Kill him right here and right now!!! That's an order!!!" Chief Heng roared in anger as he ordered his guards. The guards following the orders standing running towards Long Chen with their weapons in their hands.

Long Chen gazed at what was happening in front of him as his anger intensified. He gave up controlling himself as he stared at the guards attacking him.

He gripped his sword tightly as he finally moved from his spot. He used his full speed in anger which made it difficult for the guards who had lower cultivation to see him clearly. Bodies started falling to the ground one after another as Long Chen kept saying the guards.

Chief Heng started feeling scared as he saw Long Chen's speed and strength. His difficult to see movements and his ease in killing the guards one after

another horrified him. He realized that the person who looked like a kid was actually a devil in human form.

Leaving everything behind, he starting running back. But before he could take a step inside the city, a sword stabbed his heart from behind.

Long Chen pulled back the sword from his heart and stabbed his heart again before finally taking his sword out. He turned back as he gazed at the blood-filled ground which was full of dead bodies for a brief moment. He stayed there blankly as his anger started decreasing.

Gaining his somewhat calm mind back, Long Chen started his full speed, as he started running away from the road. He entered the surrounding forest again. He sat on the ground with the support of a tree as he stared ahead and started thinking about the things he did.

Ten minutes had passed, as a beautiful carriage could be seen coming towards the entrance of the Moonsilver city. Two guards on horses were leading the carriage as it's protectors.

The beautiful carriage stopped in front of them as both the guards got off their horses and gazed at the gruesome scene ahead.

Chapter 139 - 139: I'll Kill Them All

The beautiful carriage stopped in front of them as both the guards got off their horses and gazed at the gruesome scene ahead.

The doors of the beautiful carriage opened as a graceful girl, dressed in green stepped out of the carriage.

"What's happening? Why did we stop?" She asked as she gazed at the guards standing in front of her.

"Miss Ruo, there a troublesome matter. There are many dead bodies ahead of us. From their clothes, I think they are the City guards of the Moonsilver city." One of the Qin Clan's guards told her with a respectful demeanor.

"Hmm?" She muttered as she started walking ahead. She looked at the gruesome scene ahead with her own eyes which made her frown. She could see many bodies lying on the ground, most of them missing a part of their body. She soon looked at the body lying closest to the entrance as her attention was attracted by something lying near the body. She walked ahead followed behind by her guards.

She stepped towards the entrance of the city as she walked through the field of dead bodies. She reached near the object that attracted her attention and picked it up.

"It's ... Long Clan" She muttered as she looked at the Golden Medallion with a thoughtful expression. She grabbed the medallion tightly in her hands as she walked back to her carriage.

"Move the bodies blocking our path. Let's enter the city. We need to at least inform them about their guards dying " She ordered just as she reached near the carriage. She took one last look at the field with a thoughtful look on her face before she entered her carriage and closed the door.

Long Chen stayed sitting as his back rested on a tree. He looked ahead with a blank expression on his face as he thought about everything he did today. He remembered every person he killed today, including the guards who arrived later and just followed orders.

"I killed innocent people under the influence of this thing inside me. I should feel sad, feel disgusted at murdering people yet... I feel nothing. I feel no

remorse. Am I still who I'm supposed to be? Is this what my life is supposed to be? Killing people like a demon who's unable to control himself? I... I can't even control my emotions. I feel like I am losing myself" Long Chen muttered as he held his head.

Xun appeared near him as she sat on the ground right beside Long Chen.

"I... lost. I lost to my anger. I can't control my heart demon" Long Chen looked at Xun as he said with a melancholic smile.

" I can understand what you might be feeling as I've seen a different yet similar scene a long time ago. But you don't need to feel bad about it. A Cultivator's path is often filled with bloodshed since the moment he decides to walk on the path of greatness. Some people have destinies greater than themselves. They must kill everyone who stands in their path to reach their destination... to reach where they are supposed to be." Xun said with a smile as she looked in Long Chen's eyes.

" Even if they decide to give up on their journey, their lives will only get worse as they are again dragged into this vicious cycle of bloodshed by circumstances. " She said softly as she looked towards the sky with a reminiscent expression on her face.

" If you hadn't gotten this legacy, you might have had a chance to live a comparatively normal life. You might have been mocked by the clan for being a fallen genius but your life would have been free of bloodshed, until the moment a catastrophe fell on your clan. You would have watched them get killed as you cursed your weakness. But you aren't normal! You are someone who's destined to stand above the heavens. Bloodshed had been written in your destiny since the moment you found this ring" Xun continued as she looked at the ring in Long Chen's hand.

"So I need to become a killer? become a demon? that's my destiny?" Long Chen asked as he gazed into her eyes.

"I am not saying that you need to become a demon standing against the whole world. I am not saying that you need to slaughter the whole world. But... you must become a demon for your enemies and the ones who block your path. You must slaughter the ones obstructing your path to greatness. You must kill the ones who stand between you and your goal. It is a brutal world. You need to kill if you don't want to die " Xun said with her eyes full of determination.

"You have seen the evil of the human heart, but they are not the only ones. No one in this world is good or bad, it's all about self-interest. When people try to hurt you or your family, it's all for their self-interest. Will you stand still and watch them take everything from you? or will you pick up your weapon and slaughter every last one of them?" Xun said as the intensity of her voice increased.

"I'll kill them all" Long Chen replied as he gazed at Xun.

"That's right! Killing to protect one is not bad... killing those who try to hurt you, whether physically or through other means, is not bad either. Those people were in the wrong. All you wanted was to gain entry, yet their judgment, their greed and desire to suck up to Long Clan made them attack you. I am glad you killed them all, or you wouldn't be worthy of master's inheritance!!! You wouldn't be worthy of being Junior Martial Brother of Tian Shen!!! And not importantly, You wouldn't be able to live in this cruel world for long if you kept controlling yourself from killing and kept such a weak mindset" Xun continued as she looked at Long Chen.

"Although you think that you went overboard by killing all the guards when you were under the influence of your heart demon, but it was a necessity. I would say that the heart demon did you a favor as you can't leave your enemies alive even if they were just following orders. Without becoming brutal, without creating fear, you can't gain strength to protect all that you hold dear" Xun said with a gentle smile as she gazed in Long Chen's eyes.

Long Chen gazed at her face as he couldn't help but smile slightly. He felt like his heart had become lighter. He reached his hand out towards Xun's face but his hand went through as he touched nothing.

"You can't touch me in the real world. I am not a real person" Xun said with a smile yet little sadness could be seen in her eyes.

"Not yet..." Long Chen muttered.

"Hey, are you going to stay here all day long? Don't we have a destination to reach? We don't have all day to waste by sitting here" Xun chuckled as she said.

Chapter 140 - 140: Familiar

" Hey, Are you going to sit here all day long? Don't we have a destination to reach? We don't have time to waste by sitting here" Xun chuckled as she said.

Long Chen stood up as he started walking towards the city. He soon reached the boundary of the Moonsilver city after walking for a short time. But this time, instead of going towards the official entrance of the city, he walked away from it. He stepped near the wall as he used his divine sense to check if the other side was empty of people or not.

He sensed a few people on the other side of the wall making him give up on crossing through here and walk further ahead. He kept checking with his divine sense and soon found a spot that was empty on the opposite side of the wall.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" He muttered as two wings made of Qi appeared behind him. One wing being pitch black in color while the other one shining golden. Long Chen flew in the air as he easily crossed the walls of the city and landed on the other side.

He continued on his journey by walking through the streets of Moonsilver city. After walking for a short time, he reached a wide road which looked like the main road of the city. Many shops could be seen on either side of the road but all of them were closed. Some shops and places which had confidence in themselves and their strength were opened as well but had no visitors. As not a single person was walking outside to use the services of those places. In fact, the whole city looked empty. Other than the few guards whom Long Chen saw roaming around the city, there weren't any normal civilian in the open.

Long Chen continued walking ahead and soon he finally saw a normal person. Long Chen began walking towards him.

"Why is this city empty today? Long Chen inquired as he reached near the man.

" Little guy, what are you doing out in the open. Also, how come you don't know about such a big event. Didn't your parents tell you about it and warn you to not go out today?" The man asked with a curious look on his face.

" What event?' Long Chen inquired as he looked at the man with ignorance.

"The city guards of our Moonsilver city were killed outside the city gates today. Even the Chief of guards was killed brutally by that demon. The demon who did this has not been caught yet. He might have already entered the city or ran back to the forest. The general public is quite afraid as the panic is at its peak. " The man told Long Chen as he looked at him. Long Chen's expressions changed slightly but quickly recovered as he controlled himself.

"Why are you out in the open then? aren't you afraid of that 'demon' ?" Long Chen asked with a slight smile on his face.

" I wouldn't have come out either if it wasn't for my daughter's health. She's sick and I was going to invite physician duanmu or at least get some medicine for her. I can't let her suffer because of my fear. For her safety, I'm ready to take any risk. Also, it's not like there's actually much risk. I believe that the killer must have already ran away as the whole city is on high alert. Guards are everywhere and the strongest Cultivators of our city are also inside this city and will come to help in case of a commotion inside the city. The killer wouldn't dare step inside the city. " The man said to Long Chen as he tried to comfort himself.

" Oh, thanks for telling me. I hope your daughter gets well soon" Long Chen said with a smile.

" Thank you," The man said as he walked ahead.

Long Chen continued his journey to the other side of the city on legs. He tried to avoid guards whenever he saw one nearby through his divine sense but if he couldn't avoid them, he tried to any innocent. Using heaven's shroud, he had further decreased what others could see as his Cultivation. Now he was projecting himself to be the Second stage Spirit Establishment cultivator.

His young age and low cultivation made the guards not doubt him in the slightest. Although they asked a few questions regarding why he was out whenever Long Chen met one, he would always give an excuse with an innocent expression on his face. His journey continued like this as he reached the center of the city.

Moonsilver city contained a few strong clans who were considered as the leaders of this vibrant city. Although they were no way near the level of the supreme families, they were considered quite strong in the Moonsilver city. The Qin Clan branch family was one of those prominent families in this city.

Qin Ruo came to this branch family for an important business-related task of the main family yet she became the one who discovered the dead guards. She went to the branch family of her clan and told them about it as she left everything for them to handle. She decided not to get involved in this matter and let the interested powers of the city deal with it however they desired. She kept the medallion to herself and didn't tell the branch family head anything about it.

Since she was from the Main Family and was an important heir, she was given the best room in the branch family Mansion. This room was beautifully decorated from inside and luxuriously furnished. It was on the first floor of the mansion, overlooking the streets of the city.

Qin Ruo, after resting for a while as she gazed at that medallion, decided to walk to the balcony of the mansion and look at the streets of the city. As she came out, all she saw was an empty street. she looked around but her attention was immediately attracted by the farthest Corner of the street.

She saw a person's back. That person was walking away from her. She found this back familiar. She felt like it was the back of someone she saw not too long ago. The back of a person who stood tall like a mountain as he faced the Third Prince with a fierce sword in his hand in the Long Clan gathering. The person who shocked everyone with his strength.

"Stopp!!!"She yelled as loud as she could but that silhouette didn't stop. She felt like her voice wasn't reaching him because of the distance. She hurriedly left the room and started running towards the exit.

The Qin Clan branch family has decided to invite all the prominent family heads to discuss today's events and how they were to handle it. Heads of all the families came with their entourage. They had all just entered the meeting room and someone was about to close the door when they saw a girl running in a hurry. She was followed behind by two guards who were running after her.

The Qin Clan branch family head recognized her as he started following her to find out the reason that was enough to make the heir of the supreme clan run in a hurry. Seeing Qin clan members follow the girl, other Clan's members also started doing the same.

A strange scene occurred on the streets of the Moonsilver city. A girl running in a hurry followed behind by a crowd of people, including the heads of the most prominent clans of Moonsilver city.

_____End of chapter_____

Note: Chapter 139(alternate) posted on discord, ending the series of this part

<https://discord.gg/vEXYCKM>

Chapter 141 - 141: That Could Be My Family

A strange scene occurred on the streets of the Moonsilver city. A girl running in a hurry followed behind by a crowd of people, including the heads of the most prominent clans of Moonsilver city.

Qin Ruo ran for a long time in search of that familiar silhouette. She reached the spot she saw that figure at and ran even farther but that familiar figure wasn't seen in the slightest.

With a disappointed look on her face, she gave up as she stopped. She couldn't help but be stunned as soon as she turned around. A large crowd of people was standing behind her breathing heavily and more people could be seen running towards them from behind. The people behind her gave a wry smile as they saw her look at them with a strange expression.

"Why are all of you following me?" Qin Ruo asked with an expressionless face as she looked at them.

"Oh, Miss Ruo. You are the heir of our main family in the dragon city. You are our most valuable guest. This city is in a state of confusion right now. When we saw you running in such a hurry, we couldn't help but dread what could have happened to make you so restless. Under the influence of our worries for this city and for your safety, we decided to follow you. I hope you don't mind" The Head of Qin Clan's branch family explained with a wry smile on his face.

"It's nothing for you to be concerned about. I apologize for making everyone worry" Qin Ruo said as she began walking back towards the Qin Clan mansion. Others walked back as well, again making the scene similar. The ones who were still running to catch up to Qin Ruo and others joined them as well with a confused expression on their faces.

Far away from that spot, on the roof of a tall residence, Long Chen was sitting alone as he gazed at Qin Ruo and others leaving that place and walking back.

"Never thought I would see the scene of a guy hiding from a girl again" Xun chuckled as she appeared near Long Chen.

"I am not hiding" Long Chen refuted as he gazed at Xun

"Oh, they why did you not stop when you definitely heard her calling for you? Instead, you decided to ignore her. And when she ran here for you, you

decided to hide up here. If it isn't called hiding from a girl, I don't know what " Xun said with a smirk.

" I'm not hiding from her. I just don't want to see her at this moment. I lost my medallion but thankfully it didn't have my name on it. I don't want anyone to see me here in this city at this time as that might make me a suspect" Long Chen replied with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Oh, why do I feel that it is not the only reason?" Xun said softly as she fell into a deep thought.

"It's time to get going," Long Chen said as he jumped down from the roof after finding the street completely empty.

Long Chen continued walking through the city for half a day as the number of residences started decreasing. It was dusk when he finally reached the edge of the city.

Long Chen was continuing ahead when he saw a small gathering of crowd. Many people in normal clothes were standing there along with many guards. The sound of crying and weeping was clearly audible. Out of curiosity, Long Chen slowly walked towards the gathering of the crowd with a grave expression on his face. Reaching there what he saw shocked him to his core.

Long Chen saw people burying the bodies of the guards that he had killed. People including old men, women, and kids could be seen crying as they gazed at the bodies of their loved ones. A small girl could be seen crying as she called out 'father'. A woman was weeping for her husband.

Even the guards around had tears in their eyes as they saw their friends, whom they had worked with, being buried in the ground. With a heavy heart, Long Chen turned back and left. His emotions were getting out of control as sadness was again engulfing him.

"It's not their family's fault but if I am soft-hearted, that could be my family crying over my grave" Long Chen let out in a serious tone but still pain could be seen in his eyes.

With a heavy expression, Long Chen walked near the boundary wall of the city and using his wings crossed the walls of MoonSilver city as he exited the city. He never said one word in between as he again entered the forest instead of going through the road.

Long Chen hoped to ease his discomfort by drowning himself in battle against stronger beasts. It was a known fact that stronger beasts could be seen, the closer one reached to the edge of Shui as the armies of the kingdom didn't hunt beasts on the border of the kingdom as much as they hunted near the capital city as keeping the capital safe from strong beasts was their first priority. Long Chen knew that every kingdom had a different set of priorities, Unlike Shui, some kingdoms left stronger beasts near the capital so that their younger generation could train and become stronger.

Long Chen only knew about the strength distribution of beasts of his own kingdom therefore he knew that the beasts became stronger as he went further away from the capital city. He was hoping to meet stronger beasts and have a battle to his fullest potential. He wanted to forget everything and lose himself in the battle so that he could perform his best.

Long Chen continued in this forest for more than four hours and fought a few battles before he started feeling slightly better. He decided to rest as he used his hammock and got seated. After feeding the egg, Long Chen began his cultivation for the night. He cultivated for six hours as he used his unnamed cultivation technique.

Long Chen noticed that his cultivation speed was noticeably faster than before.

'Is it because of the blood conversion thing she talked about? If it's like this, I'll definitely break through to the next realm before the time I expected' Long Chen thought but decided to focus on his Cultivation instead of thinking about the reasons.

He continued cultivating for another hour before he decided to stop and take a short nap.

Long Chen woke up the next day, walked through the forest, fought vicious gold realm beasts one after another throughout the day and fed his egg and Cultivated during the night. Things continued like this until the tenth day, Long Chen finally exited the forest. He saw the boundary of the next city.

"Finally out of the forest. The battles of the last ten days had been really beneficial though as I have gained more control over my physical strength and achieved a breakthrough in cultivation. I am a 9th Stage Gold Realm Cultivator now. It will be my sixteenth birthday in a few months. It would be so amazing if I could achieve another breakthrough" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he walked towards the city.

Chapter 142 - 142: 5th Stage Earth Realm

"Finally out of the forest. The battles of the last ten days had been really beneficial though as I have gained more control over my physical strength and achieved a breakthrough in cultivation. I am a 9th Stage Gold Realm Cultivator now. It will be my sixteenth birthday in a few months. It would be so amazing if I could achieve another breakthrough" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he walked towards the city.

He used his regular method of entry in the city as he crossed the boundary using his Heavenly Demon Wings after finding an empty spot through his divine sense instead of going through the official entrance. He crossed the walls as he entered the city. The name of this city was greyfall city. It was the city at the edge of Shui and was only a day's travel from the boundary of the Huanji Kingdom.

"It feels so good to be walking on a crowded street again" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he finally got somewhat cheerful at the sights of streets of the city filled with people. The streets were bustling and the sound of chatting and laughter could be heard everywhere. Long Chen continued walking through the Main Street of greyfall city. He saw many large shops and places. One of these places was what attracted his attention.

"Alchemy Hall" The words were written in large and beautiful words on a beautifully crafted board hanging on top of the place.

Alchemy Hall was something almost everyone in this kingdom knew about. It was one of the biggest forces known in all the kingdoms. Alchemy Hall had a branch in almost every prominent city in the nearby kingdoms. Although it was said to be a fearsome force, it never involved itself in the affairs of the outside world that didn't affect it directly.

The Alchemy Hall had many of the top alchemists affiliated to their branches. Even the best alchemist of Shui, Master Qian, was affiliated with the dragon city branch of the Alchemy Hall. It was said that the branches of the Alchemy Hall in the stronger kingdoms contained even higher ranking alchemists.

Not much was known about the Origin of Alchemy Hall. Many things about it were a complete mystery. No one knew where the Core branch of Alchemy Hall was situated. It was only assumed that the Core of Alchemy Hall was established in an empire but that was only an assumption as no one exactly knew about Alchemy Hall and its backing.

The alchemists of Alchemy Hall were proficient in Refining medicinal plants, spiritual herbs, minerals, and other substances into medicinal pills and elixirs which had all sorts of effects from boosting cultivation, healing wounds, curing poisons, purifying and strengthening the body and much more.

The Alchemy Hall mostly dealt with two things. One was to sell the medicine pills created by alchemists of its branches. They had a wide variety of pills and elixirs they could provide and a large chain of support in the form of other branches to get pills that their members weren't able to make.

The second business of Alchemy Hall was to purchase things. The Alchemy Hall bought everything from medicinal plants, spiritual plants, minerals, beast materials and other substances that could be used in alchemy.

What Long Chen wanted to do was exactly that. He wanted to sell the bodies of beasts that he had killed throughout his journey. The bodies of strong beasts were considered a treasure as they contained many things that were a necessity in many alchemy recipes. It was said that the stronger the beast, the better its effects in alchemy. That's why the Alchemy Hall bought bodies of beasts from hunters. This practice helped in two things. Firstly, the Alchemy Hall got the materials they needed. Secondly, the Beast population and their strength in nearby areas were kept in control.

"My age is the real problem" Long Chen muttered as he thought about things carefully. He was too young to sell such a large number of beasts he had collected in his storage ring. He couldn't show his actual age and storage ring either as his young age along with the things he was carrying might cause unwanted eyes to focus on him. If possible, he didn't want to cause a commotion in Alchemy Hall as then Long Chen didn't know much about its background.

"Looks like I will need to create an even bigger commotion to hide my real identity," Long Chen thought about something as he smiled.

He walked to an empty street as he used his mask of mischief to change his face to a different one. Later, he continued looking through the street and finally found a shop that was selling masks. He bought three masks of different colors and designs that could cover his complete face and left. He again found an empty street as he ended the effects of the mask of mischief and wore the normal mask he had just brought. He also changed his clothes to more luxurious ones as he walked out.

Long Chen walked through the street with the mask attracting quite a number of eyes on him. Everyone around him could feel intimidated as they saw Long Chen and felt his aura that was spreading nearby.

Long Chen had used 'Heaven's Shroud' again. Heavens Shroud was a skill Long Chen had learned which was able to fake his cultivation in the eyes of others, even the aura was faked to perfection making others unable to find the reality. It was a special skill that Xun taught him which was able to show cultivation ranging from two major realms lower to one major realm higher than the actual cultivation of the user. Long Chen had finally decided to use this skill for his benefit as he faked his cultivation. He wanted to test things out as he intentionally spread his fake Earth Realm aura for the ones who had a weak cultivation and couldn't see his fake Earth realm cultivation.

"hahaha, You really like bragging, don't you? How does it feel to be a 5th stage Earth Realm Cultivator?" Xun floated near Long Chen as she chuckled.

"It's pretty good, though it's all fake. It's fine as I will soon reach the Earth Realm Cultivation in reality. Think of it as practice" Long Chen muttered with a smile but his mask hid it. Long Chen walked for a while looking around the street.

"Wait a minute!" Long Chen called out in a heavy voice as he stopped a person.

Chapter 143 - 143:I Need To Buy It

"Wait a minute!" Long Chen called out in a fake voice as he stopped a person. He intentionally spread his Earth Realm aura.

Long Chen was 5 feet 8 inches tall with a normal athletic build. He used a heavy voice to make him look older and hide his young age. While his Earth Realm aura was helping him by making others feel that he was a man with years of experience.

The man Long Chen had stopped grew increasingly nervous as he saw a Cultivator in a mask stop him. He didn't know the cultivation of the man who stopped him as his own cultivation was only at Spirit Establishment Realm. All he knew was that this masked man who stood in front of him had a cultivation which was many times higher than the strongest cultivator he had seen. The strongest Cultivator he had ever seen was the patriarch of the strongest clan of Greyfall city who was a tenth stage of gold core realm Cultivator but the aura the man in front of him was emitting was many times stronger than the aura of that tenth stage gold core realm cultivator.

'An Earth realm cultivator! That's what he must be!' He thought as he grew even more worried. Earth realm Cultivators were at the peak of this kingdom when it came to cultivation. Even the King of Shui himself was only at the Earth Realm Cultivation.

"Greetings to respectable master! What can I do for you, sir? " The man said with a nervous expression as he lowered his head respectfully.

"I am new to your kingdom and your city. I am looking for a place to stay. Tell me the best place this city has to offer?" Long Chen said as he faked his voice.

" I can help you with that master! The best inn in this city should be 'Starfall inn'. It's the best inn in this city. Although it's pretty expensive, it provides the best of services and facilities that you can get in any inn of this city. It's the first choice of hunters, guests and people who arrive from other kingdoms." He explained while still keeping his head down

"The greatest feature of this inn is that it's one of the safest places in this city to stay in. Starfall inn is run by the Dong Clan which is the Strongest clan of Greyfall city. The patriarch of the Dong Clan is a tenth stage gold core realm cultivator. That's why no one creates a disturbance in the Starfall Inn owned by Dong Clan. Of Course, No one can stop an Earth Realm Cultivator, like the

great master in front of me, from doing anything" The man let out as he gazed at Long Chen for a brief moment at the end of his sentence.

"Hahaha, You are a Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator, yet you were about to guess my cultivation. You're pretty good" Long Chen said in a heavy tone.

" I'm not worthy of your praise, great master. Master's aura is like the rising sun! Of course, this stupid me was able to guess" The man smiled at he said to Long Chen.

"Oh, looks like I was still excluding my aura," Long Chen said as if trying to act like he wasn't doing it intentionally. He stopped excluding his Earth Realm aura.

"So where is that Starfall inn? " Long Chen inquired as he looked at the man.

"You just have to walk ahead for a few more minutes. Great master will be able to see a place with a board with that name on it. It would be right beside a stable" The man explained.

" Alright, you can go, little friend," Long Chen said as he tried to make his words sound like an old man's words. Long Chen walked ahead as he left that man behind.

"I must tell the patriarch that an Earth Realm Cultivator is in our city. If our Dong Clan can get close to him, it would be so helpful for the clan" The man muttered as he hurriedly walked away.

Long Chen didn't have to walk for long before he reached the place that man told him about.

A board was hung on the top of that building with the words 'Starfall Inn' written in beautiful calligraphy. A small ranch was right beside that building which housed some horses and carriages.

"That's a beautiful horse!" Long Chen muttered as one particular horse inside that stable attracted his attention.

Although its looks were attractive, what Long Chen found interesting weren't it's looks, but it's Cultivation.

"2nd stage Spirit Realm beast" Long Chen muttered. This horse was a Spirit realm beast. There were three horses in that inn that had a spirit realm cultivation. Although this one was at the 2nd stage, the other two were only

in the 1st stage Spirit Establishment realm. Long Chen quite liked this horse. He hoped to have it for his travels.

"I need to buy it" Long Chen muttered as he walked to that stable.

" Who does this horse belong to?" Long Chen asked the man guarding that place.

" These three horses belong to a guest of our Inn. They were pulling that carriage" The man replied with a smile as he pointed at the three Spirit Realm horses and a beautiful carriage nearby.

"That symbol?" Long Chen muttered as he saw a rose symbol on the lavish carriage.

"Isn't that the symbol of the Royal family of the meixu Kingdom? that second rank kingdom on the other side of our kingdom? What are they doing all the way across our kingdom at the borders of ours and Huanji Kingdom? " Long Chen mumbled as he fell in deep thought.

"Whatever, all I need is the horse. I don't need to think about much else" Long Chen muttered as he gave up thinking about it.

"Are they inside?" Long Chen asked the guards.

" Yes, those guests are inside. They are wearing red Daoist robes with that flower symbol on it. " The man told Long Chen.

Long Chen left the guard as he walked back to the Inn. As soon as Long Chen entered the inn, A he attracted the attention of everyone inside. All the eyes turned to look at him.

Chapter 144 - 144: I Have Kids Of My Own

Long Chen left the guard as he walked back towards the Inn. As soon as Long Chen entered the inn, he attracted the attention of everyone inside. All the eyes turned to look at him.

'Quite a few strong ones are here' Long Chen thought as he noticed a few Gold Core Realm Cultivators inside, who couldn't help but frown at the sights of a man who was wearing a mask.

From the information Long Chen collected, he knew that this place had two floors. While the ground floor was a restaurant as well as the bar for people to eat and enjoy, the second floor was the place where rooms were situated for guests to stay in.

Long Chen's gaze was soon captivated by the people in red robes who were sitting at the corner most table enjoying their meal. Long Chen noticed that there were only three people. Amongst the three, One of them was a guy who looked to be 17-18 years old. He had 8th Stage Spirit Establishment realm cultivation. It looked like he had just broken through to the 8th Stage Spirit Establishment Realm a few days ago as his Cultivation Realm seemed unstable. The second person was a girl who also looked to be of similar age, though she had a slightly higher cultivation than him. She was at the peak of the 8th stage Spirit Establishment Realm. The third person was a middle-aged person who was surprisingly a tenth Stage Gold Core Realm Cultivator.

Long Chen walked towards them under the watchful eyes of everyone as he sat on a chair on the same table as those three people.

"Who the hell allowed you to sit with us?" The young girl exclaimed in an arrogant tone as she looked at him conceitedly.

"I can sit anywhere I want and no one here can stop me" Long Chen chuckled as he said. He still faked his voice.

" Oh? Do we know you? Take off that mask and we might recognize you. Why are you hiding your face? It can't be that ugly, right?" The young guy near her chuckled as he said. The middle-aged man didn't say anything as he just stared at Long Chen.

"I don't have time to waste with kids. You look responsible. I will talk with you. I want to buy that 2nd stage Spirit Realm horse from you. Although a Spirit realm beast is too low in my eyes, for my nephew it would be a good gift as his birthday is near and I don't want to give him a stronger beast for

now. You have three spirit horses, the other two will be enough to pull your carriage" Long Chen said with a smile but his mask hid his expression.

"Who the hell do you think you are? Do you think we need money? Do you know who we are? We can buy many people like you without batting an eye" The guy said in a mocking tone as he looked at Long Chen.

"Second Prince Biming! Have some respect for the person in front of you. This sir is an Earth Realm Cultivator!" The middle-aged man said loudly as he gazed at the boy shocking both the guy and the girl sitting with him. Even the people who were sitting on other tables heard him and grew stunned.

"I'm not excluding my aura? Did you guess my cultivation because you can't see through it?" Long Chen smiled as he said.

"That's right. I can't see your cultivation and that can only mean that the Master in front of me has a stronger cultivation than me. Which can only mean Earth realm. " The man said with a smile.

" Well, you're right but I might be using an artifact to hide my cultivation as well" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"I highly doubt that from your confident tone" The man let out with a smile.

"You're right," Long Chen said softly as he excluded his Earth Realm Aura. The whole inn was scared silly as they felt this strong aura. Some even stood up from their seats. The middle-aged man grew even more serious as he came in contact with this aura.

'The person in front of me is way stronger than I imagined. The aura he is excluding is way stronger than his Majesty's. He definitely is stronger than the 7th stage Earth Realm! Such a strong existence in this Kingdom? The king of Shui has the same cultivation as his majesty. They are both at the 7th stage Earth realm, While this guy is stronger than both of them. He is definitely from a first rank kingdom.

The only first rank kingdom nearby is Xuan Kingdom which is holding the sect entrance exams! Is the person in front of me a master from a sect of the Xuan kingdom? ' The middle-aged man thought with a grave look on his face as he felt Long Chen's Aura.

"So what if you're an Earth Realm cultivator of Shui? Our Royal father is one as well. He is as strong, if not stronger, as your king. Do you think you can intimidate us just because we are in your kingdom? " The young boy sneered

at Long Chen. Although the young boy felt this aura, he still faced it bravely as he said to Long Chen. He believed Long Chen to be a Cultivator of Shui. He didn't understand the difference of Long Chen's aura compared to his father's, unlike that Gold Realm Cultivator sitting right beside him.

"Shut up!" The middle-aged man roared in anger as he stared at the prince.

"Senior, I hope you forgive this stupid kid. I apologize for this kid's disrespect towards you. I will tell his Majesty, about his disrespect towards seniors. I'm sure he will be punished for behaving like this in front of Senior. Also, why don't you come to our kingdom as a guest? We would love to treat you like our valuable guest" The middle-aged man muttered with a flattering smile as he looked at Long Chen.

Both the young girl and the boy sitting with him were stunned as they saw the respectful attitude of the man towards Long Chen. They couldn't help but feel that something was wrong.

"It's alright. I don't mind the foolishness of kids. The Young ones are always reckless. I have kids of my own, they always create so much trouble for me, so I can understand" Long Chen Chuckled as he said. Xun, who was right beside him, couldn't help but laugh loudly as she heard Long Chen's bragging but no one could hear her beautiful laugh other than Long Chen

"I would like to thank the senior for his grace. You wanted a horse right, treat that horse as a small gift to Senior from our mingxu kingdom. I wish we were in our kingdom, his majesty would have personally gifted you a way stronger horse. " The middle-aged man said with a bright smile.

"It's alright, I don't need a gift. I can get one myself if I wanted. It's just that I don't have time, that's why I am buying it from you. Generally, a horse like that is worth 15 gold coins. Here, take thirty gold coins as my payment" Long Chen said as he threw a small pouch towards the middle-aged man who grabbed it

Chapter 145 - 145: Troublesome Kid

"It's alright, I don't need a gift. I will buy that from you." Long Chen replied with a smile.

"Generally a horse like that is worth fifteen gold coins. Here, take thirty gold coins as my payment" Long Chen said as he extended his hand towards the man as he held a small pouch.

"You don't need to pay for it, Senior. Just treat this as a small gift... as a token of your friendship with the mingxu kingdom. " The man said with a smile.

"Firstly, I don't take gifts. Secondly, my friendship is not that easy to buy and if you still deny taking my money, I'll have to break your bones until you accept it" Long Chen let out with a smile trying to act like a big shot. The man was stunned. He thought for a while before he began making a movement.

"That's like a good boy" Long Chen smiled as he threw the pouch towards the man who grabbed it.

"By the way, You people are quite far from your little Kingdom, what are you people doing here?' Long Chen asked with curiosity.

"Oh, We are going to the Xuan Kingdom for the Sect Entrance Exam. This young boy here is the Second Prince of Meixing kingdom, Prince Beiming. This young lady is the First Princess of the mingxu kingdom, Princess Beiyu. They are both going to participate in the Sect Entrance Exam being held in the Xuan kingdom. " The man said with a smile as he looked at the boy and the girl sitting beside him.

After hearing their conversation, both the kids had already guessed that the person in front of them was a strong existence that even their Royal father would love to make friends with. They had already corrected their attitude and started acting sincerely.

"I apologize, Master, I lost myself to my arrogance. I ask for great master's forgiveness. " The boy said as he bowed his head and asked for forgiveness. The girl, however, didn't say anything and just kept her head down.

"It's fine, You kids are still young. I was arrogant too when I was young. It's alright to be a little reckless. Just don't let your arrogance affect you. There are mountains beyond mountains. There is no peak of Cultivation as there is always someone stronger. You just need to cultivate with all humility and

respect. Only then can you really earn respect and gain comprehension. " Long Chen said in a serious tone. Although he knew that he was only speaking nonsense as he had already faced too many things in time to know that respect wasn't earned with humility but he just wanted to show off his kindness and wisdom as a senior.

"By the way, isn't there still a long time for the sect entrance exam and the selection process? Why are you going there so soon? " Long Chen asked with curiosity.

" There is still a long time to that but his majesty, the king, told us to go there as early as we could to gain more information about all the sects and other important things. He said that becoming familiar with the place might be helpful in the entrance exam and that cultivation in a first rank kingdom will be more helpful than in the second rank mingxu kingdom." The man explained with a smile.

"Those are some interesting suggestions, he sounds like an interesting king" Long Chen chuckled with praise.

"Anyways, How long are you planning to stay here?" Long Chen inquired.

" Just the night, We'll leave tomorrow morning." The man told Long Chen.

" Oh, I wish you a safe journey. If you have any problem in the Xuan kingdom, just go to any sect and tell them that I sent you. They will help you out" Long Chen lied with a smile.

" Thank you, great Master!! Oh right, I didn't know of the great one's name yet. Can I have to privilege to know what name great master is known as? " The man said with a flattering expression on his face.

"This one here has no existence in this world anymore as I have long stopped getting involved in this world's affairs. But during my younger years, I used to be known as Long Chen" Long Chen smiled behind his mask as he let out.

"Oh, Great Master Chen. I'll remember the name of senior" The man let out with a smile.

"Alright, I will get going now, Remember to leave that horse behind when you go," Long Chen said as he stood up and started walking away.

"Of course we will leave him here. It belongs to you now. Thank you, great master, for everything" The middle-aged man replied with a smile.

"Such a nice man, So strong, yet so down to earth. No attitude whatsoever. " The man smiled as he gazed at Long Chen who stood at some distance from them near the counter.

"Elder Ruan, Is that man really so strong?" First Princess Beiyu said to the man as she saw Long Chen leave the counter and disappear through the stairs of the first floor.

"He is really strong, Princess. Stronger than you can imagine. He is definitely stronger than your father. He is probably a Peak Earth realm Cultivator or even stronger" The man said with a serious look on his face.

"That strong? What is he doing in a second rank kingdom and why is he hiding his face? " First Princess Beiyu inquired again.

" It's not our place to know what such a mighty existence thinks and does and the reason behind their actions. All we need to know is to never offend people like him" Elder Ruan said with a smile.

Long Chen entered the room he was provided and closed the door.

"Two silver coins for a night's stay. Enough for a mortal family to survive through a whole month. Expensive but it's nothing for a strong cultivator who can earn simply by hunting" Long Chen muttered as he took his mask off. He finally felt more comfortable after taking the mask off.

"It doesn't feel good wearing a mask for so long" Long Chen muttered as he sat on the bed.

" Oh, what does feel good then? Bragging about your troublesome kids?" Xun chuckled as she appeared again.

" I wasn't bragging! I really have a troublesome kid. Isn't she standing in front of me right now? " Long Chen let out with a smile.

" Hmm, who?" Xun muttered with a confused look on her face as she looked around before suddenly realizing something.

"Are you calling me a kid?" She said as she puffed up her cheeks in annoyance.

" Of course not, I was talking about someone else," Long Chen said with a smile.

" Oh, Is that so? Who were you talking about? " Xun said as her expressions returned to somewhat normal.

"I quite like acting like a senior, this skill called 'heaven's shroud' is really fun. " Long Chen let out as he changed the topic suddenly.

" Of Course it is, The great one only has great skills in her memory," Xun said as her face filled with pride.

" Can you teach me another useful skill?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"I'm not allowed to... and even if I could, I wouldn't tell you as you already have so many things you need to go through at the moment. You already have so many skills you need to learn. Also, there is alchemy knowledge that you gained but haven't started practicing at all till now. Your Qi cultivation and body Cultivation are also a thing you need to focus on and then there's your heart demon whom you need to learn to control. Don't take too many things as you're already having difficulty with what you have. " Xun told Long Chen in a serious expression.

Chapter 146 - 146: I'm The One Being Disrespectful?

"Don't take too many things as you're already having difficulty with what you have. " Xun told Long Chen with a serious expression.

"I think you might be kind of right. I do need to learn the things I already have. Especially alchemy, that can be really helpful in my future cultivation" Long Chen let out with a smile as he imagined himself creating supreme pills and eating them like candies.

"I have decided! I will start practicing alchemy as well. When I go to sell the beasts in the alchemy Hall, I will purchase some spiritual herbs, medicinal plants and other alchemy materials" Long Chen said with a bright smile.

Xun gazed at Long Chen and couldn't help but facepalm herself as she disappeared.

Long Chen rested in bed for half a day as he finally got to rest in a real bed. Getting up in the evening, Long Chen began his cultivation after taking a shower. He cultivated for three hours without any break after which he further continued his body cultivation by using his heart demon. After a total of five hours of cultivation, he stopped. He took out the egg from his storage ring and started feeding it.

"You know little guy, If we measure the total amount of Qi that I have fed you so far, it would be enough to cause a nuclear explosion. I hope you are as amazing as I'm imagining you to be." Long Chen let out with a smile.

After completing all he had to do, he put the egg back in his storage ring. He again fell down to the bed and fell asleep. After a peaceful comfortable sleep, he woke up in the afternoon.

"Time to get to work" Long Chen muttered as he wore his clothes and covered his face with a mask. He walked out of the room and left the inn. He smiled as he noticed that the carriage of the Mingxu Royal family was missing and so was their horses but the horse he told them about was left behind.

Long Chen walked towards the stable. He stood near that horse and tried touching it but the horse resisted his touch.

"You're a feisty one, aren't you? " Long Chen muttered with a smile as he slowly began spreading his Earth Realm aura making the horse finally submit.

"I can take this one right?" Long Chen asked the person who was guarding the stabbed.

"Yes, sir, the guests who brought this horse here already told me before they left that this horse now belongs to sir, " The guard said as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Take care of this for me for a little while, I'll be back to take it soon," Long Chen said with a smile as he left.

After walking for a while, he soon reached the entrance of the Alchemy Hall. As he entered, he attracted the attention of everyone inside.

"What services do you need sir?" One of the people wearing the Alchemy Hall uniform came towards Long Chen as he asked.

"I need to buy the alchemy materials like spiritual herbs, medicinal plants and more" Long Chen let out with a smile, but his mask hid his expressions.

"Oh, of course! You need to go to the first floor to purchase the materials. I'll bring you there" The person smiled as he looked at Long Chen. Although the man was making Long Chen look suspicious, the Alchemy Hall personnel were highly trained in this regard as they tried to be professional.

Long Chen followed the person as he got to the first floor.

"You can get the herbs and medicines you need there. Miss Mia will help you" The person pointed towards the girl standing at the front of the big hall on the second floor who was talking to a person. After pointing out the girl, he left and went back to the ground floor. Long Chen started walking towards the girl.

"Excuse me, I need to buy some spiritual herbs and medicinal plants. " Long Chen said as he got near the girl in his heavy voice.

The girl took a short glance at Long Chen before turning her attention to the man in front of her.

"Can't you see I'm busy with an important guest? Wait for a little, I'll get you the herbs you need in a short time. " The girl said in a grumpy voice without looking back at Long Chen.

"I'm in a hurry!" Long Chen said again with annoyance.

" So what? I'm not free" She said as she still didn't look back at him.

"Is this how the Alchemy Hall treats its Guests? I never knew it had such an undeserved reputation" Long Chen again let out at dissatisfaction was clear in his voice.

"You..." The girl fumed as she heard Long Chen's sentence.

"Sir, you are being disrespectful" The man who was talking to the girl finally reached. He looked to be in his early twenties and from a well off family.

"Oh? I'm the one that's being disrespectful?" Long Chen couldn't help but laugh as he let out.

"Sir, I'm not liking your offensive tone at all. Please leave this premise immediately as we can't serve you" The man let out in a serious tone.

"Who the hell do you think you are to ask me to leave? Call the in charge of this branch of Alchemy Hall." Long Chen said in a heavy voice.

"Who the hell do you think you are? Why would Master Gu personally come out to throw you out? Young master Shu is his personal disciple who is learning alchemy from him. His words are the words of Master Gu and the final words of this Hall" The girl said in an angry voice as she looked at Long Chen.

"Hmmm... I wanted to leave this city without creating a conflict, but it looks like that's not in my destiny. I wasn't to see how you can get me to leave" Long Chen said with a smile. He saw a chair nearby and sat on it with an amused smile on his face.

"I'll take your challenge" Duan Shu walked towards Long Chen as he reached his hand out towards his collar to pull him up. Unexpected to him, Long Chen moved his right hand as a loud sound echoed throughout the hall. Duan Shu flew through the air as he landed far away. His right cheek had turned red and became swollen as a palm mark became clearly visible.

"Guards, someone is creating violence inside the Alchemy Hall!!! The girl shouted loudly as Alchemy Hall guards came there. They all ran towards Long Chen to grab him.

"I'll have you beg to young master Shu before breaking all your bones," She said with a venomous expression on her face as she saw the guards attacking Long Chen but what happened next turned her world upside down as all the guards were beaten to the ground by Long Chen in the blink of an eye. Painful groans echoed throughout the hall.

"What bones did you want to break? Were you talking about hand?" Long Chen let out as he stepped on top of Duan Shu's hand with force as he crushed his bone, making him roar loudly in pain.

Chapter 147 - 147: Destroying Saintly Reputation

"What bones did you want to break? Were you talking about hand?" Long Chen let out as he stepped on top of Duan Shu's hand with force as he crushed his bone, making him roar loudly in pain.

"Stop!!! Let Young Master Shu go!! You don't know who you are messing with! If you don't leave him right now, you will regret your choice all your life!" The girl said loudly.

Long Chen looked at her as he smiled. Although his mask hid his face, his eyes were clearly visible as they gazed at the girl. Long Chen moved from his spot as he appeared right beside the girl in the blink of an eye. Before the girl could react, a hand rapidly moved towards her throat.

Before the hand touched the girl, a strong aura appeared suddenly as the girl was pushed to the side. Long Chen's hand grabbed nothing but empty air.

A white-bearded old man stood near Long Chen as he looked at him with his sharp gaze.

"Does this respected Sir knows how big of an offense he is committing by creating disturbance inside the Alchemy Hall? " A bearded old man said in a deep voice as he gazed at Long Chen.

"You must be the Branch Master Gu that they were talking about. Branch Master Gu of course I know what I'm doing. I'm just teaching these arrogant youngsters of Alchemy Hall a life lesson. They need to learn that some people should never be offended." Long Chen replied with a chuckle.

"I don't think it is your place to teach the people of my Alchemy Hall a lesson." Branch Master Gu replied with a serious expression on his face as he looked at Duan Shu who was groaning in pain.

"Oh? Does Branch Master Gu think that only the people of Alchemy Hall have the right to attack their guests and others don't have the right to retaliate?" Long Chen replied in a light voice but behind his mask, he was frowning as he wasn't able to see the cultivation of this old man. That only meant one thing. His actual cultivation was higher than Gold Core Realm. He was a real Earth realm cultivator. Long Chen didn't know what this man's actual cultivation in Earth realm was but he hoped it was at a lower stage. If he was below the 8th stage Earth realm, maybe Long Chen could still influence him with his aura of 8th stage Earth Realm Cultivation.

Branch Master Gu gazed at Duan Shu and the girl he had just saved with a questioning tone.

"Is this sir telling the truth?" He asked as he looked at the girl with a thoughtful look.

"No Master!!! He is clearly lying! He entered the hall with an excuse to buy herbs and plants but he started misbehaving with me and touching me inappropriately after finding me alone in the hall!!! Young Master Shu arrived on time and tried to stop him but he instead brutally attacked him. I called for the guards to save us but he was stronger than them and defeated them as well. He was about to attack me when you arrived and pushed me to the side. If you hadn't come on time, this monster would have killed us" The girl started roaring loudly as she gazed towards Branch Master Gu with tears in her eyes.

Long Chen couldn't help but laugh out loud as he heard the girl's words. He kept laughing for a brief period of time as others kept staring at him.

"I have seen many shameless people throughout my years, but I don't think that I have ever seen someone as shameless as you." Long Chen barely stopped laughing as he said while gazing at the girl with his golden eyes.

"You created violence inside the Alchemy Hall and you are the one who is hiding his face. Why don't you tell me why I should believe your words instead of my own people?" Branch Master Gu said as he looked at Long Chen.

"I'm sure Branch Master Gu will think of a reason if he doesn't want to regret this day all his life" Long Chen said with a chuckle.

"You're right, there are several reasons I can think of. First of all, I can't see your cultivation. Which can only mean that you are either using an artifact to hide your cultivation or are way stronger than me. Since you dared to attack someone inside the Artifact Hall, I assume it's the latter?" Branch Master Gu said with a smile. The girl and Duan Shu were both greatly shocked when they heard the words of Branch Master Gu. They realized that they had just offended an Earth Realm Cultivator.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile behind his mask as he finally felt relieved. He had confirmed that this man was weaker than his fake cultivation made him look.

"Your guess would be correct" Long Chen chuckled as he spread his 8th Stage Earth Realm aura. The old man couldn't help but frown as he felt this aura. He

was only a first stage Earth realm cultivator and couldn't judge the actual strength of this aura but knew that this was the aura of a Cultivator who was at the peak of Earth Realm or even higher.

"You should teach your disciple some manners, especially that girl behind you. Attacking a senior is already bad enough and she still wanted to accuse me falsely? If it was someone else instead of me, her head would have been lying on the floor by now. It's only because I am so merciful that she is still alive.

"Senior!!! Senior please forgive me!!! I made a horrible and tremendous mistake." Duan Shu's brain worked fast as he thought about utilizing the moment when Long Chen's anger was focused on the girl. He started begging for forgiveness as tears kept falling from his eyes.

Long Chen took his legs off of Duan Shu's hands as he walked towards Branch Master Gu.

"This little miss here didn't have time to help me by giving me the herbs that I wanted... She cursed me again and again and she tried to destroy my saintly reputation. Do you want to give her a suitable punishment or should I do it myself?" Long Chen asked Branch Master Gu in his heavy voice as he gazed at him with a serious look in his eyes.

"Is that true? You denied serving him and your accusations were false? If you try lying to me, I promise you that your ending won't be good. " Branch Master Gu looked at the girl with a fierce expression on his face. The girl grew scared as she took a step back.

"I... I'm sorry...I lied.... Please don't kill me...!!!" She let out as she got on her knees.

Chapter 148 - 148: Alchemist Rank

"I... I'm sorry...I lied.... Please don't kill me...!!!" She let out as she got on her knees.

"How dare you do such a thing!!! Let alone misbehaving with him but you even falsely accused an Earth Realm cultivator??? If you hadn't worked for the Alchemy Hall for such a long time, I would have personally killed you!!! Keeping your service in mind and because I don't want bloodshed inside Alchemy Hall, I'll give you a different punishment. Kowtow ten times in front of him as you ask for forgiveness and leave this place forever and never return to Alchemy Hall ever again. From this moment onwards, you will be known as the girl who betrayed the trust of Alchemy Hall and almost ruined it's trustworthy reputation!!! " Branch Master Gu said as he gazed at the girl with a furious look on his face.

"Senior, I hope you are satisfied with my punishment. Although it isn't as grave as the offense she committed, but I hope you don't hurt her further. Although she committed a grave mistake, I don't want to see her killed" Branch Master Gu said in a soft tone.

"Alright" Long Chen replied with just one word.

'Bang... bang.... bang.... ' The sound of her head striking the ground came as she began kowtowing in front of Long Chen before he could change his mind. She did that ten times before she stood up with tears in her eyes and a swollen forehead as she hurriedly walked towards the stairs of the ground floor and left.

"I apologize that you had to face all these problems in our Alchemy Hall. I'll make it up to you later" The old man said with a smile as he tried to lighten the mood.

"Let's go to the third floor. We can talk in peace there while you tell me the herbs that you need. " Branch Master Gu said as he gazed at Long Chen. Long Chen agreed as he followed Branch Master Gu on the third floor leaving Dong Shu behind.

Long Chen and Great Master Gu of Alchemy Hall faced each other as they sat on the chairs on the third floor of Alchemy Hall.

"So senior, what materials do you need?" Master Gu asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"A 10-year-old ginseng, a 20-year-old black hellebore, cassia which is younger than 5 years, ten years old baizhu, spiritual Jiang, a fresh fuling... " Long chen kept naming herbs and plants that he felt like he could use during his initial practice of alchemy. His knowledge about the way of alchemy was already pretty good making it easier for him to decide what herbs to get.

"....and finally a fifty-year-old gancao" Long Chen finished as he breathed in a mouthful of air.

" Ahh... I have most of the herbs that you need but not all of them. Some of the herbs that you named are pretty rare and aren't available in our branch. I'll have to call the other branches to get it.

"It's alright, forget about what you don't have as I don't have long to stay here. I'll get them from other branches of Alchemy Hall during my travels. " Long Chen said with a smile.

" I'm grateful for the senior's understanding. By the way, is senior an alchemist as well? I get such a feeling? "Branch Master Gu smiled as he asked.

"I do some Alchemy on my travels when I'm getting bored" Long Chen casually replied with a smile.

"Aren't most of the herbs you are buying used for low-level Alchemy? Are you buying them for your disciple? " Branch Master Gu asked with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Oh, you are absolutely right.I was planning to teach alchemy to my grandson when I go back. This thought came into my mind just this morning which made me come here to get the required materials. Although I could buy them from your branch at my place when I go back as well, but I don't want to disturb your elders for basic herbs"Long Chen smiled as he said in a thoughtful tone.

" Oh, that's really sweet. How old is your grandson?" Branch Master Gu inquired.

"He will be five years old this year," Long Chen said with a smile.

*Oh nice! Getting him to learn Alchemy at such a young age. I'm sure he'll be a great alchemist in the future." Branch Master Gu said with a smile.

"Guanzi!" He called out in a loud voice. Soon after, someone wearing Alchemy Hall's uniform entered the hall.

"Bring all the herbs written in it. Also, bring me the thing which we just received from the higher branch today. " Branch Master Gu said with a smile as he gave a list to the man.

That person went back without saying anything.

Although Long Chen wondered what branch Master Gu was talking about, he decided not to ask. Long Chen and the Branch Master Gu kept talking in the meantime.

"Senior, can I ask you a question? Just out of curiosity, What is your Alchemist Rank? It must be a pretty high level. " Branch Master Gu suddenly asked as he gazed towards Long Chen.

"Me? I would be what you call a 9th rank Spirit grade alchemist."Long Chen replied but he intentionally ignored a word from his sentence, 'theoretically'. Long Chen wasn't a proper alchemist as he only had theoretical knowledge so far.

Branch Master Gu couldn't help but stand up with a stunned look on his face.

"Although it's not that good, it is what it is" Long Chen replied with a smile as he enjoyed the expression on Branch Master Gu's face.

Branch Master Gu's expression became strange as he sat down without commenting.

"What is your Rank?" Long Chen asked with a thoughtful look

"Unlike senior, I'm only a 5th rank mortal grade alchemist and I think I'll stay there my whole life. " Branch Master Gu said with a disappointed look on his face.

"Can senior show me his official alchemist rank badge? I want to see what a high-level badge looks like as I have never been in contact with such a high-level alchemist" Branch Master Gu said with a pleading look on his face.

Chapter 149 - 149: Are You Stupid?

"Me? I don't have a badge with me as I don't consider myself an alchemist by profession. It's just a hobby for me" Long Chen replied with a smile.

"Oh, Are you saying that you don't carry your badge with you? Just out of curiosity, Which Alchemy hall is senior associated with?" Branch Master Gu asked as his expressions became somewhat doubtful.

Long Chen was stumped for words as he tried to think of a reply. He didn't know much about the places where Alchemy Hall's higher-level branches were situated and he couldn't make up a name either as it might expose his lie if the person in front of him knew about all the branches.

"Me? I'm not associated with a branch. As I said, it's just a hobby for me and not a profession. I only go to branches in whatever area I'm in at that point in time to take the ranking upgrade exams just to test myself as an experience but I never associate myself with any branch. " Long Chen replied in a confident tone as his golden eyes gazed at the man.

'Why do I feel like there's something wrong with this explanation? Is he only bragging about being a high ranking alchemist? That would be such a shameless behavior for such a strong cultivator like him but it's possible. " Branch Master Gu thought with a doubtful look on his face.

"Ah right. That makes sense. By the way senior, I'm having a problem which I think only a high ranking alchemist like you can solve for me. Are you willing to help me out?" Branch Master Gu said as he gazed at Long Chen with pleading eyes.

"What do you need my help with?" Long Chen answered his question with a question of his own as he neither agree to his request nor denied. He had seen the doubtful look on Branch Master Gu's face so he decided to be careful.

"I've been trying to create a 6th rank pill known as 'Yang convalescence pill'. As you know, I need 60 percent purity for a pill to be considered a 6th rank pill. Even if the pill is made with a 6th rank recipe, it won't be considered a 6th rank pill without the necessary purity level. I have tried hundreds of times and I am able to make the pill successfully but its purity does not reach sixty percent. It's an old recipe and some instructions are missing, but still, I need to make it as it is really important. Can senior tell me how I can achieve success?" Branch Master Gu asked with a slight smile.

"Yang convalescence pill? Are you having trouble in bed with your wife?" Long Chen blurted out with an amused look on his face.

"Something like that" Branch Master Gu replied to Long Chen with a somewhat red face.

"I think I can help you by telling you your mistakes, but I won't make the pill for you as you need to do it yourself to learn and grow. Tell me the process you're following for the concoction?" Long Chen inquired with an amused smile behind his mask.

Branch Master Gu soon began describing the steps that he followed while creating the pill. He described each and every step carefully as he occasionally glanced at Long Chen's expression. After a brief period of time, he finished.

"Let me just ask you one thing... Are you stupid?" Long Chen asked in a somewhat disappointed voice.

"What? Why?" Branch Master Gu blurted out with a shocked look.

"You've grown so old and still can't spot such a simple mistake that you're making? Are you sure you're a 5th rank mortal grade alchemist? Is the Alchemy Hall's standard decreased by so much that they're giving anyone their ranks now? Che... It's so painful hearing about such a stupid mistake" Long Chen let out with anger clearly distinguishable in his voice.

The old man's face kept turning red as he heard Long Chen's constant scoldings like he was a young child.

"I apologize, senior, I'm not smart enough to understand. Can you tell me my mistakes to teach me?" The old man said with a downcast face.

"Red Crystal Grass and Nine Yang Root can never be mixed without adding a third component. Although they don't create a violent reaction, their incompatibility can cause the purity level of the pill to decrease !!! Such a simple logic. I can't believe that I'm having to tell such simple logic to someone other than my 5-year-old grandson" Long Chen let out as he stared at the old man. The man's expressions changed as he clearly thought about Long Chen's words. He became stunned to see the plausibility of Long Chen's words

"Can senior enlighten me? What can I add in the mix to achieve proper results?" Branch Master Gu asked with a pleading gaze as he looked at Long Chen.

"Add some finely crushed lingzhi powder and it will be successful" Long Chen smiled as he replied.

"That simple?" The man replied with a doubtful look on his face.

"Do you doubt my words? Do you think that there is a reason for me to lie to someone like you? You can check it after I leave if you don't believe me "

Long Chen let out in a somewhat angry tone.

"I would never doubt senior. Thanks for solving my troubles" Branch Master Gu said with a grateful smile.

Suddenly, a few servants entered the room with bags in their hands. They placed all the bags near Long Chen as they silently left. The helper entered as well, carrying a large cauldron in his hand.

"What's that cauldron for?" Long Chen asked with curiosity.

"That is a gift from me to your grandson. He is going to be learning alchemy, so I am sure that he will need a good cauldron as well. The cauldron in front of senior is a spirit grade treasure which we just received from the higher branch. It was ordered by the Dong Clan patriarch quite some time ago, but I don't think that we need to give it to him now. It will be his punishment, for having a son that caused ruckus in Alchemy Hall. It might teach them a lesson" Branch Master Gu smiled as he said to Long Chen.

Chapter 150 - 150:Duan Clan

"That is a gift from me to your grandson. He is going to be learning alchemy, so I am sure that he will need a good cauldron as well. The cauldron in front of senior is a spirit grade treasure which we just received from the higher branch. It was ordered by the Dong Clan patriarch quite some time ago, but I don't think that we need to give it to him now. It will be his punishment, for having a son that caused ruckus in Alchemy Hall. It might teach them a lesson" Branch Master Gu smiled as he said to Long Chen.

"Hahaha...I like it" Long Chen couldn't help but laugh as he heard the words of Branch Master Gu.

The old man stood up as he grabbed the cauldron.

"It's called the 'Heavenly Dragon cauldron. It can aid your grandchildren in learning initial levels of Alchemy. I know that senior can probably get him much better cauldrons but I would still like to gift it to him. " Branch Master Gu said as he placed that cauldron in front of Long Chen.

"I will accept this gift from Branch Master. I should thank you instead of my grandson for such a wonderful gift" Long Chen smiled as he said to Branch Master Gu.

Long Chen smiled as he waved his hand making all the bags of herbs and the cauldron disappear from the room.

'As expected of someone from a higher kingdom. He has a storage treasure' Branch Master Gu thought as he gazed towards Long Chen.

"How much is all this stuff worth?" Long Chen inquired from Branch Master Gu.

"As these are only lower-level herbs, it won't cost senior much. Everything combined will only cost two white gold coins. But since senior helped me so much, I will leave the earnings of our branch aside and sell it to you at the actual cost. At the cost, we had to pay for it. You only need to pay 1 white gold coin and Sixty gold coins or you can pay 160 gold coins whatever is convenient for senior" Branch Master Gu said with a smile.

"Alright," Long Chen acknowledged as he gave the money to Branch Master Gu.

"Oh right, when I was coming to this City, some beasts stupidly obstructed me and I killed them. I wanted to leave them there to rot but then I thought why waste it as they can be used for Alchemy. You people buy beasts right?" Long Chen inquired from Branch Master Gu.

"Yea, Of course, we do." Branch Master Gu acknowledged with a confused look on his face.

"Good, here you go then," Long Chen said to Branch Master Gu as bodies of hundreds of beasts appeared inside the hall. As the hall was pretty large, it didn't have much problem keeping such a large number of bodies but still, it created a shocking scene with so many bodies there.

"There are 73 Gold Realm beasts and 153 spirit Realm beasts of various levels of cultivation. Adding the total value of the Gold Realm beasts that you brought, It would be 2678 Gold coins. Factoring the additional 153 Spirit Realm beasts which are worth 1530 Gold coins, the total amount senior will get is 4208 Coins" Branch Master Gu said after finishing his calculation.

"That's not good enough in exchange for the seconds that I had to waste to kill them but it's fine." Long Chen let out as he heard the numbers.

The man smiled as he handed over the money to Long Chen. Long Chen received 42 white gold coins and 8 gold coins which combined with the 16 white gold coins and 50 gold coins that he had from before, bringing the total money he had to 58 white gold coins and 58 gold coins.

Long Chen and Branch Master Gu chatted for a bit longer, after which Long Chen took his leave and left.

Long Chen left the Alchemy hall as he walked back towards the Inn. As soon as he reached near the Inn, he saw quite a few people waiting in front of that place. The man who told him the address of this inn was here as well along with a white-haired man in green robes who looked to be in his sixties. That green-robed man was at the tenth stage of gold core realm cultivation which alerted Long Chen.

"You are?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at the green Robed man.

"I am Duan Guanli. The patriarch of Duan Clan" The green-robed man said with a serious expression on his face.

"Oh? I've heard about your Duan Clan twice since I came to this city. Firstly from the guy behind you who told me the direction of this inn and that you

control the 'Starfall inn' and maintain the safety of this place. The second time was because of your son, Duan Shu. First impression was a positive one while the second impression was a negative one. I wonder what your intention is for the third impression which you'll create right now. " Long Chen gazed at them with an amused smile on his face.

"I'm not here to create trouble for senior. I'm just here to apologize to master because of my son's sheer stupidity. Although he made a mistake, he came home and told me all about it. From his face, it was clear that he was regretting his earlier stupid actions. After hearing about all this, I immediately came here to ask for senior's forgiveness." Duan Guanli said as he bowed slightly.

"It's alright. Just tell him to tread with care in the future. Not everyone is as gentle as me" Long Chen replied in a nonchalant tone.

"I will heed to master's kind words. Uhhh... Great Master, I bought a gift for you. It took me a whole day to select this gift for master " Duan Guanli said as he looked at Long Chen.

"Didn't I just beat your kid a few hours ago? How come you were selecting gift from yesterday then? Can you predict the future as well?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face.

"This gift is not because of my kid. I had already known about master being in this city since yesterday. I had decided to meet with senior since the moment I heard about you. I immediately started looking for a gift but it took me a whole day to find something suitable. I was just about to come to you when I was informed of this incident. " Duan Guanli explained to Long Chen.

" Oh, what gift did you bring for me by the way? It must be good since it took you a whole day" Long Chen said with a smile on his face.

"Here... it is what I want to give master as an apology and as a token of my gratitude towards master"Duan Guanli said as he gave a bag to Long Chen.

"A pill?"Long Chen inquired as he saw a pill inside the bag after opening it.

"It's called a 'life-healing pill'. It's an 8th tier mortal grade pill that is said to be able to heal any physical wound. Although it's not miraculous at the legendary 'Life-giving pills' of first rank kingdoms, it's still very useful and rare. " Duan Guanli described the pill.

" Pretty good pill..." Long Chen muttered to himself.

" Alright, I like your gift. I'll give you a better gift when I return in the future but for now, you can leave as I need to leave and I'm getting late" Long Chen said as he looked at Duan Guanli.

" Of course, I can't let Master to be late. I'll be taking my leave then" Duan Guanli said with any change in his smiling expression at he left with his people.

Long Chen watched them leave and went towards the ranch and got the second rank spirit horse as he hurriedly strode towards the exit of the city.

In a faraway place, there existed an empire ...

Chapter 151 - 151:Divine Oracle Physique

On a faraway planet, there existed an empire known as 'Esteria '. It was an empire surrounded by beautiful greenery. Two suns were high above in the sky providing the necessary warmth to the planet.

"Mingyu!!! Wake up! How long are you going to sleep? It's already afternoon!!!" A beautiful woman who looked to be in her early twenties was waking up a girl who was sleeping comfortably in her bed.

"Ahh.... just one more minute. I'll wake up I promise" The girl replied in her childish tone.

"You are saying the same thing from the last hour. Come on!! When will you start acting responsibly?" The woman said in an annoyed tone as she tugged at the blanket of the girl.

"Why do I need to start acting responsibly? I have such a loving father and mother. I don't want to be responsible. I just want to enjoy the comfort of life," The girl said with a chuckle.

"Little girl, your father is waiting for you! " The woman said in a low voice with a tired look on her face.

The girl soon sat up like a spring with a cheeky smile on her face.

"Why didn't you inform me before," She said with a smile.

" You..." The woman was visibly stunned after she heard her words.

"Some important guests are coming today! Your father wants the whole family to be there. Your brother is already there with your father. You and I are the only ones behind. Hurry up" That woman said to the girl as she gazed at her.

"Alright, mother" The girl acknowledged as she hurriedly stood up and went to get dressed.

Soon the girl came out, wearing a beautiful blue dress. Her shiny silver hair was tied to a ponytail. She had a height of 5 feet 5 inches and looked to be younger than eighteen years old. Her soft delicate skin, long legs and almond-shaped eyes only added to her charm further. Her thin arched eyebrows, soft pink lips and tiny nose made her look beautiful and cute at the same time.

"Let's go, mother!!! You're making me late" Mingyu said with an eager tone.

"I'm making you late? You're just as shameless as your father" The woman chuckled as she left the room with the girl.

They both reached a lavish hall and saw a boy already standing there.

" Brother! " The girl exclaimed as she walked towards the well-dressed boy who looked to be in his early twenties. He also had Shiny silver hair similar to the girl but his hair was shorter.

"Wang... where is your father?" The woman asked as she gazed at the boy.

"Father went to welcome the guests. You know how he is when his friend arrives. And this time his enemy is arriving as well. Of Course, he had to go meet them himself despite being the emperor. " Wang said with a chuckle.

"He is always like that. Also, today is a special day so I can understand his eagerness" The woman said with a smile.

"What's so special about today, mother?" Mingyu asked with a curious look on her face.

"You know, Our Esteria Empire and our neighbouring Qiandi Empire has always been life or death enemies. There has been bloodshed and war between our two countries so many times that it's hard to even count. " The woman said with a thoughtful look on her face.

"True! Those bastards are really stubborn." Mingyu muttered.

"Your father's friend is the Emperor of the Tricion Empire which shares a boundary with ours and Qiandi Empire. Although the Tricion Empire is a friend of our Esteria Empire, it has always stayed out of the troubles between ours and Qiandi Empire. Of Course, we all know that it is because they had no choice as there are many empires which have a conflict with them and might decide to attack them at any time so they decided to stay out of other's conflict." The woman explained further.

"I can understand. They have their borders to defend as well" Mingyu said with an understanding look on her face.

"But now Tricion has taken action. It got in contact with Qiandi about our conflict and convinced them to stop war and solve all the disputes through peaceful talking. When he told your father, he agreed as well. Today is the day when Emperor of Tricion and Emperor of Qiandi is coming to our kingdom for the talking" The woman said as she gazed at Mingyu.

"Oh wow! Why didn't you tell me such an important thing before?" Mingyu asked as she puffed her cheeks in anger.

"Well, Who knows, maybe she told you but you fell asleep on her like you always do. That does happen a lot with you, my sweet little sister" The boy chuckled as he pinched Mingyu's cheeks.

"Brother? Did you achieve another breakthrough?" Mingyu suddenly asked as she noticed something.

"Hahaha right. I reached the heaven realm today" The boy laughed proudly as he said while gazing at the girl.

"As expected of brother. You're so talented and then there's me, with such poor talent. How amazing would it be if I had even ten percent of your talent" The girl said with a self-deprecating smile.

"Stop sounding so pessimistic little girl. You're pretty talented yourself. Just 17 years old and already at the 3rd stage of Earth Realm. That's not bad in the slightest" The man named Wang replied with a gentle smile.

"Of Course it is bad! You were at the 7th stage of Earth Realm when you were 17. I'm not even close to your level" Mingyu replied with a downcast look on her face.

"Don't compare yourself to me, little girl. You're way more special than me. You have 'Divine Oracle Physique'. A special physique that's said to only appear once in millions of years. In Fact, I should be the one feeling jealous" Wang said with a gentle smile.

"What's the use of this stupid special physique. There's nothing good about it" Mingyu said with a slight protest.

"Oh? Seeing the future is not special? I wonder what your definition of special is then. Care to enlighten me, sister?" The boy said with a light chuckle.

"Of Course there's only one definition of special in my life. My special family! As for this special physique? I would indeed consider it good if I was able to actually see the future when I wanted, but I can't even control the times I get the visions. That too would have been good enough if the visions were completed and understandable, but all I see some strange glimpses of incomprehensible events that don't help me understand the future in the slightest" Mingyu replied with an annoyed look on her face as if she was cursing her physique.

"Be optimistic little girl. I'm sure you'll gain more control over it as you grow older" Lu Wang replied with a smile

"Hahaha... It's such a great occasion. Finally, you two are ready to talk on piece." A happy sounding voice suddenly came as steps could be heard coming near.

The door of the hall opened as three men, dressed in beautiful armour entered the hall.

Walking in front was the Emperor of Esteria Kingdom, Emperor Lu Junwei. Walking behind him was the person who had just spoken... Emperor of Tricion Empire, Emperor Ji Hanjian. The last person walking was the person who ruled the Qiandi Empire. He was known as Emperor Qian Wei.

Chapter 152 - 152: Introductions

Emperor Lu Junwei looked to be in his early forties. He looked like a gentle person but his eyes were like that of an experienced warrior. His long black hair came down to his shoulders making him look even more charming.

Emperor Qian Wei, on the other hand, looked like a warrior whose whole life was spent fighting. He looked to be in his late forties but he looked much older than Emperor Lu Junwei. The left side of his face had a scar. No one knew how Emperor Qian Wei got that scar but it was in his face for as long as anyone could remember. It was said that he received this scar when he was just a kid. He was donned in beautiful robes and a crown while carrying a heavy sword on his back.

Emperor Ji Hanjian was the one who looked the best out of all three emperors. He looked like he was just in his early thirties making his real age tough to guess. He had a charming face that somewhat had a feminine charm. His long deep black hair moved due to air as he walked. He had a gentle smile on his face which made him look like a generous person.

"I always wanted to solve this thing through talks, it's just Emperor Wei who didn't agree to this peaceful suggestion. In his eyes, suggesting peace was like accepting our weakness which in turn made him increase the intensity of his attacks. We could do nothing but retaliate to his kind knocking on our doors" Emperor Lu Junwei chuckled as he replied.

"Aren't you forgetting how it all started? It was all because of Esteria. It was you and your empire who started all this. What can I say, I didn't trust the words of the empire who created all this chaos because they couldn't keep their promise in the first place." Emperor Qian Wei replied in a downcast tone.

"It's all in the past guys. I think it's finally time to forget all the negativities and create an era of peace. Do it for your kingdom, do it for your future generations" Emperor Ji Hanjian lightly said with a smile.

"You people have been fighting like this for years, and you can fight for years to come but that's not a world that I want for anyone. What happened in the past was bad. I agree that Esteria broke its promise to Qiandi but can't we get past that? Everything's possible with talks. All we need to do is find ways to make everything right." Emperor Ji Hanjian continued.

"We will talk about that later. " Emperor Qian Wei said in an expressionless tone as he looked ahead.

"Oh, little Wang, Mingyu, and Sister in law Jing. You're all here" Ji Hanjian exclaimed with a smile.

" It's the first time Emperor Qian Wei has come to our kingdom. Even though we had our differences, it's proper for us to welcome him to our empire with dignity. " The wife of Emperor Lu Junwei, Su Jing said with a smile.

" Hahaha, that's right. You can't be Petty when welcoming a guest. Was this the idea of brother Junwei? He's good at politics. I must say" Ji Hanjian chuckle as he said.

" Brother Hanjian, why don't you introduce your sweet family to us." Emperor Ji Hanjian said to Emperor Lu Junwei.

"This little guy here is my son, Lu Wang. My daughter Lu Mingyu and my wife Su Jing" Emperor Lu Junwei introduced them with a smile.

"Your son ... He is really talented" Emperor Qian Wei commented as he gazed at Wang for a brief period of time.

"Of course my son is awesome. How can my only son be a Trash" Emperor Lu Junwei said with a wide grin on his face.

" Your daughter on the other hand... is quite average when it comes to potential and strength. I guess every good comes with some bad. It's the same at my house. My daughter is the talented one while my son is trash" Emperor Qian Wei further commented. Although his words caused people to frown, they could see that he wasn't trying to insult Mingyu as he talked about his own family as well.

"Ahh ... We should go and get on with the talks." Emperor Ji Hanjian interrupted with a wry smile on his face as he saw the foul mood of Emperor Lu Junwei.

"Alright... come with me," Emperor Lu Junwei said as he continued ahead. Emperor Qian Wei followed him while Emperor Ji Hanjian was the last. Before leaving, he walked towards mingyu.

"Don't mind the words of Emperor Wei. He's always the serious one with a somewhat pessimistic mind. You are quite talented so don't take his words to heart" Emperor Ji Hanjian patted mingyu's head with a gentle smile on his face as he left as well.

"Why would I mind his words? All he said was the truth. I've always known that I'm not as talented as brother" Mingyu muttered with a light smile as she saw that everyone has left, but a little sadness was hidden behind that smile.

*Little girl, we talked about it before. You're way more special, so don't feel down" Wang chuckled as he said

" Right," Mingyu replied with a smile.

" By the way, mother, What was Emperor Wei talking about when he said that the war between us started because of our Esteria k

Empire? What broken promise was he talking about? " Mingyu suddenly asked with curiosity on her face.

"Oh right. I want to know as well. Why did I never hear anything about it?" Lu Wang inquired as well.

" Of course, you wouldn't know about it. This thing is not written in any history book as it was indeed our fault." Su Jing said as she looked towards both of them.

"Did we really break a promise? How could breaking a promise cause such fierce war that killed millions of people? What promise had the power to cause all this?" Mingyu inquired as she looked towards her mother.

" The promise that caused death... and made Qiandi go mad with anger" Su Ming replied in a low voice.

Chapter 153 - 153: The Promise

" The promise that caused death... and made Qiandi go mad with anger" Su Ming replied in a low voice.

" It all started with your great grandfather. During his time, Qiandi and Esteria were really close friends. In Fact, we were closer to Qiandi then we were to Tricion Empire. Royal families of both places visited each other's empire regularly. It was said that during one such visit, the first princess of Qiandi, Princess Min fell in love with the crown Prince of Esteria, Prince Huang. She told her father about it, who in turn talked to your great grandfather. Thus the marriage between both Royal families was established. But unbeknownst to everyone, the Prince wanted something else. As soon as Prince Huang found out about this arranged marriage, he went to his father and told him that he didn't want this marriage and that he was in love with someone else. He asked your great grandfather to nullify the marriage but he was denied" Su Jing said.

" That's to be expected as a promise can't be broken so easily, especially a promise given by an Emperor to another Emperor just because of feelings. "Mingyu commented in between while Wang stayed silent as if imagining himself in place of Prince Huang.

"As the day of marriage drew near, Prince Huang's opposition increased but there was nothing he could do as he was trapped in his room. One day, Prince Huang escaped. It was thought that he won't return but he soon returned with a woman. He informed the Emperor that she was the girl he was in love with. As he escaped and went to meet her, he found out that she was pregnant with his baby. He told your great grandfather that he won't leave the girl he loves and his kid and if he is still forced, he is ready to die but won't marry another girl. Your great grandfather finally felt defeated and assented to their relationship and canceled the marriage. " Su Jing further explained.

"That's all? A broken marriage caused all this? It's not like we killed anyone? we just denied a marriage. " Mingyu let out with a strange look on her face.

" That's not all... The First Princess of Qiandi committed suicide as soon as she found out about the broken marriage. It was said that she felt heartbroken and couldn't bear to live in this world anymore" Su Jing said in a serious tone as she looked at them.

"First Princess' death was blamed at Esteria and the enmity was started. Soon after, Prince Huang and his wife disappeared as well which caused our Esteria

Emperor to be furious as well. Thus, years of friendship were broken and the war began... " Su Jing finished her story.

"Don't mention it to anyone though. I just told you to make you aware of the mistakes of the past but don't mention this story to anyone." She said in a serious tone.

" Yes mother" They both nodded.

Half a day passed as all the Emperors came back.

Their mood looked somewhat good making it seem that their talks went well.

Emperor Qian Wei and Emperor Ji Hanjian left after bidding their farewell but strangely enough, Emperor Wei turned back and glimpsed at Lu Wang with a smile before leaving.

"How did the talk went?" Su Jing asked as she gazed at Emperor Lu Junwei.

" I think it went well. In Fact, I feel like we won" Emperor Lu Junwei laughed as he said.

"What happened in there?" Su Jing asked with a happy smile as she saw the bright mood of Lu Junwei.

"The Enmity that started with a marriage, is now ending with a marriage. To end the conflict between the kingdoms, we decided to tie the empires through marriage. Wang's marriage is established with the daughter of Emperor Qian Wei. I'm happy because we got such a good opportunity" Emperor Lu Junwei said with a smile.

" His daughter? Doesn't he only have one daughter? The girl who is said to be a once in a millennia talent? If it's like this, then it is indeed good for our empire. Now we will have another heaven-sent talent but shouldn't you ask the wish of our son first?" Su Jing said with a smile.

"Oh Right! Tell me, son. Are you ready for this marriage? If you aren't, I'll cancel it even if that means that we'll be fighting for a hundred more years. " Emperor Lu Junwei gazed at his son with an expectant face.

" I am ready father... " Lu Wang said as he gazed at the expectant look on his father's face for a brief moment.

"That's like my good son" Lu Junwei said with a laugh.

" Let's go!! It's time for father and son to have a drink like men" Emperor Lu Junwei said as he left the hall while grabbing Lu Wang's hand.

They Drank till late at night before walking back to their rooms and fell asleep.

Morning arrived, Lu Wang left his mansion and walked through the city as he entered a small medicine shop.

"You're here..." A feminine voice sounded as soon as Lu Wang entered the shop. The shop was completely empty as most days with only the two of them being there.

"I'm getting married..." Lu Wang said in a low voice.

"... to whom? " The girl asked as she looked down.

"Princess of Qiandi" Lu Wang replied but his voice sounded like it was breaking.

"Oh... I wish you a happy marriage Prince Wang. Did you come here to tell me to keep silent? If you're worried that I'll tell others about our relationship then you don't need to worry about that. Even if our relationship didn't mean anything to you, It meant everything for me. I know I can't keep you to myself but I'll keep these precious memories to myself alone" The girl said in a low voice.

" That's not... I have no... choice... " Prince Wang said as his eyes got slightly wet.

The girl gazed in his eyes as her eyes got wet as well.

"It's fine... Do what you must. Just think that we were never meant to be. Can you leave now? It's time I close the shop " The girl said as she looked down.

Prince Wang turned back as he walked towards the exit with heavy steps when a sound came from behind. He turned back only to find the girl vomiting behind the counter.

Chapter 154 - 154: My Baby

Prince Wang turned back as he walked towards the exit with heavy steps but suddenly a sound came from behind. He turned back only to find the girl vomiting behind the counter.

"Jiayi!!!" Prince Wang exclaimed as he ran towards the girl.

"I'm fine. It's nothing. I probably ate something bad which upset my health. Prince Wang doesn't need to worry about me" The girl let out as she stopped the Prince after somewhat recovering.

Prince Wang stopped in his tracks as he gazed at her silently. The girl walked back into her room as she closed the door. The Prince remained in silence as he gazed at the door. Soon, he turned back and left.

As soon as the Prince left, the girl opened the door as she gazed towards the exit.

Prince wang roamed throughout the crowded city before walking back to his Palace.

"Where did you go? I was looking all around for you! " Su Jing saw Lu Wang in the corridor and asked.

" What happened, mother? Why were you looking for me" He inquired with a smile

"To give you a Good News! It's about your marriage!! The date has been decided. The marriage is next week!! " Su Jing informed Lu Wang.

" What? Isn't that too soon for a Royal marriage? Why is everyone in such a hurry? " Lu Wang asked with a stunned look on his face.

" This proposal came from the Emperor of Qiandi. Maybe they still haven't overcome the trauma of the past. They're worried that you might fall in love with someone else and run away as well if you are given too much time ." Su Jing chuckled as she told Lu Wang.

" Let's go! There's a lot of shopping to be done. There are so many preparations that must be done. Come with me" Su Jing said as she grabbed Lu Wang's hands and pulled him with her.

Inside the Qiandi Empire, A 16-17 years old boy was walking through the long corridors of the Royal Palace. He soon reached in front of a big door and pushed it open. On the other side of the door was a large hall in which a girl could be seen practicing her beautiful swordsmanship.

Every stroke of her sword was filled with Heavenly Qi containing an immense amount of power. Her beautiful red hair flew with the wind as she swung her dark red sword making attacks one after another.

"Sister!!!" The young boy exclaimed as he saw the girl. The girl stopped her practice and turned back. Her Serious look had changed to the one with a beautiful smile.

"You're here... Do you want to practice with me?" She chuckled as she looked at the boy.

"Me... no no no... I love my life too much to take that decision" The boy took a step back as he shook his head left and right.

"Then why are you here little brother?" She asked as she looked at him.

"I'm here to talk to you about your marriage. The date has been decided and it's next week" The boy let out as he entered the hall and closed the door behind him.

The girl frowned for a second but her expression immediately returned to normal before the guy could notice it.

"Are you really going to marry someone you haven't met before? " The boy asked as he gazed at the girl.

"Of course I am going to. It's what our Royal father wants and as his daughter... his wish is my command. Also, if this stops the years of rivalry between our Empires, then I see no harm in marrying a stranger " She said with a smile. She walked towards the young boy further closing the distance between them.

" Also... if I marry the crown Prince of another Empire, I would definitely lose my right to our Empire's throne but if I marry someone else... father might find ways to pull that guy in our empire and still make me the Ruler and I wouldn't be able to deny him either. The current path is the easiest path to make my little brother the King of our Empire in the future without denying our father's wishes." She let out with a smile as she patted the hair of the young boy.

"I don't want the throne if it makes you live your whole life with someone you don't like. I would much rather watch you to Rule our Empire with the guy you love instead. " The boy said as he looked at the girl with an emotional look on his face.

" Hah ... You talk too much little brother. It's not like Prince Wang is a bad person. I've heard many of the good deeds he had done. All the stories I heard about him made him sound like a nice and brave guy. It... might not be that bad after all. " She said in a soft voice as she looked at her brother.

Time kept passing as both Empires continued with the preparations. Soon, Five days passed.

Prince Wang again went out of the palace to take some fresh air. He was walking through the city as he reached near that medicine shop. Unable to stop himself from taking one last look at the girl he loved, one last time before marriage, he walked inside.

As soon as he entered, he saw that the shop was empty. He walked towards the room and found the door open. He entered the room. What he saw inside shocked him to his core.

The girl he loved, Jiayi, was lying on her back unconscious while an old woman was checking on him. She turned back as she saw the guy.

"What happened to her? " Prince Wang asked in a heavy tone as he gazed at the old woman.

"This little girl didn't eat properly for the last few days which made her weak and her pregnancy made it much worse. She lost consciousness because of weakness. Did Prince Wang came here to buy something? I apologize but I don't think she would be able to sell you anything" The woman replied as she looked at that girl.

"P... pregnancy...? She... she is ... pregnant? " Prince Wang asked as he stuttered with a shocked look on his face.

" Yes ... She is 2 months pregnant now. What unlucky girl, facing all of it alone. The boy's father should have been here helping her get through it. Anyways, I gave her the proper medicines and she will sleep for a few hours. I'll take my leave now and come back later to check on her." The old woman said as she stood up and left.

Prince Wang stayed there for a brief moment as he looked at the girl on the bed. He dropped down to his knees as he muttered... 'My baby...'

Chapter 155 - 155: History Is Repeating

Prince Lu had just spoken when the girl slowly but steadily opened her eyes.

"So you found out...I was hoping that you never find out but it looks like that isn't possible now. I made you worried, didn't I?" She muttered in a soft voice.

"Don't be silly. What's there to be worried about? Instead, I'm happy that I'm going to become a father " Prince Lu Wang said as he hid his worries behind a slight smile.

"But... Your marriage? " The girl asked with a sad look in her eyes.

"I'll go talk to my father about a solution. I can't break the marriage to the princess but I can try convincing him to let me keep you..." Prince Wang said as he gazed in the girl's eyes with an emotional look on his face.

"You don't need to go through the trouble. You're marrying a Princess of another empire, not a commoner. War could ensue because of your wrong decision...I can take care of this baby on my own" The girl replied in a low voice as she looked towards the roof.

"It's fine. I'm sure everything will be alright. I'll go talk to my father as soon as possible and will be back when I can." Prince Wang said as he stood up. Before the girl could say anything, he had already left.

Prince Wang went back to the Royal Palace. After asking around, he found out that his father was in the study room.

He walked towards the room and knocked on the door. After getting permission, he entered the room.

Emperor Lu Junwei was standing near a shelf of books.

"What brings you here today? Is there something you want to talk about?" Emperor Lu Junwei asked as he looked towards Prince Wang.

" Father... There's something ...I need to tell you..." Prince Wang let out with a worried look on his face.

"Why do you look so worried? It's the first time I'm seeing my brave son with a worried look on his face. It can't be that bad. Tell father... I'll solve all your problems." Emperor Lu Junwei said with a smile.

"It's... The thing is that... There's a girl I was in a relationship with..." Prince Lu Wang started telling Emperor Lu Junwei everything.

Emperor Lu Junwei heard silently with a frown on his face, but he didn't interrupt the prince.

"... After hearing about my marriage with Princess of Qiandi, for the prosperity of both Empires, I decided to bury my feelings and forget her... But today I accidentally found out that she is pregnant with my baby. She is such a kind girl that she wasn't willing to tell me about the baby so that I could marry another girl peacefully. I can't leave a girl like that, especially when she's carrying my baby... While I can't break our promise of my marriage to the Princess of Qiandi either. I beg father to help me..." Prince Wang fell down to his knees as he said to Emperor Lu Wang with tears in his eyes.

Emperor Lu Junwei stayed still for a long time as he gazed at his son on his knees in front of him with a shocked look on his face.

"History is repeating itself..." Emperor Lu Junwei muttered with a blank look on his face.

"I won't let things go down the same path as the past." He let out with a determined look on his face.

"I have come to a decision!!!" Emperor Lu Junwei said in a heavy tone as he looked at his son.

"It's too late now. You can't marry the girl and you must marry the Princess of Qiandi." The Emperor decreed. Prince Wang's tears started falling faster as he looked at his father.

"But...I can't make you leave that girl either. I can't let your kid grow without a father. You can not marry her but you can keep your relationship with her if you want. Everything's fine as long as it never sees the light of day. When the kid is older, we can find some ways to make you adopt him. It might not do justice for the girl but it's the best decision for everyone" Emperor Lu Junwei said in a heavy tone.

"This...I agree with father's decision..." Prince Wang said as he lowered his head.

" But you can't go to meet the girl or have any contact with her until your marriage with the Princess. That's an order. You can leave now" Emperor Lu Junwei said as he turned his back towards the Prince.

Prince Wang stood up and left the room.

"I apologize son but that's the best decision I can take as an Emperor right now. If it was before, I could've canceled the marriage saying that you're not agreeing but now it's too late... This marriage... must happen..." Emperor Lu Junwei said in a low voice after Prince Wang left.

Prince Wang stayed in his room as he followed his father's order. Still, He decided to write a letter to the girl explaining everything to her. The letter was sent secretly through a servant.

Another day passed as the day of marriage arrived near. Only one day was left for the marriage.

A letter arrived in the palace for the Prince which was delivered to him by a servant. He opened the letter and read it but its content made him stunned.

"Prince Wang,

I received your letter but I still can't believe that it's true and that you wrote it. It might be someone playing tricks on me. I want to meet you face to face and talk to you about it. You don't need to be worried about your promise as we won't meet inside the city. There's an empty hut in the desert at the southern edge of the Royal City. It will be the place where I'll be waiting for you till the evening. If that letter was true, then this place will be the best place for our meeting as no one will see us here. If this letter was false and written by someone else just to play with my feelings, I'll just consider our separation as my destiny and leave this Empire so that I don't create any more worries for you. I'll wait for you ...

Yours Jiayi"

Prince Wang read the letter again and again with a worried look on his face. He looked towards the door with a thoughtful look as he noticed that it was already pretty late. Without thinking anything, he hurriedly left the room. But in his worries for the time, Prince Wang forgot that letter right there on the bed.

He exited the palace and left on a horse.

Half an hour after Prince Wang left, Princess Mingyu arrived in his room.

Chapter 156 - 156: Disappear Forever

Half an hour after Prince Wang left, Princess Mingyu arrived in his room.

"Brother?" Princess Mingyu called out as she entered the room.

Noticing a letter in the bed, she picked it up and started reading it.

Four hours passed. It was 3 in the afternoon based on the time when Prince Wang reached the place which was mentioned in the letter. After looking around in the deserted land, he found a lone hut that looked pretty worn out.

Prince Wang entered the hut and saw Jiayi sitting on a chair inside that hut. She gazed at Prince Wang and smiled gently.

"You're here... It was real... You and I can be together..." Jiayi let out as she ran towards Prince Wang and hugged him with tears in her eyes.

"Of course it's true! You're my woman and you're carrying my baby. Even though I can't marry you, you'll still be mine forever. Father has agreed as well" Prince Wang hugged her back as he said with a gentle smile on his face.

"I apologize for creating trouble for you by calling you to meet me but I just couldn't believe that written letter" She let out in a guilty tone.

"It's fine. Don't worry about it" Prince Wang said in a soft tone.

"Did someone follow you here? You won't be in trouble for coming here right?" Jiayi asked with a worried look on her face.

"No one followed me. I took precautions coming here and even if someone was following me, they are most probably lost somewhere. You know I'm a Heavenly Realm warrior right." Prince Wang let out with a smile.

"Your father won't be mad at me for calling you here, right?" She again asked

"He won't know that I came here. I'll find some excuse for him" Prince Wang said in a gentle voice.

*Oh... it's good then" Jiayi smiled as she kissed the lips of Prince Wang. The Prince kissed her back.

Suddenly, the door opened.

"I never expected to see Prince Wang in this place inside the embrace of a woman. It's your marriage tomorrow and you're here enjoying the lips of another woman? I pity the Princess that's going to marry such a beast" A mocking tone came from outside.

Prince Wang separated himself from the girl as he walked outside, only to find a man in his early twenties standing outside.

"You are... Prince Zen? What are you doing here?" Prince Wang asked as he looked at the young man.

"Me? You can just say that I was passing through here with my entourage to get to the Royal Capital to attend your marriage tomorrow but I never expected to see you here" Prince Zen said with a smile.

"Can you not tell anyone about this?" Prince Wang asked with a wry smile on his face.

" You don't need to worry about anyone finding out about your little affair..."Prince Zen said but before Prince Wang could smile, he continued.

"... as there are many more important things for you to be worried about"Prince Wang continued.

" What are you talking about? " Prince Wang asked with a serious look on his face.

"Your life, for instance. I don't like cheaters, so you'll be dying today" Prince Zen said with a smile.

" Do you take me for a child? Tell me the real reason" Lu Wang asked as he gazed at Prince Zen.

"Do I need to talk about reasons with a dead man?"Prince Zen chuckled as he said to Lu Wang.

"Your Tricion Empire and my Esteria Empire are friends... Why do you want to kill me?" Prince Wang asked with a slight smile on his face.

" You don't need to know that, "Prince Zen replied.

"Well... Do you really think that you can kill me? Are you forgetting that I'm way stronger than you?" Prince Wang asked with a smile.

"I'm not forgetting about anything, but maybe you're the one forgetting about something. Did you forget that I mentioned my entourage?" Prince Zen said with a mocking look on his face.

Prince Wang grew stunned as he saw two middle-aged men appear around Prince Zen.

"Peak Heaven Realm warriors... Your joke is going too far, Prince Zen" Prince Wang looked at them with a serious look on his face.

"I'm not joking, Prince Wang. Today will be your last day" Prince Zen said with a smile.

"I might not be able to defeat you but even your two followers can't stop me from escaping" Prince Wang pulled Jiayi closer to himself as he said to Prince Zen but his expressions soon changed. Disbelief was clearly written on his face.

"What happened? Can't use your powers?" Prince Zen chuckled as he gazed at Lu Wang.

"Why?" Prince Wang looked towards the girl near him with a melancholic smile on his face.

"Why not? She just accomplished the mission that was assigned to her long ago." Prince Zen said with a smile.

"Mission?" Prince Wang asked without looking back at Prince Zen.

"To intensify the war between Esteria and Qiandi just like we did decades ago. I can't believe the same plan worked twice. Looks like stupidity runs in the family" Prince Zen started laughing as he walked towards the girl.

"But... Our... baby?" Prince Wang asked with wet eyes.

"There's no baby. She isn't pregnant" A female voice sounded from nearby. Prince Wang looked around and saw an old woman standing there. She was the same woman who informed Prince Wang about the pregnancy.

"It was all a trap?" Lu Wang fell down to his knees with a defeated look on his face.

"Prince Wang ran away with the girl he loved just before his marriage and disappeared forever. All the efforts of Tricion to make peace between them were wasted because of Prince Wang. In anger, the Qiandi Empire attacked Esteria with all its force causing both empires to weaken. As both empires lost their strength, Tricion took over both Empires without any effort whatsoever

in the name of ending war. All of it happened because Prince Lu Wang abandoned his empire. That's what the history books of the future will say. It's a good narrative, Isn't it ?" Prince Zen said to Lu Wang as he stood near him.

Lu Wang looked towards Prince Zen but before he could reply, his eyes opened wide as a dagger penetrated his heart. He looked around only to find Jiayi gazing at him with a smile. Prince Wang opened his mouth to say something but only blood came out of his mouth. Soon, he fell to the ground.

"Make the body disappear forever," Prince Zen said to the man standing near him. He turned around but grew shocked as he saw a horse standing at some distance and a girl sitting on top of that horse.

Chapter 157 - 157: Seer Of Destiny

"Make the body disappear forever," Prince Zen said to the man standing near him. He turned around but became shocked as he saw a horse standing at some distance from m and a girl sitting on top of that horse.

"What's she doing here!!! The Princess can't be allowed to bring this news back to the Empire!!! Grab her and kill her!!! " Prince Zen ordered as he looked at the girl in the distance.

"Can't believe brother has a secret lover!!! He didn't even tell me. I must see what my secret sister in law looks like. It's worth the trouble to sneak out without informing anyone. Can't let brother get caught for my curiosity" Princess Mingyu muttered as she strode her horse towards the southern edge of the Empire.

She reached near the spot that was mentioned in the letter yet she couldn't help but halt her horse as she saw the scene ahead.

She saw her brother on his knees with a dagger in his heart surrounded by a few people. She recognized one of them as Prince Pei Zen of the Tricion Empire. She wanted to hurriedly go-ahead to save her brother but her brother fell to the ground. Before she could think much, she saw two middle-aged men flying towards her.

She hurriedly made her horse turn back and started moving in the opposite direction. The horse started galloping as fast as it could. Although it was an Earth Realm beast, it's speed still lacked when compared to the speed of the Heavenly Realm cultivators. As they covered more distance, the distance between them started decreasing.

"I can't get back to the city gates before getting caught. I'm going to get caught if it goes on like this" The girl muttered with a worried look on her face as she kept looking back at the decreasing distance between her and the men who were chasing her.

She looked ahead as she tried to think of a way to survive but suddenly saw a person in her view. The person was dressed in all black while his face was covered behind a mask that covered his face completely. The upper half of his mask and his eyes were hidden because of the big hat he was wearing.

The girl noticed that the man seemed unusual. Although no cultivation could be felt from him, there was an unusual aura surrounding the man which made him feel like a person that should never be offended. Moreover, she couldn't see his cultivation and she chose to believe that it was because he's had a way higher cultivation than her. She had a feeling that he was stronger than the guys following her. She has no choice but to have faith as if he wasn't strong, then she was as good as dead in the next five minutes.

Princess Mingyu made her horse turn in the direction of the mysterious man. As she reached near him, she stopped her horse as she hurriedly jumped down from her horse.

"Sir, Please help me!! " Princess Mingyu exclaimed as she got down on her knees in front of that man.

The black-clothed man stopped in his tracks as he looked at the girl. The girl finally got a view of the man's eyes but was stunned as the eyes were completely blood red. His eyes made her feel fear but she chose to be brave.

"You there!!! Leave that girl behind and escape, or we will have to kill you as well" The two followers of Prince Zen reached there as well and stood at some distance from him while one of them said to the black-clothed man.

The man looked back at the person who had just spoken. As soon as the black-clothed man's eyes fell on the person, the person felt something strange but he decided to ignore it.

"I'm warning you !! I'll kill you if you don't leave" The man again said to the black-clothed man.

The black-clothed man moved his hand and brought his thumb and forefinger closer. He snapped his fingers. As soon as the snap happened, a void appeared in front of the man who had just spoken and sucked him inside before disappearing forever. The screams of the man echoed loudly in the ears of the other man as he took a step back.

Princess Mingyu was stunned as she saw the power of this man.

'This power... so strong' She thought as she gazed at the man.

"I don't like people who threaten to kill me" The man muttered in a soft voice as he again turned back towards the girl. Without speaking a word to the girl, he continued ahead on his journey leaving the man and the girl behind.

"Master!!! Master, please help me!!! Only you can do it. I'm the Princess of Esteria. I'll make sure that you get everything that you desire from our empire if you help me" Princess Mingyu stood up and again ran to his front and got down on his knees.

"What I desire is not something this land can offer me." The black-clothed man muttered.

"Help me for justice then!!! Those people killed my innocent brother and want to kill me as well. I must get to my father." Princess Mingyu said in a pleading tone.

"I'm not a savior of justice. If anything, I'm the one that the heavens need to punish, albeit it doesn't have the strength to do so" The man muttered as he looked towards the sky.

"Please... I'll do anything... If I don't get home, there will be a war that will take thousands of lives. " Princess Mingyu said in a loud voice.

"If you stop one war, another will begin. War and death are all written in destiny. If it's destiny, it can't be changed. As the Seer of Destiny, you must know that " The man said as he gazed at the girl with his blood-red eyes.

The girl grew shocked as she heard the black-clothed man's words as she wondered if he had noticed and was talking about her special physique.

" Please... I'm pleading to you. " Princess Mingyu said as tears appeared in her eyes. The man looked at her for a brief moment before he moved his hand.

"Here...An appropriate gift for a Divine Oracle. A Destiny Crystal. It will bring you to your destiny. If it's in your destiny to die then you'll die the moment you touch it. If it's your destiny to stop the war, you'll be teleported to where you need to be and similarly if it's in your destiny to get revenge instead, you'll be teleported to where you need to be. If you want to fight destiny, don't pick the crystal but you'll die. If you want to go along with the destiny, pick the crystal. You'll be alive but you'll be nothing but a slave to destiny, unable to do anything other than watching its desires being fulfilled. Treat it as a gift or as a curse " The Black clothed Man said as he threw a transparent crystal towards her.

After throwing the Crystal towards Princess Mingyu, the black-clothed man left. The Princess kept calling for help again and again but he didn't stop nor he looked behind.

The man who was following her was still standing there. He was fearful for his life as he saw his partner sucked inside a void so he didn't even move. As he saw the fear-inducing man leave, he looked at the princess with a confused look on his face.

After waiting for a little more, he started moving towards the girl.

"Looks like today is the day you die but I won't kill you right now. I'll bring you to the Prince. I might get rewarded, " The man said as he continued moving ahead.

Princess looked at the man moving towards her and finding no other choice, decided to use the crystal. The man saw her moving towards the crystal and his expressions changed. He had heard the man's words and didn't imagine that she would take the risk of using an unknown crystal. As soon as he saw her move towards the crystal he decided to kill her before she could get there.

He attacked the Princess as he swung his sword. An arc of light hurriedly moved towards the Princess at rapid speed.

As the Princess touched the crystal the sword attack touched her. In the blink of an eye, she disappeared and the attack passed through.

Far from them, The Black-clothed man stood as he gazed in the direction of the girl. As soon as Princess Mingyu touched the Crystal, He shook his head with disappointment.

"Looks like you chose to be a slave instead" He muttered as he closed his blood-red eyes.

He waved his hand as a portal appeared in front of him. He entered inside and disappeared.

As soon as he entered inside the portal, another void appeared behind the man who had attacked Princess Mingyu and sucked him inside amidst his screams.

Chapter 158 - 158: Exposed

Long Chen was passing through the forest in between the boundary of Shui and Huanji Kingdom in order to get to the city of thunder inside the Huanji Kingdom.

He had taken off his mask and was traveling without hiding his face. He had removed the effect of Heaven's Shroud as well which again made his cultivation impossible to be seen just like it was before.

"This horse is pretty fast... Unfortunately, it's not as fast as the horse I had inside the trial world. It's still good though as this will decrease the time it will take to get to the city of thunder " Long Chen muttered as he traveled on the horse feeling the fast-moving wind on his face.

'Roar' A voice sounded from nearby attracting Long Chen's attention.

"Hah, it must be a beast. Finally the opportunity to hone my skills through some battle. I hope it's a strong one" Long Chen let out with a smile as he made his horse change direction towards the place where the sound came from.

Not after long, he reached the place and saw a beast.

"A peak gold realm Armoured Gale Tiger? Nice..." Long Chen muttered as he saw the beast. It looked like a tiger but had a horn and green skin. The air around its skin looked to be much denser than in the surrounding creating something like an armor of wind.

"A girl?" Long Chen exclaimed as he saw the Armoured Gale Tiger moving towards a certain direction albeit somewhat slowly and cautiously. Long Chen saw a girl lying on the ground at some distance of Armoured Gale Tiger.

Without waiting for long, he jumped from his horse and using his movement skill appeared between the girl and the Armoured Gale Tiger.

"Are you the one who made her unconscious? " Long Chen muttered as he glimpsed at the girl lying on her back with eyes closed.

"Doesn't matter." Long Chen muttered as he brought his 'Mountain Destroyer' out of his storage ring as he moved towards the Armoured Gale Tiger. The Armoured Gale Tiger unexpectedly matched Long Chen's speed as it dodged Long Chen.

"As expected, I need to upgrade my movement skill as well. The old one is too weak to help me nowadays. I must learn Earthly Monarch Effect as well to increase my speed when I'm in the City of Thunder" Long Chen let out softly. He swung his sword towards his back at the empty space but Armoured Gale Tiger just happen to appear on that spot and was struck by the sword.

Armoured Gale Tiger fell back on the ground with a wound on it's back. Although the wound was bleeding, It was a minor wound as his wind armor decreased the impact of Long Chen's casual attack.

Before Armoured Gale Tiger could stand up, Long Chen appeared near him and stabbed his sword downwards. The Sword penetrated Armoured Gale Tiger as it roared loudly. An energy blast suddenly appeared from the Armoured Gale Tiger with an extreme amount of destructive power inside. Long Chen felt like this attack would be enough to disintegrate a normal peak gold realm cultivator.

Long Chen's eyes turned black as his body was surrounded by something like an armor made of empty space. The energy blast expanded in area but passed through Long Chen without hurting him in the slightest.

"As always, the space barrier is pretty useful. Works as a good defensive skill" Long Chen muttered with a smile. He looked towards the Armoured Gale Tiger and found that it had already died.

"That was a powerful and clever last attack... too bad you were matched with the wrong opponent" Long Chen let out as he put Armoured Gale Tiger's body inside his storage ring.

Long Chen turned back and walked towards the unconscious girl.

"Beautiful..." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the girl. He walked near her and sat down on his knees.

"She is breathing but her pulse is pretty weak..." Long Chen muttered as he checked her pulse. He put his hand under her back to correct her position but he felt something wet.

"Blood?" He brought his hand out only to find his hand covered in blood.

He slightly picked her up and saw a large sword wound on the girl's back which was bleeding. Without thinking much, he took the "Life Healing Pill" that he received from the Duan Clan patriarch out of his storage ring.

After slowly opening the girl's mouth with his hands, he placed the Pill inside her mouth. His fingers touched her soft tongue as he placed the Pill inside her mouth.

"I need to do as much as I can to save her. Can't sit idle by blindly believing the effects of this pill" Long Chen let out softly with a serious look on his face as he took out a healing ointment from his storage ring that he has brought in greyfall city.

"Uhhh... I must do it to save her even though it's wrong. Furthermore, her top is already torn, I can't leave a girl with a torn dress and a wound on her back. I must do everything to heal her even if it's immoral" Long Chen let out loudly but it wasn't clear if he was talking to the girl or talking to convince himself and to give himself a reason.

After seeing that her breathing was slightly stable, he slightly picked up the girl and got behind her so that he was facing her back. Using his hands, he took her top off revealing her Jade like white back most of which was covered in blood. He took out a bottle of water and a towel from his storage ring. He began washing her back in the non-wounded area and used the ointment on the wounded area.

"Should I wrap her wounds in bandage? I'll have to touch her breasts to properly arrange the bandages. " Long Chen muttered as he closed his eyes with a thoughtful look on her face.

"I have no choice but to do it!!! It's about the safety of a girl" Long Chen muttered with determination.

" Can you stop fulfilling your pervert desires in the name of healing her? Her wounds have already healed" The voice of Xun sounded as she appeared before Long Chen could open his eyes. Long Chen opened his eyes and saw that her wounds had healed.

"Looks like the pill and the ointment did its magic. I'm glad I don't have to wrap the bandages. Saved me the effort" Long Chen let out with an innocent look on his face as he ignored Xun's words.

"You're in big trouble now" Xun muttered as she looked at Long Chen with a cheeky smile on her face as she disappeared.

"Hmm? What trouble?" Long Chen said with a confused look on his face but soon his expressions changed.

The girl slowly opened her eyes and after some effort stood up. She didn't realize that she was topless as she stood up. As she gained focus, She looked back and saw Long Chen sitting behind her.

"Who are you?" She took a step back as she got in an alert position and asked but she felt something strange. The guy in front of her was not looking in her eyes, instead, he was looking downwards. She looked downwards as well and her eyes opened wide as she did. Her breasts were hanging freely in front of the eyes of a stranger without any cover.

"Kyaaa" She screamed as she covered both her peaks with her soft hands.

Chapter 159 - 159:Vision

"Kyaaa" Princess Mingyu screamed as she covered both her peaks with her delicate hands.

"Ahh... it's not what you imagine it is. I was helping you" Long Chen stood up as he said to the girl after seeing her reaction, but he didn't take his eyes off her.

"Seismic slash!" Princess Mingyu said loudly as she covered her breast with one hand and made a slash with her other hand as she used her martial skill.

The Qi in the air became restless as a powerful arc of light appeared and advanced towards Long Chen.

Without wasting a single moment, Long Chen brought out his King's sword as he slashed with his own attack which collided with the arc of light. As a precaution, he had also covered his body with armor of space.

The arc of light was cut in two parts by Long Chen's sword as both parts missed Long Chen and struck the trees on both sides of him.

"I'm being honest miss!!! There was a really bad sword wound on your back and to treat it, I had to take your top off. I couldn't ask for permission as you were unconscious. In Fact, I had to even use my 'Life-giving pill' to save your life. Instead of thanking me, you're assaulting me?" Long Chen said in a severe tone.

Princess Mingyu was already stunned as she saw how easily Long Chen cut her attack with his sword when she heard Long Chen's words.

"Sword wound... Tricion... that's right!!!! Where am I?" She exclaimed as she recalled what had happened to her.

"You don't remember? You're in between the borders of Shui and Huanji Kingdom." Long Chen informed her as he tried to keep his eyes focused on her face, but he was clearly having a hard time as he occasionally stole a few glimpses.

"Shui?Huanji? Where is it? How far are we from Esteria Empire?" She asked in haste with a worried look on her face.

"Esteria? Never heard of it. Since it's an empire, it's probably pretty far off in my opinion." Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

" Far ...? " She mumbled as her eyes became wet.

'Here...An appropriate gift for a Divine Oracle. A Destiny Crystal. It will lead you to your destiny. If it's in your fate to die then you'll die the moment you touch it. If it's your destiny to stop the war, you'll be teleported to where you need to be and similarly if it's in your destiny to get revenge instead, you'll be teleported to where you need to be. If you want to fight destiny, don't pick the crystal but you'll die. If you want to go along with the destiny, pick the crystal. You'll be alive, but you'll be nothing but a slave of destiny, unable to do anything other than watching its desires being fulfilled. Treat it as a gift or as a curse ' She couldn't help but remember the words of the mysterious man. The words he stated before he gave her the destiny crystal.

"Brother... Father..." She mumbled as tears started falling from her eyes.

"Hey... Are you all alright? Don't worry about clothes, I have many with me. Here... you can use this new shirt and robe" Long Chen let out after seeing tears in her eyes. He brought away the clothes from his storage ring and walked towards the girl.

Long Chen extended his hands towards the girl while the girl, being lost in her sense of grief, extended her milky white hand as well without thinking about it.

As soon as her hand touched Long Chen's hands, her eyes opened wide as her pupils changed their color to white.

Princess Mingyu felt like she had traveled through thousands of miles as she stood in a pitch-black space. The scene around her changed as she finally got a clear view of what was happening around her.

She watched her father standing in front of her, but his face had become much haggard as if he had gone through a massive tragedy. Her mother stood near him. Before she could speak a word to her father, the world again became pitch black as everything disappeared.

Another view appeared in front of her eyes as she witnessed a young man who looked to be in his early twenties standing with a pitch-black sword in his hand. He moved around as he kept slaughtering hundreds of people. He killed young, he killed old, he killed everyone who got in front of him and his sword. The man turned back as he looked at her, but the world again became black as the world again returned to darkness.

The world again became colorful as she watched a woman who looked similar to her. That woman was kissing a man, but because the man's back was facing her, she couldn't determine who it was. She took a stride forward towards the couple, but the world again returned to darkness as the view disappeared.

Another view appeared in front of her eyes, but this scene was much shorter for her to infer anything. She envisioned a man. The man seemed like the older version of the boy she had just met a little while ago. He was down on his knees as tears kept falling from his eyes. The guy looked defeated as he cried while on his knees. She didn't know what he was crying about but she somehow felt extreme sadness in her heart. The scene vanished as well.

Long, Chen looked at Princess Mingyu who stayed like that with a blank facial expression on her face. Her eyes soon turned back to normal, but she began falling down as she became unconscious. Before she could fall on the ground, Long Chen grabbed her in his arms. His hands again touched her smooth back as he took hold of her.

"What with you and getting unconscious? Geez... Looks like I need to be a gentleman again and dress you myself" Long Chen let out in a somewhat loud voice.

"Hah, right ... gentleman. Why do I feel that you're happy at this chance? " Xun chuckled with an amused expression on her face as she appeared near Long Chen.

"I wouldn't mind if you desire to do it? " Long, Chen let out with a grin on his face.

" Hah... You know very well that I can't touch her. Go on...enjoy your day" Xun let out with a cheeky smile on her face.

Long Chen safely put Princess Mingyu down on the ground and began dressing her up with his shirt. As he was closing the buttons, his fingers touched the smooth peaks of Princess Mingyu. Although he liked this feeling, he didn't misuse this opportunity and dressed her up as fast as he could.

After dressing her up, He took out a mattress from his storage ring and placed her on top of it as he waited nearby for her to wake up.

"Esteria Empire... Is she really from an empire? I've only heard about the term but don't know the name of any..." Long Chen muttered softly with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Empires are nothing special. They're simply a place where stronger cultivators reside and the Qi is denser. They govern kingdoms because they possess the strength." Xun said as she gazed at Long Chen.

"Do you know where Esteria is? Since she is here, it can't be far. But then again, why did I never hear about Esteria if it was nearby. It doesn't make sense." Long Chen said in a soft voice as he looked back at Xun.

"I have no idea... I don't know about the names of your measly Empires. I have many more significant things that I need to know about" Xun replied with a smile.

"You are no help," Long Chen said with an annoyed look on his face.

"Hmph... You're as rude as ever" Xun said with a pouty face.

"By the way, she's a Third Stage Earth Realm cultivator. You must be careful around her" Xun said to Long Chen.

"I know what I should do... I'm not stupid. I'll never play with my life" Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Xun.

"Oh, Don't worry, I know just how 'smart' you are. I've seen plenty of your actions." Xun chuckled as she looked at Long Chen.

"She's waking up." Xun suddenly said as she looked at Princess Mingyu. Long Chen looked back at her as well.

Soon, Princess Lu Mingyu opened her eyes.

Chapter 160 - 160:I Can't Help You

"She is walking up." Xun suddenly said as she looked at Princess Mingyu.

Lu Mingyu slowly opened her eyes under the watchful gaze of Long Chen. She sat up on the mattress as she looked towards Long Chen but couldn't understand why her heart felt so pained as she gazed at him. Probably the last scene she witnessed in that vision still affected her.

'Why do I feel the sadness when I look at him? Is it because of what I have experienced in the visions?' Princess Mingyu thought as she looked at Long Chen with wet eyes.

"Ahh... You don't need to cry. I agree that I am the one who dressed you, but I promise I didn't touch anything!" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he saw the tears in mingyu's eyes.

"Dressed?" Princess Mingyu muttered as she remembered about her being topless before her visions appeared. Her face turned red as she hurriedly covered her breast. She looked down and breathed in relief as she realized that she was wearing a shirt.

"You dressed me?" Princess Mingyu asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"I did, but only because I didn't want you lying topless in the open. There are many bad people in this world and I wanted to protect you from them. In fact, when I first undressed you, it was only so that I could apply some ointment to cure your wound and before I could dress you up, you woke up and misunderstood me. As you again grew unconscious, I decided to dress you up. Although you attacked me for no reason, I still couldn't leave you alone in such a situation" Long Chen said with an honest look on his face as he stared in her deep eyes.

"You didn't do anything inappropriate, right?" She asked with a wary look on her face.

"Of course, I didn't! I'm as innocent as one can possibly be! I would never do such an indecent thing!" Long Chen let out in a confident tone as he tilted his head slightly upwards.

"Thank you for saving me," Lu Mingyu said in her soft voice as she slightly bowed her head.

" Really? You're not going to attack me? " Long Chen asked with a doubtful look on his face.

"No" Princess Mingyu replied with a smile.

" Finally, I came across a sane person!! " Long Chen said with a smile.

"Why would I attack my destiny? " Princess Mingyu let out as she looked in Long Chen's eyes.

"Ahhhh .. What?" Long Chen let out with a dazed look on his face as he heard Princess Mingyu's words.

"I believe you are my destiny... " Princess Mingyu said again in a positive tone.

"What the hell? Did I talk a little too soon about you being sane? " Long Chen let out with disbelief clearly written on his face.

" You don't understand!!! It's something that can't be changed" Princess Mingyu said with an emotional expression on her face.

"Young Miss... Are you going insane? We've only just met!!! Although I wouldn't mind making you mine, but it's still insane at how fast you are advancing" Long Chen exclaimed as he looked at Lu Mingyu.

"Just Listen to me for once..." Princess Mingyu said in a loud voice as she stood up.

"Alright. Tell me what you want to say" Long Chen replied as he stood up as well and looked back at her.

"I'm the Princess of Esteria Empire! My brother was killed right in front of my eyes... " Princess Mingyu said as she began telling Long Chen the whole story.

"I used the crystal that man gave me and it brought me to you. You are my destiny that will help me save my empire" Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen as she finished telling him everything.

"Ah ... Nope... Sorry. That crystal didn't bring you to me, instead, it brought you to it" Long Chen let out as he brought out the dead body of Armoured Gale Tiger from his ring and placed it nearby.

"I am really sorry but I think that I killed your destiny a few hours back," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"Nope, You are the only one who can help me!!! " The girl let out with a voice full of emotion.

" I'm a normal kid. I can't assist you" Long Chen replied to Princess Mingyu as he turned his back towards her.

"You are a normal kid? A normal kid whose cultivation can't be seen by an Earth Realm cultivator? A normal kid who can so easily destroy the attacks of a Third Stage Earth Realm Cultivator? You think you can fool me? Please help me. You really are my last hope. Long Chen fell into deep thought as he looked at the melancholic expression on the girl's face.

"How strong were the cultivators that were trailing after you?" Long Chen inquired with a thoughtful look on his face.

"I think they were Peak Heaven Realm cultivators," Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen.

"And they were the followers of that Prince Zen?" Long Chen asked again as he looked at her.

"Yes," Princess Mingyu replied as she nodded her head.

"So let me be clear here. You want me to go against the people who have Heaven Realm henchmen. Let alone the real peak cultivators of Tricion, even their henchmen are enough to kill me a hundred times over" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"I apologize, but I genuinely can't help you. I won't interfere in the wars and conspiracies of empires for a stupid reason, such as my false sense of justness. I'm not ready to throw away my life just yet. I am not a hero and I quite love my life" Long Chen said as he rejected the princess' request.

"I know that you are concerned about your safety and you should be. I can sense that you aren't as strong as Heaven Realm cultivators, but you can become even stronger than them!!! I was sent here instead of my palace for a cause. As much as I hate being unable to do it, it's not in my destiny to stop the war. All I can do is try my best to lessen the number of casualties and protect my land from being overtaken by the traitors of Tricion Empire" Princess Mingyu said with a melancholic look on her face as she looked down.

Long Chen noticed tears falling to the ground as he looked at the young woman standing in front of him.

"I can not do it now. .. But if there's a day when I am strong enough and able to manage it without risking my safety, I will help you," Long Chen said in a soft voice as he gazed at Princess Mingyu.

"Thank you for agreeing to my request," Princess Mingyu said as she looked in Long Chen's eyes.

"How long do you suppose it will take for the war to start?" Long Chen inquired with a serious look on his face.

"The events that transpired today... I believe that the war will start in the span of the next few months... and its intensity will reach its peak in a few year's time" Princess Mingyu said with a worried look on her face.

"Hmm... Can you tell me one thing though?" Long Chen asked Princess Mingyu.

"What?" Princess Mingyu asked back.

"Do you hate the person who gave you this crystal? I mean... he could have easily helped you but he put you in this mess? " Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

" I ... I know that he must have his reasons to do so and he helped me survive but yes... I do hate him. I hate him a lot" Princess Mingyu said in an emotional tone. A little bit of anger could be felt in her voice as well.

Chapter 161 - Ch 161. I Don't Lose Control Around Her

" I ... I know that he must have had his reasons to do so and he helped me survive, but yes... I do hate him. I hate him a lot" Princess Mingyu said in an emotional tone and a little anger could be felt in her voice as well.

"You know... you don't look good with anger on your face. You should smile instead as it will highlight your beauty more" Long Chen changed the topic as he said to the girl in an effort to lighten her mood.

"Smile? " Princess Mingyu mumbled as the smiling face of her brother flashed before her eyes. Tears began falling from eyes as she remembered the last moments that she spent with her brother in the palace. She couldn't help but reminisce about the moments she spent with her brother in preparation for his marriage.

"Oh god...I did it again. How come everything I say, makes her cry" Long Chen muttered with a depressed look on his face.

"The past is in the past. Think about the future instead. Stay happy as crying never makes anyone strong." Long Chen said to Princess Mingyu who looked up as she heard his words.

"Are you feeling hungry?" Long Chen asked her with a smile.

"No" Princess Mingyu shook her head as she denied but Long Chen still threw a fruit towards her which she caught.

"Hurry and eat it up. I'm in a hurry to reach somewhere." Long Chen said to Mingyu as he walked towards the horse to get things ready for travel.

"Strange... So strange... She is so pretty and I have been in such close contact with her still my heart demon isn't troubling me" Long Chen muttered as he stood near the horse.

"Why? Did you want it to trouble you? You must have been enjoying fulfilling your desires " Xun chuckled as her voice sounded in his ears.

" That's not it...I just find it strange" Long Chen muttered.

Long Chen climbed on the horse and came towards Princess Mingyu who had eaten the fruit given by him.

"Let's go," Long Chen said with a slight smile as he extended his hand towards the Princess to help her get on the horse.

"Thank you" Princess Mingyu grabbed his hand as she came on top of the horse and sat behind Long Chen. Long Chen began advancing ahead while Mingyu sat close behind him.

"This horse is pretty slow," Princess Mingyu said in her soft voice after traveling with Long Chen for some distance.

"This land isn't as resourceful and the empire the Princess resided in, nor am I as rich as the Princess. It's the best horse I could arrange" Long Chen said with a smile, though he still tried to increase his speed.

"Can you not call me, Princess?" Princess Mingyu said in a soft tone.

"Oh Right. I didn't ask for your name May I know your beautiful name?" Long Chen asked without looking back.

"I am Lu Mingyu," Princess Mingyu said as she gazed at the passing trees.

"It's nice to meet you, Princess Mingyu. My name is Long Chen" Long Chen said as he introduced himself.

"Again with the Princess. Can you stop that? " Lu Mingyu said to Long Chen as a fake anger on her face.

"What should I address you as?" Long Chen asked her as a smile appeared on his face.

"Just call me by my name " Princess Mingyu replied to Long Chen with a beautiful smile on her delicate lips.

"Alright, I'll call you Yu'er then," Long Chen said with a chuckle.

Lu Mingyu became stunned as she heard Long Chen's name for her. She opened her mouth to say something but wasn't sure what to say.

"Why did your eyes turn all white as soon as you touched me? You know... The time before you went unconscious? " Long Chen asked as he remembered something.

" I saw... it's nothing" She opened her lips as she started speaking but she decided not to tell Long Chen about her special physique.

"By the way, can I ask you something as well?" She asked back as she tried to change the topic.

"Sure, go ahead" Long Chen answered with a smile.

"Just a hypothetical question, but what is the thing that can make you cry while you're down on your knees? Do you have a lover or something? " Princess Mingyu asked as she thought about the last vision she saw.

"That's... that's a weird question. Something that can make me cry?... umm I'd say loss of loved ones most probably. Other than that ... I don't think there is anything else" Long Chen replied after thinking for a while.

"You don't have lovers?" She asked again as she smiled.

"You've seen me right. Do you think I won't have lovers? Of course, I have many..." Long Chen let out with a chuckle.

" I have a feeling that you have none. " Princess Mingyu replied with a smile.

" If that's what you want to believe" Long Chen answered back as he laughed.

Suddenly, a little beast passed from the front of him which made him stop the horse abruptly. As the horse was made to stop at suddenly, Princess Mingyu couldn't help but feel shocked as she hugged Long Chen front behind to stop herself from falling.

Long Chen could feel her soft breasts resting on his back as he stayed still without moving in the slightest. He looked down as he saw her milky white hands wrapped around his chest. He felt some sort of reaction as he felt like his little Chen might wake up soon.

"What were you trying to do? Why did you stop so abruptly?*" Princess Mingyu asked with a serious look on her face.

"Some little beast came in front of me abruptly which shocked me and I halted the horse" Long Chen explained to Princess Mingyu.

" Oh... Alright," Princess Mingyu said as she nodded her head.

Long Chen and Princess Mingyu traveled for half a day and kept talking throughout the way as they got to know more about each other. Long Chen occasionally stopped his horse abruptly as he began liking the feeling of Princess Mingyu hugging him.

" Looks like we're already at the border of Huanji Kingdoms. I see the boundary of their border city. " Long Chen let out as he saw the walls of the city.

He made his horse divert and changed direction.

"It looks like their official entry of right at the front. Why are you going in a separate direction? " Princess Mingyu asked with a confused look on her face.

"Oh ... I'm not using the official entry. We'll be jumping off the walls like I always do. " Long Chen said with a smile.

"Ahh... I have two questions. Firstly, it's strange that you always jump through the walls to enter the city and how do you do it? You are not a heaven realm cultivator who can fly? And secondly, are you going to abandon this horse? You know it can't jump that high right? "Princess Lu Mingyu said as she look at Long Chen with a confused gaze.

" Oh Right... I forgot about the horse!" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he changed back the direction.

"I've had a bad history with official entries, so I usually don't take that route but now I have a horse as well," Long Chen told her as they continued towards the entrance.

Long Chen and Princess Mingyu entered the border city by giving the entrance fee without much hassle.

"That was pretty easy. You should take this route more often from next time. " Princess Mingyu said with a smile.

"I'm glad the guards here are more understanding. We're finally inside Huanji. Just a few more cities to pass through and I'll be in the City of Thunder" Long Chen muttered with a smile.

"Is there someone we can ask the direction of Esteria from? I'll be at more ease if we knew where it was" Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen.

"I know a place I can ask... but that will have to wait till tomorrow. It's already pretty late for the day. We first have to find a hotel to stay the night" Long Chen said to Princess Mingyu while the horse kept going ahead.

"Excuse me, sir, Where can I find a hotel in this city?" Long Chen enquired as he stopped a person.

" Oh... You must be new travelers who came here for the first time. There are three hotels in this city. They are..." The man said to Long Chen as he told him the direction of each hotel.

"Thanks for the guidance" Long Chen said with a smile as they left.

They continued ahead to the first hotel but it was full then they went to the second hotel but they soon came out with a disappointing look on their faces.

"Can't believe both the hotels are full. I never knew that the border city was so popular. " Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Let's hope the third one has space for us or else we will have to camp out in the forest" Long Chen said as he made the horse go in the direction of the third hotel.

"Civil Warriors Inn" Long Chen read the name on the board of third hotel as he entered inside with Princess Mingyu after giving the horse to the person assigned by the hotel to take care of the horse and carriage of the guest.

"Do you have rooms available?" Long Chen asked with a smile as he stood in front of the receptionist

" Yes, sir." The receptionist replied with a smile.

"Oh... thank God. Finally, a place with rooms. We need two rooms. How much will it be? " Long Chen enquired with a smile.

" Sorry sir, but we only have one room available" The receptionist replied with a smile.

Chapter 162 - 162: A Dream Of The Beginning

"Sorry sir, but we only have a single room available" The receptionist replied with a smile.

"Does this room have two separate beds? " Long Chen inquired as he looked at the receptionist.

"No. I apologize but this room doesn't have two separate beds. Instead, it has a double bed, which is wide enough for two people to sleep comfortably. It's a couple's room and it will cost you one silver coin for the night" The receptionist replied as he stunned both Long Chen and Princess Mingyu with his words.

Long Chen thought for a little while as he finally decided to get the room.

"Alright. Getting a single room is better than getting none," Long Chen said as he gave a silver coin to the receptionist and received the keys. After getting the directions to the room, he left with Princess Mingyu.

"I'm not sleeping in the same bed as you" Princess Mingyu let out in a soft voice as she entered the room after Long Chen.

"Don't worry, I won't attack you" Long Chen chuckled as he sat on a chair inside the room.

" You can sleep on the bed, I'll place the mattress, that you keep in your storage ring, on the ground and sleep on it" Princess Mingyu let out as she stood in front of Long Chen.

" Hah... I will say it again. You don't have to worry about me. I won't sleep with you so you don't have to worry. I'll cultivate the whole night. You can sleep on the bed" Long Chen said with a smile.

" Alright... If that's what you want. " Princess Mingyu said as she agreed instantly.

The room was just as the receptionist had described. Although there was only one bed inside, it was pretty big as it could easily accommodate four people.

"Go on... I won't invade your space" Long Chen said with a chuckle as he gazed at Princess Mingyu.

Lu Mingyu walked towards the bed and sat on it but she kept looking at Long Chen with a wary look.

Long Chen glanced at Mingyu with an amused look on his face. He stood up and walked to an empty place inside the room as he sat down on the ground. After a moment of peace, Long Chen began his cultivation.

Princess Mingyu watched Long Chen for over an hour before she finally lowered her caution. She lied down on the bed and soon fell asleep.

Long Chen cultivated with the nameless cultivation technique as he crazily sucked the Qi from the atmosphere and increased his cultivation at a fast pace as always. He cultivated for over five hours before he decided to stop. He slowly opened his eyes as he looked towards the bed.

He stood up as he walked towards Princess Mingyu.

'She is so beautiful... That's why It is so strange... I had spent so much time with such a pretty girl yet I am able to control my emotions without becoming a beast and forcing myself on her. She is so pretty that I feel crazily attracted to her yet I haven't lost control. Is my heart demon going easy on me? Is it because of the girl in front of me? Is she special? Or is it because I have gotten stronger and made progress in taking control of my heart demon? Whatever it is... I hope it always stays like this' Long Chen thought as he gazed at the beautiful face of Princess Mingyu.

He turned back as he walked towards the bathroom. As soon as Long Chen left, Princess Mingyu opened her eyes.

'He didn't attempt anything... As I guessed, he isn't bad ' She thought with a smile as she looked towards the bathroom.

Long Chen stood inside the bathroom as he closed the door. He brought out the mysterious egg from his storage ring and looked at it with a smile.

"Time for Dinner, little guy" He whispered as he held the egg with both his hand and began transferring his Qi to the egg which crazily began absorbing it.

After half an hour, Long Chen walked back inside the room as he again sat down on the floor.

He again began his cultivation, but this time he decided to cultivate his body. He used the Qi from the atmosphere as he fed his heart demon which in turn changed it to demonic Qi and sent to Long Chen's body to strengthen it.

'Something is not right! This conversation speed... It's so less compared to the last time I cultivated with the heart demon'

Long Chen felt something strange as he cultivated.

He stopped cultivating and sent his consciousness inside his martial space to check things out.

As he observed his martial space carefully, he noticed a difference. His martial soul and Red core still looked the same yet his heart demon was different.

The heart demon was wrapped in a red cocoon-like thing that was pulsating with energy.

'What the heck? What's going on?' He thought as he looked at the scene.

After observing it for a short time and finding no change in its condition, Long Chen retracted his consciousness from his martial space.

"Xun! " He called in his mind as he allowed Xun with access to his thoughts for a short duration. He didn't want to talk to Xun on the outside as he was in the room with Lu Mingyu.

"Finally allowing me to read your thoughts. What do you need now" Xun's voice sounded inside Long Chen's mind.

"My heart demon is behaving strange. It's inside a red cocoon-like thing. What's happening?" He asked her.

" Something big is happening which is good news for you and bad news at the same time" Xun replied to Long Chen in a serious tone.

" Can you tell me honestly? What's good and what's bad? What's actually happening?" He asked again.

" Well... The good thing is that you won't have to worry about your heart demon for quite some time...And after that time period ends, your body cultivation speed will increase as well. That too by a lot"

Before Long Chen could ask why her voice again sounded.

"... And the bad news is that your worries will increase by a lot as well, from the moment your cultivation speed increases, because what's happening with your heart demon is that it's breaking through to the next stage." She replied to Long Chen.

"It's breaking through? What's that supposed to mean?" Long Chen exclaimed in a stunned tone.

" You'll know more about it when it breaks through. The thing you need to know is that if it successfully breaks through to the next stage, it will become much more powerful than it is now. There's a silver lining though. The chances of a successful breakthrough are pretty low." She explained to Long Chen in a serious tone.

"Should I stop cultivating Demon Monarch Physique while it's going through this process?" He asked again.

"You don't need to... As that won't change anything. You can still cultivate as you did before. Only your cultivation speed of Demon Monarch Physique will decrease while your heart demon is undergoing this process" Xun's voice again sounded.

"Alright. I think I understand now. Thanks for informing me" Long Chen replied as he again closed Xun's access to his thoughts.

He again began cultivating his physique. He cultivated like this for over three hours before he felt like it was enough for the day.

"There's still time for some quick nap" Long Chen muttered as he brought out a mattress from his storage ring. He placed it on the ground as he fell asleep.

"A dream? " Long Chen mumbled as he found himself in an unknown city which was filled with people. He tried talking to one of them but he received no reaction. It was as if he didn't exist in this world.

"What is happening? This dream... it looks as real as the dream I had when I was below Heavenly Cliff" Long Chen let out as he continued roaming in the crowded city.

The city had many beautiful structures and really dense Qi The people all looked like strong cultivators.

Long Chen was waiting in the street when he saw someone on the street who attracted his attention.

A boy ... A boy who looked to be 16-17 years old was walking on the street but unlike most of the people, he was wearing worn-out clothes that were torn at places. Although he looked malnourished, he had a smile on his face as he continued ahead.

"Why do I feel that I have seen him before?" Long Chen muttered as he looked at the boy.

Long Chen found that boy familiar though he couldn't put his finger on it. The boy continued striding ahead as he reached the walls surrounding a large building.

"Star Martial Academy!" Long Chen read the name on the board that was hung on the building.

"Hmm... so it's a cultivation academy... Does he want to learn martial arts?" Long Chen mumbled as he smile appeared on his face.

Although it was a prestigious building, the boundary walls surrounding it were pretty short, Only 1.5 Meters in height.

Long Chen saw the boy picking up a box that was nearby as he placed it near the wall. He climbed up on it as he peeked inside.

"Is he trying to find something?" Long Chen muttered as he saw the boy looking here and there as if he was trying to look for something. Soon, the boy's eyes were fixed in a direction as he looked like he had found what he was looking at. A gentle smile appeared on his face as he kept looking in that direction.

"Let's see what he's looking at" Long Chen smiled as he jumped in the air and landed on top of the wall.

Long Chen looked in the direction the boy was looking at and noticed there was a girl. A girl who looked to be 16-17 years old was practicing her martial skills while the boy was gazing at her.

"Is he in love?" Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he saw the boy looking at the girl with a caring look on his face.

"Who the hell is there!!! What the hell are you peeking at!!!" A boy who was practicing inside the martial academy exclaimed loudly as he noticed the red-haired boy in worn-out clothes looking at the blue-haired girl. His loud voice attracted the attention of others inside as well. Soon, everyone was looking at the red-haired boy.

"Isn't that Shen?" Someone exclaimed.

Chapter 163 - 163: Cruel

"Isn't that Shen? He was peeking at Xiaoyun! Such a shameless behavior. No wonder his parents left him to rot when he was just born. " A sharp voice sounded about the students of the academy.

" Yea, I've seen him stalking Xiaoyun many times. He just never learns"
Another voice sounded.

"He is such trash, still he thinks Xiaoyun will take notice of him? Such fantasy is laughable"

A few people started laughing.

"That's right. He is 16 and he still can't cultivate. Even though he is an orphan who lives on the streets of the city and can't pay fees, Junior Master Shu still decided to teach him cultivation. But he even disappointed him as even after two years of cultivation, he couldn't break through to the first stage of Body Refining Realm. Such trash... Even Master Shu had no choice but to tell him to go away and never come to this academy. Still, this trash shamelessly came here to peak on Xiaoyun. He should just die " A sharp eyes girl said with a smirk on her face.

" I think he is a trash whom even the heavens detest! That's why he is not able to cultivate! Instead of learning his place as trash, he still comes here and instead of learning, he stares at Xiaoyun. Cheh... if I was as worthless as him, I would have preferred dying over living the life of trash and wasting the limited space on this planet" Another person commented in between.

" Hahahaha... right! Dying should be a better option for him" All the kids started laughing as they gazed at the red-haired boy with a cruel look on their faces.

"Tian Shen...." Long Chen muttered as he realized the identity of this young kid.

The red-haired boy looked upset as he heard all their words. He tightly gripped the red flower in his hand as he turned back to leave but his expressions changed as he was held by his collar and thrown inside.

The red-haired boy looked upset as he heard all their words. He turned back to leave but his expressions changed as he was held by his collar.

"Tian Shen !!! You never learn, do you?" A mocking voice sounded in his ears as he was thrown inside the academy.

He grazed his elbows as he fell on the ground. His wounds started bleeding but the boy didn't have any changes in expression as he silently stood up. He looked towards the door.

A boy with blonde hair who looked to be 15-16 years old walked inside with big strides and he grinned.

The boy was known as Liu Shia. His family was considered one of the richest families in the city.

He was followed behind by a pair of brother and sister, both of whom looked to be of similar age.

"You little orphan! How dare you stare at Xiaoyun with your dirty eyes again? Did you forget the last time's beating?" The boy said as he looked towards Tian Shen.

"Hahaha... Young Master Shia, I think he must be itching to get another beating!" The girl behind him said with a laugh.

Tian Shen didn't reply as he started walking towards the exit. The boy who has just thrown him inside stood in between the exit and Tian Shen with his followers.

The boy smiled as he saw Tian Shen walking towards him. He extended his hand towards the shoulders of Tian Shen to stop him, but Tian Shen dodged his hand and continued ahead without stopping.

"You trash!!! How dare you try to escape after being caught" Liu Shia roared loudly as he stared at Tian Shen.

Seeing Tian Shen not react, Liu Shia brought out his blade as he used his movement skill and reached closer to Tian Shen. He swung his blade towards Tian Shen's back which cut his already worn-out clothes along with his flesh. A light cut could be seen on his back as his clothes fluttered in the air. Blood started coming out from the cut on his back.

"Amazing!! Did you see the attack of Liu Shia? Such precise control!! "

" I understand what you mean. He controlled his strike so well. If there was even the slightest mistake, that trash would have been long dead"

" He must have mastered the blade arts of his family. I heard that their special art helps with the precision and control of the attacks."

"Really? That's amazing. It must have taken a lot of effort and teaching for him to reach this stage. As expected of the member from such a famous family."

The students of the academy kept talking amidst themselves.

Liu Shia felt proud as he heard everyone praising him. A bright smile appeared on his face.

Despite being attacked, Tian Shen still didn't stop and kept walking towards the exit. He made no noise even when his flesh was cut.

Liu Shia ran to the front of Tian Shen and grabbed him by his throat. He picked him up with just the grip on his neck and threw him down. Long Chen crashed on the floor.

"Ugh..." Tian Shen finally made a noise as he grunted. He felt like some of his bones were broken as well.

After a lot of effort, he sat up. He couldn't help but cough out a mouthful of blood.

He was about to say something when Liu Shia kicked his chest and made him again lie flat on the ground. Liu Shia placed one of his feet on Tian Shen's chest as he stood tall with a smile on his face.

"Trash will always be trash" Liu Shia started laughing as he looked down.

" Hahahaha....that's where this beggar belongs! At the bottom of people's feet!
" Someone amidst the kids said with a mocking expression on his face.

"Hey, Xiaoyun. He always comes after you. I think he might be in love with you. What do you say to that" A girl standing near Xiaoyun asked her as she grinned.

Tian Shen turned his head towards the girl called Xiaoyun but he felt heartbroken to see her laughing as she looked at this scene.

"I feel like a trash whenever I'm looked at by him. I've seen him many times, just looking at me but I didn't want to dirty my hands so I didn't beat him up. Instead, I asked Liu Shia to teach him a lesson. In Fact, I was there, enjoying the scene when he was being thrashed by Shia but who would've thought that this wastrel still wouldn't learn. He came here as well! It's good though. At

least this situation created an opportunity for everyone to be entertained for a while" Xiaoyun replied to her friend with a smile as she looked at her.

Her words sounded like current to the ears of Tian Shen. The girl he thought of as a pure and kind girl turned out to be the complete opposite. Even Long Chen couldn't help but look at the girl with a frown.

He looked at her as a little tear fell from his eyes but soon his expressions returned to normal.

"Do you feel superior by attacking me? Is this what cultivators feel proud of? I never fought with you nor did I ever hurt you directly or indirectly, yet you always come after me! Leave me or I swear that I will kill you right now! " Tian Shen finally couldn't stay silent as his heart felt like stabbed by sharpest of knives. He roared loudly as he lost his sense of reasoning.

Long Chen watched everything happen in front of his eyes. He couldn't help but feel bad for Tian Shen, but there was nothing he could do to help.

"Hahaha... This trash talk really big, doesn't he? I'd see how you kill me" Liu Shia started laughing madly as he heard Tian Shen's words.

Tian Shen looked towards his left as he muttered something inaudible to others.

A pink-haired girl appears near Tian Shen like a ghost.

"Xun!!!" Long Chen couldn't help but exclaim loudly as soon as he saw the girl.

"Do you really want to do it? The side effects are really bad. " Xun said to Tian Shen in a serious tone.

"I want to kill!" Tian Shen exclaimed loudly making everyone hear his words.

"You found the ring just yesterday, and today you are already using one of your inheritance items. I wonder if I should have told you the uses of the items that you received. I hope you don't regret the things that will happen next" Xun muttered softly as she disappeared.

Long Chen noticed that for a brief moment a storage ring could be seen flickering on Tian Shen's previously empty finger.

"That ring! It's the same one!!! I never knew it could go invisible?" Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the ring on his finger.

Tian Shen brought out a pitch-black pill with some strange patterns on it and swallowed it immediately before Liu Shia could react.

"What did you eat? " Liu Shia asked loudly as he stared at Tian Shen but he received no response from him.

"What the hell? " He exclaimed as he noticed that Tian Shen's eyes became pitch-black like the darkness of the darkest night.

Under the feeling of uncertainty, he decided to kill Tian Shen first and worry about other things later. Liu Shia thrust his blade towards the heart of Tian Shen but before the blade could touch Tian Shen's chest, it stopped in its tracks. A hand could be seen gripping the blade and keeping it in its place.

It was Tian Shen who grabbed the blade. He used his second hand as well and grabbed the blade. He applied some force and the blade immediately shattered into pieces, right in front of everyone's eyes.

"What? How could it happen? Liu Shan's blade is a golden grade treasure! How could it break so easily" People started exclaiming loudly as they saw what happened. A fearful feeling was starting to grip their heart as they watched everything.

Tian Shen stood up while Liu Shia kept stepping backward. Tian Shen disappeared from his spot and appeared in front of Liu Shia as he grabbed him by his throat.

Chapter 164 - 164: Merciless

Tian Shen tightened his grip as a cracking noise was heard. Liu Shia's eyes opened wide and soon they became lifeless. Tian Shen threw the lifeless body of Liu Shia on the ground as he turned to look at the others.

"He's a Demon! Run!!!"

A scream resounded in the place as the whole place turned chaotic. Some people began running towards the exit while some brave ones brought out their weapons as they ran towards Tian Shen but it was all in vain as they noticed that their weapons couldn't even graze Tian Shen's skin.

His previous wounds had completely healed as well. Long Chen watched everything with a stunned expression as he saw Tian Shen kill people one after another. No one could face him as people kept dying. Soon, the whole place was filled with dead bodies. Everyone was dead except one.

A blue-haired girl was still alive. She was on her knees as she kept trembling in fear. Tears kept falling from her eyes as she watched the dead bodies of her friends.

Tian Shen disappeared from his original spot and appeared right in front of her. He extended his hand towards the girl and grabbed her by her neck. He picked her up in the air.

The girl was in mid-air, held by her neck as she tried her best to breathe. She looked in Tian Shen's eyes but found that they were pitch black and looked merciless unlike the eyes of Tian Shen which looked completely opposite.

"Master...w...will be ...back....You... will...die" She said after much effort with hate in her eyes as she gave up on any hope of survival.

Tian Shen tightened his grip and her breathing stopped. He mercilessly threw her body on the ground and looked around. The place was filled with dead bodies and all remains of life were destroyed.

He took a step towards the exit but before he could take the second step, he slumped on the ground as he lost all his strength. His eyes returned to their original color.

He turned and saw everyone dead, but there was no change in his expressions. He turned his head on the other side and saw the girl he liked, lying there,

lifelessly. His expressions flinched for a brief moment but they soon returned to normal.

He tried sitting up but he realized that he couldn't move a single muscle of his body.

"Someone's here..." Long Chen muttered on the side as he felt a strong aura. He looked towards the exit and saw two people entering the place. One of them looked like a man in his sixties. He had a white beard and a head full of white hair. He was wearing a white robe. The other person still looked young and in his late twenties.

They both became stunned and their expressions turned grave as soon as they entered the place.

"Headmaster Gu, this...?" The young man said with a stunned look on his face. He hurriedly ran inside and checked on everyone for any signs of life.

After checking on them, he came back towards Headmaster Gu.

"They're all dead..." Headmaster Gu muttered before the young man could say anything.

"Except him... He is perfectly safe without any injuries in the slightest" He continued as he looked towards Tian Shen.

"Who could've done such a cruel thing."The young man asked with a grave expression on his face.

"Him..." Headmaster Gu moved his hand slowly as he pointed towards Tian Shen.

"He? Headmaster, he is Tian Shen!! I know him as I tried teaching him cultivation before. He was too useless for cultivation as he couldn't even break through to the first stage of Body Refining Realm.

"Didn't you notice? He doesn't belong here, still, he is here. He was inside, yet he is safe. His clothes are cut in places but there is no wound on his body. He is perfectly fine yet he can't move... He must have used a demonic method to do all this" Headmaster Gu said in a serious tone as he looked towards Tian Shen.

"This..." The young man was stumped for words as he heard headmaster Gu's words.

"Why did you do it?" Headmaster Gu asked as he looked at Tian Shen.

"Because I could... Because I was strong enough to do it... Isn't that why you cultivators do all the things, no matter how unjust?" Tian Shen said as he looked at Headmaster Gu.

"You are a demon. You will have to die for your sins" Headmaster Gu muttered as he pointed his finger towards Tian Shen.

A small speck of fire appeared on the tip of his finger which kept expanding until it looked like a 20 centimeters wide orb of raging hot fire.

"I never used my law of fire to hurt anyone but today, you must die," He said in an expressionless tone as he fired that fiery orb towards Tian Shen's head.

Although others didn't notice it, but Long Chen clearly saw a ring flicker on Tian Shen's finger as a red talisman appeared on his hand.

As soon as the talisman appeared in his hand, Tian Shen disappeared from the room and the fiery orb landed on the empty ground. A burning mark could be seen on the floor, but there was no sign of Tian Shen.

"What in the world did just happen?" After a long silence, the young man muttered as he stared at the empty spot where Tian Shen was lying.

"What happened is that we let a demon escaped. Many people will die by his hands because we didn't act faster" Headmaster Gu muttered as he looked towards the clouded sky.

"Inform the family members of the students," He said to the young man beside him.

Long Chen didn't know what to think either. What he saw today changed his whole view of Tian Shen. He jumped inside the building to take a closer look, but before he could land, everything turned white.

Long Chen opened his eyes as he woke up from his dream. He realized that he was sweating but his cultivation was also stronger compared to the moment he went to sleep.

Long Chen noticed that he had broken through to the 9th stage of Gold Core Realm. With a confused look on his face, he looked around and saw Princess Mingyu still sitting on the bed as she looked at him with a weird look.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" He asked as he looked at her.

"What were you dreaming about? Your expressions kept changing throughout your sleep." She said in her soft voice as she looked at him.

"I was dreaming about a friend, going on a rampage. " Long Chen replied to her.

"Anyways, what's the time right now?." He asked as he stood up.

"It's 4 in the evening. You slept for quite a long time" Princess Mingyu told him with a smile.

"If you felt that I was taking a long time to wake up, why didn't you try waking me up?" Long Chen asked back.

"I realized that you probably cultivated all night long, so I couldn't bear to disturb your sleep," Princess Mingyu said as she gazed at Long Chen.

"I never thought that you would be so considerate. Let me get ready, and we'll go to inquire about the whereabouts of Esteria Empire before we leave this city" Long Chen chuckled as he said to her. He left towards the direction of the bathroom.

Long Chen got ready and left the hotel with Princess Mia.

"Where are we going? Princess Miao asked as she walked in the streets with Long Chen.

"Have you heard of 'Jiandie pavilion'? " Long Chen asked as he looked towards Princess Miao.

"Nope never heard of it. What is it?" She asked back.

"It's an organization that is known for its intelligence-gathering abilities. They are one of the top three organizations that are present in almost every city along with Alchemy Hall and Artifact pavilion. They are the only possible hope I have of finding Esteria's location in a short time.

They soon reached in front of a black building which only had one floor. Long Chen entered the building with Princess Mingyu.

After taking his first step in, Long Chen noticed that the whole place looked completely empty. There was only one counter behind which sat a middle-aged man in green clothes. He was reading a book. He looked towards Long Chen at soon as they entered the premises.

"What information do you want?" The man asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"We need to know about the location of the Esteria Empire. We would also like to purchase the necessary maps to reach here. " Long Chen asked as he looked at the man.

"Esteria? Never heard of it. Sorry, I can't help you" The man straight away rejected Long Chen.

Chapter 165 - 165: You Can't Leave

"How can the Jiandie Pavilion not have any information about it?" Long Chen asked with a stunned look on his face.

"There's a good chance that the Empire you are talking about doesn't exist in this continent. That's the only possible explanation I can come up with. If you want information from other continents, you must get it from the branches of the empires that reside in this continent." The man replied to Long Chen before he turned his gaze downwards to look at his book.

"Can you tell me about the nearest empires where we can go to get this information?" Long Chen asked again in a kind manner.

"As this information is not that big a secret, it will cost you only five white gold coins," The man said to them without looking upwards.

"Here..." Without taking any time, Long Chen placed the coin on the table in front of that middle-aged man.

"You must be from a pretty rich family... Alright. Here, take this." The man smiled as he gave a book to Long Chen.

"This book contains complete information about this continent, including all the empires and kingdoms. There are maps inside as well which can help you navigate through various regions of this continent. It is made after extensive research by our Jiandie Pavilion." The man explained to Long Chen.

"Alright, thanks," Long Chen said to the man as he left the building with Princess Mingyu.

"Although we didn't find out about the whereabouts of the Esteria Empire, at least we know that it doesn't exist in this continent. We also know where we can get the information when needed" Long Chen said to Princess Mingyu with a smile.

"Yea," Princess Mingyu nodded her head as she looked towards Long Chen.

Long Chen and Princess Mingyu left the city as they kept advancing towards the core of the Huanji Kingdom which was known as the City of Thunder.

They passed through the forest and the intermediate cities. Long Chen battled many beasts along the way as he traveled with Princess Mingyu. The princess

also joined in some of the battles when Long Chen was faced with a strong Earth Realm beast which he couldn't handle alone.

They traveled during the day and rested and cultivated during the night. Although Princess Mingyu was kind of wary during the night, as their days passed together, she began trusting him and slept without any worries.

Their trip took over 10 days as they finally reached the City of Thunder. The city was situated near a tall mountain range which was barren of any greenery.

"Such Dense clouds. It's just as I had read about this city. A perfect place to train" Long Chen muttered with a smile.

He made his horse advance towards the main entrance.

Suddenly a bright light flashed in the sky which looked like lightning falling on the nearby mountain range, the flash of light was soon followed by a loud thundering sound.

As soon as the sound came, Princess Mingyu wrapped her arms around Long Chen as she embraced him from behind. Long Chen was stunned as he felt her soft breast sticking to his back tightly.

"Are you scared of the thunder?" Long Chen asked with a smile as he looked at her.

" I'm not! " Princess Mingyu replied loudly as she separated herself from Long Chen, but not for long.

Soon, there was another thunder as Princess Mingyu again embraced Long Chen. Long Chen placed his hand on her soft hands which were placed on his chest. Princess Mingyu felt a current pass through her body as soon as Long Chen touched her hands. Before she could react, Long Chen's soft voice sounded in her ears.

"It's alright. Just stay like this. I'm here for you" Long Chen said in a concerned tone.

" Thank you... " She muttered as she rested her head on Long Chen's back.

" Where are you two coming from?" The guards inquired as soon as Long Chen reached the entrance of the city.

"We are from the kingdom of Shui. Here to visit this city" Long Chen said with a smile.

"The entrance is 10 silver coins for one person. 20 for two" The guard said to Long Chen.

"Alright" Long Chen smiled as he gave the coins to the guards. They entered inside as soon as the entrance was opened.

As he entered the city, Princess Mingyu kept hugging him. All the city was covered in the shadow of dense clouds and no sign of sun could be seen.

Long Chen traveled through the busy streets of the city as he traveled towards his destination. He kept asking for directions from strangers as he traveled.

"Get out of the way!" Suddenly, a loud voice came. Long Chen looked in that direction and saw a red-haired girl coming towards them at high speed. The people in the way kept escaping to the sides as they cleared the path for the girl and her horse.

Long Chen looked towards the girl who was followed behind by three young men on horses as they traveled at rapid speed.

Long Chen decided to pass from the gap in between them instead of stopping. His horse kept charging towards the girl and just as he was about to pass from near her, the girl made a movement.

"Didn't I tell everyone to get out of the way? What are you doing barging ahead" A red whip came towards his chest as the girl attacked him.

Long Chen grabbed the whip before it could strike his chest but he felt a burning sensation in his hand.

"It wasn't a normal attack, was it?" He muttered as he pulled the whip towards him in an instant. The girl who was still holding the other side of the whip was shocked as she was suddenly pulled. In her shock, she didn't release her grip and was pulled along with the whip and fell on the ground while her horse kept advancing ahead.

The three guys behind her abruptly stopped their horses as they looked at the girl on the ground.

They all got down from their horses as they hurriedly ran towards the girl.

"Princess !! Are you alright?" They all asked with a concerning gaze.

"I'm fine," The red-haired girl said as she stood up.

"How dare you attack me! You will regret it! I will have you killed!!!" She gazed at Long Chen and said with a furious expression on her face.

"Oh, did I attack you? I apologize " Long Chen smiled as he got down from the horse.

"You think you can just ask for forgiveness after brutally attacking the Princess! You deserve to get your head cut off for such disrespect" One of the three guys behind her said.

Long Chen started laughing as soon as he heard the man's words. He disappeared from his original spot and appeared right beside the girl.

"Since I'm already going to get my head cut off, why don't I do a little more disrespect and enjoy my last few moments to the fullest" Long Chen said with a smile as he roamed his fingers on her soft cheeks.

The girl's face turned red as she punched Long Chen's face with her full strength. Instead of trying to dodge, Long Chen smiled as he easily grabbed her oncoming wrist with his other hand as he pulled the girl into his embrace.

"You should behave yourself if you want to live a long life" Long Chen softly whispered in her ears before he freed her and went back to his original spot.

"You bastard!" The guys who were with the girl roared in anger as they all brought out their weapons and ran towards Long Chen.

Easily doing their attacks, Long Chen immobilized all three of them and made them lie flat on the ground as they groaned in pain.

"I'm sure you must be from good families and you have sufficient reason to be proud of your cultivation, but you should know that there are mountains beyond mountains" Long Chen smiled as he looked at the guys.

" And you... They called you princess, so I assume you're the daughter of the ruler of this city. How dare you behave in such an unforgiving manner inside this city and risk the safety of its citizens. Learn from your mistake or I'll make you learn the next time I see you" Long Chen said in a serious tone as he walked back towards his horse.

"There are mountains beyond mountains...Wise words coming from such a young person. But do you think you can go after hurting them? " An old man arrived near the girl and said with a serious look on his face.

" Uncle Yao!" The girl exclaimed with a smile as she saw the old man.

"Little girl, did you again create trouble? I'll handle things from here" The old man said with a gentle smile on his face as he looked towards the girl.

"You must come with me to his Majesty. We can decide on your punishment there" The old man said as he looked at Long Chen.

" Earth Realm Cultivator... " Long Chen muttered as he looked at the old man.

'If I try, I feel like I can handle him' Long Chen thought as he looked at the man with a serious expression on his face.

"I don't feel like going anywhere with you. I'm in a hurry I'll take my leave" Long Chen said as he turned towards his horse and stepped towards it but he was ready to bring his King's sword out at any moment.

"As I said, you can't leave," The old man said as he moved from his spot and disappeared from his original spot.

Chapter 166 - 166: Another Law

"As I said, you can't leave just yet," The old man said as he moved from his spot and disappeared from his original spot.

Before anyone could realize what happened, they saw the old man flying backward like a broken kite as he crashed on the ground.

"You should listen to him... We are in a bit of a hurry, so stop wasting our time."

People saw the girl who was sitting on the horse like a harmless girl was now standing between Long Chen and the old man who was now lying on the ground. A fierce aura was being excluded from her which made people get the feeling of danger as they looked at the seemingly innocent girl.

"Did... She made Uncle Yao fall down?" The red-haired girl exclaimed as she took a few steps back in shock.

"You... you are also an Earth Realm Cultivator. That too on a higher level of Earth Realm than me... How is that possible! You are so young... Even the first rank kingdoms don't have such talent. Who are you!! " The old man stood up as he gazed at the girl with a shocked look. He even forgot to wipe his face which was covered with dust from his fall.

"My identity has nothing to do with you." Princess Mingyu said as she turned back.

"Since it's all handled, can we go now?" She said with a smile as she looked at Long Chen.

"Hahaha ..I like your style. And here I was thinking that I was a showoff" Long Chen said with a laugh as he climbed back on the horse. He extended his hand towards Lu Mingyu to help her climb like she wasn't an Earth Realm cultivator, but a normal girl.

Princess Mingyu held Long Chen's hands as she climbed back up and sat behind him. Long Chen made the horse move forward and this time no one stopped him. Instead, everyone moved aside to clear a path for them.

"Who are these two... I can't see either of their cultivation. I am sure the girl has a higher cultivation than me but what about the boy... Is he also as strong? The confidence with which he faced me...I get such a feeling. Where are these

monsters from! Are they from... " The old man muttered as he looked towards the departing figure of Long Chen and Mingyu.

"You looked really badass when you thrashed that old man. Who would dare imagine that such a badass girl would become like a scared little kitten at the sound of thunder" Long Chen let out as he laughed.

" You...! If you ever brought it up in front of someone, I promise you will regret it " Princess Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen and Princess Mingyu traveled through the city and soon stopped in front of a place. Both of them got off the horse as they entered that place.

"Hello. My name is Long Chen and this is my best friend. We are looking for a place to rent" Long Chen walked to the store in charge as he asked.

The in-charge of this place was a girl in her early thirties. She was wearing a beautiful black dress that looked like a gown and covered her legs perfectly, not exposing her skin even the slightest. Her hair was tied to a bun while her glasses rested on her nose. She looked at the young people walking inside the door and looked quite bored.

'Such bad kids. So young yet looking for a place to stay with their lovers. I'm sure that they must have run away from their home to have a romantic outing... So young yet so shameless... It must be the guy who fooled the girl... He looks so innocent, who would have thought...' She thought but she didn't let her thoughts reflect on her face.

"Sure. I'll help you. My name is Caihong. What kind of house are you looking for? And how long are you planning to rent the house for?" The Woman asked Long Chen.

"We don't have many requirements. A house that comes with furniture and two bedrooms and other basic necessities. The plan is to stay here for around two weeks." Long Chen said with a smile.

"The minimum renting period is of one full month at least, so you'll have to pay full even if you stay two weeks or a single day," The woman said with a smile as she subtly tried to dissuade Long Chen.

" That's fine. We'll take the place for a month then." Long Chen replied to her.

"Alright. I'll respect your decision. There are three residences that match your criteria. The first and the second would cost you ten white gold coins while the third one would cost you five white gold coins." The woman said as she

showed Long Chen the painting of all three residences. She intentionally allowed Long Chen three of her most expensive places as she tried to teach Long Chen a lesson about him being too young to have a place of his own.

"The third one looks way more luxurious and expensive. Why is it so much cheaper?" Long Chen asked the woman in black.

"There's a story being it. This place used to belong to a Duke, but he vacated it. He kept saying that there was an Evil Ghost inside which almost killed him on many occasions. He put this place in the open market for sale and there were a few buyers, but they all vacated this place as well. Their reasons were similar as some saw spirits while others saw mysterious creatures. That's why this one is so cheap, otherwise, it would have a rent of at least 20 white gold coins for a month." The woman explained to Long Chen.

"Ghosts? I don't believe in them. Do you?" Long Chen asked Princess Mingyu as he looked back.

"Me neither. There must be something else going on" Princess Mingyu replied to Long Chen.

"We are interested in the third mansion. " Long Chen said after thinking for a while.

"I'm not being sarcastic, but just to be sure. Do you even have that much money?" The woman in black asked Long Chen with a doubtful look on her face.

Long Chen smiled as he showed the woman five white gold coins in his hand.

"That's sufficient. Come with me" The woman smiled as she stood up from her seat. Telling her assistant to take care of the place, she left with Long Chen and Princess Mingyu.

There was a carriage placed in the front. The woman gestured towards the carriage as she looked at Long Chen.

"Yu'er, Go with Miss Caihong, I'll follow behind on the horse." Long Chen said to Princess Mingyu.

"Alright." Princess Mingyu said as she entered the carriage with Caihong.

Long Chen stood in front of a large mansion with Princess Mingyu and Caihong as he gazed at it in amazement. The residence was all white in color

but no dirt could be seen on the walls. It looked like it was just constructed with the purest of white marbles.

"Looks nice from the outside" Long Chen let out as he looked at the mansion.

" Looks even better from the inside," The woman said as she let Long Chen inside.

Just as she had described, this mansion looked just as grand from the inside. It had many more than just two bedrooms. There were even a few guest rooms in that place. It was fully furnished with all the things one could need to have a comfortable stay.

"We'll take it" Long Chen agreed after taking a tour of the mansion. They did all the necessary paperwork and Caihong departed.

"Did you find something inside this place that you like? " Princess Mingyu asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"No, why would you say so." Long Chen inquired with an ignorant look on his face.

"When she was showing us around the house, I noticed that your expressions had suddenly changed. It was as if you had found something you were looking for for a long time. Since that moment, you looked really eager to get this place, even though you hid it well" Princess Mingyu said with a smile.

"You don't have to make excuses. Don't tell me. I won't pry on your secrets" Princess Mingyu said as she saw a thoughtful expression on Long Chen's face.

"Thanks" Long Chen smiled as he took a seat.

"I'm taking that bedroom, you can choose the one you like from the other rooms. I'll go cultivate for a while" Long Chen said as he walked towards a room.

" Alright. I'll take that room then." Princess Mingyu nodded her head as she walked to a nearby room.

"Are you serious?... Is there really a law orb inside this place?" Long Chen muttered in a low voice.

"Yes. There's a Law orb here. I sensed the orb when you were getting a tour of the house. That's why I told you to get this place at any cost. This mansion

contains a real law orb made by master. " Xun said as she looked at Long Chen with a serious expression on her face.

"Which law is it?" Long Chen inquired.

"I don't know which law it is. All I know is that there is a law orb here." She answered vaguely.

"There's a thought in my mind. Do you think that the ghost that scared the Duke and the spirits and mysterious creatures might have been the doing of that law orb" Long Chen asked with a thoughtful look on his face.

" That's possible. If that's the case then this orb might be related to the dao of ghosts. It might even be the law of the soul as well. There are many laws in existence and this orb could be any of them. All you can do now is to get that orb and learn it's law" Xun said to Long Chen with a smile.

"Where is it inside this house? " Long Chen inquired.

" I don't know where exactly, but it's in here somewhere. You need to check every place of this residence to know" Xun answered Long Chen.

Long Chen stood up with a determined expression on his face as he started the search from his own room.

"Not in this room." Long Chen muttered as he finished the search of his own room. He exited his room and started going through the rooms of the mansion one by one.

"I looked in every room, even in the kitchen and the bathroom but I didn't see a glimpse of the law orb. The only place still left to search is her room" Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the room that Princess Mingyu chose to stay in.

He walked towards the room and was just about to knock when he heard strange noises coming from inside.

"Ahh... Don't... You beast ... Why can't I use my cultivation? Ummm.... don't touch me there... How dare you do it to me... No... don't take it off" Sounds kept coming from the other side of the door.

Chapter 167 - 167: Xun's Confession

"Ahh... Don't... You beast ... Why can't I use my cultivation? Ummm.... don't touch me there... How dare you do it to me... No... don't take it off" Sounds kept coming from the other side of the door.

With a worried look on his face, Long Chen pushed the door open and entered inside. As soon as he entered the room, what he saw shocked him to his core.

"This..." He let out with his eyes wide open as he looked at Princess Mingyu.

Princess Mingyu was lying on the bed as she struggled her body. Her clothes were torn off at places which exposed her some of her snow-white skin in front of Long Chen but thankfully her clothes were soon intact at the important places.

"You beast !!! I swear I will kill you when I recover my cultivation." She roared loudly as she struggled.

"Aaaa, not my remaining clothes!!! Don't take them off... please let me go" She said as she resisted but the strange thing was that there was no one there.

She looked like she was stopping someone's hand from tearing off her clothes as she struggled.

"I understand what it is now! It's the law of illusions!!! " Xun's excited voice sounded in Long Chen's ears which attracted his attention, though he didn't take off her eyes from the scene ahead.

"Long Chen you bastard! I never knew you were such a person!" Princess Mingyu roared loudly.

Long Chen was stunned as he heard her call his name. Though he still didn't take his eyes off of her. It looked like he was using his eyes to remember every minor detail of Princess Mingyu and her perfectly sculpted body.

"So she is having an illusion that I am attacking her? Do I look like such a person? " Long Chen inquired with a wry smile on his face.

"The way you are looking at her right now...I would say that you really do" Xun laughed as she said to Long Chen as she laughed.

"Anyways...I remember that you told me about the classification of laws. What level is the law of illusion in that spectrum?" Long Chen asked Xun.

" It's an intermediate rank special law. Two ranks below your first law that is the supreme rank special law, law of space and one rank below Tian Shen's first law which was a high-rank special law, law of slaughter."Xun said to Long Chen.

" So... It's a pretty decent one" Long Chen smiled.

" It's pretty versatile and useful law if you know how to use it properly" Xun replied as she looked towards Long Chen but she noticed that his little Chen was starting to stand high as Long Chen gazed at Princess Mingyu's movements.

"Geez. Even when you're in such a serious conversation, you can't control yourself. Go and get that orb. Put that in the storage ring. You can use that to learn the law of illusion later" Xun let out as she facepalmed herself.

Long Chen after much effort, took his eyes off of Mingyu as he began looking inside the room. He soon found a beautiful white orb placed on a shelf like a decorations item.

Long Chen began walking towards the orb.

"Long Chen!" He reached near the orb when he heard Xun's voice coming from behind.

He stopped on his tracks as he turned around. He saw Xun walking towards him with small steps and soon, she stood in front of him.

"There is something that I wanted to tell you for a long time," She said to Long Chen as she lowered her head.

"What is it?" Long Chen asked back as he grew confused.

Xun walked closer to Long Chen as the distance between them decreased to a meager one inch.

Xun gazed in Long Chen's eyes with a serious look on her face. Long Chen couldn't help but worry about the thing that made Xun look so serious.

He was about to ask her when suddenly Xun tiptoed as she closed the distance between them. Her lips met Long Chen's lips. Long Chen felt like his whole world started rotating as he got a taste of her lips. He wanted to keep sucking on those sweet lips till eternity but it didn't last for long. Xun separated her lips from Long Chen's lips as she looked in his eyes.

"I love you, Long Chen," She said to him as her face turned slightly crimson.

"You... love me?" Long Chen asked back with a stunned look on his face.

"Yes...I want you to be mine...I have always wanted to be mine but I wasn't brave enough. I gathered all my courage just to confess my love to you. Right now, I have the strength I needed to make my love known." Xun said as she lowered her head.

"Because of the orb's mysterious effects, we can touch now. I want to use this opportunity to make myself yours completely* Xun said in a soft voice as she looked in his eyes.

She moved her small delicate hands as she took off her clothes and revealed herself completely in front of Long Chen.

Her small breasts were not as big as Princess Mingyu's large chest but they looked perfect the way they were. Long Chen couldn't help but gaze at her peaks for an extended period of time.

Soon, Xun's petite body fell into Long Chen's embrace. Long Chen began kissing her madly as he sucked on her lips. His hand rested on her ass while his tongue played with hers.

Long Chen separated himself from her embrace as he hurriedly took off her clothes. He was just about to take off his pants when he stopped.

"Something is not right..." Long Chen muttered as he looked towards Xun and then towards the orb.

"It must be an illusion...Xun would never act like this. Also, how can the law of illusion allow me to touch Xun? It can only make people see illusions, but can't make things come to exist in reality" Long Chen muttered to himself as he extended his hands towards the orb.

" Why... Don't you like me? Don't you want to be with me? " Xun asked as she looked at Long Chen with a little tear in her eyes.

"I like the real one..." Long Chen said with a smile as he placed the orb in his ancient storage ring.

He turned back and just as he had expected. Xun wasn't there. She was standing on her original spot as she looked at Long Chen with a weird expression on her face.

"Why were you getting your tongue out of your mouth like a dog? Did you fall into the illusion at well? Who was the girl that you dreamt about? " Xun asked as she chuckled.

"Yea, I fell for the illusion but I overcame it. As for the girl, let's keep it a secret for now" Long Chen said with a smile.

" Please don't..."Princess Mingyu kept moaning but suddenly her voice stopped. Long Chen who was molesting her had disappeared from her embrace like an illusion. She looked around with a confused expression and soon saw Long Chen standing far away without his shirt, but thankfully he was still wearing his pants unlike the one in her illusion.

"That illusion must have been a pretty strong one. Don't worry, I destroyed the evil spirit that was creating all this mischief" Long Chen said with a smile as he looked at her.

Princess Mingyu was about to say something when a scream escaped from her mouth. She had suddenly realized that her clothes were torn off at places. She hurriedly covered her body with the nearby blanket.

"I've already seen plenty" Long Chen smiled as he muttered but he realized that he had said something wrong. He hurriedly left the room before Mingyu could understand his words.

"You bastard!!!" Voice of Mingyu resounded in his ears as soon as he left the room. He hurriedly went back to his own room.

"The timing of finding this orb is just right. If your heart demon wasn't going through its evolution process, you would definitely have lost yourself in the illusions" Xun muttered as she sat on the bed.

" That's right... I should learn this law fast " Long Chen said to Xun.

He brought out a letter and began writing on it.

"Yu, I'm going on a closed for cultivation and won't come out for quite some time. If needed, extend the renting period of this mansion. You'll find the money on top of this paper. You can use the extra for purchasing things that you want." Long Chen wrote in a letter.

He went outside his room and placed the letter in front of Xun's door. He also placed Twenty white gold coins on top of the paper before he went back to his own room.

"You know how to do it right? Do just as you did before with the Orb of space law" Xun advised him.

" I know" Long Chen smiled as he brought out the law of illusion orb.

He placed the orb in front of him. With a serious look on his face, he placed both his hands on top of the illusion orb.

As soon as he touched the orb, Long Chen felt like he disappeared from his original spot inside the room and appeared in a different city.

Chapter 168 - 168: Family Against Family

As soon as his hands touched the orb, his head started aching as he felt like his head was being crushed by someone. Long Chen noticed that his surroundings were changing. The previous room had disappeared and instead of that, buildings and shops kept appearing in his surroundings. Xun had also disappeared from her original spot and now she was nowhere to be found.

Soon, the changes to his surroundings stopped along with his headache and he found himself sitting on the streets of a city.

The city looked exactly like the city Long Chen had resided in... Dragon City of Shui kingdom. The strange thing was that this city was completely empty. Every direction Long Chen looked at was completely void of people.

"What's happening here... This place is completely different from the place I was sent to when I had used the orb of space." Long Chen muttered as he kept looking around but he found not even a shadow of a living being.

After thinking for a while, Long Chen began walking. He walked towards a certain direction in which resided the insane he knew the best. The sun was high in the sky when Long Chen stopped in front of a large mansion.

"As expected, This is dragon city" Long Chen muttered as he looked at the mansion ahead. It was the Long clan mansion which still looked exactly the same. There was not even a minor change.

"How am I supposed to learn the law of illusion in this place..." Long Chen let out with a confused look on his face as he walked towards the mansion but he suddenly stopped in his tracks as he looked ahead.

The door of the mansion was suddenly opened as two beautiful girls came out from the inside. Both the girls looked to be in their early twenties.

"Xue? Mei? How are you here?" Long Chen exclaimed as he looked at the girl standing at the doors of the mansion.

Long Chen was just about to say something when Xue started running towards him. As Xue was running, a knife had appeared in her hands midway. Xue swung this knife towards Long Chen's chest but Long Chen dodged it easily. Xue kept attacking while Long Chen kept dodging.

Long Chen was busy dodging Xue's attacks that he didn't notice that Mei had silently appeared behind him. As she attacked him from behind, Long Chen

sensed something as he dodged to the side but Xue's attack came from the other side.

Although Long Chen dodged their attacks, a wound appeared on his chest. Blood started flowing from his wound.

"That actually hurt! How can I learn the law of illusion this way? I might even die instead of being able to find out a clue about what this orb wants." Long Chen let out with an annoyed look on his face as he kept dodging their attacks.

"Alright, that's enough! Although I know that you two are just an illusion and not real, I didn't really want to attack you. But I still can't keep taking attacks like this. Even if you're the illusion of the women I like, I would still have to destroy you" Long Chen finally came to a determination as he made a decision.

He brought out his 'Mountain Destroyer' as he attacked towards the neck of Xue. Xue tried dodging but the sword was too fast for her.

Just before his sword could touch Xue, Long Chen sensed danger. He changed the direction of his sword in midair as he swung it in a different direction.

A clunking sound came as his sword struck another sword. It looked like Long Chen was defeated in that clash as he flew away like a broken kite and crashed on the ground.

"Grandfather is here as well. This place is getting worse by the second." Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he stood up and looked towards the front.

He saw an old man standing there. The man had a long shiny white beard and a head full of white hair. He was wearing a golden robe with a dragon symbol on its chest, which was the symbol of the Long Clan. He was Long Ren. Long Chen's grandfather. Behind him stood Xue and Mei.

"So now I have to face a Second Stage Earth Realm cultivator as well who looks like my grandfather, along with the women that I like. Such great luck. Looks like I will have to go all out" Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

He put his Mountain Destroyer back inside his storage ring and brought out his King's Sword.

A heavy sword aura spread in the atmosphere as soon as the sword came out as if it was telling everyone that it was the ruler of this land and no one would

think of ever resisting him. Long Chen's own aura rose as soon as he held the sword in his hands.

"Heavenly Demon Wings" Long Chen muttered as two beautiful wings appeared behind his back. One of the wings was black while the other one was golden. Long Chen flew towards Long Ren with his sword in his hand as he attacked with his full strength.

Long Ren used his sword and struck out as well. As the swords struck each other, a loud sound was made. Both the men were forced to take a step backward as they looked at each other.

Although Long Chen's sword looked the same, Long Ren's sword was dented a little when it collided with Long Chen's sword.

Long Chen again moved towards Long Ren and attacked. The strength of both of them looked to be similar. Although Long Ren was a 2nd stage Earth Realm cultivator, Long Chen was in the 9th stage gold core realm and his red core made his actual strength many times stronger than the strength an average 9th stage Gold Core Realm cultivator is supposed to have. His demon Monarch Physique strengthened his body, which further added to his strength. All such things made his strength equal to Long Chen if not stronger.

As Long Chen and Long Ren collided, Xue and Mei also kept attacking in between. Long Chen easily handled their attacks on most occasions but still, he was wounded many times. Long Chen was fighting a three to one battle but he was giving them all a tough fight.

Soon, Long Chen found an opportunity as he attacked Xue. The attack was so fast, that although Xue tried dodging, her chest was penetrated. Instead of bleeding, she disappeared.

Without wasting time, Long Chen attacked Mei, but this time he was intercepted by Mei. His battle with Long Ren and Mei continued again.

Mei once again appeared behind Long Chen as she found him distracted by Long Ren. she thrust her knife at his back. Long Chen moved to the side as he swung his sword. His sword hit Mei and she disappeared as well.

"Looks like only you and I are left. I really hate myself for fighting you even if you are just an illusion" Long Chen muttered as he looked at Long Ren.

"I'll use something I was finally able to learn recently. Let's see it's actual strength." Long Chen smiled as he got into an attacking stance. The Qi in the atmosphere began getting restless.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Fifth Form: Chaos! " Long Chen roared loudly as he fiercely swung his sword.

A blinding arc of blood-red light escaped from his sword and moved towards Long Ren. Everywhere this attack passed through was left behind with nothing but destruction. Every structure in its path was disintegrated into nothingness as the arc of light moved forward like the sole ruler of chaos.

Long Ren retaliated with his own attack. As both attacks met, Long Ren's attack was instantly disintegrated. Long Ren used his sword to defend himself but his sword broke as well as soon as it came in contact with Long Ren's attack.

Long Ren wanted to dodge but before he could move, a sword stabbed his heart from his back. Long Chen had attacked him personally from behind as he didn't want to take a chance and drag out the battle.

Soon, the blood-red arc of light landed on Long Ren's body and cut it in half. The body disappeared soon after.

"I'm sorry" Long Chen muttered with a serious look on his face as he looked upwards.

Suddenly Long Chen noticed something. A bright pillar of light appeared in the direction of the south.

"Heavenly Demon Wings" Long Chen muttered as two wings appeared behind his back. He began flying towards the south.

Long Chen kept flying south until his wings disappeared from the depletion of his Qi reserves. He came down as he decided to travel on foot as he recollected his Qi.

In the search of that pillar of light, Long Chen kept moving south. He even exited the dragon city as he kept walking. After collecting enough Qi, he again began flying.

"It's that place?" Long Chen let out as he reached near the Heavenly Cliff.

He flew downwards as he landed at the bottom of the Heavenly Cliff. Long Chen noticed that everything still looked the same. The lake looked just as

beautiful while the trees looked just as many in numbers. Long Chen gazed at the pillar of light which was now in front of him.

He walked towards it and touched it. The light started dimming as soon as he touched it and soon, it completely disappeared. Long Chen finally got a clear view.

"Oh, Shi* ." Long Chen cursed his luck as he saw ahead.

Chapter 169 - 169: Against Tian Shen

"Oh, Shi* ." Long Chen cursed his luck as he looked ahead.

Long Chen saw a 16-17-year-old boy standing in front of him. The boy was wearing worn-out clothes that were covered in blood. His eyes were pitch black which stared at Long Chen without an ounce of emotion in them.

"Tian Shen... That too the version which was under the effect of that strange pill that he ate... " Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he looked at the boy standing in front of him. The boy looked to be in a similar condition as Long Chen had seen him inside that dream. He was wearing the same clothes and looked just as skinny.

"If I'm not wrong, you must be the illusion of Tian Shen from my dream. Just when he had just found the ring. As far as I could guess, you had no cultivation at that time but you used that strange pill to increase your strength temporarily even after knowing the side effects, just to kill all those people you wanted to kill." Long Chen let out as he looked at Tian Shen but Tian Shen didn't reply.

"It's gonna be a tough one" Long Chen muttered as he moved. He disappeared from his spot.

He appeared behind Tian Shen but just as Long Chen was about to strike him, Tian Shen disappeared from his spot as well.

Before Long Chen could even react, Tian Shen appeared behind him as he punched him. Long Chen flew ahead as he crashed twenty Meters away.

"That hurt.." Long Chen said in a serious tone as he stood up and looked at Tian Shen.

Long Chen again moved towards Tian Shen as he punched towards his face. He utilized his Demon Monarch Physique to its fullest potential as he attacked Tian Shen.

Tian Shen reacted to Long Chen's attack as he punched back. Their fists collided.

While Long Chen was forced ten steps backward. Tian Shen was forced back by only five steps after their initial collision. Instead of stopping, Long Chen kept attacking Tian Shen as they kept attacking each other. They were using only their physical strength for this fight.

"You don't have Cultivation knowledge and skills as you gained temporary strength through that pill. Since that's the case, even if you are stronger than me physically, I can defeat you!!! " Long Chen let out loudly as he brought out his king's sword.

A fierce aura spread in the atmosphere as soon as the sword came out. Long Chen looked at Tian Shen with a determined look on his face as he got ready to attack.

Against Long Chen's expectation, another aura began spreading in the atmosphere. This new aura clashed with the aura of the King's sword and wasn't losing in the slightest.

Long Chen saw a pitch-black sword in Tian Shen's hand which was excluding this aura. It was the sword that Tian Shen had just taken out from his storage ring and now he firmly held it in his right hand.

"His inheritance came with a sword as well? Why do I feel that his inheritance is way more awesome than my inheritance? All I got was an egg that refuses to hatch" Long Chen muttered with a wry smile as he looked at Tian Shen's sword.

"Whatever, you can have all you want and I will still defeat you" Long Chen let out loudly as he attacked Tian Shen. Their swords kept colliding for nearly twenty minutes with no apparent winner. Although Long Chen was skillful in his swordsmanship, Tian Shen had the raw strength in his arsenal. There was no clear winner as the fight continued.

Long Chen suddenly created distance between him and Tian Shen as he got into a stance.

"Seven Forms of Sword saint: Fourth form- Desolation! " Long Chen let out loudly as he swung his sword. A bright arc of light moved towards Tian Shen while a powerful wave of air following it.

The attack looked like it could destroy anything standing in its path whether it be nature or man. Everywhere this arc of light passed through was left with nothing but desolation.

Tian Shen stood tall in front of the attack as he looked at it without a change in expression. He picked his sword high up in the air as he swung it down with full force and cut towards the arc of light that had reached near him.

The light was cut in two parts as it passed through both sides of Tian Shen but it still wasn't enough to protect him as he realized that there were deep sword wounds on both his arms which had now started bleeding.

There was no change in Tian Shen's expressions even as he bled. It was like he couldn't feel the pain in the slightest as he kept fighting back.

"His speed and strength are both at a completely different level than mine but how come the effects of that pill isn't over by now. In that dream, the effects were over pretty soon... but so far, it's been hours but I see no signs of the effect wearing off..." Long Chen let out with frustration in his voice.

"This is the place to learn the law of Illusion... this whole world is an illusion with no rules to govern the natural restrictions..." Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful expression as he felt like he received an idea. He created some distance between him and Tian Shen as he finally got a chance to breathe.

"What can I do to use this lack of restriction in my favor... I'm here to learn this law... To learn it, I need to use it to my advantage, only then can I master it. The illusions... How can I use it?" Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Illusions can make anything reality. The laws don't exist for them as anything is possible... and this whole world is as such...an orderless creation. " Long Chen said with a determined voice as he stood tall.

"Heaven's Shroud! "Long Chen roared loudly as he activated his martial skill. Although this skill only increased the aura and cultivation level of a cultivator to a higher realm, it didn't actually increase their actual power even by a little compared to their original level. In a simpler term, it could be said that this skill was only making them look like a stronger Cultivator but didn't contribute even a little bit to their strength.

"If there's no order in this world, then I'll use it to my advantage! I am a 9th stage Earth Realm cultivator! Nothing can change that in this world" Long Chen let out as his heaven's Shroud activated. His aura increased explosively as it reached the level of a 9th stage Earth Realm cultivator.

"I might be cheating to defeat you but I think that's the whole thing about this law. It's cheating and changing the reality to your desires. It is to create a world in which you're the god even though that world is not real! I will be that person! " Long Chen let out as he attacked Tian Shen with his sword.

Their swords again collided, but this time, the effects were different. Instead of being an equal fight, this collision made it seem like Long Chen was the clear winner as Tian Shen was thrown back. Tian Shen crashed on the ground and twenty meters away from Long Chen.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Fifth form- Chaos!!".

Long Chen got into his sword stance as he attacked Tian Shen with the strongest skill he had learned.

A blinding flash of light moved towards Tian Shen who was still lying on the ground. Long Chen's attack looked like it was on a journey to destroy all creation as it moved towards Tian Shen.

Long Chen had used this same attack against his grandfather in this illusory world but this time it looked like the strength of this attack was many times more than the last time.

Using this illusory world and the little bit of entitlement he had gained about the illusions and the lack of the rules that they must follow, Long Chen modified the effects of his heaven's Shroud so that he was actually a Peak Earth Realm Cultivator in this world.

His attack was amplified by his sudden jump in cultivation from the 9th Stage Gold Core Realm to the 9th Stage Earth Realm.

Tian Shen had stood up by this time and he again swung his sword as he struck back. His sword collided with Long Chen's attack but unlike previous times, the effects were completely opposite. As soon as the blinding flash of light disappeared, Long Chen noticed that Tian Shen had disappeared from his spot along with it.

The only thing still remaining was his pitch-black sword was left behind.

Long Chen sat on the ground with a dead tired look on his face as soon as he was sure of his victory.

He was breathing heavily as this battle had completely exhausted him.

"What now..." Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the sky.

He turned his gaze downwards as he noticed something strange. Tian Shen's sword that was left behind had started shining. The shape of the sword started changing as well. Soon it was transformed into a scroll.

Long Chen stood up as he slowly walked towards the scroll and picked it up. He opened it and saw words written inside.

Chapter 170 - 170: Cruel Pill

"Reality can be whatever you desire... " Were the words only words written inside the scroll.

Although these were only words, Long Chen felt like these words contained some strange power. The words looked illusory yet real at the same time. Long Chen kept looking at these words for a long time as he lost himself in the mysticism of these words.

After an unknown period of time, Long Chen felt like he had gained some enlightenment as he sat down on the ground and started meditating.

"What is reality? What is an Illusion? Illusion is everything I make it out to be and so is the reality. The only difference is that illusion is as weak as one's imagination and as strong as one's determination. It can be fake and still be real as long as one believes it to be real. An illusion does not need to follow the laws of this world as it is not real and does not exist! Thus it is out of this world's bounds. " Long Chen muttered as he slowly opened his eyes.

Long Chen looked around and noticed that he was back inside his room. Xun was still sitting in front of him and everything still looked the same.

"How many hours has it been?" Long Chen asked Xun as he looked at her.

"Hours? You have stayed like that for five years. I was starting to feel like you would never wake up..." Xun replied in a serious tone as she looked at him.

" What the heck? " Long Chen exclaimed loudly as he stood up with a stunned look on his face.

"Five years?"He again asked as if looking for assurance as he looked at Xun

"Yup. That girl called Mingyu had left this place years ago. She tried calling you but you didn't answer. She increased the lease of this mansion by two months and stayed here waiting for you but after getting no response, she thought that you didn't actually want to help her and will only cultivate here in seclusion for years to come." Xun told Long Chen in a serious tone as she gazed at him.

"Wow, I never expected such a long time will pass in an instant. It is similar to the trial world, I should be used to it by now."Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"At least there's one silver lining. I'm 20 years old now. Let's see if the older me looks as good as I imagined myself to look." Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the mirror and saw himself.

"Good joke" He turned back as he looked at Xun with an annoyed look on his face. Xun saw his expressions as she began laughing. Long Chen still looked like a 15-16-year-old boy as he looked at his reflection in the mirror.

"I'm sorry for lying to you... but I really wanted to see your expressions. I must say it was worth it." Xun said as she tried to control her laughter.

"If you had your fun, can you tell me honestly how much time had passed? " Long Chen asked as he looked at Xun.

"Only Seven days have passed so far. As the law orb has broken, I assume that you have learned the law of illusion and formed your illusion law seed? It's a pretty good speed I must say" Xun said with a smile as she looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen finally noticed that the pieces of law orb were lying on the ground as it had broken apart.

Long Chen used his consciousness to enter his Martial space and could actually see a seed-like thing floating near the ground. Entire space filled with stars could be seen inside this seed which just floated a few inches above the ground. It was the law seed of space but right beside it now existed another seed which was floating, albeit slightly lower. The second seed looked semi-transparent. Long Chen could easily guess that this was a law seed of illusion.

His Martial soul stood far from the law seeds, still with eyes closed. It had a symbol on the dorsal side of his left hand. It looked like an ancient Character. Xun had told Long Chen that it was the proof of his martial soul now gaining an affinity with space law.

Although Long Chen couldn't see because of the Armour his martial soul was wearing, there now existed another ancient character in the lower back of his martial soul. Long Chen brought his consciousness out.

"Yea, I gained some enlightenment about it" Long Chen let out as she told Xun.

" What did you have to do to learn it? Was it similar to your learning space law? " She asked back.

"Nope, In Fact, it was completely different. I was inside the Dragon city and I had to face Xue, Mei, grandfather and... Tian Shen. Thankfully I was able up to defeat them all " Long Chen let out as he sat beside Xun on the bed.

" What? How did you win? Tian Shen isn't someone who can be defeated so easily... His fighting sense is the finest that I have ever seen." Xun asked with a doubtful look.

"Well, I was paired with the version of Tian Shen from the time when he had no cultivation and no knowledge of fighting. He was under the effect of a strange demonic pill. You know... Just like Tian Shen who committed the slaughter in Star Martial Academy... " Long Chen let out as he lay down on the bed and looked towards the roof.

"That... how do you know about that time?" Xun asked with a stunned look on her face.

" Oh Right, I remember that I have prevented your access to my thoughts. So you can't even access my dreams without my permission and you didn't see the dream I had. " Long Chen let out with a realization.

" What happened was that I had a dream about that event. I saw you appear there briefly as well. It looked like you were kind of warning him again using that pill" Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

" How are you still having dreams of Tian Shen? I don't understand what is happening... " Xun let out with a confused look on her face.

"The pill that gave him such strength must have some side effects... " Long Chen said as he interrupted Xun's thoughts.

"Yes... There was a negative effect of that pill. A big negative effect... " Xun muttered.

" What? " Long Chen asked with curiosity on his face.

"Loss of cultivation and death! That pill was only useful for cultivators below Earth Realm. Once someone uses that pill, their physical strength and reflexes will improve by an abnormal amount. A person who has no cultivation would be able to face an Earth Realm Cultivator with ease, and if a Gold Core Realm Cultivator consumed it, he would be able to face even Heaven Realm Cultivators. As for it's side effects... you would lose your cultivation... but not instantly. You might even die"Xun said with a serious expression on her face.

" You would lose all your cultivation as soon as you reach the Heaven Realm Cultivation and you will have to start your cultivation all over again. And if a Cultivator can't reach Heaven Realm in 50 years, they would die as their heart stops." Xun muttered with a downcast look as she looked down.

"Such a cruel pill! Losing all cultivation, that too after reaching a realm like the great Heavenly Realm! And you will die if you don't reach that realm. Wow..."

" Long Chen let out with a stunned look on his face as he tried to imagine what one must be going through to take this pill, despite knowing it's side effects.

"So he reached Heavenly Realm... lost his Cultivation and again reached such a realm... Tough to imagine that he was the same person who couldn't even break through to the First Stage of Body Refining Realm" Long Chen muttered.

"His being unable to cultivate wasn't because of his lack of trailer talent... Let's not talk about his past as those things are not what you need to know." Xun said as she looked at Long Chen.

"If you say so. Anyways, why is there such a disparity between our inheritances? He got so many things like the sword, the pill and I'm sure that there must be many more while I only received the egg that refuses to hatch. " Long Chen said to Xun with an annoyed expression as he sat up.

"Hah, Are you jealous? Sorry, but I have no control over who gets what" Xun said to Long Chen with a chuckle as she looked at him.

"Your..." Long Chen was about to say something when there was a knock on the door. He stopped his sentence as he stood up.

Long Chen walked towards the door as he opened it. Long Chen saw a beautiful girl standing in front of him.

"Yu... Do you need anything? By the way, it had only been a few days since I last saw you, but I must say that you're looking even prettier than before. " Long Chen complimented her with a smile as he gazed in her eyes.

" Thank you. There was nothing important that I wanted to talk about. It's just that you had stayed in your room for seven days, and I was starting to get worried. The thing is that I had heard that there is a fair in the city this evening. I wanted to ask you to come with me" Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen.

" A fair? Sounds exciting. I'll come with you. Let me get ready." Long Chen said with a smile at he accepted Princess Mingyu's invitation.

"Alright, I'll be in my room. You can knock on my door when you're ready" Princess Mingyu said as she left.

Long Chen closed the door and went inside.

"A date with your crush? I won't disturb you" Xun smiled as she disappeared.

An hour passed as Long Chen got ready. He left the room and walked towards Princess Mingyu's room.

Chapter 171 - 171: Fortune Teller

An hour passed as Long Chen got ready. He left the room and walked towards Princess Mingyu's room.

"I'm ready to go" Long Chen let out as he knocked on the door. Soon, the door was opened by the Princess, who had also changed her dress by now. She was now wearing a beautiful green gown.

"Nice dress... Did you buy it?" Long Chen inquired as he gazed at the dress.

"Yea, I got it just a few days back. I'm glad you like it" Lu Mingyu replied to him with a bright smile.

"Let's get going" She left the room as she took the lead. Long Chen followed behind.

"This fair is an old tradition of this city and it is organized every year. Just for this day, shop owners of this city come together as they celebrate. Every shop sets a booth outside their shop from which you can buy stuff or pay a small amount of money to play interesting games and win stuff from their shops. Every shop tries to come up with fun games to attract customers." Princess Mingyu excitedly explained to Long Chen.

"Oh, You know so much about it... Did you make a new friend or did you do research on it?" Long Chen asked with a chuckle.

"I just heard it from the people when I went shopping for things," Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen.

"Hah, It's all good. Now you can be my guide in this strange city " Long Chen said with a smile.

"There are so many people here... " Long Chen let out in amazement as he looked at the crowd in the streets.

"Of course there would be a crowd. It's like a yearly festival for this city. You'll find many people here." Princess Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen.

" It's good that the streets are wide enough so that it's not crowded even when there are so many people. " Long Chen let out as he looked around.

"Oh look, there is a fortune teller! Let's go check it out" Princess Mingyu let out excitedly as she saw a stall that had a board hung on it that claimed that the future was predicted there.

"It's all fake... they're just fooling innocent people" Long Chen let out as he tried to convince Mingyu but she didn't listen and pulled Long Chen by his hand.

There was a man sitting on the stall who looked to be in his late thirties. He was reclining on his chair but soon sat straight up as he saw people coming towards his stall.

"Welcome dear guests! Do you want to know your future? It would only cost you one silver coin" The Man said to Long Chen.

Long Chen looked towards Princess Mingyu and saw the eager look on her face. He decided to go along with the flow as he brought out a silver coin. He tossed the coin towards the man who hurriedly caught it.

"Is sir and madam a family?" The man asked with a smile.

"Nope, we're just friends" Long Chen replied instantly.

"Oh, " He commented back

"So Which one of you wants to know your future?" He asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"She is interested in knowing hers," Long Chen said to him as he looked towards Mingyu.

"Oh, that's good. So miss, I have placed 108 cards in front of you. You can pick any five to know five things about your future" The man with a wide smile as he brought out his cards. He randomly placed them in the table with their face down.

" Okay, this sounds fun " Mingyu replied with an excited look

Princess Mingyu looked at the cards and after looking for a long time, picked five amongst them. The man took those cards from her as he looked at them.

"Hmm... Interesting" He muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"What?" She inquired with a curious look

"There is someone who is close to you. He likes you and wants to make you hers. You two will become a Heavenly couple in the near future" The man said with a smile as he gazed at the first card.

' Who could it be? Does he... like me?' Princess Mingyu thought as she glanced at Long Chen who was staring at the man.

"In the coming days, You will find something that you always wanted to have, but couldn't find" The man continued as he gazed at the second card.

Suddenly, his expressions turned serious as he saw the third card.

" The card of loss... You will lose something really close to your heart" The man muttered with a thoughtful look on his face as he looked towards Mingyu.

Without waiting, He gazed at the fourth card.

"You will face two choices... Your family or your love... and your decision will decide the fate of an important person" The man let out as he stared at the fourth card.

Mingyu was already stunned as she heard all this while Long Chen looked like he didn't believe this man could actually predict anything.

The man finally looked at the fifth card.

"The card of conflict... There are many conflicts written in your destiny. You will have to fight for the love that you want as many others will desire that love" The man said as he placed the cards back.

"Thank you for some nice entertainment for me. I must say your acting skills are good." Long Chen said as he held the hands of Mingyu who was lost in her thoughts as she tried to understand the meaning of his words.

"As I thought... It was a waste of time. that man was only spouting vague nonsense. Yu! Stop thinking about his words so seriously, no one can see the future! He was just pretending as he said whatever came to his mind. " Long Chen let out as he walked in the streets of the city with Mingyu's hands in his hands.

"Maybe..." Mingyu muttered in a low voice.

They traveled through the streets for a long time as they played various games and won.

Long Chen was walking back with Mingyu as he saw a restaurant. It was heavily decorated and there was a stall just near its door.

"What games do you have?" Long Chen asked with a smile as he stood in front of that stall.

"We have a game known as food quiz. We have ten medicinal herbs here that we often use in our dishes. We'll show you the herbs and if you can name any five of them, you can get a fifty percent discount on all the dishes. If you can name seven, you get a seventy percent discount."

"If I can name all the herbs?" Long Chen asked as he smiled.

'Hmmpf, who does he think he is? Does he really think that he can name all the herbs? Two of the herbs there are so rare and expensive that we only use them to serve special people. Not many people had seen those herbs, there's no chance that he can name all of them' The man thought but he didn't let his thoughts show on his face.

"Then you and your girlfriend can eat anything you like inside for free," The man said with a confident look on his face.

Mingyu's face turned slightly red as she heard him call her Long Chen's girlfriend but didn't feel like she would get anything even if she said anything against the misunderstanding of that man.

"I'd take you up on that offer" Long Chen said with a smile as he paid the man.

A tray was soon brought in front of Long Chen which held ten medicinal herbs.

"Here are the herbs. Your victory depends on your knowledge. Let's see how many you can answer" The man said with an amused look on his face.

"Do you want my help? I think I know about seven of them." Princess Mingyu said to Long Chen as she saw the herbs.

"I apologize, miss, but he's the one facing the challenge. You can't help him." The man informed Lu Mingyu.

"It's fine. I would be alright. I think I know quite a few of them" Long Chen assured her with an amused look on his face.

"The first herb is a ten-year-old seasoning lingzi, then we have a young dangyu which is only 5 years old. There's huo xiang, zi jin niu, Beiqi, chashu,

gegen, qinghainese, wu ei zi, fangzhi. That's all the herbs I see" Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at the man in front of him but all he saw was him standing there blankly as he looked at Long Chen with a blank look on his face.

He looked around and noticed that Lu Mingyu was looking at him with a strange expression on her face as well.

"Amazing!!! You must be the apprentice of a great alchemist! So young yet so knowledgeable, I'm sure you will become a great personality one day!" The man started praising Long Chen.

"Ahem... Can we enter now?" Long Chen asked as he looked at the man.

"Of Course! You can eat anything you desire, and it won't cost you a single coin" The man said with a smile as he brought Long Chen and Mingyu inside with him.

"Isn't that the same girl that you molested when we had just entered the city?" Princess Mingyu let out as she glanced at Long Chen with an amused look on her face while Long Chen had an annoyed look on his face.

Chapter 172 - 172: Ling

"Isn't that the same girl that you molested when we had just entered the city? Looks like you are in luck" Princess Mingyu let out as she glanced at Long Chen with an amused look on her face while Long Chen had an annoyed look on his face.

Long Chen looked in the direction she was staring at and saw the red-haired girl he had faced when he had just entered the city. The girl was sitting on one of the tables. She was accompanied by the same old man whom Princess Mingyu had beaten. There was one more person on the table.

A girl who looked to be in her early twenties was sitting with the red-haired girl. Her hair was deep black which was a bit short on the length and they barely came down to her neck. Although she was a girl, She had short hair but it didn't look awkward, it made her look charming in her own way as she looked unique compared to the other girls Long Chen had seen.

She had black eyes and porcelain-like skin that was being highlighted even further because of the black dress she was wearing.

Her bountiful breasts were full of themselves as they filled the top of her dress and made the dress stuck tightly to them.

"I didn't molest her... I only teased her a little to scare her a bit and to teach her a lesson. You know it." Long Chen reacted to Princess Mingyu with a wry smile on his face.

"Let's go to that table, I feel like it would be interesting to be near them. " Princess Mingyu let out with a smile as she held Long Chen's hands and moved towards the table which was nearest to those people.

"You?" The red-haired girl stood up shocked as soon as she saw Long Chen coming towards them. Her reaction shocked the people present in that room.

"Don't worry, I won't eat you up" Long Chen said to her with a smile as he passed by her and said on the nearby table.

"Sit down, Maia. Don't lose your composure" The woman who was sitting with her said in her soft voice. The red-haired girl known as Maia sat down on her seat silently.

"Are they...?" The black-haired woman inquired.

" Yes, Aunt Zhiqing ... He is the boy who attacked me and that's the girl who beat up Uncle Yao! They're the ones father is looking for! " Princess Maia said in a low voice as she looked towards the black-haired girl.

"Of Course my brother would look for them. They are so strong at such a young age, they must be the heirs of some strong clan or the disciples from a strong sect and even if they aren't affiliated with any strong association, We can try adding them to our own. Either way, It would be good for the Royal Clan if we got to be close to them." The woman known as Zhiqing said with a knowing smile.

"My brother might even try to get you married to him. You might be in luck if that happens, he's quite a good looking kid" Zhiqing chuckled as she teased Maia.

" Hmph... I would never be with a guy who doesn't know how to treat a woman" Maia said with an annoyed look on her face.

"I'd learn to treat you better when we're married" Long Chen interrupted their conversation as he chuckled after hearing her words.

"Why don't you guys sit here with us." Maia was about to say something when her aunt interrupted her as she started talking to Long Chen. She ordered the waiter as two chairs were placed between her and Maia

"Sure.." Long Chen smiled as he stood up and walked to their table. Mingyu followed him. While Long Chen sat on the seat closest to the women in black known as Zhiqing, Mingyu sat right beside him and between Long Chen and Maia.

"Let us introduce ourselves first. I am known as Su Zhiqing and this girl here is my niece and the Princess of this kingdom, Maia. You two have already met though. And he is our general, Yao. "Zhiqing said as she looked towards Long Chen.

"Nice to meet you, I'm Long Chen and this here is my friend Mingyu." Long Chen replied with a smile.

" You two aren't native of this country. May I ask what you're here for? " Zhiqing inquired as she looked at Long Chen.

"I came here for a person. I had heard that the Princess of Huanji Kingdom is a real beauty, so I came here to see her. And I must say, she is even prettier than I had initially assumed" Long Chen said with a smile.

" You're so young, but I must say that you do know how to talk," Zhiqing said with a smile.

" Hmph, All he knows is how to talk.No matter how much he likes me, I will never like him. " Maia interrupted their conversation with a proud expression on her face.

"You don't have to take her words seriously. If you really like her, I believe she will soon fall for you. " Zhiqing said with a smile as she looked at Long Chen.

" Why would I want her to fall for me? She can do whatever she wants. The girl I was talking about is you. " Long Chen let out with a chuckle.

" The Senior Princess of this kingdom and Youngest Sister of the King, Su Zhiqing. Also known as the most beautiful girl of this kingdom. It's nice to actually meet you. "Long Chen said with a laugh.

Both Zhiqing and Maia looked at Long Chen with a stunned expression as their mouths opened wide. Even the man sitting beside them was gobsmacked as he looked around as if he was dreaming

"Aren't you too young for me?" Zhiqing finally asked after a long time.

"I don't think so. Don't you know? I'm a 700-year-old man who has retained his looks through the use of Alchemy. That's why I look so young" Long Chen smiled as he teased the girl.

"What's your Cultivation then? " Zhiqing asked as if not believing him.

"I don't think you have even heard of that Realm. Nor do I feel like telling you." Long Chen talked back as he smiled. Mingyu looked at him with an amused look on her face.

Long Chen was about to talk further when three people entered the hotel. Their strong aura attracted everyone's attention as people started looking at them. They were all wearing red robes with a symbol on their robes which looked like two swords were colliding. Their group of three contained two girls and a boy.

The boy looked to be the oldest amongst them and looked to be around 21-22 years old in age while the youngest girl looked to be 16-17 years old. The third person was a girl who looked to be 18-19 years old.

Their group of three sat down on the same table that Long Chen and Mingyu had just vacated to sit with Zhiqing which resulted in them seating near Long Chen.

'Their clothes...' Long Chen thought as he looked at their clothes. He had read most of the book that he brought from Jiandie Pavilion about the information of this continent thus he knew what the symbol on the clothes of those three signified.

"They're from a sect of the North Moon Empire..." Long Chen brought his lips closer to Mingyu's as he whispered softly.

"The boy is a 3rd stage Earth Realm Cultivator... And the girl with him is the 1st stage Earth Realm Cultivator. The youngest is at the 5th stage of the gold core realm" Long Chen informed her again.

Although the three were sitting on the nearest table to Long Chen, they couldn't hear his whispers. Even the people sitting on the same table as he wondered what Long Chen was saying to Mingyu with such a serious expression on his face.

"This time's mission is really critical for us! We must get what we're looking for..." The boy in the red robe said in a low voice as he looked at the girls with a serious expression.

"Don't worry senior brother Ruan, we will definitely get it." The youngest girl said with a gentle smile.

"I believe your words, Junior Sister Ling. I have faith in our combined abilities. We even have Junior Sister Meng with us for help." The man said as he nodded in agreement.

Although they were talking softly as well, Long Chen through his heightened senses was able to hear their words clearly.

'Ling... from an Empire... What are the chances of her being the same girl?' Long Chen wondered as he glanced at Ling.

"What are you looking at? Do you want to die?" The red-robed man known as Senior brother Ruan let out loudly as he noticed Long Chen looking at Ling.

Chapter 173 - 173: Misunderstanding

"What are you looking at? Do you want to die?" The Red robed man known as Senior Brother Ruan let out loudly as he noticed Long Chen looking at Ling.

"I was looking at your friend. I feel like she looks somewhat familiar but I might be mistaken." Long Chen smiled as he said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"You think you are in a position to know someone of her standard? You're from this lowly second rank kingdom while she is from a higher place. Keep your eyes on control or you won't know how you died" The guy snorted as he looked at Long Chen with disdain.

"I should say the same thing to you. The backing of the Thunder Giant Sect from the North Moon Empire is not as useful as you might think. " Long Chen said with a nonchalant look on his face as he gazed at the guy.

As soon as Long Chen said the name of the sect, almost everyone present in the room gasped. Although most of the people present here didn't know of the name of the Thunder Giant Sect, they knew what it must mean for it to reside inside an Empire.

It was different for Zhiqing and Maia though. As they were a part of the Royal family, they had access to more knowledge. They knew what this name represented. The Thunder Giant Sect was not just any sect that resided in the North Moon Empire, instead, it was one of the strongest sects of the Empire. It could be said that they were one of the overlords of the North Moon Empire.

" What did you say? " Ruan roared loudly as he stood up with an angry look on his face.

"Wait, Senior Brother Ruan! Don't be impulsive " Ruan was about to walk towards Long Chen but stopped as soon as he heard the voice of his Junior Sister Meng. He sat back on his chair.

"Don't stop me, Junior Sister Meng! This man must pay for talking about our sect in that manner! He deserves to be taught a good lesson " Ruan said as he looked towards Meng.

"Did you check the cultivation of the girl sitting with him? Check it now" She said in a soft voice.

"She is a third stage Earth Realm Cultivator. So what? I can easily take on her" Ruan said after checking Mingyu's cultivation. Although he was stunned to see her high cultivation, it was still of no concern for him as he was stronger.

" It's not her I'm worried about... " Meng let out with a grave look on her face.

"You mean...? " Ruan asked with a doubtful look

"I noticed that the boy who just spoke and that girl are really close. They are probably together. And her age... She is even younger than me yet she is already at the 3rd Stage of Earth Realm! She can't be from a second rank empire... Even first rank empires can't have such people. I believe that they are from an Empire as well... That boy talked about our sect with no concern even though it was clear that he knew about our sect. I feel that they might be from a strong sect as well. We don't need to act impulsively without knowing about them. Also, there is another reason as well... " Meng started telling her thoughts to Ruan and Ling as she whispered.

"So what? Even if they are from an Empire, I can still teach them a lesson!"

"Ruan let out with an unconvinced look on his face

"Just look at the boy! I can't see his cultivation and I am sure that you won't be able to see either" Meng said to Ruan.

"Yea, I can't see his cultivation..." Ruan muttered as he took a short glance at Long Chen

"He must be using an artifact to hide his Cultivation" Ruan let out with an as he looked at Meng.

"Senior brother Ruan, Did you forget that master gifted me an artifact when I became his personal disciple. It doesn't have much use in battle, but it can be used to check if someone is using an artifact to hide their cultivation and it does negate the effects of their cultivation hiding artifacts. I checked that boy.. and he isn't using an artifact... " Meng said in a serious tone.

"... And his confident tone when facing you... I am 100 percent sure that he has a stronger cultivation base than us all. The sect that groomed them must be a really strong sect. Although that may be the case, he is still trying to provoke you so that he can get a chance to retaliate without looking like a bully who used his strong cultivation unfairly. That way he will have a reason to attack you without earning people's contempt " Meng muttered in her soft voice as she informed Ruan. Long Chen could only smile as he heard her

words while others were confused about what their group of three was talking about so sneakily.

"Alright... I won't get provoked by him and fall for his ruse." Ruan let you as he glanced towards Long Chen. Long Chen looked at everything with an interesting smile on his face as he heard their conversation clearly.

"Is she there Ling from the Xuan Kingdom? " As Long Chen saw them ignoring him, he asked the girl known as Meng.

" What has this got to do with you?" Before Meng could reply, Ruan let out with when annoyed look on his face.

"Senior Brother Ruan, Calm down. Our first priority is to know what they're here for and to complete our mission faster if they are here for the same thing" Meng whispered in his ears.

"Yes, she is the Ling from the Xuan Kingdom. Do you know my Junior sister?" Meng asked as she smiled and shifted his attention between Long and Long Chen.

" Yes, I heard some things and saw some paintings of her on my journey to the Xuan Kingdom recently" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"Oh? and what were the things that you heard?" Meng asked as she looked interested.

"Just a rumor that she is engaged to a nobody. I always felt that it was such a pity for a girl who was picked up to be a part of Thunder Giant Sect to be in an arranged marriage." Long Chen chuckled as he let out.

"I used to be engaged... but I have long ago canceled that engagement," Ling said as soon as Long Chen finished his sentence.

"Oh? That's good. I personally dislike arranged marriage as well." Long Chen smiled as he sipped his drink.

"May I ask what you two are doing in such a small kingdom?" Meng interrupted their conversation as she glanced at Long Chen.

"We're just here to gain some experience and to travel places that we haven't seen before. What about you? What brought you here? Did you find a treasure map or something?" Long Chen let out casually.

As soon as the words escaped his mouth, Meng, Ling, and Ruan all three grew stunned as their expressions turned serious. They quickly recovered their expression but Long Chen had received his answer by then.

"We were here with Ling for the selection competition of Xuan Kingdoms that her father invited us all to witness. We thought it might be a good opportunity for us to get some fresh air and travel to the nearby kingdoms as well." Meng quickly recovered her composure as she informed him.

"Oh right... that competition. I heard about it. It sounds pretty interesting, I might be there too" Long Chen let out with a smile on his face.

"Which Empire are you from?" Meng suddenly asked Long Chen.

"Me? I'm not from an Empire. I'm from a small place that isn't worth mentioning" Long Chen smiled as he vaguely answered. He wanted to make themselves seem like cultivators from an Empire as well and only through mystery was it easier for him to do without trapping himself in the latter stages.

"So you want to keep it a secret... it's alright" Meng said as she didn't believe a word he said.

"I can't stop you from thinking what you want" Long Chen chuckled as he sipped his drink he was served.

"Are those three your friends? They look quite normal compared to you two." Meng asked as she looked at Zhiqing, Maia, and Yao.

"Just met them. They looked like interesting people so I joined for their company, but now I am finding you people more interesting" Long Chen replied with a smile

"Us? I think it's Ling you find more interesting. Sorry, but you can't join us even if you want to... unless you tell us your real identity" Meng said with a laugh as she winked at Long Chen.

"Me? I'm Long Chen and this is my best friend Mingyu. Is that good enough?" Long Chen inquired with a smile as he introduced himself.

"I'm not asking about your names. There are many people and clans inside this continent with the Long as their name. Some of them are weak while some are strong. I'm curious about the Empire you hail from and the Sect that you're a part of... It must be a good one" Meng again asked from Long Chen.

"I hail from a place far far away so you don't have to worry about my influence reaching to the North Moon Empire." Long Chen said as he looked at Meng with an amused smile on his face.

"You might be misunderstanding me. We're not worried about your influence. we're only curious about your background" Meng replied back.

" As I said, I'm a nobody. Here in search for some adventure" Long Chen answered her.

"So you are after adventure, not the rewards? " Meng already again.

" Yup, if you have an adventure for me, I might even help you out..." Long Chen casually let out.

"We are done here. It was nice meeting you but we must leave now. I'll tell you if I find out about any adventure." Meng smiled though inside she was slightly worried as she stood up. She looked towards Ruan as she secretly gestured to him. Ruan and Ling stood up as well. They followed her and left.

Chapter 174 - 174: A Kiss

"We are done here. It was nice meeting you but we must leave now. I'll tell you if I find out about any adventure." Meng smiled though inside she was slightly worried as she stood up. She looked towards Ruan as she secretly gestured to him. Ruan and Ling stood up as well. They followed her and left.

"Why are you all looking so stunned?" Long Chen turned back to look at Maia and Zhiqing and asked as he saw their stunned looks.

"Although I guessed that you must be from an empire, it's still shocking as I hear it. You must not be from a weak empire either as you were able to face them without any concern. In Fact, they were the ones who looked more cautious as they talked to you. " Zhiqing said after some time with a serious look on her face.

"Maybe... " Long Chen muttered.

"Anyways, We should be going now as well. Thanks for allowing us to sit with you guys." Long Chen let out with a smile as he stood up. Mingyu also got up as they left.

"There are so many important guests in our empire right now. My brother must know about all this. People from Thunder Giant Sect of North Moon Empire and two from a mysterious empire who are even more shocking. They are present in this kingdom at the same time... Something big is going on... We need to be prepared for the unexpected. Uncle Yao, send a team of our shadow guards to trail after the group from North Moon Empire and another team to keep an eye on Long Chen. They must not be found" Zhiqing muttered with a thoughtful look on her face.

Long Chen and Princess Mingyu were walking in the streets. Princess Mingyu kept looking at Long Chen with a thoughtful look on her face.

"Do you want to say something?" Long Chen asked as he noticed Mingyu gazing at him.

"How were you able to hear their conversation? I have a stronger cultivation base than you, yet I wasn't able to hear a single word. " Mingyu asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"I never said I heard their conversation. What makes you think that I did?" Long Chen let out as he looked at Mingyu with curiosity on his face.

"It was quite clear from your looks that you could hear what they were talking about. So tell me, What did you find out?" Mingyu asked with a clever smile on her face.

"Nothing much. All I found out was that they are here to look for something. Something important to them. It must be quite a treasure to make them come here" Long Chen chuckled as he continued walking ahead.

"Looks like that girl put people on our trail. A smart decision but a bad one..." A demonic smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he sensed something. He slowed down his steps and allowed Mingyu to take the lead. He entered an empty street as he separated from Mingyu.

Finding something strange, Mingyu turned back but there was no sign of Long Chen.

Zhiqing and Maia were still having their dinner when the door of the hotel opened and as a hooded man was thrown inside. Zhiqing's expression turned serious as she recognized the dress of that person. It was one of her shadow guards. The hotel was mostly empty by now as the guests had left and only Maia and Zhiqing were inside. Even general Yao had left to inform the King.

"I would have appreciated it much if you were the one trailing me. I might even like that instead, but you sent a guy" Long Chen chuckled as he entered the place.

"Don't worry, I'm not here to hurt you..." Long Chen smiled as he walked towards Zhiqing who had a frown on her face.

Long Chen brought his face closer to hers such that his lips were only an inch apart from hers. Zhiqing didn't move even slightly as she looked straight in Long Chen's eyes.

"Although it's your first mistake, I can't forgive you so that you don't make it a habit." Long Chen muttered as he gazed in her deep eyes.

"Who do you think you are! Even if you are from an Empire, you can't disrespect my aunt like that!" Maia said loudly as she stood up.

"It's not me being disrespectful, little girl. As I said before, you haven't even seen my disrespect yet" Long Chen let out without turning back. He maintained his close distance to Zhiqing.

Much to Long Chen's shock, something shocking happened.

Zhiqing suddenly moved forward as she closed the distance between her and Long Chen. Her lips found their way to his lips as they touched. Long Chen could feel the sensation of her side lips and her sweet smell as he enjoyed his kiss.

After a short three-second kiss, Zhiqing separated her lips from his lips.

"Treat that as my apology. We are clear now." She muttered as she looked in Long Chen's eyes.

"Not yet, " Long Chen muttered as he kissed her back. Zhiqing slightly opened her mouth in shock but Long Chen utilized this opportunity as he slid his tongue in her mouth and started playing with her tongue. He put one of his hands on the back of her head as he kissed her passionately.

Maia had her eyes opened wide as she struggled to believe that the things happening in front of her were real and not a dream. Although she was stunned at first, after watching them kiss passionately, she started feeling something as her heart became uncomfortable. She felt like she desired what her Aunt was experiencing.

After Long Chen kissed her for five minutes straight, he separated his lips from hers. Zhiqing was breathing heavily as she gazed at Long Chen.

"There's another one of those guys lying unconscious outside the doors. Now we're even... but I'm sure not for long." Long Chen smiled as he turned back and walked towards the exit.

"Oh, by the way, you didn't need to send them. You could've just asked me straight, I live in Duke Granelli's old mansion" Long Chen turned back and said before he left.

"We're definitely not even..." Zhiqing muttered softly.

Half an hour passed as Long Chen walked back to his mansion. He entered the place and found Mingyu sitting in the main hall.

"Where did you disappear to?" She asked as she saw Long Chen.

"I went to take care of some things. Were you worried about my safety?" Long Chen smiled as he asked.

" Why would I be worried about your safety? You're my destiny, you can't die... " Mingyu said as she smiled.

"Even though I know what you mean, I find your words somewhat misleading" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

Long Chen walked forward and sat right beside Mingyu.

"Were you following those three? The thing they're looking for must be pretty good " Mingyu inquired with a curious look on her face.

"I'm not following them, but I do believe that they will come following me" Long Chen smiled as he let out.

" Why are you so sure? " Mingyu asked with an interesting look on her face.

"Just a hunch" Long Chen let out with an amused smile on his face.

After having a casual talk with Mingyu, Long Chen left as he entered his bedroom.

"What a day" Long Chen lay down on his bed as he relaxed. He rested for an hour before he sat up and began cultivation. After his Qi cultivation, he cultivated his Demon Monarch Physique.

As his Heart Demon was still under process, Long Chen was still having low cultivation speed of Demon Monarch physique.

After finishing his Cultivation Long Chen brought out his egg as he began feeding it his Qi. After he finished with his daily schedule, Long Chen lay down on his bed as he held the egg on his hand.

"In a few days, it will be my birthday. Why don't you come out then? We will have the same birthday little guy" Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the egg with a smile. He kept the egg back as he soon fell asleep.

Morning arrived as Long Chen woke up. After getting ready, Long Chen left his bedroom.

"I'll be going to the nearby mountain range for some training. It's finally time that I get done with the things I'm here for. I'll be back in less than a week." Long Chen informed Mingyu as he stood in front of her room and faced her.

"Alright, I'll wait for you" Mingyu let out with a serious look as she gazed at Long Chen.

Long Chen left the mansion on foot he traveled through the streets of the city. By now, many people had known about Long Chen and that he was not someone that should be annoyed. There was even a rumor that he was from an Empire.

Long Chen passed through the entrance of the city of thunder as he left.

After traveling for a brief period, Long Chen finally entered the mountain range outside the City of Thunder. The mountain range was over 15000 feet tall which would be quite tall for normal people to climb, but for Long Chen, it was barely an inconvenience.

Long Chen used his Heavenly Demon Wings to fly upwards.

Chapter 175 - 175: Brutal Cultivation

The mountain range surrounding the City of Thunder was even more eye-catching as bright flashes of light could be seen in the sky every few minutes which was followed by the sound of loud thunder.

The clouds covering this mountain range were even denser and darker as no natural light of the sun could be seen from the mountains.

As Long Chen flew upwards, he was able to see charred marks on the ground and burnt trees.

Instead of being worried, Long Chen smiled as he flew towards the peak of the mountain.

It took Long Chen five hours to reach the top of the mountain.

"Alright, Time to get to work" Long Chen muttered as he got to the top.

He found a clean place as he sat there.

"A perfect place to help me with two things... Learning the Thunder blade and Earthly Monarch Effect." Long Chen muttered softly as he looked around.

" Hmm, You look like you are somewhat anxious..." Xun said to Long Chen as she appeared behind him.

"Who wouldn't be anxious. Facing thunder is a scary thing, even for people with a strong physique. " Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the clouded sky.

He sat on the ground as he thought about the cultivation method of the Earthly Monarch Effect. The skill needed two things... Firstly hurting the body again and again with the lightning... which Long Chen wanted to do though facing the lightning of this mountain range. The second thing it needed was for a cultivator to follow the cultivation method closely. Although the second thing was easy to achieve, it was the first thing that worried Long Chen.

"The lightning won't fall on me the way I want, whenever I want...I must make it fall on me... The Thunder Blade compliments the cultivation of Earthly Monarch Effect...I didn't know about it when I chose it but now that I know, I'm glad I chose Thunder Blade." Long Chen let out with a smile.

Long Chen sat down on the ground as he tried to comprehend the Thunder Blade. He stayed like that for over three hours as he tried learning that skill. There was lightning essence everywhere in the atmosphere which helped Long Chen by a lot.

Five more hours passed as Long Chen finally opened his eyes.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen let out loudly as he pointed his finger towards the sky and slowly brought it down. Long Chen noticed a flicker of lightning in the sky but it was too weak as it soon disappeared before even forming completely.

Long Chen closed his eyes again as he tried thinking about what went wrong. Long Chen kept trying again and again as he kept failing although there was a slight improvement each time.

Just like that, two days passed as Long Chen kept trying to succeed. It was the evening on the third day when Long Chen tried one more time.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen roared loudly as he pointed towards the sky and moved his finger downwards towards the tree on the front. Unlike the previous time, the sky brightened as a strong lightning bolt formed in the sky and fell on the tree. The tree turned into ashes as soon as the lightning fell on it, soon it was followed by a loud thundering sound.

"Success!" Long Chen stood up excitedly as he gazed towards the ashes of the tree.

"Such strong skill!!! Too bad that it consumed a lot of my Qi" Long Chen muttered as he smiled.

" Again! Thunder Blade!!!" Long Chen roared again as he pointed towards the sky and moved that same finger towards another tree nearby. Again a thunderbolt formed amongst the clouds and fell on the tree Long Chen pointed at.

Long Chen sat down on the ground as he smiled. He closed his eyes as he lay down and finally rested after working hard for three days.

Long Chen had already noticed that this whole mountain range was empty of people and beast, especially the peak of the mountain, so he didn't need to worry about any beast or humans. He rested without much worry. The only thing that still somewhat worried him was the natural lightning bolts that could fall on him, but that was what he wanted either way.

Long Chen rested for two hours as he lay on the ground. After resting, he sat up.

"Time for the main event" Long Chen muttered in a serious tone as he looked towards the sky.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen muttered softly as he pointed towards the sky, he finally moved his finger as he pointed towards himself.

A thick lightning bolt formed in the sky.

Long Chen utilized his Demon Monarch physique to the fullest as he tried to rely on just the defense of his body.

The lightning moved towards Long Chen and soon fell on him.

"Aaaaaaaarrrrrhhhh!!!!" Long Chen roared loudly in pain as soon as the lightning struck him. It was much worse than he had expected. His body feels like it was going to burn as electricity passed through his bones and veins. He couldn't move his body in the slightest.

Long Chen became unconscious as he fell on the ground.

Long Chen opened his eyes after 5 hours and all his eyes could see were the dark clouds in the sky. He couldn't help but remember the feeling of being struck by lightning.

"It was much worse than I had expected... without the effect of Demon Monarch Physique, I might even be dead. Thunder blade is really strong..." Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Do you want to stop?" Xun appeared again as she asked.

"Stop? I'm just getting started" Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look on his face. Xun couldn't help but smile as she heard his words.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen let out loudly as he again used his martial skill on himself. Another lightning bolt fell on him as he again went unconscious.

Every time Long Chen woke up, He would use his martial skill on himself. Long Chen kept going through the same thing but he could feel that the pain he felt was decreasing with time.

After three more days, Long Chen was finally able to face the lightning without losing his consciousness which further boosted his morale.

Long Chen kept hitting himself with Thunderbolts again and again for two more days. By this time, he was able to walk even when being hit by lightning. From walking, he went on to run as he felt like his speed was over a hundred times faster than before. Although the lightning still hurt him, the pain was bearable now as Long Chen's resistance to lightning increased.

Long Chen kept cultivating the Earthly Monarch Effect which increased his speed and defense. Long Chen's efficiency and understanding of the Thunder blade also kept increasing the more he used the skill.

It had been over nine days since Long Chen had entered this mountain range and he felt like the difference between his abilities before and after this trip was miles apart.

"Tomorrow is my birthday and you are still not coming out? You're a bad guy you know that?" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he talked to the egg.

Long Chen put the egg back in his storage ring as he went to sleep.

Long Chen woke up early morning the next day as he began Cultivating. He had already reached the late 9th stage of Gold Core Realm in these nine days and he was now just a step away from the peak of 9th stage Gold Core Realm. Long Chen cultivated for over three hours before he stopped his Qi cultivation and began his Demon Monarch Physique cultivation. He cultivated like that for two hours before he stopped.

After his Cultivation, Long Chen stood up.

He again began using Thunder Blade on himself as he cultivated Earthly Monarch Effect.

Time passed quickly as the evening arrived. Long Chen sat down and began eating the fruit he brought out from his storage ring.

Long Chen brought out his mysterious egg after he finished eating.

'Soon it will be the next day, my birthday will be over. I still remember how good my 16th birthday was... Mom... Dad...I miss you' Long Chen thought about the birthdays he celebrated with his family on Earth as he began feeding his Qi to the Mysterious Egg.

As Long Chen was lost in thoughts, a strong lightning bolt was being formed in the sky which began falling towards Long Chen.

The lightning fell on top of him and the egg abruptly. Long Chen had experienced the lightning at least a few hundred times in the last few days so he wasn't much affected but he couldn't help but be worried for the egg which was also struck by lightning along with him.

"Are you fine?" Long Chen let out as he looked at the egg for any signs of damage but he saw nothing.

Long Chen finally breathed a sigh of relief but his expressions soon turned grave as a cracking sound came.

Long Chen noticed that cracks were starting to develop on the surface of the egg which kept enlarging.

Soon the shell of the egg was turned to pieces as Long Chen finally saw what was inside...

Chapter 176 - 176: The Egg Hatches

Soon, the shell of the egg was turned to pieces as Long Chen finally saw what was inside.

A tiny little creature stood in front of Long Chen on its four legs. This beast looked like a cat but there were a few differences. It had a tail that split into two tails at the center. While one of its tail was flaming red, the other one was cold blue. Its eyes were of different colors as well. While its left eye was red, the other eye was blue.

Its body was covered in snow-white fur which was covered by some strange ancient characters which made it look uniquely charming. There was a silver crescent moon symbol on its forehead which was shining like a real Moon.

"A cat?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he looked at the small little creature. The cat walked towards Long Chen as it snuggled its head on Long Chen's hands.

"No matter how weak you are, I must say that you are quite cute" Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he saw the cat cozying up to him. He picked it up in his arms as he looked in its eyes.

"Xun, what is this cat?" Long Chen asked as he looked towards Xun who was standing beside him with a frown on her face.

"I'm not sure..." Xun answered back.

"You don't know?" Long Chen let out as he looked at Xun.

"From the looks of it, I think that it should be an Ethereal Moon Cat...but" Xun let out as she looked towards the cat.

"But what?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"But there are some unknowns that are making me doubt it. The Ethereal Moon Cat looks just like the creature in front of you as it also has a tail split on two. It also has snow-white fur and a silver crescent moon symbol on its forehead but... that's where things start getting different. The eyes of Ethereal Moon Cat are supposed to be black and so are its tails but the eyes of the cat in your hand are blue and red and so is the color of its tails..." Xun explained to Long Chen.

"Maybe it's a unique breed of Ethereal Moon Cat." Long Chen let out with a smile as he played with the cat in his hand.

"There's one more difference. Unlike this cat, there are no patterns on the body of Ethereal Moon Cat.. and more important.... they don't come out from eggs... That's what makes it so strange... It's like the Ethereal Moon Cat but it can't be... how is this possible..." Xun let out with a thoughtful look on her face.

"Looks like I was wrong... you are indeed quite special..." Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at the cat.

"Does Ethereal Moon cats have any specialty or powers? " Long Chen inquired as he glanced at Xun with expectation.

"They have some unique tricks of their own. Although they aren't good at offense or defense, their main specialty is their stealth. An Ethereal Moon Cat has the ability to go invisible and it would be almost impossible to find them. All traces of their being would disappear along with them." Xun Said to Long Chen.

"So it's good at hiding... Not what I was expecting but It's quite fine... I quite like this little one " Long Chen smiled as he gazed into the eyes of the cat.

In a faraway place, there existed a land covered in clouds. There was no sun in the sky nor the moon. The only thing that was visible in the sky were 9 bright stars. Each of these stars looked to be of similar size but had a unique shape of their own. These 9 stars could be seen on a similar level as none could be seen in a higher position than the other.

There was a large throne on this land. A large bearded man was sitting on the throne with his eyes closed as he looked like he was in a deep slumber. The man looked similar in size to a human from a distance but, when seen from closer, one would realize that the man was over seven meters tall. Although he was a giant, his body structure and face looked just like a human. He had deep black eyes like the abyss.

He was less like a human and more like a Giant. As he was still in his position, he felt something. The gravity of this land, the wind, the feeling... Everything was different as suddenly a different kind of pressure appeared in the atmosphere.

The man opened his eyes with a grave look on his face. He looked towards the sky and kept gazing at it as his expressions kept varying.

The Man could see that the sky, which had stayed still with 9 stars for millions of years, had one more star now. Instead of 9 stars, there were now 10 stars in the sky. Although the appearance of the tenth star shocked the man, what shocked him, even more, was the position of the star.

While the 9 stars were on a similar level, the tenth star looked to be much higher. The tenth star was even bigger and brighter when compared with the other 9 stars.

"For millions of years, there had been only 9 stars representing the 9 God Beasts and for there to appear another one? What is happening? Its position is even higher than the God beasts... how is this possible?" The man muttered with a grave look on his face as he looked towards the sky.

"I must know who this star represents!" The man let out as he closed his eyes again but this time he looked much more serious.

"All-Seeing Eyes of the Heavenly Guardian!!!" The man let out as he suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes which were pitch black precisely now looked completely golden.

He gazed towards the tenth star as he focused. In less than a second, his expression changed as it looked like he was struggling. His eyes began bleeding but he still kept trying to uncover the mystery behind the tenth star.

The man finally closed his eyes after just 5 seconds as he looked visibly aged. There were tears of blood in his face.

"For the second time in the history of my existence, am I unable to see what I desired... This world is soon going to change..." The man let out as he closed his eyes again.

As Long Chen was asking Xun about the specialty of Ethereal Moon Cat when the cat in Long Chen's hand suddenly raised its head as it gazed towards the sky as it looked confused.

"Well... At least now the suspense is over. Little guy, you made me wait for a really long time." Long Chen said as he looked at the Cat.

The cat turned its attention back to Long Chen as it looked at him with an affectionate gaze.

"I've achieved all I wanted to on this trip... Time to go back." Long Chen let out with a smile as he stood up.

"Are you missing your Yue'er? " Xun chuckled as she looked at Long Chen.

"I might be. Are you jealous? " Long Chen let out with a laugh as he faced Xun.

" What will you tell her about this new partner of yours?" Xun asked Long Chen with a smile.

" This little guy is someone I saved on this trip to the mountains." Long Chen answered back.

" That reminds me... It's his first day in this world. It needs a name..."Long Chen let out with a smile.

" You are technically his father. Give him a name..." Xun said with a smile.

" I think I'm quite bad at naming..." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"I think you will do just fine" Xun comforted Long Chen.

" Alright... Since it's so white, just like the purest of snow. I'll call him Snow." Long Chen said as he gazed at the cat.

The cat looked like it didn't understand a single word as it gazed at Long Chen innocently.

Long Chen began walking down the mountain as he held the cat in his arms like a baby. He kept talking to it as if it was a real human who could understand him.

After a long trip, Long Chen finally saw the entry of the City of Thunder. He walked through the streets as he looked around and people still gazed at him with curiosity. It was as if they didn't forget the rumors about him.

Long Chen reached the front of his mansion but he was stunned as he saw someone standing in front of his doors. It was a girl but not the one he had expected to come to his doors so soon.

Long Chen looked at the girl and began walking towards her.

Chapter 177 - 177: Offer

Long Chen reached the front of his mansion, but he was stunned as he saw someone standing in front of his doors. It was a girl, but not the one he had expected to come to his doors.

Long Chen looked at the girl and began walking towards her.

The girl was about to knock on the door when she was tapped on the shoulders by someone. She turned back only to find Long Chen standing behind her.

"Do you need something, Miss Meng?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her. The girl was Meng whom Long Chen had met when he was having dinner with Princess Mingyu.

"That's right. I have something that I want to talk to you about. By the way, that's an interesting cat, you have there. I've never seen one like it before." Meng let out with a thoughtful look on her face.

"It's a little guy I found in the wild. It's called Little Snow. Quite cute, although it's weak." Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at the Ethereal Moon Cat in his hand.

"Come on inside. We can talk inside as well" Long Chen walked towards the door as he knocked.

Although Long Chen knocked, there was no response. He knocked again as he waited for over 5 minutes, but the door didn't open.

'Is she not inside?' Long Chen thought as he faced the door. He brought out his personal key as he opened the door and entered inside. Meng followed him as she entered inside.

Long Chen led Meng to the hall of his mansion.

"Can you sit here for a minute? I'll be right back." Long Chen let out as he looked at Meng.

"Hmm" Meng nodded in confirmation as she walked towards the chair and sat down.

Long Chen left the hall and began walking towards the Room of Princess Mingyu.

"Soon he was standing in front of the door of Mingyu's room. He again knocked on the door, but similarly, there was no response. Long Chen tried opening the door and found that it was not locked.

The door opened easily as he entered inside with a serious look on his face.

"So you're busy with Cultivation..." Long Chen muttered softly as he breathed in relief. He left the room as he lightly closed the door.

He walked back to the hall in a much-relaxed manner. Meng was still sitting in the same position as Long Chen entered the hall.

"You look much relaxed now" Meng commented as she saw Long Chen entering the hall.

"So what did you want to talk about?" Long Chen asked as he changed the topic.

"It's about something that we talked about" She answered Long Chen.

"And what was that? " He asked back.

" About the adventure..." She said as a smile appeared on her face.

"Now that's somewhat interesting. Tell me more" Long Chen said to Meng with an answer expression on his face.

"The thing is that we have discovered a secret place which we think contains quite a lot of artifacts and treasures. We want you to join us in its exploration" Meng said to Long Chen.

" Tell me the reason..."Long Chen asked with a straight face.

"What reason?" She asked with a confused look on her face.

"A reason as to why would you tell a stranger about your exploration and even invite him when it involves some precious artifacts and treasures." Long Chen asked with an interested look on his face.

"A few weeks ago, we found a map. On that map, it was mentioned that it was a man that pointed to a tomb that belonged to a cultivator. It was clear that the Cultivator was at a higher realm than the Heavenly Realm. We were curious and excited at this discovery so we followed the map and left the Sect. We found an excuse to go to Ling's country for vacation and came to this city as this was the nearest to the location pointed on that map. " Meng explained as she looked at Long Chen.

" And that location was? " Long Chen inquired with curiosity on his face.

"The mountain range on the outskirts of the City of Thunder" She let out as she looked towards the door.

" Hmm? " Long Chen frowned as he thought about how close he had been to that tomb.

"Nothing you said explained why you told me about it. I don't think you have fallen in love with me at first sight and you don't look like a charitable person either." Long Chen let out with a straight face.

"It's because we can't enter that tomb with only the three of us. We didn't know about it before, but after our first visit, it was clear that this tomb can only be entered with four or more people. We only have three as of now." Meng let out as she looked at Long Chen.

"You could've picked any random person to take with you? Why come to me? Although I said that I'm only after adventure and not after the reward, what makes you trust me? If you chose a weaker person, the chances of betrayal would be way less as he would be easy to kill." Long Chen said with an amused smile on his face.

" Everything you said is true. If we chose a weaker person, he would be killed easily if he ever thought about betraying us, but that's something that can be bad for us as well." Meng said as she looked to be thinking about something.

" How so?" Long Chen inquired as he became curious.

"Just think about it. The place that needs at least four to enter... isn't there a good chance that it would need at least four to exit as well? Although the chances of that being the case are really low, We don't want to take the risk. We don't want to get trapped inside because the fourth person was weak and died too easily. Also, if we got you to come with us, your girlfriend will come as well... She is quite strong and would be quite useful and even if one of us died, there would still be four left to exit safely" Meng explained to Long Chen.

" That's quite a thorough plan, but it is based on an assumption" Long Chen let out as he heard her reasoning.

"Why didn't you go back to the Thunder Giant Sect and bring another person in this endeavor? There must be many cultivators as strong as you. You could've picked someone you knew and trusted" Long Chen asked again.

" We don't have the time that is needed to travel back and forth as we believe that this kingdom is starting to get suspicious. We can't leave that tomb uncharted for long as they might find that place" Meng said to Long Chen.

" Still... what if we betrayed you?" Long Chen asked with a laugh.

"All the treasures we find will be divided equally amongst us five. I feel like that's a pretty good offer. Also... I trust you and believe that you aren't a person, who will betray us" She let out as she smiled.

' Although her reasoning sounds good enough and she sounds like she's not lying but... I have a strange feeling about all this. A feeling that something is not right. It's a similar feeling to the one I had when Long Su invited me before betraying me... Fortunately, I'm not the same weakling I was at that time.' Long Chen smiled as he looked at Meng. He didn't let his thoughts show on his face.

"So... What do you say about my offer?" Meng asked as she saw the smile on Long Chen's face.

"My initial thoughts are quite on the positive side but I'll have to talk to her at well." Long Chen said to Meng.

"You mean you have to ask your girlfriend?" Meng couldn't help but chuckle as she said.

" You can say that... Anyways, I'll answer you tomorrow. So where can I find you?" Long Chen inquired as he laid back on his seat.

"It's fine, I'll come tomorrow to get your answer. I hope that both of you agree. Anyways, I must take leave now. There are more preparations that need to be done" Meng said as she looked at Long Chen and stood up.

" Alright," Long Chen said as he stayed seated. Meng frowned somewhat, but her expressions soon recovered as she smiled and turned back. She walked towards the exit and left

Long Chen closed his eyes as he thought about everything.

"Meng...Ling...Thunder Giant Sect... A strong Cultivator's tomb... treasures... things are about to get interesting" Long Chen muttered as a smile always on his face.

Long Chen stood up and walked towards his room. He passed by Mingyu's room and opened the gate to take a look inside. She was still deep in

cultivation thus he left silently. He entered his room and lay on the bed as he finally separated the cat from him and placed it on the bed beside him. Little Snow was already asleep by now. Long Chen also fell asleep.

After a full night's sleep, Long Chen woke up in the morning as he got ready.

He brought out the Heavenly Dragon Cauldron that he was gifted by the Branch Master Gu of the Alchemy Hall branch of Greyfall City.

Chapter 178 - 178: Practicing Alchemy

He brought out the Heavenly Dragon Cauldron that he was gifted by the Branch Master Gu of the Alchemy Hall branch of Greyfall City.

"I am always getting sidetracked by things. I made the plan to practice my Alchemy skills so long ago yet I haven't even started it. No more delay..." Long Chen muttered as he looked at the cauldron.

He placed the cauldron along with all the necessary equipment he bought from the market that he needed for Alchemy.

Although there were alchemists who could create special fires and use them for Alchemy, they were pretty rare as not many could do it. There were some skills that helped cultivators create a fire which was generally the case for most top-ranked alchemists. There was another method to achieve it which was to comprehend the Law of Fire which could actually help a Cultivator to control fire. There were only a few alchemists in the whole continent that had comprehended the Law of fire and were talented in the ways of Alchemy. Those that became a top rank alchemist and had comprehended the law of fire were all part of the Alchemy Hall's leadership and elders.

Long Chen couldn't control fire nor had he learned the Law of Fire, thus he could only buy objects to create the much-needed fire for his Alchemy practice. Those things were easy to buy in the City of Thunder and Long Chen had brought some when he was coming back from the Mountains.

"Let's start with the easiest... I'll make a 1st rank pill. But there are so many recipes in my mind... which one to choose" Long Chen thought as he went through the knowledge he had received as a reward after passing the first trial from the Bloodline Temple.

"I'll create Self-healing pill" Long Chen smiled as he chose a recipe from his memories.

A 'Self-Healing Pill' was a pill that was more widely available throughout the continent. Although it could not heal any major wound, it was enough to heal lighter wounds like cuts. It also worked as a pill killer.

Long Chen set up everything including the fire and he positioned the cauldron as he began the process.

Long Chen kept adding materials as per the recipe. He tried controlling the temperature to the best of his abilities as he tried Alchemy for the first time.

Although he knew how to do it, he was still having a hard time handling the temperature more precisely.

It took less than ten minutes as Long Chen finished making the pill. He opened the lid from the cauldron and found a grey pill inside. Long Chen picked up the pill as he inspected it carefully.

"A mid-grade first rank pill..." Long Chen muttered as he kept the pill in his storage ring.

"Should've been a supreme grade but my lack of control... I need to work on it..." Long Chen let out lightly as he brought the materials out to try once again.

Long Chen tried one more time before he was able to make a high-grade Self-healing pill and three more times before being able to make a Supreme Grade Self Healing pill.

Long Chen decided to try the recipe of a 2nd rank pill but before he could decide which one, there was a knock on the door.

"Are you back?" Came a voice from the other side of the door.

"Yea, I'll open the door right away." Long Chen let out loudly as he put everything back to his storage ring.

He looked towards the bed and saw that Little Snow was still sleeping.

He walked towards the door and opened it. Long Chen saw Mingyu standing outside the door. He could see somewhat of a relief in her eyes.

"You're back." She said with a smile.

"Were you thinking that I wouldn't come back?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her.

"I never doubted your return. Not even for a second. It's just I was somewhat worried about you, as you had said that you will come back within a week but it had been more than that." Mingyu said to Long Chen.

"Come on inside. There's something I need to talk to you about" Long Chen said as he looked at Mingyu. He walked back to the bed. Mingyu entered his bedroom and stood in front of him.

"Sit down. I'm not going to eat you up. Either way, you're not weaker than me" Long Chen said to Mingyu with a laugh.

Princess Mingyu sat down beside Long Chen without saying a word and just looked at Long Chen with a questioning gaze.

"You remember the three people from the North Moon Empire that we met in that restaurant last time?" Long Chen inquired as he gazed at Mingyu.

"Yea, what about them?" Mingyu asked as she looked back.

"The girl that introduced herself as Meng came here yesterday," Long Chen told Mingyu.

"What for?" She inquired as she looked at him.

"She wants us to join them on their exploration of a strong cultivators tomb," Long Chen said to Mingyu with a thoughtful expression.

"But why...?" She let out with a confused expression on her face.

"She said that they found an old map somehow. It pointed towards a tomb of a cultivator who was supposedly above Heavenly Realm. They reached that tomb but discovered that it could only be accessed by a group of four or more Cultivators. So they want us to join their group of three" Long Chen explained everything to Mingyu.

"What do you want?" She asked Long Chen.

"I want to join them. Although I don't want you to join this trip, I thought that you should be the one to make the final decision" Long Chen said with a serious look on his face.

"Why don't you want me to join? Do you think that I will drag you down?" Mingyu asked with an upset look on her face.

"Not at all. It's just that there's a lot of risk in this. Although I can escape easily if things go wrong, I'm still worried about you." Long Chen let out seriously.

"You don't need to be worried about me. I'm confident that I can handle all three of them alone with ease" Mingyu said as she smiled.

"I guessed as much. But still..." Long Chen said in a concerning tone.

"I want to come with you. When are we leaving?" Mingyu interrupted him before he could complete his sentence.

"Hah, If that's what you want. Anyways, Meng will come here today to clear the details" Long Chen told Mingyu.

"By the way, did I mention that you're looking really pretty today. I missed seeing your face all this time." Long Chen said with a smile as he saw Mingyu about to get up.

"Liar." She let out but Long Chen noticed a glimpse of happiness in her eyes.

"Is there a reason for me to lie? It's an honest compliment, though I must say that you look just as beautiful every day." Long Chen let out.

Mingyu was about to reply when the sound of a heavy thumping was heard. Long Chen stood up as he hurriedly walked towards the exit. He noticed that the sound was coming from the main door as if someone was hitting the door heavily.

With an annoyed look on his face, he opened the door. As the door was suddenly opened towards the inside by Long Chen, the fist that was about to hit the door came towards his face.

Long Chen subconsciously responded as he used his Demon Monarch Physique and Earthly Monarch Effect to its fullest and moved his palm in front of the fist.

Long Chen grabbed the fist which was only a few inches away from his face. The hand stopped where it was as Long Chen looked at the person whom this hand belonged to.

"Mister Ruan? Is this your manner when you come to someone's house?" Long Chen asked with an annoyed look on his face. He was the person whom Long Chen saw with Meng. He even had somewhat of an argument with him.

Long Chen looked around as he saw Meng standing on his left side with a wry smile on her face. Long Chen also saw Ling standing on his right.

A flicker of anger appeared on Ruan's face as he applied more force to his hand as he pushed towards Long Chen who held his hand. He only used his physical strength and no cultivation.

"Are you done? If you aren't, put your cultivation to it as well... maybe you would be able to move your hand" Long Chen smiled as he felt Ruan applying force to his fist, though this bit was nothing in front of Long Chen as it wasn't able to do anything.

"You!!!" Ruan became then more angry as he began using his Cultivation.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he saw Ruan's expression.

Chapter 179 - 179: Bad Deeds Of Long Chen

"Senior Brother Ruan! We are here to ask them to join us... not to fight them." Mingyu let out loudly as she looked at Ruan. Ruan stopped exerting force and soon enough, Long Chen freed his hand.

"I apologize for that. It was just that we were knocking for a long time and there was no response, so senior brother Ruan got a little impatient." Meng said as she bowed her head lightly.

"Sometimes impatience can get a person killed," Long Chen said to Ruan as he looked at him with a smile.

"Same goes for overconfidence." Ruan talked back with an annoyed look on his face.

"Hah, right. Anyways, what are you three here for? Wouldn't Meng had been enough to hear our answers?" Long Chen inquired with a curious look on his face.

"I brought them with me so that we could straight away go to that tomb without much time waste," Meng replied to Long Chen.

"How did you know that I will agree to your request?" Long Chen asked with an interested look on his face.

"I just had a feeling. So get ready fast... we will leave now" Meng said to Long Chen.

"We are ready. Just wait a minute... I'll be right back" Long Chen said as he hurriedly walked towards his bedroom. He picked up little snow who was still sleeping as he walked back. He came out of the house while Mingyu followed him and locked the door.

"So you're bringing your pet? Do you think we are going on vacation?" Ruan let out in a condescending tone.

"It is coming with me. I can't leave this little guy alone." Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Anyways, Can you guys show me the Map?" Long Chen inquired.

"Ah...yeah... alright," Meng said with somewhat of a hesitant look. She brought out the map and gave it to Long Chen. Long Chen gazed at the map carefully as he tried to study it.

"It is indeed quite old." Long Chen muttered with a serious look on his face as he gave back the map.

"Didn't you say that the kingdom is suspicious of you? All of us leaving together... won't it attract further attention?" Long Chen inquired as he gazed at Meng.

"We already have four people on our team and soon we will be inside that tomb. Before they could do anything, we will be out with all the treasures." Mingyu said with a smile.

"Alright. By the way... do you guys have a travel beast or are we to walk all the way?" Long Chen asked her.

"We won't walk there... we will fly

"Meng said as a mysterious smile appeared on her face. She whistled loudly and soon enough Long Chen could feel a large gust of wind above him. He looked upwards and saw three flying beasts above their head.

"Soaring Lunar Eagle..." Long Chen muttered as he recognized the beasts. All three of those beasts were in the Spirit Establishment Realm. They looked like eagles from Earth but their size was much larger. Their wingspan itself was over five meters long.

"Those are our personal travel beasts that we received from the sect. They can carry two people with ease." Ruan said with a proud look on his face.

"They are quite good." Long Chen said but he did not look even a little bit impressed.

"They are good for travel but quite weak... Nothing like the strong-flying beasts we have back home. I guess their Empire is indeed behind on the strength." Mingyu let out as she looked at Long Chen without minding others.

"You...!" Ruan fumed with anger but before he could say anything someone else chimed in.

"Weaker than your Empire? Are you really serious or just bragging?! You can't even name your Empire. Why don't you tell us which Empire claims to be stronger than the North Moon Empire in this continent? I know there are some stronger ones but they are quite far... I don't believe that you people came from there, as you would have named your Empire if you weren't ashamed" Ling commented as she looked at Mingyu with an upset look on her face.

"I apologize if I offended you... I just said the truth but don't mind my words. There's nothing to feel sad about... Your Empire is still Stronger than most. " Mingyu said as she looked at Ling in a comforting manner.

" Hmmph... Whatever" Ling looked the other way as she ignored Mingyu.

"Let's go... we are getting late," Meng said as she tried to divert everyone's attention. Their group of three called for the Soaring Lunar Eagle to come down, which they did as they stood in front of their owners.

"Master Chen can sit with Senior Brother Ruan while I can sit with Miss Mingyu. How is my suggestion? " Meng suggested as she looked towards Long Chen.

"I'm not sitting with him! " Long Chen and Ruan both said at the same time as they rejected her suggestion.

"Then how about Master Chen sit with me and Miss Mingyu can sit with Junior Sister Ling. ' Meng suggested again.

"Senior Sister Meng... I don't want to sit with her." Ling immediately rejected the suggestion as she told Meng.

" Ohh Junior Sister Ling, There's no reason to be so petty. Alright, Miss Mingyu can sit with me and Master Chen can sit with Junior Sister Ling. Now, who has a problem with this suggestion?" Meng said with a wry smile on her face.

" Alright... Let's go" Meng beamed a smile as she finally breathed in relief after seeing everyone agree.

She climbed on the back of her Soaring Lunar Eagle and Mingyu sat behind her while Long Chen sat behind Ling on her Soaring Lunar Eagle. Ruan was the only one sitting alone on his Eagle.

They soon took to air as they began their journey towards the Mountain range.

"At this speed, we will get there in less than half an hour" Long Chen muttered as he saw the flying speed of the eagle.

"Yea, We will get there in around twenty minutes," Ling replied to him as she enjoyed the breath of fresh air on her face.

"Oh, by the way, can I ask you something? " Long Chen let out as if he thought about something.

" Yes. As long as it's not a secret that I can't say." Ling replied in a casual tone.

" Your senior brother Ruan... He is the strongest one in your group, then why does it look like Meng is the leader? " Long Chen asked her with a curious look on his face.

" Oh... That's because Senior Sister Meng has a higher position than Senior Brother Ruan. Although Senior Brother Ruan is stronger and gave a good background, Senior Sister Meng has a way stronger and intimidating background. Also, her talent is said to be above Senior Brother Ruan's as well." Ling replied to Long Chen.

" Which one do you like more? Senior Brother Ruan or your Senior Sister Meng? " Long Chen casually asked with a smile.

"Of Course it's Senior Sister Meng. She is like my real sister. She helped me a lot throughout my life. She also gave me the courage to go against my father's wishes and break off my engagement. She even came with me all the way to support me " Ling said as a smile appeared on her face.

" It was good that she did that. As if she didn't, I most probably would have succumbed to my father's wishes and gotten married to that guy. Do you know? Only when I went to the place where he lives, did I discover that the guy was even worse than I had imagined. I don't know what my father was thinking when he got me engaged." Ling said to Long Chen with an annoyed look on her face.

"Worse than you expected? How?" Long Chen asked with an amused smile on his face.

"He lives in a small second rank kingdom. When I went there, I talked to some people to find his address and some information about him, and what I found out stunned me. I have expected that he was a small genius in a small kingdom. Although he couldn't be at my level, he would still be better than trash, but I was wrong. Turns out that the guy was worse than trash. He was a kid who went crazy and as for his cultivation... from what I heard, he was still in Body Refining realm. "Ling let out casually.

" Really? I don't think that's enough to call him worse than a trash" Long Chen let out a wry smile on his face.

"There's more! Do you know how he went crazy? " She asked Long Chen as he turned back to look at him.

"How?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"I heard that when he was young, he was a big pervert who always molested the girls of their city just because he had a stronger background! One day, he molested a girl who had just come to the city. What he didn't know was that the girl was the heir of a strong family from the First Rank Kingdom. The girl's family got involved and beat him till he was almost dead. Only because his mother groveled in front of them did they leave him barely breathing. Although he recovered, later on, he went crazy." Ling explained to Long Chen.

"What the heck? Who told you that?" Long Chen couldn't help but exclaim with an impossible look on his face.

"Unbelievable right? How can such an evil guy exist? At least he got the punishment he deserved! Now he can't hurt any girl." Mingyu said as she smiled.

"I can understand your decision in that case" Long Chen said as he recovered his expressions.

"So his bad deeds were famous throughout the city?" Long Chen asked again.

"I believe so! If even his family member told me this much, just think how worse would he actually be in reality." Ling replied to Long Chen.

"His family member? Who?" Long Chen let out with a confused look on his face.

Chapter 180 - 180: Such Enmity

" I believe so! If even his family member told me this much, just think how worse would he actually be in reality." Ling replied to Long Chen.

" His family member? Who?" Long Chen let out with a confused look on his face. He couldn't understand who would lie about him in such a way.

"His... Wait a minute... Why are we talking about him! He's out of my life for good. There's no need to talk about him anymore" Ling let out abruptly.

"Sorry, I was just curious. I'll change the topic. Who actually found this map amongst you three? " Long Chen asked her as he unwillingly changed the topic. He decided to ask her about this later.

" It was Senior Brother Ruan who found the Map. He was also the one who found the page with it. He found it when he went out on a mission. He came back and informed me and Senior Sister Meng about the map." Ling told Long Chen.

"A page? What was on that page? " Long Chen asked her with a curious look on her face.

"Senior Brother Ruan and I couldn't understand the words at all as all the characters were pretty ancient and incomprehensible, but thankfully Senior Sister Meng had studied some of the Ancient languages, thus she was able to understand read the letter," Ling said as if she was telling a story.

"What did she tell you about that letter?" Long Chen asked with great interest.

"Well... Since you've been told about the tomb and this mission by Senior Sister Meng, I feel like there shouldn't be any problem with telling you. She said that the letter was most probably written by the enemy of the cultivator whom this tomb belonged to. He had an enmity with the owner of the tomb and chased him throughout his life. By the time he located the person, he found out that he was already dead. He wanted to hurt that person even after his death but he couldn't downgrade himself to invade someone's tomb. Thus he made this map which pointed to the tomb and wrote the letter in which he described the reason he made the map and the details about the cultivator and his treasures. He hoped that the future generations will invade the tomb of his enemy to get his treasures. " Ling said to Long Chen as she tried to imagine the scene where the person wrote this letter.

"Wow... such hate that it can't be quenched even after a person's death..." Long Chen muttered as he sighed.

"That person must have done something really bad to warrant such hate," Ling said with a thoughtful look.

"Not necessarily. We can't know what happened between them..." Long Chen said in a soft voice as he looked towards the sky.

As Long Chen and Ling were talking, Meng and Mingyu were having a chat amongst themselves.

"Your boyfriend looks really interested in Ling" Meng chuckled as she glanced at Long Chen.

"It's his choice whatever he wants to do. I won't interfere in his decisions" Mingyu said as she smiled.

" Interesting. Anyways, how did you guys meet? " Meng asked as she glanced at Mingyu with a smile.

" He saved my life on our first meeting," Mingyu said with a smile.

"Wow... You are so strong...yet he is the one who saved your life? He must be quite strong!" Meng exclaimed as she looked somewhat shocked.

" Yea... he is pretty strong," Mingyu said as a smile blossomed on her face.

"He is so young yet so talented. He must be a Prince from a Royal Family of a really strong Empire, right?" Meng asked with a stunned look.

Mingyu only smiled at her question but didn't answer her.

'She's keeping it a secret as well... These two really know how to hide their identities...' Meng thought on the inside but she didn't let her thoughts show on her face.

"Have you guys done that yet?" Meng asked as she looked at Mingyu with a mischievous smile on her face.

"What?" Mingyu asked with a confused look on her face.

" You know... Things that boyfriend and girlfriend do in bed" Meng said as she chuckled.

" Yu... " Mingyu thought for a while before she realized the meaning of her words... her face turned crimson as she stuttered to find words to react.

"You don't need to tell me if you're shy." Meng laughed as she said to Princess Mingyu.

"When did you leave your Empire with him?" Meng asked again.

"It feels like forever..." Mingyu let out suddenly as she remembered her family. Her expressions became downcast.

"You miss your family?" Meng asked as she saw her expressions.

"Yea..." Mingyu said as she nodded her head.

"I have never been in love so I can't understand the feeling and what it must be like, but your love must be really amazing as it made you leave your family behind just to be with him.

Mingyu didn't say anything as she sat with her head down.

"I apologize if I'm boring you," Meng said with a wry smile on her face as she noticed that Mingyu wasn't saying anything.

"It's nothing like that." Mingyu shook her head as she said.

"You ... Oh, looks like we're already there.."Meng was about to say something when she noticed that they were almost at their destination. She lowered her Soaring Lunar Eagle as she began to land.

Ling and Ruan noticed this as well and followed the lead of Meng as they lowered their beasts as well.

Soon after landing on the ground, they all got off their beasts.

Long Chen saw the place he had landed and realized that it was a place he had passed through when he was going to the peak of the mountain. This place was somewhere in between the peak and the bottom of the mountain.

Meng looked around and soon looked like she found something. She walked straight to a large rock that was placed in the open. Long Chen and the others followed her as they walked to the Rock as well.

Long Chen gazed with curiosity as Meng picked that large rock up with ease. Meng put that rock to the side. As Meng removed that rock from its original place, Long Chen was finally able to see a large hole that was previously hidden by that rock.

"It's deep... so be careful when jumping." Meng let out with a smile as she jumped into that hole.

Ruan was the second person to jump inside.

Ling silently walked forward as well, as she jumped inside.

"Be careful..." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at Mingyu. He jumped inside as well. Long Chen used his Demon Monarch Physique along with his cultivation so as to be prepared for a deep fall.

Long Chen fell for over ten meters before he saw the ground. He got ready for the landing and soon enough he landed on the ground, perfectly safe. He stepped aside as he cleared the place for Mingyu.

In about a minute, Mingyu landed in the same spot as she joined up with Long Chen who was waiting for her.

Long Chen walked with Mingyu as they walked in the slim corridor. The corridor widened soon enough as a big room appeared in front of everyone.

Long Chen gazed around the room and noticed a big door at the center of the room.

"This is where the actual entry to the tomb is..." Meng said as she gazed towards the large door.

" To open it, we need to push the four symbols on the four sides of those walls at the same time... That's why I said that we need four people to enter the tomb," Meng said as she pointed towards four symbols on each of the walls in the room.

"How do you know such details? " Mingyu asked as she looked as she gazed at Meng.

" Oh, We found some directions about some of the formations and traps along with the map. Anyways let's get started." Meng said briefly as she walked towards the wall on her front. Long Chen smiled as he picked the wall on the right side. Ruan walked towards the left wall while Ling chose the last wall. Mingyu stood near Long Chen.

"Everybody... touch the symbols in front of you on the count of three!" Meng let out loudly as she looked back.

" 1.....2...3... Now!" Meng said loudly as she pressed the symbol in front of her. Long Chen, Ling, and Ruan all did the same at the same time. The symbols

started shining as soon as their hands touched them. They shone for a short time before a heavy sound came.

The still door moved a few inches backward and started sliding towards the right.

"As soon as you cross that door, the real trial begins. There might be many unknown dangers that will most probably be life-threatening so I'll tell everyone to be careful! Yours and others life depend on it as one mistake can cause the death of us all. " Meng let out as she glanced at everyone.

"I guess everyone is ready" Meng muttered as she saw the casual look on Long Chen's face and the determined look on Ruan's face. Mingyu and Ling both looked confident as well.

"Let's go.." Meng let out with a smile on her face as she entered the tomb.

"It's good that we have five people with us. Even if you die, we won't have to worry" Ruan laughed loudly as he glanced at Long Chen. He entered the tomb as well. Ling entered soon after along with Long Chen and Mingyu.

Chapter 181 - 181: Against The Earth

"It's good that we have five people with us. Even if you die, we won't have to worry" Ruan laughed loudly as he glanced at Long Chen. He entered the tomb as well. Ling entered soon after along with Long Chen and Mingyu.

As soon as he entered the room, Long Chen and the others saw four doors in front of them.

There were words written on the doors. Although Long Chen couldn't read the words, Meng cleared his doubts.

"Fire, water, Earth, wind..." Meng let out as she read the characters.

"Xun, Is she telling the truth?" Long Chen asked Xun through his thoughts.

"Yea... that's what the words say... although the order of the characters is different. The first door has a Water character. The second door has wind. The third one has the Earth, and the fourth door has fire... " Xun told Long Chen.

"At least one person must enter each door. In other words, all four doors need to be entered by at least one person or we will die as soon as we enter any of the doors. " Meng let out as she looked at everyone.

" I'll choose wind then ..." Ruan said as he looked towards the fourth door.

"I will choose water..." Ling said with a smile.

"Junior Sister Ling, you are still not strong enough to go alone. We have five people with us. How about you enter with one of us? " Meng let out as she gazed at Ling.

Long Chen frowned as he heard her words, as her words meant that he and Mingyu would have to separate for now.

"It's fine... If they can choose one door each, I'm stronger than them... I am sure that I'll come out with ease" Mingyu said with a smile as she saw the frown on Long Chen's face.

"But... Alright, what is the element, amongst the four, that you are most confident about? " Long Chen wanted to dissuade her but gave up as he saw her determined expression.

"Wind... but Ruan already chose that..." Mingyu told Long Chen.

"Choose the second door then," Long Chen said to Mingyu with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Alright! We agree that Ling is weak and shouldn't go alone. I'll take the second door then." Mingyu let out with a confident look on her face as she followed Long Chen's advice.

"See? Miss Mingyu understands it as well. I can't let you go alone." Meng said as she looked at Ling with a smile.

"Alright, I'll come with Senior Sister Meng then" Ling nodded her head as she said to Meng.

"Not me! I feel like since Master Chen is the strongest, how about you go with him?" Meng asked as she suggested.

Ling didn't know how to deny her Senior Sister thus she only nodded to her suggestion.

"Is it alright with you, Master Chen?" Meng asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"It's fine with me" Long Chen let out after thinking for a brief moment.

"Which door will you enter?" Meng asked Long Chen.

"I'll choose the third door... Earth" Long Chen smiled as he walked towards the third door. Ling followed him and stood behind him.

"I'll choose the first one then," Meng said as she smiled and walked towards the first door.

All of them pushed their respective doors open and entered. As soon as they entered, the door closed behind them.

Long Chen found himself standing in the deserted land. There was no grass on the ground and only sand. There were also two Stone Giants standing on both sides of him just over two steps ahead. Those Giants had a body that was over two and a half meters tall and over a meter wide. Their arms were as big as Long Chen's waist.

"Uhhmm..." Long Chen let out with a stunned look on his face as he saw two more Giants at about two meters of straight distance from the first two Giants. There were two more ahead of them and so on. In total, Long Chen could see over Ten Stone Giants on the right side and the same number on the right.

"I feel like they are our enemies that we need to defeat" Long Chen let out softly as he gazed at Ling.

"You are being scared over nothing. They aren't even moving? I think that they are just statues used for decoration?" Ling said to Long Chen as she looked at the still Stone Giants.

"Maybe... Why don't you take the first step?" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"Sure I will... What's there to worry about?" Ling snorted as she stepped forward.

As soon as Ling stepped ahead of Long Chen, a cracking sound was heard. She stopped where she was as she looked around. She gazed at the stone Giant but it was still looking as still as before. She didn't know why but she had a strange feeling but she ignored it. She thought that it was just her imagination. She took a second step forward. Again a cracking sound was heard but this time it didn't stop.

She looked to the right as she saw the stone Giant which was standing in a different position. Instead of the previously blank eyes, there was now a yellow light in his eyes. She looked to the left and saw the second Stone Giant was the same.

Both the stone Giants began moving towards Ling.

Ling grew stunned as she saw both the Giants coming at her. She immediately began utilizing her cultivation as she attacked the giant on the right.

"Wind slash!" She let out loudly as she attacked the giant. A sharp blade made of wind moved towards the stone Giant on the right as it slashed his chest.

A deep gash appeared on the chest of the stone Giant but against its bulky body, it looked like nothing. The giant kept coming towards her.

She kept attacking the Giants on her left and on the right constantly without wasting a single breath as she tried fighting them off but it looked like her attacks were having no major effects.

"Earth is known for its strong defense. Its defense can't be broken so easily. To crush one such giant, one needs immense physical or offensive strength. She is too weak in front of them..." Long Chen muttered as he looked at the scene in front of him.

"Can you wait here for a little bit?" Long Chen said in a soft voice as he gazed at little snow. He softly put little snow on the ground as he gazed at the scene ahead.

The left Stone Giant was the first to reach Ling as he made a fist and tried hitting Ling.

Ling was stunned as she saw no chance at survival. Her body stopped listening to her commands as she felt like her body grew extremely heavy. She couldn't move her feet even an inch as the first Stone Giant's fist came towards her.

Ling closed her eyes as a tear fell from her eyes.

"Aren't you forgetting someone?" A light voice came suddenly. Ling opened her eyes as she gazed in the direction of the sound.

She saw Long Chen in the air as he punched towards the giant. She couldn't understand how Long Chen could jump that high but at that moment she only wanted one thing... to Survive.

Long Chen packed a fist as he punched towards the head of the Stone Giant. The pressure in the air increased as a gust of wind began flowing along with Long Chen's fist.

The fist landed on the head of the Stone Giant and soon enough, the Stone Giant broke into pieces as its pieces flew into the air.

Long Chen landed on the ground amidst the crushed pieces of stone but he didn't stop as he disappeared from his spot. His speed was such that Ling couldn't even see his trail as he appeared behind the second Stone Giant.

Long Chen kicked at the neck of the second Stone Giant and immediately his neck broke apart as his head fell to the ground but the Stone Giant didn't stop.

Even without his head, The Stone Giant turned around as he attacked at Long Chen but Long Chen again disappeared from his spot as he dodged the attack and punched at the back of the Stone Giant. The Stone Giant broke into bits and pieces, just like the first since giant.

Long Chen landed on the ground and turned back to gaze at Long.

"Most of the time, things aren't the same as they seem. The same goes for inanimate objects, beasts as well as humans" Long Chen said with a smile as he gazed at the tear eyed Ling.

"Just wait there little guy... there are still some things to take care of," Long Chen said with a smile as he glanced at Little Snow who was looking at him with its curious eyes.

Long Chen turned back as he looked at the remaining Stone Giants who were still not moving. He walked forward and as he reached in front of the second pair of Stone Giants, they began moving as well. They attacked him. Long Chen kept fighting and destroying Stone Giants as he kept moving ahead.

"They get stronger the further they are along the line" Long Chen muttered as he noticed that the Stone Giants he kept facing were stronger than the previous ones.

"He is so... strong..." Ling muttered as her gaze fixed at Long Chen. She started at Long Chen with wide eyes as he kept destroying one Stone Giant after the other.

Soon he was on the tenth and the last pair of Stone Giants.

Chapter 182 - 182:ls He Dead?

"He is so... strong..." Ling muttered as her gaze fixed at Long Chen. She stared at Long Chen with wide eyes as he kept destroying one Stone Giant after another.

Soon, he was on the tenth and the last pair of Stone Giants.

The last pair of Stone Giants looked somewhat taller and bulkier than the previous ones.

Without wasting time, Long Chen stepped towards the Stone Giants as he attacked them. He attacked the right Stone Giant first.

The Stone Giant punched back as its fist collided with Long Chen's fist. The Giant's whole arm was broken into pieces from the impact while Long Chen flew back and landed on the ground.

He again attacked the Stone Giant and after some effort, the Stone Giant was destroyed as its pieces flew everywhere.

A few minutes after that, the last Stone Giant was destroyed as well.

"Finally finished" Long Chen smiled as he walked back.

Ling saw Long Chen coming towards her as her heart began beating faster.

"Th... thank..." As Long Chen reached near her, she opened her red lips to thank Long Chen but her face turned sour as she saw Long Chen not stopping in front of her. Instead, Long Chen passed by her as he continued walking.

"Sorry for making you wait," Long Chen let out with a smile as he stopped in front of Little Snow. He picked her up as he turned around.

"Let's get going," Long Chen said as he finally looked at Ling.

"Hmph... alright" Ling let out with a sour look on her face.

Long Chen suddenly felt something strange as he looked around. Long Chen saw that the pieces of the destroyed Stone Giants began moving. All the stone pieces floated in the air as they moved towards the tenth pair of the Stone Giants that Long Chen had destroyed a few moments ago.

Long Chen and Ling couldn't help but grow stunned as they saw the stone pieces combine as they took the form of a Stone Giant but this time the Stone

Giant was over ten times bigger than the previous times. It stood at a height of over twenty meters.

There was also a stone armor around the Stone Giants' chest. A stone hammer also took form in the hands of the Stone Giant.

"Ah, man... Can you give me a break!!!" Long Chen let out with a tired look on his face as he saw the 20 meters tall Stone Giant.

"I'm sorry for doing it again, but can you wait for longer?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he put little snow to the ground again.

Long Chen disappeared from his spot as he ran towards the Stone Giant. He used his Demon Monarch Physique as he punched at the chest of the Stone Giant. A large crater appeared on the Stone Giants chest but unlike previous times, this damage was somewhat lacking to the correct form factor of the giant.

Long Chen moved backward but he was struck by the hammer of the Stone Giant as he flew away like a broken kite.

Long Chen crashed on the ground as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

"That actually hurt," Long Chen let out as he gazed at the Stone Giant.

Long Chen stood up from the ground as he got ready.

"Thunder blade!" Long Chen let out loudly as he pointed his finger towards the sky.

A few dark clouds formed on top of their heads which started to blare. Lights appeared amidst the clouds and soon a lightning blade appeared out of nowhere as it moved towards the Stone Giant.

The Stone Giant felt the thunder blade coming towards him and swung his hammer towards the blade. The blade and the hammer collided but other than some damage to the hammer, no damage occurred on the Stone Giant.

Long Chen again disappeared from his original spot as he punched out at the stone giant. The Stone Giant again swung his hammer but Long Chen dodged it as he again punched the same spot on his chest. The previous crater got even deeper. Long Chen kept dodging and attacking the Stone Giant as the damage to the Stone Giant kept increasing. The body of the Stone Giant was soon filled with cracks yet it was fighting Long Chen full of zest.

After half an hour of dodging and attacking, the Stone Giant was destroyed as its body broke into pieces and fell to the ground.

"That was a good exercise..." Long Chen let out as he sat on the ground. Long Chen turned to look back and noticed that Little Snow had climbed onto his lap.

"Didn't I tell you to stay there?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he gazed at little snow. Little Snow didn't respond to Long Chen as it rested on his lap.

"Alright little guy. Keep ignoring me..." Long Chen chuckled as he stood up.

" Hopefully it's finally over... Let's get going" Long Chen said as he looked at Ling but he noticed that she was standing in a daze at her initial position. It was as if she couldn't believe her eyes. She couldn't believe what she had just witnessed.

'Such strength...' She thought as she looked at Long Chen with a daze.

Long Chen stood up as he walked towards Ling. He got near her as he stood in front of her.

"Are you coming or should I leave you behind." Long Chen said with a smile as he tapped her shoulders.

"Ah... ah... I'm coming..." Ling let out with a stunned look on her face. Her face was already crimson as she noticed Long Chen standing at such a close distance to her.

Long Chen walked ahead while Ling followed him. The rest of the way, they didn't face much trouble as they soon reached the door on the other end. Long Chen pushed the door open as he left with Ling.

On the other side, Mingyu, Meng, and Ruan were going through their own trials.

Mingyu was walking on the deserted land as well. Sand storms kept appearing again and again as they kept being strengthened but Mingyu passed through them with ease. Amidst halfway through her journey, Mingyu noticed that the sandstorms were not only getting stronger but now there was one more threat to her. The sandstorms contained various bees like creatures that were flying

inside the giant sandstorms. Those creatures attacked Mingyu as the sandstorms decreased her visibility.

On the other hand, Ruan was cursing his luck as he was swimming in a large sea. Sea Monsters kept attacking him, though he killed them with ease. The thing that was troubling him the most was the swimming. He was getting tired as he cursed choosing this door.

Meng, on the other hand, was walking through a place filled with heat and fire. Though she was prepared as she had an artifact to increase her resistance against the flames. The thing which troubled her was the creature that kept attacking her. They looked like they were made of fire, but her artifacts helped her immensely in resisting the attacks as she walked through the flaming field.

Long Chen walked through the door as he entered a room. Ling crossed the door behind him.

Long Chen looked around the room and noticed that there was a long corridor ahead of him. Behind him were four doors, one of whom was the door that Long Chen had passed through.

"Have others not come yet?" Ling looked around the room as she let out.

" I believe so..." Long Chen let out as he gazed at the doors.

"They're quite slow... Do you want to go ahead?" Ling asked as she looked at Long Chen.

" Nope, I'll wait for Yu" Long Chen said in a straight manner as he walked to a corner and sat down. His back rested against the walls as he gazed at the doors.

"Oh..." Ling let out with a downcast look on her face as she looked down. She also walked towards Long Chen and sat beside him.

Time passes slowly as Long Chen waited for others to walk through the doors.

Half an hour passed when the first door opened. Long Chen gazed towards the door and saw Meng exit the door. Her clothes looked somewhat burnt at places, including her shoulders, her thighs, and in between her neck and her chest. It revealed her milky white skin to Long Chen.

"Her clothes are burnt but not her skin... She must have something to defend her body against fire." Long Chen thought as he glanced at Meng.

"Senior Sister Meng!!!" Ling stood up excitedly as she ran towards Meng.

"Are you alright?" She asked with concern as she looked at Meng.

"I'm fine Junior Sister Ling. What about you?" Meng asked back.

"I'm fine as well. Master Chen protected me." Ling said with a smile as she looked back at Long Chen.

"Oh? I must thank Master Chen then." Meng said with a chuckle as she gazed at Long Chen.

"As expected, you are the first one to exit," Meng said with a smile as she walked towards Long Chen.

"I was expecting you to cross first. Quite disappointing" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"Hey? I'm still faster than your girlfriend" Meng laughed lightly as she winked at Long Chen.

As Long Chen opened his mouth to say something, the second door opened as well.

Long Chen smiled as he saw Mingyu exit the door. She dusted her clothes which were covered in sand.

"Need some help?" Long Chen said to Mingyu.

"No thanks," Mingyu said with a smile as she walked towards Long Chen.

"Only Ruan is next. Seeing his cultivation, I never expected him to be last." Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Meng.

"Senior Brother Ruan will soon be here." Ling let out with a confident look on her face.

"If you say so.." Long Chen said casually before he turned his attention to Mingyu.

"What did you face inside?" Long Chen asked Mingyu with a curious look on her face.

Mingyu began describing the events with great interest.

Four hours passed as they waited for Ruan, but the fourth door didn't open.

"Is he dead?" Long Chen let out with a curious look on his face as he saw Ruan not exiting even after so long but just as he said it, the fourth door opened.

Ruan passed through the fourth door with fully drenched clothes as he breathed heavily. He fell down to his knees right after crossing the door.

Long Chen couldn't help but burst into laughter as he saw Ruan's condition.

Chapter 183 - 183: End Of The Road

Ruan passed through the fourth door with fully drenched clothes as he breathed heavily. He fell down to his knees right after crossing the door.

Long Chen couldn't help but burst into laughter as he saw Ruan's condition.

"You!!! What are you laughing at!!!" Ruan let out loudly as he saw Long Chen laughing.

"Nothing... I was just wondering if you were here to explore this tomb or to take a shower" Long Chen let out with a chuckle as he teased Ruan.

"What happened to you Senior Brother Ruan? Why are your clothes all wet?" Meng asked as she looked at Ruan.

" I was dropped into the sea and had to swim all the way to the exit. " Ruan said as he looked at Meng.

"That explains why you are late... It must have been tiring. Take a rest. " Meng told Ruan in a concerned tone.

" Yea... We've already wasted 5 hours for you... a few more hours don't mean much anymore" Long Chen said with a chuckle as he glanced at Ruan.

" Mind your own business!" Ruan let out as he supported his back against the wall and began resting.

Long Chen smiled as he stopped with his teasing. He closed his eyes as he gave Ruan the time to rest.

"I'm ready!" Ruan meditated for two hours before he stood up and said with a determined voice.

"Finally... I was beginning to feel like I should leave you behind. " Long Chen smiled as he stood up.

Meng stood up as well and took the lead as she walked through the corridor. They moved deeper into the tomb before the corridor ultimately ended.

They stood in a room which was over 15 meters wide and 40 meters long.

Ruan and Ling's eyes started shining as they looked around the room. Meng and Mingyu looked impressed as well. Long Chen, on the other hand, had a weird expression on his face. He looked confused.

Both sides of the room contained various treasures placed behind a glass wall. All the treasures shone with a brilliant light.

There were swords, shields, blades, knives, armors and many more treasures that this room contained.

"Amazing!!! So many treasures!!! They must all be Earth grade artifacts!! Even in our sect, these many Earth Grade treasures would be impossible to find! " Ling exclaimed with an excited look on her face as she looked at the treasures.

"The information we had was correct!!! This person was most probably at a realm higher than the Heavenly Realm!! He had so many strong artifacts in his personal collection!!! " Ruan let out as he looked at Meng.

"Master Chen, Why do you have that confused look on your face? " Meng asked Long Chen as she noticed her strange expression.

" Oh, it's nothing... I was just stunned after seeing such an impressive collection of artifacts." Long Chen let out with a smile as he recovered.

"There are about twenty artifacts in this room. How about we each choose four?" Meng suggested as she looked at everyone.

"I agree. Since we are the ones who informed you two about this tomb and allowed you to come with us, we will choose first" Ruan let out as he looked towards Long Chen with a smirk.

" I don't mind... You three can go first" Long Chen replied with a casual smile. Mingyu also nodded her head.

"Since Master Chen agreed. Senior Brother Ruan, you can go first" Meng told Ruan.

"Alright!" Ruan let out with a bright smile as he walked towards one of the artifacts in the room.

It was a red armor that Ruan decided to pick first. He packed a fist as he punched the glass protecting the Armor. The glass shattered to pieces with ease as opposed to Ruan's expectation. He was expecting the glass to be strong as it was used to guard the armor but the reality was quite different.

Ruan hurriedly picked up the armor and put that in his storage ring. He walked to the next treasure of his liking with a wide grin on his face. It was a silver broadsword that he took a liking to. He placed the sword in his storage ring as well.

He picked a third treasure which was a red robe. Although he didn't know what its use was, he felt like it was somewhat special. He picked the fourth treasure before walking back.

"I'm done. Junior Sister Meng, You should go next." Ruan said as he looked at Meng.

Meng went ahead without wasting any time as she walked towards a treasure. It was a blue bracelet that emitted a powerful aura. Meng broke the glass which was protecting the bracelet and took the bracelet out. She gazed at it with amazement as she held the bracelet in her hand. With a smile on her face, she kept the bracelet in her storage ring.

Next, she walked towards a pair of light blue earrings. She kept them in her storage ring. Mingyu had a disappointed look on her face as she saw Meng pick those earrings.

After putting the earrings in her storage ring, Meng walked to another artifact. It was a sharp blade that looked like it could cut even the largest of mountains and the deepest seas.

The fourth item she picked was a golden coin. She couldn't understand what it was but the coin intrigued her the most, as she felt like it must be something special.

After she finished picking her four treasures, Meng walked back to the group.

"Junior Sister Ling, It's your turn," Meng said to Ling as she looked at her.

" Alright!" Ling said with an excited look on her face as she hurriedly walked towards the treasures that she had decided to pick.

Ling chose a sharp blade filled with blade aura. She hurriedly broke the glass and placed the blade inside her storage ring. She further picked a light yellow robe, a ring and a shield that she placed inside her storage ring as she walked back.

"Master Chen. Your turn" Meng said with a smile as she looked at Long Chen.

"Take the remaining 8 artifacts in my place," Long Chen said as he looked at Mingyu.

" You don't want any? " Mingyu asked with a perplexed look on her face.

"They aren't of any use to me. You should take them" Long Chen said with a smile as he glanced at the treasures.

"Alright, I'm keeping those treasures. You can take them all later if you desire." Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen. She walked towards the remaining treasures and kept them in the storage room that she possessed.

"Are you really not interested in treasures or just showing off right now?" Ruan snorted as he glanced at Long Chen.

"You can think whatever you like," Long Chen said with a smile as he glanced at Ruan.

" Since we're done with this room, let's move forward," Meng said as she gazed at everyone before she began moving forward.

" I'll see how long you can show off" Ruan let out as he followed Meng.

Long Chen followed them along with Mingyu.

Soon they reached into a room that looked totally empty. The room was over Ten meters wide and a hundred meters long.

There was no other door inside the room but there existed a Two-meter long sarcophagus at the other end of the room. On top of that casket, there was a tiny box.

"This must be the end of the Tomb and that must be the coffin of the tomb owner." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the room.

" I have something to say to everyone!" Meng stopped in front of everyone as she turned back to look at them.

"What do you want to say, Junior Sister Meng?" Ruan Asked with a curious look on his face.

" We have traveled together in the exploration of this tomb and divided all the treasures equally but I hope that I can be allowed to take that small box on top. Anything other than that which we find inside can be taken by you. I really hope that you can grant me this wish." Meng said as she looked at everyone with pleading eyes.

'There must be some incredible treasure inside that small box if she is going that far to ask us. I want that box for myself but... how can I go against her? Her backing...I will be instantly killed when I go back. Even if there is a heaven grade treasure inside, I will be killed before I could even learn how to use it.'

Ruan thought in his mind as he looked at Meng.

'It's quite strange...a place filled with so many treasures yet we barely faced any life-threatening traps and formations... Why do I have a feeling that either the last box is a trap or someone already entered this place and destroyed all the formations?'

'The glasses protecting the treasures in the previous room were intact as well... If it was the latter, that person knew what he was doing...' Long Chen thought as he looked around the room.

Chapter 184 - 184: Betrayal?

"The glasses protecting the treasures in the previous room were all intact as well... If it was the latter case, then that person knew exactly what he was doing..." Long Chen thought as he looked around the room.

"Of Course Junior Sister Meng can take that small box. You are the reason we could get here. You are the one who deciphered that letter which made us know about this tomb and its history in the first place. I don't think that without you any of this would be possible. I think Junior Sister Meng deserves to keep that box the most" Ruan let out with a flattering smile as he looked at Meng.

" I agree with Senior Brother Ruan! Senior Sister Meng helped us reach here. She was also the one who found two more people when we lacked a team and she was the one who found the way to enter this tomb! You should take that box " Ling let out as she smiled.

" What about you Master Chen? You agree too right? " Meng asked with a pleading gaze as she looked at Long Chen.

" I don't agree entirely as I don't know what's inside. I'm curious as to why you so eager desire that box? Do you know the thing that's inside it? " Long Chen asked as he gazed at Meng.

"I don't know what's inside, but I do desire to keep that box! Can Master Chen allow me to take that box?" Meng let out as she looked at Long Chen.

" I can allow you to keep that box but only if you show me what's inside? " Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Meng.

" I agree!!! I'll open the box for you when we're back in the city as this place is not safe at all. As soon as I take this box, there's a good chance that this whole room will collapse within a few seconds. Even the whole tomb can collapse. " Meng said to Long Chen in a convincing tone as she gazed in his eyes.

"Alright. You can show me later... but till then... Ling will be the one who keeps that box as I think that you won't allow Mingyu to keep it" Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Meng.

" Looks like Master Chen doubts me... Alright, I'll give that box to Ling as soon as I take it" Meng said as she turned back. She began walking towards the box.

'If my hunch is correct, then that box is either a trap or it's empty. I believe that there's no chance that the tomb of such a strong Cultivator will have no traps inside the tomb to protect his treasures. But there's still a low chance that the box might actually contain something and my feelings are wrong... Thus I need to see that box open right in front of my eyes' Long Chen thought as he looked at Meng.

Meng walked through the room in slow steps as she reached the casket. She picked up that small box as she hurriedly ran back.

"Let's go!!!" She gave that box to Ling as they all left the room. As soon as they left the room, it collapsed.

"Let's go... Other places might collapse at any time as well!!! " Meng let out as she ran towards the exit along with Long Chen and others.

They soon reached the place through which they entered the tomb. There existed four doors in front of them.

"Do we really need to cross them again?" Ruan let out with an annoyed look on his face.

" Exactly... and we need to go through the same door... the door through which each of us entered," Meng said as she looked at Long Chen.

"Looks like Young Master Ruan desires to take a bath again...I hope that you don't take so long this time or we might have to dig through the collapsed stones to find you" Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Ruan.

" If you don't shut your mouth right now, I promise that I will fight you right here and right now till one of us is dead." Ruan roared loudly as he looked at Long Chen.

" Do you want to die that badly?" Long Chen let out with a chuckle as he looked at Ruan.

Ruan fumed in anger as he heard Long Chen's taunt.

"Guys!!? We don't have time to waste!!! On a count of three!!! 1... 2... 3... enter... " Meng let out loudly as everyone entered their respective doors.

Soon everyone was out through the other side of the doors. This time Ruan was significantly faster even though he was still the last one to exit.

They all left the tomb as they stood on the mountain range.

"Let get going. We can settle the remaining matters in your mansion" Meng said with a smile as she looked at Long Chen.

Meng whistled and soon enough her Soaring Lunar Eagle came flying as it landed in front of her.

Ruan and Ling whistled as well and their Soaring Lunar Eagles came down. Ling's soaring Lunar eagle looked somewhat injured.

"What happened?" Ling explained with a shocked look on her face.

"She looks injured... Although she can still fly, I think she can not carry more than one person on her back. She will heal in a few days though" Meng told Ling as she looked at her.

"Since Ling's Soaring Lunar Eagle can't carry another person, how about Master Chen ride with me and Miss Mingyu can ride with Senior Brother Ruan?" Meng suggested as she looked at Long Chen with a smile.

"I will ride with Ruan. Mingyu will go with you" Long Chen let out as if he was ordering Meng.

"Alright" Meng let out as she agreed. Mingyu came with Meng and sat on her Soaring Lunar Eagle while Long Chen sat on Ruan's Soaring Lunar Eagle, though this time Ruan didn't complain even a bit... He felt like something was strange about Ruan's behavior.

The Soaring Lunar Eagles flew high into the air but Long Chen found it strange as this time they were at a height which was more than twice the height they flew at when they came here.

They flew for over ten minutes when Long Chen sensed danger. He noticed that Ruan was now facing him as he abruptly punched towards him with his full strength. Long Chen moved his hand as he grabbed Ruan's fist just a little distance away from his face.

"Your boyfriend is really protective of you..." Meng chuckled as she gazed at Mingyu.

"Hmm? What's that commotion?" Mingyu let out with a stunned expression as she looked towards the Soaring Lunar Eagle which carried Long Chen and Ruan. She could see them fighting. She was about to yell out when she felt a powerful push. She was thrown from the back of the Soaring Lunar Eagle as she fell towards the ground.

Long Chen was about to attack Ruan when he noticed Mingyu falling. His expressions turned grave as he jumped down without thinking anything.

"Hah idiot... Falling to his death for a girl... Looks like Junior Sister Meng's assumption was right." Ruan laughed as he gazed at Long Chen falling down but he didn't stop his Eagle as he continued ahead behind Meng. Ling was in the first position and strangely quite ahead of them thus she didn't hear the commotion behind her.

Meng, Ruan, and Ling left that place without stopping.

"Hmph... You don't deserve to see the thing that's inside as you might recognize it and desire it. Too bad that now I can't get close to you and the empire that you belonged to... It must be a higher-level one... but it's a small price to pay for this item!!!" Meng let out with a disdainful look on her face as she flew on the Soaring Lunar Eagle.

Mingyu was falling downwards as she wondered how it all happened... how could she let herself get distracted that she forgot to protect herself... She would die just for this small reason... She regretted trusting Meng as she wondered why she did it...

She was falling down when she noticed that Long Chen had jumped down as well.

"You idiot!! Why do you have to jump as well!!! Do you have a death wish!!?" Mingyu roared loudly as tears fell from her eyes.

She couldn't understand why but her heart ached as she saw Long Chen jump for her.

"Why... why... Why do you have to die with me!!! Why don't you live...!!!" She roared loudly as she gazed at Long Chen with tearful eyes.

"How can I let my destiny fall to her death!!" Long Chen smiled as he said loud enough for Mingyu to hear.

"You...." Mingyu stuttered to find words to react as she felt lost. Long Chen dove as he soon reached near Mingyu. He held Little Snow in one arm and grabbed Mingyu by her waist with another arm.

Chapter 185 - 185: Rare Ability

"You...." Mingyu stuttered to find words to react as she felt lost. Long Chen dove as he soon reached near Mingyu. He held Little Snow in one arm and grabbed Mingyu by her waist with another arm.

"Don't worry... I won't let my destiny die so easily" Long Chen smiled as he gazed at Mingyu. Tears kept falling from her eyes as they fell.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" Long Chen let out as two beautiful wings appeared behind his back.

Mingyu was looking in Long Chen's eyes thus she didn't notice the wings appearing on his back but she felt the fall stop. It was as if time had stopped as she gazed in Long Chen's eyes. His arms were wrapped around her waist. She wished that time could stay still in this moment but it didn't. She noticed that the flow of air had changed. It was as if they weren't falling anymore and instead they were flying.

"Looks like it's impossible to catch up to them for now" Long Chen muttered as he looked in the direction of the City of Thunder. He couldn't even see a glimpse of their Soaring Lunar Eagle in the sky.

Mingyu took her eyes off of Long Chen's eyes as she looked around but she was stunned to see that they were actually flying. She couldn't believe that there were wings in Long Chen's back.

"You can fly!!!" She exclaimed loudly with a stunned look on her face!

"I never said that I couldn't?" Long Chen let out with a smile as he gazed at her.

"They have left..." Long Chen told her as he looked at her.

"They must've been quite confident that we'll die after falling as they didn't even stop to see it. It's understandable though as only Heaven Realm Cultivators are able to fly..." Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen.

"No matter what they think they did... I will kill them!!!" Long Chen said with fierce determination as he gazed in the direction of the City of Thunder.

Long Chen started going down slowly as he safely landed on the ground with Mingyu. His wings disappeared. Long Chen and Mingyu stood still in each other's embrace even after they landed on the ground.

"This day is suddenly feeling a lot better" Long Chen let out with a smile as he gazed in deep eyes of Mingyu.

" You saved my life or there wouldn't even be a day for me. It makes it the second time." Mingyu let out with a smile as she glanced at Long Chen.

"Our days aren't going anywhere anytime soon" Long Chen chuckled as he said to Mingyu.

"Are you going to keep me like that?" Mingyu said in a soft voice as she looked at Long Chen's hand wrapped around her waist.

"I quite like it this way." Long Chen smiled as she glanced at Mingyu.

"Those people will escape if we delay for too long. " Mingyu told Long Chen as she lowered her head to hide her face which was already crimson by now.

"Alright, If you say so..." Long Chen removed his hands from Mingyu's waist as he took a step back.

"Thankfully Little Snow doesn't mind me hugging" Long Chen glanced at Little Snow who was comfortably lying on his other hand.

"I don't mind either...but..." Mingyu muttered in a somewhat inaudible voice as she looked down but Long Chen's sharp senses clearly heard her words.

"Do you want to walk back or should we fly? It will take 3 hours if we walk..." Long Chen let out as he looked at Mingyu.

"I would prefer to walk as I don't think you should take the risk and expose your ability. Even in my own continent... the abilities that can help a cultivator fly are impossible to find. Even the rarest of skills can only help cultivators float or walk in the air. Even the Sky Realm Cultivators can't fly!!! They can only walk in the air. Only at Heaven Realm and above that does a cultivator actually begin to fly! " Mingyu told Long Chen in a serious tone.

"I knew that flying skills were rare but never knew that even those rare ones were lacking so much!!! " Long Chen exclaimed with a stunned look on his face.

"I'll be careful when using this skill in the future" Long Chen said as if realization struck him.

" Let's get going," Mingyu said as she glanced at Long Chen. She began walking towards the City of Thunder. Long Chen ran as he caught up to her.

"Do we even know where those three are staying?" Mingyu asked Long Chen as they entered the City of Thunder.

" I don't know... but I know a person who might..." Long Chen said with a mysterious smile on his face as he continued ahead.

"I wonder what that box contained. It must be really incredible for her to go that far" Mingyu suddenly said to Long Chen as she glanced at him.

" That box was most probably empty just like those treasures but I'm not a hundred percent sure... " Long Chen said in an uncertain tone as he glanced.

"Empty like those treasures? What are you talking about?" Mingyu asked him with a confused look on her face.

" You kept the remaining 8 treasures inside your storage ring... Can you take them out for me? " Long Chen asked with a smile as he glanced at Mingyu.

" Of course" Mingyu hurriedly gazed at her storage ring but her expressions soon became strange

"What?" She exclaimed with a shocked look on her face.

"What happened?" Long Chen asked with an amused smile on his face.

"The artifacts!!! They're not inside!!! How is this possible?" Mingyu let out loudly. Her voice was loud enough to attract the attention of the nearby passengers.

"It's nothing to be shocked about... Those artifacts were never inside your storage ring. In fact, those artifacts weren't even inside that room. " Long Chen told Mingyu.

" What do you mean? We all saw them with our own eyes and placed them inside the storage ring with our own hands" Mingyu said with a confused look on her face as she tried to remember those artifacts and the incredible feeling she got when she touched them.

"That artifacts....no, everything in that room was nothing more than an illusion," Long Chen said as he told Mingyu.

" Illusion? How can an illusion be so real?" Mingyu asked with a perplexed look on her face.

"You'd be amazed to know how amazing an illusion can be. In certain cases, it can be more real than the reality itself. " Long Chen let out with a smile as he looked at Mingyu.

"How did you know it was all an illusion? and why didn't you tell us anything if you knew? " Mingyu inquired.

" There was no reason for me to say anything as those illusions weren't harmful in the least" Long Chen chuckled as he said while ignoring her first question.

" That box? It was an illusion as well? " She asked as if she understood his words.

" Nope... That box was quite real" Long Chen told her.

" What? Then why do you think that the box was empty?" Mingyu inquired again.

" You can call it a hunch of mine" Long Chen replied with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Looks like we're here" Long Chen let out before Mingyu could ask anything else. He stood in front of a large palace that looked even more luxurious than the place Long Chen was currently residing in.

There were many guards outside the entrance of the palace.

Long Chen walked to one of the guards. Some of the guards recognized Long Chen as they began whispering amongst themselves.

"I'm here to meet Princess Zhiqing. Can one of you go and inform her?" Long Chen said as he looked at the guards.

"Alright .. please wait here," One of the guards said as he walked inside the palace.

In about ten minutes, the guard walked outside. He was followed behind by a beautiful maid.

"Princess Zhiqing asked me to escort Master Chen. Please come with me" The maid respectfully bowed in front of Long Chen as she politely said.

Long Chen and Mingyu followed her as they entered the palace.

The maid brought them through various long corridors as she finally stopped in front of a room.

"My lady is waiting for you inside that room" The maid let out as she gestured towards the door.

Long Chen pushed the door open as he entered inside with Mingyu.

Zhiqing was sitting on a sofa as she rested one leg above the other.

"Master Chen... I was expecting you much sooner but I never expected that you would be bringing your girlfriend with you? I must say that I'm still a little shy for a threesome" Zhiqing let out as she said with an embarrassed smile.

"Where did you even get that idea from? Anyways, I'm here for something else" Long Chen said with a straight look on his face.

"Is that all you have to say after you went missing for so many days? I went to your mansion so many times but the door was never opened " Zhiqing asked with a depressed look on her face.

"I went out to train. Anyways, I don't have much time to waste! Tell me the place where the disciples of Thunder Giant Sect are staying at!" Long Chen told Zhiqing as he walked towards her.

"Why? Did something happen between you two?" Zhiqing asked as curiosity sparked on her face.

" Where is the place?" Long Chen asked again without answering her.

"They stayed in the Mayflower Inn. Inside room no. 302 and 303." Zhiqing answered Long Chen.

" Thanks," Long Chen said as he turned back to leave.

Chapter 186 - 186: Together

"Where is the place?" Long Chen asked again without answering her.

"They stayed in the Mayflower Inn. Inside room no. 302 and 303." Zhiqing answered Long Chen.

"Thanks," Long Chen said as he turned back to leave.

"Did you not hear me clearly? I said that they 'stayed' there. You won't find them there anymore..." Zhiqing called out as she informed Long Chen.

"Why?" Long Chen asked as he abruptly turned back.

"They aren't in this city anymore. I believe that they have already left as some of our guards saw them passing through our city on their beasts. They didn't come down and the direction they were moving in... I believe they are going back to the Xuan Kingdom." Zhiqing explained to Long Chen.

"Xuan kingdom...? If I'm not wrong, the sect entrance exam is in two weeks, right?" Long Chen inquired as he faced her.

"Yea" Zhiqing replied to him.

"So they'll stay in Xuan till the entrance exam and go back to the North Moon Empire it ends... They have only increased their days of survival by a week or so..." Long Chen let out with a serious look on his face.

"Do you want to go after them to the Xuan kingdom? They must've really offended you somehow." Zhiqing asked with a smile on her face.

"They did and they will regret it" Long Chen let out in a ruthless tone.

He didn't notice but when his expressions were fluctuating, his heart demon's cocoon started shining even brighter as if it was getting the nutrition it desperately needed.

"You know... your expressions look serious but your whole persona looks somewhat odd when you say such heavy words while having a cat in your embrace" Zhiqing chuckled as she gazed at Long Chen.

"Before you say anything, I have a suggestion," Zhiqing asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"What suggestion?" Long Chen inquired with a curious look on his face.

"I'm leaving for the Xuan Kingdom tonight along with my niece and nephew for their sect entrance exam. How about you come with us as well? It will be just as fast as traveling alone and much more comfortable." Zhiqing asked with great expectations.

" In one hour!" Long Chen let out.

"What?" Zhiqing asked with a perplexed look on her face as she failed to understand his words.

"I'm leaving in one hour... if you people can prepare and get ready to leave in an hour... we can travel together" Long Chen said to her.

"Alright... I'll get things ready! Meet us outside the doors of our palace! We will depart in exactly an hour" Zhiqing nodded her head.

Long Chen turned back and left without saying anything else. Zhiqing hurriedly left towards her brother, the King's room to tell him the change of plans.

"So he agreed to leave with you?" The king asked as he glanced at Zhiqing who was standing in front of him.

"Yes... We'll leave in an hour. I ordered all the preparations to take place in half an hour. " Zhiqing told her brother.

" At first we hoped that my son and daughter could get selected in the Sect Entrance Exam of Xuan kingdom but now I feel like we have an even better opportunity. We had tried to bring our son and daughter closer to the people from the North Moon Empire but they were too secretive and doubtful of us. They maintained their distance from us. And from your conversation with the Young Man called Long Chen, we were able to guess that those two should either be from an empire that is as strong if not stronger than the North Moon Empire. " The king let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"It will be good if my son and daughter can get selected in a good sect but If my family can get closer to those two... the opportunities will be even better! You should do everything to make sure that either you or Maia get closer to that guy! " The king continued with a serious expression on his face.

"I will handle everything, brother" Zhiqing nodded her hand.

" You can leave now. " The king ordered her.

Long Chen reached near the palace on his Peak Spirit Realm horse and noticed that a short entourage was already prepared there. There were three carriages and around thirty guards on the horses behind those carriages.

Many of the horses in the entourage were in the Spirit realm but only a rare few were at the Peak of the Spirit Realm just like Long Chen's horse.

"Hmm? You're coming on a separate horse? I thought you would come with me inside my carriage? I specially chose the best carriage we had, for your comfort. " Zhiqing let out as she stepped towards Long Chen. The door of the second and third carriage opened as people came out of them.

"This little girl is my niece that you have already met before... She is Princess Maia and this little guy is my nephew, the Crown Prince of Huanji Kingdom, Prince Estelin" Zhiqing told Long Chen as she introduced the two kids.

"I must say that you guys have a pretty solid foundation. There's a good chance that you'll get selected in the Sect Entrance Examination of Xuan. "Long Chen said as he looked at them.

Long Chen had already seen the red-haired girl known as Princess Maia. She was around 17 and at the 8th Stage of Spirit Establishment Realm. Although her brother, the Crown Prince also shared the red hair but his hair was quite short as they only came down to his neck. He had a 9th stage Spirit Establishment Realm cultivation and looked to be the same age as his sister. There was also General Yao with them who was on the 1st stage of Earth Realm.

'This kid... He is even younger than me yet he talks like he is so superior. What's so special about him? If I was born in his position and in his Empire, I would have such superior cultivation and standing as well' Prince Estelin thought as he gazed at Long Chen. Jealousy filled his heart as he detested seeing Long Chen.

"How about you two come in my carriage? We can get someone to bring your horse with us. As I said before, the journey would be much more comfortable and just as fast" Zhiqing said as she walked towards Long Chen.

'This journey would indeed be quite long... it's not a bad idea' Long Chen thought as he glanced at Mingyu.

" Alright... Let's start moving then" Long Chen let out with a smile as he agreed to her suggestion.

Zhiqing walked to her carriage as she entered inside. Long Chen walked behind her and entered as well. He was followed behind by Mingyu.

Prince Estelin entered his carriage with General Yao while Princess Maia also entered in her respective carriage as everyone began moving.

"Everything depends on you now" The king muttered as he glanced at them leaving from behind the glass of his room. He soon walked back.

"So ... Can you tell me what happened between you guys? You looked like you hate them to death now?" Zhiqing asked as she looked at Long Chen with curiosity.

Zhiqing was sitting on the right side of Long Chen while Mingyu was sitting on his left.

"They tried killing us" Long Chen replied as a glimpse of anger appeared on his face.

"What??? Why? Was it because of the arguments between you guys inside the restaurant?" Zhiqing asked with a stunned look on her face.

" Nope," Long Chen replied straight away.

"Then why?" Zhiqing asked with a perplexed look on her face.

"Although I know the reason, I would love to hear it from their mouth when I crush their every bone. " Long Chen casually replied to her as he closed his eyes.

"Things sound quite serious... Anyways, we will get there in a week so you don't have to worry" Zhiqing informed Long Chen but she became stunned as the carriage stopped abruptly.

Zhiqing opened the door of the carriage as she came out.

"What happened?" She asked the guard near her carriage

"There are a few Green horned bulls in front of us ." The guard informed her. Long Chen and Mingyu came out as well.

"Initial Gold Realm beasts... Our Royal guards will handle them with ease" Zhiqing informed Long Chen as she gazed at the guards who were fighting the Green Horned bulls.

Long Chen nodded his head as he walked back inside the carriage with Mingyu. Zhiqing also entered the carriage.

In about 15 minutes, the path was cleared as the carriage began moving again.

Long Chen closed his eyes as he began resting in the silence. After three hours of traveling, Mingyu also began feeling sleepy and soon she fell asleep as she rested her head on Long Chen's shoulders.

Zhiqing, on the other hand, started reading a book. Another hour passed as she closed the book.

"Master Chen?" She called out as she looked towards Long Chen who had his eyes closed.

"What?" Long Chen answered without opening his eyes.

"Is Miss Mingyu really your girlfriend?" She asked with a curious look on her face.

"What has this got to do with you?" Long Chen asked back.

"Did you forget that we... we... kissed before? I am already yours now. I want to know how many girls my man have" Zhiqing let out as she whispered in his ears.

Chapter 187 - 187: Love In A Carriage(★)

Long Chen's eyes opened wide as he looked towards Mingyu. Noticing that she was in deep sleep, he relaxed a bit.

"That was a punishment for putting people on my trail" Long Chen told Zhiqing.

"Oh really? Why don't you punish me again then?" Zhiqing asked as she seductively smiled at Long Chen. She tapped her foot light on the floor.

" Why? You did nothing wrong?" Long Chen inquired as he looked at her.

"You're in my carriage and our guards are following you because of me... Isn't it the same crime?" Zhiqing chuckled softly as she said to Long Chen

"You know that repeating a mistake means that the punishment increases as well? Don't try teasing me or you might regret it" Long Chen brought his face closer to her ears as he whispered.

"You have already received my first kiss and my heart. You made me your own... What's there to worry about now? " Zhiqing replied to Long Chen as she looked deep in his eyes. She suddenly placed her hand on his thighs as she started rubbing them.

"I'm warning...ahmmm" Long Chen was saying something when she suddenly brought her face closer to his face as she closed the distance between her lips and his. Stopping his words Midway, she kissed Long Chen with full passion.

SERIOUS NOTE:!! ADULT CONTENT AHEAD!!! IF YOU DON'T WANT TO READ IT, YOU ARE ADVISED TO SKIP THE CONTENT IN BETWEEN THE FIRST BREAK LIKE AND THE SECOND.

Long Chen could feel a fire burning sensation inside him as his sword began reaction. He began kissing her passionately as he slid his tongue inside her tiny mouth.

Inside his martial space, the Heart Demon cocoon started shining even brighter as it brightened the whole place.

Zhiqing lost herself in the pleasure as she and Long Chen played a game of hide and seek with their tongue.

"Mhmm..." Zhiqing moaned suddenly as Long Chen placed his left hand on her bountiful chest, as he began grabbing them, but her moan wasn't loud as her mouth was covered by Long Chen's lips.

He kept playing with her large mountain peaks, Squeezing them and playfully pinching them as he enjoyed the soft touch.

Zhiqing also moved her hands as she placed it on top of Long Chen's sword. She began moving her hands all over his staff making Long Chen enjoy the sensation.

He removed his hands from her mountain peaks as he found an opening on her dress. He inserted his hand inside her clothing. Soon, His hands were in direct contact with her bare chest without any clothing in between them. He could feel the silky softness of Zhiqing's chest as he moved his hand around her peaks and gently rubbed them.

Long Chen separated his lips from hers as he gazed in her slightly intoxicated eyes which looked drunk in pleasure.

"We can't do that properly in such a small space... so... can you use your mouth right now? " Long Chen whispered softly on her ears as he grabbed her hand which was on his sword.

"What are you suggesting, love?" She asked softly with a red face.

Long Chen smiled as he brought his lips closer to hers and whispered something in her ears. Her face turned even more crimson as she heard his words.

Zhiqing silently nodded as she looked down. The carriage suddenly began feeling much hotter as their hearts beat faster.

She got off the seat as she sat on her knees near Long Chen's legs. She kept both her hands on his thighs as she drunkenly looked in his eyes.

She moved her hands towards his waist as she grabbed into his pants. Long Chen slightly lifted his waist as Zhiqing pulled his pants down.

'Can't believe I'm doing such ecchi stuff, that too for the first time and with such a young guy... But there's something about him...I can't stop myself ' Zhiqing thought as she pulled Long Chen's pants.

As soon as the pants came down, Long Chen's heavenly sword came into view in its full glory in front of her eyes. It stood tall like the tower of heaven as if showing off in front of the girl.

'So... Big... I've read and heard about s*x and stuff but isn't this size really big?' She thought as her mouth opened wide.

She softly moved her hands towards Long Chen's sword. Her hand was somewhat trembling as she went on to hold something like this for the first time.

She held Long Chen's staff which twitched in her hands. Long Chen grabbed her hand which was grabbing his little Chen as he began moving her hand up and down. After continuing this motion for a few seconds, he freed her hand which kept moving of her own accord.

After a few seconds, she brought her lips closer to his little Chen as her eyes kept fixated at it.

She positioned her lips in front of his sword as she glanced in Long Chen's eyes. She brought her sweet tongue out as she licked the tip of his sword. She positioned her lips around his sword as she began sucking it like it was a lollipop.

Long Chen kept looking at her as she sucked and licked on his sword. He tried hard to prevent him from moaning.

Zhiqing was sucking in his sword when Long Chen felt a change in Mingyu's breathing. He could feel that she would wake up soon.

Long Chen suddenly felt like Mingyu was about to wake up. There wasn't much time to stop Zhiqing and get everything back to normal.

With a serious expression, he focused his mind as his eyes started shining. His eyes now looked like they were covered by white fog.

"Ummm..." Mingyu softly opened her eyes. She hurriedly sat straight up as she realized that she was resting on Long Chen's shoulders.

Zhiqing was stunned as she saw Mingyu waking up. She stopped right there out of shock and didn't move in the slightest. Long Chen's sword still inside her mouth.

"I apologize for sleeping on your shoulders," Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen.

"It's perfectly fine. You can use my shoulders anytime you desire" Long Chen said to her as he smiled back.

" Hmm?" Mingyu let out as she looked at Long Chen.

" Why are your eyes looking misty?" She asked as she looked at Long Chen.

"It's nothing. Anyways, Did you have a good sleep?" Long Chen changed the topic as he asked back.

"Yea ... This journey was so silent that I couldn't help but fall asleep. Looks like Miss Zhiqing is also the same" She said as she looked towards Long Chen.

" Yea, she fell asleep soon after you" Long Chen muttered as he looked at the empty spot to his right.

Zhiqing looked quite confused as she heard their conversation. She couldn't understand what they were talking about.

'Can't she see me right here?' She thought with a perplexed look on her face.

Long Chen moved his right hand as he gestured Zhiqing to get up.

Zhiqing silently backed her head as she brought out his sword from her mouth. She stood up and sat on the right side of Long Chen and corrected her clothes.

Long Chen also pulled his pants upwards while Mingyu was looking out the window as she slid the curtains a little bit.

As they both got in proper positions, Long Chen closed his eyes. He opened it again as his eyes returned back to their normal color.

Mingyu looked back at Long Chen to ask him something but she noticed Zhiqing as she felt something strange but she couldn't put her finger on it.

"You woke up," She said as she looked at Zhiqing.

"Yea, I somehow fell asleep... I had such a good dream" Zhiqing replied to her with a smile on her face.

" Oh? What dream?" Mingyu asked with curiosity on her face.

"I was helping Master Chen" Zhiqing replied with a smile on her face.

"Helping in what?" Mingyu asked again with an interested look on her face.

"In fighting a powerful enemy... The enemy had a heavy sword which he used for battle but I took care of him and his big sword" Zhiqing chuckled as she said to Mingyu.

Long Chen had a wry smile on his face as he heard her words.

He closed his eyes as he decided to ignore them. He decided that he should use the time to comprehend space.

He shut his hearing senses as he focused on comprehension. He felt the space around him right now and tried to feel the difference between the space of this place and the space he experienced inside the Space Law Orb.

There was no visible difference that Long Chen found but he could feel that space was different depending on the location and only after understanding the difference could he unlock more mysterious abilities related to space and increase his already existing abilities.

Chapter 188 - 188: Pure Heart

There was no visible difference that Long Chen found, but he could feel that the space varied, depending on the location and only after understanding the difference could he unlock more mysterious abilities related to space and increase his already existing abilities.

Long Chen lost himself in comprehension as he forgot about the time as well as his surroundings. He trusted in Mingyu and had faith that she would protect him from any sudden danger. Furthermore, he would be able to wake up from his comprehension if she tried to wake him up with enough force.

Long Chen felt the space around him, hidden inside every particle of the atmosphere. There were a myriad of spaces and dimensions even inside this carriage itself, that Long Chen could feel.

Mingyu and Zhiqing stayed silent for most of the journey as they occasionally talked in between.

Soon, it was night and everyone decided to set camp.

The guards set up the camp as they handled things like selecting the place, placing tents and arranging the fire and food.

"Master Chen! It's night already! Let's leave this carriage and rest in the tents. Everything is already prepared" Zhiqing called out to Long Chen as she looked at him.

She waited for a brief moment but received no response from him. With a confused look on her face, she called out again but it was the same. Even Mingyu tried calling him many times, but Long Chen didn't react to either.

"Is he sleeping?" Zhiqing asked Mingyu with a thoughtful look on her face.

"I feel like he's having an enlightenment. We shouldn't disturb him." Zhiqing let out softly as she glanced at Long Chen.

"Really? Such a sudden enlightenment? Don't you need to meditate for a long time to have a chance of achieving that?" Zhiqing asked as her eyes opened wide.

"Mostly... but not always. There are always a rare few who can achieve it" Mingyu said as she gazed at Long Chen with a bright smile on her face.

"So he can't be disturbed for a long time. How about you go eat first? I'll keep an eye on him" Zhiqing suggested as she glanced at Mingyu.

"It's fine. You can go, I'll stay here to protect him," Mingyu said to Zhiqing as she looked out the window.

" You'll spend the whole night in the carriage? " Zhiqing asked her with a dinner look on her face.

" Yea," Mingyu nodded her head without any change in her expressions.

"How about you go and eat already, As I said, I'll stay here to protect him while you eat" Zhiqing again suggested.

" It's fine. I'm not hungry" Mingyu said as she denied Zhiqing's suggestion. She kept sitting right beside Long Chen with a caring smile on her face.

"He's really lucky to have you with him" Zhiqing lowered her head as she said softly.

"Nope, I'm the one who's lucky to have him. I would have died so many times without him, but he saved me. In a world where even those with enough strength don't help others, but he... despite having enough strength, he decided to help me...I owe him so much..." Mingyu said in a somewhat emotional voice.

" You really love him, Don't you?" Zhiqing asked suddenly.

Mingyu didn't reply but she nodded her head as she looked at Long Chen.

"He is so amazing and kind... I'm sure that many girls will fall in love with him and he will fall in love with them... Are you prepared to fight for him? Can you share his love with others? " Zhiqing asked again. She didn't know why she asked this question. She wondered if she was really curious about Mingyu's nature or was she just asking for herself... All she knew was that she wanted to know.

"I've thought about this many times... And I know that I can't keep his love, all to myself, but I will try my best to become the girl who stands by his side forever. Maybe ... He will realize that he doesn't need anyone else... " Mingyu said with a somewhat emotional voice.

" If it's written in his destiny to be with more girls, or if he falls in love with another girl...I won't hate him or oppose him. Although I will feel sad, if it's

for his happiness, I will bear with it. I'll make sure that there's always a place in his heart for me even in that situation" Mingyu further continued.

" You have such a pure heart...I somehow feel really bad." Zhiqing said with a depressed smile on her face.

" What are you sorry for?" Mingyu asked with a curious look on her face.

"I'll tell others to bring the food inside. You can eat it without leaving" Zhiqing said as she left the carriage.

'I'm sorry because I'm also in love with him... and I will make him mine... ' Zhiqing thought to herself as she left the carriage. She walked towards the biggest tent in the whole camp as she entered inside.

Soon, Zhiqing left the tent with a plate filled with food in her hands. She walked towards the carriage and entered inside.

"Here..." she said as she gave that plate to Mingyu.

Mingyu looked at the food carefully for a while. She brought out a tiny bottle from her spatial ring which she sparkled on top of the food. The white powdery substance evaporated in ten seconds after it fell on the food.

'There's no poison' Mingyu thought and finally began eating it.

"What was that powder?" Zhiqing asked with a curious look on her face. She had seen something like this for the first time in her life thus she had no idea about it.

" Oh, it was nothing. Just think of that as a special medicine from back home." Mingyu replied with an apologetic smile as she continued eating.

"Would you mind if I stay here as well?" Zhiqing asked Mingyu in between her eating.

" Why? Don't you want to sleep in the comfort of the tent?" Mingyu asked her as she finished eating.

" It's fine... Since both of you are staying inside the carriage, I feel like I should stay with you as well. I hope you won't mind" Zhiqing told her.

" It's not that I mind... But" Mingyu was saying but she was interrupted by Zhiqing.

" It's decided then. I'll stay here. I'll be right back" Zhiqing said as she left the carriage. She walked back to her tent.

" General Yao... I'll be staying inside the carriage for the night. Young Master Chen is going through a serious moment in his cultivation, so I'll be acting as his dharma protector." Zhiqing said as she stood in front of General Yao. Prince Estelin and Princess Maia were also there and had just finished eating.

"You don't have to do it personally. We can tell our guards to protect the carriage and guard him and if that's not enough, this old man is willing to guard him myself. You should sleep comfortably, Princess.

"It's fine General Yao, there's no need to worry, I have decided that I'll do it," Zhiqing said with a determined look on her face.

" Sigh... When you fixate on something, it's almost impossible to change your mind... Alright... You can guard him... I'll stay here to guard the Young Prince and Young Princess." General Yao said as he shook his head.

"Thank you," Zhiqing said as she left the tent and went back to the carriage. She entered inside.

Zhiqing and Mingyu both spent the night inside the carriage and they talked about random stuff. Some related to Long Chen and some totally different.

Back in Shui Kingdom, the Dragon City was full of excitement as the time of Xuan Kingdom's Sect selection exam drew near. Many young Cultivators who had entered a long secluded cultivation to prepare for the exams finally came out of their cultivation with much more strength than they possessed before.

Inside the Royal Clan of Shui kingdom, the Second Prince and the Third Princess prepared for their departure to the Xuan Kingdom.

Inside a well-furnished room, a woman who looked to be in her early forties rested inside her blanket on the bed. Although she still looked beautiful, she looked quite pale. It was as if she was suffering from sickness.

On the same bed sat two people. A young boy who looked to be 17-18 years old, sat beside the woman as he looked at her with a caring gaze. He had deep blue eyes and shiny black hair which came down to his shoulders.

Right beside him sat a young girl. The girl had shiny blue hair and eyes just like the boy and the woman laying on the bed. She looked to be 15-16 years old.

"Mother, We'll leave this city tomorrow. Based on my calculation, we will be in the Xuan kingdom in about two weeks" Second Prince Yue Luan said to the woman.

Chapter 189 - 189:A Candidate

"I knew this day would come soon... I'll pray for your success. You must take care of yourself and fei'er in this long journey" The woman said as she gazed at the boy and the girl with a loving gaze.

" I will mother... I promise you that both of us will get selected and work really hard to become the strongest cultivators in the whole land. We will make you proud." Second Prince Yue Luan replied to his mother with full confidence.

"I have full confidence in the both of you. Also, there's never a day when I'm not proud of you both," The Woman said with a gentle smile. She was the first concubine of the King and the mother of the Second Prince, Yue Luan, and the Third Princess, Yue Fei.

She was known as Ming Lan. Once considered as one of the most beautiful women in the kingdom,she was considered the woman that the king favored the most. That was, until the day her health started deteriorating.

No one knew what caused it and even the greatest of Physicians couldn't find the cause or treat her. She slowly began losing her place in the palace as she spent most of her day in her room.

"We will come back soon with the good news, mother" Third Princess, Yue Fei said in her usual melodious voice.

In another room, a similar conversation was taking place as the First Princess, Yue Miao discussing their travel preparations with her brother, Third Prince, Yue Ding.

"I've finally achieved a breakthrough. Now I'm at the same level as Yue Luan, the 9th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm. I'll definitely get selected by the sects along with you. " Third Prince Yue Ding said as he looked at his sister with a proud smile. He had flaming red hair and looked to be the same age as the Second Prince, Yue Luan.

"You should never be overconfident, little brother. Although Yue Luan is considered strong and a genius in this kingdom, he is nothing on the grand scale of things. There are many Second Rank kingdoms in this world, some of which are even stronger than ours. Just imagine how many geniuses like Yue Luan would those kingdoms have. They would even have some truly

extraordinary Cultivators, that we can't even hope to be compared with. " First Princess Yue Miao said in a serious tone. Her black eyes matched her black hair as she sat comfortably in a chair. She looked to be around 19-20 years old.

"Then there are even the cultivators of the First Rank Kingdom. They have many more resources and have access to much more powerful skills than us. Although people like us are considered geniuses... I can confidently say that we are nothing in front of the real geniuses of the first rank kingdoms... They are the ones considered real monsters. " She continued with a serious look on her face.

" Are you trying to demotivate me?" Prince Yue Ding asked as he looked down.

" I'm not. I'm just trying to make you aware of the reality so that you don't offend someone like them. We have a good chance to be selected but we should keep in mind that there are mountains that we shouldn't cross." Yue Miao said in a serious tone as she gazed at Yue Ding.

" Brother? Are you sure that you want to leave right now? Why don't you come with everyone else tomorrow? " A girl asked the boy standing in front of him. The boy had a small bag in front of him as he looked ready to leave. The girl wore a spotless white skirt that came down to her knees along with a blue robe around her shoulders.

"It's fine... I feel like travelling alone. You should come with our brothers and sisters" The boy said as a gentle smile appeared on his face. He looked to be around 20-21 years old.

"Do you really not want to see them? You have even left the crown because you didn't want a conflict with the second brother and third brother... " The girl said with a sad smile on her face.

"I never said I did it for them. It was just that I really didn't want the crown. I want to be free of the politics of the royal family. " The boy said as he forced a smile.

"You know, you are really bad at lying. Others might misunderstand you, but I know the reality. I'm really amazed at how no one actually seems to be able to understand you. Half the people actually believe that you were afraid of taking responsibility while the other half thinks that you don't care about the

Royal Family. None of them knows that no one loves the Yue Clan more than big brother" The girl said as she carefully gazed at the boy's face.

"Who will I care for, if not for my family? We lost our mother at such a young age, It made me understand the importance of family. Even if they have a different mother, they are still my brothers and sisters. I can't get into conflict with them for the crown as the crown really does possess no attraction for me. I'd be much happier if one of them can become the Crown Prince, while I pursue cultivation with a free mind." He said with a shaky smile on his face.

" Sigh... I wish you could be more honest with yourself and express your real emotions in front of others...I still hope that you could travel with us though. It could be such a good opportunity." She said with a smile as she held the sleeve of the boy's shirt and tugged at it.

"It's fine. We will meet each other soon in the Sect Entrance Exam" The boy said with a wry smile on his face as he freed his arm.

" Bye my dear sister" He said with a gentle smile as he picked up his bag and turned back. He walked towards the exit.

"Bye... brother..." She muttered as he gazed at the boy's back.

Back inside Long clan mansion, the mood was similar as people prepared to leave for Xuan Kingdom.

The mood was completely different than it was a few weeks ago, when the whole clan was in chaos when they found out that Long Chen went missing once again.

They tried to find his whereabouts when Xue and Mei came out with a letter that, they said, was found inside his bedroom when cleaning

Long Chen's grandfather, Long Ren read the letter as he fumed in anger.

"That troublesome grandson of mine!!! Can't he stay at home for a few days like a good kid, without making us worried??? 'Going out to train' ? My a*s !!! If he wanted to train, he should've just told me! I would teach him what true training is!!! " Long Ren muttered with an annoyed look on his face.

Sima Ziyi couldn't help but be worried as she heard this news. Even though she was somewhat relieved that Long Chen wasn't kidnapped and went out of his own will, she still couldn't help but be concerned about his safety.

The Long Clan tried finding his whereabouts as they sent their people everywhere. Even the northern black forest was combed through by the Long clan as they doubted that Long Chen again went there to train.

Days passed, but the search never came to fruition. The Long Clan had no choice but to wait for Long Chen's willing return. Thankfully, Long Ren had an special artifact that he had linked to Long Chen. Although it couldn't find his location, it could tell if he was alive or not.

Today was a day filled with excitement amongst the youths of the clan as the daughter of Long Clan's Grand Elder Long Mu, Long Xue Ying had finally came out of her secluded cultivation and she had achieved a breakthrough. She was now a 9th stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator.

It was decided that she will take part in the Sect Entrance Exam. Although previously the Long clan had placed all their hopes for the exams on Long Su who was the strongest amongst the youngsters of the clan but, since his disappearance, the hope was given up on him as other youngsters were trained for this opportunity

Long Chen's Cousin , Long An was now 16 years old as well and he was a 5th stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator, thus he qualified to participate in the Sect Entrance exam. The son of Long Ren's eldest son, Long Xuan also had a son who qualified to participate in the exams. He was Long Wei, who was considered the most talented genius of the youngest generation after Long Chen suffered the assassination attempt and lost his intelligence.

He was now a peak 6th stage Spirit Establishment Realm Cultivator. There were many more youngsters whom Long clan placed their hopes on but Long Xue Ying had the highest chance in the eyes of the elders.

Long Xue Ying came out as the new hope. Although she was not as strong as Long Su, when she was his age, she still managed to break through to the 9th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm a day before she turned 20. The Long clan hoped that she would be amongst the cultivators that are selected by the Sects.

"Long Mu... Your daughter is going to attend the sect entrance examination along with other kids. You should escort them all with safety. We have some

good candidates that have a chance to get selected." Long Ren said lightly as he looked at Long Mu.

" Well... We have another candidate and he is probably even more likely to get selected,unfortunately he went out to train" Grand Elder Long Mu said to Long Ren.

Chapter 190 - 190: A Bad Dream?

" Well... We have another candidate and he is probably even more likely to get selected, unfortunately, he went out to train" Grand Elder Long Mu said to Long Ren.

" Are you talking about my grandson? Well, he is indeed amazing. Unfortunately, we don't know his whereabouts." Long Ren said in a serious tone as he stared at the floor.

" I think I have an idea as to where he might be," Grand Elder Long Mu said in a suggestive tone as he rubbed his chin.

"Where? Why didn't you tell me before if you knew!! Hurry up and tell me now" Long Ren hurriedly let out with a child-like excitement on his face.

"I think he is in Xuan kingdom!" Grand Elder Long Mu said in a confident tone.

"Xuan? What makes you think that he will be there?" Long Ren asked with a frown on his face.

"His letter said that he is going out to train... Why do you think he would need to go outside to train? It's obvious! I think he wanted to grow stronger so that he could get selected in the Sect Entrance Exam. He was at the 5th Stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm when he passed the treasure hall trial that no one else was able to do! He is way stronger than anyone his age and he can even fight people with higher cultivating than him. Just try recalling how easily he defeated the third prince, Yue Ding, and the Gu Clan's Young Master, Gu Nanli. They both had a higher cultivation than him." Grand Elder, Long Mu said as he recalled Long Chen's shocking performance.

"You are indeed right. With his strength, out of everyone in this kingdom, he has the best chance to get selected and if he grew even stronger, then the chance would only increase. He should really be in the Xuan kingdom in that case. I'll come with you to Xuan personally! I want to see the performance of my grandson with my own eyes. " Long Ren said as he grinned.

"Patriarch will come with me? What about the clan? We can't leave it alone?" Grand Elder asked with a confused look on his face.

"Why do we have a supreme elder? He will take care of things while I'm not around" Long Ren said as he decided on going with Long Mu.

"Should we take Ziyi as well? She had been really worried about him.

"Ahh...I don't want to give her false hope in case we are wrong. She should stay here in case he comes back. If he is really in Xuan, I'll bring him back to Ziyi" Long Ren said in a determined tone.

Long Xue Ying came out of her secluded cultivation and immediately went to check on Long Chen. When she went into secluded cultivation, Long Chen had gone into a coma thus she wanted to check up on him after coming out.

She went towards Long Chen's courtyard. As she reached near the place, she saw a woman watering the plants in the garden outside Long Chen's courtyard.

"Xue," She called out with a smile.

"Miss Ying. You are finally out of your secluded cultivation? What brings you here?" Xue asked as she looked back at Long Xue Ying.

"Oh, I just came out today. So I came to check up on your young master" Long Xue Ying told Xue. She had visited Long Chen many times when he was in a coma and became close to Xue and Mei. These two girls were always in Long Chen's room, taking care of him.

"Hmm? Have you not heard?" She let out with confusion on her face.

" Not heard what? " Long Xue Ying asked with a frown.

" Young master had already left quite some time ago. He went out to train" Xue replied to her as she stopped watering the plants.

"He left? Do you mean that he finally woke up from his coma? " Long Xue Ying asked in an excited voice.

" Yup... Young Master woke up from his coma and left to train" Xue repeated her statement.

"Your young master is really troublesome. It's so hard to meet him when he's awake. I couldn't meet him when he recovered from his mental sickness and then he went into a coma and after recovering, he's again missing" Long Xue Ying let out with a wry smile on her face.

She really couldn't help but find it strange that she hasn't met the recovered Long Chen even once when he was awake.

"What can I say... Young Master is just so amazing" Xue said with a chuckle.

"I am going to the Xuan kingdom for the sect entrance exam. Since you two don't have to take care of your young master anymore, how about you two come with me? Seeing such an event would be fun for you two. The journey would be much more fun with you guys " Long Xue Ying said with a smile.

"It's alright Miss Ying. We like staying here. Also, Young master might return anytime. We need to take care of Madam as well" Xue said as she shook her head and denied the suggestion.

"Are you saying that I can't take care of myself? " A voice came from behind as a beautiful woman came towards them.

"Aunt Ziyi! " Long Xue Ying called out as she saw the woman.

"Little Ying, You've grown much stronger. Only 20 years old and already at the 9th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm. Grand Elder must be really proud. " Sima Ziyi walked towards her as she patted her head.

"Thank you, Aunt Ziyi." Long Xue Ying said as she bowed lightly.

"Little Xue... she is right. You should go with her. Seeing that many geniuses going through trials against each other would be good and it's a good opportunity to get fresh air as well. You two care for me so much that you never do anything for yourself. It's a good chance to have some fun and travel outside" Sima Ziyi said with a smile as she looked at Xue.

"But... we need to be here when the young master comes back," Xue said in a soft voice as she lowered her head.

"Don't worry, when that Little devil comes home, I will tie him up and won't let him run away ever again" Sima Ziyi said as she looked at Long Chen's courtyard with reminiscing.

"Ah..." Xue tried saying something but Sima Ziyi interrupted her.

"I want to hear no excuses. You two are going with Ying. You need to have as much fun as you two can!" Sima Ziyi told her with a serious look on her face.

"Alright. We will follow madam's wishes" Xue finally gave up as she nodded her head.

The Qin clan and the Gu clan also prepared for the departure of the people that will participate in the test from their clan. As Qin Ruo led the team of Qin Clan, Gi Nanli's led their own.

A similar situation was happening in many of the prominent clans of all the surrounding kingdoms.

Mingyu and Zhiqing spent the whole night inside the carriage with Long Chen as they slept while sitting. Amidst their sleep, both of their heads fell onto Long Chen's shoulders as they continued sleeping soundly.

Mingyu was sleeping as she dreamt about spending time with her family. She was having a nice dinner with her family. Everyone was there including her brother, her father and her mother. The dream felt so real. It felt like reality itself.

Mingyu asked for a dish that was near her brother. Her brother heard her request as he picked up the dish himself. He stood up and moved towards her.

As he was walking towards her, his eyes opened wide. Mingyu stood up with a feared expression on her face as she saw a sword stabbing him from the back and coming out from his chest. Her brother trembled as he took a step forward with shaky legs but he couldn't even walk as he fell to the ground. The ground was filled with his blood.

Mingyu screamed loudly as she saw her brother falling to the ground. She wanted to run to him but she stood petrified on her spot as soon as she saw the person who was standing behind her brother with a bloodied sword in his hand.

"Long Chen... Why???" She screamed loudly as tears fell from her eyes one after another but Long Chen didn't reply.

She looked to her father and mother but they weren't there. The whole place was empty as she now stood in a deserted land. The sand was now covered in her brother's blood. She looked towards Long Chen and saw a man standing behind him. It was the same masked man who gave her that destiny crystal and told her that it will bring her to her destiny.

"Watch as your destiny destroys everything you hold dear," The masked man said as he smiled.

Long Chen slowly lowered his sword which was dripping with blood.

Chapter 191 - 191: Blocked Path

"Watch as your destiny destroys everything you hold dear," The masked man said as he smiled.

Long Chen slowly lowered his sword which was dripping with blood.

"Will you choose family or love... It would be interesting...." The masked man muttered as he disappeared. Long Chen slowly began disappearing as well.

" Stoop!!!! " Mingyu screamed loudly as she extended her hand towards his direction. The whole place shattered like glass as her eyes opened.

She looked around with a sweating face as she breathed heavily.

"Did you have a bad dream? " Came a voice from her side. She turned her head only to find Long Chen sitting there with his eyes closed and beside him sat Zhiqing who was now looking at him with a worried look on her face.

"Yea, it was a bad dream" Mingyu muttered with a confused look on her face. She couldn't help but gaze at Long Chen's face carefully.

Zhiqing was about to ask her about her dream when there was a sudden knock on the door. Zhiqing opened the door and saw a guard standing there with two plates in his hand. She took one of the plates.

"I believe that you wouldn't leave this carriage so I called for breakfast either. Here..." She said as she handed the plate to Mingyu. She then took the second plate from the guard and closed the door.

As everyone finished with their breakfast, their caravan began moving once more.

The carriage kept moving without stopping as they left the Huanji Kingdom. They kept entering and exiting various kingdoms as they moved towards their target location, the kingdom of Xuan.

As the carriage was moving, Little Snow, who was previously resting in the back of the carriage, had now come back to sleep on Long Chen's lap.

Five days passed as they traveled without much trouble. Although they faced some gold realm beasts, their guards were able to defeat the beasts easily. Those that couldn't be defeated by the guards were killed by General Yao who was an Earth Realm Cultivator.

Zhiqing and Mingyu were talking when they noticed something strange. The atmosphere... The carriage which was previously at the normal room temperature had now begun feeling much colder. It was as if the whole atmosphere inside the carriage suddenly changed.

Zhiqing opened the door of her running carriage as she looked outside but she could see that the outside weather was much hot as the guards were sweating.

"What's happening? How can there be cold inside and hot outside? It's like the inside of the carriage is in a different place than the outside?" Zhiqing let out with a stunned look on her face.

'Is it because of him? What kind of enlightenment is he having?' Mingyu thought as she gazed at Long Chen.

"You shouldn't worry," Mingyu said as she comforted her.

"Why should I not worry? This can get dangerous. We need to get out of the carriage with master Chen!" Zhiqing hurriedly said to Mingyu.

"As I said, You don't need to worry" Mingyu again said as she tried to calm Zhiqing.

"Are you sure that we will be safe? Do you know anything about this?" Zhiqing asked as she looked at Mingyu.

"Not entirely, but I know that we are safe," Mingyu replied.

"I'll trust you," Zhiqing muttered as she glanced at Mingyu and then at Long Chen. She somehow felt that it was related to Long Chen.

Amidst their conversation, their entourage entered the capital of Dongxin Kingdom. It was also a second rank kingdom but it was slightly stronger than the Huanji Kingdom. Dongxin even had the advantage as they were near a first rank kingdom.

As the team of Huanji Kingdom was passing through the capital of Dongxin Kingdom, A few guards from Dongxin Kingdom blocked the road in front of them.

A Young Man who looked to be in his early twenties stood in front of the Dongxin Royal Guards as he gazed at the carriage. Near him stood a middle-aged man with a clean look. He had no beard and looked like he was in his early forties.

"Hmm? Why did we stop? " Zhiqing was still worrying but she noticed that the carriage stopped.

"I'll be right back," She said as she opened the door of the carriage and tried leaving but she realized that she was unable to leave the carriage. It was as if there was a barrier around the carriage. Whenever she tried leaving, the barrier would act up as she would get locked in her place. She tried for a while but she couldn't leave.

"There's a barrier around the carriage preventing me from leaving... Try checking your side if you can leave. " Zhiqing said with a grave look on her face.

" Alright..." Mingyu said as she opened the door on her side and tried leaving but even she found herself trapped. She couldn't leave.

"I can't leave now either," She said as she sat back on her spot.

" Looks like we are trapped... Why is everything so strange today? The weather inside the carriage... the barrier... will we really be safe inside? " Zhiqing asked as she frowned.

General Yao left his carriage and left Prince Estelin inside the carriage. He walked towards the guards blocking their path.

"Do you need anything from us? I believe our Huanji Kingdom never had any problems with your Dongxin Kingdom. Why are you blocking our path? Do you think we are easy to bully? " General Yao said loudly as he spread his Earth Realm Aura.

"Such a strong aura... There are only two Earth Realm Cultivators in Huanji Kingdom. I believe you must be the one they call General Yao. " Said a man in his early forties who stood beside the young man.

"Yes .. and who might you be? And why did you stop us" General Yao asked as he looked at the man. He acted as he felt an Earth Realm Aura from this man as well. He could feel that the man had a similar Cultivation than him

"I'm the royal tutor of Dongxin Kingdom. I apologize for stopping you but it was just that our crown Prince heard that the people from Huanji will be passing through. He had always appreciated Princess Maia, so he wanted to greet her and talk with you about the possibility of traveling together as he will be leaving for Xuan as well" The Royal Tutor said as he looked at general Yao.

"I apologize but Princess Maia is not feeling well, so she can't meet you right now. As for leaving with us? I'm sorry but we are in a hurry and can't stop for you" General Yao said as he lightly shook his head.

" You won't need to wait. Everything is already prepared on our side. We were just about to leave when we heard about you people passing through" The Royal tutor said with a wide grin on his face.

" Ahmm... I'll have to talk about this. Wait here" General Yao thought for a while before he said to them. He turned back and walked back towards the carriages.

He stopped in front of Princess Zhiqing's carriage as he knocked on the door. Zhiqing opened the door as soon as the knock was heard. Although she couldn't exit the carriage, she could easily interact with people from the outside.

"Princess, The crown Prince of Dongxin stopped our carriages. He said that he wanted to travel with us and that they are ready to leave. Should we allow them to travel with us? " General Yao asked as he gazed at Zhiqing.

Zhiqing had a weird expression on her face as she noticed that although she could see General Yao, she couldn't hear a single word he was saying.

'Is the barrier blocking even the sounds from entering and exiting? What should I do? Should I try telling him?' She thought with a grave expression on her face.

She shook her head as she gave up on this thought as she assumed that any action general Yao takes might interrupt Long Chen's comprehension.

"So you don't agree as well. I think that's a wrong move too, as although there aren't any ill feelings between us, it's not too safe traveling with them. I have a suggestion... How about we agree to travel with them not instead of mixing our teams, we will have their team lead on the journey while our team follows close behind? It will be much safer and won't make us look hostile to them" General Yao took Zhiqing's shaking her head as her disapproval, this he suggested his idea with a smile on his face.

Zhiqing noticed General Yao saying something else. Although she couldn't hear his words, she noticed the smile on his face.

She trusted general Yao and his facial expression didn't make it seem like he was talking about something negative, thus she nodded her head silently.

"Alright, I'll go inform them," General Yao said as he closed the doors of the carriage. He walked back towards the young man blocking their path.

Chapter 192 - 192: Stronger Than Him

"Alright, I'll go inform them," General Yao said as he closed the doors of the carriage. He turned and walked back towards the young man blocking their path.

"I talked with Princess Zhiqing and we agree to travel together with you, but only if you and your team agree to be in the lead during the journey. " General Yao said as he directly gazed at the boy in the lead. He looked to be 21-22 years old and wore a blue shirt along with a shiny yellow robe on his back. He had sharp eyes and thin lips. His long black hair came down to his shoulders and rested above his yellow robe. He was Ling Lan, the Crown Prince of Dongxin Kingdom. At the young age of 22 years old, he had broken through to the 4th stage of gold Core Realm.

" Hah... You people don't trust us, do you?" Prince Ling Lan asked as he grinned.

"If that was really the case, Do you think that we would have agreed to travel with you people? It's not that we don't trust you people, but a small amount of wariness is necessary after all" General Yao said with a light smile.

" What do you say, Prince Lan? Do you agree to their terms? We would basically be acting as a shield for them and making their journey easier. I understand why you want to join them, but the terms are really bad." Royal Tutor Wang said to Ling Lan in a discontented tone.

"It's fine. We are the ones asking to travel with them and it's not like there are that many dangers in the journey. If we come across anything serious, we'll fight together with them. "Prince Ling Lan said as he looked towards the carriages of Huanji Kingdom.

"If it is what you desire," Royal Tutor said as he shook his head lightly.

"General Yao, You can go and tell your princess that the people of Dongxin are honest and brave. We aren't afraid of anything. We will lead the journey." Ling Lan said with a smirk.

"Very well. I will tell her. In the meanwhile, you can arrange your people so that we can depart right now. We don't have much time to waste" General Yao said as he walked back towards Zhiqing's carriage.

Zhiqing was looking outside the window when she noticed General Yao coming towards her carriage. She opened the door of the carriage as she saw General Yao stop in front of the door.

"It is done. The Crown Prince of Dongxin had agreed and they will lead the journey now. Our travel just became much more comfortable now" General Yao said with a bright smile on his face as Zhiqing opened the door.

She still couldn't hear a single word he said, but she could feel that General Yao was telling a piece of good news. She nodded her head with a smile.

General Yao nodded his head as he took it as her silent approval. He closed the doors of the carriage and walked back to his own carriage.

"Well, that was fun to watch. Do you have any idea what he said and did? " Mingyu chuckled with an amused smile on her face.

" Nothing at all...I feel like it all went well though. But I seriously hope this misunderstanding doesn't cause anything bad." Zhiqing let out with a wry smile on her face.

"Everything will be fine," Mingyu said as she comforted her.

Zhiqing nodded her head silently as they traveled.

It looked like people of Dongxin had already prepared to leave as they immediately got into formations.

Dongxin Kingdom guards led in the front followed behind by the carriage of Prince Lan and his Royal Tutor. The remaining Dongxin guards followed behind them.

Most of the citizens who saw their carriages, cheered for them as they knew that their Prince was going for the sect selection exams.

"Prince Lan is such a kind person, I hope he gets selected"

" You are right and I'm sure that Prince Lan will get selected. He is a super genius in this kingdom. He will definitely succeed and show the strength of our kingdom. "

" It's too bad that the king only had one kid, If his highness had more kids, we could have had more geniuses like Prince Lan."

" Yea, but don't you think that it's strange? The previous king had 27 wives but only one kid, the boy who became the current king. Our current king is

even more romantic than the previous king and has 69 wives, yet he has only one kid as well, Crown Prince Lan. Is the Royal family cursed that they can't have a second kid? "

" Shhh... If the city guards heard you talking about Royal family like that, you would be punished...but yes, it is quite strange"

" It's fine! Even though the king only has one son, Crown Prince Lan is alone equal to hundreds of geniuses. I don't think his highness ever feel the need to have another kid"

The people in the crowd talked amongst themselves in whispers as they saw the carriages depart.

The team of Huanji Kingdom followed behind the team of Crown Prince Lan with only a little distance in between them.

"Hmmp... he is making a spectacle out of his leaving. Just a showoff.." Prince Estelin of Huanji Kingdom snorted as he gazed at the crowds of citizens from the window of his carriage.

They left the Dongxin kingdom amidst the cheerful gazes of the Dongxin citizens. Crown Prince Lan occasionally opened the door of his carriage as he waved at the citizens.

They got on the road as they traveled ahead. There was only one more kingdom between them and the Xuan Kingdom. They traveled at full speed as they rapidly moved on the road which diverged through wild forests quite a few times.

" I'm hungry... " Zhiqing muttered with a cry like face.

" Didn't you have breakfast this morning?" Mingyu chuckled lightly as she glanced at Zhiqing.

" That was over 8 hours ago! " Zhiqing let out with a downcast face.

" We might have to go hungry for a few days as I don't think that the barrier will break before Long Chen wakes up from his comprehension, and you can't exit either. " Mingyu said with a light smile on her face.

"That's easy for you to say! Earth Realm Cultivators can spend weeks without having to eat" Zhiqing let out with a wry smile on her face.

"You are in the gold core realm. I think you can go hungry for a few days as well without much strain on you" Mingyu said with a light smile.

" It might be his protection mechanism to save himself against threats when he is in comprehension" Mingyu further continued as she told Zhiqing her thoughts.

" Ohh?... or maybe he wants the beauties to never escape from his grasp even when he's in comprehension. He's such a possessive devil, " Zhiqing said with a chuckle.

"hahahaha... Yes, that might be a reason as well" Mingyu nodded her head as she burst into laughter after hearing Zhiqing's statement.

"Though it's fine, I can stay hungry if it's for him," Zhiqing said as she continued.

More time passed as the sun began to set. Both the teams decided to set up camps as they prepared tents for their squads.

Huanji Kingdom's guards were busy setting up their camp while Princess Maia, Prince Estelin and General Yao stood at the corner and watched the guards working hard.

"It's been so long since we last saw Aunt Zhiqing. What's so amazing about that guy, that she is spending so much time with him." Prince Estelin snorted as he looked towards Zhiqing's carriage.

"Prince Estelin, you shouldn't talk like that! Those people are from an Empire and are really strong that even I can be killed with ease if they wanted. " General Yao said in a heavy tone as he looked at Prince Estelin.

" Hmmph... what's so special about that? It's only because he had been born at a privileged place inside an empire! I'm sure that he hasn't gained strength because of hard work and effort, It's only because of consuming the Empire's resources did he gain strength. If I was born in his place, I would be even stronger than him! " Prince Estelin said with jealousy on his face.

"That's a completely wrong thought process! Even if he was born privileged, no one in this world can gain much strength without putting in some effort! I know that resources and pills can help strengthen the cultivation of a cultivator, they aren't much use if a person doesn't put in the necessary effort" General Yao said in a serious tone.

"hmph... I still think that he was just lucky" Prince Estelin said with an unconvinced expression on his face.

"Hmm? Why is he coming over here?" Prince Estelin let out as he saw a man coming towards him.

The Prince of Dongxin strolled through the camp as he walked towards General Yao, Prince Estelin and Princess Maia.

"Hmm? Why are all of you looking at me like I'm here to assassinate someone?" Prince Estelin chuckled lightly as he noticed the guards looking at him with caution.

Chapter 193 - 193: Charmed By Him?

"Hmm? Why are all of you looking at me like I'm here to assassinate someone?" Prince Estelin chuckled lightly as he noticed the guards looking at him with caution.

"What brings the Crown Prince Lan to our camp? Do you need salt or something?" General Yao said as he smiled lightly.

"Oh, it's nothing like that. Our Kingdom has all the resources that we can need, unlike some other kingdoms. Anyway, I was in our camp when I noticed you three standing here. I thought I should come and say hello" Crown Prince Ling Lan said as his eyes roamed at the three people.

"You must be the Prince Estelin. I've heard a lot about you. You are really talented I must say" Prince Lan let out as he glanced at Prince Estelin with a smile.

"Hmph... another one who thinks that he is superior to me? I would've beaten the cra* out of you if I was as old as you!" Prince Estelin muttered as he ignored Prince Lan.

Although Prince Estelin said it in a low voice, Prince Lan clearly heard his words. His face couldn't help but twitch as he heard the words.

"Little Prince, You must mind your words. You will one day become the ruler of the Huanji Kingdom, you should learn basic respect," Before Prince Lan could say anything, General Yao chided him.

"It's fine, Prince Estelin is still young. I'm sure he will become a fine ruler in the future" Prince Lan let out with a smile.

"Princess Maia... The rumors of your beauty transcended the boundaries of our kingdoms long ago. Though I must say that you are even more beautiful than I heard." Prince Lan said as he shifted his focus from Prince Estelin to Princess Maia.

"Thank you" Maia replied to him with a courteous smile.

"Would you mind spending some time with me? You can show me around your camp, or I can show you mine" Prince Lan further continued as he smiled lightly.

"I apologize, but I can't. Dinner will be ready soon and then I have to rest" Princess Maia denied straight away.

"How about I have dinner with you guys? " Prince Lan didn't give up as he further suggested.

"Wouldn't it be weird for a Prince to have dinner in another kingdom's camp when his own camp is nearby? Is there a shortage of food there ?" Princess Maia said as she glanced at Prince Lan with a frown.

"I don't lack the food, what I lack is a good company." Prince Lan said with a smile.

"Sorry, but I'm not interested" Princess Maia shook her head lightly.

"Why?" He asked with a strange look on his face.

"What do you mean why?" She asked back.

"Why don't you want to spend time with me? I just want to get to know you a little. Am I bad looking or did I do something wrong?" Prince Lan asked with a confused look on his face.

"You aren't bad looking, in fact, you're one of the nicest looking guys I've met..." Princess Maia said but just as she said it, Long Chen's face appeared in her thoughts. She hurriedly shook her head as she continued.

"But I don't like spending time with people I've met for the first time..." She said straight away as she looked at Prince Lan.

"Sure... We will meet again later... then we can talk. It was nice meeting you, Princess" Prince Lan said as he turned back and walked back towards his own camp.

"That a**hole... does he really think he is so charming??" Prince Estelin snorted as he looked away from Prince Lan.

Soon, the food was ready and everyone began eating. As General Yao was eating with Prince Estelin and Princess Maia, he looked towards the exit of his tent with a worried look on his face.

"Is Princess Zhiqing so busy that she can't even come to eat? Is she planning on starving?" General Yao let out with a serious look on his face.

"Is she okay? We haven't seen aunt Zhiqing in a long time... Are you sure it's safe leaving her with that stranger? " Prince Estelin let out with a frown on his face.

"She will be fine. I don't think that he will do anything bad to aunt." Princess Maia let out in between as she finished eating.

"What are you saying? Have you been charmed by him as well?" Prince Estelin let out with a slight frown on his face.

"Why does it feel like you're jealous of him? Did you want the strength he has?" Princess Maia chuckled as her red hair fluttered.

"Hmph... there's nothing to be jealous about! One day I'll be just as strong as him." Prince Estelin let out as he looked away.

"When? You are already older than him!" Princess Maia laughed again as she gazed at Prince Estelin.

"We're not talking about me here! We were talking about Aunt Zhiqing!" Prince Estelin retorted as he brought the topic back to what it initially was.

"Maria! " General Yao called out in a loud voice.

"Yes, master," A maid in a long ponytail came running as she bowed in front of General Yao.

"Take the food and give it to Princess Zhiqing and the other guests in her carriage" General Yao said as he sighed.

The maid bowed again as she turned back and left.

The maid called Maria prepared the plates with food and carried them with the help of other maids towards the carriage of Princess Zhiqing.

Zhiqing was looking outside with a hungry look on her face as she stared at the guards eating their dinner in the camp. Her stomach constantly grumbled as she looked at the food.

"You can't live without food, can you?" Mingyu let out with a light smile.

"Is there anyone in this world who can live without food?" Zhiqing replied to her without turning back.

"There are many.." Mingyu muttered softly.

"Hmm?" Zhiqing exclaimed as she saw several maids coming towards her carriage.

As the girls got close to the carriage, Zhiqing opened the door.

"Master asked us to bring food to the Princess," The head maid said as she held a plate and advanced towards Zhiqing.

Zhiqing shook her head rapidly as she tried to make them stop, but the maid didn't notice it.

"I don't need food!!!" Zhiqing let out loudly but her voice only sounded inside the carriage and not outside as the maid extended the plate towards her.

Chapter 194 - 194: Killer Of Darkness

"I don't need food!!!" Zhiqing let out loudly but her voice was only heard inside the carriage and not outside, as the maid extended the plate towards her.

The maid continued moving her hand forward until she was unable to. Her expressions grew strange as she realized that her hands were unable to move further. It was as if they were trapped in their place.

She felt like there was an invisible force, which was stopping her hands from moving ahead. Maria looked upwards and saw a wry smile on Princess Zhiqing's face who was shaking her head.

She hurriedly retracted her hand as she stepped back.

"What happened? Why are you not giving Princess her food?" Another maid stepped forward as she inquired.

"There... there's an invisible force blocking my hands...I can't move forward..." Maria let out in a serious tone.

"What nonsense are you talking about?" The maid said as she looked at Maria with disbelief. She moved as she walked towards the carriage. Her hands advanced just like Maria, but her expressions grew strange as well. Her hands were stuck in the same place, unable to move forward in the slightest.

"What the heck is happening here?" She stepped back as she muttered.

"I... I have a feeling that Princess Zhiqing... What if she is trapped by that boy, unable to leave or talk to anyone?" Maria let out with a horrified look on her face as she looked towards Zhiqing.

"This..." The other maids stepped farther from the carriage as they looked at it with wariness.

"Princess!!! Are you imprisoned by that boy???" Maria let out loudly as she asked Zhiqing. Her loud voice attracted the attention of quite a few guards nearby.

Princess Zhiqing couldn't understand a word Maria was saying, thus she could only guess what she wanted to say.

"Yes!!! I am perfectly fine here!!! Don't worry about me!" Zhiqing let out in a loud tone as she nodded her head. She misunderstood that Maria was asking if she was alright or not.

"This!!! I must tell the Master about this!! " Maria let out as she hurriedly ran towards the tent of General Yao.

"Looks like things aren't going well... it's about to get noisy..." Mingyu muttered as she saw the whole commotion from the sidelines.

"Ummm hmmm.. looks like it," Zhiqing let out with a wry smile on her face.

"Master!!! Master!!!" General Yao was meditating in his tent when Maria came barging in.

"What the heck is going on??? Is the sky falling down???" General Yao roared in anger as his meditation was disturbed.

"I..I apologize for disturbing you but... it's really important!! Princess... Princess Zhiqing is trapped by that boy inside a strange barrier!!!" Maria told General Yao in between her heavy breathing as she bent slightly and rested her hands on her knees.

"What!!!" General Yao stood up shocked as he heard her words. Without asking anything else, he hurriedly left his tent and ran towards Zhiqing's carriage.

"What's this whole commotion about?" Prince Estelin and Princess Maia came out of their respective tents.

They saw all the guards running towards Zhiqing's carriage. With a curious look on their faces, they ran in a similar direction.

"You bastard!!! We trusted you and you dare imprison the princess!!!" General Yao roared loudly as he stood in front of the carriage.

Zhiqing saw everything with a frown on her face. She opened the doors of the carriage and looked at General Yao.

"Princess!!! Don't worry! I will save you from that demon! " General Yao said with full confidence as he looked at Zhiqing.

"General Yao! I am safe and in no danger! Please don't do anything stupid!" Zhiqing said loudly but it was all in vain as her voice couldn't be heard. Instead of calming General Yao's anger, it further increased it.

"That demon!! He even took away your voice... so that morning when you didn't say anything? Was it because that demon had taken your voice?" General Yao let out as if he was suddenly struck with a realization.

It was at that time, Princess Maia and Prince Estelin reached there. They managed to hear General Yao's words.

"See!! I knew he was evil!!! So there was a reason aunt didn't come for dinner!! This guy has imprisoned her. Such a demon!!!" Prince Estelin let out as if he was disgusted by Long Chen.

"This... this..." Princess Maia stuttered as she found it hard to believe. She felt like she was dreaming right now.

"Princess, you don't need to worry! Even if they are stronger than me, I will put my life on the line to protect you!" General Yao let out as he looked at the Princess.

"I will break the barrier trapping you!!" He brought out his sword as he pointed it towards the carriage.

"Don't!!!" Zhiqing screamed as she saw General Yao attacking the empty spot of the carriage in hopes of breaking the barrier. He used his full Earth Realm cultivation and his famous sword art as he stabbed at the barrier.

Mingyu got ready to fight General Yao in case the barrier was broken. She couldn't let anyone reach Long Chen and disturb his comprehension.

The sword struck the barrier, but opposite to everyone's expectations, no sound came. It was completely silent as the sword struck the barrier. Even General Yao was stunned as he saw that his sword was unable to move forward in the slightest. The powerful force of the sword was turned into nothingness against the emptiness of the barrier.

He used his full strength as his muscles bulged. His nerves became visible under his skin, but the sword didn't move.

"I never expected this barrier to be this strong... just who are you.." Mingyu muttered as she glanced at Long Chen's face carefully.

"Oh right!" Zhiqing suddenly thought of something as she brought out a paper. There were some papers inside the carriage and a pen as well.

She decided to convey her words through writing.

General Yao retracted his hand and again attacked the barrier. He kept attacking the same spot in hopes of weakening the barrier but nothing worked.

He breathed heavily as he looked towards Princess Zhiqing with a defeated look on his face.

"hmm?" He noticed that Princess Zhiqing was holding a paper in her hand and showing it to him.

General Yao got closer to the paper and began reading it.

"General Yao,

You are misunderstanding this whole situation. I am not trapped by Master Chen. He is going through an important comprehension and this barrier is Master Chen's protection mechanism. As long as he doesn't wake up from his comprehension, this barrier won't disappear! So don't do anything stupid, I will come out and talk to you properly when Master Chen wakes up" General Yao read the letter in a low voice.

"Oh, so that was it...I completely misunderstood this whole situation!" General Yao let out with a wry smile on his face.

"What is happening here? Is there a problem?" Prince Lan and Royal Tutor came to the situation as they heard the loud commotion in Huanji Camp.

"Nothing happened, you both can go back" General Yao let out with a light smile on his face.

"Really? It looked like you were attacking the carriage?" Prince Lan asked with a serious look on his face.

"Attacking? Nope, I was testing the new defensive skill that Princess Zhiqing has learned. It wasn't serious... Do you see any damage to the carriage?" General Yao said as he shook his head lightly.

"Really?" Prince Lan let out with a suspicious look on his face.

"Well, If you say so. I thought there was a problem, so I came to help you guys. I should go back now" Prince Lan further continued as he glanced at General Yao with an amused smile on his face and turned back to leave.

He took a step forward before stopping his second step mid-air as he suddenly turned back.

"I believe this is our service meeting... the next time we meet, you can't call me a stranger. I'm looking forward to getting to know you" Prince Lan glanced back at Maia before he turned back and left.

"Some people don't get the hint." Princess Maia shook her head as she walked towards General Yao.

"Is aunt alright?" Princess Maia asked as she looked at General Yao.

"She said she is fine. It's just that she will take some time to leave the carriage as master Chen is going through comprehension. Thus there's a barrier around him, so she can't come out" General Yao said in a serious tone as he looked at Maia.

"Such a strong barrier that even you can't break it? Those two are so strong!" Princess Maia exclaimed with an amazed look on her face.

"They must be using an artifact. It's not like they will lack the resources. I'm going back." Prince Estelin let out with an unimpressed look on his face as he turned back and started walking back.

"Will aunt Zhiqing be alright? She can't eat anything now..." Princess Maia asked with a concerned look on her face.

"She is a Gold Core Realm cultivator... She can go for a long time without food, without affecting her body. We can't do anything but wait in either case, as it seems impossible to break the barrier" General Yao shook his head as he looked down.

"There's nothing to see here! Go back to what you were doing..." General Yao turned back as he looked back towards the guards who were watching them like there was a spectacle going on.

The guards hurriedly left as soon as they heard the command of General Yao.

"Let's go back..." General Yao said as he glanced at Princess Maia.

Maia nodded her head as she glanced at the carriage one last time before she left with General Yao.

It was late at night as the moon hung high in the sky. Most of the people were deep asleep and only a few guards were staying up to guard the camps.

Each guard was assigned a separate place to guard.

"Hmm?" The guard at the outer edge of the camp was roaming around when he suddenly heard a strange noise. He looked back but there was no one.

He began walking towards the area where the sound came from but before he could even take a step forward, his vision turned dark.

His headless body fell on the ground...

Chapter 195 - 195: Terror

He began walking towards the area where the sound came from, but before he could even take a step forward, his vision turned dark.

His headless body fell on the ground...

The guard couldn't even scream as he died. There was no noise or sound.

In another location of the camp, a different guard was guarding that section.

Tired of walking, he sat down on a stone and started eating the fruit he was carrying.

A shadow silently appeared behind him just as he was about to take the second bite of the fruit. As his teeth touched the fruit, another pair of teeth touched his neck.

A light noise of someone falling came as his lifeless body fell to the ground.

"Are you asleep?" Zhiqing said as she glanced at Mingyu to her side, who had her eyes closed.

"Yes," Mingyu said lightly without opening her eyes.

"I can't sleep..." Zhiqing again said as she looked bored.

"I can," Mingyu said as she shifted her head to the other side.

"Hmmp..." Zhiqing pouted as she shifted her gaze. She opened the curtains to her side of the window and started looking out.

She looked slightly up as she glanced at the moon that was shining in its full glory. After admiring its beauty for a brief moment, she turned her gaze down.

She looked around the camp that was visibly through her window, out of sheer boredom.

She saw the silent camp that was almost empty. There were only two guards in the near proximity that were looking in the opposite direction. She was about to take her eyes off of them when she noticed a shadow passing through their back.

"What was that? It was so fast that all I could see was a glimpse of a shadow!" Zhiqing exclaimed abruptly as soon as she noticed it.

"Hmm?" Mingyu opened her eyes slowly as she looked towards Zhiqing.

"What happened?" She asked Zhiqing with curiosity.

"I... I think I saw something... it was so fast that I could only catch a glimpse of it... it couldn't be someone from our Kingdom... who was it?" Zhiqing thought with a worried look on her face as she kept staring at the guards with concern.

"Must've been a misconception... You need some sleep" Mingyu said as she lightly shook her head.

"Hmm... maybe," Zhiqing said lightly. She began having doubts. She was about to shift her gaze when that shadow appeared again.

This time she was able to clearly see what that thing looked like as it stopped for a brief second when it opened its big mouth and cut the neck of the guard before it disappeared again.

"It's the Killer of the night.... The Devil Hunter beast!!!" Zhiqing screamed as soon as she saw what the beast looked like.

The beast looked like a wolf, but it was many times bigger than a normal wolf on earth. It had pitch black fur covering its whole body. It had blood-red eyes that made it look even more threatening.

The Devil Hunter beast was around one meter tall. There were two teeth coming out of his mouth just like a sabertooth. Matched with his steel-like claws, it looked quite unique.

"Hmm? devil hunter beast?" Mingyu exclaimed as she moved. She stood up a little as she moved towards the window of Zhiqing's side. She bent forward in such a manner that her hands rested in between Zhiqing and Long Chen, while her thighs touched Long Chen's legs.

She gazed out the window and noticed the body lying on the ground.

"That does look like the attack of the devil hunter beast. They don't attack cultivators because they are hungry, they hunt because they feel the urge to hunt. That's why they just kill, but never take the body of their hunt. Also, they love to go for the neck of their hunts." Mingyu said lightly as she observed the body.

The other guard finally noticed the body of his comrade as he turned back.

"Wake up!!! We are under attack!!!!" He screamed loudly as he ran towards the body of the other guard. He called out again and again as he tried to wake people up and warn the other guards.

"Were you able to observe its strength?" Mingyu inquired without shifting her focus from outside.

"I...I wasn't able..." Before she could complete her sentence, she saw that the shadow appeared again. The guard who had just reached near the body of his dead partner was amidst his screaming when the devil hunter beast attacked him.

He fell to the ground lifeless, while the beast disappeared.

"It's a 9th rank Gold Realm Devil Hunter beast... No one other than your General Yao can fight it as the cultivators of the Gold Core realm are simply too weak in front of it. You don't have to worry though, your General can defeat it," Mingyu let out as she saw the Devil Hunter beast. She was an Earth Realm cultivator, thus she easily was able to see the movements of Devil Hunter beast.

"We are quite unlucky though. A wild devil hunter beast is quite rare to find where I live. The rare few, that were found, had already been tamed by the beast tamers." Mingyu said as she informed Zhiqing.

"They are quite rare here as well. It's my first time seeing one. I've read quite a bit about them though. They are said to be quite dangerous, especially at night." Zhiqing said with a worried look on her face.

"Yea, the wild devil hunter beasts live in hiding, most of the time as they feed on wild beasts. They don't attack a human unprovoked. It's only on their birthdays, that they feel the urge to hunt humans. Looks like it's his birthday today, it's our bad luck that we had to be here at this time." Mingyu said as she shook her head lightly.

Zhiqing had her head down as she worried about her people.

The guard's screaming worked as now everyone was out of their camp. All the guards had their weapons out as they looked around for the enemy.

General Yao had come out of his camp as well. He stood with Princess Maia and Prince Estelin. He kept both of them behind his back to protect them in case of anything unexpected.

He walked forward as he saw two dead bodies lying in close proximity. He stopped in front of the bodies as he observed the wounds on the body.

"Everyone stay alert!! There is a beast in our camp!! It might even be a group of them, so stay alert and be ready to kill!!!" General Yao said loudly as he warned the guards.

"Master Yao, there's a body here as well!!" One of the guards exclaimed loudly as he found a body in another part of the camp.

"There's one here as well!" Another guard let out as he discovered the 4th body.

"Here is another one!!" The voices of guards kept coming as they found more and more bodies.

Soon, they had discovered over 7 dead bodies. They had 23 guards previously, but now there only remained 16.

"It's here!!! The beast killed one right now!! " One of the guards called out loudly as he saw a guard killed in front of him.

General Yao and the other guards reached there and saw another body.

"Did you see the beast? What did it look like?" General Yao asked with a grave look on his face

"I...I couldn't see it's figure!!! It was too fast!" The guard said as he tried to control his trembling.

"It's alright. Everyone! Get in groups of five. Look for the beast and watch out for your partners!" General Yao ordered everyone.

"You two must stay with me!" General Yao said lightly as he glanced at Maia and Estelin.

Princess Zhiqing looked at General Yao and her niece and nephew as she worried about their safety.

"Don't worry, they are with an Earth Realm Cultivator. Your family will be safe. As for the guards... that's a whole different matter." As soon as Mingyu finished saying her sentence, a scream resounded on the outside as another guard was killed.

Even after making teams, the guards kept dying. They previously had three teams of 5 people each, but now none of them had their original count.

One team had 4 people, while the other two had only three remaining members.

Dingxin kingdom's people heard the commotion as well. They were able to hear screams of Huanji guards.

"They are probably under attack by a group of beasts. Should we go help them?" Royal Tutor Wang said as he looked at Prince Lan.

"Well, we tried going for their help last time out of concern... but it was unneeded. Though this time I'm sure that they are really in trouble. Let's go help them... It's a good chance to impress Princess Maia. Also, That group of beasts will definitely attack us after they are finished with Huanji. We should join up with them." Prince Lan said with a slight smile on his face.

"Good thinking..." Royal Tutor chuckled as he glanced towards Huanji Camp.

Chapter 196 - 196: Hunter

"Well, we tried going for their help last time out of concern... but it was unneeded. Though this time I'm sure that they are really in trouble. Let's go help them... It's a good chance to impress Princess Maia. Also, That group of beasts will definitely attack us after they are finished with Huanji. We should join up with them." Prince Lan said with a slight smile on his face.

"Good thinking..." Royal Tutor chuckled as he glanced towards Huanji Camp.

"Guards!! Get ready to face some beasts. Be on the defensive and don't get hurt!! Prince Lan said loudly as he faced all the guards.

To the guards, Prince Lan looked like the epitome of bravery. To them, he looked like a brave general who was ready to face monsters to save the comrades.

"Long live the Prince!!!" One of the guards abruptly shouted out of sheer excitement. All his comrades looked at him before they started chanting the same thing.

"I appreciate your feelings! It's time to show the people of Huanji what real strength looks like!" The Prince said as he boosted the morale of his soldiers.

The guard's moved ahead while Prince Lan and Royal Tutor walked behind them.

"Everyone! Come together!! The beast is smart. He is hunting one by one. I hereby cancel all the teams. Everyone will stay together!" General Yao let out loudly.

The teams of guards that were still looking for the beast finally felt relieved as their search mission was canceled. They walked back to General Yao where they felt safer.

"So they have finally decided to come for help" General Yao muttered as he saw the people of Dongxin coming towards them.

Prince Lan had 25 guards in his team while General Yao had 23 when they began their journey, but now, although Prince Lan still had all his guards, General Yao only had 10 remaining.

"So many dead... such a disaster..." Prince Lan sighed as he reached General Yao.

"We are sorry that we couldn't come in time to help you. But now that we are here, everything will be alright." Prince Lan said with a confident look on his face, though he didn't forget to glance at Princess Maia when he said his last sentence.

"So what's the situation?... What are we facing?" Prince Lan inquired as he saw General Yao not responding.

"We don't know..." General Yao said as he shook his head. He was about to continue when he was interrupted.

"What do you mean that you don't know? More than half your people have died and you still don't know? What kind of an Earth Realm Cultivator are you?" Royal Tutor Wang snorted.

"We don't know if it's a single beast or a group of beasts, but I feel that it should be a single beast. The beast is really fast, as all the guards managed to see were shadows of the beast. It's clever too as it hunts one by one and uses his speed to stealthily attack. " General Yao ignored Royal Tutor Wang's taunts as he continued.

"That does sound like a tricky opponent, and for them to not be able to see how it looks like... It must not be an ordinary beast" Prince Lan said with a thoughtful look on his face.

He was about to continue when they all heard a grunt. They turned back, only to find that a guard of Dongxin Kingdom was already lying dead on the floor.

"We can't leave that beast to the guard. You watch the south and east while I'll watch the North and West. Just focus... attack as soon as you sense the beast..."General Yao let out as the Royal Tutor was looking at their fallen guard.

The Royal Tutor looked back at him as he nodded and said.

"Alright... that does seem like a better option..."

"Everyone! Form a circle in the middle and guard the Royals! " Both of them said at the same time to their guards.

The guard's surrounded Maia, Estelin, and Lan as they blocked every opening. As everyone stood in the center, General Yao stood towards the West of the guards while Royal Tutor Wang stood to the east.

For a long time, there was no movement. Everyone kept their alert as they waited in the scary silence.

"Is the beast gone?" Royal Tutor Wang muttered softly as he waited for any moment.

"It's here!!!" General Yao suddenly moved as he attacked to his left. He hurriedly swung his sword which managed to strike the rapidly advancing shadow.

The beast howled in pain as it moved back.

"Now is the time!!!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he moved as well. He took out his blade as he moved towards the Devil Hunter beast. The beast who was howling in pain, retreated as he used his speed.

"Not so fast! " General Yao commanded as he appeared behind the Devil Hunter beast. He swung his sword towards the Devil Hunter beast.

The Devil Hunter beast jumped high in the sky as it attacked General Yao with its claws. His steel-like claws collided with the incoming sword of General Yao.

Sparks were created as soon as the claw and sword collided. General Yao stood in his place but the Devil Hunter beast jumped in the air as it landed to the side.

As soon as the Devil Hunter beast moved, a blade passed through the spot where he was just a brief second ago.

"Damn!! Missed by a little!!!" Royal Tutor Wang said with a disappointed look on his face.

"It's the rare Devil Hunter beast. They are known for their speed... did you expect him to be slow?" General Yao said as he lightly shook his head.

He followed the Devil Hunter beast, which looked like it had lost its mind, as it glared at Royal Tutor Wang with hate.

"Awoooo!!!" The Devil Hunter beast howled as he looked towards the bright moon.

It opened his mouth as a pitch-black orb of light shot out from its mouth and advanced towards Royal Tutor Wang.

"Move to the side!!!" General Yao yelled instantly as he realized the strength of this orb of light.

Royal Tutor Wang felt it as well. Instead of facing the attack head-on, he hurriedly dodged to the side. Although he dodged the blacklight, it managed to graze his robe.

The part of his robe that the black light touched, immediately disintegrated as the black light continued on its path.

The black orb of light landed on the ground and immediately a black mass of smoke expanded in all the direction. The black smoke extended in a radius of 10 meters from the point of impact in a spherical motion. In about two seconds, the smoke disappeared completely.

The guards that were watching everything began sweating as they saw the impact of that attack. Even Prince Lan was frowning.

"So that's the strength of the rare Devil Hunter beast... amazing..." Prince Lan muttered softly as he gazed at the Devil Hunter beast.

There was now a 10 meter wide and about 6-meter deep crater in the place where the orb of black light crashed.

"Don't give it the chance to attack again!! Finish it right now!!!" General Yao yelled as he moved towards the Devil Hunter beast using his full speed.

Royal Tutor Wang came out from his daze as he attacked the Devil Hunter beast.

"Blood moon slash!" Royal Tutor Wang slashed with his blade as a bright flash of light escaped from his blade and moved towards the Devil Hunter beast.

The Devil Hunter beast had started bleeding by now and found it hard to maintain his original speed, still, he managed to dodge the attack with only a light graze as he jumped in the air.

"Mountain Penetrating Stab! " Came a noise. The Devil Hunter Beast who had just dodged the attack, couldn't even react when a sword came thrusting at its body.

The Devil Hunter beast wasn't able to dodge as the sword penetrated his body.

General Yao took his bloodied sword out of the Devil Hunter's body. Blood dripped from his sword as the Devil Hunter beast fell to the ground.

"Awoooo" The Devil Hunter beast let out in a low voice as it gazed at the moon. Its roar sounded so weak that it was barely audible to the guards who were standing at around 50 meters distance from the beast.

"Finally!!! Let's see where you run off to now!" Royal Tutor Wang said with a wide smile on his face as he slowly walked towards the beast.

Royal Tutor Wang brought his blade up in the air and swung it down hard as he chopped off its head. The body of the Devil Hunter beast lay there lifelessly.

"Problem solved," Royal Tutor Wang said with a smile.

"It was good that the Devil Hunter beast wasn't at the peak of the Gold Core Realm or despite being earth realm cultivators, we wouldn't be able to face it..." General Yao sighed as he looked at the lifeless body of the Devil Hunter beast.

"See...I told you that they can take care of the Devil Hunter beast. It was only an initial 9th stage gold realm beast." Mingyu said as she gazed outside.

"Yea... Thank god he was killed..." Zhiqing said as she sighed in relief after seeing that her family was safe.

" Something's happening" Mingyu suddenly said as she noticed something. She could see the fear on the faces of General Yao and Royal Tutor Wang.

Only a minute had passed since they had killed the Devil Hunter beast when a loud roar was heard.

"It....it..." Royal Tutor Wang stuttered as he felt the scary aura in that roar.

"It sounds like the roar of the Devil Hunter beast but it's... much stronger..." General Yao let out with a grave expression in his face.

Chapter 197 - 197: Awaken

"It sounds like the roar of the Devil Hunter beast but it's... much stronger..." General Yao let out with a grave expression in his face.

"G..get ready to fight. Even if he is stronger, We...we can defeat it with our combined strength!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he tried to gather his courage.

"I..."General Yao was about to say something when he stopped midway. He looked upwards and saw something flying from above his head. It looked like it was flying as high as the sky.

"Get away from here!!!" General Yao roared loudly as he retreated at rapid speed. Royal Tutor Wang also moved from near the dead body of the Devil Hunter beast that he had killed.

The thing that was flying high seemed to become bigger as it came downwards. Soon it landed in the ground from the sky.

"This... this..."General Yao stuttered as he saw the beast that came from the sky.

It looked just like the beast they had killed, the only difference was that it was much larger. While the previous Devil Hunter beast was around one meter tall, the beast in front of them was around 1.5 meters tall. Its eyes looked just as red as it gazed at the dead Devil Hunter beast.

It ignored General Yao and Royal Tutor Wang as it moved towards the lifeless Devil Hunter beast.

The Devil Hunter beast looked at the dead beast with sadness in its eyes.

It looked towards the moon as it howled in agony.

"It...it...I cant see it's cultivation..." Royal Tutor Wang said softly to General Yao.

"I can't either... there's no doubt about it! It's an Earth Realm Devil Hunter beast." General Yao let out as he began sweating.

"We are all dead now!!! How can there be such a strong beast in this area without much information or without anyone knowing!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he found it hard to believe his eyes.

The Devil Hunter beast looked at it as if it was grieving when it looked towards the lifeless body of the little beast. It looked at the shining moon as it howled again.

This roar echoed for miles. All the beasts that heard it couldn't help but tremble as they got down on their knees.

"It's a... Earth Realm Devil Hunter beast!!" Mingyu exclaimed as her eyes opened wide.

"What!!!" Zhiqing gasped as she was scared stiff. She could only imagine the terror the others must be going through right now.

"We should run while it's distracted!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he tried to control his shivering.

"Run? Against that thing? We can't run.. We can only fight to the death right now..." General Yao said to Royal Tutor Wang as he laughed in self-deprecation.

Royal Tutor Wang seemed to have understood his meaning as he remembered the frightening speed of the 9th stage gold core realm Devil Hunter beast. He could only imagine how fast an Earth Realm Devil Hunter beast would be.

"Guards!! Attack the beast together with me!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he ordered the guards.

"You idiot!! They can do nothing to this beast! They'll just be cannon fodder!!" General Yao said to the Royal Tutor in a discontented tone.

'You will never understand!! While they distract the Devil Hunter beast, I can find an opportunity to kill him. So what if a few of them die in the process! It's all for the greater good!' Royal Tutor Wang thought to himself as he ignored General Yao.

"Go now!" Royal Tutor Wang said loudly. His voice made the shivering guards gain some courage. The guards prayed to the gods as they took their weapons out and ran towards the howling beast.

The beast turned around as it gazed at the running guards with his bloodthirsty red eyes.

The Devil Hunter beast disappeared from its spot. Screams started resounding in the atmosphere. The Devil Hunter beast was so fast that it looked like he was truly invisible.

The guards that were running towards him were being shredded to pieces but not even the shadow of the Devil Hunter beast could be seen.

The Devil Hunter Beast finally became visible at the center of the dead bodies...or at least what remained of those bodies.

"Mountain Penetrating Stab!" General Yao roared loudly as he appeared near the Devil Hunter beast and thrust his sword towards the Devil Hunter beast.

"Die!!!!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he appeared behind the Devil Hunter beast and attacked with his blade as well

The Devil Hunter beast again disappeared from his spot as he appeared 50 meters away in an instant

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!" Royal Tutor Wang's scream echoed in the air as the sound of his blade falling to the ground was heard.

Half of his right arm was missing while the remaining half bled heavily as he groaned in pain.

The Devil Hunter beast gazed at the blood on the blade as his eyes turned even redder.

He again disappeared from his spot but right at that moment, something changed.

The air began feeling different. The aura of the Devil Hunter beast that previously dominated the region began looking much milder. It felt as if the whole atmosphere had suddenly changed.

The Devil Hunter beast became visible once again on his original spot as he looked all around him with a wary look.

It could suddenly feel two strong aura in the region that was previously not present. While one of the aura felt stronger than both of the humans he was fighting, the other aura was much more threatening. It felt stronger and much more mysterious. The Devil Hunter beast stayed in its original position as it waited...

Zhiqing's eyes were already wet as she saw the scary scene on the outside. The frightened faces of Princess Maia and Prince Estelin made her even more scared.

"Please open this barrier!!! I must be with them!!! I can't watch them die while I stay here" Zhiqing said loudly as she looked at Mingyu.

"I wish I could help...but...I can't do anything to the barrier." Mingyu shook her head with a downcast look on her face.

"Long Chen ... please wake up!!! " Zhiqing said as she gazed at Long Chen with teary eyes. Although she could use force in hopes of disturbing Long Chen's comprehension... she couldn't get her heart to do it. She could only beg him in hopes that he would listen and naturally wake up.

Mingyu could feel the sadness of Zhiqing as she saw the nightmare on the outside. She wanted to help but there was nothing that she could do.

"Oh no!" She gasped as she saw the speed of the Devil Hunter beast. In the blink of an eye, he had killed all 24 guards of Dongxin Kingdom.

"Please ...help..." Zhiqing didn't look back as she couldn't bear to watch anymore. She kept looking at Long Chen and pleading for help.

' They are all dead... It's only a matter of time now' Mingyu thought as she saw the right arm of Royal Tutor Wang being ripped off.

Suddenly her expressions changed. She was able to feel something different. It was as if the whole world had suddenly changed. The cold inside the carriage has disappeared like it was never there while a strong aura abruptly appeared.

She looked back at the source of that aura and noticed that it was coming from Long Chen.

Long Chen slowly opened his eyes. His previously golden eyes looked black right now like it was the empty space. There were even some stars that could be seen in his deep eyes. Mingyu couldn't help but be in a daze as she looked at the beauty of Long Chen's eyes.

Long Chen looked to his side and noticed the crying face of Zhiqing. He looked towards the gate of the carriage. He didn't even move to position himself so that he could see outside.

Long Chen gazed at the solid door as if he could see through it.

"What a..." Mingyu was about to ask something when her mouth opened wide. Long Chen had disappeared from his spot.

"He... where...?" Zhiqing muttered with a shocked look on her face as she looked at the now-empty seat.

"There..." Mingyu let out as she looked outside with a blank look on her face.

Zhiqing looked out the window as well. She saw Long Chen standing in front of the Devil Hunter beast.

Zhiqing opened the door and tried stepping out and finally, she could. There was no barrier now.

Mingyu followed her as she stepped out as well.

Royal Tutor Wang had already lost hope when his arm was torn off. When he saw the Devil Hunter beast disappear again, he couldn't help but close his eyes as he waited for a painful death but even after a long time, nothing happened.

He opened his eyes as he looked ahead and saw the Devil Hunter beast standing in its original position. It looked as if it was waiting for something to happen.

He gazed towards General Yao who looked just as confused.

He couldn't understand what was happening when suddenly things got even weirder for him.

A boy had just appeared out of thin air as he stood in front of him and the Devil Hunter beast.

Chapter 198 - 198: Fighting The Devil Hunter

A boy had just appeared out of thin air as he stood in front of him and the Devil Hunter beast.

"He's up! " General Yao exclaimed with excitement.

Royal Tutor Wang couldn't understand why General Yao was so excited and who was this boy that appears out of nowhere.

Zhiqing ran towards the group of Huanji Kingdom as she met up with Prince Estelin and Princess Maia. Mingyu also came with her.

She didn't go to fight the beast with Long Chen as she trusted him.

'He feels stronger... Since he went to fight the beast alone, I believe that he can do it' She thought as she gazed at Long Chen. Though she still stayed alert to help Long Chen when needed.

The Devil Hunter beast glared at Long Chen with its blood-red eyes. It could feel strength from the boy that had appeared in front of him but it couldn't see exactly how much. It felt like a mysterious shroud was surrounding this boy.

The Devil Hunter beast was an Earth Realm beast thus it had high intelligence, still, he was unable to leave the people who dared to kill the little beast. Anger clouded its judgment as it ignored the feeling of danger and decided to kill Long Chen and everyone else present here.

"Awoooo!!!" It roared as it looked towards the sky before turning its gaze down. It disappeared from its original position and appeared right behind Long Chen as it swung its claws but its eyes opened wide as it saw Long Chen was not there.

It looked back only to find Long Chen standing behind him.

'This boy!!! I couldn't see his movement at all? Is he really that fast or can he teleport instantly? Nope !!! The latter is impossible!!! He must have strong cultivation and good movement skills!' Royal Tutor Wang thought as he stared at Long Chen.

The Devil Hunter beast again moved at its full speed as it disappeared from its spot. It appeared above Long Chen's head as it came down and opened its mouth wide to bite his head off but again something unexpected happened.

Long Chen disappeared from his spot and appeared above the Devil Hunter beast as he punched down.

The Devil Hunter beast sensed the strength of that punch and changed his direction mid-air as he dodged the attack.

The Devil Hunter beast appeared around 20 meters away from Long Chen.

It opened its mouth wide as it shot out a black orb of light. It looked similar to the attack of that 9th stage Gold Realm Devil Hunter beast, the attack that had created the big crater, but this one looked twice the size and contained an immense force.

Its speed was just as fast as the Devil Hunter beast.

"Immediately dodge it!!! That's a fearsome attack!!!" General Yao yelled as he tried to warn Long Chen but Long Chen didn't react. It looked like he didn't even hear him.

The black orb of light reached within 2 meters range of Long Chen but he didn't move.

"He's dead..." Royal Tutor Wang muttered with a disappointed look on his face but his eyes opened wide in shock as he saw what happened next.

The black orb of light that seemed to contain immense strength seemed to have stopped in midair as it reached the one-meter range of Long Chen.

The space around Long Chen flickered and distorted as it looked like it had created a shield for Long Chen.

The space looked like it was becoming unstable as it faced the black orb of light.

"Warp!" Long Chen muttered as he made a circle using his finger. A small portal appeared right in front of that orb of light which was only a meter in diameter.

The space barrier seemed to have disappeared soon while the black orb of light continued ahead. The orb of blacklight entered that spatial portal right before it could reach Long Chen.

The Devil Hunter beast couldn't believe what was happening. He was about to attack Long Chen again when it sensed danger.

A spatial portal appeared right behind it as the black orb of light exited from that portal. It moved towards the Devil Hunter beast at rapid speed.

The Devil Hunter beast immediately reacted as he dodged to the right but he couldn't dodge safely.

As he dodged, the orb managed to pass through its ears. The left ear of the Devil Hunter beast disappeared while the remaining part started bleeding.

The orb of light crashed on the ground as the black smoke spread in the atmosphere in a spherical manner. It made a smoke sphere of 50 meters diameter before that black smoke disappeared. All that remained was a 20 meters deep and 50 meters wide crater.

The Devil Hunter beast groaned in pain as it looked at Long Chen with fear. Although it was consumed in anger, the weak voice in its head was telling it to escape. As he fought Long Chen and saw his strength, those voices became stronger and stronger.

Finally, it decided to listen to his sense of danger. It gazed at the dead Devil Hunter beast with an unwilling look on its face as it disappeared once again. However, this time instead of attacking Long Chen, it moved in the opposite direction.

There was no change in Long Chen's expressions as he finally used his movement skills. He moved away from everyone as a burst of wind followed him. Before long, he disappeared from everyone's view.

"What just happened!! Did... did the fearsome Devil Hunter beast actually run away from a kid?" Prince Lan said with a blank look on his face. It was as if he couldn't believe his eyes.

"He's not a normal kid....he is a genius from an empire..." Princess Maia said as her frightened expression finally turned to smile.

"What?" Prince Lan exclaimed loudly as he heard her words. As the crown Prince of a second rank Kingdom, he knew the difference in strength. He was working hard just to gain entrance in the sect of a first rank Kingdom to gain more strength and resources, which was many times weaker than an Empire.

Even Royal Tutor Wang managed to hear her words. Although his right arm had been ripped off, the pain had become bearable for him by now. He

understood that there was nothing that he could do right now, other than getting some rare healing pill which was almost impossible to get in the Second Rank Kingdom. He had already given hope of that happening.

"He's from an empire? Is he one of the guests that came with miss ling to watch the sect entrance exam? " Royal Tutor Wang asked with wide eyes.

"I don't know much about him but I'm sure he's not with them." General Yao said as he shook his head.

"Whatever Empire he is from, I'm just glad that he was here to save us" General Yao continued as he smiled and finally breathed in relief as he moved towards Zhiqing.

As soon as Mingyu saw Long Chen moving, she also used her movement skills as she tried to follow him. However, in about a few seconds, she lost all traces of Long Chen.

She couldn't believe how fast Long Chen had become. She couldn't even keep up with him.

Long Chen followed the Devil Hunter beast for miles but the Devil Hunter beast managed to keep up his distance. Long Chen began getting impatient.

Long Chen's eyes that previously looked like space turned back to their original golden color, but they didn't stay golden for long.

His eyes turned misty white as it looked like a heavy mist was shrouding them.

The Devil Hunter beast that was running at full speed suddenly stopped as a large wall abruptly appeared in front of him out of nowhere. The wall was over thirty meters tall and 36 meters wide.

The Devil Hunter beast looked to the right but a wall appeared there as well. Another wall appeared to his left. All the paths were closed.

It turned back only to find Long Chen standing there and another wall behind him. It looked like they were trapped in a room approximately 36 meters wide and 90 meters long.

Long Chen brought his King's sword out as he pointed it towards the Devil Hunter beast.

The whole place was filled with the sword aura as soon as the sword came out. Long Chen's own aura further surged as well.

"I have no enmity with you, but you made someone close to me cry. You deserve death." Long Chen finally spoke as he gripped his sword.

"Awooooo!" The Devil Hunter beast finally couldn't bear it anymore as it looked towards the sky and howled the loudest.

Long Chen's feet moved as he closed the distance between himself and the Devil Hunter beast.

The Devil Hunter beast moved as well. It had previously suffered the brunt of attacking him with that orb of black light, thus it decided to attack physically.

The steel-like claws of the Devil Hunter beast collided with the king's sword and right after the initial contact, the claws that previously looked indestructible were sliced through like butter.

Long Chen didn't give the Devil Hunter beast any chance as he changed his position and grabbed the neck of the Devil Hunter beast with his other hand.

Long Chen picked the Devil Hunter beast up in the air through its neck and crashed him on the ground. A crater was created from the heavy impact as the Devil Hunter beast gave a pained cry

Long chen picked his sword high in the air as he got ready to strike down.

"Don't kill!" Suddenly a voice came.

Chapter 199 - 199: Taming Devil Hunter

Long Chen picked his sword high in the air as he got ready to strike down.

"Don't kill!" Suddenly a voice came.

"Why are you stopping me?" Long Chen asked. Although he already knew it was, he looked back at the person standing behind him. It was Xun that had finally appeared to stop Long Chen.

"Because I don't want you to waste such a good opportunity!" Xun said with a slight smile on her face.

"What do you mean?" Long Chen asked as his curiosity increased.

He kept his eyes on the Devil Hunter beast that was crying in pain, in case it tried anything unexpected.

"Don't you think that this Devil Hunter beast is quite strong?" Xun said with a mysterious smile on her face.

"Yea, it is quite strong... especially its speed... Without using my law of illusion, I wouldn't be able to catch up to it at all." Long Chen let out as he nodded his head.

"Exactly!!! It's a rare beast that is favored by all beast tamers for its speed and strength." Xun said as she gazed at the Devil Hunter beast.

"Beast tamers?" Long Chen let out as he wondered about what she wanted to say.

"Right. It would be a huge waste if you killed it! You should tame it instead!!!" Xun said with an excited expression on her face.

"Tame a Devil Hunter beast? An Earth Realm beast? It It is actually a good idea. It could be quite useful in the future" Long Chen smiled as he liked the idea.

"I beat it so much ... Do you think that it will work?" Long Chen asked as he saw the hating look in the Devil Hunter beast's eyes.

"You should definitely try first," Xun said as she smiled.

"You remember the process that I told you, right?" Just do the same thing. Also, place a blood drop on its forehead.

"I apologize for beating you, little guy. I lose my anger when I see someone close to me sad. But I can't blame you entirely either, as someone close to you was killed. Anyone would become bloodthirsty if that happened to them. I can't even imagine what I would do if something like that happened to me." Long Chen muttered as he lightly shook his head.

"Let's forget the hate of the past. From now on, you will be my partner." Long Chen cut his finger slightly and it began bleeding.

He brought it closer to the Devil Hunter beast's forehead as he made a mark with his blood. He followed the same process to establish the contract with the Devil Hunter beast as he did with little snow.

In about a minute, the blood mark on the Devil Hunter beast's forehead started shining. More time passed, and now its whole body was shining with stark white light.

The light turned dim after a few minutes and the Devil Hunter beast came into view again.

"What the...?" Long Chen exclaimed in shock as he saw the Devil Hunter beast.

The Devil Hunter beast stood in front of him but it looked different. The Devil Hunter beast looked slightly taller and bulkier than it did before.

The thing that shocked him the most was that all of its injuries had healed. There was no wound on its body. Even the ear, that was disintegrated after coming in contact with the orb of black light, had returned to normal.

"I didn't know that the beasts would heal after a beast Tamer establishes a contract with them." Long Chen exclaimed with a stunned look on his face.

"It can't... it's something that only you can do. When you tame a beast, they will return to their optimal condition. Their strength would slightly increase as well ." Xun said with a smile.

"Because of the bloodline I have?" Long Chen inquired as he looked back at her.

"Yup...As I said, you are not a normal human being anymore." Xun said in a mysterious tone.

Before Long Chen could ask anything further, he felt like a link was established with the Devil Hunter beast.

Long Chen looked at the Devil Hunter beast as he gained the knowledge about the beast's life through the link.

"Interesting... So that little beast was your brother. I am really sorry for your loss... but don't worry. I will keep you safe. Though I must say that your memories are quite interesting. Your origin, your survival till now...I could never have imagined that there were so many mysteries hidden behind you. It's too bad that I could only see a few events of your life." Long Chen said as he looked at the Devil Hunter beast.

"What did you see? What mystery?" Xun asked with a curious look on her face. She couldn't access Long Chen's thoughts without his desires, thus she had no idea what he saw.

"He's not from this continent..." Long Chen said softly.

"Not from this continent? Which continent is he from then?" Xun asked as she looked at him with curiosity.

"A place far away from this place. He was exiled along with his brother..." Long Chen let out softly.

"Exiled? That term... That must mean that he's from..." Xun muttered as her eyes opened wide.

"Looks like there's one more thing I'll need to solve in the future" Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"Let's get back for now..." Long Chen muttered softly.

The Devil Hunter beast stood up as it walked closer to Long Chen. It was 1.5 meters in height before, but now, it's height has increased to 1.7 meters. It was much taller than Long Chen.

Long Chen jumped high in the air as he sat on top of the Devil Hunter beast. Long Chen didn't need to say anything and could just express his desires to his tamed beast.

The Devil Hunter beast began moving rapidly as he advanced back.

"He has truly become faster..." Long Chen muttered as he saw the speed of the Devil Hunter beast.

Mingyu walked back to the camp alone as she failed to find Long Chen. She decided to come back and wait for him.

Everyone else was preparing to leave. The Huanji camp still had ten guards thus their preparation took longer while the Dongxin Kingdom only had Prince Ling Lan and the injured Royal Tutor Wang who was given basic medical help.

As Zhiqing saw Mingyu coming back to the camp, she hurriedly ran towards her.

"Where is Master Chen?" Zhiqing asked as she looked around.

"I couldn't find him." Mingyu shook her head in disappointment.

"He is alone there? He will be alright, right?" Zhiqing asked with a worried look on her face.

"Yes. The way he handled that beast here, I'm sure he will be fine. He had grown much stronger." Mingyu let out softly.

'I think that if we fought, I would be instantly defeated' She thought as she looked back.

"Alright, we'll wait for him and depart after he's back."

She was about to walk back with Mingyu when the howl of the Devil Hunter beast resounded again.

Everyone there stood still as the fear once again gripped their heart.

"He's back! Does that mean Master Chen... It's all because of me..." Zhiqing muttered as her eyes grew wet.

"Impossible!!! Nothing could happen to him.!!! " Mingyu said with disbelief clearly written on her face.

"Looks like it's not in our destiny to survive." Royal Tutor Wang said as he sat down with the defeated look on his face.

"It's here..." General Yao muttered with a grave look on his face as he saw a shadow, high in the sky.

He had taken his sword out. He got ready to fight until his eventual death, but his expressions changed as his mouth opened wide. He couldn't believe what he was seeing.

The Devil Hunter beast that looked so fierce before now looked even stronger. But what truly shocked him was the person that was sitting on top of the Devil Hunter beast.

"Long Chen..." Mingyu muttered as a relieved smile appeared on her face.

"What is happening here? Why are you on top of the beast?" Mingyu asked as she walked forward.

"Can't I ride on my tamed beast?" Long Chen said as he smiled.

"Tamed? You can tame a beast? Furthermore, You tamed the Devil Hunter beast? Just who are you exactly?" Mingyu muttered as she looked at Long Chen with wide eyes.

"So the beast ... he won't attack us anymore,?" Zhiqing asked as she gazed at Long Chen.

"Don't worry, He won't do anything" Long Chen said with a smile as he got off the Devil Hunter beast.

"Thank you, Master Chen. Let me convey my gratitude for saving our lives" Royal Tutor Wang said as he walked to the front.

'He's amazing! If I can win his friendship, I'll immediately gain success in life! I must find a way to get close to him.'" Prince Lan thought as he looked at Long Chen. His expressions turned bright as he thought of something. He walked towards the dead body of the 9th stage gold realm Beast that was left as it was.

'The core of this beast is really expensive and since that big beast is tamed, I don't need to worry. If I give it to him, I'm sure I'll be able to get close to him.'" Prince Lan thought as he gazed at the dead body. He brought his dagger out and advanced towards the beast.

Long Chen was talking to Zhiqing when he noticed something. His expressions became cold as he disappeared from his spot.

Prince Lan was only a step away from the dead beast when Long Chen appeared in front of him.

Long Chen grabbed him by his throat as he brought him up in the air.

"What do you think you are doing!!!" Long Chen roared loudly as he stared at Prince Lan who was hanging in the air by his neck.

Chapter 200 - 200: Missing Little Snow

"What do you think you are doing!!!" Long Chen roared loudly as he stared at Prince Lan who was hanging in the air by his neck.

"Ahhghh..." Prince Lan tried to speak but he was unable to as his neck was gripped tightly in Long Chen's hand. In fact, Even breathing was difficult for him at the moment.

"I asked you a question!" Long Chen asked again, but this time he relaxed his grip somewhat.

"I... I was trying to... take his core out... to give you..." Prince Lanc barely managed to finish his sentence after a long time.

"Master !!! I beg you, please forgive young Prince. Don't kill him for such a lowly offense. As he said, he was doing it to please you." Royal Tutor Wang got there and said to Long Chen in a pleading tone.

"Cutting the body of my tamed beast's little brother is supposed to please me???" Long Chen let out in a loud tone as a chilly aura spread from him. He was truly angry at what he saw.

Before Taming the Devil hunter beast, he wouldn't have minded even if Prince Lan took the core for himself, but after Long Chen tamed the Earth Realm Devil hunter beast, things changed for him.

He was able to see a few of the memories of the Devil hunter beast. He saw what both of them faced throughout their lives. He felt their bonds. He was already feeling bad that the little beast had died, and for him to see such a thing being attempted in front of him. He was furious. He was barely controlling himself from crushing Ling Lan's neck.

"I... Big mistake... Forgive..." Prince Lan said with much effort. His eyes had turned red by now.

"Master!!! I beg you ... Please forgive Prince Lan. He won't do such a thing. If you want, I'll even kowtow to you, just don't kill him!" Royal Tutor Wang said as he got down on both his knees. He started hitting his head on the ground as he began kowtowing.

General Yao stood there as he watched it happen. He wanted to ask Long Chen to forgive Prince Lan as well, but he couldn't get himself to say anything as he saw the serious look on Long Chen's face.

Long Chen saw the Royal Tutor kowtowing in front of him. Although his anger didn't decrease, he still decided to listen to the Royal Tutor's plea.

"Try making better decisions in the future." Long Chen said in a heavy tone as he threw Prince Lan towards Royal Tutor Wang.

Prince Lan fell to the ground, but he wasn't heavily hurt. He breathed heavily and coughed constantly as he sat up. He didn't even dare to look at Long Chen and kept his head down.

The Earth Realm Devil hunter beast had already appeared near Long Chen and was looking at the dead beast with a sad look on his face.

"We need to bury this little fella. How about you make a pit?" Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the Devil hunter beast.

The Devil hunter beast unwillingly took his eyes off the dead beast as he howled while looking towards the sky.

It looked down and opened its mouth as it shot out a black orb of light. Everyone was already familiar with this attack, thus they knew what was about to happen.

The black orb of light landed on the ground and a large crater was created at the point of impact.

Long Chen walked towards the dead Devil hunter beast amidst the watchful gazes of everyone present.

He picked up the little beast. Although the Devil hunter beast was heavy, to Long Chen, who was a body cultivator as well, this weight was nothing.

Long Chen walked towards the large crater with the dead beast in his hands. As he reached the edge of the crater, he jumped down inside.

Long Chen placed the dead Devil hunter beast on the center of the crater and freed his hand.

He picked up a handful of soil and placed it on top of the Devil hunter beast.

"Rest in peace little guy," Long Chen said with a sad expression on his face as he turned back.

The Earth Realm Devil hunter beast was also howling in sadness.

Long Chen got out of the crater and walked near the Devil hunter beast and patted his head softly.

"Fill the crater with soil." Long Chen said to General Yao.

General Yao hurriedly nodded his head as if he was facing his king. He ordered the guards to get to work.

Long Chen stood there as the guards filled the crater with soil, and thus buried little Devil hunter beast forever.

Long Chen was standing with the earth realm Devil hunter beast as he thought about a name for it.

"I know that I'm bad when it comes to naming. So I hope that you won't mind if I come up with a terrible name." Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face as he looked at the Devil hunter beast.

"You'll be named ... Orion..." Long Chen said to the Devil hunter beast.

"Such a weird name, I doubted you when you said that you were bad at naming, but now I believe you," Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen with an amused smile on her face.

"I quite like that name. I think it's a good name" Zhiqing chimed in her opinion.

"Anyways, Orion is quite big...I wonder if he will be allowed inside the Xuan Kingdom... He's quite a scary beast." Zhiqing said after a while as she turned serious.

"Why? Aren't Beast Tamers allowed to bring their tamed beasts inside the city here? Back home, beast tamers often roam around with their beasts. They were allowed entry and exit without any trouble, especially strong beast tamers who had beasts at Earth Realm or above." Mingyu said with a curious look on her face.

"It is slightly different here. Beast Tamers are allowed to bring their beasts, but not the scary ones like the Devil hunter beast, as it might disturb the citizens. That's why all the Beast Tamers of the kingdom carry a beast bag. It is used by them to keep their beasts." Zhiqing replied to Mingyu.

"Beast bag? A beast bag strong enough to keep an Earth realm beast can only be found in an empire. I don't have time to waste like that." Long Chen said in a carefree manner.

"I just have one task to do. I'll enter the Xuan Kingdom even if they don't allow me to. I'll break all their defenses to get to my goal... even if I have to go against the whole Kingdom." Long Chen further continued in a serious tone.

"You must hate the people from the Thunder Giant Sect a lot," Zhiqing said as she let out a wry smile on her face.

"Those who try to hurt the ones close to me, deserve to die." Long Chen said as he looked towards the distant horizon, in the direction of Xuan Kingdom.

Zhiqing heard his words and wondered who he was talking about. She couldn't help but glance at Mingyu.

"Alright, we will worry about it when the time comes..." Zhiqing said as she stopped worrying about gaining entry.

"Let's get inside the carriage. We are ready to move." Zhiqing said as she noticed that all the people were waiting for them. The preparations had been completed.

Long Chen didn't move as he stood there, lost in his thoughts.

'Sound I travel with Zhiqing in her carriage or go ahead on my own with Mingyu. I have Orion now and his speed is much faster. I'll be there in a short time if I go on Orion.' Long Chen thought as he looked at the Devil hunter beast.

Long Chen thought for a while but ultimately gave up on this thought. He had agreed to go with Zhiqing previously and had already completed most of the journey. He couldn't leave them alone when there was only one day's worth of journey left.

"Alright. Let's go" Long Chen finally said as he began moving towards the carriage of Zhiqing.

"Finally!!! I thought you would spend the whole day standing there" Zhiqing said with a chuckle as she followed Long Chen.

Mingyu walked behind them.

"We will be moving now. Stay near the carriage, alright? and be a good boy" Long Chen said to Orion before he entered the carriage.

"Hmm? Where's little snow?" Long Chen asked as soon as he entered the carriage. Previously he thought that little snow was inside the carriage, but he couldn't see him anywhere.

"Little snow?" Zhiqing exclaimed as she realized that they were missing little snow.

Long Chen looked all around the carriage with Mingyu and Zhiqing but there were no traces of Little snow.

He hurriedly got out of the carriage.

"Little snow!!!" Long Chen called out loudly as he stood outside the carriage. He has reinforced his voice with Qi to make his voice reach even farther.

He called out again and again but there was no response.

Chapter 201 - 201:Beast Region

"Little Snow!!!" Long Chen called out loudly as he stood outside the carriage. He had reinforced his voice with Qi to make his voice reach even farther.

He called out again and again but there was no response.

"Where did she go? I can't even sense her." Long Chen let out with a worried expression on his face.

"Don't hurt your brain that much, Little Snow is sleeping safely." Xun appeared in front of Long Chen and told him.

"Where?" Long Chen looked at Xun as he hurriedly asked.

"Where what?" Zhiqing inquired as she looked at Long Chen. Xun was standing in between Long Chen and Zhiqing. As Zhiqing couldn't see Xun, she thought that Long Chen was talking to her.

"there..." Xun said as she pointed her finger towards Long Chen's hand. He looked in the direction she was pointing. He noticed that she was pointing at the ancient storage ring in his finger.

"Orion!" Long Chen called out. Orion immediately appeared beside him like a shadow.

"I will be right back." Long Chen said to Mingyu and Zhiqing as he climbed on the back of Orion and left.

In a few minutes, Long Chen was already far away from them. He stopped in an empty location. He used his divine sense as he scanned the whole place. He lowered his guard as he found the place empty.

"What do you mean little snow is in my storage ring? How can this be possible! Storage rings can't hold beasts!" Long Chen exclaimed as he gazed at Xun.

"Yup, you are absolutely right. Storage rings can't keep living beasts, but I never said that the ring on your finger was a storage ring, did I?" Xun said as she chuckled.

Long Chen didn't say anything and just waited for her explanation.

"The ring in your finger is not a storage ring. Although it has an additional advantage that it can hold things for you, that is not its main function, it's just an additional perk." Xun continued as she explained to Long Chen.

"You remember what I told you about this ring before? This ring contains many spatial dimensions inside, and you just need to fulfill some secret criteria to remove the restrictions on them. I couldn't tell you before because of the restrictions, but since that zone is already unlocked, I can tell you now."

"The criteria to lift one of the restrictions was to tame 2 beasts, with at least one of them being an earth realm or a higher realm beast. You fulfilled this condition when you tamed the Devil Hunter beast after establishing a contract with Little Snow." Xun further continued.

"Why didn't you tell me about this after I tamed Orion?" Long Chen inquired with a doubtful gaze.

"Even though you fulfilled the conditions, it took some time to remove the restrictions on the beast region. I was waiting for the restrictions to be fully removed before telling you." Xun responded with a smile.

"Beast Region?" Long Chen further asked as he heard a new term.

"It is a space that is available inside the ring. In fact, it would be more appropriate to call it a small world. It is a world with dense Qi and spiritual plantation that can help your beast grow stronger at a faster rate. Your tamed beasts can stay there and you can bring them out when needed." Xun replied as she tried to clear his doubts.

"A separate space inside this ring..." Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"If that space has such dense Qi, and it can keep living life forms inside, can I enter it to cultivate?" He inquired with a curious look on his face.

"Nope... Only your tamed beast can stay in that place." Xun said as she shook her head lightly.

"Oh," Long Chen let out with disappointment on his face.

"Go ahead, check that space," Xun said to him.

Long Chen looked at his ring as he used his consciousness to access the ring. There he was amazed to see that two separate spaces existed right beside each other. He accessed the beast region and noticed that it was a lush green world

that looked just as large as the Earth itself. There were many unknown medicinal and spiritual plants in that world that he could see.

Although the world was so large, strangely enough, Long Chen was able to see every section of the world clearly. It was as if he was the god of this world.

Long Chen scanned the whole place and soon found little snow amidst an empty-looking field.

Little Snow was sleeping soundly without any worries. Long Chen smiled in relief.

"Yea, Little snow is in there." Long Chen let out as he gazed at Xun.

"Oh right, there is one strange thing that I must tell you though," Xun said as she thought about something.

"What thing?" Long Chen responded with curiosity.

"Generally, a tamed beast shouldn't be able to enter the beast region without your permission, but strangely enough, little snow was able to enter with ease. I don't even know how she knew about that space in the first place." Xue said as a thoughtful look appeared in her face.

"Well, She is not a normal beast, is she? I understood it the moment you said that Ethereal Moon Cats aren't born from eggs." Long Chen said with a smile as he looked at Xun.

"Now that it's clear, let's go back." Long Chen climbed on the back of Orion and left.

Long Chen walked back to the camp and found that everyone was still waiting near their carriages and horses.

"You're finally back. Did you find little snow?" Mingyu asked Long Chen as she saw him.

"Don't worry about her. She is absolutely fine." Long Chen said as he walked towards the carriage of Zhiqing.

"Let's get going." He said to Zhiqing as he stood near the carriage.

"Where's Orion?" Zhiqing asked with a doubtful look on her face.

"He's enjoying life and resting. Let's go" Long Chen responded as a slight smile appeared on his face.

With a frown on her face, Zhiqing entered the carriage. Long Chen entered after her. Mingyu was the last to enter.

"Are we leaving Orion behind? We should take him with us." Mingyu said to Long Chen with a serious look on her face.

"Don't worry about him. He is absolutely fine and will be there when we need him." Long Chen replied to her as a smile appeared on his face.

"If you say so..." Mingyu gazed at him with a doubtful look on her face but didn't ask him about it any further.

"Well, at least now we won't have to worry about getting into a fight with the warriors of Xuan Kingdom to gain entry," Zhiqing said with a light chuckle.

Long Chen closed his eyes as he sat there in comfort.

"You were really amazing the way you handled everything. It was my first time seeing you in action, and I must say that you're even stronger than I assumed. Especially your movement skill, that looked just like instant teleportation." Zhiqing finally started talking after a minute of silence as she looked at Long Chen with a feverish gaze.

"Thank you." Long Chen replied with a smile though he didn't explain to her that he wasn't using any movement skill at that time but actual teleportation. His mastery in the law of space had increased by leaps and bounds after that short spark of comprehension. Though he was still far from perfection.

His seed of space law had also finally changed into a small sapling.

Mingyu gazed at Long Chen as she wondered about something.

"Was that really a fast movement skill? How could it be so fast that even I wasn't able to see? It actually looked like he was able to teleport... But that's impossible. Teleportation should be related to controlling space. I had read about all the laws and there was no mention of the law of space or teleportation. "

"Is there really such a nature defying movement skill or has he actually mastered a law unheard of?" She wondered as she gazed at Long Chen. She wanted to ask it directly but she wasn't sure if it was appropriate to ask.

Everyone had their secrets and she didn't want to make Long Chen uncomfortable.

They entered the last second rank Kingdom on their journey to the Xuan Kingdom without much problem. The kingdom was known as the kingdom of Westia. It was the closest kingdom to the kingdom of Xuan.

In about half a day, they left that Kingdom as well, as they continued ahead. As they left the kingdom, they noticed that the roads were of better quality without any bumps and other obstacles.

Their journey continued smoothly as they comfortably moved on the well-built roads.

After about 6 hours of travel, they finally reached the entrance of the Xuan Kingdom.

There were two entrances there. One was smaller and looked like it was for average people while the other one was bigger. The second entrance looked like it was for merchants and important people that had their own personal carriages.

Their speed slowed down until the carriage finally stopped. Zhiqing opened the door of her carriage and looked out only to become stunned as she saw tens of carriages ahead of them.

She recognized the symbols on some of those carriages as the symbols of nearby royal kingdoms that she knew of.

There were two guards at the entrance and they were talking to a man that stood near the first carriage.

"We are at the entrance of Xuan. There's a big line ahead. It will probably take some time." She said as she closed the doors of her carriage.

Chapter 202 - 202: Xuan Kingdom

"We are at the entrance of Xuan. There's a big line ahead of us. It will probably take some time." She said as she closed the doors of her carriage.

"Finally we are here..." Long Chen let out as he looked towards the window.

Half an hour passed and their carriage finally reached the entrance.

Royal Tutor Wang and General Yao got off their carriages as they walked towards the guards.

"Earth Realm cultivators?" The guards frowned as they saw both of them, but they had seen many Earth Realm cultivators that came with the people of various kingdoms, so they weren't intimidated.

They believed that no Earth Realm Cultivator would be stupid enough to create trouble in the Xuan Kingdom unless he was seeking death. Also, the leader of the Royal Guards was nearby, who could take care of both of them with ease should they try anything bad.

"Where are you people from and what's your purpose of coming here." The guards inquired. Although they had already guessed the reason, they had to fulfill their duty and ask everyone.

"We are from the Huanji Kingdom. I am here to escort and protect my Prince and Princess. Here is our Royal Medallion" General Yao replied first. He showed a Medallion to the guards.

"We are from the Dongxin Kingdom. I am here to escort and protect our Crown Prince. He will be taking part in the sect entrance exams ." Royal Tutor Wang said. He was wearing a robe that hid his arms. He took out the Medallion and showed it to them using his left arm.

"Something is strange. The Dongxin Kingdom is said to be stronger than Huanji. Why are both of you traveling together? And where is your entourage? You only have one carriage and no guards?" One of the guards noticed something strange as he asked Royal Tutor Wang.

"We are attacked by an Earth Realm beast along the way. Although we managed to kill the beast, all our guards were killed while Huanji also lost 13 of their guards. " Royal Tutor Wang replied in an annoyed voice.

"Alright, you can enter." The guard said as he gave them both a piece of paper.

"It is your entry permit. It has the date of your entry... keep it with you as it will come in handy." The guard explained to them.

"Thank you." General Yao and Royal Tutor Wang both walked back to their carriages. Their entourage entered the kingdom as they were finally allowed entry.

"The first rank Kingdom is much bigger than second rank kingdoms, but its cities are located closer to each other," Zhiqing told Long Chen.

"The Yu Clan is situated in the capital city of the Xuan Kingdom along with some of the biggest sects. Yu Tianhao is the eldest son of the Yu Clan Patriarch and he is also the father of Miss Ling. The people of the Northern Moon Empire will surely stay at the Yu Clan as it's Miss Ling's home." Zhiqing continued as she informed Long Chen.

"Yu Tianhao is an Elder of the Glorious Blossom sect, right?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yea. I think almost everyone knows about it since the Glorious Blossom sect is so proud of this fact. Ever since Miss Ling was selected by a master from the Northern Moon Empire, they had been promoting this fact quite a lot to intimidate others." Zhiqing replied with a chuckle.

"The Glorious Blossom Sect is in the capital city too?" Long Chen asked again.

"Yea, If any disturbance happens at the Yu Clan, I'm sure they'll come for help," Zhiqing said as she nodded.

"They wouldn't need to come. I will go there myself. I have some business with them." Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Oh right, Do you know about the strengths of the strongest people in this kingdom?" Long Chen asked while their carriage traveled towards the capital city of Xuan.

"The strongest...ahmm... it's tough to say who is the strongest as no one clearly knows the real strengths of them, but there is some information."

"There are 5 major sects in this kingdom and the sect masters of all those sects are at the top of Earth Realm. Those five sects are Glorious Blossom Sect, Striking Sword Sect, Floating Cloud Sect, Earthly Mountain Sect and West Warriors Sect."

"The Glorious Blossom Sect is said to be the strongest sect amongst the 5 sects while the floating cloud sect is said to be the weakest," Zhiqing said as she looked at Long Chen with a concerned look. It was as if she was warning Long Chen against creating trouble for the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom sect is said to be a 10th Stage Earth Realm Cultivator. The Sect Masters of the other 4 sects are all at the 9th stage of Earth Realm. Though there's a Rumour that the Sect Master of Striking Sword Sect has broken through to the 10th stage as well but the Striking Sword Sect neither confirmed nor denied the rumor." She told Long Chen

"10th stage huh... " Long Chen touched his chin as he fell into a deep thought.

"What about the king of Xuan?" Long Chen inquired with a thoughtful look on his face.

"The king? Well, he is only an 8th stage Earth Realm Cultivator. Also, he is the brother of the Glorious Blossom Sect's Sect Master." Zhiqing replied to Long Chen.

Mingyu was hearing everything with interest along with Long Chen as she wondered about the difficulty of this mission.

"We will get to the capital city tomorrow and the Sect Entrance Exam is the day after tomorrow. My best opportunity will be to strike them while they are at the Yu Clan." Long Chen let out softly.

"It won't be that easy. The Patriarch of the Yu Clan is a 5th stage Earth Realm Cultivator and Yu Tianhao is a 3rd stage Earth Realm Cultivator. Also, there will be hundreds of guards." Zhiqing said with a worried look on her face.

"Don't worry about it. I have my ways." Long Chen said with a smile. Throughout the journey, he collected more information about the various sects and the clans of the capital city.

They traveled through the night as they finally reached their destination City.

It was the afternoon when they reached the capital city of the Xuan Kingdom. The city was known as Lecton. It was the capital city of Xuan and the home of the Royal Clan.

Three of the five big sects of Xuan were established in Lecton. They were Glorious Blossom Sect, Striking Sword Sect, and Earthly Mountain Sect. The 4th sect, West Warriors Sect, was situated at the border City of the Xuan

Kingdom in the city of Fuxia. The fifth sect, Floating Cloud Sect, was situated on the Northern side of the Xuan Kingdom.

"Will you even get rooms? This city looks quite packed with the participants of various kingdoms." Long Chen let out as he noticed the crowd on the streets.

"Don't worry about it. We have already planned for it. We sent someone from our Kingdom to book rooms for us a long time ago.

Although it would cost more to keep rooms booked in advance, It's better than sleeping on the road. It was necessary as we had already expected that the turnout would be big." Zhiqing said with a chuckle.

"Wise thinking." Long Chen smiled as he complimented Zhiqing.

The carriage stopped after a short while. There was a knock on the carriage's door.

"We have reached our destination, Princess." General Yao informed her as soon as she opened the door.

"Finally..." Zhiqing smiled as she left the carriage along with Mingyu and Long Chen.

"So this is 'Delighted Stars hotel'...Not bad!" Zhiqing let out with a smile as she looked at the building in front of her. This building had 4 floors. There were two private guards of the hotel at the entrance.

"So, how many rooms did you get?" Zhiqing asked as she looked at the man standing near General Yao. He was the person she had assigned to book the rooms for them.

"I...I apologize Princess, I was only able to get 6 rooms. Even though I came so early, most of the rooms were already booked in advance." The man said with a downcast tone as he looked down.

"Only 6 rooms? but there are 19 of us!" She let out with a stunned look on her face.

"Maia and I can share a room and General Yao and Estelin can share the second room. There are 10 guards and 3 carriage drivers... and there's Master Chen and Miss Mingyu as well." She said with a worried expression on her face as she tried to think of a way.

"You can use our rooms..." As she was thinking, a voice came from behind.

As she looked back, she noticed Prince Lan standing there with Royal Tutor Wang.

"We have 15 rooms booked in this hotel, but as you can see... most of our people are dead except the both of us. If the rooms can be of use to you, then it is all good," Prince Lan said to Zhiqing.

"Oh, thank you. I'll pay you the money." Princess Zhiqing said as she thanked Prince Lan

"Oh, You don't need to worry about paying me. Think of it as my apology gift to Master Chen... for upsetting him unintentionally." Prince Lan said with an apologetic look on his face, though he still didn't look at Long Chen out of fear.

Chapter 203 - 203: Attacking The Yu Clan

"Oh, You don't need to worry about paying me. Think of it as my apology gift to Master Chen... for upsetting him unintentionally." Prince Lan said with an apologetic look on his face, though he still didn't look at Long Chen out of fear.

Zhiqing heard his words and didn't say anything anymore. She just looked at Long Chen as if she was asking for his permission.

"Take the rooms." Long Chen said in a casual tone. He gazed at Prince Lan and nodded his head.

"I'm really grateful for your forgiveness." Prince Ling Lan bowed slightly as he thanked Long Chen.

"This is Asmi, She booked the rooms for us here. We have taken two of the rooms, she will arrange for the other rooms to be transferred to you. They are already paid for, so you won't have to go through much hassle" Prince Lan said with a smile before he left with Royal Tutor Wang.

"Thanks for the help." Zhiqing didn't forget to thank Prince Lan before his departure.

"Let's go..." Zhiqing said as she entered the hotel with everyone. They stood at reception and talked things out with the manager.

Everything was handled smoothly and they got 13 additional rooms. Now they had 19 rooms, which were more than enough for them.

Long Chen and Mingyu were given the keys to their own private rooms. Long Chen's room was on the fourth floor, right in between Mingyu and Zhiqing's room.

"Oh right, Do you have a map of the city? He asked the receptionist before leaving.

" Of Course we have a map. Here, you can have it for free." The receptionist said with a smile as she gave him a scroll.

"Thank you."Long Chen thanked her as he left.

"Ahmmm... Why are you in my room? Don't you have to rest?" Long Chen let out as he found Zhiqing sitting on his bed.

"So mean... She is here as well, why can't I" Zhiqing let out as she pointed at Mingyu. She acted as if she was hurt by Long Chen's question.

Long Chen found it tiresome to explain so he just gave up.

He opened the map and started studying it carefully.

"Hmm.. so the Royal clan is in the northern part of the city. The Yu clan is there as well. The Glorious Blossom Sect is in the center of the city." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the map.

"Yup... Glorious Blossom Sect is the place where the Joint Sect entrance exam will happen. Other sects will be present there as well." Zhiqing added with a bright smile.

"Tomorrow is the sect entrance exam... They will be in the safety of the sect. There will be too many variables at play if I attack them there. As I thought, My best opportunity is to strike them down while they are still in the Yu clan." Long Chen said with a determined face.

"Are you seriously going to infiltrate the Yu clan? It's really dangerous!" Zhiqing hurriedly said to Long Chen with a worried look on her face.

"Don't worry, I will be fine." Long Chen responded with a smile.

"When are we going to infiltrate the Yu clan?" Mingyu said with a face filled with determination.

'Tonight... And it's not we, it's me. Only I will be going." Long Chen said as he looked back at Mingyu.

"Why??? As you know, I'm not weak." Mingyu asked with an unconvinced look on her face.

"It's not about weak or strong. The thing is that I'm good at stealth. It will be easier for me to do it alone. And if I am alone, I can easily escape if I am in a dangerous situation." Long Chen calmly explained to her.

"Don't worry, If I need help, I am sure that you will know about it. You can come to my rescue then" Long Chen chuckled as he said to Mingyu.

"Though I'm sure that if there comes a need for offense, I'll kill them all before you even get there" He continued as he gazed at Mingyu with eyes that were filled with self-confidence.

"Alright, I'll be near the clan, waiting for your signal if you need help." Mingyu nodded her head unwillingly.

"That's like a good girl." Long Chen said as he patted her head with a smile on his lips.

"Hey!! I am older than you. You can't treat me like a little girl." Mingyu protested as her face turned crimson. It made her look even cuter

"hahaha...yea I know." Long Chen smiled as he lay down on the bed.

"Tonight is going to be a long night." He said with a thoughtful look on his face as he looked at the roof.

He rested till it was 11 pm at night before he got up. He had already sent Mingyu and Zhiqing away from her room.

He walked towards the balcony of his room as he gazed at the moon in the sky.

He looked around and as he had expected, the streets were empty.

"Time to get to work. You people have lived long enough... Time to balance things out." Long Chen muttered as he jumped out of the window.

He landed on the street. Long Chen walked in the direction of the Yu clan, as he left a large crater behind at the location where he landed.

"Orion!" Long Chen muttered softly.

A shadow escaped from his ring as it took the form of the Devil Hunter beast in front of Long Chen.

"Let's get to work little guy. And move fast, Make sure that no one is able to see us on this dark night." Long Chen said as he patted the head of Orion.

Orion moved like a blur as he advanced towards the Yu clan on the Northern side of the Lectin City. The hotel they were staying at was on the Eastern side of the Xuan Kingdom. With the speed of Orion, they reached the Yu clan in only an hour.

Long Chen made sure to use his divine sense throughout as he looked out for any potential guards. Wherever there was a guard ahead, he used his Law of illusion on him and made it seem like everything was alright as they passed from right beside the guards.

"Good work Orion. You can go rest." Long Chen said with a smile as he got off of the Devil Hunter beast. Orion went back to his storage ring, leaving only Long Chen behind.

Long Chen was amazed as he saw the Yu Clan's building. It was nearly twice the size of the Long Clan. There were windows in the mansion, but all those windows were covered by something that looked like a barrier.

"Must be some kind of barrier to protect against thieves and intruders..." Long Chen muttered as he looked at the windows.

There were 4 guards at the entrance but what troubled Long Chen the most was the fact that the guards weren't standing at the corners of the entrance but stood right in front of it, at a proper distance from each other.

The three meters wide door was fully covered by four guards.

"I was hoping to get a peaceful entry, but it looks like that's not going to be possible." He muttered with a disappointed look on his face.

He covered his face with the black mask that he had bought long ago. The same mask that he used when he pretended to be an Earth Realm cultivator at the Alchemy hall.

"If violence is what is needed, then violence is what I shall do." Long Chen muttered as he began walking towards the guards.

The guards were standing in the silence of the night when they noticed a masked man coming towards them. They immediately became alert.

"Stop right there!!! Take off your mask and tell us your purpose of coming here!!!" One of the guards let out in a threatening manner as he looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen was already at the 20 meters range of the guards by then. He heard their words but he didn't stop.

"You!!!" The guards began taking out their weapons, but Long Chen disappeared right in front of their eyes.

The guards became stunned as they frantically looked everywhere but they couldn't find Long Chen in the whole street.

"What was..." One of the guards was about to say something when a pair of hands appeared from behind him and closed his mouth. He fell to the ground lifeless as his neck was twisted.

Before the other guards could react, their heads were separated off their bodies by the masked man who strangely enough stood in front of them now.

They died without making much noise as their lifeless bodies fell to the ground.

"I've killed 4 more, yet I feel no remorse." Long Chen shook his head lightly as he gazed at the bodies.

"Have I become immune to the deaths of those that are not related to me?" Long Chen wondered as he opened the door of the Yu Clan mansion and entered inside.

Chapter 204 - 204: If Only

"Have I become immune to the deaths of those that are not related to me?" Long Chen wondered as he opened the door of the Yu Clan mansion and entered inside.

Long Chen stepped inside the mansion and walked through the long hallway. There was a big garden at the end of the hallway. The garden only had grass and plants, but there were no trees as far as his eyes could see.

There were walkways made of tiles in the garden that diverged in various directions at multiple points. Long Chen looked around the garden as he grew confused. The structure of this building was one of the most confusing that he had seen.

There were around 25 paths and each path led to a different hallway.

"It's gonna be much more difficult than I had initially assumed. I need to find someone to lead me to them." Long Chen muttered to himself as he looked around.

He finally chose a pathway and stepped towards the hallway it led to. Long Chen entered the hallway as he continued forth.

Soon, he was outside the second hallway and things finally started looking much more normal.

There was no roof in this area as the shine of the starry sky fell directly on Long Chen.

This place was so big, as far as his eyes could see, there was no ending at sight. Long Chen was able to see many courtyards in this place.

He randomly chose the nearest courtyard as he walked towards it, but he suddenly sensed danger. He disappeared from his position as he appeared 3 meters away from where he was initially standing.

As he looked back, he was able to see a knife stuck at the ground right where he was standing previously.

He heard the sound of footsteps coming from nearby. He looked in that direction with a serious look on his face.

There was a single person that stood there. He looked to be in his early thirties. The person had a good looking face that looked somewhat feminine.

His hair was pitch black. His greyish eyes suited the grey robe that he was wearing. He held a knife in each of his hands.

"You must be a guard here." Long Chen let out from behind his mask.

"Yup... and you must be a thief. I must say, you are one stupid fella. You dared to infiltrate the Yu clan to steal something, You must have a death wish." The black-haired man said with a mocking smile on his face.

"Tell me one thing... Since you know that I'm an intruder, Why don't you alert others about my presence?" Long Chen asked with interest.

"Why should I? You are just a pesky little insect. I can take care of you easily, I don't need to disturb others' sleep for that." The black-haired man chuckled as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Sharp words for someone who's about to die." Long Chen said in a heavy tone.

"Oh? How about... YOU DIE FIRST!" The black-haired man said as he threw a knife at Long Chen, as the knife left his hand, he threw another knife to the right and the third knife to the left.

He tried to block Long Chen's all possible escapes as he kept throwing more knives at varying angles.

Long Chen watched the knives coming at him with a smile. He disappeared from his spot as the knife reached near him and again appeared in the same spot as it seemed like the knife passed through him.

"How???" The black-haired man exclaimed in shock, but in his shock, he failed to notice a spatial portal appearing behind him. The portal had a diameter of only 10 centimeters.

A knife escaped from that portal and stabbed the black-haired man's heart from behind. He grunted in pain but another portal appeared behind his neck. A similar thing happened as a knife escaped from the portal and penetrated his neck.

Four more portals appeared. One behind his right arm, one behind his left arm and the remaining two behind both his legs. Four more knives escaped from these portals as his hands and legs were penetrated.

"You should've called for help when you had the chance. You should know that I have killed many that were even stronger than you. You think as a Peak

Gold Realm Cultivator, you stood a chance?" Long Chen let out as he stood near the body of the black-haired cultivator.

After waking up from his enlightenment of space law just a few days ago, Long Chen was already at the Tenth Stage of the Gold Core Realm, but his actual strength was much higher.

Long Chen turned back and again began walking towards the closest courtyard as he left the lifeless body behind

"I should've asked him before killing him." Long Chen muttered as he shook his head in disappointment.

He was moving in the silence of the night when he noticed another person.

It was a guard that looked like he was making his normal rounds. A smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he started moving towards the guard.

His eyes began shining with a misty light as he gazed at the guard. The guard noticed him walking towards him as his expressions changed to a frightened one.

"Chief! Wh...what are you doing here?" The guard let out as he gazed at Long Chen.

In his eyes, Long Chen looked like the black-haired man that Long Chen had just killed.

Long Chen nodded his head as he walked closer to him.

"Tell me something." Long Chen asked as he looked in his eyes.

"Y...yes chief!" The guard replied excitedly.

"Do you perform your duty well?" He asked as he looked at the guard with a serious look on his face.

"Yes, Chief! " The guard replied with a serious look on his face.

"Really? Well... Someone told me that you don't take your work seriously." Long Chen said with a smile. The guard was stunned as he saw a knife appearing in his hand.

A shiver ran through his spine as he gazed at the cold knife in Long Chen's hand.

"N...No Chief! I promise that I take my duty very seriously." The guard hurriedly replied.

"Oh? Let me test your seriousness. Tell me the place that we must always protect under any situation, even when we are faced with death!" Long Chen inquired with a smile.

"The ancestral hall!" The guard earnestly replied.

"Good. Now tell me the place where our newly arrived guests from the Northern Moon Empire are staying... Did you check that place?" Long Chen asked seriously.

"Ahh... What are you talking about, chief?" The guard asked with a confused look on his face.

"Where do the people that came with Miss Ling from the Thunder Giant Sect stay?" Long Chen asked again.

"What are you talking about, chief? Is this a trick question?" The guard said with a doubtful look on his face.

"Answer me!" Long Chen let out as he increased the pitch of his voice.

"Miss Ling stays in her courtyard in the Central Region of our clan. As for the people that came with her, they aren't here anymore." The guard replied hurriedly.

"Wh... where did they go!!!" Long Chen let out with a stunned look on his face.

"Chief? Whoever complained to you about me, clearly don't know what they were talking about. I'm not as stupid. It's impossible for me to not know about such important news. They stay in the Glorious Blossom Sect as guests. They will be spending the night there." The guard replied as if he was answering his teacher.

Long Chen fell in deep thought as soon as he heard his words.

"Huh... Things just got a lot more complicated." Long Chen muttered with a wry smile.

"Hmm? Did you say something, chief?" The guard asked as he saw Long Chen mumble.

"Hmm, nothing. You did good." Long Chen said as he walked closer to the person.

He extended his hands towards the guard and placed them on both his cheeks.

"Ahh...chief?" The guard let out with a doubtful look on his face when suddenly his eyes opened wide. His head was twisted as his next broke. He fell on the floor lifeless.

'Minor Illusion... Such an amazing skill, that I received from the Orb of Illusion Law. If only it didn't have such limitations, It would be such an overpowered skill.' Long Chen shook his head lightly as he thought.

He turned back and began walking towards the exit.

He left just as silently as he came.

Three hours after he left, a loud scream resounded in the place. Finally, the body of the dead guards were found. There was an atmosphere of fear in the whole clan.

The patriarch and all the elders got on high alert as they began looking for intruders. Soon enough, the bodies of the 4 guards at the entrance were discovered.

They searched for the whole night but no sign of the intruder was ever found.

While they are searching for the intruder with full force, Long Chen was lost in deep thoughts in his bed, as he tried to come up with a plan for tomorrow. He didn't want anything to go wrong as the situation could get dangerous if a problem occurred.

Long Chen didn't sleep the whole night as he tried to create a plan with less loopholes.

Morning arrived as the whole Lectin City began bustling with excitement. Today was finally the day for the long-awaited joint entrance exams.

Those who had their family members participating in the exams were hopeful and prayed for the success of their loved ones.

Chapter 205 - 205: Potential

Morning arrived as the whole Lectin City began bustling with excitement. Today was finally the day of the long-awaited joint entrance exams.

Those who had their family members participating in the exams were hopeful and prayed for the success of their loved ones.

Those who didn't have anyone close to them participating were excited as well, as they would be able to see so many heavenly geniuses compete against each other and showcase their skills.

"Hurry Hurry! The Entrance Exam is going to start soon! We will miss it if you make us late!" A wife said to her husband as she eagerly waited outside for him to get ready.

"Hey, my nephew is participating in the exam! He is definitely going to get selected by the Glorious Blossom Sect." A bulky man said to his friends as he continued walking towards the Glorious Blossom Sect.

The Sect Entrance Exam was the talk of the whole town. No matter if they were old or young, everyone was talking about it.

"We are finally here. It took us so long, but we finally reached our destination." An 18-19-year-old girl stood in front of the entrance of the Glorious Blossom Sect. She had flaming red hair that came down to her shoulders.

"The journey was long, but it was pretty fun." One of the two girls standing behind her said with a smile.

"Yea, It's my first time coming out of the Kingdom. The journey sure was fun." The Red-haired girl replied with a smile. A few more people stood near her as they looked around.

"All of you are going to participate in the Sect Entrance Exam. I'll wish you all good luck. Though I must warn you that this whole thing could get pretty dangerous on occasions. So if there ever comes a situation when you're in danger, I want you to give up on the battle for selection. Your life is more important!" One of the two old men said as he looked back at them.

"Mei and Yue... You two won't be participating in the exams, so you must stay close to us." The white-haired man said as he gazed at the girls.

"Yes, Patriarch!" Both of them said in unison as they nodded their heads.

'My dear grandson, I hope you are here.' The white-haired man thought as he looked at the doors of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

If he knew what his grandson was actually planning to do, It wasn't certain if he still would've wished for the same.

He was the patriarch of the Long Clan, Long Ren. With him stood the Grand Elder of the Long Clan along with Long Xue Ying, Xue, Mei and other kids from the clan that were selected to participate in the exams.

"Oh, interesting. So the patriarch of Long Clan came himself to escort the kids. Is Senior Ren that confident in them?" A feminine voice came from behind.

Patriarch Long Ren and Grand Elder Long Mu turned back to look at the person that had just spoken.

"Oh? If it isn't Little Jinjing. As expected, you are the one that was entrusted with bringing the Royals." Long Ren chuckled as he looked at the person.

It was a woman. The woman looked as if she was in her early thirties. Her deep blue eyes had a unique shine in them that attracted the attention of all those that gazed in her eyes.

She was wearing a blue cultivator robe with a moon symbol on the chest area. There was a scabbard behind her back, inside which rested a heavy sword.

"Of course. As the chief of the Royal Guards, it is my duty to ensure the safety of the Royal clan members." The woman said with an earnest expression on her face.

"Hahaha... You're just as serious as always." Long Ren said as he gazed at the girl. The girl refused to respond to his comment.

"Xue Ying...I finally got to see you after so long." One of the boys standing behind the blue-eyed woman let out as he gazed at the girl.

"Third Prince Yue Ding, You are here as well." Long Xue Ying let out a casual smile on her face.

"Of Course I would be here. I came here to join a sect." Third Prince Yue Ding said with a bright smile on his face.

There were 4 more people that stood with him. They were the Second Prince Yue Luan, the First Princess Yue Miao, the third Princess Yue Fei, and the Second Princess.

"There are only 5 with you? The Crown Prince...Ahem ...I mean First Prince Yue Ming didn't come with you?" Grand Elder Long Mu let out with a stunned look on his face.

"You know that Prince Ming has an aloof nature. He left on his own without us. He wanted to travel on his own." Jinjing replied to the grand elder.

"Brother might already be here. I'm sure we will see him." The second Princess commented in between.

'He isn't with them... Looks like he's still missing.' Second Prince Yue Luan thought as he couldn't find Long Chen.

The people from the Qin clan and the Gu clan were also there, although at different sections.

"Everybody!!! Listen carefully! The registration process for the Sect Entrance Exam will begin in a few moments. All the participants are advised to stand in lines at the registration counters. "

"You will go through a small test at the counters to get your participation badge! Those who fail aren't allowed to participate. Those who are older than 25 years of age can't participate in the exams. Anyone found creating a disturbance or trying to cheat his way through will be punished accordingly!"

A loud voice was heard everywhere. No one knew where this voice came from.

"Someone must be using an artifact to make their voice reach everywhere." Jinjing looked around as she heard that voice.

"Unlike previous years, Since this is a joint entrance exam and the turnout is so big, only the guardians of the selected candidates will be allowed entry within the premise of the sect." The voice again replied.

As soon as the voice was heard, there was a loud uproar amongst the people. Those who came here only to watch the spectacle couldn't help but be disappointed as they heard this announcement.

Although they were upset, they didn't voice their complaints as they were in the vicinity of the Glorious Blossom Sect. They didn't dare to complain about the way the sect handled matters. Though most of the people still didn't leave and stayed outside the sects in the hopes of getting entry.

"Tell me your name and age. Place your hands on the orb to your left."

A middle-aged man was sitting on one of the counters at the entrance of the sect. There were around 10 such counters there. Each one of them a long line of people in front of them.

Each counter had two sets of orbs placed on them.

"My name is Sunli. I'm 25 years old." The person standing in front of the first counter replied.

He placed his hand on the orb to his left. One after another dots kept appearing on the orbs. It stopped when 27 dots appeared on the orb.

"Do you think that the Glorious Blossom Sect is stupid? Or are you the stupid one? It was clearly said in the announcements that only cultivators younger than 25 years of age are allowed to participate." The middle-aged man said in a heavy tone as he looked at the boy in front of him. This man was one of the Elders of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"I...I... I am really 25 years old!" The boy replied in a hasty manner.

"Poor fool... He must've come from a poor family of a Second Rank Empire. He doesn't even know the basics about the entrance exams. The orb he placed his hands on, is used to know the real age of a person. It has been used in previous exams as well. Almost everyone knows about it now." A person standing behind him couldn't help but chuckle as he saw this scene unfold.

"Guards!!! Take this person away and break both his hands. A deserving punishment for trying to cheat his way through." The Elder said in a loud voice.

A few of the guards hurriedly came running as they took the person away forcefully.

"I'm Yue Ding. I am 18 years old" Third Prince Yue Ding stood in front of one of the counters.

He placed his hands on the orb to his left and 18 dots appeared in the orb.

"Hmph. Now place your hand on the orb to your right." The Elder said as he looked at Yue Ding.

"Ahh... I apologize for asking this, but it is my first time participating. Can you tell me what this second orb is used for?" The 6th person in the line asked the person standing in front of him.

"The second orb? It's known as the Aptitude orb. These orbs are used to judge a person's potential. But since the orbs that the sect possesses are only low-level aptitude orbs, they can only measure the talent up to grade 7. Even if a person had the potential which is higher than grade 7, this orb will still show him only as a grade 7. The orb will show one of 7 colors when someone places their hands on it. Those are Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Blue, Indigo, and Violet... While Violet is the highest grade 7, Red is the Lowest Grade 1." The person in front of him explained to him in a kind manner.

"Grade 7? Isn't that something already pretty incredible? I don't think a person with a potential higher than that can even exist!" The girl who had asked the boy in front of him exclaimed in a shocked manner.

"Exactly! I heard that even the strongest of Empires only have grade 7 talents. A grade 8 talent would be considered a once in a millennia genius even in the Empires." The boy in the front nodded his head as he replied.

Yu Ding took a deep breath as he placed his hands on the orb.

Chapter 206 - 206: Once In A Millennia Genius

"Exactly! I heard that even the strongest of Empires only have grade 7 talents. A grade 8 talent would be considered a once in a millennia genius even in the Empires." The boy in the front nodded his head as he replied.

Yu Ding took a deep breath as he placed his hands on the orb.

As soon as he placed his hands on the orb, the orb started shining with a red light, which soon changed to an orange light, then to yellow. Even after waiting for a few seconds, the color of the orb didn't change further.

"Grade three talent... You can enter. Here is your participation badge. Keep it with care. If you lose it, you won't be allowed to participate further." The Elder said in a stern manner.

"Yes sir," Yue Ding said as he left. He showed the guards his participation badge and easily entered inside.

"Only a Grade 1 talent? You think our sect is a trash can?" Another Elder ruthlessly scolded a boy who had his hand on the second orb. The orb was shining in a weak red light.

"Hahaha... only a Grade one talent. He's Truly a trash!" The people behind that person started laughing at the boy.

"Silence!" The elder let out loudly. Soon everyone went silent.

"You can't participate in the exams. Leave." The elder said to the boy with an angry look on his face.

The boy left the line with a disappointed expression on his face.

As everyone was going through the process of registration, a person silently entered the vicinity of the sect.

The person wore a black mask on his face. His height was around 5 feet 11 inches. He wore a pitch-black cultivator robe that came down to his knees.

There was a scary aura surrounding that person which made him look really strong, but when the older cultivators looked at his cultivation, they couldn't help but be shocked as they could only see his cultivation as the 4th stage of Gold Core Realm.

"Who's that guy? There's Such a strong aura surrounding him as if he were an Earth Realm Cultivator, but he is only at the 4th stage of Gold Core Realm."

People couldn't help but wonder about the identity of the masked person.

With him stood another masked person who was wearing a white mask. The second person was clearly a girl.

The masked man was Long Chen who had used his heaven's shroud to lower his cultivation while the masked girl was Mingyu.

"I'll get the participation badge, you can gain entry as my guardian. But you must leave the sect when I signal you to. Alright? Also, maintain your distance from Zhiqing and anyone related to her. We can't let them get involved in this." Long Chen told Mingyu who stood beside him.

"Alright." Mingyu nodded her head.

Long Chen walked forth and stood in one of the lines. Just as he stood in the line, another person came and stood behind him.

Long Chen stood in the line as it kept shortening albeit at a really slow pace.

Out of boredom, he looked back but his eyes couldn't help but open wide with shock as he gazed at the person who was standing behind him, thankfully he had a mask on and his expressions were safely hidden.

"Hmm?" Long Xue Ying let out with surprise on her face. She had just come to stand on the line and didn't know the person who was standing in front of her, but that person suddenly turned back.

His mask couldn't help but surprise her as she didn't know why someone would wear a mask on the Entrance Exams.

Long Chen couldn't help but stand still with shock.

"Ahmm... do you need something?" Long Xue Ying said with a confused look on her face.

Long Chen hurriedly recovered as he turned back without replying.

'That was weird...' Long Xue Ying couldn't help but wonder as a strange look appeared on her face. She decided to give up on thinking about it.

'She is here... Did the other come with her? I can't let them get involved in this.' Long Chen fell in deep thought.

The lines kept shortening as people kept getting tested. Those who had a talent of grade 2 or above were given participation badge while those with grade 1 kept getting sent back.

"Name and age?" One of the elders asked a person standing in front of him.

"I am Yue Zhang. I'm 20 years old." The boy replied in a gentle manner. He had sky blue hair that came down to his waist. His deep blue eyes matched quite well with his hair. He placed his hand on the first orb.

"Now place your hand on the second orb." The Elder said in a casual manner.

"Yes." Yue Zhang placed his hand on the second orb. As soon as the orb stopped changing colors, a smile finally appeared on the elder's face.

"Did you see that! Where is that guy from?"

"Amazing! It's a grade 5 talent!"

"Blue! It's a blue color. First 5th-grade talent of this selection exam! "

People behind him couldn't help but talk amongst themselves as surprised gasps were heard. Even the people standing in the nearby lines were stunned.

"Hmph. So what if he's a grade 5? There were quite a few grade 5 in the previous exams as well." Some people snorted as if this was nothing to be impressed about.

"Pretty good. I was starting to feel like we had run out of talents this year when you appeared. You will be a good addition to our sect. Best of luck for the next tests." The Elder finally smiled as he said to Yue Zhang. He gave him his participation badge. There was something different in his participation badge though. The participation badge had a star in it.

"Ah...Elder, can I ask what this star is for?" Yue Zhang couldn't help but ask as he looked at his badge carefully.

"Don't worry about it. It's a good thing for you. Just Keep that badge safe. You will know it's advantages soon enough." The Elder calmly explained to him.

"Alright. Thanks for the explanation, Senior." Yue Zhang said with a smile as he left the line and walked towards the entrance.

"Next! " The Elder's expression soon turned serious as he gazed at the next person.

The next person in the line walked forward towards the elder.

"Wait, Isn't that the Eldest Young Miss of the Si Clan? One of the 5 Grand clans of the Xuan Kingdom?"

"Yea, she should at least be a grade 4 talent. She can even be a grade 5 or higher... At the young age of 21, she is already at the 3rd stage of the Gold core realm. I'm sure she will shock everyone!"

Those who were from the first rank kingdom couldn't help but whisper amongst themselves as they recognized the person.

It was a girl. Her dark green hair made her stand out amidst the large crowd. She couldn't help but smile with pride as she heard the praise of nearby people.

Those who were from the second rank Kingdom didn't know much about that person but from the words and praises of the nearby people, their expectations grew high as well.

Even the Elder became hopeful, though he didn't let it show on his face. His face looked as stern as ever.

"Si Jing...21 years old." The girl said as she stood in front of the elder with a confident smile on her face.

She placed her hand on the first orb and then went on to the second orb. As she touched it, the crowd again got noisy. People couldn't help but be amazed at the blue light that was shining in the orb.

'This day is turning out to be pretty good! Two grade 5 talents one after another.' The Elder thought as a smile finally appeared on his face. She couldn't help but smile with pride

'Hmph, I'm a grade 5 talent, the peak grade at the exams. There's no way a grade 6 can appear. It's finally my turn to shine.' The girl thought as the elder gave her the participation badge. Her badge had one star as well.

Just as she held the badge, Suddenly there was a louder commotion at the nearby counter.

"G...g...grade 6 !!! It's a grade 6!"

"A once in a millennia genius had appeared again! He might be selected by an Empire as well, just like Miss Ling! "

"Yea! There are people from the Thunder Giant Sect here! I heard that a grade 6 talent is a rare find even in the Empire. I'm sure he will be taken to the Northern Moon Empire."

"Prince Lu, I must say that you amazed me. I had guessed that you would have good talent since you're the Crown Prince of Xuan Kingdom, but I never expected that it would be so amazing!" The Elder stood up with a big smile on his face.

"Thanks for the praise, Elder Jinliang," Prince Lu said in a calm manner.

"Good... Good... you have a good mindset that isn't phased by success! You will go a long way. King Bai is really lucky to have a son like you." Elder Jinliang said with a wide smile on his face.

"I'm not that good, Elder Jinliang. Everything I have is because of my father and his teachings." Prince Lu said with a confident smile.

"Can you hurry? I don't have all day to stand here " A voice came from behind. Suddenly there was pin-drop silence everywhere.

Chapter 207 - 207: Impossible!

"Can you hurry? I don't have all day to stand here " A voice came from behind. Suddenly there was pin-drop silence everywhere.

"That guy...he must have a death wish." People behind him talked in whispers as they gazed at him with shock.

Prince Lu's face twitched as he turned back to look at the person who had just spoken.

"Preposterous!!! Who do you think you are to talk like that in front of me?" The Elder roared loudly in anger. His voice sounded in a far distance.

"I apologize for interrupting your conversation Elder, but as I heard, this was a registration counter, not a keep praising counter. There are hundreds of people behind me in the line. If you like, you can praise him to your heart's content after the registration is over." The person casually replied to Elder's scolding. He had a black mask covering his face.

"Elder, this friend is right. I shouldn't waste other's time. I'm sure that there might be people even more talented somewhere in the line." Prince Lu said before Elder Jinliang could say anything.

Elder Jinliang looked at the masked boy in the line as he barely controlled his anger.

"Here is your participation badge. Best of luck for further tests." Elder Jinliang gave Prince Lu his participation badge. This participation badge had two stars on it and unlike other badges, this one was golden instead of the regular silver.

"Thank you Elder." Prince Lu said as he moved to the side. He stood apart from the line but he still didn't leave the place.

'Those who don't care for other's talents are either fools or geniuses. I have a feeling that you can only be a fool. Let's see your trash talent. Won't I look like a good person if I comfort a trash who just behaved so badly to me? Such a good opportunity is presented to me.' Prince Lu thought as he gazed at the masked boy with interest.

'He's a 4th stage Gold Core Realm Cultivator. He must be older than 24 at the least.' Elder Jinliang thought as he tried to see Long Chen's cultivation.

"Tian Shen... I'm 16 years old." Long Chen said to the Elder as he stood in front of him.

"Do you take this selection exam for a joke!!! Did you not hear the announcement that the person found creating a disturbance in the premise will be punished? How dare you lie to an elder about your age! " Elder Jinliang finally couldn't control his anger as he yelled at Long Chen.

"Guards! Take this person and break both his hands!" The Elder ordered immediately.

The guard heard the order as he hurriedly walked towards Long Chen but as soon as Long Chen's sharp gaze fell on him, he stood still in his place. He wasn't sure why but his feet stopped moving. He felt as if a predator was looking at his prey, but that feeling soon disappeared as Long Chen stopped looking at him.

"Can you tell me what I did wrong?" Long Chen asked in a straightforward manner.

"You very well know what you did! You lied to me about your age!" The Elder replied as if he was mocking him.

"Oh? I didn't know that the Elder had magical eyes that could see everyone's age. Can I ask why Elder is keeping that orb there? You don't need an orb that can tell someone's age, you are enough for that m." Long Chen chuckled lightly as he replied.

Elder Jinlian's eyes opened wide in shock as he heard Long Chen's reply. His face couldn't help but turn red.

"Very Well! Place your hand on the orb. Let everyone see your real age. Though I must say that this time you won't escape with just your hands being broken. I will personally make sure that both your hands and feet are crushed for lying and wasting everyone's time." The Elder said as a malicious smile appeared in his face. He looked eager to punish Long Chen.

On the sidelines, Prince Lu was smiling at Long Chen's misfortune.

"This guy ... he doesn't know when to quit."

"Yea, he is able to get his arms and legs broken. He's a fourth stage Gold Core Realm cultivator. It's impossible for him to be 16."

"He's really stupid, isn't he?"

Long Chen had attracted everyone's attention. Even Si Jing had come there as she stood near Prince Lu.

Long Xue Ying stood behind him and couldn't help but shake her head at the misfortune of the guy in front of her.

Long Chen didn't say anything and simply placed his hand on the first orb. As soon as his hands touched the orb, Elder Jinliang stood up shocked from his seat as his chair fell to the ground.

He wasn't that shocked even when Prince Lu turned out to be a 6th-grade talent as he was now.

"Impossible!!! A 16-year-old 4th stage Gold Core Realm cultivator??? What is this impossible speed?" Elder Jinliang exclaimed loudly.

Even the Elders at nearby counters stood up as they heard his words.

"A 16-year-old kid at the 4th stage of Gold core realm? Where is he from? Why did I never hear about him! "

"He's amazing. Before him, the youngest cultivator to break through to the gold core realm was Miss Ling when she was just 16 years old! But this boy... Not only did he break through to the gold core realm, he is already at the 4th stage!"

People kept talking amongst themselves with shock on their faces.

Prince Lu who was waiting for Long Chen to make fun of himself was stunned as his mouth remained open. Si Jing more or less had the same expression as Prince Lu.

"Young Man...I apologize for talking rudely before. I hope you can forgive me." Elder Jinliang said with a fawning expression. The boy in front of him was a genius that was never seen before. Although he hadn't checked his talent, his expectations were already at the roof.

A round table was placed in a secret room with 5 chairs placed around the table.

There were five people sitting at the table as they gazed at a mirror. The mirror was used by them to check on the registration counters to take a sneak peek at this year's candidates.

Right now, the mirror was showing Elder Jinliang and a masked boy standing in front of him.

"Interesting... Someone with such a scary cultivation speed. I'm sure this kid will become someone great in the future." One of the persons sitting in the chair said. He was the Sect Master of Earthly Mountain Sect.

"Indeed... But there might be a good chance that he consumed some heavenly elixir or a mysterious herb to gain such cultivation." The Sect Master of Glorious Blossom Sect said in a calm manner.

"Whatever being the reason for his cultivation, it's a fact that this guy has a head start compared to others. I wouldn't mind taking him in our sect if he doesn't have a talent lower than grade 3." The Sect Master of the Floating Cloud sect said in a light tone.

"I would take him in, even if he had a grade 2 talent. Even luck has a strength of its own. He would need extreme luck to find such a miraculous herb." The Sect Master of West Warriors Sect said with a smile.

Only the Sect Master of the Striking Sword sect was silent as he gazed at the mirror.

"He...he... there's no way he can get to the 4th stage of Gold Core Realm at such a young age! Even a grade 7 talent wouldn't be able to achieve this feat! He must have consumed some extremely rare resources to gain such cultivation!" Prince Lu let out with a shocked look on his face. In his shock, he failed to control his voice which was heard by many people nearby.

"Right! That makes sense!"

"So he just used resources! How lucky!"

"hahaha...And here I thought that he was a genius. Turns out that he is just an over-privileged fella"

Even Elder Jinliang frowned at the possibility.

'It makes sense! In my excitement, I forgot to consider this possibility! There's still a chance that he might have a bad potential!' Elder Jinliang thought as a frown appeared on his face.

"Place your hand on the second orb!" He said as he gazed at the masked boy.

"Hmm... Long Chen let out in a casual manner as he extended his hand towards the second orb.

Everyone in the crowd watched the scene with extreme interest. Even the Sect's staff had their heart beating faster as they waited to know Long Chen's potential.

Long Chen finally placed his hand on the orb. 1...2...3... seconds kept passing but the orb didn't light up.

As everyone was about to give up on their expectations, the orb finally started shining. It shone with a red light... then an orange light... then a yellow light. Everyone was waiting with eager breaths for the lights to change further but it stopped at yellow.

"Hah...A grade 3 talent...I was right. He's just a person who relied on resources to gain cultivation. His talent is merely at a Grade 3." Prince Lu chuckled as he gazed at Long Chen with a mocking look on his face.

"Che... so much for expectations.." Si Jing shook her head as she turned back to leave.

"Only a grade 3...Hmph...Here... take this participation badge. You can participate in the exams." Elder Jinliang said but his expressions were not so friendly anymore.

He was about to pick a grade 3 participation badge when suddenly there were gasps heard in the field. The field that was noisy just a moment ago turned completely silent.

Chapter 208 - 208: Invitation

He was about to pick a grade 3 participation badge when suddenly there were gasps heard in the field. The field that was noisy just a moment ago turned completely silent.

Elder Jinliang couldn't help but frown as he wondered why everyone was so silent. He turned his gaze upwards. His eyes opened wide as he began stuttering.

Inside the Secret Room, all 5 of the Sect Masters had stood up as they gazed at the mirror in front of them with shock. They couldn't believe their eyes at all.

They looked at each other's faces. They could easily guess each other's thoughts.

"This... this is..." Prince Lu stuttered as he gazed at Long Chen.

"...a grade 7 talent..." Si Jing completed his sentence as she looked at Long Chen with a defeated look on her face. Till now, She was already having a hard time trying to trail after a grade 6 talent, Prince Lu, but now, a grade 7 appeared which was even more of an impossible mountain to keep up to.

"Is this really happening?"

"A grade 6 talent appeared in our Kingdom? "

"So amazing! If he is cultivated well, Our Kingdom might finally have a Sky Realm Cultivator!"

"That's going to be really tough. I'm sure that he will be snatched away by an Empire, just like Miss Ling. Though there's one benefit from it, The Northern Moon Empire will be so concerned about a grade 7 talent, they might not notice a grade 6 talent like Prince Lu. We can at least have that."

People kept commenting in the background. Prince Lu's face twitched as he heard the last person's sentence. He looked in that direction to find who said it, but it was so crowded that he couldn't find out who said it.

A few inner sect disciples of the Glorious Blossom Sect came out of the sect to watch the registration for the Exams and managed to see Long Chen taking the test.

"A grade 7 talent... Too bad that he will be snatched away by the Northern Moon Empire." An inner sect disciple shook his head as he gazed at Long Chen.

"I don't think our Sect Master will leave him so easily. He is not a grade 6 talent like Miss Ling! He is a Grade 7 talent! A talent that is rare in even the Northern Moon Empire! He's worth the risk as he can easily become a sky realm cultivator." Another inner sect disciple commented as he looked at his friend.

"Such wishful thinking. Do you think our sect has the strength to go against any single sect of the Northern Moon Empire?" His friend chuckled as he said.

"What the sect will do depends on the Sect Master. Although I believe that we should try to keep him for ourselves, even if the sect decides to give him to the Northern Moon Empire, that won't be so bad either."

"If that boy joins our sect, our sect would have the right to ask for benefits from the Northern Moon Empire. The appearance of this boy... It's beneficial for us in every way possible as our sect will profit."

"Who do you think the Sect Master will send to invite him?"

Those disciples kept talking amongst themselves as they stood at a corner.

Elder Jinliang gazed forward and his world turned upside down. The orb that was stuck at yellow till a few moments ago was now shining with brightly shining violet light.

"A...a grade 7 talent." He stuttered as he gazed at Long Chen with a disbelieving look.

Inside the Secret Room, all 5 Sect Masters used their Transmission Jade as they sent messages to their trusted subordinates. After doing it, they sat down on their seats.

"Looks like you were wrong about that boy. His high Cultivation is not because of any rare resources but because of his supreme talent. You blamed

him falsely." Sect Master of Striking Sword Sect finally said something as he gazed at the Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"What are you talking about? I never said that Tian Shen received his cultivation because of resources. I only said that there was a possibility. Although I must say that I'm quite happy that it's not the case. He would be a good addition to my Sect." Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said with a slight smile on his face.

"Aren't you counting your chickens before your eggs even hatched? He hasn't chosen your sect... It will all depend on his choice." Sect Master of the Striking Sword Sect responded in a sharp tone.

"You will see." The Sect Master of Glorious Blossom Sect said as he again shifted his focus to the mirror.

"Ah... little friend Shen...I apologize for my rudeness. I hope that you will forgive me and forget in consideration of my old age. I had eyes, but I couldn't see your shining brilliance." Elder Jinliang said to Long Chen with a fawning smile on his face.

"This boy... he has a Grade 7 talent! How can this be possible! I'm sure that the Sect Master already knows about it. There's no doubt that he will send someone to approach him. There's a good chance that he will make Tian Shen his personal disciple. A grade 7 talent can make anyone's mouth open with shock. The Sect Master will do anything to make him join our sect. If... if this boy asked him to kill me, the Sect Master will kill me without even needing to think twice!" Elder Jinliang thought. He was crying on the inside, but on the outside, he maintained his wide smile.

"Can I have my participation badge?" Long Chen asked in a straightforward manner.

"Ah... right!" Elder Jinliang let out as he hurriedly began looking for the badge. After searching for quite some time, he finally managed to find the badge amidst thousands of badges.

"Here little friend Shen." He said with a smile as he gave Long Chen his participation badge. The badge had an attractive platinum color but it had no stars. There was a full moon carved on the badge.

Long Chen took this badge and turned back without saying anything.

"Are you going to keep standing there or move?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at Prince Lu. Prince Lu moved without thinking as Long Chen passed through.

Long Chen couldn't walk for long before being stopped by another person.

"You must be Tian Shen." The person said as he stood in front of Long Chen. It was a man who looked to be in his early thirties. His shiny black hair was tied to a ponytail.

"Who are you?" Long Chen asked without answering.

"Oh, how rude of me to not introduce myself. I'm Yu Tianhao. I'm a Core Elder of the Glorious Blossom Sect. I came here to invite you on behalf of our Sect Master." Yu Tianhao said with a smile.

'This boy...I couldn't believe it when the sect Master said that a grade 7 talent had appeared in the exams this time. He said that he would be wearing a black mask and that I should do everything to get Tian Shen to join our sect. I can't fail in this mission. This boy joined the sect entrance exams, which means that he wants to join a sect. As the number one sect of the Xuan Kingdom, of course, he would choose us.' Yu Tianhao thought as he gazed at Long Chen happily.

'Yu Tianhao... My father's friend and the father of Ling. I never expected to meet him so soon. I'm not getting a good feeling from him though.

"Why should I join your sect?" Long Chen asked in a straightforward manner.

"Of Course there are a lot of benefits of joining us. Firstly, you won't have to go through the trial process of the sect entrance exam. You would be given the title of Prime Disciple. Your position would be even higher than the Core Disciples. In Fact, you would be equal to Inner Sect Elders directly. " Yu Tianhao told Long Chen.

"You will be allowed to use all our training facilities without needing to spend contribution points. You will be allowed to go to the skill library and choose any skill. Our Sect Master will personally help you train." Yu Tianhao further continued.

``There is no way this kid can deny such temptation." Yu Tianhao thought with a smile.

"Stop... Don't go with that idiot little boy." A voice came from behind which attracted Long Chen's attention.

Long Chen turned back only to find a woman breathing heavily. It looked like she had run here. His curvaceous figure was tightly wrapped by her flaming red dress. Her bountiful breasts were slightly exposed which showed off her fair skin. Her peaks moved up and down as she breathed.

"And who might you be?" Long Chen asked the girl.

"Me? I'm Ju Fenglin. I'm the Elder in charge of the External Affairs department in the West warriors sect. I'm also the Daughter of the Sect Master. I'm here to invite you to our sect! We can give you all that he offered and more! Our Sect Master head found an Earth Grade Meridian Strengthening Pill through extreme luck. Father said that he is willing to give you that pill if you agree to join our sect. You should know that every Earth Grade pill is miraculous... discussant Meridian strengthening pill. It will be rare to find even in the Empires. It can strengthen your meridians and increase your cultivation speed. So what do you say?" The woman said with a seductive smile on her face.

Chapter 209 - 209: Second Stage

"Father said that he is willing to give you that pill if you agree to join our sect. You should know that every Earth Grade pill is miraculous... especially the Meridian strengthening pill. It will be rare to find even in the Empires. It can strengthen your meridians and increase your cultivation speed. So what do you say?" The woman said with a seductive smile on her face.

"Wait! You don't have to be in a hurry to choose, little friend." Another voice interrupted Long Chen's thoughts as another man walked towards him.

He looked at the guy, only to find a yellow-robed man. The man looked slightly older than Yu Tianhao.

"My last name is Ray... You can call me senior brother Ray. I'm the Elder in charge of the Mission Hall in the Floating Cloud Sect. I wish to invite Junior brother Shen to our sect. You will be the head disciple of our Sect and will get all the resources that you desire. Furthermore, our Sect Master has said that he will fulfill your every wish as long as it's not too overboard. Also, he is willing to give you our sect's treasured 'Blood Swallowing Saber'. The weapon is said to be as strong as an Earth Grade artifact." The man said with a pleasant smile as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Hoh... Do you need treasures or real strength, little friend? Cause our Earthly Mountain Sect can provide you with both. What's with the 'Almost as strong as the Earth Grade' saber that the floating Cloud Sect is offering you? We will give you a real Earth Grade Sword!" A loud voice came that attracted Long Chen's attention again. He recognized the 4th person as someone from Earthly Mountain Sect from his robes and words.

"That's not all! You will be allowed to cultivate our Earth Grade Body Cultivation Technique. If you cultivate your body using our body cultivation technique, I'm 200 percent sure that your strength will double at the least." That person continued.

Long Chen was starting to get annoyed at being interrupted again and again. Just as he was about to speak, another person came running.

"Let me guess... You are someone from the Striking Sword Sect and you are here to invite me to join your sect?" Long Chen let out before the 5th person could even speak anything.

"Ahh....yes! I'm Mu Qing. I'm the Core Elder of the Striking Sword Sect. I'm here to invite you to our Striking Sword Sect." The girl responded.

"Yea I guessed as much. And what offer did you come up with?" Long Chen asked casually.

"Our Sect Master wants to take you as his Personal Disciple! You will have the highest status in the sect and will be allowed to use any resources and skills that you may need. Furthermore, Our Sect Master wants to give you his Spirit Cutting Sword as a gift if you choose to join the Sect." The Elder of the Striking Sword Sect continued.

As soon as words escaped her mouth, a loud commotion started in the entire place.

"What? Spirit Cutting Sword? Isn't that his personal weapon?"

"Yea... The weapon that is considered the strongest Weapon in the Xuan Kingdom"

"He must really want that kid to join! For him to give up on his cherished sword! I never could have thought that it was possible!"

Even the Elders present in the place kept talking as shock was clearly visible on their faces.

"That's not fair!" Sect Master of the West Warriors sect let out as he gazed at the Sect Master of Striking Sword Sect.

"You can offer your weapons as well. Too bad that there can only be one strongest offensive weapon in the kingdom." Sect Master of the Striking Sword Sect smirked as he gazed at the sword in his hand.

"It's still not over! It all depends on him now." Sect Master of Glorious Blossom Sect responded in a casual manner though on the inside, he was worrying.

"Although I'm sure that you would join the strongest sect, I'll still ask again. Which Sect do you wish to join, little friend?" Yu Tianhao said with a bright smile.

The other participants couldn't help but gaze at Long Chen with jealousy, while the elders looked hopeful that it will be their sect that he decides to join

"I... I wish to join no sect as of now. Right now, I only want to go through the trials to test myself. I will take the decision on it later." Long Chen said in a carefree manner as if he wasn't worried about anything.

"Ah..." Yu Tianhao looked at him with a blank look on his face.

"You can still go through the trial if you wish to have fun. If you join our sect, we can take care of that." Yu Tianhao recovered as he continued trying to get Long Chen to join their sect.

"We can do that too!" The other 4 representatives said at the same time.

"I said what I had to..." Long Chen said with an annoyed tone as he ignored them and left using the gap in between them.

"Where is the next part of the exam?" He showed the guard his badge and asked.

"Ah...ah..." the guard stuttered as he looked at Yu Tianhao.

"If he wishes to take part in further trials, then respect his wishes. We can wait for his decision at the end of the exam. Take him to the "Formation Trial Hall" for the next section of the trials.

"Yes Elder!" The guard said as he personally escorted Long Chen. Although Long Chen wished to gaze at Long Xue Ying once before leaving, he didn't look back in order to not make anyone suspicious.

Although Long Chen left, everyone was still awed and shocked by his performance.

The registration continued and the remaining people in the line got tested. Unsurprisingly, after Long Chen, no Grade 7 appeared again.

There was one more grade 6 talent that appeared during the Sect Entrance Exam. She was a blue-haired girl. She was called Yue Fei. After a short while, people managed to find out that she was from a 2nd rank kingdom, the kingdom of Shui.

In total, there were 1724 grade two talents, 470 grade 3 talents, 102 grade four talents, 19 grade five talents, 2 grade six talents and 1 grade seven talent that was selected for the next stage of the selection.

All the selected participants stood at a large hall. The hall was so big that it could easily accommodate all the participants. There were 50 doors on the front wall of the large hall. All the doors looked the same and there were no signs on them to differentiate between them.

"This hall is known as the Formation Trial Hall. As you all might guess by its name, this place utilizes formations. More importantly Illusion Formations. Our sect's disciples use this place to train their battle skills and test themselves against other disciples."

"As you know, Talent is important, but strength is just as important! If you don't have the strength to defend yourself, you will die and your talent won't be able to help you! Thus the second part of the exam is to test your strength!"

"All of you will enter the doors and go through the Illusions. In the Illusions, you will face strong beasts. First, you will face a beast in the same cultivation realm as you! Next, you will face ten beasts with the same cultivation as you."

"After that, a beast with one minor cultivation stage higher than you, then 10 such beasts...then a beast with 2 Cultivation stages higher than you, then 10 such beasts and so on until you are killed in the Illusions. You will be pushed out of that illusion as soon as that happens."

"Your participation badge will record how many beasts you killed in that illusion and you will gain points accordingly. A beast at the same cultivation realm will give you 1 point. A beast at one stage higher will give you 5 points. 2 stages higher will give you 10 points. A 3 stage higher beast will give you 15 points and so on!"

"Only the top 500 people in this test will move on to the next trial." The Elder in charge of the second stage explained to everyone.

"Does that mean the registration at the entrance and talents play no importance here?"

"It looks like that..."

A chatter started as people with lower talent regained their excitement.

"Amazing! I can definitely leave him behind now! Although my Cultivation isn't higher than him, my battle strength is definitely the best amongst everyone here! I'll definitely take the first spot and shock everyone." Prince Lu finally smiled as he gazed towards the masked boy in the crowd.

"Oh right! I forgot to mention one thing. Some of you received special badges during the registration process! Those badges are useful to you in this round!"

"Those who received a silver one-star badge will start with an additional 10 points. Those with a gold 2-star badge will start with an additional 30 points."

"Those with a platinum moon badge will have an additional 100 points at the start." The Elder further continued causing an even bigger commotion. He couldn't help but glance at Long Chen as he said it.

'So he's 70 points ahead of me! I'll still leave him behind and show everyone that I'm the best!' Prince Lu thought with a serious look on his face.

Chapter 210 - 210: You Can't Fool Me

'So he's 70 points ahead of me! I'll still leave him behind and show everyone that I'm the best!' Prince Lu thought with a serious look on his face.

"Alright! Those with a grade 2 badge will go first. There's a number written on your grade 2 badge. No 1 to No. 50 come forward and enter the doors!" The Elder said loudly.

All the people who had received the badges began looking at their numbers carefully and finally, 50 people came forward. They walked through the doors and in a short time came out. There was a number showing behind their badge now.

"There must be a number showing behind your badge. That's the score you received. We also have that score and it will be used to select the top 500 for the next stage of trials.

People kept entering the rooms and leaving. Some were hopeful as they felt like their performance in the illusion battles were good, while others were worried as they felt like they could've done better.

"Looks like it's going to take a while." Long Chen muttered as he walked towards a wall. He sat down as he closed his eyes and rested his back against the wall.

"Ah...Excuse me?" A beautiful voice came which attracted his attention. He felt like he knew who this voice belonged to. He struggled to decide if he should react or not. Ultimately, he opened his eyes as he gazed at the person in front of him.

It was a red-haired girl. She looked to be 19-20 years old.

'Long Xue Ying...' Long Chen thought as he looked at her

"C...can I see your face?" She asked as she gazed at Long Chen.

"Why?" Long Chen asked with a heavy tone.

"Your golden eyes. They remind me of someone. I just wish to know if you are the same person or not." Long Xue Ying said to the masked boy.

"I don't think I know you, but if you wish to know me, I wouldn't mind." The masked man said with a chuckle as he openly stared at the bountiful chest of Long Xue Ying.

"This..." Long Xue Ying hurriedly folded her arms and placed them in front of her chest.

"Why do I have a feeling that you're trying to make me go away by acting like that?" Long Xue Ying said as if she suddenly thought about something.

"Why would I do that? Here, come sit with me." Long Chen said as he extended his hand towards Long Xue Ying. She saw Long Chen's hand coming towards him. She tried to move back, but the hand was so fast that it caught her hand.

"I'm not that guy... but I promise that I wouldn't be worse than him. How about you forget him and spend time with me." Long Chen said as he pulled Long Xue Ying towards him.

"Was he as strong as me?" Long Chen asked her. Long Xue Ying shook her head.

"See? I'm better than him. And you're quite cute as well." Long Chen said with a smile as he gazed at Long Xue Ying.

"Hmm... master sent us to keep an eye on him. Looks like we found out something. This guy loves beauties!" A person in the corner was secretly looking at Long Chen. Unbeknownst to him, Long Chen had already discovered him and was acting accordingly. He couldn't have expected Long Xue Ying to come to him in hopes of getting his mask off. All he could do now was divert her attention.

"Leave my hand." Long Xue Ying said as she tried to free her hand.

"Didn't you want me to take my mask off? You will have to kiss me if I'm not the guy you're looking for." Long Chen didn't free her hand and said to get in a carefree manner. He made sure to keep his voice loud enough to make the spies hear his words. He couldn't let anyone link him with the Long Clan.

"I... Never! You can't be him! I was wrong." Long Xue Ying said in a disgusted tone.

"So I don't get a kiss? You wasted my time. Leave" Long Chen said as if he was disappointed. He freed her hands. Long Xue Ying hurriedly created some distance between him and her.

She hurriedly left-back and didn't look back.

Long Chen closed his eyes and began resting as he ignored others. Although he realized that there were two girls looking at him, he chose to ignore them.

One of them was a blue-haired girl.

The girl was the second 6th-grade talent that had amazed everyone. She was the third princess of the Shui Kingdom, Princess Yue Fei.

The second girl was also someone he knew. She was from the kingdom of Shui as well. She was the granddaughter of the Qin clan patriarch, Qin Ruo

"You can't fool me..." They both muttered at the same time. Though they didn't approach Long Chen like Long Xue Ying did.

The second test continued for hours as the second-grade talents kept going through the illusion formation. After a long while, the test of second-grade talents was completed.

The person with the highest score amongst the second-grade talents was a person from the Kingdom of Xuan. Surprisingly he only had the Cultivation of the 9th stage of the spirit establishment realm, but his battle prowess proved to be the best amongst his peers.

He received a total score of 76 points. He failed to kill ten beasts with a cultivation of 2nd stage gold core realm and died in the illusion.

Soon after the first phase of the second exam ended, the turn of grade 3 talents came.

People kept getting tested and soon after, even the testing of grade 5 talents were completed.

By now, the people who held the first ten positions were all from the Xuan Kingdom. The peak score as of now was 180 Points that was received by grade 5 talent of Xuan Kingdom. The 11th position was surprisingly received by a 5th-grade cultivator of Shui. The Crown Prince of Shui Kingdom received a score of 120 points. Qin Ruo received the second-highest score amongst the participants of Shui, a score of 95. She was at 29th rank as of now.

People were excited as it was finally the turn of the 6th-grade talents and the 7th-grade talents. It was decided that all three of them would enter the test at the same time.

Long Chen opened his eyes slowly after being called by the Elder. He stood up and walked forward. He stood in front of one of the doors. Prince Lu and Princess Yue stood on the doors to his left and to his right.

"You may enter." The Elder said. All three of them entered at the same time.

Long Chen entered the room and saw a beautiful formation inside. There were many formation lines intersecting at various points making a beautiful pattern.

Long Chen stepped forward and sat at the center of the formation. As soon as he sat down, the room around him disappeared as he found himself at the empty grasslands. There was grass everywhere that came up to his ankles.

Long Chen didn't have to wait for long before a beast appeared in front of him out of nowhere.

"Winged panther." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the beast. It was a beast that looked like a panther but its color was white. There are two beautiful wings on its back. Although the winged panther had two beautiful wings on its back, it was a known fact that the winged panthers were unable to fly.

The winged panther had just begun moving forward when Long Chen pointed his finger towards the sky. The sky had white clouds up to this moment, but it turned pitch black as soon as Long Chen pointed towards the sky. The sky began thundering as occasionally bright light sparked through the sky.

He moved his finger down towards the running winged panther. As soon as his finger pointed towards the winged panther, a powerful thunderbolt fell on the winged panther.

The winged panther that had the Cultivation of the 10th stage gold core realm, fell to the ground immediately. His skin was charred and his breathing stopped.

The winged panther disappeared from the place. There was no activity in the area for over two minutes but finally, ten Winged panthers appeared in front of Long Chen.

Long Chen who was waiting for this moment smiled as he muttered softly.

"Thunder Blade!"

A bolt of lightning fell from the sky and landed at the center of the group. A single bolt of thunder had managed to kill five Winged Panthers.

The remaining winged panthers separated in a hurry as they tried to surround Long Chen.

"Such a good opportunity to train myself and my skills." Long Chen said as a smile appeared in his face. One after another, thunderbolts kept falling according to Long Chen's wishes.

Chapter 211 - 211:Wind Essence

"Such a good opportunity to train myself and my skills." Long Chen said as a smile appeared in his face. One after another, thunderbolts kept falling according to Long Chen's wishes.

Less than a minute had passed before all the winged panthers were killed.

Two more minutes passed before a beast appeared. It was still a winged panther. The winged panther had the cultivation of the 1st stage of Earth Realm which was one stage higher than Long Chen who was at the 10th stage of the Gold Core Realm.

Long Chen still didn't move as he kept using his Thunder Blade. His mastery of the thunder blade improved even further as he finally achieved the Mid-level mastery of the thunder blade. He was now able to make two thunderbolts fall at the same time.

Beasts kept appearing and kept dying as fast as they appeared. Less than half an hour had passed and Long Chen had already killed over 44 beasts combined.

Long Chen was now facing a beast with the cultivation of the 4th stage of Earth Realm.

"Finally a different beast appeared. I was starting to get bored from the winged panthers." Long Chen muttered with a relieved look on his face.

He now faced a 4th stage Earth Realm Profound Blood Ape. Although it was called an ape, it looked just like a gorilla from Long Chen's world.

Profound Blood Apes were said to possess immense physical strength. They also had high agility. Although they looked big and heavy, they were as fast as wind.

"Enough practicing Thunder Blade. Time to stretch my arms." Long Chen smiled as he disappeared from his spot. A large crater appeared where he was just standing as the Profound Blood Ape's fist landed on the place where he was just standing.

"Looking for someone?" Long Chen said softly as he appeared behind the Profound Blood Ape like a ghost. He punched at its head. Before the Profound Demon Beast could turn back, Long Chen's fist landed on his head. His skull broke as he fell to the ground.

Before he could rest, 10 Profound Blood Apes appeared in front of him. They all disappeared like Wind as they used their agility.

Long Chen smiled as he packed a fist and closed his eyes. He abruptly punched to his right. A Profound Blood Ape had just appeared there and was hit by Long Chen's fist. The Profound Blood Ape managed to survive as the fist landed on his chest and not on his head. A few of his chest bones broke as he flew back like a broken kite, but before he could crash on the ground, Long Chen disappeared from his spot and appeared behind the Profound Blood Beast.

Another fist landed on the back of the profound blood beast, finally killing it.

Long Chen beautifully danced with the winds as he kept killing the beasts one after another.

Stronger beasts kept appearing but none of them was enough to make Long Chen use his king's sword. Long Chen only used his mountain destroyer as he kept practicing the Seven Forms of Saint Sword.

As of now, Long Chen had only managed to comprehend the 5th form of the seven forms of sword saint. He had been trying to comprehend the 6th form but he felt as if something was missing.

Long Chen faced ten 5th stage Earth Realm Profound Blood Apes. The apes were much faster and stronger. Their defenses had also managed to ward off Long Chen's physical attacks.

They become one with the wind. The 6th form of the seven forms of Saint Sword talked about the same principle.

"Only when the sword is one with the wind, can the wind slay the enemies." Long Chen muttered as he remembered a phrase from the description of the 6th form from the 7 forms of the Saint Sword.

"Although I can still keep up to the Profound Blood Apes, it's all because of the Earthly Monarch Effect. Every time I use my movement skills, I am able to feel the resistance of the wind. If I could ignore the resistance like the Profound Blood Ape, my speed would have been much faster." Long Chen muttered as he fell in deep thought. Although he was lost in thoughts, he still didn't forget about the Profound Blood Ape. He kept dodging the attacks of the beasts as he thought about improving.

"Let's try it once more." Long Chen muttered as he gripped his mountain destroyer tightly in his hand.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Sixth Form Armageddon!" Long Chen muttered as he got into a stance. He swung his sword in a circular motion as he spun around at 360 degrees.

A bright arc of light escaped from his sword as it moved outwards. From the top, it looked like a beautiful circle that was extending in diameter with Long Chen at the center. All the Profound Blood Apes that had disappeared in the wind were cut apart as the circle of light kept getting bigger until it completely disappeared from his view.

"It was better than before, but still not as effortless as it could have been. Although there was still some resistance, it wasn't as bad as before." Long Chen said lightly as a smile appeared on his face.

"Good work. I never expected you to master the 6th form before finding the wind orb" A voice came in Long Chen's mind.

"Xun, What are you talking about? Why would I need the wind orb to comprehend the 6th form in the seven forms of Saint Sword?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his hand.

"You don't realize what you have done, did you?" Xun chuckled as she said to Long Chen.

"What did I do?" He said as he still couldn't understand what she was talking about.

"You remember the phrase ...' Only when the sword is one with the wind, can the wind slay the enemies.' It means that you need to comprehend the wind element to master the 6th form! I thought you would master the 6th Form after you comprehend the Law of Wind from the orb, but you turned out to be faster than I had assumed." Xun said in a happy tone as she praised Long Chen.

"Are you implying that I learned the Law of Wind? Nope, I don't feel any such thing." Long Chen shook his head as he responded.

"You didn't learn the Law of Wind as you haven't formed the Law Seed, but successfully managed to comprehend the Wind Essence. That's the first step in the path of self-learning a law. Although the law of wind is a basic law and not

a supreme law, it's still quite difficult to comprehend. Even learning the essence of the law takes a few years." Xun further said as she chuckled.

"Looks like you're going to be busy. I'll talk to you later. Keep practicing the 6th form. It will further help with your comprehension." Xun said before she went silent.

"Hah... never expected to see you here," Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the 6th stage Earth Realm Devil Hunter Beast in front of him.

He placed his mountain destroyer back in his storage ring and brought out the King's Sword.

"Time to get serious." Long Chen gazed at the devil Hunter Beast with a serious look on his face.

He moved from his sword as he advanced towards the Devil Hunter Beast like a valiant warrior. He swung his sword towards the beast but the beast disappeared from his spot and appeared behind him as it swung its claws.

Long Chen hurriedly turned back as he brought his sword between him and the claws. Despite using his strength, Long Chen was pushed back a few steps.

"6th stage Earth Realm Devil Hunter beast is really strong. Can't wait to see Orion get this strong" Long Chen muttered with a smile as he attacked the beast again.

Back at the Trial Formation Hall, Everyone was waiting eagerly for the last three participants to come out.

After some time, one of the doors opened and the first person came out. It was a blue-haired girl. She was the Princess of the Shui Kingdom, Yue Fei.

Most of them had already expected her to be the first person to come out.

"You can stand at the back. I will announce the final results when the other two come out." The Elder in charge said as he gazed at her.

"Hmm..." She nodded as she walked back towards Yue Luan.

"What was your score?" Yue Luan Asked with a smile as he gazed at Yue Fei.

Yue Fei smiled in an embarrassed manner as she showed Yue Luan the back of her badge.

"This.... this..." Yue Luan stuttered as soon as he saw her score.

"I can't say that I didn't see that coming." Yue Luan shook his head lightly as he gazed at the back of his own badge.

His badge had a score of 90 points as for hers ...

Chapter 212 - 212:Total Control

"I can't say that I didn't see that coming." Yue Luan shook his head lightly as he gazed at the back of his own badge.

His badge had a score of 90 points as for hers ... Her badge showed a completely different story altogether.

"46 points... That too after adding the bonus 30 points that you received because of your 2-star gold participation badge." Yue Luan said as he shook his head with a smile.

"The ten beasts I faced had a cultivation that was one stage higher than mine. They were scary strong, I couldn't do anything." Princess Yue said as she looked down with an embarrassed look on her face.

"Don't worry about it. You did good. You are already in the top 400, way above the cut-off of top 500." Yue Luan smiled as he patted her head.

"It's all because of those 30 extra points, otherwise I would only have 16 points." Yue Fei responded to Yue Luan.

"Those were not extra points. Those were your rewards for being so special." Yue Luan said as he gazed at her with a smile on his face.

While they were talking, people who were unaware of the reality kept making assumptions about her score.

"It must be over 200! She is a grade 6 talent, after all, her battle prowess must be amazing."

"I'm not sure. She looks quite weak to me. Still considering her talent, I'd say that she received around 150 points."

People kept putting out their own assumptions while they waited for the other two to exit.

Yue Fei heard all their assumptions. Her embarrassment kept increasing the more she heard.

Back in the illusion, Long Chen had killed the 6th stage Earth Realm Devil Hunter beast. He looked tired as he breathed heavily.

"My Qi has almost depleted. Why is there no time to rest in these Illusions?" Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the ten 6th stage Earth Realm Devil Hunter beasts in front of him.

"Alright, if there's no time, I'll make time on my own." Long Chen said as his gaze turned serious.

A mist seemed to have covered his eyes that previously looked slightly golden.

The whole place flickered for a moment as if the illusion was going through some trouble.

The ten Devil Hunter beasts paused where they were standing. They neither moved forward nor backward.

"Wait there for a moment, We can play after some time." Long Chen muttered as he sat down on the ground. He had complete control over the illusion as of this moment.

Although he had some limitations when it came to using illusions on living beings, in reality, it was a completely different matter altogether when it came to being in the Illusion himself.

He understood the law of illusion, thus he could altercate the illusion however he desired. The Illusions only worked on him because he wanted them to. Since the moment he entered the formation, the formation lost control of the illusion altogether.

Long Chen sat in a meditative position as he began his Cultivation. He desired to gather his Qi as soon as he could as his desire for battle was overwhelming him.

Long Chen cultivated in the illusion for over an hour before he opened his eyes. He stretched his arms before he stood up.

"Thanks for waiting." Long Chen said with a smile before his eyes flashed with a misty light. The illusion went back to normal as the Devil Hunter beasts began moving once more.

They jumped towards Long Chen like hungry wolves towards their prey. Long Chen teleported from his position as he appeared on top of one of the devil hunter beasts.

He stabbed his king's sword downwards which penetrated the skull of the Devil Hunter beast. The Devil Hunter beast couldn't even make a sound before he fell on the ground lifeless.

He kept teleporting constantly as he appeared near the devil hunter beasts and hunted them like the world's best assassin.

The Devil Hunter beasts had a strong defense but their defense didn't work against the King's sword. To boost his chances further, Long Chen specifically attacked their weak spots.

He had a link established with Orion after he established a contract with him, thus he knew the strengths and weaknesses of the Devil Hunter beasts all too well.

Back in the Formation Trial Hall, It had been four hours since Princess Yue walked out of the formation.

It had already been over five hours since Long Chen and Prince Lu had entered the formations. They had already broken the record of the longest time spent inside the Illusion formation that was previously held by a cultivator from the Xuan Kingdom. The previous record was only 3 hours and 16 minutes.

Most of the people in the hall had sat down as they eagerly waited for the second person to come out of the formation.

Some people had already fallen asleep as they grew tired of the wait while others still continued to argue about who would be the second person to come out.

"Although the masked boy has a better talent, he is still too young. He can't have good battle prowess! I'm sure that he isn't from the Xuan Kingdom otherwise he wouldn't be hiding his face. There's no chance that he can have any decent battle skill." One of the cultivators said to his friend. He was a fifth-grade talent. He wore a black headband on his forehead and had quite short hair.

"You can't be sure of that... The way I see it, Master Lu is going to lose." Another person commented in between.

"Who are..." The person turned back to look in the direction where that voice came from only to get shocked as he hurriedly closed his eyes.

The person who had just said that Prince Lu would lose was a 24-25-year-old man. He was the person who currently holds the no. one position in the Illusion trials. He was a fifth-grade talent, but his battle prowess was already clear to everyone based on his score. His own score was 180, furthermore, his cultivation wasn't low either. He was a 4th stage gold realm cultivator.

"Why does master duan think that?" The boy with the headband asked the man as respectfully as he could.

"You must not have noticed it, but when Elder Jinliang told the guard to take that boy, The way the boy faced the guard, it was too scary. I wasn't even the target of that gaze but I still felt a chill in my spine. He didn't look scared even for a bit. It was as if he was ready to slaughter the guard without a care of the world. That boy... he should never be offended..." Master Duan said in a tone that sounded less like a suggestion and more like a warning before he closed his eyes.

The second door opened as the second person came out of the formation.

The second person to exit was someone that had shocked everyone with his immense talent. It was a masked boy who called himself Tian Shen.

"Are the others out yet?" He looked towards the elder and asked.

"Ah... no. Prince Lu is still inside." The Elder hurriedly replied.

"Oh," Long Chen responded in a careless tone as he walked towards a corner and sat down. He closed his eyes. He didn't even look at his score once after exiting.

The Elder in charge of the second stage opened one of the rooms that was separated from the 50 formation trial room.

Normally he would've waited till all three of them were out, but he couldn't contain his curiosity. Since the moment Long Chen came out, he wished to see his score.

Inside the room, there were names of people written in the wall based on the rankings they received in the Formation Illusion Trials.

"Hmm? The first name is Duan? What about that sixth-grade girl and that masked boy?" He muttered as he looked at the first name. He began reading

the complete list as he tried to find their names, after much effort, he found one of the names that he was trying to find.

The person holding the rank 325 was Princess Yue Fei.

"Only 46 points? Looks like her battle powers were really weak... but where is that boy? Is he even weaker than her? " The Elder let out as he continued going down the list of names. He read all the names in a few minutes but didn't find the name of Tian Shen.

"There are two names missing. Prince Lu and Tian Shen. Prince Lu is still in the illusion so he won't have a score but what about Tian Shen! Why is his score not here? It's like he didn't even participate in the test!" The elder said as he grew confused.

The Elder left the room as he closed the door.

The third door opened only 23 minutes after Long Chen came out.

Prince Lu left the formation room with a tired look on his face. As soon as he left, his eyes began looking for someone. As soon as his eyes fell on Long Chen, a smile bloomed on his face.

"Elder! What is the highest score as of this moment?" Prince Lu asked with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Currently Duan from the Wu clan has the highest score. He has 180 points." Elder Yi said with a smile.

"Oh? What about Young Friend Tian Shen? I expected him to be at the top until I came out, but he really disappointed me. Such a waste of a 7th-grade talent." Prince Lu said as he smiled.

"Elder Yi, Looks like I received the first place. I have 320 points!" Prince Lu said with a smile on a loud enough voice that others could hear. He showed the back of his badge to Elder Yi.

A loud commotion started as soon as his voice was heard.

"Little friend Shen! Even if your performance was bad, it can't be that bad! Why don't you show me your badge! Let me see your score for a moment?" Prince Lu said in a loud voice.

Chapter 213 - 213: Long Jun

"Little friend Shen! Even if your performance was bad, it can't be that bad! Why don't you show me your badge! Let me see your score for a moment?" Prince Lu said in a loud voice.

"Isn't there a second list with the elders? Why don't you go check my score on that?" Long Chen responded without opening his eyes.

"There's no need to make that much effort. You're already here, you should show us your score. Come on, there's no need to be embarrassed." Prince Lu said with a smile. Even some of his supporters began urging him to show his score.

"Show us the score! Show us the score!"

Soon, the whole place started chanting in a similar tone.

Long Chen finally opened his eyes as he gazed at Prince Lu with annoyance.

"Alright..." Long Chen muttered as he stood up. He began walking towards Prince Lu and Elder Yi.

"Elder Yi, why don't you take his badge and read his score aloud. So that all of us can understand the incredible battle prowess that little friend Shen possesses." Prince Lu said when Long Chen was mid-way.

Long Chen didn't react as he continued forth. He handed over his Platinum moon badge to Elder Yi.

Elder Yi smiled as he brought the badge closer. A beautiful moon was carved on the front of the badge along with the number '1'.

He flipped the badge over to see the backside of the badge. As soon as he gazed at the backside of the badge, his eyes opened wide in shock.

"Impossible!!!" He let out with a look of disbelief on his face. He hurriedly ran towards the score room without a single care in the world for anything else.

People in the hall were stunned as they saw the strange actions of Elder Yi. They wondered what had happened to him. Even Prince Lu didn't understand what Elder Yi was doing.

Elder Yi entered the score room and looked at the wall again but his expressions grew even stranger as he saw the first name.

The first name on the wall was 'Tian Shen'. In front of his name was a score that made Elder Yi think that he was dreaming. The second name on the wall was Prince Lu with 320 points. The third rank was Duan with a score of 180 points.

"Why wasn't his name there the last time? Was it because his score was so high, thus it took a long time for his score to be calculated?" Elder Yi muttered with a perplexed look on his face.

"That boy... he really is a monster, isn't he?" Elder Yi shook his head as he left the room.

"You're back, Elder Yi. Was the score so bad that it was really out of your expectations? He had 60 bonus points, so it can't be that his total score is less than a hundred?" Prince Lu said with an amused smile on his face.

"His score is twelve...." Elder Yi had just spoken till here when Prince Lu cut off his words.

"A score of 12? Little friend Tian... you should work on your battle skills as well or your talent would only go to a waste. Though it can't be helped, you must be from a poor place...I can't blame it on you. I'll teach you some decent skills later on" Prince Lu said with a smile.

Elder Yi couldn't help but gaze at him with pity in his eyes. He didn't know if he should scold Prince Lu for his short-sighted nature or feel bad for him because of what was able to happen next.

"Prince Lu... that's not it. His score is twelve hundred sixty-one."Elder Yi said with a wry smile on his face.

"T...t....twelve hundred...sixty " Prince Lu stuttered as his head started spinning.

"You forgot one... it's Sixty one...but you are right... It is an embarrassing score for me. I hoped to do better " Long Chen said with an indifferent expression as he patted the shoulder of Prince Lu. The whole world started spinning for Prince Lu as extreme embarrassment engulfed him. He fell down to his knees.

" My badge?" Long Chen said as he extended his hands towards Elder Yi.

"Ah...yes..." Elder Yi returned his badge.

The whole place was dead silent as Long Chen returned to his place.

"A score of over 1200? Does it not mean that he only lost when he faced 10 beasts that had a cultivation stage that was 7 stages higher than his?"

"He is a 4th stage gold realm cultivator! Doesn't it mean that his actual battle strength is comparable to an average 1st stage Earth Realm cultivator?"

"So fearsome!"

People couldn't help but talk about him in absolute shock.

"Alright. I will declare the final result. First Rank Tian Shen, Second rank Prince Lu, Third rank Duan...five hundredth rank Min Gu. The ones just I named shall be the ones going through to the third and final stage of the selection exams." Elder Yi said as he glanced at everyone in the hall.

"Out of the five hundred, only a hundred people will clear the third stage of selections. Some people will be chosen amongst the people that clear that stage by the sect masters of the five sects to join their sect as an inner disciple. Some of them might get even better offers from sect masters" Elder Yi said though he didn't forget to glance at Long Chen at the end of his sentence.

"Those who aren't selected by the sect masters will still get to join the sect they desired, but only as an outer sect disciple."

"The 3rd stage of the sect entrance exam will be tomorrow. We have arranged a place to stay inside the sect for the candidates that have been selected in the second stage. Those who failed the second stage may take their leave. Those who passed will be escorted to the guest quarters by the servants." Elder Yi finished his words before he walked towards Long Chen.

"Come with me, I'll take you to your room." Elder Yi said to Long Chen with a gentle smile on his face.

"Airtight," Long Chen nodded his head. He followed the Elder and left the hall under the gazes of everyone present. Some gazed at him with jealousy while others gazed at him with amazement. Some even had a frown on their faces.

Long Chen was escorted to a beautiful looking courtyard that was fully furnished. It was covered by a beautiful garden and had a large area.

"This place looks quite good." Long Chen said as he looked at the place.

"Yea, The place that was selected for the 1st rank participant was really amazing, but after seeing your performance, We felt that it was quite lacking.

So we changed the place with an even better courtyard for your rest." Elder Yi said with a light chuckle.

"Elder Yi, can I ask you something?" Long Chen inquired.

"Of Course! You can ask me anything." Elder Yi said as he smiled.

"Elder Yu Tianhao... where does he live in the sect?" Long Chen asked in a casual tone.

"Hmm? Why would you ask that?" Elder Yi let out with a confused look on his face.

"It's just that he looked like he was quite high in the hierarchy of the sect. He must have a special place to live in the sect." Long Chen responded.

"Well, that's true. He does have quite an amazing courtyard. In fact, it's near your courtyard. If you'll walk straight for over a kilometer, you'll be standing at the front of his courtyard. Though he doesn't always stay in the courtyard given by the sect and occasionally goes back and spends nights at the Yu clan." Elder Yi said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"The sect entrance exam is an important occasion, he won't go to the Yu Clan today, right?" Long Chen inquired with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Yea, he will be staying in the sect." Elder Yi nodded his head.

"Thanks for escorting me, Elder Yi. You are really helpful." Long Chen thanked him before entering the courtyard. He closed the doors and used his divine senses to scan his surroundings. He relaxed as he found that the place was really empty.

He rested in his bed for half an hour before he stood up and left his courtyard. He kept using his divine sense as he walked through the sect. Every time he sensed a guard, he used his law of illusion to pass them safely. His heaven's Shroud also helped him in hiding his aura completely.

After walking for a short while, he stood in front of a beautiful looking courtyard. He moved towards a window. He looked inside and saw an empty-looking room.

He disappeared from his original position and appeared inside the room. He had already used his divine sense thus he knew where the owner of this place was.

Long Chen walked towards the bedroom. There was a voice coming from inside the room that sounded like a person was talking to himself.

"Hmph...I have to be humble in front of that arrogant kid. What a hassle... My daughter Ling is a real genius! Hmph, if it weren't for the sect masters orders, I wouldn't be doing this. So what if he's a grade 7 talent! So what if he's a good fighter! In the end, he'll join the glorious blossom Sect as we are the strongest! Even if we didn't invite him, he'd beg us to join!"

"Sigh... it's the sect master's orders after all. I need to go convince him again in the night. Sect Master is really trying to pull that boy towards us." The man said as he walked back and forth.

"Hi, there old friend. Long time no see" Another voice sounded.

"Huh...Long Jun? You're alive?" He screamed loudly as he took a step back in shock.

Chapter 214 - 214: They Took My Father?

"Huh...Long Jun? You're alive?" He screamed loudly as he took a step back in shock.

"Of course, is it that shocking? " Long Jun replied with a smile

"But...but I was told that some assassins attacked you and you were killed! I even went to Shui after hearing the news!" Yu Tianhao said as he found it hard to believe his eyes.

"They never found my body right? It's because I managed to survive. I was injured and fell into a coma. I woke up at the house in a small town of Xuan Kingdom. I had no idea how I got there, but when I woke up, I found out that so many years had passed." Long Jun replied.

"You're alive! It's all good that you're alive!" Tears appeared in Yu Tianhao's eyes as he gazed at Long Jun with a grateful gaze.

"I couldn't help you when Grand Elder Su Lian plotted against you and got you expelled from the sect. I couldn't help you when the unknown assassins attacked you! I had always cursed myself for being useless." Yu Tianhao said as tears continued to fall from his eyes.

"It wasn't your fault. Oh right, how's your daughter now." Long Jun said with a smile as he gazed at Yu Tianhao.

"Ah..." Yu Tianhao's face turned red as he heard that question. He struggled to find words.

"I... there's something I want to apologize to you for. I know that we promised to get our kids married, but I had to break that promise. Ling... she went to your clan without my permission and broke off the marriage."

"Even when she came back and told me about it, I was furious and said that she must marry him, but she didn't obey. She threatened me that she would kill herself if I forced her. I...I couldn't let my daughter suffer because of my promise."

Yu Tianhao said with a heavy look on his face.

"It's fine. We shouldn't decide the fate of our kids. Let nature take their course." Long Jun said with a gentle smile.

"Oh right, where does Grand Elder Su Lian stay now?" Long Jun inquired.

"He...? The old-fogey still lives at the peak of the snowy mountain of the sect. His courtyard is still there like it had always been." Yu Tianhao responded with a chuckle.

"Hmm... I'm amazed he's still alive." Long Jun said as he began laughing.

As Yu Tianhao was talking to Long Jun, he didn't realize that there was no Long Jun there. Instead, there was a masked boy standing there.

Long Chen had made the illusion of his father and was making use of it to get information out of Yu Tianhao.

After asking what he wanted to ask, Long Chen decided that it was time to leave.

Long Chen disappeared from his position as he appeared outside the courtyard in an instant, using his teleport skill. As soon as Long Chen was unable to see Yu Tianhao, the illusion broke.

"Brother Jun, why don't you..." Yu Tianhao was saying something when Long Jun disappeared in front of him.

"Brother Jun? Brother Jun?" He called out again and again but there was no response.

"Was... was it my hallucination? Does that mean you... didn't survive? It had been so long since you left brother Jun...I miss you." Yu Tianhao dropped to his knees as another tear fell from his eyes. This time it was a tear of sadness.

'So Yu Tianhao didn't plot against my father... Now the only lead I have is Elder Su Lian.' Long Chen thought as he walked in the darkness of the night.

He could clearly see a snowy mountain. Although it wasn't wintering in the kingdom of Xuan, there was still snow in that mountain.

"I don't have time to walk..." Long Chen muttered as he jumped high in the sky.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" He said as two beautiful wings appeared behind him. One wing was shiny golden while the other one was pitch black. Long Chen flew towards the peak of the snowy mountain as fast as he could.

He was using heaven's shroud to hide his aura and cultivation. His black clothes helped him mix with the darkness. The only problem was his shiny

golden wing. He hoped that no one would notice it, but even if someone did, he would just disappear from there using a spatial portal and appear back at his courtyard.

He only had the night to get all the answers, he didn't want to waste such an opportunity.

Thankfully, no one noticed a shiny golden light flying high in the sky as the true masters of the sect were inside their rooms cultivating while the guards were looking out at the ground. He would've definitely attracted a lot of attention if he wasn't able to hide his aura, but heaven's shroud came as a blessing.

Long Chen landed at the roof of the courtyard at the peak of the snowy mountain. His wings disappeared.

Long Chen used his divine sense to scan the courtyard. There were guards at the main entrance of the courtyard and an old man sitting in meditation inside his bedroom. Other than them no one was there.

Long Chen landed in front of a window as he looked inside. His teleportation skill worked just like that. Within the range of a hundred meters, Long Chen could teleport anywhere as long as he had seen that place.

Long Chen appeared inside the courtyard and walked towards the bedroom.

The door was unlocked, thus Long Chen easily opened the door and entered inside.

"Grand Elder Lian, are you really not going to talk to me?" Long Chen said with a smile as he stood at the entrance of the door. He leaked some of his killing intent so that the Elder could wake up from his meditation.

"Who dares...Huh, Long Jun!!! W...w...what are you doing here? How did you escape from the Ghost Temple?"

Grand Elder Su Lian opened his eyes but just as he saw Long Jun standing in front of him, all color disappeared from his face.

'Ghost temple? Looks like he does know something about my father' Long Chen thought as he heard Grand Elder Su Lian's words.

"Of Course I escaped. And not only did I escaped...I even grew stronger!" Long Chen said with a smile. He used his Heaven's Shroud to spread the aura of a peak Tenth Stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

Heaven's Shroud was a heavenly skill that could hide someone's Cultivation. It could even show a fake cultivation. The fake cultivation could be anything within the range of two Two Major cultivating realms lower than someone's actual cultivation to one major realm higher than his actual cultivation. It could even produce aura respectively.

Long Chen was a peak Tenth stage Gold Core Realm Cultivator, thus he was able to fake the aura of a Peak tenth stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

"Your Cultivation!!! It's even stronger than the Sect Master! How is that possible? How could you have gotten so stronger after the people of the Ghost Temple took you?" Grand Elder Su Luan said with a look of disbelief on his face.

"It doesn't matter! All that you need to know is that now I have the strength to crush you! But I won't kill you if you answer me with a simple thing." Long Chen said with a smile.

"What thing! As long as I can stay alive, I'm ready to answer anything!" Grand Elder Su Lian hurriedly said as he worried about his life.

"It's a simple question, so you don't have to be worried. What I want to know is, why did you involve the Ghost Temple when it was between us?" Long Chen asked with a thoughtful look on his face.

He didn't know what Ghost Temple was, thus he could only get answers from Grand Elder Su Lian slowly.

"I...I didn't! They came looking for you! It's all because of the tattoo on your back!" Grand Elder Su Lian responded.

After hearing his words, Long Chen couldn't help but remember that his father did have a tattoo on his back. The tattoo looked much like an ancient world. It was said that he had it since his birth.

"What does my tattoo have to do with you getting involved with the Ghost Temple?" Long Chen further inquired.

"It's... It all happened a few weeks before the attack on you. One day an envoy from the Ghost Temple came to our sect! They showed us the picture of that tattoo and asked us if we had seen someone with that tattoo. I heard that they sent envoys in many kingdoms and empires to look for someone with that specific mark on their back."

"I remembered that you had that mark on your back and told them." Grand Elder Su Lian said in a serious tone.

"How do you know about my tattoo? Did they not tell you why they are looking for me?" Long Chen asked again as he stared deep in Grand Elder's eyes.

"I...I saw it when you were fighting with Quan Qun at the yearly tournament finals. Your clothes were burnt off from his flaming attacks. That was when I managed to see that peculiar tattoo on your back. As for their reason, I asked but they didn't tell me." Grand Elder Su Lian said with remembrance.

Chapter 215 - 215: Inheritance Of Saint King Xianwu

"I...I saw it when you were fighting with Quan Qun at the yearly tournament finals. Your clothes were burnt off because of his blazing attacks. That was when I managed to see that peculiar tattoo on your back. As for their reason, I asked but they didn't tell me." Grand Elder Su Lian said with remembrance.

"So you sold me out." Long Chen said as a devilish smile appeared on his face.

"N...no ... I didn't know they were going to hurt you!" Grand Elder Su Lian started sweating as he hurriedly shook his head in denial.

"Do you even know where they took me? Where is their base? If you don't, then you have no idea about how hard it was for me to come back." Long Chen said as he started at Grand Elder.

"I...I know that their headquarters are at Ghost Island in the Eastern Continental Sea. I...I can understand the difficulty!" Grand Elder responded to Long Chen.

As he was explaining himself, he suddenly saw that Long Jun disappeared in front of him like he was a dream. In his shock, the Grand Elder didn't sense danger when a sword stabbed his heart from the back.

"Ah...wh...at..." He coughed out a mouthful of blood as he struggled to breathe.

"Thanks for the information." Long Chen said as he slit the Grand Elder's throat.

"That begins my revenge for my father! Ghost Temple...you will be next" Long Chen said as he looked towards the roof.

"Spatial travel!" Long Chen muttered as his eyes changed to the color of the starry space.

A spatial crack appeared in front of him which widened as Long Chen walked towards it.

Long Chen entered the spatial crack and it closed.

Near the Courtyard of Long Chen, a spatial crack appeared out of nowhere and a masked boy came out of the spatial crack.

"The accuracy of spatial travel still hasn't improved. It always brings me near the place I want to go to, but rarely at that exact spot. Sigh...I wonder if these limitations will end after my space Law sapling becomes a space law tree." Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards his room.

"Long Chen!" Xun's voice sounded in his head just as he had taken a step forward.

"What?" Long Chen asked her.

"Look inside the Storage Ring! Your King's Sword is acting restless!" Xun said in a serious tone.

Long Chen decided to listen to her and just as she had said, the King's sword was really acting restless. For the first time, it was flying in the air and circling around.

"It... it can fly? Isn't it a Peak Spirit Grade weapon? Even Earth Grade artifacts are unable to fly! How can it fly?" Long Chen let out with a shocked look on his face.

"I have no idea, it started acting strange from the moment you put it back after killing that old man. I think it sensed something important when it was out, that's why it's so restless!" Xun said what she felt was happening.

"Let me check." Long Chen muttered as he brought the king's sword out from the Storage Ring.

As soon as the King's sword came out, it escaped from Long Chen's grip and flew away.

"What the heck!" Long Chen was stunned at the intense reaction of the King's sword. He used his Heavenly Demon Wings and flew after the King's sword.

Thankfully the King's sword flew in the barren direction. There were no courtyards or buildings in that direction.

The sword stopped flying on top of a strangely shaped stone. The stone looked like a pyramid with properly cut edges. No uneven surface could be seen on the stone.

The sword floated on top of the pyramid-shaped stone.

Long Chen was following the sword, thus reaching that location right after the sword.

"That's a strange shaped stone. Is there something special about this place? I don't see anything special other than the shape of that stone." Long Chen let out with a confused look on his face as he observed the stone.

"There must be an opening below the stone. Some cultivators of old times used to hide their inheritance sites like this. Since the Spirit Realm artifact is able to fly and bring you here, there must be something special!" Xun appeared beside Long Chen and informed him.

"Let me try" Long Chen walked towards the pyramid-shaped stone and gripped it firmly.

"Uhhhh..." He tried picking the stone up but it didn't budge even an inch from its original position.

"I don't believe that I can't move you!" Long Chen let out softly as he began using the strength of Demon Monarch Physique. He tried but the stone still didn't move.

"Do you think that if it was that easy, others wouldn't have found this place? Look at that opening!" Xun said as she pointed towards the small opening at the top of the pyramid-shaped stone. The opening had the shape of a keyhole.

"That opening...I need a key! where can I find the key?" Long Chen was lost in deep thought when he noticed the King's sword flying in the air.

"Wait, isn't the size of the keyhole, similar to..."Long Chen muttered something.

He jumped in the air and grabbed the King's sword.

Long Chen stabbed the blade of the king's sword in the keyhole. The sword fits perfectly as it reaches deep inside. Only the hilt of the sword was visible outside.

Various patterns started appearing on the stone. In about two minutes, the stone slid sideways and revealed the opening. There were stairs below the stone that were going downwards.

"You were right! There was actually an opening below the stone." Long Chen said with a smile.

"Of Course I was right. I have much more experience about this world than you." Xun chuckled with a proud expression on her face.

"Take that sword, Let's see what's inside," Xun told Long Chen before she disappeared.

Long Chen pulled the sword out of the stone and went down the stairs. After Long Chen entered, the stone came back to its original position like nothing had ever happened.

The stairs ended at the entrance of a tunnel. The tunnel looked much like a hallway with proper ventilation and a wide area.

The tunnel that was previously darker than night, Suddenly lighted up as the spirit patterns on the wall started shining.

Long Chen was finally able to see the end of the tunnel. The tunnel wasn't much longer. There was a door at the end.

Long Chen walked towards the door and tried pushing it open. Learning from his mistakes at the bloodline temple, he didn't forget to pull it either. Nothing worked as the door didn't budge even an inch.

Unlike the stone, there was no keyhole in the door.

"Hey Xun, What does your great experience say? How can we open the door?" Long Chen asked Xun who had appeared beside him again.

"Hmmm...I have no idea." Xun said as she straight away gave up.

"Let's have a look, there must be some mechanism hidden here that could open the door." Xun further commented after a while.

Long Chen began looking around as he tried to find anything unusual. He even knocked on the walls nearby but nothing worked. Just as he was about to give up, his feet landed on an uneven surface.

The ground began shaking. The walls began changing shape as stones started falling from the walls.

The stones that fell from the walls joined up and took the form of a stone golem. The stone golem looked similar to a human.

"The Medallion!" The golem extended his hand towards Long Chen and asked.

"What Medallion?" Long Chen asked with a doubtful look on his face.

"You need the Master's sword to enter the inheritance tomb and his Medallion to enter the core area! Give me the Medallion!" Unexpectedly, the stone golem actually replied to Long Chen.

"I ...I don't have the Medallion. I only have the sword. Is there no other way to enter the core area" Long Chen said to the Golem.

"Go back. You can't enter without the Medallion!" The Stone Giant said as he walked towards the wall and assimilated in it. The walls returned back to normal.

"Looks like we can't see what's inside." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the door.

"The golem said that it's his master's sword and you need his Medallion as well to enter that room," Xun repeated the words of the golem.

"The Golem must be talking about the Saint King Xianwu! The biggest hero of humanity. If this is his inheritance site, then the treasures must be immense! I must find the Medallion of Saint King Xianwu and return to this place."

Long Chen said as he walked towards the exit. He made a mental note to come back to this place after he found the Medallion of Saint King Xianwu.

"It's going to be tough. I have heard about Saint King Xianwu. He traveled many worlds with his strength. We can't be sure where in this world his Medallion would be." Xun said as she followed Long Chen.

"Just stay hopeful! I will definitely find it!" Long Chen said with a smile as he left the place.

Long Chen walked back to his courtyard. He dropped on his bed as he took off his mask and fell asleep.

Chapter 216 - 216: Free Pass

Long Chen walked back to his courtyard. He dropped on his bed as he took off his mask and fell asleep.

The Sun rose in the sky as morning arrived. Long Chen was still sleeping when there was a knock on the door. He finally woke up as the door was knocked again.

Long Chen slowly stood up and walked towards the door, but he suddenly remembered that he forgot to put on his mask. He walked back and wore his mask again.

Long Chen opened the door and found Elder Yi standing outside.

"Little friend Shen, I'm here to escort you to the third round's location.

Elder Yi said as he smiled at Long Chen.

"Alright, let's go." Xu Liang said with a smile.

Long Chen left the courtyard and followed Elder Yi. They soon reached a large open ground.

The place looked like stadiums from earth. There were proper seating arrangements for the people in the stands, just like stadiums had. The center field was circular and had a diameter of over one kilometer.

There were 20 fighting stages in the field. A large mirror was floating at the center of the ground, at the height of ten meters. The mirror had twenty sections.

"That's the Observation Mirror. It will show the fighting on all 20 stages to our spectators. All those twenty sections will show a stage each.

"Who is in charge of this round?" Long Chen asked as he looked around.

"It's Elder Yu Tianhao! He will be managing this round" Elder Yi informed Long Chen.

"Oh, right, I heard that people from the Thunder Giant Sect are here as well. Is it true?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yeah, The guests from Thunder Giant Sect are here. There's Ling and a boy she often calls senior brother." Elder Yi answered Long Chen.

"Only two? I heard that there was another person here from the Thunder Giant Sect, possibly a girl.

"Oh, You're talking about Miss Meng! She's not here. After she came back from the Huanji Empire, She left in a hurry. Miss Ling and the other boy stayed behind. In Fact, they will be the ones who will present the rewards to the winner.

"She left?" Long Chen said as anger flickered in his eyes, though he controlled it.

"Yeah, she looked like she was in a bad mood when she left. She kept saying that the whole mission was a waste. We don't know what she meant by it though." Elder Yi informed Long Chen.

"Everyone! Silence!" Yu Tianhao stood at one of the stages and said in a loud voice. He used his Qi to make sure that his voice was heard by everyone.

The place that had been noisy just a moment ago, turned completely silent.

"The final round of the Sect Entrance Exam will be held here in front of everyone's eyes! You will get to see the hard work of the kids you came here with and how they compare with the others! Those whole process will be completely transparent and only the top hundred will get selected by the sects!" Yu Tianhao said as he gazed at the crowd of people.

"In the first Trial, we saw your potential! In the second trial, we saw your strength! The third trial will judge your overall strength! The way you adapt to the strengths and weaknesses of your opponents! Your battle tactics and your reaction to the unexpected situation in the battlefield! You won't face beasts, Instead, you will face cunning humans! Your fellow cultivators will be your opponents!" He said to the 500 participants that passed the second round.

"You all know the ranking you received in the second trial! Your fighting orders will be decided based on that ranking! Rank 1 will fight rank 500. Rank 2 will fight rank 499 and so on! If a lower rank cultivator defeats a higher rank cultivator, their rankings will switch. Only the top 250 will move onto the second stage of the battles"

"But Elder, We... we all have varying cultivation! Some are in Gold Core Realm while others are only in the Spirit Establishment Realm! How can we fight each other with such a big difference." One of the cultivators said in a worried tone.

He was only at the 7th Stage of Spirit Establishment Realm and had managed to get rank 240 because his fighting powers were good compared to people with the same cultivation realm, but he knew that the gap between him and a gold core realm cultivator's strength was too big.

' You don't have to worry about that. Although the outside world won't think about your weak cultivation and strength when someone attacks you, we would give you an equal chance.'

" All the cultivators would have to restrict their cultivation to the 5th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm! If anyone is found cheating or using unfair means, he shall be punished by the discipline hall.

"Alright, Enough explanation! The first battle will be held between Rank 1 Tian Shen and Rank 500 Jiu Li in the first arena. The second battle... The 20th battle will be held between rank 20 Mu Qi and rank 481 Miao Miao in the last arena. Take your places!" Yu Tianhao said before he got off the arena.

"Best of Luck." Elder Yi wished Long Chen as he was going towards the first arena.

Long Chen didn't respond and continued straight ahead.

Long Chen stood in the arena in front of a bald boy. The boy was wearing saffron clothing.

"My name is Jiu Li. I've seen a lot of miracles created by you. If you can survive one of my punches, I will consider it as your win." Jiu Li said as he smiled.

"I will take your silence as a yes." Jiu Li said as he packed his fist when he got no reaction from Long Chen. He started directing his Qi towards his hand.

"Hidden Tiger Fist!" Jiu Li said loudly as he punched towards Long Chen.

A smile appeared on Jiu Li's face as he saw Long Chen standing still.

"You're brave, but that bravery will get you killed!" Jui Li laughed loudly as victory seemed in sight. Just as his fist was about to hit Long Chen's, Long Chen used his footwork as he dodged to the side.

"You are too slow." Long Chen said softly as he punched the ribcage of the opponent.

Jiu Li gave a painful cry as he crashed outside the arena.

"My...my bones have broken!!! Help me fast!!!" He let out loud as he groaned in pain. Some people came and took him away.

"Hey? Didn't the battle on the first stage finish too fast? Just who is that masked boy? I heard that he received the 1st rank in two previous exams." Jinjing said softly as she gazed at the screen. She was the Chief of the Royal Guards in the Royal family of Shui and the one who escorted the cultivators from the Royal Clan.

Long Clan's Patriarch Long Ran sat beside her.

"Must be someone who doesn't want to show off his identity. He knows that he would offend a lot of people in the process of the examination. If he is selected, then the sects would protect him, but if he failed, he would be in real trouble after he leaves the sect. He is a smart kid." Long Ren said with a smile as he continued looking around the field.

"Hey, You have been looking around for a long time. Are you trying to find someone?" Jinjing asked with a curious look on her face.

"Yeah, but it seems like the one I'm trying to find isn't here." Long Ren said as he couldn't find Long Chen amongst the participants.

"Tell me who you're looking for, I might be able to help," She asked with a smile on her face.

"I'm looking for my grandson." Long Ren answered her.

"Long Tian? Do you believe he would be here? " Jinjing let out with a stunned look on her face.

"I considered that as a possibility." Long Ren replied with a smile.

"Well, I've seen his portrait, but I don't think he's here. What do you think about that masked boy? He is the only person here whose face we haven't seen." Jinjing said in a low voice with a thoughtful look on her face.

"He? It's not possible. That masked boy was at the 4th stage of the Gold Core Realm. I checked his cultivating when I saw him enter the arena." Long Ren shook his head in denial.

"Well... if you say so." She turned silent as she began looking at the 11th screen. The Crown Prince, Yue Zhang of the Shui Kingdom has received the highest rank in the 2nd stage amongst all the participants of the kingdom of Shui. He had received 11th rank and was fighting the 490th rank cultivator.

"He's a talented kid." Long Ren said as he gazed towards Prince

"Yea, Yue Zhang is really good. Unfortunately, he doesn't care about the kingdom and its throne." She said as she shook her head.

"Who knows... It's really hard to understand what people really desire." Long Ren said with a smile.

The second battle to be finished was the battle of Prince Lu with the girl who got rank 499. As everyone had already expected, it was an easy win for Prince Lu.

Soon all 20 battles had finished and none of the top 20 rank cultivators had lost. More battles kept going on and soon all the cultivators had fought a battle.

"The stage one is over! Top 250 ranks will go and battle now."

The second stage of battles began and soon enough, it was over as well. Long Chen's opponent had tried his best but he was still defeated.

No high-rank cultivator was defeated other than rank 100 cultivator who was defeated by rank 151 cultivator.

"Now we have 125 people for the battle! Since it's an uneven number, rank one will get a free pass to the 4th stage." Yu Tianhao announced just after the second round had finished.

Chapter 217 - 217: Is There A Rule?

"Now we have 125 people for the battle! Since it's an uneven number, rank one will get a free pass to the 4th stage." Yu Tianhao announced just after the second round had finished.

"Elder Yu! Shouldn't the free pass be decided by the lottery system? It had been done like that in the previous examinations as well!" Prince Lu said in an unconvinced tone as he gazed at Yu Tianhao.

"This decision was taken by the Sect Master! If Prince Lu has a problem with this decision, then you can talk to the Sect Master after the Examination is over." Yu Tianhao said in a strict tone.

"This... I have no problem with this decision" Prince Lu said as he looked down.

'How can I go against the decision of the Sect Master! He is the strongest Cultivator in this Kingdom! I haven't gone crazy that I'll talk to him about his decision.' Prince Lu thought with an ugly expression on his face.

"If you're fine with the decision, then get on the stage fast! It's your turn to fight." Yu Tianhao said as he got off the stage.

The 3rd stage of the battles began as cultivators began fighting for rankings.

The 3rd stage of the battle went on for longer than the second stage despite there being less number of participants. Those who fought in the third stage were the top cultivators of the Exams.

Long Chen watched the battles with great interest as he didn't need to participate in the battles himself.

Although he watched all the fights, the one he truly cares about were the battles of Shui Kingdom. Especially the battles of the people he knew.

The third round was finally over as the top 75 were decided. From the Shui Kingdom, very few had managed to get selected amongst the top 75.

The ones that Long Chen knew in the top 75 were Rank 11 and Rank 26 were held by Crown Prince Yue Zhang and Qin Ruo respectively. Rank 51 was Prince Lan from Dongxin Kingdom. The 64th rank belonged to the first Princess Yue Miao from Shui, Rank 68 was Second Prince Yue Luan, Rank 71 Third Prince Yue Ming, Rank 73 Long Xue Ying and Rank 75 was the Gu Clan's Young Master Gu Nanli.

The 2nd Princess of Shui and the 3rd Princess Yue Fei had failed to pass the 3rd stage of the sect entrance exam.

"Those who were defeated in the third stage will have a chance as well. Rank 76 to Rank 150 will have their own separate battles to determine the top 25 amongst them. Those will take the rankings from rank 76 to Rank 100. Thus, only 100 cultivators would pass."

"Those who passed the 3rd stage have already passed the exams and can choose sects of their likings and they will become the disciples of the outer sect, but they would still have to fight further as we need to decide on the rankings of Top 75. Those at better rankings will have a chance to get even better rewards!" Yu Tianhao came on the stage and said to the participants.

The ones who were defeated in the 3rd round became excited once again as they received another opportunity.

"There's an uneven number again. So Rank 1 will once again receive a free pass" Yu Tianhao said with a smile.

"Another free pass!!! Tian Shen you bastard!" Prince Lu muttered as his face distorted in anger. After the initial reaction, he managed to calm down himself.

Prince Lu walked towards the stage, though his heart was still filled with anger.

"Hey, I'm Gu Nanli from the kingdom of Shui. You might be ranked 2 but with your cultivation suppressed, we both have similar strength! I'll definitely take away your rank." Gu Nanli said with a grin as he brought out a dagger.

"A Golden Grade Weapon Flashing Knife. Looks like the Gu Clan really wants to let him have a good rank. They gave a kid their treasure weapon." Long Ren said softly as an interested smile appeared on his face.

"He can't win. Does he really think that the Crown Prince of a first rank Kingdom doesn't have a good weapon? Also, even if they're in the same cultivation realm right now, there is a huge difference between their experience and their skills " Royal Chief Jinjing gave her opinion on the matter.

"Do you really think that a knife of yours can help you defeat me? Looks like I really need to show some strength for you people to take me seriously!!!" Prince Lu said as his face turned red in anger.

"Reseria Steps! " He muttered as he used his movement skill. Although because of the restriction in cultivation, his speed was much lower than the peak, still it was too fast for Gu Nanli to react.

As Gu Nanli got into a stance to attack, a fist landed on his stomach and he was thrown outside. He coughed out a mouthful of blood as he crashed against a wall.

"Hmph... trash" Prince Lu muttered as he got off the stage.

Rank 11 Yue Zhang fought with rank 65, Li Xiao. The battle lasted for over 5 minutes before Yue Zhang managed to grab victory.

Rank 26 Qin Ruo fought the Rank 50 cultivator from the Xuan Kingdom and managed to win.

Rank 51 Prince Lan had also managed to defeat rank 25 Cultivator from Xuan Kingdom and he now held rank 25.

First Princess Yue Miao, Second Prince Yue Luan, and Third Prince Yue Fei were defeated by their opponents and retained their old ranks.

"Since now we have 38 cultivators, Rank 1 Tian Shen will fight Rank 38, Hu Man."

"Finally! I was getting bored." Long Chen muttered as he began walking towards the stage.

His opponent was a bulky man who was over 7 feet tall. He had muscles all over his body.

"I saw your first battle. Your strength is good, but you will be defeated by me! There can only be one rank 1 and that will be me" The muscular man said as an ugly smile formed on his face.

He ran towards Long Chen. Unlike what his physique suggested, the man was actually pretty fast. He ran like a bullet as he grabbed near Long Chen in an instant.

"Bone breaking palm!" He attacked Long Chen as he reached near him.

Long Chen also punched out. His fist collided with the man's palm and the man was pushed back ten steps.

"You!!! How can you have so much strength? I'm a body cultivator, You shouldn't have more strength than me!" Hu Man said with a look of disbelief on his face.

"Is there a rule that only you can cultivate physique?" Long Chen said with a chuckle as he appeared near Hu Man. He grabbed him by his neck and threw him outside the ring.

Hu Man landed on the ground and some of the dust entered his mouth. He still had a stunned look on his face.

"Interesting. The Hu clan is known for their body cultivation. For a 16-year-old boy to have a better physical cultivation... I can't help but be curious about this boy's identity." Yu Tianhao muttered as he gazed towards Long Chen.

Prince Lu fought next and defeated his opponent with just as ease. It was as if he was trying to show off how easy it was for him to win battles like this.

Rank 3 Wu Duan fought Rank 36 Ming Yin and won the battle. Similarly rank 11 Yue Zhang won against rank 28 Min Ho. Rank 13 Tao Li fought Rank 26 Qin Ruo and defeated her. Although Qin Ruo was defeated, she wasn't hurt as she had surrendered when she saw that she was unable to win.

Rank 14 Fu Chao fought against Rank 25 Prince Lu and won the battle after a long fight that lasted for over 23 minutes.

"Good battle. The 5th Round will be among the 19 participants that won in the 4th round. Since we again have an uneven number, Rank 1 Tian Shen will get another free pass."

Yu Tianhao announced the 5th round.

Long Chen had a wry smile on his face as he heard that he got another free pass while Prince Lu's expressions were getting uglier by the second.

The round was soon over as the top ten was decided.

"The 6th Round will be held now! 1st rank Long Chen vs 10th Rank Yue Zhang. 2nd rank Prince Lu vs 9th rank Qingqing. 3rd Rank Wu Duan vs 8th rank Tao Li. 4th rank Chu Fan vs 7th rank Lu Li. 5th rank Wang Che vs 6th rank Do Hu.

Long Chen got on the stage and the person who stood in front of him was the Ex Crown Prince Of Shui Kingdom, Yue Zhang.

"You did well reaching up to this point. Your Kingdom must be proud of you." Long Chen said in a heavy tone as he gazed at Yue Zhang.

"I don't know about the kingdom, but I sure do hope that my family will be happy after seeing my performance." Yue Zhang said as a bright smile appeared on his face. He couldn't help but glance at the members of the Yue Clan that stood in the arena.

Chapter 218 - 218: Flame Essence

"I don't know about the kingdom, but I sure do hope that my family will be happy after seeing my performance." Yue Zhang said as a bright smile appeared on his face. He couldn't help but glance at the members of Yue Clan that stood in the arena.

"Although your journey will end here, I am sure that you've already made them proud." Long Chen said as he stared at Yue Zhang.

"I've not been defeated yet!" Yu Zhang said as he moved from his spot. He was moving so fast that it looked like he had disappeared, but the elders and those with higher cultivation could see his movements.

"That boy has comprehended Wind Essence. That's pretty good for someone his age. No wonder he can get such a good rank despite being from a 2nd rank kingdom." Yu Tianhao looked at Yue Zhang with an interested look on his face.

Even Royal chief Jinjing had stood up as she saw the battle in the arena.

"From your expressions, it seems like you didn't know that he had comprehended Wind Essence. Although the chances are low, still, it's possible that one of those boys might comprehend the Law of Wind." Long Ren told Jinjing as he saw her expression.

"It won't be that easy. Comprehending a law is more difficult than it sounds. Although it's possible to comprehend a law after breaking through to the Earth Realm, still no one in the kingdom had managed to do it. That in itself shows how difficult it is. Only some rare people in the Empires have managed to learn a law." Jinjing sat down on the seat as she controlled herself.

"We can never know what someone can achieve. Who knows, maybe Yue Zhang would be one of those rare people." Long Ren chuckled as he looked at the battle.

"Interesting... You have learned Wind Essence. No wonder you looked so confident, but is it really that awesome?" Long Chen smiled as he disappeared from his spot. In fact, his speed seemed much faster than Yue Zhang.

"What!!! Another person who comprehended Wind Essence? Monster!!! That boy is a monster!!!" Elder Yi let out with a shocked look on his face as he saw Long Chen's movement.

"It's not just Wind Essence... His movement technique is superior to that boy as well. Even I can't tell what movement skill that is? How can that boy have such an unorthodox Movement Skill?" Yu Tianhao stood near Elder Yi and observed the battle.

Yue Zhang was stunned. Just as his attack was about to land at Long Chen, he had disappeared. Yue Zhang didn't stop as he turned around and swung his sword.

"Clank." A metallic sound came as Yue Zhang's sword collided with Long Chen's knife.

The knife was a Golden Grade artifact that Long Chen had brought in the Xuan Kingdom's branch of Treasure Pavillion. He didn't lack Demonic cores of the beasts as he had defeated many high-level beasts so he didn't face any difficulty in buying the weapon.

He didn't want anyone to see his King's sword as he had already considered the possibility of the people from the Shui Kingdom being present. They could recognize him because of his sword, thus he had purchased a knife as a weapon.

The knife and the sword collided and Yue Zhang was pushed back a step.

"Strike of the 9 skies!" Yue Zhang said loudly as he swung his sword towards Long Chen. Long Chen dodged the attack.

'I can't use 7 forms of saint sword and I don't have any other weapon-related Martial Skills. I don't want to show my other skills either, it looks like I'll have to deal with him in other ways' Long Chen thought as he dodged the attack.

He threw the knife towards Yue Zhang's shoulder. Yue Zhang dodged, but just as the knife passed by him, he had a dangerous feeling.

He looked to the side and...

"I give up..." He said as he dropped his sword to the ground. Long Chen had another knife in his hand which was just a few inches away from his neck. He knew that he was defeated.

"It was a good battle." Long Chen said as he took off the knife from his neck.

"Yeah, I never expected you to have two such knives. Thanks for showing mercy" Yue Zhang let out with a wry smile on his face. He bowed slightly before he picked up a sword and got out of the arena.

The second and the third battle was over as well. Second Rank Prince Lu and Third Rank Wu Duan had won.

The 4th and 5th battle took much longer but eventually, a victor was decided.

The 4th rank Chu Fan and 6th Rank Do Hu had won. Do Hu now held the 5th rank.

"Alright! Time for the Quarter Finals. Since we are again at an uneven number, 1st Rank Tian Shen will get another free pass. Rank 2 Prince Lu will fight Rank 5 Do Hu and Rank 3 Wu Duan will fight Rank 4 Chu Fan." Yu Tianhao announced.

"That masked boy is really lucky. Getting free passes one after another." Royal Chief Jinjing commented as she gazed towards Long Chen.

"Well... he is Rank 1. Of Course, he would receive some privileges." Long Ren said with a smile.

Prince Lu gazed at Long Chen as a bit of killing intent appeared in his eyes. His annoyance was increasing by the second.

He went onto the arena. The match was over as soon as it started as Do Hu surrendered without even exchanging a blow.

"I know my strength. This is as far as I can go." Do Hu said with a smile as he got off the stage.

"You're quite sensible." Prince Lu muttered as he got down as well. 3rd Rank Wu Duan's fight was comparatively more intense as both the fighters gave it all they had. Ultimately, it was Duan's victory.

"Since we again have an odd number, 1st Rank Tian Shen gets another free pass. He directly goes through to the finals. Rank 2 Prince Lu and Rank 3 Wu Duan will have a fight for the second spot!" Yu Tianhao said as a smile appeared on his face. At such times, he was also enjoying seeing the annoyance on the face of Prince Lu.

Prince Lu didn't say anything as he got on the stage directly. Wu Duan followed him.

"I'm already in a bad mood. You should be sensible and surrender" Prince Lu said in a heavy tone as he gazed at Wu Duan.

"I'm sorry, but I didn't come all the way to surrender." Wu Duan replied as he tightly clenched his heavy sword.

"As you wish!" Prince Lu said as anger clouded his face.

"Flaming Vajra Palm!" Prince Lu let out loud as he used his offensive Martial skill. A palm that looked like it was made from fire formed in front of Prince Lu and advanced towards Wu Duan. Wu Duan's expression changed as he sensed the power of that attack.

"Strike of Titan!" He roared loudly as he swung his sword towards the incoming palm of fire. A blinding flash of light escaped from the sword and collided with the palm. The palm was cut in two parts as the flame spread everywhere.

"It's over! " Wu Duan let out as he came out of the fire and attacked Prince Lu with his sword.

"You're right, it's over." Prince Lu let out with a smile as he dodged the attack of Wu Duan and moved to his side.

A sword made of fire appeared in his hand with which he struck down towards the hands of Wu Duan.

A metallic sound came followed by a painful cry as Wu Duan's sword fell to the ground along with his hand.

"My Hand!!!" Wu Duan groaned in pain as his hand was cut off by Prince Lu.

"I apologize. I guess I got too involved in the fight. Anyways, it's my win, right? Can you get off the stage now? I don't want any delay, because of you, between me and my goal." Prince Lu said with a smile as he gazed at Wu Duan.

Servants of the sect came and took Wu Duan along with his detached hand for treatment. Many people in the crowd had a frown on their faces as they saw the brutal attack of Prince Lu, but he didn't care at this moment.

"Tian Shen! Enough free passes! You can't hide anymore. Get on the stage and let's finish this" Prince Lu said with a smile as he looked towards Long Chen. His eyes were full of fighting intent.

"Hey... be careful. Just like you have comprehended Wind Essence, Prince Lu has comprehended Flame Essence. He used that in his last attack. His flames will become much more powerful." Just as Long Chen was going on the stage, Elder Yi went to him and informed him in a low voice.

"Thanks, Elder Yi, but I'll be fine" Long Chen said in a confident tone as he walked towards the arena.

Chapter 219 - 219: Too Brutal

"Thanks, Elder Yi, but I'll be fine" Long Chen said in a confident tone as he walked towards the arena.

"You seem pretty optimistic for someone who's about to be crushed beneath my feet" Prince Lu chuckled as he gazed at the masked boy.

"Well, I'm just happy that I won't have to hold back. Since you showed me that hurting others is allowed in the battles, I can go all out" Long Chen chuckled as he stood in front of Prince Lu.

"This battle would be pretty interesting. If only Long Tian was here... I would have loved to see his performance." Long Ren muttered as he looked at the masked boy.

"The boy is really talented. I wonder which kingdom he is from. His family is really blessed to have such a kid." Royal Chief Jinjing said in a low voice as she wondered about his identity.

"Yea... His father and mother must be pretty talented to have such a kid." Long Ren further added.

"Enough Talk. It's time for you to die" Prince Lu said in a heavy tone. He held a red sword in his hand.

"Slash of Aztec!" He said loudly as the blade of his sword started burning with fire.

He picked his sword high up in the air and struck down. A vertical arc of flame moved towards Long Chen. The blazing arc of fire left destruction in its wake as it moved towards Long Chen.

As soon as the first arc of blazing fire left his sword, Prince Lu slashed with his sword horizontally as another blazing arc of fire moved towards Long Chen. It made a shape of + as it advanced towards Long Chen.

"Good attack." Long Chen muttered. Just as the fire reached near Long Chen, he jumped high in the sky and landed a few meters ahead, but the flames had passed him by then.

Elder Yu Tianhao stood outside the arena. He formed a shield as he stopped the fire from striking others present in the arena.

"There's really a Flame Essence hidden in his fires." Yu Tianhao muttered as he looked at the crack that was formed on his shield. He gazed towards Prince Lu with great interest.

"How can he jump so high? Isn't their cultivation restricted to the 1st stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm?" Chief Jinjing asked Long Ren with a curious look on her face.

"Of Course his cultivation is restricted but the Essence and Laws don't fall under cultivation. Their cultivation is low right now, but their comprehension of their respective elements is quite good. That's why Tian Shen could jump that high despite only being at the 5th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm. Similarly, Prince Lu's attack was able to create a crack in the shield of Yu Tianhao. It's all because of the Essence they learned." Long Ren explained to Jinjing as he continued watching the fight with great interest.

Long Chen didn't stop moving as he used his mind Essence along with the Earthly Monarch Effect. He disappeared from the view of others and appeared behind Prince Lu. He stabbed his knife towards the back of Prince Lu but before his knife could even reach near him, A Ring of fire appeared around Long Chen.

Prince Lu created some distance between him and Long Chen as he stepped back while Long Chen was trapped in the ring of fire.

"Thanks for falling into my trap. Now you should burn and beg for forgiveness! Only then shall I take you out. Don't think that you can escape my fire! I used my Flame Essence to create that Ring of Fire, It's impossible to escape from it with your cultivation restricted. Even your wind essence can't help you!" Prince Lu said with a bright smile on his face.

He watched the fire burning with full force and his smile didn't leave his face.

"I'll see how long you can hold on." He chuckled as he stared at the fire.

'You think your Flame Essence can stop me? Naive! You may have learned the flame essence but even if you had learned the actual Law of Fire, It wouldn't be able to do anything against the Supreme Law of space' Long Chen thought as he looked at the fire.

His eyes changed color and now looked like starry space. A transparent protective layer formed around his body. It was like his body was in a different space altogether as the fire wasn't even able to touch him. Long Chen straight away walked out of the fire.

"This... this shouldn't be possible! How can you escape my ring of fire unharmed!!!" Prince Lu said as he took a step back. A look of disbelief had shrouded his face.

"You call that fire? Too weak." Long Chen said in a serious tone. To Prince Lu, that sounded like the voice of a grim reaper.

He gripped his sword as he ran towards Long Chen. He swung his sword towards Long Chen, but Long Chen disappeared from his position as he dodged the attack. He threw a knife towards the shoulders of Prince Lu, which he dodged easily.

"You used it the last time you fought! The same trick won't work on me!" Prince Lu said as he swung his sword towards his back where Long Chen had the highest chance of appearing.

"Wrong direction." Long Chen said in a soft voice as he grabbed his neck. Long Chen picked Prince Lu in three air and thrashed him on the ground.

A crater was created in the arena that was made from stone, but Long Chen didn't leave him. He picked him up again and once again thrashed him on the ground.

"Little friend Tian, That's enough. He is defeated." Long Chen had Prince Lu in the air and was about to thrash him again when a voice came in.

"Why should I? He still hasn't accepted his defeat." Long Chen chuckled as he replied to Yi Tianhao who had just talked to him.

"I... ac..." Prince Lu heard his words and was just about to accept his defeat when Long Chen again thrashed him on the ground without giving him a chance to complete his sentence.

"I Surrender!" Long Chen picked up Prince Lu once again, but this time Prince Lu was much faster as he hurriedly accepted his defeat despite being in so much pain. Many of his bones were broken.

"Oh well, it was fun while it lasted." Long Chen muttered as he once again thrashed him on the ground.

Long Chen left Prince Lu behind as he got off the stage.

"You're too brutal." Yu Tianhao said with a frown.

"You should have said that when someone's hand was cut off. I might have misunderstood your silence as it being allowed." Long Chen said with a chuckle as he faced Yu Tianhao.

Some servants came on the stage and took Prince Lu for treatment.

"Alright, Exams are over! The reward and selection ceremony will begin in 5 hours right here." Yu Tianhao said as he turned back and left the arena.

Long Chen and the others rested right there in the arena. Elder Yi had stayed behind with Long Chen.

"We still have 5 hours. How about I give you a tour of the Sect? We have some pretty amazing places." Elder Yi told Long Chen with a wide smile on his face.

"It's fine Elder. I don't feel like going anywhere."

"Oh, right, Will all the sect masters come here for the ceremony? "

"Yup, all 5 of them will come."

"What about the people from Thunder Giant Sect? I heard that they came here to watch the exams. I didn't see them here?" Long been asked with a confused look on his face.

"They have a special status, thus we gave them a spectators mirror. They watched everything from the comfort of their room. I'm sure they will come with the Sect Masters."

"Oh, that's good," Long Chen said as he smiled behind his mask.

"Little friend, Do you want to join the Thunder Giant Sect?"

Without waiting for Long Chen's response, the Elder again spoke.

"I'm sure that you will be taken to the Thunder Giant Sect, but you should join our sect before that. Our sect master will arrange for your transfer to the Thunder Giant Sect." Elder Yi said with a smile.

"Oh, Don't worry. I'm doing exactly what I'm supposed to do" Long Chen said as a serious look appeared on his face behind his mask.

Time kept passing away and soon the 5 hours were over. The arena was slowly filled by the elders who stood in lines to welcome the Sect Masters.

After a short time, The sect masters of 5 great sects of the Xuan Kingdom entered the arena. All of their gaze was on Long Chen.

Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect was at the front followed by the sect master of the striking sword sect then the sect master of Earthly mountain sect behind him was the sect master of Floating cloud sect.

They all wore luxurious clothes and a heavy aura surrounded them which showed off the incredible strength that they possessed.

Chapter 220 - 220: What If I Accidentally

They all wore luxurious clothes and a heavy aura surrounded them, which showed off the incredible strength that they possessed.

All 5 of them walked to the main stage and stood beside each other. The top 100 cultivators stood in front of them in a group.

"Are they waiting for someone? Why aren't they saying anything?" Chief Jinjing asked Long Ren as she saw the silence on stage.

"They might be waiting for someone. Let's wait." Long Ren responded.

After a few minutes, the sounds of footsteps were heard. The arena was so silent, that everyone managed to clearly hear the sound. They turned back and saw two people coming towards them.

One of them was a beautiful girl, while the other one was a bulky man.

"Hey, I recognize her! She is Miss Ling! The one who was selected by a great cultivator of the Thunder Giant Sect! Now she stays in the North Moon Empire."

"Does this mean the boy beside her is the guest that came with her from the Empire?"

"That must be it. No wonder the Sect Masters were waiting" The cultivators started whispering amongst themselves as they put the pieces together.

'Finally, you're here... You made me wait for a Long Time.' Long Chen thought as he gazed at the boy. Although he wanted to kill him badly, he didn't let his killing intent leak out even a bit.

"Hmm?" You there! Take off your mask!" The boy who was walking together with Ling sensed something weird. He looked towards the crowd and finally his gaze landed on a masked boy.

The golden eyes of the masked boy reminded him of Long Chen.

"Me? I don't feel like taking my mask off." Long Chen said in a casual tone.

"Little Friend... Please listen to Master Ruan. He is a cultivator from the Thunder Giant Sect of the North Moon Empire.

"So...?" Long Chen asked in an unconvinced tone.

"Get him to take his mask off!" Ruan said as he looked towards the 5 Sect Masters.

"Little Guy, please take your mask off. It's for your own future. You are really talented and your life would be really good if you can get selected by the Thunder Giant Sect through us." The Sect Master of the Western Warriors Sect said with a pleasing smile.

Long Chen looked towards the others, but they said the same thing.

"Alright." Long Chen smirked behind his mask as he moved his hand towards his mask.

Qin Rue, Yue Fei, and Long Xue Ying all looked towards him with great interest. The focus of the screen was on Long Chen as well, thus the whole crowd was looking at him.

Long Chen touched his mask and took it off slowly.

"What the...?" Chief Jinjing and Long Ren both were stunned as they saw the face of the boy. Even Ling and Ruan couldn't help but take a step back in shock.

"That..." Yu Tianhao frowned as he saw the face of the masked boy.

"You're so ugly! No wonder you wear a mask!" Ruan said with a disgusted look on his face.

Long Chen's face looked completely different from his original face. His face looked exactly like the face of Tian Shen that he saw in his dreams, but there was a big sword scar on his face. The Scar went on from one side of his face to the other side at an inclined angle.

"Happy Now?" Long Chen smiled as he put the mask back on his face. As he put the mask back, He formed a peace symbol with his hands. One of the people sitting in the stands stood up as she noticed the symbol. She began walking towards the exit.

'Is something wrong with that masked girl? She's leaving at this time?' The ones who sat near her thought, but soon stopped caring.

"Hmph... I thought you were someone else. That bastard has already died, but I still had to be sure." Ruan said with a smile as he walked towards the stage.

"Who had died senior brother?" Ling asked Ruan as she followed him.

"You don't need to know about it, Junior Sister Ling," Ruan responded.

"Was I really wrong?" Qin Ruo muttered as she looked towards Long Chen. Yue Fei also shook her head in disappointment as she saw that the masked boy was not Long Chen.

"Alright. Since everyone's here, let's begin." Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said with a smile.

"The names of the cultivators, each one of us selected, to be the inner sect disciple will be shown on the screen. If your name is selected by two or more of us, then you can choose the sect that you desire." Sect Master of the Striking Sword Sect pointed towards the large screen floating in the air.

5 lists of names appeared on the screen before the names of the sects.

Glorious Blossom Sect had selected 25 cultivators to be the inner sect disciple, Striking Sword Sect chose 28, Western Warriors sect chose 36 cultivators, Floating Cloud Sect selected 29 cultivators and Earthly Mountain Sect chose 28 cultivators.

It didn't come as a shock to anyone that more than 50 percent of the names were common in the lists of all 5 sect masters.

One of these common names was Prince Lan of Dongxin Empire, Prince Yue Zhang of the Shui Kingdom and Qin Ruo of the Shui Kingdom. Despite not being in the top 75, Yue Fei was also a popular name amongst the Cultivators because of her grade 6 talent.

Unsurprisingly, Most of those cultivators chose either the Glorious Blossom Sect or the Striking Sword Sect. The Cultivators who chose the other three sects were quite rare.

Prince Lan chose the Striking Sword Sect while Prince Yue Zhang, Princess Yue Fei and Qin Ruo chose to become the inner disciple of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"Some of the participants in the exams were really incredible and deserve a better position. We all offer Lu Wen the position of the core disciple. He would have the right to choose the sect after he is done with his treatment. He will be rewarded after he selects a sect accordingly.

"As for the final person and the rank one of our exams... Tian Shen... Your talent is incredible and you were told all our offers at the start of the exams. You said that you will make a decision at the end. I hope you enjoyed the

journey, but it's time for you to choose... Which one of our sect will you choose?" Striking Sword Sect's Sect Master said as he looked at Long Chen.

"I... I chose the western warriors sect." Long Chen said with a smile.

"What!" The expression on the faces of all the sect masters changed as a frown appeared on their faces. The Sect Master of the Western Warriors Sect was also shocked before a wide smile bloomed on his face.

'Has this boy gone crazy? Why the hell is he selecting the weakest sect amongst the 5?' The Sect Master of the Earthly Mountain Sect said with a frown.

"Amazing! Quickly come to me, little friend!!! Let me give you a reward." Sect Master of the Western Warriors sect smiled as he looked at Long Chen with the brightest smile.

"Think once more little guy...You should choose a stronger sect!" The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said to Long Chen in a heavy tone.

"I have already made my choice." Long Chen said as he walked towards the stage.

Coincidentally, the Sect Master of the Western Warriors sect was standing at the other corner of the stage... right beside Ruan. On the other side of Ruan stood the Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

Long Chen stepped on the stage and passed by all the sect Masters until he reached the Sect Master of the Western Warriors Sect.

Long Chen walked past three sect masters and finally reached in front of the Glorious Blossom Sect Master.

"You still have a chance... Choose my sect." The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said once more in an effort to convince him.

Long Chen didn't stop and took another step forward, but before his feet could land on the ground, he disappeared.

Long Chen appeared behind Ruan. There was a knife on his hand which now rested against the neck of Ruan.

"Do you know what you're doing?" Ruan said in a heavy tone.

"You shouldn't move little friend. Your neck might get cut accidentally." Long Chen said in a casual voice.

"Tian Shen!!! It's not the time to joke. Please leave Master Ruan!" The sect master of the Striking Sword Sect said in a serious tone as he brought out his sword.

Long Chen's knife pressed against Ruan's neck and a slight cut appeared on his neck. Blood started coming out from the cut.

"Oops... Are you trying to get him killed? What if I had accidentally cut off his neck? Would you be able to answer the powers behind him? You don't want to be responsible for his death, do you?" Long Chen said in a serious tone as if he was actually worried that he would accidentally behead Ruan.

Chapter 221 - 221: Leave My Disciple Immediately

"Oops... Are you trying to get him killed? What if I had accidentally cut off his neck? Would you be able to answer the powers behind him? You don't want to be responsible for his death, do you?" Long Chen said in a heavy tone as if he was actually worried that he would accidentally behead Ruan.

"Do you realize the consequences of what you're doing? You will die if anything happens to him! Be smart and free him!" Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said as he stared at Long Chen.

He even spread some of his 10th stage Earth Realm aura. All the cultivators on the ground got down to their knees as they were unable to bear with the aura.

'No cultivators below the Earth Realm stage can stay standing in front of my aura. I will grab him when he loses balance.' This was the thought going on in the mind of the Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"Hmm?" A frown appeared on his face as he saw Long Chen unaffected in the slightest.

"How can you still stay standing?" He asked as he stared at Long Chen with a look of disbelief on his face.

"Oh right," Long Chen let out as if a sudden realization struck him.

"Such a heavy aura... it's so difficult to control myself. I'm about to fall to the ground" Long Chen said in a pained voice as his knife made another cut on Ruan's neck.

"You bastard!!! Do you want to get me killed? Stop it immediately!!!" Ruan let out loudly. The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect stopped his aura and stood still as he heard Ruan's pained voice.

"You... please leave Senior Brother Ruan... he did nothing wrong." A worried female voice came. It was Ling who stood nearby. She begged Long Chen to release Ruan.

"Little girl, Not just him...I would have killed you as well... I'm leaving you alive in consideration of some things." Long Chen said as killing intent leaked from him.

'I have no proof of you being involved in that scheme, but you being together with them would have been enough for me to kill you! But Considering Yu

Tianhao and his relationship with my father, I won't kill you.' Long Chen thought as he gazed at her face.

"Step back 50 meters or I will slice his neck!" Long Chen said to the Sect Masters.

The whole atmosphere was heavy as the Sect Masters couldn't understand what they should do.

The crowd was silent as they saw what they never expected to see. The strongest people of the Xuan Kingdom were helpless in front of a 16-year-old boy.

"Don't hurt him..! We will move back."

All the sect masters stepped back. Although they moved back 50 meters, they had created a circle around Long Chen to stop him from escaping.

"My dear Ruan... Would you please open your mouth?" Long Chen said in a gentle tone.

"You bastard... what do you want to do!" Ruan responded.

Long Chen sliced his neck again as another knife wound appeared on his neck.

"Ahh...you bastard!!!" Ruan roared pain as he felt the pain.

"Be a good boy and open your mouth. Oh right, don't forget to bring your tongue out" Long Chen again said with a smile.

Ruan unwillingly opened his mouth and brought his tongue out of his mouth a little.

"Good boy..." Long Chen chuckled as he moved his other hand and grabbed the tongue of Ruan.

"Waa..." Ruan didn't understand what Long Chen was going before extreme pain stabbed his soul. He felt like he was killed by a thousand swords as his tongue was pulled out by Long Chen with full strength.

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa...." He roared loudly as tears appeared in his eyes. His mouth was filled with blood and his eyes had turned red.

"How does it feel? This pain is still nothing compared to what's about to come." Long Chen laughed behind Ruan.

"Stop!!! Don't move... or he will be killed!" Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect was about to run towards Long Chen when the Sect Master of Striking Sword Sect stopped him.

"But we can't watch it happen either! That boy is crazy!" he roared loudly.

"We can't take the risk. What if he killed the boy because of you?" The sect master of the Striking Sword Sect said as he looked at him.

The sect master of the Glorious Blossom Sect calmed down and stopped himself.

Amongst all the trouble, no one noticed Ling who brought out a communication talisman and sent a secret message to someone.

There was a place where the Qi was much denser than it was at Xuan Kingdom. The buildings were better constructed, the streets were wider and the people were stronger. This place was the North Moon Empire.

Many sects were established in the capital city of the North Moon Empire, But only a few of those Sects were at the true peak of strength. One of the strongest sects of the Empire was the Thunder Giant Sect. The sect had many genius cultivators and the Sect Master of the sect was one of the strongest persons of the Empire.

The buildings of the sect were made with the strongest materials found in the North Moon Empire. The sect was much larger than the Glorious Blossom Sect.

The sect had many cultivators who had a cultivation higher than the Earth Realm, most of whom were the elders of the sect. The Grand Elder was one amongst those. He was a Sky Realm cultivator.

He was cultivating inside his room when the communication talisman started shining. He frowned as he began listening to the message.

"What???" He stood up with a shocked look on his face.

He hurriedly left his room and began walking towards the Sect Masters Room.

In a few minutes, he reached the Sect Master's courtyard.

"Do you need something?" Sect Master of the Thunder Giant Sect asked the Grand Elder as he saw him hurriedly coming towards him.

"Sect Master! I need 20 'thousand miles travel talismans'! I have five on me and I came here to ask the other 15 from you." Grand Elder told the sect master of the Thunder Giant Sect.

"20? Do you know how valuable a thousand miles talismans is? Why do you need so many?" The Sect Master replied with a shocked look on his face.

"My personal discipline!!! His life is in danger! I need to get to him quickly." Grand Elder said with a distressed look on his face.

"Alright." The sect master gazed at the worried look on the Grand Elder's face and finally nodded. He threw a Storage Ring towards the Grand Elder.

Grand Elder caught the ring and hurriedly flew high in the sky. He used a thousand miles talisman and disappeared.

"He didn't even thank me, but that's understandable" The sect chuckled as he left towards a certain place.

"You like pushing people to their deaths right? How does it feel when your karma returns to haunt you." Long Chen said in a low voice as he brought his face closer to Ruan's ears. His voice returned to normal.

Ruan's eyes opened wide as he recognized that voice. No one but Long Chen could know about that event.

"Yuuu aaa ooo yeee!!!" He tried saying something but his mouth was filled with blood and his tongue was missing. No one understood a single word he was saying, but Long Chen knew what he was saying.

"Of Course I am. I can't die before taking care of you, can I?" Long Chen grinned as he told Ruan.

"You can't escape if you kill him! Leave him and we can still handle this matter!" The Sect Masters still tried to convince Long Chen to free Ruan.

"Thank you, but you don't have to worry about me." Long Chen told the Sect Elders.

"Who dares to hurt my disciple!!!" A loud roared was heard as an old man appeared above everyone's head. A pressing aura spread from him that even affected the Earth Realm cultivators.

The man had white hair, but no beard. He looked like he was in his late 40s.

"Master!" Ling called out excitedly as she looked at the old man.

"You!!! Leave my disciple immediately and I'll make your death less painful!" The Grand Elder got down from the air and landed in front of Long Chen.

"Sorry, not interested," Long Chen said with a smile as he slashed with his knife. The head of Ruan was separated from his body amidst the shocked look of everyone.

"Aaaaa" A loud scream escaped from Ling's mouth as tears appeared in her eyes.

"You bastard!!!" A heavy aura spread from the Grand Elder that focused on Long Chen. The gravity around him changed as he was forced down to his knees.

Long Chen tried moving his body, but under the effect of sky realm aura, he couldn't even move his finger.

"I promise that you will die a gruesome death!" Grand Elder said in a heavy voice. The voice sounded like it came straight from hell.

Long Chen could do nothing but watch as the Grand Elder slowly walked towards him.

"I will cut both your legs and hands right now and take the remainder of your body with me to the Sect! There I will show you what it means by a fate worse than death!" The Grand Elder told Long Chen as he continued walking towards him.

Chapter 222 - 222: Trapped?

"I will cut both your legs and hands right now and take the remainder of your body with me to the Sect! There I will show you what it means by a fate worse than death!" The Grand Elder told Long Chen as he continued walking towards him.

"Eh... I never expected a Sky Realm cultivator to be here." Long Chen opened his mouth and let out with some effort.

"But do you think you can stop me if I want to leave?" Long Chen said in a low voice.

"Even if your father came here, he wouldn't be able to save you! It's impossible for you to escape! I'm not an Earth Realm trash!" Grand Elder said as he heard Long Chen's words. He intensified his force.

"We'll see" Long Chen smiled as his eyes changed color.

His eyes changed from their usual Golden color to the starry black. Long Chen disappeared from his position and appeared 100 meters away.

Being freed from the pressing force he ran towards the hallway.

'Hmm?' The Grand Elder frowned as he saw Long Chen disappear.

"You think you can run from death?" He said loudly as he flew after Long Chen.

Long Chen hurriedly entered the first room he passed by and closed the door.

"You can never escape! You will be punished!" Grand Elder said as he appeared in front of the room.

He used some mysterious skill and the whole door was blasted off to a distance. He entered inside, but he couldn't help but frown as he found the room empty.

"You bastard! I will not let you escape!" He flew up in the sky and looked at the Sect. Using his divine sense, he scanned the whole sect.

"I can't find him! Close all the exits! Everyone leaving here needs to be checked! If that boy escaped from here, your punishments will be worse than death!" Grand Elder said as he looked at all 5 Sect Masters.

"I swear that I will kill you boy!" Grand Elder roared loudly. His voice resounded in every part of the city.

"That old man sounds really furious," Long Chen stood in an empty alley 200 kilometers away from the sect as the spatial crack disappeared behind him.

He took off his mask and changed his clothes. Using his Heaven's Shroud, he changed his aura. He now looked like a normal 16-year-old boy. His cultivation was now at the 6th stage of the Spirit Establishment Realm.

Long Chen left the alley and walked towards his hotel room with unsteady steps. Although he was able to escape, he was internally harmed from the pressing gravitational force that the Grand Elder used, but he didn't let it show back there.

"Thankfully, I didn't use Spatial Travel before during the day, or I wouldn't be able to escape this time. I've used teleport to the limit as well... If I was caught again by him, I wouldn't be able to escape his pressing force." Long Chen muttered as he walked slowly.

After walking for a little while, he finally reached the hotel. He climbed the stairs and went to his respective room. He knocked on Mingyu's room.

"You're finally here." Mingyu hugged him tightly as soon as she saw Long Chen standing in front of the door.

They both entered the room as Long Chen closed the door behind him.

"I was worried when I heard that scary voice... I felt like it was a really strong cultivator. What actually happened after I left?" Mingyu asked with a worried look on her face.

"I don't think we can leave the city for a while. There's a Sky Realm cultivator here. He appeared out of nowhere... It turned out that he was the master of Ruan and Ling." Long Chen informed her as he sat on the chair

"What? What is a sky realm cultivator doing here? Shouldn't he be in the North Moon Empire?" Mingyu exclaimed with shock.

"I seriously have no idea, the only thing that I know is that he'll be searching for me throughout the city like crazy. It's good that no one knows what I look like." Long Chen muttered with a serious look on his face.

"It's already good that you managed to escape from a sky realm cultivator" Mingyu let out with a relieved look on her face.

"As long as he doesn't know what you look like, it'll be really difficult for him to find you. Your fake cultivation will help us as well. We just need to lay low for a short time before everything calms down."

Mingyu said to Long Chen as she gazed at him.

"Only time can tell, We should be prepared for anything." Long Chen said in a soft voice.

"I'll stay in your room. I will cultivate and recover my strength. If there's anything, wake me up." Long Chen said as he stood up from the chair, walked towards a corner and sat down.

He closed his eyes and began cultivating.

'That masked boy!!! He can only be young master Long Chen... I can't believe that he was actually successful in killing a cultivator from the Thunder Giant Sect. The cultivators from the Empires are fierce. I need to help him with information about the lockdown and other related things."

There was a girl amidst the crowd who looked at everything happening in the sect carefully. She was the sister of the King of Huanji Kingdom, Princess Zhiqing.

The whole city was in chaos. There was a lockdown in the whole city. Even the Royal family was involved and locked all the roads out of the city. Most of the Earth Realm cultivators were used to search for the boy.

A portrait of Long Chen was created from the description given by the sect master's of the 5 sects. The portraits were distributed to all the guards of the city.

The Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect held a paper in his hand. This was the portrait of Long Chen, but he didn't know that the person in the portrait was not Long Chen, but Tian Shen. He has no idea that Long Chen would have been using a heavenly artifact that helped him change his appearance... even the Earth Realm cultivators were not able to feel anything strange.

He was in deep thoughts as he stared at the portrait.

'How was he able to escape from my grip? That teleportation... How can he have a talisman that was able to make him change positions? Even if that was

possible, how was he able to use that talisman? He shouldn't have been able to move even a single finger... let alone using a talisman.' Grand Elder thought.

"Was he an assassin sent by another Empire? Why would he be after Ruan? Did Ruan do something to offend someone? Or was his intention to hurt me indirectly?"

Grand Elder floated down to the ground and landed in front of Ling.

"Tell me, Ling... What did you guys do after you people left the Sect? Tell me everything without leaving a single detail!" Grand Elder asked Ling in full seriousness.

"Yes, master. After we left the sect we...." Ling began telling him everything that transpired after they left the sect.

"... We left that ancient tomb with those two people. In the middle of our trip back to the Xuan Kingdom, I looked back only to see that those two were missing. I asked Senior Sister Meng and Senior Brother Ruan about where they were... their answer was that those two asked to land on the ground. They had a separate destination, So Senior Sister Meng helped them and left them on the ground before taking to the air again."

" We came to the Xuan Kingdom and stayed in the Glorious Blossom Sect. After a while, we all discovered that the artifacts that we found in that tomb were all fake... There were no artifacts in any of our rings. Senior Sister Meng went back to her room in a hurry. After she came out, she looked to be in a bad mood and said that she was leaving."

"Both of us stayed here in the sect while the Senior Sister left. Nothing major happened in the next few days and we just stayed in our rooms and cultivated, until today when we came out. That masked boy attacked Senior Brother Ruan and placed a knife on his neck."

"That was when I sent you that message. He also tore off Seniors Brother Ruan's tongue before he said something in his ears. I wasn't able to hear what he said, but Senior Brother Ruan looked quite shocked. It was at that time when the master came..."

"Enough... I already know what happened after that!" Grand Elder stopped her as he knew what happened next.

"Those two people... from your description, it is clear that they were from an Empire... and quite a strong one at that. Unfortunately, you people didn't

discover which sect they were from." Grand Elder let out with a thoughtful look on her face.

He brought out a transmission talisman from his storage ring and sent a message.

A few minutes passed before he got the reply from his transmission talisman. His face distorted as he heard the reply.

"Those Idiots! How can they kill someone from an unknown Empire! Those troublemakers! "

Grand Elder cursed as he got the answer from Meng. She accepted that they killed those two.

"There's no doubt about it! The masked boy was an assassin from the Empire those two belonged to. They sent him here to get revenge for those two people. Which Empire might that be? Is it the Syrong Empire? " Grand Elder said with a serious look on his hand.

"The chances that the boy is still in the city are quite low. There's a good chance that he has a thousand miles talismans as well since he was sent here to assassinate my disciple."Grand Elder continued as he looked towards the sky.

Chapter 223 - 223: Isn't It Too Fast?

"The chances that the boy is still in the city are quite low. There's a good chance that he has thousand miles talismans as well since he was sent here to assassinate my disciple." Grand Elder continued as he looked towards the sky.

"Let me try one more time." The Grand Elder said as he left the sect. He moved through the streets of the city as he used his divine sense to sense his surroundings in search of Long Chen.

With his high speed, he was able to cover the city much faster.

"Hmm?" Mingyu sensed someone's divine sense pass through the hotel, but she didn't react. She kept drinking the tea she had in her hand. The divine sense soon disappeared.

Grand Elder scanned the whole city after much effort, but just as he had expected... he didn't find the young boy he was looking for. After his hours of search, he did find a lot of young kids who had a similar physique to Long Chen, but they all had weak cultivation. None of them had a cultivation higher than the 6th stage of Spirit Establishment Realm.

"Don't worry, Great Master! We have locked down the whole city, we will definitely find that boy." The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect walked up to the Grand Elder as he saw him coming back.

"Hmph! You trash! You couldn't do anything to maintain the safety of my disciples, what can you do now? The assassin has already left the city." Grand Elder sneered coldly as he walked forward, ignoring the Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"Ling, We are leaving and going back to the Empire!" Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect said to Ling, after that he walked towards the dead body of Ruan.

"I'm sorry my disciple... Master wasn't able to protect you... but I promise that I will do everything to find the person who killed you and the Empire that backed him." Grand Elder said as he clenched his teeth. His fists were closed so tightly, that his palms had started bleeding. He placed the body of Ruan inside his storage ring.

Ling bid her farewell to her father and left with the Grand Elder. The Grand Elder hadn't brought his flying beast, thus he left on Ruan's flying beast while Ling used her own.

Grand Elder had left and the lockdown was released. The whole city calmed down and the Royal family breathed in relief because there was no loss of property after Ruan's murder. They were worried that if they couldn't find the killer, Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect would destroy their kingdom.

Thankfully Grand Elder controlled his anger and didn't cause any destruction as he left.

"Just who was that boy? He killed Master Ruan and escaped the City in front of a Sky Realm Elder? That boy... was he really from another Empire? Thankfully, we didn't attack that boy." The Sect Master of the Striking Sword Sect said.

"I was wondering how there could be a 7th-grade talent. So he was from an Empire! That makes more sense now." The Sect Master of the Earthly Mountain Sect responded.

"So much has happened today, why is the Grand Elder of our sect still not here? Does he really care more about his cultivation, than about our sect?" The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect asked Yu Tianhao with anger on his face.

"I...I don't know the reason, Master" Yu Tianhao responded.

"Forget it! I'll go talk to him myself!" The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said in annoyance as he left.

He reached the snowy mountain after a short while.

"Sect Master!" Both the guards standing at the entrance of the courtyard bowed as they saw the Sect Master coming to them.

"Rise! Is the Grand Elder still inside?" He asked the guards.

"Yes, Master! The Grand Elder hasn't left his courtyard in the last 5 days."

"Hmph... even after such commotion? I'll go see for myself what he's so busy with!" The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect pushed the door with much force. The door was broken and the Sect Master entered inside.

He walked through the courtyard in search of the Grand Elder until he reached his bedroom.

"What the!!!" His eyes opened wide in shock as he stood still unable to move even a step forward. The Grand Elder... the second strongest cultivator of the sect was lying dead in front of him.

Although the Grand Elder was only a 7th Stage Earth Realm cultivator and was quite weak when compared with the Sect Master who had the cultivation of a 10th stage Earth Realm cultivator, he was still quite strong.

"Who did it? Was it that masked boy? H... How can it happen..." He stood there unable to understand anything.

The day passed and the next day arrived. The city that looked like it had stopped amidst the chaos of yesterday, again began looking full of life.

Long Chen opened his eyes as he finally ended his confusion.

'Although most of my internal injuries have healed, I'm still not fully recovered.' Long Chen thought as he stood up. He turned back only to find Mingyu who was sleeping while sitting on the chair.

"Don't you have a bed for sleeping?" Long Chen gazed at her with a smile when suddenly there was a heavy knock on their door. Long Chen got alert and even Mingyu woke up.

"Open the door! It's me!" Came a voice from outside. Long Chen relaxed somewhat and walked to the door. He opened it and found Princess Zhiqing standing at the door.

"How's the situation outside?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

"Everything's quite good now! The Grand Elder from the Thunder Giant Sect has left with Ling. The lockdown is lifted and everything's back to normal." Zhiqing said with a smile.

"Hmm? Isn't it too fast?" Long Chen thought with a frown.

"Well, yeah. I thought the lockdown and search would go on for days, but the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect said that the masked boy has already left." Zhiqing replied to Long Chen as she grinned. She walked inside the room and closed the door.

"That's quite good." A smile appeared on Long Chen's face.

"Yup. So... where do you plan to go next? " Zhiqing asked with a curious look on her face.

"Of Course to the North Moon Empire... There is still someone left. Either way, the North Moon Empire is a stopgap between me and my true destination." Long Chen said softly.

'Ghost Temple... I will definitely find you... and take back everything that you took from me.' Long Chen thought as a grave expression appeared on his face.

"Why don't you ask the Empire behind you to help? It's really not safe going against the Thunder Giant Sect alone! You almost died today!" Zhiqing said with a concerned look on her face

'We would have if he was actually from an Empire' Mingyu thought with a wry smile on her face as she heard Zhiqing's words.

"We don't need them for this small task! I won't need any help." Long Chen said as he turned back and walked to the chair.

"I know I can't change your mind. So... when will you be leaving?" Zhiqing inquired.

"We'll leave tomorrow. Why? Do you want to come with us?." Long Chen asked with an amused smile on his face.

"Yup." Zhiqing hurriedly responded.

"Are you serious? We're not going on a picnic." Long Chen said to her as he realized that she was serious.

"I know that it's not a picnic, but I'll be fine. Also, I can cook for you and take care of other things on the journey! I promise that I will not be a burden on you." Zhiqing said in an effort to convince him.

"What do you say?" Long Chen looked towards Mingyu and asked.

Mingyu looked towards Long Chen, then towards Zhiqing before she shook her head slightly.

"I will follow whatever decision you take." She said to Long Chen.

"Hmm..." Long Chen fell in deep thoughts. He kept tapping his finger on his knees as he thought.

"Alright, You can come with us." Long Chen finally nodded his head as he told her.

"Awesome! " Zhiqing smiled brightly as she moved forward and kissed Long Chen on his cheeks.

"I'll complete the preparation and tell General Yao." She said as she left the room.

"Ahh... She did... abruptly" Long Chen was unable to find words to speak as he saw the weird look on Mingyu's face.

"It's fine. You don't have to explain." Mingyu said, but her actions seemed to say the opposite. She walked towards her bedroom and closed the door.

"Why do I feel that she's angry?" Long Chen thought with a wry smile on his face.

"Geez... it's difficult to understand people." Long Chen muttered as he stood up. He walked towards the window and looked outside.

His eyes opened wide in shock as he saw the long family walking on the streets in front of his hotel. It looked like they were shopping.

There was Long Ren, Long Xue Ying, Xue, Mei.

Chapter 224 - 224: I Was Late

His eyes opened wide in shock as he saw the long family walking on the streets in front of his hotel. It looked like they were shopping.

There was Long Ren, Long Xue Ying, Xue, Mei. They stopped in front of a shop as they began looking at things.

Long Chen stood still behind the window as his eyes never left them. His grandfather... One of the two important family members he actually cared about... Then there was Xue and Mei, whom he already considered his woman. Long Xue Ying... his first kiss... the woman he still held some feelings for. The feelings that he himself couldn't understand.

"I... I have been gone for a long time... They must be worried. I must talk to them so that they aren't worried. Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect has left, and no one knows what the killer actually looks like. It should be alright for me to go out now." Long Chen said to himself to convince himself.

He turned back and left the room. He went down the stairs in a hurry and crossed the threshold of the hotel, stepping his feet on the street outside the hotel.

He looked towards the direction where he saw them standing previously, but the spot was empty. His family wasn't there anymore.

He ran in that direction.

"Ah.. The people that were standing here a little while ago... where did they go?" Long Chen asked the shopkeeper.

"The people that were looking around? They went in that direction and turned left at the first turn." The shopkeeper pointed towards the other end of the road.

"Thank you for the help!" Long Chen thanked him and ran in the direction he was told.

"What??? Are you saying that he killed the disciple of a Sky Realm cultivator in front of his eyes?" Back at the Glorious Blossom Sect, Prince Lu had woken up after being unconscious for the whole night.

He couldn't believe it when he was told about the events that transpired after he lost consciousness.

He felt a chill run down his spine when he was told about it in great detail.

"I...I offended someone who was possibly from an empire?" His head was aching the more he thought about it. His heart was beating faster and he found it hard to breathe.

"Yeah... Even though he left you alive, We can't be sure if he will never come back to you. You better stay with me for the next few days! " The Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect said to Prince Lu in full seriousness.

He had seen how easy it was for that masked boy to kill people, he couldn't let his nephew die as well. He was a grade 6 talent after all.

"Please, God! Don't let me see that calamity ever again." Prince Lu prayed to god as he tried to control his shivering.

"Those necklaces look good. Do any of you want those? I'll pay." Long Ren noticed a small shop that was selling jewelry. He said to the girls as he pointed towards the shop.

"Sure! Xue, Mei Let's go check it out! I am now the outer sect disciple of the Glorious Blossom Sect. It's my treat!" Long Xue Ying said with an excited look on her face as she grabbed the hands of Xue and Mei. She took them to the shop. Long Ren followed them with a smile.

All three of them looked around the shop for a long time before they finally selected a necklace for themselves.

"How does it look on me?" Long Xue Ying showed the necklace she had selected to Xue and Mei as she asked for their opinion.

"It looks quite good." Came the reply, but it was neither the voice of Xue nor the voice of Mei that said it.

All four of them turned back in the direction where that voice came from as their mouth opened wide.

"Little bastard, We finally found you!" Long Ren said as a smile bloomed on his face.

Long Chen was standing in front of him.

The eyes of Xue and Mei had already begun getting wet as they gazed at the face they longed to see for such a long time. To them, it felt like they hadn't met Long Chen for years.

He took a step forward and placed his hands on the shoulders of Long Chen.

"I'm not letting you run away again, you hear me? Do you know how worried I and your mother have been?" Long Ren said as he chided Long Chen.

"I know grandfather, but..." Long Chen said to him.

"No, but! You don't need to explain. It's already good enough that we found you." Long Ren cut him off in the middle as he said.

"Oh, right, You came here to participate in the sect entrance exam, didn't you? Then why weren't you there?" Long Ren asked Long Seeing Long Chen here made him believe that he was here for the exams.

He wondered why he didn't see Long Chen in the exams.

"I... Well, I got I here just now. Apparently, I was late." Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"Oh, It is alright. You're still young, you can take part in the exam after 4 years as well. Anyways, You'd be glad to know that our little Xue Ying has managed to enter the top hundred of the Sect Entrance Exam. She is now the outer sect disciple of the Glorious Blossom Sect!" Long Ren said with a bright smile on his face.

"Wow, really? Glorious Blossom Sect... That's Amazing!" Long Chen said with a shocked look on his face. Although he had already known about it, since he was already there at that time, he still pretended to act surprised.

"Congratulations Miss Ying! " Long Chen said with a bright smile on his face as he looked towards Long Xue Ying.

"Ah... right. Thank you..." She responded after looking blankly at him for a minute.

"Xue... Mei..." Long Chen shifted his gaze to the side and gazed at Xue and Mei.

Chapter 225 - 225: Unfilial Son

"Ah... right. Thank you..." She responded after looking blankly at him for a minute.

"Xue... Mei..." Long Chen shifted his gaze to the side and gazed at Xue and Mei.

"Young Master" They both nodded their heads as tears finally appeared in their eyes.

"I'm sorry that I wasn't able to come back sooner." Long Chen shook his head as he said.

"It's fine, Young Master. We understand. At Least now you will be back with us." Xue said as she rubbed her eyes that were wet with tears.

"I..." Long Chen stood there blankly as he found it hard to speak. He wasn't sure how to say the things that he wanted to.

"I can't come back." He clenched his fist tightly and finally gathered enough courage as he said.

"Hmm? What are you talking about? You still don't want to come back? Do you not have a single ounce of worry for your mother?" Long Ren's face turned red in anger as he said.

"I...I still have something important to do... so I can't go back to Dragon City. My destination is somewhere else..." Long Chen said as he looked down.

"What? Is roaming around the world like a homeless person more important to you than me and your mother?" Long Ren let out with a look of disbelief on his face.

"It's... it's not that... I... I... Can't tell you what it is, but I can't come back with you right now. I can only say that what I'm doing is for our family." Long Chen looked down as he said.

"Xue, Mei... I wish I could take you with me, but my mother needs someone to take care of her. Unfortunately, her unfilial son isn't there for her. I hope you will care for her." He continued as he looked towards Xue and Mei.

"You..." Long Ren couldn't find words to speak as he couldn't understand what Long Chen was talking about. All he could see was that he was determined to not come back.

"We understand, Master" Xue and Mei nodded their heads at the same time without saying anything else.

"I'm really sorry." Long Chen muttered.

"Ying! Patriarch! I looked everywhere for you!" Came a voice from behind. Long Ren and the others looked back.

"You're here! Teach this grandson of mine some common sense! He's refusing to come back with..." Long Ren said to Grand Elder Long Mu, but as soon as he turned back to point towards Long Chen, the spot was empty. He looked around, but he couldn't find Long Chen anywhere.

"Did something happen? What are you talking about?" Long Mu asked as he walked closer, but none of them replied. They just stood there with blank looks on their faces.

Long Chen walked back to his hotel room. His fists were still clenched so hard that it had started bleeding. His face looked expressionless, but if someone carefully looked at him, they would be able to see the melancholy hidden deep within his eyes.

"You're back! Where did you... g.." Mingyu was standing inside the room when the door opened and Long Chen entered. She walked towards him and was about to ask him something when she stopped midway.

"Is that a tear? I've never seen a tear in your eyes in reality? What happened?" She asked as she noticed the wet eyes of Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't say anything and just hugged her. There was silence in the room as Long Chen remained in her embrace to calm his mind.

After about 5 minutes, he separated from her.

"I'm sorry for that... It's nothing to worry about." He said as he smiled, but Mingyu could see a hidden sadness behind that smile.

"You know you can tell me everything..." She said to Long Chen in a caring tone. Long Chen gazed at her face for a moment before he started talking.

"I went and talked to my family... and told them that I am not coming back." Long Chen said softly as he looked towards the window.

"I was just a little sad about it. I'm fine now." He said as he walked towards the window and looked outside.

As soon as he looked outside the window, he saw Long Ren, Long Mu, Long Xue Ying, Xue, and Mei walking back.

Their eyes looked around in the hopes of catching a glimpse of Long Chen again, but they weren't able to find him.

At one point, Xue even looked towards the hotel Long Chen was staying at. Her gaze roamed around all the windows.

Thankfully, the windows of the hotel were dark from the outside. It was possible to see outside from the inside, but it wasn't possible to see inside from the outside.

Her gaze passed by the window, on the other side of which Long Chen was standing, without realizing as she continued ahead.

"I will be back... I promise..." Long Chen muttered as he looked outside.

"Are they your family?" Mingyu stood beside Long Chen and noticed the people he was looking at. She could feel that these were the people he was talking about a few moments ago.

"Yeah." Long Chen said with a smile.

"The one walking in the lead is my grandfather... he loves me quite a lot. He might act strict sometimes but he's quite a softie. The one beside him is the Grand Elder of our clan, Long Mu. Quite a nice guy." Long Chen explained to Mingyu.

"And the girls?" Mingyu asked with a smile.

"The one in the yellow dress is the daughter of the Grand Elder. Her name is Long Xue Ying. You must have seen her in the Sect Entrance Exams. The girl walking behind her is Xue and the last girl is Mei. They're both my women." Long Chen said with a chuckle. He didn't want to hide them from Mingyu.

"Hahaha... yeah right. I believe you." Mingyu laughed as she heard Long Chen's last words, but Long Chen clearly understood from her reaction that she clearly didn't believe him. He didn't bother explaining either.

Chapter 226 - 226: New World

"Hahaha... yeah right. I believe you." Mingyu laughed as she heard Long Chen's last words, but Long Chen clearly understood from her reaction that she clearly didn't believe him. He didn't bother explaining either.

Soon, the Long Clan disappeared from Long Chen's view. He turned back and walked to the chair and sat down. Mingyu sat on the chair beside him.

"Can I ask you something? It's nothing important, just a random question." Mingyu said after some time as she looked at Long Chen's face.

"Sure. As long as you don't ask me how long my sword is, I can answer anything." Long Chen chuckled as he joked around. He knew that Mingyu wouldn't understand him.

"Why would I ask your sword's size. I've already seen your sword." Mingyu said with a confused look on her face, but Long Chen didn't reply.

"Don't worry about it. So, what was your question?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at her.

"Well, The question I want to ask is... What kind of woman do you desire? I mean to make you think about making her your wife?" Mingyu asked her question, but this time, she didn't gaze at him. Her eyes were looking down.

"Hmm? The girl I want? Well... she should be beautiful... just like you. She should be kind... just like you. She should be shy at times... just like you. She should be strong... just like you. In short... the girl I desire should be exactly like you." Long Chen looked at Mingyu's face and answered her.

He didn't think about what he was saying, the words just kept coming out of his mouth naturally.

"Hmm? Why don't you just say that you want me then? " Mingyu chuckled as she took his words as a joke.

"I want you." Long Chen said without waiting as he stared deep in his eyes.

"Cheh... You should stop teasing me." She stood up as she walked towards her room and closed the door.

"Hah, she takes every truth of mine as a joke... what a girl." Long Chen muttered to himself as he shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

He stood up and walked back to a corner before sitting down. He began cultivating.

He was just a small step away from breaking through to the 1st stage of the Earth Realm.

To break through to the Earth Realm, a cultivator had to meet two requirements. Firstly, Reaching the peak of the gold core realm. The second one being the cultivator must be able to create a small world seed inside his Martial Space.

Although this small world seed didn't have any advantage for a cultivator in the Earth Realm or the Sky Realm, its real use came when the person broke through to the Heaven Realm.

When a person was about to break through to a Heaven Realm, he should be able to change his world Seed and form a small world inside his Martial Space.

The small world, thus created would be the own world of the cultivator and he would be the god of the world.

Their Golden Core would leave their Martial Space and enter inside their small world and act as its sun.

The size of the world will depend on the cultivator's bloodline, his talent and the cultivation skill that he practiced.

But very few people reached that level. In fact, in the whole North Moon Empire, there was no Heaven Realm Cultivator. Although the use of world seed was when a cultivator broke through to the Heavenly Realm, it was still a necessity to form it to break through to the Earth Realm.

Long Chen used the nameless cultivation manual as he absorbed the Qi of the Xuan Kingdom. The Qi of the Xuan Kingdom was much denser than it was in the Shui Kingdom which was helping Long Chen. With the dense Qi, Long Chen's cultivation speed had increased as well.

He kept absorbing the Qi and compressing the absorbed Qi inside his martial space into a small whirlpool of Qi. The whirlpool was so small that it looked like a tiny ant in front of Long Chen's Martial soul.

More and more Qi kept entering into Long Chen's Martial Space. All the Qi was sucked by the whirlpool and compressed. Although more and more Qi was being absorbed by the whirlpool, its size didn't increase in the slightest.

Unknown to Long Chen, a small bit of the Qi that he was absorbing kept being absorbed by the red cocoon in which his Heart demon was going through an evolution.

The Qi kept entering his body and being compressed into his whirlpool for hours. The color of the whirlpool kept becoming darker with time.

Soon, 5 hours passed like nothing.

Mingyu had come out of her room in those 5 hours to talk to him, but noticed that Long Chen was busy in cultivation. She walked back.

The night passed away and the warmth of the sun engulfed the city.

The vortex that kept spinning and absorbing the energy the whole night had finally changed shape and adopted a spherical shape. The sphere looked sky blue in color, but it was still just as small.

Long Chen opened his eyes as a smile appeared on his face.

"Finally, I am an Earth Realm cultivator. I can feel myself filled with power. It's like nothing I had ever felt." Long Chen muttered with a smile as he gripped his fist.

"My own 'World Seed', " Long Chen said as he used his consciousness and observed his 'World Seed'.

"I'll definitely make my own world one day! Earth Realm is not my destination, but only a stopgap." Long Chen talked to himself.

The door of Mingyu's bedroom opened as she came out of her room.

"You're up! Did you achieve a breakthrough?" She asked as she saw Long Chen sitting there.

"How did you know? Can you see my cultivation now?" He inquired with a confused look on his face.

Chapter 227 - 227: Leaving

"You're up! Did you achieve a breakthrough?" She asked as she saw Long Chen sitting there.

"How did you know? Can you see my cultivation?" He inquired with a confused look on his face.

"Nope, I'm unable to see your cultivation. I can guess from the happy look on your face that you broke through." Mingyu answered with a smile.

"Yeah, I broke through to the Earth Realm." Long Chen said with a bright smile on his face.

"Didn't you break through to the 10th Stage of the gold core realm when we were coming to the Xuan Kingdom? Your cultivation speed is really scary." She let out with a stunned look on her face as she stared at Long Chen.

"What about you? I feel like you're closer to a breakthrough as well." Long Chen said as he noticed Mingyu's cultivation.

"Yeah... I'll have a breakthrough in a few days as well. I'll be a 4th stage Earth Realm Cultivator" Mingyu responded with a smile.

"Nice. Are you ready to leave?" He asked her.

"Yea, I have nothing much to take anyways," Mingyu answered back.

"Let's go then. Zhiqing should be ready by now as well." Long Chen said as he walked towards the exit. He opened the door and left. Mingyu followed behind him.

Long Chen stopped in front of Zhiqing's door and knocked on it.

Getting no response, he knocked again.

"Is she not inside?" He had just said that when the door opened.

"You? Are we leaving right now? " Zhiqing was shocked to find Long Chen outside her room so early in the morning, but then she noticed Mingyu as well and understood that they wanted to leave.

"Didn't we say that we will leave tomorrow?" Long Chen replied with a wry smile on his face.

"We talked about it, but I never thought that we would leave so early. Isn't it too early right now? It's only 5 am at the moment." Princess Zhiqing said with a lazy look on her face as if she wanted to sleep more.

"There's no need to waste much time here, it's better to leave. So, do you want to leave or not?" Long Chen inquired as he gazed at Zhiqing.

"Of Course I want to leave with you! See that? My bag is already packed!" She said with a smile as she pointed towards a bag that was resting on a corner.

"So many bags? How will you carry it? Don't you have a storage ring?" Long Chen let out with a shocked look on his face as he noticed 3 big bags.

"I don't have a storage ring, unfortunately." She said with a wry smile on her face.

"It's fine. I'll keep your bags in my storage ring." Mingyu intervened as she said.

"Oh, thank you." Zhiqing thanked her as she smiled. Mingyu walked forward and placed the bags in her storage ring.

"How will we leave? Should we take my carriage? All three of us can leave with comfort. The journey will be quite long after all." Zhiqing said as she left the room and closed the door of the room.

"Alright. Since we don't have a flying beast, that seems like the best option." Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Good. Things are already prepared. I have informed General Yao, my niece, and nephew. The carriage has been prepared as well and ready to leave. We can leave at any time." Zhiqing informed Long Chen.

"That's good. Let's go then." Long Chen nodded his head in appreciation as he turned back and walked towards the stairs. Mingyu and Zhiqing walked behind him.

They left the hotel and it was just as Zhiqing had said, there was a carriage on the standby there. The carriage driver was already on his seat, although he looked like he was sleeping.

"Wake up! We are ready to leave." Mingyu stepped forward and said to the driver. The driver immediately stood up. It looked like he wasn't in a deep sleep yet.

"I'm sorry, Mistress." The carriage driver apologized to Princess Zhiqing as he bowed down.

"It's alright. Get ready to leave." Zhiqing told him as she walked back.

"Let's enter." She smiled as she said to Long Chen and Mingyu.

Zhiqing entered the carriage first, Long Chen was the second person to enter and Mingyu was the last.

"You already told the driver our destination, right?" Long Chen asked her with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Yeah. I even gave him a properly marked map. I chose the shortest path for our trip." Zhiqing responded with a smile.

"We can relax. Ron is quite experienced. He'll take us exactly as I pointed on the map." She continued with full confidence.

"That's good." Long Chen said as he closed his eyes and relaxed.

The journey continued smoothly as they passed through the streets of the Xuan Kingdom.

At one point in time, their carriage happened to pass by the carriages of the Long clan, but unfortunately, the carriage of Zhiqing had their curtains closed.

Their carriages passed by without knowing anything about the other.

While Long Clan's carriage walked to the south, towards the Shui Kingdom, the carriage of Zhiqing went towards the North, towards the North Moon Empire.

In a few hours, Zhiqing's carriage left the capital city of the Xuan Kingdom as it continued towards the North.

As Long Chen was resting on the carriage with his eyes closed, a hand rested on his right thigh. He opened his eyes with a shocked look as he looked towards the hand and realized that it was the hand of Zhiqing.

He glanced towards the left and found out that Mingyu had fallen asleep.

Long Chen didn't know, but Mingyu has been cultivating all night. She was inspired by Long Chen's dedication to cultivation.

"We had to leave things in between, the last time we were in the carriage... how about we complete it right now?" Zhiqing whispered in Long Chen's ears in a seductive tone.

"Are you crazy, It's not the place nor the time!" Long Chen answered her in an annoyed tone.

Chapter 228 - 228: Caught In The Act(★)

"We had to leave things in between the last time we were in this carriage... how about we complete it right now?" Zhiqing whispered in Long Chen's ears seductively.

"Are you crazy, It's not the place, nor is it the time!" Long Chen answered her while he tried to keep his voice down.

"Then let's make it the place." Zhiqing chuckled as she moved her hand until they were resting over Long Chen's sacred region.

Little Chen made some movement as soon as Zhiqing's soft hand touched it. Even though there were clothes in between Princess Zhiqing's hand and little Chen, it didn't affect him in the slightest.

Little Chen began walking up from his sleep and rose to greater heights.

"Looks like it is what you desire as well. It is to be expected. It has been quite a long time after all." Zhiqing whispered in Long Chen's ears, but she hadn't expected Long Chen to do what he did.

Long Chen turned his head and abruptly kissed Princess Zhiqing's lips while he placed his hand on the back of her head as he prevented her from moving back with shock.

Zhiqing tried to make as low noise as possible, even though she felt like moaning from the drunken pleasure. She slid her hands under Long Chen's pants and grabbed his little guy by its neck. She began moving her hand up and down.

On the other hand, Long Chen was kissing her passionately. He has even slid his tongue inside her mouth as he enjoyed the sweetness of her tongue.

He separated his lips from hers after kissing her for over 10 minutes. Zhiqing's hands never stopped stroking little Chen during those ten minutes.

He gazed into her eyes as he brought his lips closer to her ears. He gently kissed her earlobes before whispering to her.

"It's time for your lips to get to work." He said softly in her ears as he pointed towards little Chen.

Zhiqing nodded her head with a flushed look on her face as she stood up and got down to her knees in front of Long Chen.

She lowered Long Chen's pants only enough so that his little Chen could gain its freedom.

As soon as his pants were lowered, Little Chen came into view. It was standing tall, like the tallest mountain of the universe.

Zhiqing didn't make it wait for long as she brought her lips closer to little Chen. Similar to a hungry beast, she took little Chen into her mouth. She used her soft lips to suck on little Chen as she moved her head up and down.

Long Chen didn't close his eyes and just stared at Zhiqing doing her magic.

He enjoyed her sucking for quite some time before he moved his hand. Finding the opening in her dress, Long Chen slid his hand inside her dress.

His hands found their ways to her soft breasts and began fondling them. With no clothes between his hand and Zhiqing's breasts, he could enjoy the pleasure in full.

Zhiqing kept sucking while he kept fondling her breast until he felt something.

"I'm about to release." He thought, but didn't speak out loud as he didn't want to wake up Mingyu.

He placed his hand on her back and helped her move her head faster.

A few more minutes passed as he finally released his load into her mouth.

Zhiqing was stunned as little Chen suddenly released a sticky liquid in her mouth. In shock, she swallowed all of it.

Long Chen turned his face towards the opposite side as he had a bad feeling. His biggest fears came to fruition as he saw Mingyu sitting there watching everything.

A chill ran down his spine as he saw her awake.

"Ah... mingyu..." He let out but found it hard to decide on his next words.

Zhiqing heard his words and looked upwards, but her expressions changed as well, as she noticed Mingyu.

"It's fine. You don't have to explain." Mingyu said with an expressionless look on her face.

"But..." Long Chen tried talking again, but he was stopped by Mingyu.

"As I said it's fine. You don't need to explain to me " Mingyu repeated the same thing as she closed her eyes.

Long Chen also turned silent as he didn't know what to say. He thought that he would talk to her about it later.

Zhiqing stood up as she swallowed the remaining liquid that was in her mouth and silently sat beside Long Chen silently.

The journey continued for the day without a word being spoken and it was already evening by now.

The carriage stopped suddenly. There was a knock on the door.

Zhiqing opened the curtains and saw the carriage driver standing there.

"Yes?" She asked as she opened the door.

"Mistress, It looks like there is a village nearby. It wasn't on the map, but I think that it should be a good place to rest. It's getting dark as well." The driver informed Zhiqing.

"Hmm? A village? " Zhiqing brought her head out of the carriage as she looked ahead and sure enough, a village was visible at some distance.

"Alright. Take us there. Let's rest in the village for the night." Zhiqing told the driver as she closed the door.

The driver nodded his head and left. The carriage began moving and stopped again after a while.

"Let's leave. We should be at the village now." Zhiqing said to Long Chen and Mingyu as she opened the door.

Mingyu opened the door towards her side and got out. Long Chen left from the same door while Zhiqing left from the door on the opposite side.

They stood at the entrance of the door. Surprisingly, there was no guard at the entrance. They walked inside the village. The whole village looked empty.

There were no people outside on the street in the village, but lights could be seen in some huts.

Long Chen walked to the nearest hut with Mingyu and Zhiqing and knocked on the door.

Chapter 229 - 229: Strange Village

Long Chen walked to the nearest hut with Mingyu and Zhiqing and knocked on the door.

Some noises came from inside the door after the knock, but there was no response.

"Excuse me! We are from the Xuan Kingdom. We need to talk to the village head. Can you tell me where I can find him?" Long Chen called out.

He waited for a minute, but there was no response.

"Let's go talk to someone else." Long Chen let out as he turned back, but right then, the door opened.

He looked back only to see an old man standing at the door.

"Are you really from the Xuan Kingdom?" The man stood at the door and asked.

"Yeah, We need a place to stay the night. That's why we wanted to find the village elder." Long Chen answered her.

"Oh. Come with me. I'll take you to the village elder." The old man said with a smile as he got out of the hut.

"Stay inside, I'll be right back." The old man said to someone inside the room before he closed the door again. Long Chen didn't see who he was talking to, he didn't care either.

The old man walked in the front while Long Chen followed him. After walking for a short distance, the man stopped in front of another weak-looking hut and knocked on its door.

"Chief! It's me. Open the door." The old man said as he knocked on the door.

The door opened in less than a minute.

"What do you need m..." Another old man came out of the hut, but as soon as he saw Long Chen and the other, he walked back and closed the door.

"Mu Gan! How can you bring strangers to my house?" The Village Chief's voice came out from the other side of the door.

"Chief! These people are from the Xuan Kingdom! They are looking for a place to stay the night." The old man informed the chief.

"The Xuan Kingdom?" A shocked voice came from inside and the door opened again.

"Yes, Chief! I even saw their luxurious carriage! " He said to the chief.

"Please come inside," The Village Chief said as he smiled and invited Long Chen and the others inside.

"Thank you for the invitation." Long Chen smiled as he entered inside. The others entered as well.

"I'm sorry for the bad behavior we showed you previously. It's just that the village is going through some troubles. Everyone is on alert." The Village Chief told Long Chen as he bowed his head.

"It's alright. You don't have to worry about it. We were about to stop and set a camp when we noticed your village. We thought that we can stay here for the night if you people have some rooms available." Long Chen said to the Village Chief.

"It's fine even if you don't. We can still set up camps." Long Chen continued.

"Thank you for understanding and don't worry. We do have room for all of you. There are many empty huts in the village" The chief said, though some sadness was clear in his voice as he said it.

"Mu Gan. Go show them the huts that belonged to Little twenty-one, little twenty-two and little twenty-three" The Village Chief said to the old man.

"Ah, Yes," Mu Gan said as he stood up. He walked towards the door.

"Thank you." Long Chen said to the Chief Of the village as he stood up and left with Mu Gan.

The Chief of the village couldn't help but sigh as he sat in his empty hut after Long Chen left.

Long Chen was walking with Mu Gan in the silence of the night, but there was a feeling that the village wasn't in a good condition. They all looked scared as if they were in a nightmare.

"Master Gan, Can I ask you something, if you don't mind." Long Chen asked.

"Ah... alright. Ask me anything." Mu Gan nodded his head

"What kind of name is Little Twenty One, Little twenty-two and little twenty-three?" Long Chen asked Mu Gan with a strange look on his face.

"Oh, The little guys weren't given a name since they were going to die before they grew up completely. We only have the numbers." Mu Gan answered with a sad look on his face. His voice was shivering as he talked about it.

"Death before growing up? What do you mean by it?" Long Chen asked with a stunned look on his face.

"Because they were to be taken by the demon before they turned 15" Mu Gan responded.

"A demon? Can you explain everything to me? I might be able to help." Long Chen said with a frown.

"It's fine. You won't be able to help. We have asked for help from many travelers before, but they all died." Mu Gan replied.

"Those who were strong refused to help us." He continued.

"Why were you scared of opening the door before you found out that we're from Xuan?" Long Chen asked again.

"Because of what happened before. Every time we allow a guest to stay here, we are punished by him. That's why we don't allow strangers inside the village. But there was a time when someone from the Xuan Kingdom came. We denied him permission to stay here." Mu Gan said as he remembered the past.

"In his anger, that man destroyed many of the houses and beat the man who denied him, to his death."The man continued.

"We can't offend the Demon and we can't offend the cultivator's from Xuan either." The man sighed as he continued ahead.

"What about the kids and their deaths?" Long Chen asked another question.

"You will see it tomorrow. I think tomorrow is the date when the next batch will be taken from the village." The man looked towards the sky as he said.

"I don't... Alright. I'll wait tomorrow to see what's actually happening." Long Chen muttered. He had realized that no matter what he said, He won't get the answer from this man. It was much easier to watch it with his own eyes.

"We're here! Those three are the huts you can stay in. You three can choose any of them. There are beds in all three of those huts, but there is no blanket. So I hope that you will adjust" The man said as he stopped in front of three huts. All those huts were near each other.

Chapter 230 - 230: Double Sacrifice

"We're here! Those three are the huts you can stay in. You three can choose any of them. There are beds in all three of those huts, but there is no blanket. So I hope that you will adjust" The man said as he stopped in front of three huts. All those huts were near each other.

"Alright, thanks." Long Chen thanked Mu Gan.

Mu Gan turned back and left, leaving Long Chen and the others back to select their places.

"Mingyu and Zhiqing... I hope that both of you will stay together for the night. This place isn't entirely safe and there might be dangers, so it would be better if you stay together. I'll stay in the same hut, but I'll be on the ground and cultivate all night long. We shouldn't take the risk of separating tonight." Long Chen said as he gazed at the both of them in full seriousness.

"That sounds like a good idea." Zhiqing immediately voiced her agreement and mingyu simply nodded her head.

"Let's stay in this one then." Long Chen said as he pointed towards a nearby hut. It was the one that was closest to them.

He entered the hut with Mingyu and Zhiqing.

Long Chen sat on the ground in a meditative position and began cultivating while Zhiqing and Mingyu sat on the bed.

Half an hour passed away in complete silence.

"Master Chen?" Zhiqing called out to Long Chen but received no response.

"He's in deep cultivation, so we can talk freely. It's a good time to talk about what happened before." Zhiqing turned her head and looked at Mingyu as she said.

"Are you angry with him?" Zhiqing asked Mingyu with a curious look on her face.

Mingyu didn't say anything and just shook her head in denial.

"Then are you angry at me?" She asked again with a slight smile.

"No." Mingyu let out as she shook her head again.

"Then why haven't you said a single word since the moment you saw us like that? What do you think about it?" Zhiqing asked as she tried to understand Mingyu's thoughts.

"I... I always knew that he would have more women. In fact, he even told me that he has two girls. I realized that he wasn't lying, but I acted as if it was a joke. There was only one reason behind it... it was because I wanted to be close to him without making him uncomfortable. I wanted him to not worry about other girls when he was with me." Mingyu said softly as she looked down.

"In fact, I knew that he liked you. It was clear from the way he looked at you. So what happened before was clearly a part of my expectations, but it's just really strange and painful watching it actually happen in front of me." She continued.

"Mingyu, Are you serious about the way he looks at me? I, on the other hand, feel completely opposite. I think that the way he looks at you is a much more loving gaze. I don't know what your people went through, but it can't be more clear about it. He likes you a lot. I've seen him looking down the whole journey... he was most probably worried about losing you. I'm sure you don't want to leave him either, so there's no benefit in punishing him." Zhiqing said as she gazed at Mingyu in full seriousness.

"Life is too unpredictable to worry about such things. Think about what I told you." Zhiqing said before she lay down on the bed.

"Thank you for everything," Mingyu told Zhiqing before she fell into deep thought.

Night passed away silently and it was already morning.

Zhiqing and Mingyu had woken up and were waiting for Long Chen to finish his cultivation.

It was around 7 am in the morning when Long Chen opened his eyes.

He stretched his arms as he yawned. Just as he was about to stand up, he heard some noises coming from the outside.

"Is the sacrifice prepared? " Someone said as a loud laughter was heard.

Long Chen stood up and walked towards the door with a frown. Mingyu and Zhiqing followed him as they got off the bed.

"Ah... yes, envoy. The sacrifice is ready, but can I request you one thing?" Long Chen left the hut and saw the village chief talking to someone.

The person in front of him was... It looked like a human who covered his face with a mask. The person had a black robe that covered his entire body, thus it was difficult to know if the person was a male or a female, but Long Chen had a guess that it was a male from his voice and laughter.

"Do you think you have any right to request anything from me? But since I'm feeling good today, I'll hear your request." The black-robed man said as he walked closer to the village chief.

"I...I... If it's possible, I would request you to not take the kids. We can give you double the meat and gold, but please don't take the kids." Village Chief looked quite scared, but he still stood tall in his place without taking a step back as he said to the masked man

"Hmm...? Have you prepared double the meat and double gold?" The masked man asked with an interested tone.

"Ah, Yes! Yes! We will give you all that if you don't take the kids." The Village Chief said as a hope was ignited in his heart.

"Good, good! The master would be happy to hear that I got him double the sacrifice." The man started laughing like a mad man as he heard the Chief's words.

"Good! Give me double meat, double gold, and three kids! You have done well this month." The black-robed man said with a burst of loud laughter.

"Three kids?... Why the kids? Aren't you freeing them in exchange for the extra gold and meat?" The Village chief asked with a perplexed look on his face.

Chapter 231 - 231: Not A Saint

"Three kids?... Why the kids? Aren't you freeing them in exchange for the extra gold and meat?" The Village chief asked with a perplexed look on his face.

"Of Course! Since you're giving me double sacrifice, I won't take three kids. Double sacrifice means double gold, double meat and 6 kids, right? I'm not taking the original 3 kids and will only take 3 kids as always." The masked man laughed cruelly as he placed his hands on the shoulders of the Village Chief.

"Bring the kids! Master doesn't like waiting. You should know that." The masked man further continued.

"But... but... " The chief stuttered as he started sweating.

Slap

"No buts! Do as I said if you don't want your whole village to be destroyed this instant! Oh, right, You have a young daughter, right? I'll take her with me as well. Consider it a punishment for talking back to me!" The masked man slapped the chief as he said.

"Bring me the 3 sacrificial kids! I'll bring the village chief's young daughter myself! He needs to learn his lesson. I better have a taste of his beautiful daughter right before his eyes so that he never forgets this lesson!" The masked man said as he looked towards the nearby villagers.

The villagers hesitated for a bit before they scattered and walked towards the nearby huts. On the other hand, the masked man walked towards the place of the village chief.

He entered the house and in a few minutes came out. He was holding the hands of a girl that looked like she was just 15-16 years old. The girl looked like she was resisting, but she couldn't free herself from his grip.

Tears kept falling from her eyes.

The masked man stopped in front of the village chief.

"Please leave my daughter!" The village chief begged, but the masked man kicked him.

The village chief coughed out a mouthful of blood as he groaned in pain.

"Good work!" The masked man said as he saw that the villagers had come back with 3 kids. The kids had tears in their eyes, but it didn't look like they were struggling. Probably because they had been prepared to die and they knew their destiny.

"Time to get to the main event. Look, Village Chief! Watch how your daughter is going to be played with, in front of all the villagers." The masked man said as he gazed towards the Village Chief.

"Little girl, you are beautiful. Unfortunately, you were born in the wrong place. Your father is useless." The masked man chuckled as he gazed towards the girl.

"Time to see what you're hiding inside those clothes of yours." The man chuckled as he extended his hands towards the girl's breasts. The girl had closed her eyes, but her tears didn't stop falling from her eyes.

Just before his hands could touch the girl's breasts, something hit the head of the masked man, making him fly away.

The masked man landed on the ground as he screamed in pain.

After some effort, he sat up and looked towards the girl, only to see a young boy standing in front of her.

The boy looked like he was only 16-17 years old and looked quite handsome. The boy was Long Chen.

"Don't worry, no one will hurt you." Long Chen said in a gentle tone as he glanced towards the girl. The girl opened her eyes after some hesitation only to find the face of a young boy in front of her.

She looked around and noticed the masked man sitting on the ground far away from her.

"You bastard! How dare you attack me! You're looking to die aren't you?" The masked man roared in anger as he stood up.

"I don't hate evil, in fact, I've done many such things myself, but there are a few forms of evil that I can't tolerate. I have vanquished many of them myself. Today feels like a good day to do the same." Long Chen said softly, but his words were clearly heard by the masked man. His face couldn't help but turn red as he heard it.

"You trash! After sneakily attacking me, do you really think that you're some big deal! I'll make you watch as I dismember your body piece by piece." The masked man said in a cruel tone.

The man stood up and started running towards Long Chen, but before he could even take two steps forward, the situation changed completely.

It all happened so fast that he didn't even know how it happened, but his neck was now in Long Chen's hand and he was hanging in the air by his neck.

"An 8th stage Gold Core Realm cultivator is calling me a trash? Know your place!" Long Chen said in a serious tone as he tightened his grip.

"You... leave..." The masked man struggled to speak.

"Are you going to threaten me using your master now? Don't worry, his number will be next." Long Chen said as he smiled, but to the man, the smile looked like a devil's smile. A chill ran down his spine.

"You know... I'm not a saint working for the betterment of mankind, but there are some things that I can't handle. What you were about to do was one of them!" Long Chen said to the man.

"Now it would be a different story if you were a Sky Realm cultivator as I wouldn't have a choice in that case and I won't put myself in a hopeless situation, but you're not. So I can do what I want." Long Chen smiled as he gripped the right hand of the masked man with his other hand.

"It's the same hand you wanted to use right? Let's have some fun with it." Long Chen chuckled as he gripped the hand tightly and pulled it. The hand was torn off from the body while the masked boy screamed loudly. Long Chen had intentionally lessened his grip on the masked man's neck so that he could hear the man's scream.

"That's the spirit. You're so full of life." Long Chen said with a smile as he gripped the man's other hand as well.

"Please... don't..." The man begged Long Chen while crying in pain.

Chapter 232 - 232: Life Devouring Insect

"Please... don't..." The man begged Long Chen while crying in pain, but Long Chen didn't relax his grip, instead, he tightened it.

"Tell me about your master then." Long Chen let out with a smile as he stared in the eyes of the man.

The man's eyes opened wide as soon as he heard Long Chen talk about his master. He started sweating profusely.

"I...I can't tell you about my master!" The man answered in a worried tone.

"Alright. I won't force you... I'm not a monster after all, but I'll still give you time to think about it. You can change your mind." Long Chen smiled with an innocent look on his face. He tightened his grip on the hand of the man though.

The marked man had a bad feeling in his heart as he saw the smile on Long Chen's face, and that feeling turned out to be true as his other hand was torn off as well. Another loud scream escaped the mouth of the masked man. It sounded like the scream of a dying man.

"Why are you screaming? Anyways, did you come to a decision? Can you tell me now?" Long Chen asked again amidst the crazed screams of the masked man.

"You bastard! Kill me if you dare! You can never hope to catch up to my master! He will find you and make your death even more brutal than you can imagine!" The man roared with a face filled with bloodlust. He wanted Long Chen to die for toying with him.

"What are you talking about? How can I kill you? There are still two legs and a head left after all. I'm gonna take my sweet time with you if you don't tell me about your master." Long Chen said as he chuckled and stared into the man's eyes. The marked man felt like Long Chen was a demon who was able to see the depths of his soul. An avatar of the death god that was sent by the heavens to punish him for all his wrongdoings.

"Don't... Please don't... I don't want to go through more. I'll tell you everything that you want to do... Please no more!!! " The man said as tears fell from his eyes. A satisfied smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he heard the man's words.

"Then tell me everything about your master! If it turns out that you are lying, I think you know what will happen." Long Chen let out with an interested smile on his face as he loosened his grip on the man's neck.

"I can't tell you much about him as even I don't know that much about master! All I know is that the master stays inside a cave nearby. I'm not allowed to enter. I'm required to take 3 kids to master as a sacrifice every 6 months" The masked man replied to Long Chen

"So you haven't seen him get out of the cave? What about his cultivation?" Long Chen asked again as he stared at the masked man.

"I haven't seen Master ever come out of the cave! I get all the orders from outside." The man answered Long Chen in an anxious tone. It seemed like he was worried that Long Chen won't believe him.

"How does he control you then? What if you betrayed him?" Long Chen asked as he wondered about the Master of the masked man.

"Life Destroying Insect! Master has another servant beside me and that servant is much closer to master. Only he can enter the cave to take orders from the Master. He is the one that conveys the orders to me. That servant has placed a Life Destroying Insect inside my body. Only the master can control the insect. One thought from Master, and I'll die. If I go too far from the master, I'll die. That's what that servant told me. He said that I was the envoy of this village and in charge of collecting the sacrifice for the master." The man continued as he struggled to speak because of the pain. He was praying for Long Chen to believe him and let him go.

"Is your master a Sky Realm cultivator?" Long Chen asked another question.

"I... I don't think so. Although I haven't seen Master, that seems highly unlikely. The head slave of the master previously said that it would be a long time before the master gets to the peak of the Earth Realm. I think the Master is using the sacrifices to further his cultivation." The masked man replied to Long Chen.

"Alright. Take me to him. I want to see your messages!" Long Chen said to the masked man.

'What? Has that guy gone crazy? He wants to go to the Demon? Is he looking to die?'

Most of the villagers present there were listening to Long Chen's conversation with the masked man and were belittling Long Chen in their minds, but they didn't dare express it in the open.

They believed that although Long Chen can't kill the Demon, he could still easily kill them based on his battle that they witnessed with the demon's envoy

"I... I can't! I will be killed by the life-destroying insect if the master finds out about it." The man denied Long Chen straight away with a horrified look on his face.

"Kill me if you want! I'm already half head." The masked man continued.

"Don't you want to be free of your Master? If your master is killed, that Life Destroying Insect won't kill you." Long Chen responded to the masked man.

"Even though you lost both your hands, you still have your cultivation. You can have a good life." Long Chen told the masked man as he tried to get him to agree.

"Ah... If that's really possible... Alright. I'll take you to the cave. But I won't go near it... otherwise, the master will kill me before you could even do anything. I'll still show you the cave though" The masked man nodded his head as he agreed. He didn't forget to put forth a request of his own.

Chapter 233 - 233:I Lied

"Ah... If that's really possible... Alright. I'll take you to the cave. But I won't go near it... otherwise, the master will kill me before you could even do anything. I'll still show you the cave though" The masked man nodded his head as he agreed. He didn't forget to put forth a request of his own.

"Alright. After I have a view of the cave, I'll free you." Long Chen told the masked with an honest smile. He put the man down to the ground and removed his hand from the man's neck.

"Can I get some initial treatment before that? Otherwise, I would die from the bleeding, before we even get there." The masked man asked Long Chen.

His legs were shaking as he struggled to even stand properly.

"Don't worry about that. I'll give you a life healing pill after I get there. You'll be free after that and with the help of the Life healing pill, your wounds will heal as well. But there won't be any treatment before that." Long Chen responded to the masked man.

"First, I need to be sure that the cave you're talking about is real. Only then shall you be free and get the pill." Long Chen shook his head as he denied the man's request, but he didn't forget to give a better offer to motivate the man.

Honestly, he didn't even have a Life Healing Pill with him. The only Life Healing Pill he had, was used to heal Mingyu when Long Chen had first met her.

"Life Healing Pill? Amazing! I knew that you weren't a normal kid... You even have a Life Healing Pill! Let's hurry then." The masked man said with an excited look in his face.

The life healing pill's name worked like magic as the masked man stood straight with an excited look on his face.

"Both of you stay here, I'll be right back after I'm done with his master." Long Chen told Mingyu and Zhiqing as he got ready to follow the man.

"I'll come with you." Mingyu and Zhiqing said at the same time. They were both worried about Long Chen and didn't want him to go alone.

"Absolutely Not! It's dangerous for you to come with me! It'll be easier for me if I'm alone. I can even escape if things go south, but it'll be tough with you two." Long Chen shook his head as he immediately rejected them.

He didn't want to take any risk when it came to them. He knew that if he was alone, there was no danger to his life as he could use Spatial Portal ability and escape at any time. Although he could only use that ability only once every 24 hours, it was good enough for him to escape.

"But..." They tried saying something, but Long Chen stopped them midway.

"No buts! You're not coming and that's final.." Long Chen told them in a strict manner.

Both of them looked at Long Chen and felt like it was impossible for them to convince Long Chen when he acted this stubborn.

"Alright. We won't come with you."Zhiqing said to Long Chen with a concerned gaze.

"We'll wait for you," Mingyu said as well.

With no other choice, both of them could only nod their heads.

"That's better. Don't worry. I'll be right back." Long Chen said as he turned back.

"Let's go." He told the masked man.

The masked man and Long Chen both left the village. They walked through various paths as they continued ahead.

After walking for over an hour, they finally reached an empty-looking forest.

"This is as far as I can go." The masked man suddenly stopped as he said.

"Are you messing with me? You said that you will take me to the cave of your Master! I don't see any cave here." Long Chen let out with an angry look on his face.

"I'm not messing with you. I've fulfilled my promise and brought you to the cave. You see that large stone there?" The masked man replied to Long Chen.

"Yeah. I see that stone. What about it?" Long Chen nodded his head as he gazed at the stone that was placed at about 400 meters of distance from him.

"The underground cave of the master is right behind that stone. I can't go any further than this otherwise the master might sense me and kill me. Please give me the Life Healing Pill so that I can leave now. I've fulfilled my side of the promise" The masked man told Long Chen with a serious gaze.

"What if you are lying about the cave and there is nothing behind that stone?" Long Chen asked as he smiled.

"How can you still doubt me? I swear on heaven's name that the cave is right beside that stone. Now give me my pill." The masked man let out with an annoyed look on his face.

"Alright, I'll trust you. As for the Life Healing Pill. Well, the thing is that I don't have any such pill... I lied." Long Chen smiled as he gripped the neck of the masked man and crushed his neck.

The masked man's lifeless body fell to the ground. His eyes were wide open in shock even after he died. Long Chen didn't even care about taking the mask off and looking at him.

Long Chen stared at the stone he was about to walk towards the stone when he heard some noise coming from nearby.

He looked back and realized that the noise was coming from the masked man's body. A frown appeared on Long Chen's face.

He stood there as he looked at the chest of the masked man with great interest. The noise continued for quite some time.

After a short time, Long Chen was finally able to see the thing that was making all that noise. His expressions turned strange as he looked at the thing.

Chapter 234 - 234: Taming Another One

After a short time, Long Chen was finally able to see the thing that was making all that noise. His expressions turned strange as he looked at the thing.

It was a strange creature. A creature that looked exactly like a caterpillar. The only difference was that it had a blood-red color. Long Chen wasn't sure if the creature had a blood-red color, or it's the red color was the actual blood because the creature came out of the masked man's chest.

"You should be a Life Destroying Insect. You're an Interesting creature after all." Long Chen said with a smile as he sat down and gazed at the insect.

"You might be useful in the future. I can't let this opportunity go to waste." Long Chen muttered as he stared at the Life Destroying Insect.

"Xun! I can establish a contract with the Life Destroying Insect, right?" Long Chen asked Xun as he continued looking at the Life Destroying Insect that was moving slowly. It looked like he was trying to leave.

"Oh? You finally remembered me? I thought your girls were only things you cared about?" Xun said in an angry tone.

"Hey, don't say that. You're my girl as well after all. Anyways, you didn't answer me about the Life Destroying Insect." Long Chen said with a chuckle.

"Cheh... save these cheesy lines for your girls." Xun let out in an annoying tone.

"Anyways, You are right. There is no problem in taming the Life Destroying Insect. Just follow the same method. It might be good for you after all." It didn't take long before Xun replied to him.

"Alright. Thanks." Long Chen thanked Xun with a cute smile on his face.

"Alright little guy, You're coming with me." Long Chen smiled as he cut his finger lightly. His finger started bleeding. Long Chen brought his bleeding finger over the head of the Life Destroying Insect and made a blood drop fall on the head of the Life Destroying Insect.

As soon as the blood drop fell on his head, the Life Destroying Insect began shining brightly. It shone for around a minute before it recovered back to normal.

The taming was successful and Long Chen could feel a link being established between him and the Life Destroying Insect.

"Welcome to the family, Little Guy." Long Chen said as he gazed at the Life Destroying Insect.

"Alright. Time to name you. Oh man, it's always the toughest part. I apologize in advance if you don't like the name. From now on, you will be called Cati... just because you look so similar to a caterpillar." Long Chen smiled as he named the beast.

"Alright Cati, time to go meet your big brother and sister. Make sure to behave properly." Long Chen chuckled as he placed the Life destroying Insect in the beast region of his ancient ring.

"Alright. Time to get serious." He stood up as he looked towards the stone on the other side. He started walking towards the stone.

Long Chen had only walked for around 100 meters when he saw someone. A man came out from the other side of the stone.

The man was over 7 feet tall but looked quite skinny. The man had no hair on his head, which made his big forehead look even bigger.

"Who the hell are you? What are you doing here." The bald man let out with a stunned look on his face.

It didn't take the bald man long to notice the 16-17-year-old boy walking towards him. He was stunned to see a kid in this place and just kept staring at Long Chen.

"An 8th stage Gold Core Realm cultivator... he can't be the master. He must be the other servant that I heard so much about." Long Chen thought as he looked at the man with an interested look on his face.

"Well, Thank god I found someone! Can you help me senior? I'm looking for an herb to treat the illness of my elder sister." Long Chen let out with an excited look on his face.

"Has Senior seen the Nine Yang Grass?" He continued with a concerned gaze.

At the moment Long Chen was looking like a naive young boy who came to the forest without thinking anything and that's what he wanted to portray.

A wide smile bloomed on the man's face as he looked at Long Chen with a grin on his face.

"Nine Yang Grass? Of course, I have seen Nine Yang Grass. In fact, it's growing in quite a large quantity nearby. Let me show you the place. Come with me." The bald man said with a wide smile on his face as he pointed towards the stone.

"Oh, thank you so much, master!" Long Chen smiled happily as he followed the man.

"So kid, where are you from?" The bald man asked as he slowed down subtly until he was right beside Long Chen. He didn't want Long Chen to run away.

"I'm from the nearby city. I was reading a book and found out that the Nine Yang Grass. It was written that the Nine Yang Grass could heal the illness. It was the same illness that my sister was suffering from." Long Chen responded to the man.

"Oh. Anyways, how did your parents let you leave alone? Didn't they send anyone with you?" The bald man inquired again.

"I don't have parents. Our parents died when we were young. I only have a sister in my family, but she's really sick at the moment. She used to take care of me, but she can't even stand up now. None of the doctors were ready to help us because we don't have much money in our family." Long Chen looked towards the man with a sad look on his face.

"That's why I left my home in order to search for the herb myself. The book said that the Nine Yang Grass grows in this region." Long Chen further said to the bald man.

Chapter 235 - 235: You Will Become The Herb

"That's why I left my home in order to search for the herb myself. The book said that the Nine Yang Grass grows in this region." Long Chen further said to the bald man.

"You are such a good child. You are so concerned about your family. You don't have to worry about anything, I'm for that you'll definitely be able to heal your sister after you leave from here." The man said in a gentle tone as he placed his hand on Long Chen's back.

Long Chen smiled as he gazed at the man, but he didn't forget to cover his back with a thin space barrier to protect his back in case of anything unexpected, but since the barrier was inside his clothes, the man had no idea.

"Thank you, Master. Can I ask the Master's name?" Long Chen asked the bald man.

"My name? I'm Wuji Lu. What about you?" The man answered Long Chen before asking.

"I'm Long Chen. Thank you, master Lu! You came to my life like a god to guide me to my destination. I don't know how I can thank you enough. I'm really grateful for you" Long Chen said in an emotional tone. He turned towards the man and thanked him.

"It's fine. You don't need to worry about it. You're already doing enough for me." The man called Wuji Lu said with a light laughter.

'You're going to be dead in a few minutes. What can you help me with? This idiot... he came looking for death.' Wuji Lu thought as a grin formed on his face.

"Hmm? What is Master Lu talking about? How am I helping you?" Long Chen asked with a confused gaze in his face.

"It's nothing. I'm getting to help your sister indirectly and in turn earning good karma. That's all because of you. That's why you're helping me." The bald man replied to Long Chen.

It didn't take them long before they walked past the stone. There was a smaller stone there right beside the big stone. The smaller stone was a meter wide and only half a meter tall.

'A second stone? The cave must be below that stone' Long Chen thought as he observed the stone.

"Wait right here." Wuji Lu said as he stepped towards the stone. He held the stone with both his hands.

After applying some force, he easily picked up the stone and revealed an opening below the stone. Long Chen's hunch was proven right.

Wuji Lu placed the stone to the side and turned back to look at Long Chen with a smile.

"Come on inside, I've seen the herb that you are looking for inside the underground cave." He walked towards Long Chen and said to him with an eager look on his face.

"Alright." Long Chen happily walked closer. The men stood behind Long Chen and waited for him to enter.

The opening was about 90 cm wide. There were stairs that were going downwards.

Long Chen stepped his foot on the stairs as he started going down. The small opening kept getting wider and wider as Long Chen moved down the stairs.

After around 3 minutes, the stairs finally ended and Long Chen saw the real cave.

The stairs ended at a cave that was around 3 meters wide and 5 meters tall.

"The Nine Yang Herb is further inside. You can walk in the front, I'll be at the back. The cave will lead us straight to the herbs" Wuji Lu said with a smile as he stood behind Long Chen.

"Alright." Long Chen said with a smile as he began walking deeper into the cave. After walking for around 300-400 meters, he reached the end of the tunnel. The tunnel finished at the opening of a room.

The room looked like it was well made. The room looked like a proper square and had a height, length, and width of around 10 meters.

Long Chen stood at the entrance of the room and was able to see inside the room. He could see a large cauldron placed at the center of the room. The cauldron was half silver and half gold in color. There was a Sun Symbol carved on the silver side of the cauldron while a Moon Symbol was carved on the golden side of the cauldron. The cauldron looked quite peculiar.

A person was standing right beside the cauldron. The person was covered in a black robe that covered him completely.

Long Chen couldn't see who that person was as his back was facing Long Chen.

'This must be their Master. Interesting.' Long Chen thought as he gazed at the back of the black-robed man.

Although he couldn't see who that person was, Long Chen was able to guess that it was the person the Villagers called demon. The master of that masked man.

"Little Lu, You're back so soon? Anyways, Who is that boy with you?" The person replied without looking back. The voice was of a girl and sounded quite nice.

Long Chen couldn't help but frown as he heard the voice. The voice was feminine and sounded like the voice of a girl. He was also amazed to see that the girl was able to know about Long Chen's presence.

'I didn't expect it to be a girl. She must be using her divine sense to stay aware of her surroundings.' Long Chen thought to himself.

He used his own divine sense to check the cultivation of the girl. A smile formed on his face.

"It's a little boy I found when I left this place. He came out to look for the Nine Yang Grass for his sick sister, but he doesn't even have a cultivation. He's just a useless human, but I think that he could be of use for the master." Wuji Lu said as he started laughing loudly.

"What boy? Aren't you shocked? You were fooled so easily. There are no herbs here! Instead, you will be the herb! The herb for master's cultivation." Wuji Lu began laughing like a maniac as he stared at Long Chen, but it didn't take long for his laughter to turn into a frown as he noticed that Long Chen was just standing there calmly.

Chapter 236 - 236:Thunder Giant Sect?

"What boy? Aren't you shocked? You were fooled so easily. There are no herbs here! Instead, you will be the herb! The herb for master's cultivation." Wuji Lu began laughing like a maniac as he stared at Long Chen, but it didn't take long for his laughter to turn into a frown as he noticed that Long Chen was just standing there calmly.

Long Chen didn't look scared in the least. There was no change in his expression. In fact, it seemed like he was smiling.

"Are you trying to tell me that there is a mortal who can use divine sense? You have really lost your touch Little Lu, haven't you? It is quite clear that this boy is not so simple. I feel like he has used you to get to me." The woman replied in an amused tone. She still didn't look back.

"What?" Wuji Lu was shocked as he looked towards the boy. His mouth opened wide as he saw a smirk on Long Chen's face.

"I must say... I never expected the fierce child-eating demon to be a woman. I'm somewhat shocked" Long Chen said to the black-robed girl with an amused smile on his face.

"Oh? Is that what people are calling me nowadays? That's not a pleasing name in the least." The girl responded to Long Chen. Long Chen couldn't see her facial expressions but he was sure that she was displeased... but he didn't care.

"You bastard! How dare you fool me? I'll kill you!!!" Wuji Lu roared in anger as he ran towards Long Chen. He was furious at being fooled by a kid.

He punched towards Long Chen's chest but Long Chen simply caught his hand without much difficulty. Wuji Lu used all his strength, but he couldn't free his hand.

He used his other hand to attack Long Chen, but Long Chen grabbed his other hand as well.

A loud scream escaped his mouth as Long Chen kicked his chest with full force while his hands were being held by Long Chen firmly.

Wuji Lu's chest was broken as Long Chen's leg penetrated his chest and came out from the other side.

"Eww... That didn't work out the way I wanted it to. Now my pants are all dirty." Long Chen let out with a disgusted look on his face as he freed Wuji Lu's hands. The lifeless body of Wuji Lu fell on the ground.

Long Chen shifted his focus back to the woman covered in a black robe.

"Are you not going to look back? No need to be shy." Long Chen said with a smile on his face as he looked at the back of the black-robed woman.

"I heard it many times and I believe that it wasn't a lie. The young are really full of vigor nowadays. You aren't a simple boy, are you? Tell me who sent you? What are you after?" The black-robed woman said as she slowly turned back.

Long Chen was finally able to see the face of the woman after she turned back and he was stunned.

Surprisingly, She looked quite beautiful and young. She looked like she was only in her late twenties, but Long Chen could feel that it was not the case. The girl had light green hair and pitch-black eyes that gazed at Long Chen. The girl had fair skin and thin lips.

"Why do you kidnap the kids? Can't you live your life without killing kids?" Long Chen asked with a frown as he looked at the girl.

"Who told you such a lie? I don't kill the kids. It's all complete nonsense" The woman started laughing in front of Long Chen as soon as she heard Long Chen's words.

"You don't kill them? What do you do then? Why do you take the kids?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face.

"Are they still alive?" Long Chen inquired further.

"First tell me who sent you here. Where did you come from? Your young age and the strength you showed. I have some doubts about you, but it's better to hear from you." The woman said with a smirk on her face.

"I'm Ruan, the core disciple of the Thunder Giant Sect. My master is the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect in the North Moon Empire. Now tell me where the kids are? I might leave you alive if you're honest." Long Chen told the woman.

"Thunder Giant Sect?" The woman let out with a shocked look on her face. A frown appeared on her face as she fell in deep thought.

'I thought he was from the nearby Xuan Kingdom, but the personal disciple of the Grand Elder of Thunder Giant Sect? Looks like I'll need to leave this place. But before that... I must kill this boy for interfering in my well-settled life.' The woman thought with a frown on her face. She didn't take her eyes off of Long Chen.

"Tell me about the kids!" Long Chen asked again in a loud tone.

"The kids? You know the specialty of kids? They are so full of life... So I simply took all their life force for myself. Don't worry, I didn't kill them though. I sucked most of their life force and left what remained of them to Wuji Lu. I gave him full freedom to deal with the kids." The black-robed woman said with a smile.

"Now I have a feeling that Little Lu killed the kids, but at least I didn't do such a terrible thing myself. So I'm completely innocent " The woman said as a smirk formed on her face. She looked at Long Chen.

"You... " Long Chen could feel his blood boiling as he heard the woman's words.

"Since you have come here, You shouldn't even think of leaving alive! Don't think that the name of your master can save you from me. Even if your master knows of your situation, he still can't appear here to save you in time. I would be long gone by the time he comes here.!" The woman's pitch became much sharper as she talked to Long Chen.

"Die for me!" She said as a smile appeared on her face, but she didn't make a move.

Chapter 237 - 237: Law Of Fire

"Die for me!" She said as a smile appeared on her face, but she didn't make a move.

A sword appeared in Long Chen's hand that he swung all around.

"You think a few of your Life Destroying insects can subdue me? Did you really think that I wouldn't notice the insects on the roof above me?" Long Chen said as the bodies of life-destroying insects kept getting cut in half and falling to the ground until there was none left.

"You!" The woman's expression changed as she saw all her rare insects getting killed. She could feel her blood boiling.

"I'll kill you myself!" The woman screamed in anger as she finally moved. Even Long Chen was stunned to see her speed. She looked to be just as fast as the wind itself.

Two knives appeared in the girl's hands as she slashed towards Long Chen's chest, but her eyes opened wide in shock as the knives passed through the empty air. Long Chen had disappeared from his position as soon as the knives were about to touch him thus the knives missed him.

"Aaahhh...." The woman screamed in anger as Long Chen appeared behind her back and slashed at her with his sword. A large wound appeared on her back that started bleeding. A scream escaped her mouth.

She turned back with a furious look on her face and swung her knife towards Long Chen.

Long Chen dodged the attack and caught her hand. Using his sword, he cut off the wrist of the woman.

The knife fell onto the ground as the girl screamed like crazy.

Long Chen freed her hand and gripped her neck and thrashed her on the ground. The woman coughed out a mouthful of blood as her back hit the hard ground.

A crater was left behind as Long Chen again picked her up in the air, making her hang in the air by her neck

"You know when I first heard about you, I thought that you would be a top rank Earth Realm cultivator, but who knew that you would only be a 4th

stage Earth Realm cultivator. I'm amazed you're still alive with such weak strength. How did you have the courage to do such a thing in such close proximity to the Xuan Kingdom?" Long Chen said with a disappointed look on his face as he gazed into her eyes.

"Who.... Who are you! How can you be a high-rank Earth Realm cultivator! Even the disciple of the Grand Elder shouldn't have such strength!" The woman let out with a look of disbelief on her face. Her whole body was filled with pain.

"I'm no one special. Just a person who is going to kill you. You just need to know that today is the day you die." Long Chen said with a smile as he gazed at her.

"Don't think that you have won! You are still going to die!" The woman clenched her teeth as she said. Her eyes were blood red by now.

Long Chen was completely unaware of the orb of fire that was taking form, behind his back. He suddenly sensed danger, but before he could react that blazing orb of fire struck his back.

"Ah..." Long Chen groaned in pain as he threw away the woman and disappeared from his spot. He appeared ten meters behind from where he was originally standing.

"Where do you think you're running off to! You can't leave here alive!" The girl laughed madly as she gazed at Long Chen. Her eyes were flaming red by now as she kept moving her left hand and kept making various gestures with her hand.

Orbs of fire kept appearing all around Long Chen one after another and kept targeting Long Chen.

"Flame Essence? No... Flame Essence can't give such control over the flames! The flames aren't that strong either! You've learned the Law of Flame, haven't you?" Long Chen let out with a surprised look on his face as he kept dodging the blazing hot orbs of fire.

"I'm surprised that you know about the laws. Not many people know about the laws, but you're right! I precisely comprehended the Law of Fire. Your knowledge can't save you, boy! You will still have to die!" The black-robed woman said in a shrill voice as she continued attacking Long Chen.

Long Chen disappeared from his position as he again used teleport and appeared near the girl, but before he could attack, another orb of fire appeared around her and attacked Long Chen.

Long Chen was struck by the fire and thrown back as he coughed out a mouthful of blood. Long Chen crashed on the ground.

He rolled on the ground as he dodged another orb of flame and stood up.

"You can't escape!!!" The girl laughed like a maniac as she kept attacking Long Chen.

A wall of fire has appeared at the mouth of the cave to prevent Long Chen from leaving the room.

"Enough...!" Long Chen roared loudly as his eyes changed their color. His eyes turned starry black as the space around him changed.

The orbs of fire kept hitting him, but it looked like the orbs of fire were hitting a barrier that prevented them from harming Long Chen in the slightest.

The black-robed girl frowned as she saw the orb of fire being stopped by Long Chen's barrier.

"A barrier? Do you think your barrier can stop the burning spirit of the fire?" The woman sneered coldly as she raised her hands high.

A ring of fire formed around Long Chen that started burning like crazy. Burning hot flames filled the entire ring of fire. The flames only kept getting denser.

The room had started getting hot as the fire tried to burn Long Chen alive.

"I'll see how long you can stay alive." The woman smiled conceitedly as she saw the blazing fire. The fire was so dense that it was difficult to even see Long Chen inside the fire.

Chapter 238 - 238: Strange Cauldron

"I'll see how long you can stay safe alive." The woman smiled conceitedly as she saw the blazing fire. The fire was so dense that it was difficult to even see Long Chen inside the fire.

The woman looked like she was enjoying watching the fire burn Long Chen when a sword penetrated her heart from her behind.

"H... How!" She coughed out another mouthful of blood as she exclaimed.

"Your fire is nothing in front of the infinite space." Someone whispered in her ear.

Long Chen pulled out the sword from her back as the woman fell to the ground.

"You should have been a genius since you were able to learn the Law of Fire. You didn't need to do such a thing." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the dead body of the woman.

Just to be sure, he cut off the woman's head. The girl was able to learn the law of fire, she could have other tricks up her sleeve as well. Long Chen didn't want to take any chances.

After he was done with her, Long Chen took her storage ring and began looking around the room.

The room had nothing much except a comfortable bed on the corner, the cauldron at the center and some rare herbs.

Long Chen walked towards the herbs first. He placed all of the herbs in his storage ring before he turned back towards the cauldron.

He walked towards the cauldron and began observing it.

Half of the cauldron was silver while the other half was golden. There was a moon symbol on the golden side of the cauldron, while the Sun symbol was on the silver side. There were tens of star symbols in between them.

"This cauldron looks like a treasure item. It's at least a Gold Grade artifact, it could even be higher. Looks like this trip was worth it." Long Chen smiled as he placed his hands on the cauldron.

He placed the cauldron in his storage ring and walked towards the exit. The fire that was blocking the entrance of the cave had disappeared and the path was clear by now.

Long Chen had no trouble as he left the cave and started walking towards the village.

After half an hour, Long Chen finally reached the entrance of the village.

He was stunned to see that all the villagers were on their knees. They all had tears in their eyes as they kept muttering something.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile bitterly as he heard their words.

"That boy is definitely dead, it will be our turn next. The demon will kill us all." The villagers kept saying with worried expressions on their faces.

"I'm telling you for the last time! Stop talking nonsense or I will kill you myself!" Zhiqing let out as anger clouded her face. She glared at the man who had just spoken.

"Why should we stop. We are saying the truth. You people destroyed our lives. If we had given those 3 kids away, everything would have been handled peacefully, like always! But that boy interfered in our business and now we all will die!" A villager stood up and said loudly.

"Yeah! He should die, not us!" Another villager let out loudly.

"The demon should kill him, but we had nothing to do with him!" The first villager again said.

"I wish that boy could tell the demon that it was all his fault before dying! I don't want the demon to blame us for a stupid kid's mistakes!" He further said.

Soon, the others started rising up and saying similar things.

"What are all of you saying? The boy was trying to help us! We shouldn't talk bad about him!" The village chief said in a discontented tone.

"Shut up you old man! You're just saying that because he saved your daughter!" The Villager responded.

"How can you..." The village chief was saying something, but he was stopped by the Villager.

"He should have let that demon envoy take your daughter! So many of the village kids have been sacrificed to the demons throughout the years, So what if it was one more!" The Villager let out.

"He wasn't going to take her! The envoy said that he would only strip her and r*pe her! You wouldn't have lost her. She would have been lucky that she got the opportunity to get fuc*ed by the demon envoy! But that demon envoy was attacked by that impulsive kid inste.." That villager was again saying something, but in between his sentence, his head was separated from his body and he fell to the ground.

"Who else was badmouthing me?" Long Chen stood near the dead body of the villager as he looked all around.

All the villagers started shivering in fear as they created their distance from Long Chen and moved back.

"You're back! How was it.?" Mingyu asked Long Chen as she walked near him. There was a relieved look on her face.

"It's handled." Long Chen replied with a smile.

"By the way, I think that I made a mistake by helping them. I had forgotten the nature of humanity. Even as I saved the kids, I was the bad guy. I'll make better decisions in the future." Long Chen let out with an expressionless face. Each of his words made the villagers feel more and more shame about their behavior.

"Let's go. We're leaving." Long Chen told the girls as he began walking towards their carriage.

"Ah... wait, Master!" A voice came from behind. Long Chen stopped and turned back only to find the Village Chief standing behind him.

"You saved my daughter. I want to express my gratitude. Although I have nothing of value to give you, I do have something that has been in our family for a long time."The old man said as he gave Long Chen something.

Long Chen was stunned as he unwrapped the gift. It was something he never expected.

Chapter 239 - 239:A Stone?

Long Chen was stunned as he unwrapped the gift. It was something he never expected.

"A Stone?" Long Chen asked with a frown as he gazed at the thing in his hand. It was nothing but a small piece of stone.

"I don't know what use this stone might have, but I was told by my grandfather that the stone is not a normal stone. He said that it is a special stone and that it will help our family achieve prominence, but I don't think that it's in our destiny to have that. I would like to give it to you as a gift." The Village Chief said with a smile.

'Isn't this a normal stone? Oh well, Looks like your grandfather wanted to give you some hope for the future. I shouldn't tell him and break good hopes.' Long Chen thought as he looked at the stone in his hand.

"Thank you village chief. I'll keep this 'special' stone with care." Long Chen said with a smile as he kept the stone in his storage ring.

"Lulu? Don't you want to say something as well?" The village elder said with a smile.

A girl stopped hiding behind his back and came out.

"Ah.. thank you, big brother." The girl said as she bowed down.

"Why were you hiding behind him? Am I that scary?" Long Chen smiled as he gazed at her.

'Oh well, I did behead a villager, so she isn't wrong to be scared.' Long Chen thought with a wry smile on his face.

"Thanks for everything. I'm leaving now" Long Chen said as he turned back and left.

Long Chen entered the carriage with Mingyu and Zhiqing and the carriage began moving.

In a short time, they were outside the village and on the road as they continued on their journey.

There was complete silence inside the carriage for a few minutes, before Long Chen started getting restless.

"Ah...Mingyu... about the thing from before... Is this a good time to talk?" Long Chen said with some hesitation. He decided to talk to Mingyu about the thing he was evading for quite some time.

"I want to talk to you about it as well, but you can go first," Mingyu replied to Long Chen instantly.

"Thank you. Well, the thing is that... you already saw everything that happened with Zhiqing. I'm not going to deny that I do have some feelings for Zhiqing and we have been intimate before." Long Chen said in full seriousness.

Mingyu couldn't help but frown as she heard Long Chen's words, though she decided to stay silent and not interrupt him.

"But it is also the truth that I do have feelings for you. I haven't told you before about it because I was worried that it would affect our relationship if you don't have the same feelings, but I always had feelings for you. I'm in love with you Mingyu and I don't want to lose you ever. You're my closest friend at the moment, but to me, you're much more." Long Chen said as he gazed in her eyes with an emotional look.

"You really love me?" Mingyu asked with a frown on her face.

"Yeah." Long Chen said as he nodded his head.

"What about Zhiqing? Do you love her as well?" Mingyu asked Long Chen again.

Long Chen turned silent as he looked back towards Zhiqing. His eyes met Zhiqing's eyes. Long Chen could see the hopes and feelings in her eyes.

"Yes. I love her as well. We haven't spent much time with each other, nor have we gone through life or death situations like you and me. But the moments I spent with her were all meaningful. " Long Chen replied after a brief moment.

"If I ask you to choose one of us and leave the other... who will you choose? Who will you decide to leave?" Mingyu again said as she gave Long Chen another tough question.

Long Chen was stunned as he heard her question.

"I will leave no one. If you ask me to choose only one amongst you and Zhiqing, I wouldn't be able to do it. Both of you are my woman and I'm in love with you both. In this lifetime, I'd never even think about leaving you." Long Chen said in a determined tone.

Both the girls were shocked as they heard the determination and seriousness in Long Chen's voice.

A gentle smile appeared on Zhiqing's face as she looked down.

"Good answer. Not bad for the man I gave my heart to. I'll forgive you for not telling me about you and her. You don't need to leave any of us as well." Mingyu told Long Chen with a smile.

"Does that mean?" Long Chen asked as he gazed in her eyes.

"Yeah... I'll be your woman... but I won't be like Zhiqing. I won't do the stuff that you were doing with her before I'm ready. Nothing more than a kiss is allowed for now." She started looking down as she said in an anxious tone.

"Alright. Wait. Am I hearing it right? " Long Chen nodded his head before he realized the meaning of her last words.

A bright smile appeared on Long Chen's hasn't ashe hugged Mingyu tightly and gave her a light kiss on the lips.

"Heyyy... what're you doing! You don't need to be so impatient!" Mingyu said as she looked at Long Chen with an annoyed look on her face.

"I can kiss you, can't I? You said that yourself!" Long Chen gazed in her eyes and told her with a smile.

"You should've asked that before kissing me, you idiot. Yes! Kissing is allowed" Mingyu said with a wry smile on her face.

Long Chen didn't respond and simply kissed her again. This time, the kiss was more passionate and Mingyu responded to his kiss as she planned her hands-on Long Chen's back.

After kissing for over 5 minutes, they both separated.

"Father is going to be so shocked when he finds out about you." Mingyu chuckled as she said, but she soon turned melancholic as she remembered the danger that her empire was facing and that it was near a war.

Chapter 240 - 240: Change Of Plans

"Father is going to be so shocked when he finds out about you." Mingyu chuckled as she said, but she soon turned melancholic as she remembered the danger that her empire was facing and that it was near a war.

"Don't worry about your family. We'll definitely help them. Nothing bad will happen to them." Long Chen assured her as he noticed the worries on her face. He embraced her gently.

"Yeah." Mingyu nodded her head.

Zhiqing couldn't help but wonder about what they were talking about but she didn't ask. She could sense that the mood had suddenly gotten heavy. She wondered about what she could do to lighten the mood.

"Hey, does this mean that we're both his women now?" Zhiqing abruptly said as she looked towards Long Chen.

"So I don't have to hold back anymore, right? Brother Chen, Shall we continue where we left off last time?" Zhiqing said in a seductive tone as she stuck closer to Long Chen.

"You!!! Stop being so shameless!" Mingyu abruptly let out as she glared at Zhiqing.

"Hey, you said that you won't do anything other than kiss him! Why are you preventing me from doing the rest of the stuff! There's nothing shameless about it! We'll eventually have to do it with him anyways! Better be first than last" Zhiqing laughed lightly as she teased Mingyu.

"You!!! Mingyu looked like she was fuming in anger as she tried to find words to speak, but nothing was coming to her mind.

"Can you guys calm down for a moment. There's a long journey ahead of us. Let's talk about that first!" Long Chen interrupted them before their arguments turned serious.

"Zhiqing, can you give me the map?" Long Chen looked towards Zhiqing and said.

"Alright. Here it is," Zhiqing said as she brought out the map and gave it to Long Chen.

Long Chen opened the map and started looking at it carefully.

"We're 200 kilometers outside the boundary of Xuan Kingdom. We'll be right here." Zhiqing touched a certain spot on the map and said to Long Chen.

Mingyu also looked at the map.

"Our next destination will be the Qidia Kingdom. It's a 2nd rank kingdom, but it's under the 1st rank kingdom of Malta. We'll go through the first rank Kingdom of Malta to the 1st rank Kingdom of Sedia. There will be 2 more Kingdoms to pass through before we enter the parameters of the North Moon Empire."

"How long do you think the journey will take?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at Zhiqing.

"In short, our journey will take about 15 days if we travel without stopping, but that's impossible as we definitely would have to stop at night. So realistically, our journey should take around 25 days." Zhiqing continued as she gave an approximate timeline.

"We won't go to the Qidia Kingdom." Long Chen abruptly said he shook his head.

"What do you mean by that? Going through Qidia is the best possible path for us. It'll be the fastest way for us." Zhiqing said with a confused look on her face. She couldn't understand what Long Chen was thinking.

"You're right. But we won't go there. We'll go through here?" Long Chen said with a smile as he placed his finger on the map.

"That? Why Weixin? Although we can take this other road and go towards the kingdom of Weixin, the journey will become longer if we go through the Kingdom of Weixin. There is nothing beneficial from that." Zhiqing said with a perplexed look on her face.

Even Mingyu had a doubtful look on her face.

"Is there something special in the Kingdom of Weixin that you need?" Mingyu said as she thought of a possible explanation behind Long Chen's strange decision.

"Yeah. There is something really useful for us there. Going through Weixin is really important for us and beneficial. You'll see." Long Chen said as a smile appeared on his face.

"Alright. We will go through to the Weixin Kingdom If you want that. Even in the worst-case scenario, it will only increase our journey by 2 days. Let me inform the driver." Zhiqing let out with a smile as she folded the map and kept it back.

She opened the door of the carriage and called out for the driver. The carriage stopped and the driver came towards Zhiqing.

She told him about the change in the plans and that they needed to go towards the Weixin Kingdom now. She highlighted the path that was needed to be followed by the carriage driver.

"Do you understand everything now?" Zhiqing asked the carriage driver after she finished telling him.

*Yes mistress!" The carriage driver nodded his head as he said with a confident look on his face.

"Good. Get going." She let out as she entered the carriage.

The driver walked back to his seat and the carriage began moving again. The destination was still the same, but the stopgaps have changed.

The carriage continued moving through the day and it was finally starting to get dark.

The carriage driver decided to stop the carriage when it got too dark to move.

He began preparation to set up the tents for the princess and the others.

The carriage driver walked towards the carriage after he was finished with setting up the camp. He knocked on the door of the carriage and informed Zhiqing that everything was ready.

"Alright. Good work." Zhiqing nodded her head in praise as she got out of the carriage. Mingyu came out as well, whereas Long Chen was already out long ago.

Long Chen looked around the forest as he breathed in the fresh air. He was getting tired after sitting around in the carriage for a long time.

"Are you going to cook for us? I would love to eat the food made by a Princess." Long Chen looked towards Princess Zhiqing as he asked her with a grin on his face.

"Hey, I never said I would cook food personally. I only said that I will take care of the food. Ron here would handle the food. I especially chose him to accompany us. He is actually my father's personal carriage driver. He can cook food better than the chefs of the hotels and as you have already seen... he set up the camp as well."Zhiqing praised the driver with a bright smile on her face.

"He is one of the most talented carriage drivers in our Kingdom. His battle strength isn't weak either." She continued.

Chapter 241 - 241: Man From The Sky

"He is one of the most talented carriage drivers in our Kingdom. His battle strength isn't weak either." She continued.

"Yeah. I noticed that. A 7th stage gold core realm driver is quite rare." Long Chen said as he folded his arms and nodded his head.

He's setting up the campfire right now. The food shall be ready in half an hour. How about we rest inside my tent till then. We can talk about some life philosophy." Zhiqing said as she winked at Long Chen

"Hey! I know what life philosophies you want to talk about! Don't even think about it." Mingyu let out in an annoyed tone.

"Come on sister, Isn't our duty to please our husband? Come with me... both of us will take care of hubby." Zhiqing walked closer to Mingyu and whispered in her ears.

Mingyu's face turned crimson as she heard her words. Unbeknownst to them, Long Chen was able to hear their words clearly due to his sharp senses. A wry smile appeared on his face as he started looking elsewhere.

"Oh right, Zhiqing. How old are you?" Long Chen suddenly asked out of curiosity.

"Me? I... Don't you know that it's bad to ask a girl of her age? Still, I'll tell you that I'm in my early twenties." Zhiqing said vaguely.

"Did you take part in the sect entrance exams of 4 years ago? You're in your early twenties and you are already at the 5th stage of the gold core realm. Your talent seems way better than that of Prince Lu, who is said to be a grade 6 talent. I wonder what your talent grade is." Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Sorry to disappoint you, but I didn't participate in the sect entrance exams 4 years ago," Zhiqing said as she shook her head.

"Why not? You could easily become the inner sect disciple of the 1st rank sects." Long Chen asked as he gazed at Zhiqing with a curious look on her face.

"Oh, come on. I'm nothing in front of the both of you! You guys are the real monsters when it comes to talent and cultivation. You're both in Earth Realm

at such a young age...I don't even hold a candle in front of you." Zhiqing sighed as she shook her head in self-deprecation.

"Anyways, I don't have any interest in joining the sects. I just want to live my life freely. I don't want to be bound by the rules and regulations of the sect. That's why I never participated in the sect entrance exams." Zhiqing further said as she smiled.

"That's quite an interesting approach. So you don't want the resources of the sects? Don't you desire to reach the peak of cultivation?" Long Chen asked again with a thoughtful look on his face.

"It's fine. I don't have any excessive desires. I'm sure that I'll reach my goal. I will do it at my own pace though. If I have the talent, I can do it on my own. If I don't have the talent to do it then even if the top sects helped me, I wouldn't be able to achieve anything." Zhiqing chuckled as she replied to Long Chen.

"Interesting. You're quite interesting. I'm sure you'll reach great heights if you keep a strong heart like that." Long Chen said with a smile as he praised Zhiqing.

"Thank you, but it would be quite tough to catch up to you. I'd never give up though. I'll keep trying my best." Zhiqing grinned as she held Long Chen's hand.

"Oh? Looks like the food is ready." Mingyu interrupted their moment as she called out. She was getting quite jealous of Zhiqing acting so close to Long Chen.

"Oh, good. I was getting hungry. Let's go." Long Chen walked towards the campfire as he held Zhiqing's hand.

Using his other hand, he caught Mingyu's hand as well as he took her with him.

They sat around the campfire and began eating the food.

"You were right. Ron does make good food. It's quite tasty. " Long Chen said as he kept eating the food. The food was just to his liking.

Long Chen was eating when he sensed something strange. He hurriedly placed the bowl on the ground as he stood up and looked towards the sky. His sharp senses were warning him of something.

"What happened? Is there something wrong?" Mingyu asked with a confused look on her face as she saw Long Chen's strange reaction.

"Shhh..." Long Chen didn't say anything and just gestured for Mingyu to stay silent as he kept looking towards the sky.

For a short time, Long Chen didn't see anything, but he didn't take his eyes off of the sky. He didn't even make a single movement.

After a few seconds, something finally came to his view. It looked like a human that was falling from the sky.

The person kept falling down but there was no movement that could be seen. It seemed like that person was unconscious.

When there were only 10 meters of distance remaining between the man and the ground, Long Chen jumped to the sky and caught the person as he landed on the ground.

"Where did you come from?" Long Chen muttered as he looked at the guy.

It was a man who looked to be in his early thirties. His clothes looked quite good and it looked like he was from a good place. There was a high-grade Storage Ring on the man's finger but he was unconscious.

"Who's he? Did he just fall from the sky?" Mingyu stood up and asked with concern.

"Hurry! Extinguish the fire!" Long Chen said in a hurry as he noticed the blood on the clothes of the man in his hand.

"Yes!" Zhiqing didn't ask anything and hurriedly threw the water on the fire to extinguish it. The fire was extinguished as the whole place returned to darkness.

Chapter 242 - 242: Alchemy

"Yes!" Zhiqing didn't ask anything and hurriedly threw the water on the fire to extinguish it. The fire was extinguished as the whole place returned to darkness.

"Take him inside my tent. Make sure that his injuries don't get worse." Long Chen handed the man to Ron and said to him.

"You two go with him and don't come out." Long Chen told the girls. Mingyu and Zhiqing followed his commands as they went with Ron.

Long Chen was standing alone outside, under a tree as he kept observing the sky.

After a minute or so, a large fleet of flying beasts passed from the sky. Long Chen couldn't see anything other than the beasts, but he felt like there were people on top of the beasts.

Long Chen kept standing below the tree as he fell in deep thought.

"Looks like something big is going on." Long Chen muttered as his back rested against the tree.

Long Chen turned back and started walking towards his tent.

"His wounds are too heavy and his breathing is weakening!" Mingyu came out of the tent and informed him before he could enter.

He followed her as he entered inside. He sat beside the unconscious man and checked his pulse and used his divine sense to check the body of the man.

"He has been poisoned... and heavily wounded. It's shocking that he wasn't caught by whoever was following him." Long Chen let out as he retracted his divine sense.

"The wounds can be healed by the pills we already have but the poison... that's going to be the real problem." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the boy.

"If only we had a Hundred Poison Healing Pill, we would be able to save him." Mingyu let out with a disappointed look on her face.

"Oh right! Hundred Poison healing pill! We can save him." Long Chen said as he stood up.

He suddenly remembered something about the pill.

"What? Do you have the pill?" Zhiqing asked with a surprised look on her face.

"Nope, but I'm going to make it. Zhiqing, I'll be using your tent for the time being. Don't come inside so that I don't lose my focus." Long Chen told Zhiqing before he left the tent in a hurry and walked inside Zhiqing's tent.

"Time to test you, little cauldron" Long Chen muttered as he brought out a cauldron. It was the same cauldron that he had taken from the cave of the black-robed woman who used to steal kids' life essence to boost her strength.

He started fire below the cauldron and began heating it. He had all the necessary herbs in his storage ring to make the Hundred Poison Healing Pill and he had the recipe in his brain as well. It was all because of the knowledge of a peak spiritual grade alchemist that he had received as a reward from the bloodline temple.

He started adding the herbs in properly batched quantities based on the memories and began the concoction of the Hundred Poison Healing Pill.

The hundred poison healing pill was classified as a high-level mortal grade pill. Although Long Chen had the knowledge of a peak Spirit grade alchemist, when it came to the actual practice, that's where he was lacking. The first time he tried making a pill, he was able to successfully make a low-level Mortal grade pill, but that too was only after 3 failed attempts.

"I only have enough herbs to try two times... if I fail both times, that guy will die. It's not like I'll be affected by his death in any way, but I have a feeling that this person will be useful to me. I should try making the pill to the best of my effort. If it's in his destiny to live, I'll be successful. If he is meant to die, oh well... too bad my herbs would be used for nothing." Long Chen muttered to himself as he continued the concoction.

It took him half an hour before he was done with all the steps that were needed. A beautiful smell was coming out of the cauldron.

"Looks like it worked." Long Chen smiled as he opened the lid of the cauldron. As soon as the lid was open, the expression on his face turned strange.

There were three pills inside the cauldron, but they didn't look the way they were supposed to. The Hundred Poison Healing pill was supposed to be black in color, but the pill that was inside the cauldron looked red.

"What the hell? What did I do wrong?" Long Chen began wondering with a confused look on his face as he picked up a pill from the cauldron.

He observed the pill and the pill wasn't burnt. In fact, it looked perfectly shaped. It smelled how it was supposed to, but its color was different. Even with his Spirit grade Alchemist knowledge, he wasn't able to understand its meaning.

"Maybe I used too much Hong Zhao, I should try again with decreased quantity. That should take care of the color." Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look as he again started the fire and began concoction from scratch.

Half an hour later, the pills were ready as a strong smell of the pills was coming out of the cauldron.

Long Chen turned off the fire and took off the lid of the cauldron as he picked up the pills, but this time he wasn't happy in the slightest. The pills inside the cauldron were clearly destroyed. He immediately threw away the pills.

"Looks like decreasing the Hong Zhen's quantity had an adverse effect on the concoction. I shouldn't have changed the recipe. How did my first try yield the red pills though? I had clearly followed the recipe at that time." Long Chen muttered as he observed the three pills that he had received the first time he tried making the Hundred Poison Healing Pill.

"I don't have any herbs left for another try. I can only hope that this pill works. Only the color is different. There's a possibility that this pill is effective. It all depends on his luck anyway." Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he placed the cauldron inside the storage ring.

Chapter 243 - 243: Plan For The Night

"I don't have any herbs left for another try. I can only hope that this pill works. Only the color is different. There's a possibility that this pill is effective. It all depends on his luck anyway." Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he placed the cauldron inside the storage ring.

After getting ready, he left Zhiqing's tent and started walking toward his own.

It was already midnight and the darkness was at its peak. It was so silent that even the whistling of leaves could be heard.

"You're back! Were you successful? I don't think he'll live for more than an hour unless the poison is removed." Mingyu noticed Long Chen and informed him as soon as he entered the tent.

Long Chen gazed towards the man and his situation was getting worse. His breathing was really weak and his face was feverish red.

"Ahmm... I made a pill, but the effectiveness of this pill will be entirely dependent on his luck. I can't say anything about it for now" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he sat next to the man.

He placed his hands on the man's face and opened his mouth. Using the other hand, he placed the pill inside the man's mouth.

"The pill will melt inside his mouth and enter his body. Let's see if he can heal from it." Long Chen let out softly as he sat gazed at the man.

Ten Minutes passed away, but it didn't look like the man was recovering. Instead, It seemed like the man's condition was worsening. His breathing was so weak that it seemed like his breath would stop at any moment.

Long Chen observed him for quite some time before he sighed.

'Looks like the pill was indeed a failure.' Long Chen muttered with a disappointed look on his face.

He was about to give up on any hope of the man's survival but everything changed.

The man finally started recovering. The breathing of the man seemed like it was starting to stabilize. His face had gained back its original color as well.

"Let him rest for the night. He should be fine by the morning." Long Chen said with a smile as he stood up.

"Ron, You can stay with him in this tent to keep an eye on him. Although he probably won't wake up tonight, if he does wake up in the middle of the night, don't forget to inform us." Long Chen said as he stood up and left the tent.

Mingyu and Zhiqing both left the tent soon after.

"Looks like your tent is booked for the night. You can sleep in mine, but on a different mattress" Mingyu walked closer to Long Chen and said to him softly.

"Ahh... Alr..." Long Chen was in the middle of his sentence when Zhiqing grabbed his hands and interrupted him.

"Why in your tent! Mine is available as well. He can sleep in mine." Zhiqing stood near Long Chen and said in an annoyed tone.

"Come with me darling, there's no need for that separate mattress in my place," Zhiqing said in a seductive tone as she struck closer to Long Chen.

"That's no need for any mattress.I'll cultivate all night after all. So it doesn't matter where I stay." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he tried to play the middle man.

"That's fine. So which tent will you stay in?" Both of them asked at the same time.

"I... I'll... I'll stay in the carriage." He thought for a while, but his head started aching as he observed the expectant faces of both of them. In the end, he decided to stay out of it.

Unbeknownst to him, there were cracks that had started to develop in his heart demon's cocoon but only a few cracks were developed before it stopped.

"You don't need to go that far, I know we are making things unnecessarily difficult for you. You can stay in Zhiqing's room. I won't mind." Mingyu let out abruptly amidst his reply. She turned back and entered her tent.

Long Chen stood there unable to understand what just happened. Did Mingyu just get angry?

'Life sure is tough with two women. I wonder what will happen when the number increases.' Long Chen thought with a wry smile on his face.

"Go after her, we can spend time together some other time." Zhiqing chuckled as she pushed Long from behind.

"Thanks." Long Chen smiled as he gave Zhiqing a light peck on the lips before he walked towards Mingyu's tent.

"You'll just cultivate anyways, It's not like I'm losing much tonight." Zhiqing let out with a clever smile on her face.

'This way, I can fairly take him to my room the next time.' She thought to herself.

Mingyu was lying on her mattress and looked like she was most in deep thought. Long Chen entered the tent suddenly which shocked Mingyu.

"What're you doing here?" Mingyu asked with a shocked look on her face as she saw Long Chen entering her tent.

"Can't I enter my woman's room?" Long Chen replied to her with a cute smile on his face.

"You can, but why are you not with Zhiqing?" Mingyu asked with a confused look on his face.

"Of Course I'm here to spend the night with my lovely Mingyu." Long Chen chuckled as he closed the zip of the tent opening and walked towards Mingyu. A slight smile appeared on Mingyu's face but she quickly hid it.

He sat right beside her on the mattress.

"Didn't you say that you will cultivate all night long?" Mingyu said as she saw Long Chen lying beside her.

"That was the initial plan, but I dropped it. I know that I can't cultivate in peace with such a beautiful girl sleeping right beside me. It's better that I don't even try." Long Chen chuckled as she placed his arms over Mingyu.

"I told you that we can't do anything other than kiss before I'm ready." Mingyu faced Long Chen as she reminded him.

"I know about it. Don't worry... I won't force you. I promise." Long Chen with a gentle smile on his face. He brought his face closer to Mingyu's and kissed her soft lips.

"But I can still kiss..." He smiled as he gazed in her eyes.

Chapter 244 - 244: Are You Sure? (★)

"I know about it. Don't worry... I won't force you. I promise." Long Chen with a gentle smile on his face. He brought his face closer to Mingyu's and kissed her soft lips.

"But I can still kiss..." He smiled as he gazed in her eyes.

"You..." Mingyu was about to say something when Long Chen again closed her lips with his. Surprisingly, Even Mingyu began responding to Long Chen's kiss with passion.

Both of them embraced each other tightly as they tasted each others' lips. The kiss lasted for around 3 minutes before they separated their lips.

"That's enough for the night. You should sleep now. We need to get up early in the morning to resume our journey after all." Mingyu gazed at Long Chen and said in a gentle tone.

"I'll listen to my wife tonight, but after this..." Long Chen said in a serious tone but stopped midway as he again kissed Mingyu.

The kiss this time was longer and lasted for around 5 minutes. Both of them looked breathless as they separated their lips.

"Enough now," Mingyu said as she turned her body so that her face was facing the opposite side.

"Alright. No funny business now. Strictly sleeping now!" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

He placed his right arm over Mingyu and struck closer to hers as he closed his eyes. It kinda looked like they were cuddling. It didn't last long before Long Chen began worrying. He realized that his little Chen was in close contact with Mingyu's butt and was starting to make moments.

Long Chen was trying to sleep, but a wry smile appeared on his face as he realized what was actually happening.

His little Chen was getting aroused and bigger, but because he was closely stuck to Mingyu, he was sure that she realized it as well. He wondered if she would scold him or create a distance between them, but the reality turned out to be different.

Mingyu's heart was beating faster as she separated herself from Long Chen after the second kiss. She was starting to feel like she would lose control if this keeps on going for longer.

She thought that she had more self-control over her body, but reality turned out to be quite different. Her self control was starting to crumble.

She turned her back on Long Chen and faced the other side so that he couldn't kiss her, but that turned out to be even worse.

Long Chen had stuck closer to her, and now his little guy was poking her butt. She opened her mouth to say something but closed it immediately. She decided to pretend that she was sleeping as she found this situation to be quite embarrassing.

'Did she sleep? That was quite fast.' Long Chen muttered as he got no reaction from Mingyu regarding his little guy.

"Oh well, it's good I guess." Long Chen muttered softly as he closed his eyes and stopped caring about his little Chen that was playing with Mingyu's butt.

He had subconsciously started moving his waist here and there as he rubbed his little guy on Mingyu's ass while his hand rested over her.

Mingyu's heartbeat was getting faster, as she felt the movement of his little guy.

Finally, she couldn't take it anymore as she voiced her opinion.

"Can you stop moving it." Mingyu let out as she turned back and faced Long Chen.

"I'm sorry. Because of the kissing, the little guy got excited and started moving on his own." Long Chen replied to her with a shameless smile on his face. He thought that it was better than getting embarrassed.

"Calm your thing down. It's disturbing me." Mingyu responded to Long Chen without looking at Long Chen.

"I can't do anything about it anymore. It will stay like this all night long. There's only one way to make it calm down, but that can only be done with your help. I don't think you will do it though" Long Chen said as he acted depressed.

"It's fine. I'll stay outside and bear the pain that this little guy will give me." Long Chen stood up and said with a sad look on his face.

"Pain? What are you talking about?" Mingyu said with a worried gaze.

"Oh right, you won't know about it. When the little guy gets erect, if it is not calmed down within half an hour, it starts giving extreme pain. A pain that feels like thousands of needles stabbing your heart." Long Chen made up a story as he went along.

"That... is that really the truth? Tell me how I can help it to calm down. I... I will try to do it." Mingyu said with a worried gaze.

"There are two ways. The first is to have sex, but that is not possible since you aren't ready. The other one is..." Long Chen brought his face closer to Mingyu's face as he whispered something in her ears. Mingyu's expressions kept varying the more she heard.

"Wha..." Mingyu's mouth opened wide as she heard Long Chen's answer. She stared at him with a stunned look on her face. Her face was completely crimson by now.

"Are you being honest?" Mingyu asked again. She couldn't help but doubt Long Chen.

"Yeah. Those two are the only options to solve it. But I'm sure that you won't do it. It's fine... it's just the pain after all. I'll bear the pain and live with it. I won't die... Most probably." Long Chen looked down as he said in a defeated tone.

"I... I'll do it." Mingyu told Long Chen after initial hesitation.

"You'll do what?" Long Chen asked her with a surprised look on his face.

"He... help you... with the second option. I will do it" Mingyu replied to Long Chen with a red face and much effort.

"Are you sure?" Long Chen asked with a surprised look on his face.

Chapter 245 - 245: You Are Ready(★)

||||||| Important Note: This chapter contains strong adult content. If you are a minor or dislike such content. Please skip to the next chapter! |||||||

"Are you sure?" Long Chen asked with a surprised look on his face.

"Yeah... Lower your pants." Mingyu told Long Chen as she tried to calm her fast heartbeat.

"Oh, thank you so much, my love." Long Chen said as a happy smile bloomed on his face. He removed his pants instantly and exposed his little chen.

Although Mingyu had seen little Chen when she caught Long Chen being intimate with Zhiqing, she was still shocked as she saw his little guy.

"I am sorry that you have to do this for my sake." Long Chen said in an apologetic tone.

"I'll only do this one time," Mingyu said in a soft tone as she moved and sat in front of Long Chen.

She brought her face closer to the little guy and straight away started sucking on his little guy as she used her lips.

"You're doing good." Long Chen said in a praising tone as he gazed at Mingyu.

Mingyu didn't reply nor she reached as she kept sucking on his sword. Her face was completely red by now, but thankfully Long Chen wasn't able to see her face.

As she gave Long Chen what he desired, even her heart had started to feel the passion. She could feel a weird feeling rising inside herself that was making her restless.

Out of nowhere, a hand suddenly entered the opening of her top and started playing with her breasts.

She gazed upwards without taking out his little guy from her mouth but only saw Long Chen's smiling face. Long Chen kept rubbing, pinching and fondling her breasts without stopping even as he gazed in her eyes.

"D.. don't do this," Mingyu said to Long Chen with a drunken look on her face.

"You know that you want it as well. You are ready... Stop lying to yourself.."
Long Chen removed his hands from her chest and placed his hands on her shoulders as he made her lie down on the bed and climbed on top of her.

He moved her top upwards and exposed her jade-like mountain peaks.

Mingyu used her hands as she covered her breasts but Long Chen softly held her hands and removed them as he brought his face closer to her breasts and kissed her peaks softly.

"Ah..." A light moan escaped Mingyu's mouth but she hurriedly reacted and closed her mouth. She tried to stop herself from making any sound as Long Chen licked, kissed and playfully bit on her breasts.

Mingyu had already lost her sense of reasoning as Long Chen brought her face closer to her ears.

"I can make love to you tonight, right?" Long Chen whispered in her ears as he continued using his hands to play with her breasts.

"Yes..." Mingyu said with a red face.

Long Chen smiled as he went down and removed the remaining pieces of her clothing. Mingyu was lying in front of Long Chen's eyes, fully exposed. She closed her eyes as she allowed Long Chen to do whatever he desired.

He removed all his articles of clothing as well and climbed on top of her again as he positioned his little guy in front of her sacred region, ready to attack at a moment's notice.

"I'm doing it." Long Chen whispered in her ears.

"I... I'm ready!" Mingyu replied though it was clear from her tone that she was worried.

'Don't worry, it will be fine." Long Chen said as he finally broke the barrier in between them and pushed his sword inside her castle.

"Ahh..." Mingyu made a loud noise with a pained look on her face, but Long Chen kissed her at that exact moment.

Long Chen didn't move in the slightest for the next 10-20 seconds and only kissed her. He finally began moving his waist but he kept his speed low.

After a few more minutes, he noticed that Mingyu had become much more comfortable, thus he increased the speed of his thrusts.

Zhiqing was resting in her tent but there was a strange expression on her face as she heard that moaning coming from the nearby tent.

"So that's the cultivation you were talking about! I'll let you enjoy tonight and won't interfere, but it will be my turn the next time." Zhiqing muttered with puffed cheeks as she closed her eyes.

That beautiful night was filled with moans that lasted for hours before the night turned silent.

The night passed away and a beautiful red sun rose high in the sky.

Long Chen and Mingyu left the tent together but they were stunned to find Zhiqing already waiting outside for them.

"It took you so long to come out. Looks like your overnight cultivation took quite a toll on you." Zhiqing let out with an amused look on her face.

"How was your night, little sister?" She asked as she gazed at Mingyu.

"You know all about it, don't you." Long Chen tapped on her shoulders as he said.

"Of Course I know! The weird noises that the two of you were making didn't let me sleep the whole night!" Zhiqing let out in an annoying tone as she stared at Long Chen.

"You had your time with him, it'll be my turn next time! I want no excuses." Zhiqing said as she held Long Chen's hands. It was at that moment, Ron came out of Long Chen's tent in a hurry.

"The guest has woken up!" He informed them with an excited look on his face.

"Alright. It was about time he woke up" Long Chen smiled as he walked towards his tent and entered inside.

The black-haired boy was lying on the mattress and was looking around with a confused look on his face.

He was stunned as he saw Long Chen and the others entered. He sat up immediately even though his head was aching at the moment.

"You do not look like the assassins. Who are you guys? Where am I?" He asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"Shouldn't you introduce yourself first?" Long Chen stepped forward and sat in front of the man.

Chapter 246 - 246: Identity

"You do not look like the assassins. Who are you guys? Where am I?" He asked as he looked at Long Chen. He looked somewhat confused to see new faces in front of him.

"Shouldn't you introduce yourself first?" Long Chen stepped forward and sat in front of Long Chen. He wanted to get the answers first before talking anything about himself.

"I'm Ji Shang... the Second Prince of the Blazing Sun Empire. Now tell me, where am I? And who are you, people?" He asked again as he stared at them with a doubtful look on his face.

"Blazing Sun Empire? Isn't that the neighboring Empire of the North Moon Empire? I heard that there's quite a history of bad blood between the Empires." Zhiqing let out softly as soon as she heard the identity of the man.

"I'm Long Chen. This here is Mingyu and she's Zhiqing. Both of them are my wives and that man there is Ron, our carriage driver. What's the last thing you remember?" Long Chen introduced themselves before asking him further questions.

"The last thing I remember? I was on my way to the Beast Taming School in the Weixin Kingdom when I was ambushed by the assassins. I tried retaliating but I couldn't use my powers as I realized that I was poisoned." Ji Shan told Long Chen.

"The poison affected my strength as well as my thinking. Instead of going to the Weixin Kingdom, I passed over it. I don't remember what happened after..." Ji Shang tried remembering but that was all he could remember.

"Yeah... I think I know what happened after that. You were too injured and you lost consciousness and fell from your flying beast. We happened to be there when you fell and caught you. I think you can guess what happened after." Long Chen said as he finished the remaining part of the story.

"Anyways, I feel like I'm not poisoned anymore. How did you heal me?" Ji Shang asked Long Chen.

"I used a 'Hundred Poisons Healing Pill'." Long Chen replied to Ji Shan.

"A Hundred Poison Healing Pill? Are you kidding me? That's impossible." Ji Shang straight away shook his head as he said.

"Why?" Long Chen inquired with a confused look on his face. He couldn't understand what was so shocking about it.

"The Hundred Poison Healing Pill' can't cure the poison that I was inflicted with. I had two of those pills in my hand when I was chased by the assassins. I ate those pills, but it was useless. Only a Thousand Poisons Healing Pill can cure the poison that I was harmed with. You must have used that pill unknowingly." Ji Shang explained.

"A Thousand Poison Healing Pill? Is that Pill normally red in color?" Long Chen asked with a stunned look on his face.

"Yup. Although the Hundred Poison Healing Pill is black in color, the Thousand Poison Healing Pill is of Red Color." Ji Shang replied to Long Chen.

Long Chen was shocked as soon as he heard Ji Shan's answer.

'I made a Thousand Poison Healing Pill? How?' He thought with a frown.

"Is the recipe of a Thousand Poison Healing Pill the same as the recipe of Hundred Poison Healing Pill?" Long Chen asked again as he tried to find a possible explanation.

"Nope. Although I'm not an alchemist myself, I have heard that the Thousand Poison Healing Pill has a much more complicated recipe and it requires many more rare herbs compared to the Hundred Poison Healing Pill." Ji Shang answered Long Chen with a thoughtful look on his face.

'Than why? How can I make a pill that only Gold Grade alchemists can make without even knowing the recipe? How did the Hundred Poison Healing Pill upgrade to the Thousand Poison Healing Pill? Was it because of that Sun and Moon cauldron? It makes no sense.' Long Chen fell in deep thoughts as he wondered about the pill that he made.

"Where are you guys from?" Ji Shan asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"Huh, did you ask something?" Long Chen recovered from his daze as he asked. He was still wondering about the pill.

"Yeah. I asked where are you guys from?" Ji Shan repeated his question.

"Oh, I'm from the kingdom of Shui." Long Chen subconsciously replied as he was still lost in the thoughts of the pill he made.

'Shui? Isn't that the 2nd rank kingdom? Shouldn't he have made a better lie to hide his identity? A lie that would be more believable' Zhiqing thought to

herself. She thought that Long Chen was lying about his place as he didn't want to tell Ji Shan that he was from an Empire as well.

"Oh? The kingdom of Shui? I have an unforgettable memory associated with that place. I was there when I was a little younger, sadly there was another assassination attempt on my life. Thankfully a senior helped me and saved my life. Do you know Master Long Ren?" Ji Shan was surprised as Long Chen told him about the kingdom of Shui. He couldn't help but remember his past.

"Master Long Ren? Yeah, I met him once. What does he have to do with your story? Was he the person that...?" Long Chen was surprised as he heard his grandfather's name.

"Yeah. He was the person who saved my life at that time and killed the assassins. Unfortunately, I didn't have many good things to reward Master Ren with. I could only give him a 'Life-Giving Pill'." Ji Shan said with an embarrassed smile on his face.

'A 'Life-Giving Pill'? I remember it. Grandfather talked about it once. He said that he received a Life-Giving Pill. It was because of a mysterious cultivator whose life he saved. The pill was the thing that saved Long Tian's life after the assassination attempt on his life. Unfortunately, even that pill couldn't heal his brain.' Long Chen thought as he remembered about the pill.

Chapter 247 - 247: Companion?

'A 'Life-Giving Pill'? I remember it. Grandfather talked about it once. He said that he received a Life-Giving Pill. It was because of a mysterious cultivator whose life he saved. The pill was the thing that saved Long Tian's life after the assassination attempt on his life. Unfortunately, even that pill couldn't heal his brain.' Long Chen thought as he remembered about the pill.

"Anyways, How were you poisoned without realizing? Did you go to a tea party as well?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he thought about the time he was drugged by Long Su.

"Oh right! Now that you talk about it, I think I know when I was poisoned! Right before leaving the Empire, I attended a celebration party that my Elder brother threw for me. That was the last place I drank and ate before I left the Empire." Ji Shan let out with a suspecting look on his face.

"So you doubt your brother. Since you're the Second Prince, that can only mean that your Elder Brother is the Crown Prince, right? Why would the Crown Prince target you? You should be the one targeting him." Long Chen let out with an interesting smile on his face.

"No. He is not the Crown Prince. The Crown Prince was the Third Prince Ji Hu, but he died of some strange sickness last year. The new Crown Prince hasn't been selected until now." Ji Shan shook his head as he replied to Long Chen.

"Unfortunately my Royal Father's health has started deteriorating and the whole situation is getting chaotic. My brother and I are both entitled to the throne so it won't be shocking if he tried to get me killed. " Ji Shan sighed as he looked down. He was feeling somewhat angry as well.

" I knew that I and my brother might get in conflict sooner or later. That's why I wanted to leave the Empire and come to the Beast Taming School to become a disciple and improve my beast taming skills." Ji Shan said as he sighed.

"I wanted to spend my time in peace. I wanted to stay away from all the politics, but I didn't realize that the world would be so eager to kill me. I was not only poisoned but tried to be assassinated as well. " Ji Shan seemed like he was talking to himself with a disappointed expression.

"Anyways, enough about me. Where are you guys going? Although I don't know where we are, I'm quite sure that we're still quite far from the Shui

Kingdom. " Ji Shan shook his head and changed the topic. He was starting to feel depressed after talking about his brother.

"Us? We're going to the Weixin Kingdom. " Long Chen replied with a smile.

" Oh? Amazing! I'm going there as well. There's a branch of Beast Taming School there. Although there was a branch in the North Moon Empire which was closer, I chose this one for obvious reasons. " A smile appeared on Ji Shan's face as he heard there the others were going to the same destination.

"How about we go together?" He suggested as he gazed at Long Chen.

" This? But aren't their people after you? I don't think that it will be a good idea for us to travel together as we might become the targets as well. "Zhiqing said before Long Chen could reply.

" How long have I been unconscious for?" Ji Shan asked without replying to Zhiqing.

" You were unconscious all night long. It's early morning right now" Long Chen answered Ji Shan.

" Then we don't need to worry. Since the guys that were chasing after me aren't here yet, that can only mean that they don't know where I am. I don't think they can find me anymore. " Ji Shan said as he smiled.

" What if they are waiting for you at the Weixin Kingdom? " Long Chen asked with an interested smile on his face.

"Hah... the chances of them waiting for me there are even lower. " Ji Shan replied with a smile.

" Why? Long Chen Inquired.

"No one knows that I was going to the Beast Taming School. Since I didn't stop at the Weixin Kingdom when I was chased by the assassins, they didn't know that it was my destination. After they lost my trail, they won't be able to find me." Ji Shan said with a smile as he gazed at Long Chen.

"I agree with you, but there's another problem. We only have one carriage and that too can only house 3 people and a driver. It's impossible to take you with us. " Long Chen let out after thinking for a while.

"Oh? You don't have to worry about that. I can travel with you, without sitting inside your carriage. My tamed beast is more than capable of carrying me. It's quite a strong gut" Ji Shan said as he smiled and gazed at Long Chen.

" How? Your flying beast has left. I'm sure it would have been killed by those assassins by now." Long Chen let out in a serious tone as he looked at Ji Shan with a frown.

"That high soaring eagle wasn't my tamed beast. It was just a regular flying beast that I used to travel. It was because my tamed beast can't fly." Ji Shan responded as he stood up.

" Let's go outside, I'll show you." Ji Shan said with an excited look on his face as he walked towards the exit and left the tent.

"He looks quite energetic when it comes to his tamed beast." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face as he stood up and stepped towards the exit as well.

"Isn't he getting excited for all the wrong reasons? There's much more concerning matters that he needs to think about." Mingyu muttered as he stood up as well.

"He sure is excited to show his beast. It must be quite a rare beast." Zhiqing chuckled as she followed Long Chen.

Chapter 248 - 248: Soul Devouring Wolf

"He sure is excited to show his beast. It must be quite a rare beast." Zhiqing chuckled as she followed Long Chen.

"It can't be rarer than a Devil Hunter Beast," Mingyu muttered as she followed Zhiqing.

"That's to be expected. A Devil Hunter Beast is said to be the most desired beast by the Beast Tamers." Zhiqing responded to Mingyu's comments just before she left the tent.

"Are you ready to see the little guy? I'm quite proud of him I must say." Ji Shan said with a smile as he brought out a Pouch type thing from his storage ring.

"A beast carrying bag? I guess I don't need to be surprised. You're a Prince from an Empire after all." Long Chen let out as he folded his arms. Although he was quite interested in the beast carrying bag, he acted uninterested.

"Yeah. It was a gift from my Royal Father when I tamed my first beast. This beast bag is a peak Spirit Grade Artifact and can hold 5 beasts at once." Ji Shan said with a smile. A proud expression was clear on his face.

"So how many beasts do you have at the moment inside that bag?" Long Chen inquired with an interested look on his face.

'It is quite possible that he had 5 beasts.' He thought, but the answer he received was quite different.

"Me? I have only 2 tamed beasts. I'll show you one of them right now." Ji Shan said with a smile as he tapped the Beast Carrying Bag three times.

The bag shone briefly before it returned to normal. A small speck of light came out of the bag and landed on the ground in front of them before it took the form of a beast.

It was a silver color wolf that was even taller than Long Chen. The wolf was over 2 meters tall and around 3.5 meters long. The wolf had two sharp fangs that were just as white as its stark white fur.

"This is my tamed beast, Whitey. It's a Soul Devouring Wolf. He's quite a rare beast I must say. There are only a few beasts that the Tamers desire more than a Soul Devouring Wolf." Ji Shan let out with a proud look on his face.

"His name is Whitey?" Long Chen asked with a blank look on his face.

"Umm-hmm." Ji Shan nodded his head with a proud look on his face.

"And here I thought that I was bad at naming my partners." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face. He didn't know why, but he found the name to be quite bad for such a fierce beast.

"Hey! I'm not bad at naming them! Whitey is a perfectly fine name!" Ji Shan said as his face twitched for a brief moment. He was shocked that someone called the name he chose bad.

"Back in the empire, everyone praised me for choosing such a fine name." He let out with a prideful smile.

"Aren't they supposed to say that? You're a Royal after all." Long Chen couldn't help but chuckle as he looked at Ji Shan.

Ji Shan was stunned as he heard Long Chen's reply. He began walking towards the Soul Devouring Wolf in a hurry.

"Hey, Whitey. The name I gave you is good, isn't it?" He asked the Soul Devouring Wolf with a confident look on his face.

The Soul Devouring Wolf that was looking at Ji Shan started looking elsewhere as soon as he heard his question. He acted ignorant to his master's question.

Ji Shan was heartbroken as he saw the Soul Devouring Wolf's reaction. He couldn't help but fall down to the ground as he saw his reaction.

"Hey, there's no need to overreact. The name is not too bad anyway. It's quite cute in a sense." Long Chen said as he felt bad about being the one who broke the news to Ji Shan.

"Yeah. I understand. You don't need to sugar-coat it for me." Ji Shan let out with a downcast look on his face.

"Oh right! My other two tamed beast's names are way better!" Ji Shan again let out as he again became excited.

"I believe you." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face. He was now regretting speaking out his thoughts.

"They are Sweety and Yunyun. The names are better, right?" He let out with a hopeful gaze.

"Sweetie and Yunyun?" Long Chen muttered as he found it difficult to decide how he should react.

"Yup. Why aren't you saying something?" Ji Shan inquired again with a confused look on his face as he gazed at Long Chen.

"The names are quite good." Long Chen finally gave up and decided to nod his head. He didn't want to talk about such senseless things.

"Yup. Anyways, I'll travel on whitey while you people ride in your carriage. That way, we can travel together and I won't be affecting your limited space." Ji Shan let out with a bright smile.

"Alright, since you insist that much, you can travel with us. Let's have some breakfast and after that, we can leave for the Weixin Kingdom." Long Chen told Ji Shan.

He didn't mind Ji Shan traveling with them when their destination was the same.

Also, Ji Shan did help the previous host of this body survive as the Life-Giving Pill that he gave Long Ren was used on Long Tian after the assassination attempt.

Even though Long Tian lost his intelligence and was subjected to bullying throughout the years he lived for, it was a fact that he did survive because of the pill given by Ji Shan.

"Ron, is the breakfast ready?" Long Chen asked as he looked at Ron who was standing behind Mingyu and Zhiqing.

"Oh, Yes Young Master. The breakfast is ready." Ron replied to Long Chen.

"Good Job. Let's eat and then we will leave." Long Chen said as he followed Ron.

All of them sat down together as they began eating breakfast.

Chapter 249 - 249: Master

All of them sat down together as they began eating breakfast.

"Prince Shan, Can you tell me more about the Northern Moon Empire?" Long Chen asked Ji Shan during their breakfast.

Ji Shan smiled as he placed his hand on Long Chen's shoulder.

"You don't need to follow the formality. Just call me brother Shan. You danger my life and helped me so much. We're brothers from now on. Whenever you need my help, just come to me. I'll help you, even if I have to go through the depths of hell. This is my promise to you as the Second Prince of the Blazing Sun Empire. " Ji Shan told Long Chen as a smile formed on his face.

"Ahh... Anyways, I'll repeat my question. Can you tell me more about the Northern Moon Empire?" Long Chen again asked Ji Shan as he ignored the embarrassing stuff.

" Alright." Ji Shan replied with a smile as he began describing the Northern Moon Empire.

"Alright, I'll tell you through comparisons.

The Northern Moon Empire is one of the superpowers of this continent, although it's still not the strongest. When it comes to strength, Our Blazing Sun Empire and their Northern Moon Empire possess similar strength."

" The king of the Blazing Sun Empire has 3 kids still alive. Me, the 1st Prince and our sister. As I previously mentioned, our 3rd brother had died. On the other hand, the king of the North Moon Empire only has 2 kids. The Crown Prince and the Princess. Although there is some bad blood between both Empires, there have been no all-out wars. "

" What about their sects? I heard there's a Thunder Giant Sect in the North Moon Empire."

" Both the Empires contain the same number of sects. The top 2 sects of our empire are Heavenly Dao Sect and Mighty Immortal Sect. On the other hand, the Northern Moon Empire also has 2 Major Sects. The Thunder Giant Sect and the Heavenly Flame Sect. It's quite interesting though."

"Their King sent their Prince to cultivate in the Heavenly Flame Sect, while he sent the Princess to cultivate in the Thunder Giant Sect. Most probably it was

an effort to show himself as an Impartial Emperor. " Ji Shan said with an amused smile on his face.

" What about your place? You and your brother are part of the same Sect?" Long Chen asked with an interested look on his face.

"The first Prince joined the Heavenly Dao Sect. Our father wanted me to join the same Sect, but I didn't join it. "

" You joined the other Sect? "

" Nope. I joined no Sect. Although I do have a Master, neither he nor I am a part of any sect. My master taught me everything I know. "

"Hmm? Since your father allowed you to study under him, your Master mustn't be weaker than the elders of those sects. Anyways, where is your Master now? " Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

" My master? I don't know. Oh right, why are you going to the Weixin Kingdom? " Ji Shan asked Long Chen.

Long Chen noticed how subtly Ji Shan changed the topic, but he didn't say anything.

"Looks like brother Shan doesn't want to tell me. He doesn't consider me as a brother. It's alright." Long Chen let out in a hurt tone.

" What nonsense are you talking about? Of course, I consider you as a brother. It's just that I promised my Master that I won't talk about him to anyone. I can only tell you that he is not as strong as an elder of the major sects. " Ji Shan said to Long Chen.

" Not that strong? How come you became his disciple then? Oh right, you promised not to tell." Long Chen grew even more curious as he heard his reply but realized that he won't get answers if he pushed Ji Shan too much.

"I apologize, but I can really talk about anything other than stuff related to my master." Ji Shan let out in an apologetic tone.

"It's fine., Don't worry about it." Long Chen casually replied as he acted like he didn't really care about it.

"Thank you for being so understanding." Ji Shan said to Long Chen with a grateful expression on his face. Long Chen didn't reply.

They finished breakfast in a short time before they all got up to leave.

Long Chen, Mingyu and Zhiqing got inside their carriage while Prince Ji Shan climbed on top of his Soul Devouring Beast. And thus, their journey began.

Only half an hour had passed and Ji Shan had already started regretting his decision of traveling together.

'Their carriage is so slow. I don't like moving slow at all, but there's nothing I can do.' He muttered as he looked towards the carriage.

His Soul Devouring Wolf could move at a much faster speed, but he had slowed down so that he could match the speed of the carriage.

The reason for the carriage's slow movement was because the best that was pulling it was only an average beast, the Wind horse. Even without the burden of the carriage, it wouldn't be able to match the speed of the Soul Devouring Wolf, let alone when it was pulling a heavy carriage.

They traveled throughout the day without break and only stopped when it was dusk.

"What happened? You looked somewhat tired?" Long Chen came out of the carriage and noticed that tired expression of Ji Shan.

"Yeah, I guess I'm a little tired after traveling on Whitey all day long." Ji Shan let out with a wry smile on his face.

"If it's really that uncomfortable to move at such a speed on Whitey, how about he decrease out speed? Would that make you more comfortable?" Long Chen suggested with a smile.

Ji Shan's face couldn't help but twitch as he heard Long Chen's words.

'Can we really move any slower than we are currently moving?' He thought with a worried look on his face.

"Please don't do that. The current speed is perfect." He hurriedly let out.

Chapter 250 - 250: Nine Rivers Transfusion

'Can we really move any slower than we are currently moving?' He thought with a worried look on his face.

"Please don't do that. The current speed is perfect." Ji Shan hurriedly let out a pleading tone.

"Alright. If you're fine with it." Long Chen smiled as he walked towards the Campfire that we started by Ron.

As Long Chen and the others sat beside the fire and talked, Ron was busy setting up the camp.

"Can I make the food today?" Ji Shan asked abruptly as he noticed the fire and Ron that was busy in setting up the camp.

"Prince Shan, Can you really cook?" Long Chen let out with a doubtful look on his face.

'How can the Prince of an Empire know to cook dishes?' He thought as he waited for Ji Shan's answers.

"Of Course I can cook. I cook food for my beasts after quite often." Ji Shan replied as he smiled.

"Princes Shan, you know that we aren't beasts, right?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Just trust me. I will show you." Ji Shan said with a confident look on his face as he stood up proudly.

"If you say so." Long Chen gave up and decided to give him the chance.

The camp was set up even faster than before and Ron came towards the Campfire to prepare food for everyone, but he was stunned to see Ji Shan was sitting in front of the campfire and cooking.

He walked closer with a confused look on his face.

"Oh Ron, The camps are up? Nice. You can have some rest. Prince Shan is in charge of the food today." Zhiqing noticed Ron and informed him about the strange situation.

"Ah... Alright, Master." Ron said as he sat down on a nearby stone and started observing Ji Shan.

It took only ten more minutes before Ji Shan was done.

"I'm finished. Today I made a special dish of our Empire for you all. Fortunately, I left the palace with a lot of ingredients." Ji Shan said as a smile appeared on his face.

He served everyone a soup-like thing in the bowls that he had taken out from his storage ring.

"The soup I made is considered one of the best dishes of our Empire. It is called Nine Rivers Transfusion Soup. It uses herbs collected from the banks of 9 different rivers in our Empire. " He said with a proud expression on his face.

"The soup is well known for increasing the vitality of a person. It has even more benefits for cultivators as it can increase the speed of natural Qi absorption during the cultivation. " Ji Shan continued.

" Sounds pretty good and the smell is good as well. " Long Chen said softly as he observed the soup.

He started drinking it after the brief observation.

"Hmm... The taste is quite good as well. I can feel the energy of heaven and earth inside it. No wonder it has such amazing effects." Long Chen praised Ji Shan as he finished drinking his share.

"I'm glad you liked it. There's plenty. You can have more." Ji Shan smiled as he was praised. He served more of the Nine Rivers Transfusion Soup to Long Chen.

All of them drank the soup until they were full.

"Alright," I'll be going to my tent now. Good night. " The moon was shining high in the sky when Ji Shan stood up and bid his farewell to Long Chen and others before he walked towards the tent that was assigned to him.

Ron left as well after asking for permission.

Only Mingyu, Zhiqing and Long Chen were left behind.

"Last night you were with Mingyu, now it's my turn. " Zhiqing said as she held his hands.

"Don't say anything! You had him for the whole night. Now it's my turn. " Mingyu opened her mouth, but before she could even speak her first word,

Zhiqing started speaking. Mingyu closed her mouth and didn't say anything as she walked back to her tent silently.

"Finally, I have you all to myself," Zhiqing said with a victorious smile as she stuck closer to Long Chen.

"I'm really sorry, but I think I'll stay outside tonight." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

" Why? Don't you like me?" Zhiqing said as she looked at Long Chen with expectancy.

"It's not that at all. It's just that I feel like the Qi inside my body is stimulated because of the Nine Rivers Transfusion Soup and I feel like I can break through tonight. I want to start outside and cultivate. " Long Chen answered her. He could see the disappointment in her eyes, but he felt like there was nothing that he could do about it.

"Alright. I'll let you cultivate tonight. But don't try to pull anything like yesterday in the name of cultivation. " She controlled her emotion and finally gave a smile.

"It will be strictly cultivated today. That's why I'm not going inside any tent." Long Chen let out with an embarrassed look on his face as he faced her.

"I trust you." She said as she gave a light peck on Long Chen's lips before she turned back and left.

Long Chen sighed in relief as he started looking for a place to cultivate. He decided to use his old trick and climbed on top of a tree and place a hammock connected to two branches of nearby trees and sat on the hammock in a meditative position. He closed his eyes and finally began his cultivation.

In a place near Long Chen's camp, more than 50 people were happily eating and drinking when a person came running towards them.

"Chief! Chief!" He called out as he ran towards the crowd of people.

"What are you screaming for? Can't you see I am right here? " A bearded man was sitting on a chair near a fireplace as he ate the cooked meat of an Earth Realm Beast.

Chapter 251 - 251: Attack On The Camp

"Chief! I saw a group of people nearby. They have set up their camp in our territory. From their clothes and carriage, they look like rich brats that went out to explore the world without knowing the dangers." The person gave a wide grin as he told the bearded man.

"A few brats? Do you really think that i... A high Earth Realm Cultivator would rob a few kids? Do you really think that they would possess anything worth my attention? If you still want, go take two people with you and take whatever little bit they possess." The bearded man snorted as he continued eating the meat.

"But boss... I didn't even tell you about the main attraction. There are two girls in their group. One of the girls looks barely 20 and the other one looks even younger. Those two are the prettiest girls I have ever seen. They are just like the fairies from the heavens. I think the Chief would enjoy the girls." He continued with a smirk.

" Hmm? Girls? Well, it has been quite a lot of time since I had tasted a girl. Too bad that the girls we abducted broke so easily. Alright! I have decided that we will attack those kids. I will take the girl while you people can take care of the other kids and the money." The chief said as a smirk appeared on his face.

" Chief. It had been quite a lot of time since we had a woman. Can we have one of the girls as well?" One of his subordinates said with a fawning smile on his face as he rubbed his hand.

"Sure. If I'm tired of the girls and they are still alive, you and the others can share them. If you can't wait that long, you can hang fun with the young boys in the meantime. I think you can use them quite well. " The chief started laughing as he stood up.

'These fools. Do they really think that I'll leave the girls for them as long as they are alive and useful?' The chief thought with a smirk on his face.

"Lead the way, little Hu." The chief looked towards the informant and said.

" Yes, chief. " The man called Hu excitedly started walking towards the target. They stepped through the forest and walked for over 20 minutes before a carriage and a few tents appeared before their eyes.

'Hmm... Looks like little Hu wasn't lying. Although the carriage looks good, it's clearly not as amazing as the carriages of the top families of the Empire. Must be someone from a kingdom. That's good. " The Chief thought as he observed the carriage of Mingyu.

" They are too naive. They didn't even leave a guard outside to guard their place. Must be an immature group of travelers. " He let out softly.

" I think you guys can handle it easily, without needing me. Go and capture everyone. Treat the girls with care. There shouldn't even be a scratch on their body, otherwise, I would beat the crap out of the person responsible." The chief ordered them, but not before strictly warning them.

"Yes, boss." The people nodded their heads in affirmation and started advancing towards the tents.

They passed through the silence of the night as they tried to make as low noise as possible.

While they were walking, they didn't know when they crossed a line that was made by Princess Zhiqing which worked more like an alarm that only Zhiqing could hear. She woke up as soon as she sensed it.

On the other hand, Ji Shan was sleeping comfortably in his tent when he sensed the warning in his mind. It was because of an artifact that he used for the protection of their camp. When he used the artifact, it would give a warning to him whenever a stranger entered within a certain range of his. The range was 500 meters.

He woke up with a frown as well.

He brought his sword out of his storage ring and wore an ordinary-looking armor. Although the sword and the armor both looked quite ordinary, they were actually Peak Earth Grade Artifacts.

Even ordinary Earth Grade artifacts were rare in kingdoms, let alone the peak Earth Grade artifacts. That showed the amazing resources that the empires possessed.

He came out of his tent with the sword in his hand and noticed the 50 men that were coming towards them with their weapons. He didn't look anxious or worried and instead looked quite calm.

He looked to the side and noticed that Zhiqing had come out as well. She was carrying her blade in her hand and looked ready to battle.

She walked towards Mingyu's room to inform her, but surprisingly mingyu also came out without her needing to do anything. She wasn't sure how Mingyu or Ji Shan knew about the attackers, but she didn't ask.

"Looks like some bandits are trying to rob us. They must think that we are easy targets." Ji Shan let out with a wry smile on his face.

" Are you sure they are random bandits and not just people that are after your life?" Zhiqing said in a doubtful tone.

"Hahaha, It couldn't be more obvious. The killers after me are assassins. They are professional killers that would never be naive enough to come running at me. They would use stealth for their initial attack against their targets, not brute force." Ji Shan let out with a smile as he told Zhiqing.

"Only when the stealth fails, will they use force. But the idiots in front of me are coming at me like mad dogs. There is no order or discipline in them." He continued.

" Oh, right, Where's brother Chen? Is he still sleeping?" He couldn't help but ask as he noticed that Long Chen wasn't here yet.

"He must be out somewhere. He said that he would cultivate outside for the night." Even Zhiqing wasn't sure about Long Chen's exact location. She thought that he would be near the camp, but she couldn't see him.

Chapter 252 - 252: I Was Wrong

"He must be out somewhere. He said that he would cultivate outside for the night." Even Zhiqing wasn't sure about Long Chen's exact location. She thought that he would be near the camp, but she couldn't see him.

"It's alright. Let him cultivate. We can take care of the small-time goons." Ji Shan said as he long at the man coming towards them with an amused look on his face.

"I see two Earth Realm cultivators. One is a 4th stage Earth Realm while the other is a second stage Earth Realm. All the others are in the gold core realm. Do you want to have fun or should I take care of them myself? " He asked as he looked towards Mingyu. He could see her cultivation and knew how strong she was. He even had a feeling that she was stronger than her cultivation realm.

"You can do it. I'm not interested in fighting." Mingyu said without much expression on her face.

"Awesome." A bright smile appeared on his face. He gripped the sword in his hand as he stepped forward.

"I never expected for them to notice us so soon. Looks like the kids are not as naive as we thought them to be." Little Hu let out as he noticed the 3 people coming out of their tents.

"So what if they notice us? It's not like they can survive. It's good that they aren't running away. Saves us the trouble." Another man laughed as he said.

" Looks like the boy is pretty eager to die." One of them said as they saw Ji Shan running towards him.

Just when they distance between them eat less than 30 meters, they noticed that Ji Shan's speed had abruptly increased multiple times and they were finding it hard to keep an eye on them.

The man looked like he was dancing with the wind as he kept swinging his sword as gracefully as he could.

Those who were attacked by the man kept dying one after another from his attacks.

With his other hand, Ji Shan tapped the bag that was tied to his waist 3 times.

"Handle them for me, whitey." Ji Shan said as a bright speck of light came out of his beast carrying bag and took the shape of the Soul Devouring Wolf.

While Ji Shan killed his fair share of bandits, Whitey also killed a lot.

Those who were bitten by the Soul Devouring Wolf could feel their soul being bitten by hundreds of poisonous snakes. While they went through crazy pain, The soul Devouring Wolf tore their bodies apart.

That boy! He is not simple! Duqi! Go take care of that boy. " The 4th stage Earth Realm cultivator told the 2nd stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

"Yes, Brother Mu! I'll go and crush his skull " The person called Duqi said to the short man. While Duqi was 7 ft tall, Mu, on the other hand, was surprisingly only 4 ft tall. But since he had the highest cultivation after the chief, no one dared to make fun of him.

"Hu, You handle the beast." Brother Mu further said to the person who informed them about Long Chen's group. Hu was a peak gold core realm cultivator.

"Yes." Hu nodded his head and ran towards the Soul Devouring Wolf with a treasure knife in his hand.

"Oh man, I saved the main dishes for the last, but since you came out of your own accord, I can't let you go disappointed. " A smirk appeared on Ji Shan's face that made him look completely different from the kind and gentleman that he often looked. At the moment, it looked like he was enjoying letting loose.

He didn't stop the graceful movement of his feet as he kept dodging the attacks of random cultivators while he fought with the Earth Realm and clashed his sword with the sword of the Earth Realm cultivator.

At the moment, he was fighting with more than 5 cultivators at the same time.

On the other hand, Hu had attacked the soul Devouring Wolf while he was busy killing another cultivator. The Soul Devouring Wolf dodged the knife of Hu as he used his lightning-fast speed.

Before Hu could realize what happened, his leg was bitten by the Soul Devouring Wolf.

"Ahhh..." He screamed as he felt a soul-crushing pain course through his body. He felt that he had lost control of his body as his whole body went limp.

The pain didn't last for long as his head was bitten off, ending his pain forever.

On the other hand, Ji Shan had killed the 2nd stage Earth Realm cultivator without taking much longer. The other bandits were killed as well. The whole ground was covered in blood.

His constantly dancing feet finally stopped as he noticed that all the bandits were killed except the 4th stage Earth Realm cultivator.

"Finally, it's time for the main dish." Ji Shan said with a smile as he advanced towards Brother Mu.

"You are good I must say. Why don't you join our gang? " A voice came from a distance.

Ji Shan looked in that direction and saw a bearded man walking towards them.

"Hah, I was wondering how long you were going to stay there. Looks like you finally couldn't bear missing out on the fun and decided to join the party. " Ji Shan chuckled as he looked at the Chief of the bandits.

"You are strong, but don't let arrogance blind you kid. I can see that you are a 6th stage Earth Realm cultivator. You can still stay alive if you agree to join us." Chief replied to Ji Shan with a smirk on his face.

"Hah, Let's assume that I take you up on that offer, what next? " Ji Shan said with an interested look on his face.

" Nothing much. As a joining fee, you must give me your sword and those two girls behind you." Chief said as he laughed out loud.

" I was wrong..." Ji Shan muttered with a disappointed look on his face.

"Huh... what did you say?" Chief asked as he didn't hear Ji Shan's words.

"I said I was wrong. I thought that you would be a different kind of villain who would be at least 10% smarter than others since you didn't attack me right away, But you are like all others. An arrogant death seeking fool. " Ji Shan told the chief of bandits in an annoyed tone.

Chapter 253 - 253: Ji Shan's Strength

"I said I was wrong. I thought that you would be a different kind of villain who would be at least 10% smarter than others since you didn't attack me right away, But you are like all others. An arrogant death seeking fool. " Ji Shan told the chief of bandits in an annoyed tone.

"You bastard! Do you think that you can be arrogant in front of me? Mu, you're not his opponent. Go take the girls, I'll handle the boy here. " The Chief said as he looked towards the only man that was remaining from his side. He ordered Mu to take care of the others.

"Yes, boss!" Mu said and started walking towards the girls. Surprisingly, Ji Shan didn't even try to block him and smiled as he watched Mu pass by him. He looked somewhat amused instead of looking even the least bit worried.

"Let's have our own fun then." He raised his sword high and pointed it towards the 8th stage Earth Realm cultivator.

"I really wonder what gives you the courage to go against me. You must be tired of living. Don't worry, I will free you of this tiresome existence and send you to the place you truly belong... In hell." The bearded man was talking to Ji Shan and as soon as he finished his sentence, he disappeared from his position.

To normal eyes, it looked like he had teleported in front of Ji Shan, but Ji Shan was able to understand that it was only the movement skill of the man that was too fast for normal eyes. Even Ji Shan was barely able to keep an eye on him.

The Chief had a hammer in his hand that was a peak Gold Realm artifact. He swung his hammer towards Ji Shan's head without waiting for his reaction.

Ji Shan again moved his feet as he began dancing with the wind and dodged the attack. He didn't stop there as he swung in a 360 degree and slashed at the 8th stage Earth Realm cultivator.

The Chief of the bandits hurriedly changed the direction of his hammer and swung it at Ji Shan.

The hammer and the sword clashed and surprisingly no one was victorious in this clash. Both of them were forced 10 steps backward.

On the other hand, Mingyu has started fighting the 4th stage Earth Realm cultivator. Despite being so young, she had already broken through to the 5th stage of Earth Realm tonight. So in a way, she was happy to have an opportunity to fight another cultivator and test her new strength.

Zhiqing was the only one who wasn't going to do anything. In fact, there was nothing for her to do as all the bandits were dead and the remaining 2 Earth Realm bandits were fighting someone else.

No one knew, but at the moment, a pair of eyes was watching them secretly. It was Long Chen who was sitting on his hammock on the height and observed the battle.

"It's a good opportunity to see the battle prowess of Ji Shan. He didn't disappoint me as the Prince of an Empire though. As far as I can see, he is way more talented than Ruan was. So much so that I'm not sure if Mingyu can defeat him on her own." Long Chen was in deep thoughts as he observed the battle of Ji Shan.

" Especially that movement technique. If I had that technique, With the addition of the Earthly Monarch Effect, my support would increase many fold."

" And the artifacts he possesses... It's the first time I'm seeing an Earth Realm artifact. It feels quite strong, but I still have a feeling that it's somewhat lacking compared to the King's sword. I was told that the King's Sword was only a peak Spirit Grade weapon, but every time I fight with it... I can feel that it is much stronger than the last time it was used. "

His thoughts diverted as he started thinking about his sword.

" I feel like it is barely comparable to the sword of Ji Shan and might become even stronger in the future. "

" Is this really Saint King Xianwu's sword? I must find his medallion and go back to the Glorious Blossom Sect. I can't let the treasures go to reassure waste. " His thoughts kept changing. From Ji Shan's skills, he had somehow arrived at the thoughts about his future treasures.

Long Chen was lost in his thoughts when he heard a loud scream. He shifted his focus and looked towards Mingyu and noticed that the 4th stage Earth Realm cultivator was already dead. His body was lying on the ground and a sword wound was on his chest that was bleeding.

"Good work Yu'er." He couldn't help but praise Mingyu softly.

He shifted his focus back to Ji Shan and noticed that he was still deeply immersed in his fight. Surprisingly the Chief of bandits was quite skilled and fighting with Ji Shan on equal footing.

Ji Shan had the advantage of speed and better skills while the chief of the bandits had the advantage of strength and higher cultivation.

"I'm still giving you one last chance to join us. I can still forgive you for everything that has happened. I don't need you to give me your sword and I don't need the two girls either. Just one girl would be enough for me and you can keep the other. " The chief gave Ji Shan another offer as he kept clashing his hammer with Ji Shan's sword. Probably because he had realized that he didn't have any advantage in this battle.

"I'm sorry, but I wouldn't be taking you up on your offer." Ji Shan straight away rejected his offer without even taking the time to think.

" You are forcing my hand. I didn't want to use it, but I don't care anymore. You need to die. " The bearded man fumed in anger as he started swinging his hammer even faster.

Chapter 254 - 254: I Thought You Would Join

" You are forcing my hand. I didn't want to use it, but I don't care anymore. You need to die. " The bearded man fumed in anger as he started swinging his hammer even faster.

While fighting with Ji Shan, he subtly brought out a talisman and threw it at Ji Shan.

Ji Shan was busy fending off the man's attack and by the time he noticed the talisman... it was too late.

The talisman burst and Ji Shan flew away like a broken kite. He collided with his tent, but still didn't stop. He was trapped by the cloth of the tent as he flew back. He crashed a hundred meters away from his original position.

Long Chen saw everything as a frown appeared on his face, but he didn't get down. He didn't feel like he had a need to. Since the opponent of the Chief was still fine.

"A 9 sun fiery talisman. You are able to find such a powerful Earth Grade rampant, that's quite interesting. Too bad that it is wasted for nothing. " A mocking voice came from some distance.

The chief looked in that direction with a frown as he noticed Ji Shan standing tall like he wasn't hurt in the slightest.

"You... How are you still alive? Your Gold Grade armor should have been destroyed by the talisman along with you. How is that possible? " The bearded man said with a look of disbelief on his face. He couldn't believe his eyes.

"Oh? Are you talking about this? Yeah, it is your that my armor has been destroyed." Ji Shan shook his head in disappointment as he took off his armor. A big hole was clear in the armor, but that wasn't what attracted the bearded Mama man's attention.

It was the even better-looking armor that came to the view after the gold grade armor was taken off. The second armor had various spirit patterns on it that were shining and gave the armor a more mysterious look.

"Thankfully I had another armor that helped me. So what if the Gold Grade artifact couldn't help me? My Earth Grade armor will do the job. " Ji Shan let out with a smile as he kept the destroyed armor in his storage ring and started walking towards the bearded man.

"Why does it feel like Ji Shan enjoys bragging? Firstly, it was his beast and now his Earth Grade Artifact. " Long Chen couldn't help but chuckle lightly as he gazed at Ji Shan.

"So what if you have survived the talisman! I'll still kill you." The bearded man started running towards Ji Shan with God's hammer, but as soon as the bearded man swung his hammer at him, Ji Shan skillfully dodged the attack and appeared behind the man's back and hit his back with his palm lightly.

"You bastard!" The bearded man turned away, but he was shocked at what he saw. His mouth couldn't help but open wide. He saw that Ji Shan was running away from him like a coward.

"You coward! Where are you running off to? Come and face me like a man, you bastard! " The man roared loudly as he glared at Ji Shan.

" I'm not running away. I'm just saving my life." Ji Shan replied, but he didn't stop running.

" What... " The bearded man had just spoken a single word when a loud blast happened. His whole body was blasted off as his burnt body parts fell on the ground randomly. The blast covered a range of 20 meters. It didn't take long for the big cloud of fire to disappear.

The bearded man had disappeared and nothing but a large crater was left behind at that place.

"Brother Chen, how long are you going to observe? I thought you would join in on the fun as well. " Ji Shan gazed upwards in a certain direction as he said with a smile.

"Me? I'm too weak to fight such fierce cultivators alone. It was fun to watch you fight though. You're quite resourceful I must say. " Long Chen let out with a smile before he jumped down and landed in front of Ji Shan.

" Yeah, My identity makes me able to own such artifacts and talismans. I can get brother Chen some good ones when you come to my empire. " Ji Shan let out with an embarrassed look on his face.

"It's fine. I'm not much of an artifact guy. I feel like me and my sword are enough for the moment. " Long Chen let out with a smile as he stepped ahead.

"The night is still young. Let's get to sleep." Long Chen said as he continued ahead.

Ji Slab nodded his head as he kept his Earth Grade sword and Earth Grade armor back in his storage ring turned back, but he was stunned as he realized that his tent was already destroyed because of him.

"Don't think too much. Mingyu and Zhiqing can stay in the same tent and you can stay in the remaining one." Long Chen let out as he placed his hands on Ji Shan's shoulder.

"Mingyu, Can you stay with Zhiqing in her tent for the night?" He called out to Mingyu and asked.

" Alright." Mingyu nodded her head.

"Yes, that's good. Us boys will share one tent while your wives share another" Ji Shan said with a bright smile on his face.

" Ahh... there's no need for that. You can have the whole place to yourself. I have another place in my mind." Long Chen replied.

" Ahh... I get it. You must want to spend some quality time with your wives." Ji Shan acted as if he had just realized something. He winked at Long Chen. He walked towards Mingyu's tent.

Long Chen understood what Ji Shan was thinking, but he didn't give any explanation.

"Sister in law, you don't need to take anything from the tent, " Ji Shan asked Mingyu before entering.

" Nothing. You can go inside." Mingyu replied to him.

Chapter 255 - 255: Real Target

Ji Shan entered the tent and left the three standing outside.

"Was your breakthrough successful?" Zhiqing asked as Long Chen got near them.

" Yeah. I broke through to the advanced first stage Earth Realm from the initial first stage. I was about to come back when I noticed some people running towards the camp. Your reaction was quite fast though. " Long Chen said as he smiled. He placed his hand on both their backs and entered inside their tent.

" So you just watched us fight? What if something had happened to us? " Zhiqing pouted a little as he looked at Long Chen after entering inside.

"Hah... do you think that I would let anything happen to you? First of all, I was sure none of them was Mingyu's match other than the 8th stage Earth Realm cultivator. I would have intervened if Ji Shan had failed to stop him, but I knew that Ji Shan wasn't as simple. He didn't prove me wrong. He was even better than I had expected. " Long Chen let out softly as he sat on the mattress.

Mingyu also brought out two mattresses and placed them at some distance from each other.

"Hey, why are you placing them so far away" Zhiqing frowned and asked as she looked at Mingyu.

" Because I don't want you both to hump on each other like wild animals when I'm sleeping nearby. You'll be sleeping in different beds. Now go to sleep." Mingyu let out as she lay down on the mattress in the center.

" Hey, it's not fair. You got your turn and I still haven't had my turn. You can't come between us." Zhiqing pouted as she said in an annoyed tone.

" I'm not trying to come between anyone. You can do it when I'm not in the same room. But tonight, all of us will stay away from each other." Mingyu responded without much expression.

" Hey, I understand why you say that we can't have sex, but what about sleeping together? Our beds don't need to be that far from each other. It's not like we would lose control if we sleep together. We are grown ups after all" Zhiqing still didn't give up as she continued.

"That's exactly what I worry about. Anyways, go to sleep now. If you try going anything when I'm sleeping here, I swear that both of you will regret it." Mingyu said as she closed her eyes. She realized how dangerous sleeping with Long Chen could be for Zhiqing's self-control

"Hmph... Only for today! Tomorrow you can't stop me! I'll get two extra tents erected just so that this situation doesn't happen again." Zhiqing said in annoyance as she walked towards the mattress on the left side whereas Long Chen lay down on the mattress on the right.

From the starting till the end, he hadn't said anything since he himself didn't want to do it.

He was quite tired after his minor breakthrough and just wanted to sleep. He was quite happy at how the situation turned out.

He closed his eyes and instantly fell asleep.

The night passed away and the morning arrived as the sun rose in the sky.

Everyone had woken up and surprisingly, Long Chen was the last one to wake up today.

They had breakfast and were ready to leave. Ji Shan again climbed on top of the Soul Devouring Wolf after some hesitation while Long Chen sat comfortably inside the carriage with Zhiqing and Mingyu.

They traveled for over half a day and finally reached the Weixin Kingdom.

"Soon we will be inside the Weixin Kingdom, Can you now tell us why you wanted to come here?" Zhiqing asked Long Chen while their carriage stayed in the long line of carriages at the entrance of the Weixin Kingdom.

"There's not a complicated reason. My reason for coming to the Weixin Kingdom is the same as Ji Shan's." Long Chen replied to Zhiqing.

"Same as Ji Shan's reason? Are you saying that you also want to join the branch of the beast taming hall present in the Weixin Kingdom?" Zhiqing asked with a doubtful look on her face.

"Well, that's a part of my goal, but not my real goal. My final goal is different." Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"What is your real goal?" Zhiqing asked with a confused look on her face. Even Mingyu had started paying attention.

"What do you think we need the most at the moment? Something that we are lacking?" Long Chen asked instead of answering.

" I don't get it. What can we find inside the beast hall that we lack? We have money, we have transport, what else do we need?" Zhiqing still couldn't understand what he was talking about.

" We lack a faster mode of transport. Although your Devil Hunter Beast is one of the fastest beasts, we can't use it. Are you hoping to tame a beast there?" Mingyu abruptly said.

" You are somewhat right. I need a beast... But not a normal beast... I want to take their best beast." Long Chen let out with a smile.

"I want to obtain their strongest flying beast. I want the Sun Swallowing Condor. I've felt that we really need a flying beast for faster and more convenient travel and I read in a book that the Weixin Kingdom branch of beast hall has one that I might like " Long Chen further said.

" The Sun Swallowing Condor? Do you think the branch Master will let you take their prized possession? " Zhiqing couldn't help but be skeptical about this plan.

"It's not his to give. You'll see when the time comes." Long Chen replied with a smile.

They didn't talk much after that and stayed silent as they traveled with Ji Shan. Long Chen had already told Ji Shan that their destination is the Beast Taming hall as well, and he had instructed the carriage driver to follow the lead of Ji Shan for the remaining part of their journey.

Chapter 256 - 256: Bad Times Are Ahead

They didn't talk much after that and stayed silent as they traveled with Ji Shan. Long Chen had already told Ji Shan that their destination is the Beast Taming hall as well, and he had instructed the carriage driver to follow the lead of Ji Shan for the remaining part of their journey.

Although the Beast Taming Hall was inside the Weixin Kingdom, unlike most prominent sects, it wasn't situated in the capital city of the kingdom. Instead, the branch of the beast taming hall was situated on the outskirts of the Kingdom.

Unfortunately, it was on the north side of the kingdom and they had entered from there south of the kingdom, thus they needed to cross the kingdom.

They didn't stop for even a minute as they continued traveling through various cities.

Most of the citizens who saw Ji Shan riding on his Soul Devouring Wolf were more scared than shocked.

Even if there was the Beast Taming Hall inside the kingdom, it was still quite rare for them to see such a fierce beast.

Most of the citizens simply assumed that the boy must be someone important from the Beast Hall and didn't dare block his path.

The only problem was the few guards that occasionally stopped them and inquired about them.

Surprisingly, Ji Shan showed them a badge. As the guards saw the badge, they allowed them to pass through. Long Chen didn't know what that badge was, nor did he care at the moment.

Long Chen simply read a book on this long journey. It was a book that contained information about this continent and its various forces.

Although he had finished reading it before and that's why he came up with the plan to take the Sun Swallowing Condor, he decided to read it again.

He didn't want to miss any detail that would come to bite him in the ass later on.

Half a day passed and they entered the capital city of the Weixin Kingdom which was at the center of the kingdom. They passed through the capital city amidst the watchful eyes of the guards.

Another half a day passed and there were only one 2 towns between Long Chen's team and the Beast Taming Hall branch.

Unfortunately, the darkness had already shrouded the land and they decided to stay the night at the next town.

The town was pretty small and only around 500 people were residing in that town. Thankfully, there was a hotel in the town and there were quite a few rooms available.

Long Chen decided to book 5 separate rooms that were paid for by Ji Shan. Even though Zhiqing argued against it, Long Chen was stern in his decision to stay alone tonight. Zhiqing could only pout in anger as she walked to her assigned room.

"Hey bro, I don't think that you should make my sister-in-law angry. Why don't you spend time with them?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen as they stood in front of his room. Mingyu and Zhiqing had already left.

"I have to cultivate tonight. Anyways, Good night." Long Chen didn't talk much as he said Goodnight to Ji Shan and entered inside his room.

Ji Shan didn't know why, but he felt like Long Chen was somewhat anxious about something. He didn't think about it much and just thought that it was his misconception as he walked back.

Long Chen sat on his bed as he looked to his side. He found that Xun was sitting there.

"You've noticed it, haven't you?" Xun let out softly.

"Yes, I feel like it won't be long now." Long Chen sighed in disappointment.

"What did you think? Did you think that it would fail?" Xun inquired as she slightly smiled.

"I was somehow hoping for it to take long. Long enough for me to complete what I needed to do. I don't want to lose my emotions at this moment." Long Chen muttered as he looked at Xun.

" Fortunately, I checked inside my martial space, or I wouldn't even know about the cracks developing on my heart demon's cocoon." Long Chen further said with a worried look on his face.

"It won't be long before it's out. Judging by the speed of the cracks, I think it will take 2 weeks before it's out."

" Also, it's certain now that it has evolved. Although you have learned to live while letting out your true emotions up to an extent, it's still going to be tough for you." Xun replied to Long Chen.

" Two weeks of time is not much. I guess there's no escaping it. It's a part of me that I must live with now. Still, I won't let it make me a monster who slaughters mindlessly." Long Chen let out as he clenched his fist.

" Keep that determination. It's going to come in handy in the future. Also, that heart demon is not the only thing you need to worry about." Xun said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"What else is there for me to worry about?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

"Your bloodline... Your bloodline is about to reach a density of 5%. You know that that meant right?" Xun asked as she looked at Long Chen.

" Yeah, I know. A bloodline Temple Trial. An opportunity as well as a possible disaster. Hah... looks like my worst times are near." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

" That's for the future, though. For now, just make sure that you don't do things that make you excited or angry. Try to control your emotions for as long as you can so that you can delay the Heart Demon. Every day your heart demon is inside the cocoon, which is another day for you to get stronger to face it. So no killing and no sex for the next 14 days! " Xun glared at Long Chen as she said as if she was giving an order.

Chapter 257 - 257: Searching For God Beast

"Every day your heart demon is inside the cocoon, which is another day for you to get stronger to face it. So no killing and no sex for the next 14 days!" Xun glared at Long Chen as she said as if she was giving an order.

"Yes, my queen." Long Chen chuckled as he lay down on the bed.

"Hmph. Finally, you learned to address me properly." A proud smile formed on Xun's face as she heard Long Chen call her queen.

"Hahaha. If it makes you that happy, I don't mind calling you queen, but only if you call me King." Long Chen responded jokingly.

"Hmph. In your dreams." Xun said.

She disappeared again, leaving Long Chen alone.

"She's quite fun to tease." Long Chen muttered as he smiled.

"I can hear you, bastard!" Xun's angry voice appeared in his head.

"I was kidding." Long Chen replied with a wry smile on his face. Xun didn't reply.

Long Chen fell asleep after some time.

Far, far away. There was an illusory palace that was over 1000 meters tall. Its walls were so long. They went as far as the eyes could see.

The palace was covered in clouds.

Inside the palace, a man was standing on the balcony. He was gazing at the sky. There were 10 brightly shining stars in the sky, but one of them looked more special than the remaining nine.

The 10th star was shining brighter than the remaining 9 and was in a higher position than the others.

The man had white hair and light blue eyes. He was bare-chested. Although he looked human, it was clear that he was something else.

The man had claws in place of normal humanoid hands. His skin was white and there were black stripes on his body

"Did you find out about the 10th God Beast?" The man asked someone, but it was unclear who he was talking to.

"No, Your Majesty. We tried using all our resources, but we can't find the energy source of the 10th beast. It's like he has been swallowed by the deep abyss and not even an ounce of his godly energy can leak outside the abyss." Someone replied.

"Talk to the Phoenix clan and the others. See if that found anything." He said lightly. Even though he spoke in a low tone, his voice contained a strange energy that made people obey him unconditionally.

"Yes, Your Majesty. I will go right away" Came the reply.

There was nothing said after that and the man just kept staring at the 10th star silently.

The night passed away silently. It was early morning as Long Chen woke up.

He changed his clothes and got out of his room. He knocked on Mingyu's door and found out that she was up and ready to leave as well.

He was about to knock on Ziqing's door, but before his hand could even touch the door, the door was opened.

Long Chen's door struck Zhiqing's chest instead of the door, making Zhiqing let out a shocked sound.

"I didn't know that darling could be so aroused this early in the morning. Well, we still have some time. How about you come inside?" Zhiqing said in a seductive tone as he gazed into Long Chen's eyes.

"Sorry, but it's not the time. It's good that you're ready. We would be leaving soon." Long Chen said.

He ignored Zhiqing's advances and turned back. He walked towards Ji Shan's room and knocked on the door.

"Are you looking for someone?"

The door didn't open, but Long Chen was tapped on his shoulders by someone. He recognized that voice.

"You're already outside?" Long Chen smiled as he turned back. He found Ji Shan standing behind him.

"Yeah. I left for a morning walk and checked us out of the hotel in the meantime. We are free to leave at any moment" Ji Shan replied.

Long Chen nodded his head in appreciation. They all left the hotel and began their journey again.

They traveled without taking a break and after 4 hours of travel, they finally reached the Beast Mountains.

Beast Mountain was the place where the Beast Hall was situated. It was said that the beast hall was situated on the peak of the Beast Mountain.

Long Chen and the others were standing at the bottom of the mountain as they stared at the path ahead.

"The carriage can't go any further. We will have to travel to the top of the mountain on foot." Ji Shan exclaimed.

"It looks like it. The condition ahead is too bad. We can only walk ahead." Long Chen responded.

"Ron. We will be leaving on foot now. Stay here for two days and if we don't come back, go and rest in the nearest town." Long Chen said to the carriage driver.

Ron nodded his head in affirmation.

They all began their journey towards the peak of the mountain on foot and left Ron behind.

Ji Shan had kept his Soul Devouring Wolf inside his beast bag to accompany Long Chen and the others.

They were all strong cultivators, thus they didn't have any difficulty in climbing the mountain.

They finished the journey towards the top of the mountain in less than two hours and finally got the view of the Beast Hall.

Beast Hall looked less like a hall and more like a full-fledged sect. It was multiple times larger than the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"If a single branch of the Beast Hall is this big, just how big would the Main Beast Hall be?" Long Chen couldn't help but wonder as he looked at the Beast Hall.

"Magnificent, isn't it?" Ji Shan chuckled as he saw the amazed look of Long Chen.

"It's pretty good." Long Chen replied with a smile.

They walked towards the entrance of the sect.

The guards at the door noticed them.

"Who are you? What are you doing here?" They asked as Long Chen and others walked closer.

Chapter 258 - 258: Test?

"Who are you? What are you doing here?" They asked as Long Chen and others walked closer.

"I'm Second Prince Ji Shan. From the Blazing Sun Empire. I came here to join the beast hall." Ji Shan stepped forward and introduced himself.

He showed off the royal token that proved his identity.

"Prince from Blazing Sun Empire? Please wait a minute, your highness. I'll inform Elder Jun about it." The guard said.

He whistled loudly and a small eagle came flying towards him. The eagle has the same size as a normal eagle on the earth.

The guard wrote a letter and tied it to the eagle's leg.

"Take this letter to Elder Jun," He said to the eagle.

The eagle spread its wings and flew inside the beast hall.

Ji Shan and the others waited outside, but they didn't have to wait for long before a tall and well-built man came out of the sect. The man was wearing a green robe that had a symbol on the chest area that looked like a Phoenix.

The Elder stood there and observed Ji Shan for a brief moment.

"Prince Ji Shan, I'm really glad to see you here. I never thought that you would come to join our branch, but now that I think about it, it makes sense. The other branch is in the North Moon Empire after all. Come on inside." The Elder said.

Ji Shan looked at the others with a smile.

"Let's go guys." Ji Shan said.

"I apologize to the young Prince, but they can't enter. You know the rules. No stranger is allowed within the hall. Only the disciples can come inside." Elder Jun replied.

Ji Shan was stunned to hear Elder Jun's words.

"They're not strangers. They are my dear friends." Ji Shan insisted.

"Still. The rules are the rules. We must follow the rules of the headquarters." Elder Jun declared

"Then why am I allowed inside? I'm not a disciple either. " Ji Shan rebuked.

He thought that he was being allowed entry because of his high social status. That was not fair for Long Chen and the others.

Elder Jun looked at Ji Shan, but it didn't look like he was angry.

" It's all because of your father. Your father is the graduated disciple of the Main Beast Hall. That gives his son temporary membership of the Beast Hall. So in a sense, you are the temporary disciple of our hall. That's why you can enter, but they can't. " Elder Jun explained.

" Is there a way for us to become disciples of the sect? " Long Chen stepped forward and asked.

" Not at the moment. The test for the selection of new disciples will be held after 3 months. You can come then." Elder Jun responded.

" If they can't enter, then I won't enter either. Let's go" Ji Shan said.

He turned back and got ready to leave.

The Elder saw Ji Shan leaving and he looked conflicted.

" There is one possible way they can be allowed to enter."

Before he could leave, the Elder spoke.

Ji Shan stopped in his tracks and turned back.

" What way? " Ji Shan asked.

"He can become a temporary disciple as well. That way, he can enter the sect and wait until the exams to become permanent disciples are announced." Elder Jun responded.

" He only has to pass a small test to become a temporary disciple. Same for the ladies as well. " He continued.

A smile formed on Ji Shan's face. He looked back at Long Chen with a doubtful look.

" What do you say, Brother Chen?" He inquired.

Elder Jun thought that Long Chen would take a long time to think, but surprisingly Long Chen replied instantly.

"That's better than having no choice. I'll take part in that test." Long Chen said. VBO

"We as well." Mingyu and Zhiqing said at the same time.

"Very well. Come with me." Elder Jun said.

He walked back inside the sect.

Long Chen and the other started following him in small steps. They were all wondering what the test would be about, but no one knew.

He stopped in front of a small building and turned back.

"You know what the main quality is, that a proper Beast Tamer must possess?" Elder Jun asked.

An amused smile was clear on his face as he waited for an answer.

"Strength?" Ji Shan answered.

Elder Jun shook his head as he sighed

"Nope. Although that's important too, the main quality should be the ability to calm down a beast and make friends with it. Strength can help you tame a Beast, but as long as the beast doesn't want to be tamed, it can always choose to die." He explained.

"What's important is getting close to a beast so that it finds being tamed by you better than dying." He continued.

The others were listening to his words with great interest.

"That's what the test will be. The building behind me has Hundreds of rooms and each room contains a beast that hasn't been tamed. Some of the Beasts might be violent while others can be quite calm. So the test might depend on your luck as well." He further insinuated.

"The three of you can choose any random room to enter. The beasts are fully fed. The criteria to pass the test shall be to make the beast eat this sleeping pill. If it is found that you attacked the beast, you shall be disqualified. I repeat, there shall be no wound on the beast's body." He emphasized

" Once the beast is asleep, you can come out and inform us so that we can check." He finished his explanation.

'Making a beast that was forcefully captured, eat something without attacking. And it's not like they are hungry. It's going to be interesting.' Long Chen thought as he looked towards the door.

Elder Jun pushed the main door open.

"You can go inside." He declared.

"Yes," Long Chen and the others nodded in affirmation as they entered inside.

After looking around for a while, all of them chose a room and entered.

Long Chen looked at the beast and a strange look appeared on his face.

"Is this a joke?" Long Chen blurted out.

Chapter 259 - 259: Using Orion

Long Chen was stunned to see the Beast inside the room.

"Is this a joke?" He exclaimed as he looked at the beast.

He held the pill in his hand. He looked back and forth between the pill and the beast.

The beast was known as the Wind Fairyfly.

It looked like tiny insects, like most chalcid wasps, mostly only 1 mm long. It was even smaller than a mosquito from Earth.

"How am I supposed to feed it the pill? The pill itself is 20 times the size of the wind firefly." Long Chen let out.

He was shocked to see the Beast and wondered what he could do. He wouldn't even be able to see the tiny beast if his senses weren't so sharp.

"Ah... My lady Xun?" Long Chen softly called out for backup.

Xun appeared beside him.

"Yes?" She asked.

Long Chen looked at her with an awkward smile.

"Can you help me pass this trial? I need to make this tiny beast fall asleep without harming it." He asked.

Xun looked towards the small beast flying in the corner.

"That's tough. That should be a Wind Firefly. I'm amazed that someone was able to catch it in such a good condition." She said to Long Chen.

"Generally they are too weak to harm anyone but their defense is weak as well. If you try catching it, there's a good chance that it might die just from the tiniest bit of force." She further explained.

"Is there no way to do it? I need to feed it the pill and make it sleep." Long Chev softly said.

Xun fell into deep thought as she started wondering about Long Chen's options.

"There's a way." She said after a short while.

A smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he heard her words of hope.

"I knew my beautiful Xun would help me." Long Chen exclaimed as he looked at her. Xun's face turned slightly red as she heard him call her beautiful.

"What should I do?" He further asked.

"Well... Bring Orion outside and make him eat the pill." She said softly.

"Ahh... I think you might be misunderstanding something. I need the fairyfly to sleep, not Orion." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

He couldn't picky assume that she had misunderstood his question.

"I know, idiot. I'm not misunderstanding anything. The only way to make her sleep is to make Orion sleep." She said in an annoyed tone.

"Ah... Can you explain it in simpler terms?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face.

"The Wind Fairyfly won't eat the pill because it can't eat. The Wind Fairyflies drink blood of sleeping beasts or humans only. They are quite timid, that's why they don't go near the ones that are awake. Their sharp senses help them differentiate between the ones that are actually sleeping and the ones faking."

"Oh, I think I understand your meaning. The sleep medicine shall be inside Orion after he consumes the pill, and when the fairyfly drinks his blood, it shall enter her body."

"Yup. You can only use Orion, as we don't know how little snow's blood might affect the workings of the pill. As for cati, he can't eat out either."

"You, on the other hand, can eat it, but because of your special bloodline, I don't think this weak pill will affect you. That leaves only Orion."

"That makes sense. I'll do as you said."

"Orion." Long Chen muttered softly as he used his consciousness to call for Orion inside the Beast Region of his Ancient Ring.

Orion heard his call and came out of the ring instantly.

"Hey buddy, I need you to eat this pill. It isn't harmful, but it will make you sleep for a few hours." Long Chen said as he extended his hands towards Orion.

Although Long Chen knew that even if he didn't explain about the pill, Orion will eat it without any hesitation as long as he said it, but he still decided to explain to Orion.

Orion walked forth in slow steps and ate the pill that was on his hands.

The pill took around 5 minutes before it started showing the effects. Orion fell asleep.

"Thanks, buddy." Long Chen said.

He stepped back and created some distance between himself and Orion. He didn't want the Wind Firefly to be hesitant because of his presence.

The fairyfly ignored Orion for around half an hour as it kept flying in its original position. After a while, it finally started flying towards Orion.

It landed on his back and inserted its needle-like mouth in Orion's flesh and started drinking the blood. It drank only for a few seconds before it was full.

The Wind Fairyfly flew back to its original position.

More than 10 minutes passed away, but the fairyfly continued flying without much difference.

"Why isn't it affected yet?" Long Chen exclaimed with a stunned look on his face.

"It will work. Wait a little more. They take time to process the blood. " Xun replied casually.

Her words were like magic, as soon as she spoke, the Fairyfly started coming down slowly. It was now sitting on the ground.

A few more seconds passed away, and the fairyfly finally fell asleep.

A smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he walked forth and put Orion back into his storage ring.

He opened the door of his room and walked outside.

He found Elder Jun and Ji Shan were already standing in the corridor. Mingyu and Zhiqing were out as well.

"How did you succeed so fast?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise.

He was stunned to find the both of them already out.

"Apparently both sisters-in-law were too lucky. They both got a really nice beast, the moon rabbit, that ate the pill without giving them much trouble. They passed the test." Ji Shan spoke before they could.

"What about you, Brother Chen?" He inquired.

"I succeeded as well. Elder Jun can check." Long Chen let out with a smile.

"Let's see then," Elder Jun spoke in a calm tone as he walked forth and entered the room Long Chen had chosen.

Long Chen and the others followed him.

"Brother Chen, where is the beast?" Ji Shan exclaimed as he found out it difficult to see any beast inside.

Chapter 260 - 260: Wives

Elder Jun, on the other hand, noticed it quite easily.

He walked towards the corner and picked up the Wind Fairyfly in his hand gently as he started observing it.

"No signs of emergency touching the fairyfly. How did you do it?" He inquired with a suspicious look on his face.

" It's all thanks to the pill Elder Jun gave me." Long Chen replied.

" Stop lying. The fairyfly can't even eat the pill and it doesn't trust humans either. How did you do it? "

" I'm not lying, Elder. It's sleeping because of your pill's effects. " Long Chen smilingly replied.

" Alright then, tell me how you fed it the pill." Elder Jun inquired with a suspicious look on his face.

" Simple. It's known that the fairyfly feeds on the blood of sleeping humans and beasts. I utilized that knowledge to my advantage." Long Chen said.

Elder Jun's expression changed as if he was struck with the realization.

" Does that mean that you... " He let out softly.

" Yup. I ate the pill and fell asleep. Although I don't know what happened next, it's clear that the fairyfly drank my blood and fell asleep. Long Chen said as he completed Elder Jun's sentence.

" Amazing! So amazing. I'm quite impressed by your knowledge, young man. Not many people know about the Wind Firefly or its habits, but you knew."

" Here is your temporary disciple badge. Keep it safe. I'm sure that you will reach great heights if you stay within the sect. I look forward to your performance in the disciple promotion exams in the next few days."

Elder Jun kept praising Long Chen. He likes those who had knowledge about the beasts, and he found Long Chen to be just like that. He immediately handed over the temporary disciple badge to him.

Mingyu and the others had already received their badges.

"Come with me, I'll introduce you to someone. He'll make arrangements for you to stay."

" Since you're only a temporary disciple, you won't have the same rights as most of the disciples like choosing skills from the skill hall, but you can attend classes if teachers. "

Elder Jun continued walking forth and the others kept following behind.

After a short distance, Elder Jun stopped in front of a beautiful looking building.

"I'm the punishment Elder and this is the punishment hall. You might come to me if you have any problem in the sect." Elder Jun said as he pointed towards the building.

" Elder Jun, I got your message. Did I do something wrong? I swear whatever Si Chuan said to you never happened. I didn't beat him up, he was beaten by a wild beast While training. I only saved him. "

An anxious-looking girl came running and stopped near Elder Jun. She was breathing heavily, but she didn't stop speaking.

The girl looked like she was barely 20 years old. She was quite tall. Her height was most probably around 5 feet 10 inches, which made her taller than Mingyu and Zhiqing.

She was wearing a tight red dress that highlighted her curves perfectly. Her big breasts looked even more dangerous when wrapped so tightly by the dress.

Long Chen was able to see a glimpse of her peaks. The form most probably wasn't wearing anything inside that dress.

Long Chen sneakily stole a few glances, but he didn't make it too obvious.

"You man can never learn." He heard the sarcastic voice of Xun in his mind.

His face turned slightly red, but he didn't reply.

"Silence. That's not why I called you here. I need you to show these guys around. " Elder Jun glanced at the girl and told her.

" They are new temporary disciples of our beast hall. Show them around and teach them the common knowledge about the sect and its rules. After that, take them to the temporary disciple quarters. " He further said as he pointed towards Long Chen and the others.

The girl looked relaxed as she found out that Elder Jun hadn't called her to punish her.

" But Elder Jun, I have something more important to do. I'll call someone else to do it. " She tried to kindly deny the elder and leave.

An annoyed look appeared on Elder Jun's face as he saw her shenanigans.

" Really? I think the complaint of Si Chuan does make sense. You did beat him unnecessarily. I'll see what I can do to give him justice. " He said in a serious tone.

The girl stopped where she was as she turned back with a fawning smile on her face.

" Ahh... Kidding. I was kidding Elder. Of course, I would show them around. They are an important addition to our sect after all. " She said.

" Good. If I get a single complaint about you, you'll be spending your days cleaning the punishment hall. So take things seriously. " Elder Jun said.

" Yes Elder. " She responded with a smile, though inside she was cursing her luck.

" Best of luck guys." Elder Jun turned back and said to the others before he walked inside the punishment hall and left them all behind.

"Huh, finally he's gone." The girl said in a relieved fine.

She looked at Long Chen and the others.

" So I need to show you guys around. My name is Mikan." She introduced herself.

She had decided that since she can't escape, she better do it right.

" What's your name." She further asked.

" I'm Ji Shan. "

"I'm Long Chen."

"I'm Mingyu. "

"I'm Zhiqing. "

They all introduced themselves one after another.

" Oh. I must say, little brother, Chen is really cute. Come, stay close to the Elder Sister. " The girl said as she caught Long Chen's hands and pulled him closer.

Long Chen was able to feel her sweet smell as he stood closer to her.

"Isn't that inappropriate, Miss Mikan?" Zhiqing let out in an annoyed tone.

In fact, Mingyu and Zhiqing both looked quite annoyed, but Zhiqing took the opportunity to speak first.

"Hmm? It's fine, isn't it? He doesn't look like he minds. Anyways, Why do you care about him?" She asked with an amused smile on her beautiful face.

Ji Shan heard her words and couldn't help but smile wryly.

"Ah, You might not know that, but these 2 are brother Chen's wives." He replied to the girl.

Mikan was visibly shocked as she heard it. She looked at Long Chen with an impossible look on her face.

Chapter 261 - 261: Beast Forest

Mikan was visibly shocked as she heard it. She looked at Long Chen with an impossible look on her face.

"What? Little Brother, I thought that you were a cute little puppy, but you turned out to be a wolf in disguise. Were you planning to eat Elder sister as well?" She let out in a fake scared tone.

"I have no such intention." Long Chen replied as he freed himself from her arms stepped backward.

A smile formed on her face as she saw Long Chen moving back.

"Hmm... I wouldn't mind if it's you though." She said in a suggestive tone as she winked at him.

"No thanks, Anyways, Can you show us around first?" Long Chen said.

"Uhhh... Little brother is so harsh. It's fine though. The Elder Sister likes harsh men." She said as she winked at Long Chen.

"Alright, don't look at me like that. I was only kidding. Follow me. I'll show you around." Mikan said as she gestured to them to follow her.

They all began following her.

"The sect is too big, but I'll only show you the place you are allowed to see now. Once you become the true disciple of our beast hall, you'll be able to get broader access and you will be able to go to more places." She said after a short time.

They were walking on the footpath that was beautifully made using the strongest of properly crafted stones and finally saw a beautiful building there.

"That's the skill hall. You can choose the skills, but you need contribution points to get the skills. Only true disciples like us are allowed entry, so I can't show you inside."

She pointed towards the building and started explaining about it.

A grin formed on her face as she abruptly walked closer to Long Chen.

He didn't take a step back as he allowed her to get closer.

"Oh, right, Little Brother. You know the Elder In charge of the skill hall is really hot. Just telling you, In Case you want a 4th wife. " She whispered in his ears.

"4th?" Long Chen exclaimed with a doubtful look on his face.

"Yeah. She'll be your 4th. I'm on the 3rd, aren't I? " She said in a sensual tone. Long Chen was able to feel her hot breath in his ears, but he didn't let his expressions waiver.

"Let's continue our journey." She chuckled lightly as she moved back.

'That demoness.' Long Chen thought with a wry smile on his face as he began following her with the others.

He didn't even dare look at the expressions on Zhiqing and Mingyu's face as he could already guess it.

They walked for 10 minutes before they were able to see a wall. The wall was quite tall and way too long.

Long Chen couldn't help but wonder what was behind that wall.

"Behind that wall is the training arena. We Beast Tamers duel with our tamed beasts there. You can't go there either. You'll only be allowed entry after you become a true disciple." She explained.

" Is there any place we can enter?" Long Chen asked with a wry smile on his face.

He was getting somewhat tired as he heard that he can't enter again and again.

"Don't be so eager, little brother. There's a place like that. Come with me." Mikan said with a smile on her face.

They walked more and stopped in front of a Dome-shaped structure.

" That's the place where the classes are held. You can go there and listen to the classes from 9 am to 12 pm. The classes are held on various topics ranging from cultivation to taming." She described as she looked back at Long Chen and the others.

"Can that place really house thousands of disciples of beast hall?" Ji Shan asked.

He looked quite doubtful of her words.

"Not just ten thousand people... that place can house 500 thousand disciples with ease. That place is much bigger on the inside than it looks from the outside." She responded as she tried to clear his doubts.

"You can come here in the morning and see for yourself. Let's go. There's one now place to show you before we go back." She said with a slight smile as she started walking again.

This time they had to walk for half an hour before they finally reached their destination.

It looked like a forest which we spread for as long as the eyes could see.

"That's our beast forest. Many beasts are kept there. You'll be allowed to take over from the forest later on, but you can't enter at the moment." She informed them as he looked at the deep forest.

'So that's the forest where it is...' A thoughtful look appeared on Long Chen's face as he looked at the forest.

"Let's go back now. I'll bring you to your quarters." Mikan said as she tapped on the shoulders of Long Chen, who looked like he was thinking about something really serious.

"Ah, right." Long Chen got back to reality and left the place with everyone. He didn't forget to look back once though.

They walked more and reached the residential area for temporary disciples.

There were many courtyards present there.

"You can use those two courtyards. The two guys shall remain in that one, while the girls will stay in the one over there. The place is quite spacious and there are two beds, so you shouldn't have any trouble. " She said as she pointed towards two courtyards.

Zhiqing looked like she wanted to say something, but Mikan spoke before she could.

"I know what you want to ask, and the answer is 'no'. You can't stay with your husband. Even if you are married, you can't stay with him. These are the rules. " She said.

" Alright, guys. My work here is done. I shall leave now." Mikan further said.

" I'll see you again, little brother" She stepped forward and kissed Long Chen on his cheeks before she left.

Chapter 262 - 262: War Preparation?

"We don't have to follow such time, do we?" Zhiqing let out after Mikan left.

"We do. Let's follow the rules at the moment. It's just for a few more days."

Long Chen tried to make her understand. After some initial back and forth, the girls finally agreed.

Zhiqing looked quite discontent, but she still did just as Long Chen said and left with Mingyu.

Long Chen and Ji Shan entered their respective courtyard.

"Which room do you want?" Ji Shan said as he noticed two rooms inside the place.

"I'll take that. Good night." Long Chen casually picked a room and entered inside.

Ji Shan, on the other hand, entered the second room.

The time on the night slowly kept trickling down, until it was midnight.

Long Chen was cultivating inside his room and abruptly opened his eyes as he looked towards the door.

He stood up and started walking towards the door. He softly opened the door so as to not wake up Ji Shan.

He left their courtyard in the darkness of the night and started advancing towards a certain direction.

There were guards all around the place, but he managed to sneak past them thanks to heaven's shroud.

It took him around 40 minutes as he finally got to the place he desired to reach.

It was the dark forest that was called the beast forest. The same forest that Mikan had showed him around. It was the place that had the thing he desired.

Long Chen had read in a book that the Sun Swallowing Condor lived inside the beast forest of the beast hall, thus he came here.

Long Chen used his divine sense and thankfully there was no one nearby.

He stepped forward, but just as he took his second step, he felt a powerful shock course through his body.

He was forced to take a step back as the pain made him groan.

"There's a formation here. Damn it, I should have thought about it" He cursed under his breath as he looked at the forest.

He looked around and hurriedly walked towards a stone. He picked up the stone and threw it towards the forest.

Just as he had expected, the stone was stopped by the barrier and fell to the ground.

"There's definitely a barrier. I'm not sure if I can break it, but even if I'm able to... that would alert the Hall Master and the others. I need time to catch the Sun Swallowing Condor. Can't let everything go to waste because of my hurry."
"

Long Chen sighed as he turned back and left the place just as silently as he came.

Long Chen got back to his courtyard and entered his room.

He lay in his bed and fell into deep thought as he tried to think of a solution, but he couldn't find any solution. Ultimately, he fell asleep.

The Sun rose, signaling the start of a new day. Long Chen opened his eyes as he sat up and left the room.

Mingyu and Zhiqing were already sitting in the hall of his courtyard waiting for him.

"You look tired," Mingyu said as she noticed Long Chen coming out of his room.

"Yeah, I couldn't get a proper sleep last night." Long Chen let out a wry smile on his face.

Both Mingyu and Zhiqing couldn't help but look at each other suspiciously.

"Did you sneak into our room?" They both said at the same time.

Long Ben didn't know what to say at the misunderstanding.

" I wasn't that. I was just thinking about a problem, and was unable to sleep." Long Chen said.

"Oh, you're all up already? I get it, you guys must be excited about the classes." Ji Shan came out of his room. He was quite excited as he noticed that everyone was already ready.

" Let's go. They should be getting started quite soon." He said with a smile.

" Let's go, I also want to inquire about some things." Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

They all got up and left the place.

As soon as they got out of their courtyard they were able to see quite a lot of people coming out of the nearby courtyards.

"They must be the temporary disciples as well." Ji Shan let out as he noticed the others.

" Looks like that." Long Chen responded.

It took them around 10 minutes as they reached the teaching hall.

They were able to see quite a lot of people entering the hall. There was a long line and they were able to see the hustle and bustle.

They followed the crowd and entered the hall.

It was just as Mikan had described. The hall was much, much larger on the inside than it looked from the outside.

"There are already more than 50000 people inside and the hall isn't even half full. Amazing " Zhiqing exclaimed with a surprised look on her face.

"It is quite good, but I think I have seen even better." Ji Shan responded.

They found a place to sit. More and more people kept entering the hall for the next 30 minutes.

It was sharp at 9 am when the door of the hall was closed. No one was allowed to enter anymore.

Just as Long Chen was wondering where the teacher was, the secondary door opened and a woman entered the hall.

The woman was wearing a red dress that came down to her ankles and a black robe that had the beast hall symbol on it.

The woman looked to be in her late twenties, but everyone could guess that she was much older.

While everyone in the Beast Taming hall was busy with their stuff, In a faraway place hundreds of people were climbing on their fierce flying beasts.

There were thousands of flying beasts ready to fly at a moment's notice. There was no beast below the stage of the gold realm. In fact, there were quite a few beasts that were already in the Earth Realm.

Chapter 263 - 263: Black Robed Men

There were thousands of flying beasts ready to fly at a moment's notice. There was no beast below the stage of the gold realm. In fact, there were quite a few beasts that were already in the Earth Realm.

More than a hundred masked cultivators got ready to mount on their beasts, but it looked like they were waiting for something... or someone.

It didn't take more than half an hour before 4 people came walking in the hall.

All 4 of them were wearing masks. 3 of them were Men while the fourth one was a woman.

There was a scary aura surrounding them that made them look like the leaders of the hundreds of cultivators present in the hall.

There was a silver scythe symbol on all their robes.

They stopped in front of the hundreds of cultivators and observed them with their sharp eyes for a brief moment.

While the hundreds of cultivators had a red robe, the 4 people had a black robe.

"Is everything ready?" One of the black-robed masked men asked.

Although he kept his voice low, there was some magic in his voice that made it reach everyone's ears.

"Yes, Milord." They spoke in unison.

"Very good. We shall leave now. It's finally time to finish it." The man said lightly.

"Leon!" The man said as he looked towards the sky.

It didn't take much longer for a Winged Lion to come flying down.

The Winged Lion was surprisingly a peak Earth Realm Flying Beast.

The other three people also called out some names and three more Winged Lions came flying down.

All four Winged Lions were at the peak of the Earth Realm.

The four black-robed people climbed on their Winged Lions and flew high in the air.

The hundreds of red-robed cultivators also took to the air on their flying beasts.

Long Chen was sitting in the big hall when a woman entered.

The woman was wearing a red dress that came down to her ankles and a black robe that had the beast hall symbol on it.

The woman looked to be in her late twenties, but everyone could guess that she was much older as she was wearing an Elders' robe.

"Good Morning everyone. I see some new faces today, so I will introduce myself once again." The woman said with a bright smile on her face.

"I'm Mu Xin. I'm the Elder of the sect. I'm also the one In-Charge of our beast forest and its safety." She introduced herself.

"Today, I shall tell you about the beast taming and the things that you should always avoid." She said with a beautiful smile on her face.

Long Chen was quite interested in the topic and couldn't help but find it fortunate that he came.

His beast taming method was quite unorthodox because of his bloodline, thus he didn't need to worry about too many things.

The only thing that had him worried was that if the beast did not want to be tamed and if it chose to die than be tamed, it would be bad for Long Chen.

"What do you guys think we should not do when we're taming a beast? Or when we were trying to establish a contract?" She asked.

She interestingly looked at everyone with a curious look on her face.

"We should not let it escape and show it who's the boss?" One of the cultivators in the hall said.

"Anyone else?" She asked as she looked around.

"To not make it scared of us?"

"Feed it yummy things?"

The disciples kept replying randomly.

" No! What you need to do is none of those things." She let out with a wry smile on her face.

"The important thing is to remain calm. Make the beast think that nothing can phase you. Make it think that if it chose to live with you, it won't be too bad. Make it think that being tamed is better than death" The woman explained further.

" I understand that there might be some amongst you who think that defeating the beast and then forcefully establishing a contract is a good option for you. That option works as well. I'd say that it works 90% of the time, but what about the remaining 10%?" She explained.

" That's when the beast chose to die instead of living the life of a slave. So what do you think is the better option?"She further said as she sighed.

" It depends on you what you will choose, but you need to know the consequences of the choices you made."

She kept talking and explaining things like the nature of beasts and about handling them after they are tamed. She even talked about cultivation in the last moment before the class ended.

"Alright guys, I hope you understood what I wanted to say. That's it for today." She said as she got ready to leave.

Long Chen stood up in a hurry as he hurriedly started following after her. Mingyu and Zhiqing were stunned as they saw Long Chen leaving in a hurry. Before they could react, Long Chen had already disappeared.

"Elder Xin!" Long Chen called out as he finally caught up with Elder Xin after running for over 5 minutes.

"Yes?" She asked with a curious look on her face as she turned back.

"I... I just wanted to say that your lectures were amazing. I understood so many things that I was previously doubtful about. Thank you for everything." Long Chen said with a serious look on his face.

"Oh, Thank you." A smile appeared on her face as she thanked him.

"Ah, Elder there's one thing I wanted to ask about. " He said with some hesitation.

She wondered what he wanted to ask.

" Sure, go ahead. You can ask me anything." She inquired.

" It's about the beast forest" Long Chen let out.

"Hmm? " Elder Xin frowned as she gazed at Long Chen.

"What do you mean?" She asked as she looked at him.

Chapter 264 - 264: Dream

"What do you mean?" She asked as she looked at him.

" You mentioned that you were In-Charge of the beast forest. I'm quite fascinated by it and I was wondering if I can enter to look around. " He said with an innocent look on his face.

"I'm sorry, but no one is allowed to enter the Beast Forest. Don't even try it as there is a powerful barrier surrounding the beast forest. You'll die if you even try." She replied as she shook her head.

" Is there really no other way?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her with pleading eyes.

" Well, there is a way. You are a temporary disciple, aren't you?" She asked.

" Yes. I just joined the Beast Hall as a temporary disciple?" Long Chev replied.

" Good. Since you're a temporary disciple, I think you will take part in the trials to become a true disciple. The trials will be held inside the beast forest, so I think that you will have your opportunity to see the majesty of the beast forest with your own eyes." Elder Xin let out with a bright smile on her face.

" Oh? Thanks for informing me, Elder Xin." Long Chen thanked her as he turned back and left.

Elder Xin stood there as she wondered what it was all about. She left as well.

Long Chen walked towards the teaching hall and caught sight of Mingyu and the others. He met up with them.

"Why did you leave in such a hurry? You didn't even look back. " Zhiqing asked in an annoyed tone.

" I can't blame you, Brother. It's no wonder that you were mesmerized and followed after her." Ji Shan chuckled as if he had realized what was going through Long Chen's mind.

Mingyu and Zhiqing heard his words and couldn't help but look at Long Chen with a doubtful look on their faces.

"Stop letting your mind wander unnecessarily. I just went after her because I had some doubts. She cleared my doubts and now I'm back." Long Chen explained.

" Sure. If that's what you do say happened, that's what happened." Ji Shan said with a grin on his face as if he didn't believe it in the slightest.

"Let's go." Long Chen ignored him and left with Zhiqing and Mingyu.

He told them that he was going to cultivate as he got to his courtyard and separated from themselves as he entered his room.

He fell onto his bed as he fell asleep. He was still quite tired from the last night of sleep.

He slept soundly till late night. It had been so long since he took such a nice sleep.

This was the first time he dreamt of his previous life.

In his dream, He woke up in a hospital and found out that he had survived the stabbing by that thief.

"You idiot. Did you really have to jump in front of a thief? Even if you did, is my son so weak that he can't even defeat a measly thief? "

His father was scolding him, while his mother was sitting beside him as she held his hand.

For a brief moment, he forgot that it was a dream. He found it to be the reality as he watched the angry face of his father.

"By the way, who is the girl?" His father suddenly said.

"Which girl? " He asked with a doubtful look on his face.

" That girl? She had been here since the morning. Is she your girlfriend? " He asked as he pointed towards a girl nearby.

The girl looked to be 17-18 years old. She had beautiful hazel eyes, thin arched eyebrows, and a beautiful smile on her face.

Long Chen recognized that girl.

"Lin Yin?" He let out with a stunned look on his face.

She was the girl that Long Chen had proposed to be his girlfriend. She had said yes to his proposal. Thus, they were girlfriend and boyfriend now.

The girl heard Long Chen call her name as tears appeared in her eyes.

She nodded her head as she wiped years off her face. She stepped forward and stood near him.

Long Chen was wondering what was happening when his father roared in pain.

Long Chen looked towards him and saw a knife stabbed into his heart.

A masked man was standing near him and pulled the knife out. His father fell to the ground. His blood covered the floor.

The masked man was the same person who stabbed Long Chen before.

"Stop!" Long Chen let out loud as he stood up.

He punched towards the man, but the man easily caught his hand. Long Chen realized that he was too weak. He didn't have any cultivation.

The man kicked Long Chen which made Long Chen fall to the ground.

He ignored Long Chen and walked towards his mother.

His mother was slaughtered as well, right before his eyes.

Long Chen again stood up, but before he could do anything, the masked man had stabbed Lin Yin as well.

Long Chen roared in madness as he ran towards the man.

He wanted to tear the mask man into pieces, but he was too weak.

The masked man caught him by the neck. Long Chen struggled to breathe as he tried to free himself, but he couldn't.

The man laughed like mad as he tightened his grip on Long Chen's neck. Long Chen's eyes were turning red as he found it difficult to breathe.

Without giving any chance to him, the masked man stabbed the knife in Long Chen's heart.

"Ahhhh..." He roared in pain as he sat up.

He breathed heavily as he looked around. His surroundings were different and he was back inside his room.

His heart was beating faster as he stood up and opened the door.

He had just taken a step outside when Ji Shan came out of his room in a hurry.

"Are you alright? What happened?" He asked as he breathed in relief as he saw Long Chen safe.

Chapter 265 - 265:Tian Shen's Weakness

"Are you alright? What happened?" He asked as he breathed in relief as he saw Long Chen safe.

"Yeah, Just a bad dream." Long Chev casually explained.

"What dream could scare you so much? Were you caught having sex with Senior Mikan? That must be it, only sisters-in-law can scare you so much. " He chuckled with an amused look on his face.

" Nope. Though that would be scary as well." A smile appeared on Long Chen's face as he heard his Ji Shan's idiotic assumption.

"Well, it's good that you're fine. I'll be going back to my sleep then." Ji Shan said as he walked back to his room.

" Just forget that life man. It's impossible. That's all in the past now. Don't think about it before you are strong enough to control your destiny." Long Chen muttered as if he was talking to himself.

He left the courtyard and sat in the garden outside.

It was Midnight and the full moon was high in the sky.

He gazed at the bright moon with a thoughtful look on his face.

"The world is so mystic. There are gods and they are demons. Humans can achieve immortality, they can fly. A mountain can be destroyed in one punch and the sea can be cut with a strike of the sword. Nothing seems impossible here. " Long Chen muttered as he stared at the moon.

He was feeling somewhat down at the moment.

" Xun, Do you think they are people on the moon?" Long Chen asked out of nowhere.

Xun appeared beside him and sat near him as she started looking at the sky as well.

"The moon? Yup. There are many species living there. " She replied.

" Have you ever been there?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

" Yup. I got the opportunity to see the moon when I was with Tian Shen.

*You know about his slaughter, right?"

" When he was young, it had only been a few weeks when he found the ring. He tried to get stronger and he was going quite good."

"He had started his cultivation quite late. He wasn't able to cultivate before finding the ring, because he had no talent for cultivation... That's what he thought at least. The real reason for him being unable to cultivate was quite different though. Anyways, back to the topic. "

" He slaughtered everyone in that sect that beat him up... that mocked him... that simply watched... and the girl he was in love with. "

"I already told you about the side effect of the pill he consumed I think," Xun said softly.

"That pill was only useful for cultivators below Earth Realm. Once someone uses that pill, their physical strength and reflexes will improve by an abnormal amount. A person who has no cultivation would be able to face an Earth Realm Cultivator with ease, and if a Gold Core Realm Cultivator consumed it, he would be able to face even Heaven Realm Cultivators. As for its side effects... you would lose your cultivation... but not instantly. You might even die"Xun said with a serious expression on her face.

" You would lose all your cultivation as soon as you reach Heaven Realm Cultivation and you will have to start your cultivation all over again. And if a Cultivator can't reach the Heaven Realm in 50 years, they would die as their heart stops." Xun muttered with a downcast look as she looked down.

*He had consumed the pill and wasn't even able to move. He used the talisman that he received as his inheritance and he was sent far away from the planet. His life was saved at the moment. "

" The planet we teleported to was the one you see as your moon. That is the place where he first met her... I sometimes wonder, what would have happened if we had teleported to another planet. " She let out. Long Chen could feel a little sadness in her eyes as she looked at the moon.

"Her...? " Long Chen asked in a low voice.

"Do you want to go to the moon as well?" She changed the topic as she asked.

Long Chen understood her intention and didn't ask anymore.

"Yup. I think it would be good to see the moon. When I saw the astronauts walking on the moon, I always wondered what I would feel like. " Long Chen said with a slight smile on his face.

" Astronauts? What's that? " Xun couldn't understand his words and asked.

"Oh, Astronauts are like cultivators. They can go to places where no average human can. They can even get to the moon. " Long Chen chuckled as he said.

" Why have I not heard of them before?" She asked again.

" Who knows," Long Chen acted ignorant as he said.

"Xun, Let me ask you something. You have been with Tian Shen for quite a long time. What was his biggest strength and biggest weakness? " Long Chen asked.

" Hahaha, Are you really asking me that? Well, I can tell you. " She couldn't help but laugh as she heard Long Chen's question.

" Tian Shen's biggest strength was his unwavering determination. He wasn't afraid of facing anyone. Even if a god had appeared in front of him, to stop him, he would have the god with his sword without taking a step back in hesitation. That's the kind of man he was. It helped him achieve many impossible feats, though." She further said.

" Interesting. His biggest weakness? " Long Chen let out.

" His biggest weakness? He had two weaknesses. The first one was his unwavering determination. Even when all odds were against him, he didn't run away. It was like he was determined to either die on the War grounds or kill everyone standing in his path. There was no in-between for him" She said after thinking for a while.

" His other weakness was... his love. The love for the ones he cares about. I don't think I can explain more about it. To the world, he was a bloodthirsty demon, but to me, he was someone who cared a lot about his dear ones."

She said in a somewhat melancholic tone

Chapter 266 - 266: Don't Leave

"Hah... I don't know what he was like, but he sounds like a really badass man." Long Chen stood with a smile.

"Hah, he sure was. Anyways, Are you going to keep sitting here? You should utilize the time and cultivate more. The bloodline trial is drawing near." She said with a smile as she informed him.

" Geez, can't you let me breathe for a moment? I'm already quite tired." He said with a tired look on his face.

"You do realize that you slept most of the day, don't you? " She responded in a sarcastic tone.

" Yeah. Even then my mind wasn't able to rest properly. That stupid dream made my calm heart restless. I don't think I can cultivate tonight. " He let out as he looked down.

" What do you want to do the whole night then?" She asked with a curious look on her face.

" Why don't we talk about love life? Did you have a boyfriend? " He asked abruptly with a smile.

" You... " Xun couldn't help but facepalm herself as she disappeared.

"Hey, Xun! Xun! Don't leave me alone." He called out again and again, but Xun didn't reply.

"She left me alone. I might as well leave as well." He muttered as he stood up.

He walked inside his room and sat down in a meditative position. He had decided to cultivate through the night.

After half an hour of turmoil, he had managed to calm his heart as he began his cultivation.

He cultivated in what remained of the night. It was already morning as he stopped cultivating and opened his eyes.

He stood up as he stretched his body. He left the room.

He was all ready to leave the courtyard when he heard a knock on the door.

He walked towards the door and opened it.

He had expected it to be either Mingyu or Zhiqing, but it turned out to be someone else entirely.

"Little brother, good morning," Mikan said with a smirk on her face as she took a step forward and kissed on Long Chen's cheeks without giving him a chance to react.

"Did you miss me, little brother?" She asked in a soft tone.

"May I ask the reason for Senior Mikan's sudden visit?" Long Chen didn't respond and simply asked a question of his own.

"Is little brother shy? Don't worry, Elder Sister, won't eat you up. At least not yet. " She started laughing as she looked at him.

"As for the reason... I came here to inform little brother something." She said.

What she didn't tell him was that Elder Jun was the one who sent her here.

"About what!" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"Call others first. I think everyone should know about it." She said as she entered the courtyard and sat on a chair in the hall.

"I can tell them. Just tell me." Long Chen said as he sat on a nearby chair. He didn't do as she said.

"Hah, You don't want your wives to see the Elder sister with you, do you? You want to keep the Elder sister for your own, right? Such an evil plan. " She said as she gazed into his eyes.

Long Chen couldn't help but notice her fingers that were seductively roaming all over her body.

"Are you going to tell me, or not? I have quite a lot of other things to do as well." He said.

"Oh my, Little brother is no fun. Alright, I'll tell you. I came here to inform you about the true disciple exams. All temporary disciples can take part in the exams. If you succeed, you'll be promoted to a true disciple. The exam will begin tomorrow. The place of the meeting shall be the beast forest. So, don't forget to come." She said with a smile

" Oh, right, tell that friend of yours and your two wives as well. They can take part as well, although it's not compulsory. " She said before she stood up.

" I shall take my leave now. I'll see you tomorrow, little brother." She said as she left the place, leaving Long Chen behind.

Long Chen sat there silently as a smile appeared on its face.

"It's good that I don't have to wait for too long." He let out.

"Don't have to wait for what? " Ji Shan came out of his room and heard Long Chen's words. He asked him.

"It's good that I don't have to wait for long to become a true disciple. Senior Mikan came and said that the exams to become a true disciple will start tomorrow. "

" Tomorrow? That's awesome. It is indeed nice that we don't have to wait for long. I can't wait to get my hands on the book about beast taming. " Ji Shan looked like he was in a happy mood as he heard the news.

"Yes, I'll go tell the others about it." Long Chen let out as he stood up.

He left the room and walked towards Mingyu's courtyard.

It was still early morning, so he couldn't help but wonder if they were awake or still sleeping

He knocked on the door as he waited for the door to be opened.

He knocked again as the door wasn't opened for more than 5 minutes.

He knocked one now, but more force.

The door was finally opened.

"Good morning." It was Mingyu who opened the door. She wished him morning as she moved aside and allowed Long Chen to enter.

She closed the door and followed Long Chen inside.

"Is Zhiqing still sleeping?" He asked

"Mingyu! Is darling here?" Long Chen heard Zhiqing's loud voice.

" She's taking a shower," Mingyu replied to Long Chen.

" Oh," Long Chen nodded his head.

" I came here to tell you that the Beast Hall will be taking the exams for promotion to True disciple tomorrow." He told her.

He was about to speak more when he saw something that made him open his eyes wide.

Chapter 267 - 267: Entering The Forest

He was about to speak more when he saw something that made him open his eyes wide.

"What the hell are you doing?" He asked with wide eyes as he looked ahead.

"What am I doing?" Zhiqing said with a smirk on her face.

She slowly walked towards Long Chen. Her hair was still wet and water droplets could be seen going down her fair body. The only thing she was wearing was a white towel that was wrapped around her body.

"Whatever. I'm here to tell you that tomorrow, I shall be participating in the true disciple exam. Fortunately, It shall be held inside the beast forest. After I'm done with my work inside the beast forest, We will leave." He informed them before he turned to leave.

"Hey, I've noticed that you have been trying to keep your physical distance from us? What is happening with you?"

Zhiqing said in a confused tone as she saw Long Chen leaving.

"Well, alright. I think I should tell you." He said as he turned back.

"The thing is that I can't have close contact with girls for the next few weeks. It's something for the better. I apologize in advance. After passing my trials, I'll tell you everything." He said with a smile.

"We can understand that you must have a reason. We'll wait for your explanation. Just for what it's worth, I think that I should tell you. You can tell us anything that's troubling you." Mingyu noticed the trouble on his face and said with concern.

"I promise I'll tell you everything after we leave the Beast Hall." He said as he left.

Unbeknownst to everyone, hundreds of flying beasts were coming towards the Beast Hall. A massive number that would have shocked a normal kingdom.

The day passed without much happening. Long Chen and the others simply attended a class and walked back and spent the rest of the day in cultivation.

The next day arrived and everyone got ready for what truly mattered.

All temporary disciples left their courtyard and left for the beast forest.

As Long Chen and the others got there, they were able to see 2 Elders already present at the entrance of the beast hall. One was Elder Jun. He was the Elder, who praised Long Chen before, while the other one was Elder Xin.

Hundreds of temporary disciples were standing in front of the Elders.

Mikan and a few other senior disciples were also standing with the elders.

"Is everyone here? It's time to start" Elder Xin said as she stepped forward.

"Let me tell you about the rules first. This test shall be on your taming knowledge. We will create an opening in the formation surrounding the beast forest and you will be allowed to enter. " She continued as he gazed at the faces of everyone present.

" The beast forest contains thousands of beasts and it spreads for miles. To succeed in the test, you need to tame a Beast. The beast shall at least be a spirit realm beast. Even if you can't tame a beast, as long as you are able to make it follow you outside willingly, it will be considered your win."She further said.

" The time limit is 4 days. You must... I repeat, you must exit the forest after 96 hours from the moment we open the entrance. After 96 hours, the opening will be closed and those who haven't left the forest will be killed by the formation. So make sure that you leave before the time is up. We don't wish for any accident to happen. "

" Also, Stay in the outer vicinity of the first. Don't go farther than 2 miles from the boundary of the formation. There are Earth Realm beasts that live deep in the forest. They might attack you. Alright, that's all you need to keep in mind. " Elder Xin finished explaining.

" Those who want to participate shall enter after we create the opening."

Elder Xin and Elder Jun stepped forward and placed their hands on the barrier. They both had a beautiful bracelet on their hands that started shining as soon as their hands touched the barrier.

The barrier that was transparent before, turned light blue in color. Everyone was finally able to see the barrier.

The barrier looked like a Dome that surrounded the whole forest.

A small door shaped opening appeared in front of the Elders.

The elders moved back.

"You can enter now." Elder Xin announced.

The disciples started moving forward as they entered the first one after another.

Ji Shan and Long Chen also walked forth.

"Best of luck, guys" Mikan wished them just before they entered.

"Thanks." They replied.

Soon, everyone had entered except Mingyu and Zhiqing.

Mikan walked up to them as she saw them just standing there.

"Won't you be taking part?" Mikan asked with a confused look on her face.

"We won't be taking part." Mingyu replied.

Long Chen and Ji Shan entered the forest together.

"Do you want to work together?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen as he looked at him.

"I think it would be better for us to work alone." Long Chen said.

" Alright then. If you say so" Ji Shan replied.

He walked deeper into the forest as he left Ji Shan behind.

Long Chen continued walking deeper and deeper inside the forest.

'Sun Destroying Condor must be residing in the depths of the forest' Long Chen thought as he kept moving inside the forest without thinking about anything else.

His main target was to tame the Sun Destroying Condor and leave the sect. Everything else came after that.

He completely ignored the warning of the elders as he left three outer vicinity of the forest and entered deeper.

The forest was simply too big. It had taken him half a day just to leave the outer region of the forest and entered the inner region.

"Heavenly Demon Wings." He muttered as two wings appeared behind his back. He started flying inside as he used the wings and his divine sense simultaneously.

As he was flying, he did face a few flying beasts that attacked him out of nowhere. Fortunately, these were just initial Earth Realm beasts thus he didn't have much trouble.

Chapter 268 - 268: New Beast

As he was flying, he did face a few flying beasts that attacked him out of nowhere. Fortunately, these were just initial Earth Realm beasts thus he didn't have much trouble.

"The Beast Hall is kinda amazing. I never expected to see so many varieties of beasts inside."

His Qi was getting depleted, thus he decided to travel through the foot.

He was walking through the dense forest when he noticed a 9th stage Earth Realm beast running towards him.

Long Chen recognized that beast as a Dark Horned Armored Rhino. The dark beast was quite fierce and known for his impenetrable defense and incredible strength.

It was known as one of the most dangerous beasts as it was able to defeat a cultivator that was a few realms higher than him.

Long Chen brought out his King's sword as he teleported near the dark horned armored rhino.

Long Chen swung his sword at the rhino.

Clank

The sword struck the steel-like armor of the rhino and a metallic sound was heard.

The sword did manage to cut through the rhino's skin, but the wound wasn't too deep.

"Your defense is quite good." Long Chen muttered as he jumped back and dodged the attack of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

The rhino roared in anger as he ran towards Long Chen.

Long Chen was ready to dodge the attack, but he felt like his feet were frozen.

He noticed the blood-red eyes of the rhino that were looking at him without blinking as he ran.

Long Chen again used teleport as he appeared behind the rhino.

He could finally feel like he was free to move.

"That must be his skill, It can bind me to a place. Quite an incredible skill... but it won't save you. " Long Chen muttered as he used teleport once more and appeared on top of the rhino.

He had just managed to plunge his sword inside the rhino, but before he could thrust it deeper, Its skin started burning. Long Chen reacted fast and immediately jumped off the rhino, leaving his sword behind.

He was stunned to see that the dark horned armored rhino was like a beast covered in flame as it ran towards Long Chen.

"Interesting... I don't think I've heard about a dark horned armored rhino possessing this ability. It must be because you have a mixed bloodline." Long Chen fell on deep thoughts.

" Heavenly Demon Wings! " Long Chen muttered

"Let's try something new then." He muttered softly as he gazed towards the sky.

He slowly raised his hand towards the sky.

"Thunder... Blade" He muttered softly.

Long Chen was able to see the sky getting dark as it was covered by clouds. The light started flickering amidst the clouds. Everyone was able to hear the loud roar of the thunder.

A thunderbolt left the clouds and came down like the punishment from heaven.

The thunderbolt was a natural force, thus it easily passed through the barrier and entered the beast forest.

The thunderbolt fell on the handle of the King's Sword and through the blade of the sword, that was plunged into the dark horned armored rhino, it penetrated into the rhino's body.

The powerful shock coursed through the rhino's body that made it roar in pain.

It didn't stop at one... Another thunderbolt left the clouds and struck the sword. One after another, 5 thunderbolts fell on the sword and penetrated the Dark Horned Armored Rhino's body.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino fell to the ground. Its body was completely paralyzed and its heartbeat was weak. It was as if it would die at any moment.

Long Chen came down to the ground as his wings disappeared.

He looked quite tired and most of his Qi was depleted as he used Thunder Blade so many times.

He breathed for a moment before he stepped towards the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

"I can't help but praise you. You are still alive even after facing so much. Your strength and your determination, they are all praiseworthy." Long Chen stood in front of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino as he spoke.

"Looking at your condition, I don't think you will live longer. How about you become my tamed beast? You will be completely healed. I really like your character. We can face the world together if you join me. Isn't it better than dying?" Long Chen said in a caring tone. He walked forward and pulled his sword out of the Rhino.

"I'm going to go forward and do it. What happens next, depends on you." Long Chen said as he cut his finger slightly from the same sword.

His finger was bleeding.

He extended his hand towards the Dark Horned Armored Rhino's forehead and carved a pattern, with his blood, that was taught to him by Xun.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino just gazed at Long Chen's face. It didn't look like it was resisting.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino's body started shining brightly. It shone for around 10 minutes, which was much longer than it took for Cati.

Long Chen couldn't help but wonder if something was wrong.

Just as he was about to call Xun to ask her, the Dark Horned Armored Rhino stopped shining.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino came into view and just as Long Chen had expected, its wounds were healed.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino looked much better than before. Its armored skin looked even more powerful compared to previously. Long Chen couldn't help but wonder how strong it must be now.

He was still looking at him when he felt like a link was established between him.

A few memories appeared in his mind that belonged to the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

"Strange... You have no memories of your parents or your young life. Your memories begin in this forest. Before that everything was blank. That's quite strange. " Long Chen muttered as he looked at the beast in confusion.

"Anyways, Let's give you a name." He muttered as a smile appeared on his face.

Chapter 269 - 269: Facing The Sun Destroying Condor

"Anyways, Let's give you a name." He muttered as a smile appeared on his face.

"Your defense is the strongest and your strength is fierce as well. You are just like a war machine. From now on, you shall be known as Auro." He said with a smile.

The Dark Horned Profound Rhino didn't have much of a reaction. It looked neither happy nor angry.

"Alright Auro, Let's go. We need to find the Sun Swallowing Condor. After we're done, I'll send you to meet your older brother and sister." Long Chen smilingly said.

Long Chen stepped forward and climbed on top of Auro.

Auro was quite big in size. It was almost twice the size of a normal rhino back on Earth.

Long Chen told Auro a direction to move. Long Chen finally had a clue about where he can find the Sun Destroying Condor.

He had managed to see a glimpse of the Sun Destroying Condor in Auro's memories. He wasn't sure if Sun Destroying Condor would still be there. He could only hope that it was still there. He didn't have much time to waste in search as he only had four days.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino looked big and heavy, but it was quite fast. No one would be able to guess that it was so fast after seeing the sheer size and weight of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino passed through the dense forest without any difficulty. Long Chen was stunned to see that no beasts dared to obstruct their path.

Most probably because they didn't want to face the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

The rest of the journey was quite comfortable.

After 4 hours of travel, Long Chen finally reached a lake. It was the same lake he wanted to go to.

"Thanks for the work, big guy. Go have a rest inside the beast region. Don't forget to greet the others when you meet there. They'll be your family from now on." Long Chen said with a smile as he sent the Dark Horned Armored Rhino inside the beast region of his Ancient Ring.

Long Chen stepped towards the lake as he used his divine senses. He finally felt something.

A smile appeared on his face as he saw a beautiful condor lying on the embankment of the lake.

It was a pitch-black Condor with a few red patterns on its wings. It looked much like a vulture, but it was way larger.

Long Chen had seen many flying beasts, but he still felt like this Sun Destroying Condor was the largest flying beast he had seen. He felt like the Sun Destroying Condor could easily accommodate 4-5 people.

It had a wingspan of 33 meters. The Sun Destroying Condor has its eyes closed and looked like it was sleeping peacefully.

Long Chen stepped towards the condor softly. He didn't have his sword in his hand as he didn't want to give off the attacking vibe. He wanted to try taming the beast without fighting first. Although the chances were low, he still wished to try.

The Sun Destroying Condor was a 9th stage Earth Realm beast and it was known for its fast speed.

The Sun Destroying Condor was able to use wind essence in its attacks that made it a tough opponent to face.

Long Chen was almost near the Sun Destroyed Condor. There were only 15 meters of distance between them. Unfortunately, it was at that moment, the Sun Destroying Condor sensed his presence and opened its eyes.

Its eyes were sky blue that is quite contradictory to its black feathers.

He gazed at Long Chen in a threatening manner.

Before Long Chen could speak a single word, the Sun Destroying Condor flew in the air.

"Sorry, but I can't let you escape!" Long Chen muttered as he saw the Sun Destroying Condor flying in the air.

"Heavenly Demon Wings!" He said softly as two wings appeared behind his back.

He also flew up in the air.

" Don't be scared! I don't want to harm you. I just want you to join us on our journey and be my tamed beast! " He let out loud, but the Sun Destroying Condor didn't seem to care for his words.

"Eeeee" The Sun Destroying Condor had a loud screech as he flew towards Long Chen.

Its speed was so fast that even Long Chen was stunned for a short moment.

He dodged to the side, but the Sun Destroying Condor's wings still managed to scratch his arms.

His arms were bleeding. Thankfully, the wound wasn't too deep.

"Looks like you want to do it the hard way." He muttered in an annoyed tone as he brought out his King's Sword.

A powerful sword aura spread in the atmosphere as soon as the sword came out of the storage ring.

The Sun Destroying Condor seemed to have noticed the aura and felt quite threatened.

"Eeeee" It gave another screech as it used its wind essence to attack.

One after another, Wind blades kept attacking Long Chen.

Since the wing blades were completely made of wings, Long Chen had no choice but to dodge the attacks.

Unfortunately, the Sun Destroying Condor was flying outside the range of his teleport, thus he couldn't teleport near the Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroyed Condor was also quite clever as it looked like it was trying to maintain the distance and attack from long range.

Long Chen was now regretting his decision to take out the King's sword. It had alerted the Sun Destroying Condor and made it keep its distance.

Long Chen was struggling to do anything. Every time he moved near the Sun Destroying Condor, it moved further back.

The Sun Destroying Condor had intensified its attacks on Long Chen.

There were tens of Wind Blades attacking him at once.

Long Chen decided to use his last resort.

The Law of Illusion!

His eyes turned somewhat white and it seemed like a mist had covered his eyes.

Chapter 270 - 270: Battle Continues

Long Chen's eyes turned somewhat white and it seemed like a mist had covered his eyes.

The Sun Destroying Condor was flying at some distance from Long Chen and kept attacking him.

It was attacking him when Long Chen suddenly disappeared. The Sun Destroying Condor flew higher in the sky as he looked around, but he couldn't see Long Chen.

Long Chen used his law of Illusion to make himself invisible in front of Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroying Condor wasn't able to see Long Chen, still, it kept attacking madly in every direction.

Fortunately, Long Chen was able to dodge all these attacks.

Long Chen had also placed his King's sword back in the Ancient ring so that the Sun Destroying Condor couldn't find him through the sword aura.

He stealthily flew closer to the Sun Destroying Condor and was just about to get to him when he heard another loud screech.

He felt a sense of danger and immediately teleported from a good position and appeared 30 meters to his right.

"Such a bad running," Long Chev cursed as he looked towards the Soaring Eagle that had attacked him.

The Sun Destroying Condor looked like it recovered from his law of Illusion as well. It was finally able to see Long Chen.

"Frickin limitations of the law." Long Chen cursed as he dodged the attacks.

His control of the law of Illusion was in the initial stage and his Illusion Skill had a big limitation.

To cast his Illusion, he had to be looking at the person he wanted to cast it on. As soon as he takes his eyes off of that person, the Illusion would break.

Long Chen had cast his Illusion on the Sun Destroying Condor but the Soaring Eagle was still able to see him.

It came out of nowhere as it attacked him.

As soon as he shifted his focus, the illusion broke.

He again brought out his King's sword.

The Soaring Eagle looked like it wasn't as smart as the Sun Destroying Condor as it fought in close rank.

It used its steel-like wings to attack Long Chen.

Long Chen was getting quite annoyed as it kept getting attacked again and again.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: third form- destruction!" He roared loudly as he swung his sword.

The Soaring Eagle was flying towards Long Chen when it felt dangerous. It tried to change its direction, but it was too late. The attack collided with him.

Fortunately, the Soaring Eagle had managed to slightly change the direction towards the right. It did manage to survive, but its left-wing was cut off.

It screeched in pain as the Soaring Eagle fell to the ground.

Long Chen didn't go after the Soaring Eagle and looked in the direction of the Sun Destroying Condor, but he was stunned to see that the Sun Destroying Condor was flying away.

"Hey, stop!" Long Chen yelled out loud as he followed the Sun Destroying Condor, but his speed somewhat lacked in comparison as he had used most of his Qi in the fight.

Long Chen followed the Sun Destroying Condor for quite some time before he landed on the ground.

His Qi reserves were 90 percent empty at the moment. He knew that he wouldn't be able to catch up to the Sun Destroying Condor and even if at last he did manage to catch up, he would have no Qi to catch up.

"It escaped. If that Soaring Eagle hadn't interfered, I would have tamed the Sun Destroying Condor by now."

"The Sun Destroying Condor is quite clever, I must say. It knew exactly when to retreat. I remember, Orion did the same thing. Only Auro was the one

who didn't try to run." Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the direction the Condor ran off to.

Long Chen was devastated, but he didn't feel defeated. He knew that he still had the opportunity. There were still 3 days.

Long Chen was somewhat tired as well. He called out for Auro.

His tamed Dark Horned Armored Rhino came out of the Ancient Ring.

"Did you meet Orion and others?" Long Chen asked with a smile.

Auro nodded his head.

"Good. Well, I might need your help again. The situation here didn't go as planned and the Sun Destroying Condor escaped." Long Chen said as if he was explaining to the beast.

If someone saw it, they would wonder if he has gone mad as he was talking to a beast like it was a human, but to Long Chen, it was completely different. He felt a sense of closeness to his beasts.

He didn't know if it was the same for everyone or just him, but he didn't care.

He climbed on top of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino and ordered it to move in the direction of the Sun Destroying Condor.

He knew that he wouldn't be able to catch up to it, but he was sure that the Sun Destroying Condor would come down to rest after it was in a safe zone.

He sat on top of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino in a meditative position as he began recovering his Qi.

On the other side of the Beast Forest, Ji Shan was engaged in a battle of his own.

He was fighting with a Dark Moon Horse.

The Dark Moon Horse was a 5th stage Earth Realm beast, thus it should have been quite easy for Ji Shan, but surprisingly he was having a lot of difficulty.

No matter what he tried, the Dark Moon Horse was able to dodge all his attacks.

Even his Talismans were proving to be useless.

"You're quite special, aren't you?" He muttered with a smile on his face.

" I have decided! No matter what, I will make you my tamed beast! Even if I have to fight you for the days and three nights, I'll make it happen! " He let out in a determination filled voice.

"Whitey!" He called out as he tapped his bags twice.

Chapter 271 - 271: Destiny Of Long Chen

The Soul Devouring Wolf came out of the Beast Bag of Ji Shan.

Ji Shan and the Soul Devouring Wolf both gazed at the Dark Moon Horse as they got ready to attack.

They were just about to attack when they heard a cry of a beast.

"Hmm? " Ji Shan frowned as he looked back.

"A profound bear?" He muttered as he saw a bear running towards him.

"Whitey, You take care of the Profound Bear, I'll handle the Dark Moon Horse."

Ji Shan had just spoken, but immediately after, all colors disappeared from his face.

He saw more than 50 different kinds of beast coming after the profound bear.

It didn't look like they were chasing the bear, instead, it looked like a beast horde that was coming towards them.

Ji Shan gave up on fighting as he climbed on top of the Soul Devouring Wolf and ordered it to run.

The Soul Devouring Wolf started running. The direction it was running in was the one that led to the depths of the beast forest.

It was already night and Long Chen had recovered his Qi, but he still hadn't caught up to the Sun Destroying Condor.

He decided to give rest to the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

He sent the Dark Horned Armored Rhino back inside his Ancient Ring. He looked for two trees that were nearby as he properly placed his hammock in mid-air, tied to the branches of two tall trees that are quite close to each other.

Long Chen lay down as he closed his eyes.

"The cracks on the heart demon cocoon are increasing. If I'm not wrong, I most probably have a week more. I can't wait that long." He muttered to himself as he used his consciousness to see inside his martial Space.

" After I leave this place, I will tell Mingyu and Zhiqing everything. I will tell them all about my heart demon and what I might become in the future. I'll leave it up to them to decide what they want to do. This thing is most probably going to be permanent after all."

"Although I won't let the heart demon affect my decisions and my mind, I can't say for sure if my resolve won't be defeated."

Sigh

" I wish I could have brought Xue and Mei with me as well. After I make my Martial World, I might be able to take them with me. Mother and grandfather as well"

" Can't wait to see the reaction on their faces when I go back with father, though." Long Chen muttered as a smile appeared on his face.

He was already imagining a scenario where he had freed his father and was back home with him.

"There are so many things for me to do. I wonder if I'll be able to do them all. There's a certain destiny as well that Xun talked about. Don't know where it might take me. Hopefully, everything will turn out good in the end." Long Chen said softly.

In a dark space inside the ring, Xun was sitting there alone. She was able to hear everything Long Chen was saying.

Initially, she was smiling, but her smile disappeared as soon as she heard Long Chen talk about his destiny.

She couldn't help but gaze upwards with a somewhat sad look in her eyes.

"Your destiny... I know the general direction it is supposed to take, but in the end, it all depends on you. Will it be similar to Tian Shen, or will you carve out a different path. It shall all depend on you. Only time will tell." She said softly.

The night passed away just as silently as it had arrived.

The sun was high in the sky and the sunlight was falling directly on Long Chen's face.

He slowly opened his eyes as he woke up.

He sat up and stretched his arms as he yawned.

He kept everything back as he got down.

Long Chen called Auro again.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino came out of the Beast Region inside his Ancient Ring.

"You're looking quite fresh. I wish I could go inside the Beast Region as well. The Qi and the resources are so amazing. Anyways, let's go. We need to find that Condor no matter what." He said with a smile as he got on top of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino continued on the journey ahead towards the depths of the forest.

Long Chen had already hidden his aura so that no beast would be able to sense him.

Since they could only sense Auro, Long Chen was sure that they wouldn't bother to attack.

Long Chen had spread his divine sense as he continued ahead.

Another day passed without anything to show for. Long Chen didn't find the Sun Destroying Condor.

Long Chen cultivated in the night as he sent the Dark Horned Armored Rhino back inside his Ancient Ring to rest.

A new day arrived and ended in a similar fashion.

Long Chen was quite tired of using his divine sense all day long, but he hasn't seen the Sun Destroying Condor.

Just like this, three days have passed. Only one day remains before the Beast Forest will be locked inside the barrier again and the formation will become active and kill any human that is still inside the forest.

Long Chen didn't want to be here when that happened, so he only had one day to find and tame Sun Destroying Condor.

Fortunately, on the fourth day, he did manage to see the Sun Destroying Condor.

It was evening. Only a few hours were left before the formation would be closed. The Sun Destroying Condor looked like it was sleeping.

Long Chen had decided that he would not waste this chance.

He used teleport three times in succession as he appeared directly beside the Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroying Condor sensed the danger as he tried to fly away, but a fist landed on its back that made it fall back to the ground.

"Do you think I'll let you run away again?" Long Chen muttered.

Chapter 272 - 272: Decided To Die

"Do you think I'll let you run away again?" Long Chen muttered.

The Sun Destroying Condor gave a large cry as tens of Wind blades attacked Long Chen.

Long Chen couldn't help but dodge the attacks in a hurry.

The Sun Destroying Condor utilized the opportunity as it flew in the air.

"Not again." Long Chen called out as two wings made of pure Qi appeared behind his back. He teleported as close to the Sun Destroying Condor as it could and flew into the air.

The distance between them was only 20 meters and the Sun Destroying Condor kept attacking Long Chen with the wind blades, but Long Chen utilized his teleportation as he kept appearing near the Sun Destroying Condor before it could increase the distance.

The Sun Destroying Condor looked like it was getting angry.

An 8th stage Earth Realm beast was having difficulty when facing a kid.

Long Chen and the beast Condor colliding with each other.

A wind blade appeared near Long Chen and was about to strike him. He couldn't dodge as no matter where he dodged, the wind blade would hit him.

He couldn't use teleport either, as he had already used it too much during the day and he was approaching the limit.

In that instant, his eyes changed color as he utilized the law of space skill.

A small portal appeared between him and the wind blade.

Not just one portal, ten more opened up in front of other wind blades.

The wind blades entered the portal.

The other end of the small portals opened near the Sun Destroying Condor.

Long Chen felt like he had the victory in his palms, but the reality turned out to be further.

The wind blades were not the condor's only ability. A spherical shaped barrier covered the Sun Destroying Condor.

The barrier was entirely made of dense winds.

The Wind blades struck the wind barrier and just dissolved in the barrier.

"You're better than I expected." Long Chen said with a smile.

He used his last teleport as he utilized the opportunity when the Sun Destroying Condor had limited visibility because of the dense wind barrier.

He teleported above the Sun Destroying Condor as he raised his sword high in the sky.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Third Form- destruction!" He let out softly as he swung his sword downwards.

An arc of blood-red light left the sword and advanced towards the wind barrier.

The arc of light cut through the barrier with ease and entered inside.

Long Chen heard the loud cry of the Sun Destroying Condor.

The wind barrier disappeared as the Sun Destroying Condor became visible.

There was a deep sword wound on its back which was bleeding heavily.

The Sun Destroying Condor started falling towards the ground and with a loud thud, it crashed on the ground.

Long Chen came down to the ground and landed near the Sun Destroying Condor.

His beautiful Heavenly Demon Wings disappeared as he started walking towards the Sun Destroying Condor.

"Don't worry, big guy. You'll be all healed after we establish a contract between us. " Long Chen said as he stopped near the Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroying Condor looked towards him with hate in its eyes. He tried standing up, but it found it difficult to even move.

Long Chen cut his thumb lightly with his sword.

His thumb started bleeding. He extended his hand towards the forehead of the Sun Destroying Condor and carved out the symbol that was taught to him by Xun.

He carved out the symbol and waited for the Sun Destroying Condor to be tamed.

Time kept passing, but the process was quite different. The Sun Destroying Condor never started shining, instead, it looked like its health was worsening.

The Sun Destroying Condor's breath was weakened. Long Chen could feel the situation was going the opposite way. If it kept going on like this, the Sun Destroying Condor will die.

"Xun! " He called out with a worried look on his face.

Xun appeared beside him and looked at the Sun Destroying Condor.

"What is happening? Why isn't it working?" Long Chen asked her.

"It's not working because the Sun Destroying Condor doesn't want it to work. It has decided to die instead of being tamed. I don't know why it's so forceful, but It's what's happening." Xun responded.

Long Chen was shocked as he heard the reason.

Long Chen looked at the Sun Destroying Condor as he tried to convince it.

"Don't oppose, please. You will die. I promise I'm not going to make you do anything that'll put your life in danger. You won't be a servant, but a partner. Please let the process be successful." Long Chen said in a concerned tone, but the Sun Destroying Condor didn't respond.

It looked like it wasn't able to hear Long Chen's words.

"Don't bother. Since it has decided to take such a big step to prevent himself from being tamed, I don't think your words alone can sway him." Xun said as she shook her head.

" Is there no way to stop it from dying?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Nope. You can't even cancel the taming once it has started. It's either the Sun Destroying Condor will accept to be tamed or die. I think we all know what it has decided." Xun spoke as she looked at Long Chen.

Long Chen had not given up on hope as he kept talking to the Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroying Condor's breathing was so weak, it looked like it would die at any moment.

Long Chen didn't notice it, but it was at that moment, a small speck of light came out of his Ancient Ring.

The small speck of light landed in front of Long Chen and took the shape of a small beast.

It was Little Snow, the Ethereal Moon Cat that came out of the ancient egg.

Long Chen was stunned as he saw little Snow sitting in front of him.

Far Far away, chaos had started as soon as Little Snow came out of the storage ring.

"Your Majesty, The signals of the 10th God Beast have appeared again. " Someone came running in a large hall and spoke.

Chapter 273 - 273: 10th God Beast

"Your Majesty, The signals of the 10th God Beast have appeared again. " Someone came running in a large hall and spoke.

A person was sitting on a throne. It looked similar to a human, but it was clear that the person was not human.

The person had white skin with black stripes all over his body. Instead of fingers, he had sharp claws. His eyes looked somewhat orange.

He looked like a humanoid version of the legendary beast white tiger.

The person heard the report of the informant and excitedly stood up.

"What? You finally found the 10th God Beast? Tell me where it is!" He looked towards the informant and asked.

" We... We don't know yet. The energy signature is too weak. It might take 7-8 hours to track it." The informant replied.

" Our Diviners are using everything they have to decrease the time and find the 10th god beast as soon as they can, Your Majesty." The informant further said as he looked down. He didn't dare look at the person who was sitting on the throne.

"Alright. Inform me when you have the location. We must find the 10th God Beast before others." The man said as he sat back on the throne.

" Yes, Your Majesty," The informant said as he turned back and left.

The man kept sitting on his throne as he fell into deep thought.

"A god beast that appeared out of nowhere... A beast whose birth star is shining brighter than all 9 God Beasts, just what is happening here? Is this the sign of a massive change that's about to come?"

"What's the guardian doing about all this? Just where had he disappeared to? Since the 10th God Beast star appeared, he's nowhere to be found. It's like he has been swallowed by the space." He muttered to himself.

"Your Majesty, the Master of Black Tortoise Clan is here. He wishes to see you." A guard came and informed the man.

" What's that old turtle doing here? Let him enter." The man ordered the guard.

" Yes, your Majesty. " The guard bowed his head and left.

Ten minutes after he left, the doors of the hall opened again as someone entered.

It looked like an old man, but what made him different was the big shell that was on his back.

He was the humanoid form of a Black Tortoise and the master of the Black Tortoise Clan.

The Black Tortoise master looked like an ordinary 80-year-old man if one was to ignore the shell on his back.

"Old Turtle Beifang, Why are you here?" The white-skinned man gazed at the old man and asked.

Generally, no one dared to call the Black Tortoise Clan master as Old Turtle, let alone call him by his name. He was a God Beast after all. But the person who was talking to him was no ordinary person either.

The man sitting on the throne was the Master of the White Tiger Clan. He was considered as one of the strongest God Beasts.

Although the God Beasts never fought for rankings, everyone knew the general strength of the other.

Based on the common understanding, it was said that the White Tiger King Bai Hu was in the top 3 at least, if they were to rank all 9 God Beasts.

"Can't this old turtle come to see an old friend for no reason whatsoever? " Black Tortoise Clan master Beifang said with a smile on his face as he stepped forward.

"You can come to meet me at any time. It's just strange since, in the last thousand years, you never came to me for no reason." White Tiger King Bai Hu said with an interested smile on his face.

"You're partially right. I did come for a reason. I think you might have guessed it already. It's about something we're all concerned about. The 10th God Beast." Master Beifang said.

"If anyone can find it, it's your clan and the azure dragon clan. You both are more knowledgeable in tracking."He continued.

" Hahaha, I get it. Since you're amidst a fight with the Azure Dragon, you can't go to him. So that's why you came to me." White Tiger King Bai Hu started laughing as he heard the words of the Black Tortoise Clan master.

"Azure Dragon is too arrogant. I don't like seeing his face. " Black Tortoise Clan master said with a smile.

" Anyways, Did you find anything about the 10th beast? " He asked the White Tiger King.

" Not yet." White Tiger King replied.

He didn't mention anything about the Energy Signature they have located.

"Too bad. I did hear that the Azure Dragon Clan and the Phoenix Clan are close to finding the 10th God Beast. I don't know how true the rumors are though. " He sighed in disappointment as he spoke.

" Huh, I believe those are nothing but the rumors. How can they find the 10th beast before us? " The White Tiger King smiled as he replied.

He didn't take the words of the old tortoise seriously as he was confident that in a few hours, he would have the location of the 10th God Beast himself.

"It's such a history-defining event though. Since the beginning, there have only been 9 God Clans. And only one God beast from each god clan can appear at a time. I never would have expected that I would see a 10th one in my lifetime. " The Black Tortoise said as he looked out the window.

The throne room of the White Tiger King was made in such a way that the 10 God beast stars could be seen from the window.

"I will take my leave now. It was good meeting you again Bai Hu" The Black Tortoise Clan master turned back to leave.

" Hey? Did you find your grandkid's location? " White Tiger King Bai Hu asked abruptly.

" Not yet. He did have an artifact that can hide his location, so it's going to be quite tough finding him. But I do believe that he went to the mortal world. " Black Tortoise Clan master said with a disappointed look on his face.

Chapter 274 - 274: Tracking The Beast

" Not yet. He did have an artifact that can hide his location, so it's going to be quite tough finding him. But I do believe that he went to the mortal world. " Black Tortoise Clan master said with a disappointed look on his face.

"That kid is so much trouble. I hope that he won't destroy a planet or anything. I can only hope for the best though. We'll keep trying to find him."He continued.

"What about it daughter? Is she still in her secluded cultivation?" He asked the White Tiger King.

"Yup. That girl is a cultivation maniac. She doesn't even have time to come see me. It's good though. Strength is what matters after all." White Tiger King replied.

He couldn't help but smile a little as he thought of his daughter's temper.

"Well, She's your daughter after all. Anyways, It's gonna be tough to find her a husband. I don't think there would be anyone in the White Tiger Clan who isn't afraid of her." Black Tortoise Clan master said with a smile as he gazed at White Tiger King.

White Tiger King couldn't help but laugh out loud as he heard the words of Black Tortoise Clan master.

"Hahaha... True. She's a fierce little tigress. Although I don't think that we have a man worthy enough for my daughter, I do have my eyes on a few youngsters. We'll see what happens next" He responded.

"Azure dragon princess has a similar temperament. It would be interesting to see which girl is the strongest when their time of inheritance comes. Anyways, I delayed too much. I should really go now. Best of luck Tiger King" Black Tortoise Clan master said as he turned back and started waiting towards the exit.

Back in the beast forest, Long Chen was worried as he gazed at the dying Sun Destroying Condor.

He couldn't help but notice Little Snow who had come out of the storage ring.

Before he could even ask anything, he was stunned to see that Little Snow walked straight up to the dying Sun Destroying Condor.

Little Snow gazed in the determined eyes of the Sun Destroying Condor with a perplexed look on her face. It seemed like she was wondering why the Sun Destroying Condor had decided to die.

Little Snow's eyes started shining in a pale yellow color as she stepped forward and placed her tiny claws on the forehead of the Sun Destroying Condor, right above the symbol carved out by Long Chen.

Long Chen was standing there silently with a weird look on his face.

It seemed like he wanted to say something, but he didn't want to interfere in whatever little Snow was doing. Although he didn't understand it, he felt like she was doing something right.

On the other hand, Xun was observing every small movement of little snow. There was a frown on her face.

It didn't even last for 5 minutes before things started changing.

The Sun Destroying Condor's tired-looking eyes finally gained back the zest they once possessed. Its breathing started improving.

Finally its body started shining.

"It's working." Long Chen let out with a smile on his face.

Little snow walked back to Long Chen.

"I don't know what you did, but you really helped me a lot. Thank you so much." Long Chen picked her up in his arms as he hugged her tightly.

"Uwu" Little Snow looked happy at being able to help him, though she herself didn't understand what she did.

It was as if her mind had turned blank and she came out subconsciously and did everything.

She didn't care though. She was quite happy with the result.

Long Chen released little snow after some time.

Little Snow didn't stay outside for longer and went back inside the Ancient Ring.

"Little Snow seems to be enjoying the beast region of the Ancient Ring. I can't blame her though. The resources there are quite amazing." Long Chen smiled as he saw Little Snow enter the ring.

Xun was still lost in some thought.

Back in a faraway place, the White Tiger King was still sitting on his throne.

Sometime in his huge palace, three robed people were sitting in a triangle above a mysterious formation.

Above their head was something that seemed like a living painting of the starry sky.

All their eyes were shining in white light. They were all combining their powers to locate the 10th god beast.

There was a serious expression on their faces as they tried to locate the 10th god beast in such a big galaxy.

In an instant, their concentration was broken as they coughed out a mouthful of blood.

"What just happened? We all had the trace of the 10th god beast, but the energy signature disappeared out of nowhere. How is that possible!" One of the three dark-robed persons said in a weak tone as he tried to control the internal injury he suffered.

"It's just like before. We can't see any trace of it now. Just what can be so powerful that it can block us? Did the god beast realize that we were tracking him? Even then, he shouldn't be able to hide his energy signature. It's a god beast after all."

"It might be his special power. Just like the other god beasts have specific powers of their own. "

"Whatever might be the reason, the mission has failed. We must inform His Majesty of this peculiarity.

All three of them stood up and left the mysterious room.

Back in the beast forest, the shining of the Sun Destroying Condor had stopped.

As soon as the light disappeared, Long Chen was able to see the Sun Destroying Condor.

All of its wounds have healed and it looked much better than before.

Long Chen could feel a link being established between him and the Sun Destroying Condor.

Long Chen was able to see some core memories of the Sun Destroying Condor which finally made him understand why it was so against the taming.

Chapter 275 - 275: Under Attack

Long Chen was able to see some core memories of the Sun Destroying Condor which finally made him understand why it was so against the taming.

Apparently, when the Sun Destroying Condor was young, it was a tamed beast of a person.

Surprisingly, the person was the son of the Sect Master of Thunder Giant Sect.

The son of the Sect Master was a little ruthless and let out his frustration on the Sun Destroying Condor quite a lot of time.

Since the Sun Destroying Condor was quite young and weak at that time, the master tortured him a lot whenever it was defeated in a battle.

Fortunately, the master was assassinated one day and the Sun Destroying Condor was freed of the Contract.

The taming contract worked in quite a mysterious way. One of those was that whenever a master was killed, the tamed beast would be released as long as the tamed beast never disobeyed its master's orders during its lifetime. Thus the Sun Destroying Condor gained its freedom and flew away.

It landed in the beast forest of the Beast Hall and made its home here. Although quite a lot of people tried taming it, but they weren't successful since the Sun Destroying Condor's determination was so strong, the contract was never successful on it.

Unfortunately, it met Long Chen who had the special bloodline that overpowered it. No matter how much it tried, it couldn't break the contract. It had finally decided that it was better to die than be tamed again.

Long Chen was lost in his thoughts when he saw the Sun Destroying Condor falling to the ground. It lost consciousness.

Long Chen ran towards it, but he was stunned to see various blood red patterns appear on its body.

"What's happening?" He looked towards Xun and asked.

"Don't worry, it's something good. I think the Sun Destroying Condor is going through an evolution. Although it's quite rare, it still happens. It must have the bloodline purity might be increasing or maybe it'll evolve into something else. Whatever the case, I don't think it's going to wake up anytime soon. Let it

sleep in the Beast Region of the ring. It will be helpful for it." Xun replied to Long Chen.

Long Chen listened to her words and immediately sent the Sun Destruction Condor inside his ancient ring.

"Ah... Long Chen. Aren't you forgetting something?" Long Chen was lost in thoughts, when Xun's voice got him out of his daze.

"What?" He turned towards her and asked.

"The time! Four days are about to be over. If you don't leave soon, the formation will close." She reminded him.

Long Chen remembered about it and all color from his disappeared. He remembered the words of the elder that once the formation closed, the humans who are still inside the beast forest will be killed by the formation.

"Oh fuck, There's not enough time. Even if I fly, I won't be back in time." Long Chen let out with a worried look on his face.

"Looks like I have no choice." He said as he looked towards a certain direction.

"I just hope that the portal won't open in front of someone." He let out with a wry smile on his face as he started using his law of space.

He had decided to use Dimensional Crack. A skill that could immediately take him anywhere working a 200 km range. Its limit has increased since his last breakthrough in comprehension.

Unfortunately, the still can only be used once in 24 hours. Also, he can only go to places he has personally seen before. Also, where the spatial crack opens in his destination is not under his control.

His eyes turned starry black as he made a strange gesture with his hand.

A Spatial Crack appeared in front of him which widened in size until it was wide enough for Long Chen to enter.

Long Chen entered the spatial crack.

A different spatial crack opened 100 meters away from the exit.

Fortunately, he came out in a heavily covered place and no one saw him.

Long Chen left the plane and hurriedly walked towards the exit.

Outside the beast forest, most of the people who entered had come out. Even Ji Shan was out. He was standing near a black horse that he had successfully managed to take inside the beast forest after much effort.

"Only 2 minutes are left and he's still not out." Zhiqing thought with a worried look on her face.

The opening made in the portal slowly started closing.

"Elder! Long Chen is still inside! You can't close the opening!" Zhiqing let out loud as she saw the portal closing.

"Sorry kid, it's not under our control anymore. This formation is made by the first Sect Master. We can only open it for 4 days every year, as for its closing, we have no control over that.

The Elder in charge of the beast forest shook her head lightly as she replied.

Zhiqing was about to say something else when a person finally came out of the small opening in the formation that way almost closed.

Long Chen came out of the Beast forest as he breathed in relief.

"Alright. Since everyone is out now, let's begin with the results." Elder Xin stepped forward as she asked.

"Those who managed to take a beast come forward and bring your beast out. We will confirm if they are indeed from the beast forest and give you your permanent disciple badge." She said as she glanced over everyone.

Her words worked like charm as everyone started showing off the beast they tamed.

Even Ji Shan showed the beast and got his permanent disciple badge.

"Long Chen? What about you? Did you not tame a beast?" Elder Jun looked towards Long Chen and asked.

"I..." Long Chen didn't want to show his beast as he was planning to leave the place. He had no intention of becoming a true disciple here.

But before he could say anything, He heard a loud blast.

"We're under attack!" Elder Jun looked in a certain direction as he said in a heavy tone.

Chapter 276 - 276: Massive Force

One after another, people kept hearing loud blasts.

"We're under attack!" Elder Jun looked in a certain direction as he said in a heavy tone.

"Elder Xin, Take the kids to somewhere safe. I'll see who dares to attack the beast hall." Elder Jun told Elder Xin as he brought out his flying beast.

It was a Dark Winged Sparrow that looked nothing like a sparrow on earth. It had two black feathered wings and two devil-like horns on its head.

It had a wingspan of 4 meters and despite being called a sparrow, it was just as big as the flying eagle that Long Chen faced back in the beast forest.

Elder Jun was about to climb on the Dark Winged Sparrow but he stopped abruptly.

He brought out a transmission talisman.

He probably received an urgent communication from someone.

"What the hell! What do you mean Hall Master is poisoned? How can this happen at a time like this! Wait right there, I'll be there soon." He was shocked as he heard the message. He replied to the message.

Elder Xin was shocked as well when she heard about the Hall Master. She just stood there in shock.

"Don't delay! Someone's really wrong. Escort them safely and come up to help others. I'll check the situation." Elder Jun saw her standing there. He couldn't help but remind her of the situation.

Elder Jun climbed on the back of Dark Winged Sparrow and flew away.

"Everyone! Come with me. There's no need to panic. The other Elders will take care of everything.

Elder Xin said to everyone. She could see that the kids were anxious, but after some effort, she was able to calm her down.

She walked in the front while the others followed her. Long Chen was amongst them as well, but his mind was on something else.

He had managed to bear that the Hall Master was poisoned.

Previously, when he heard the blasts, he had his doubts. He did feel like the Beast Hall was under attack, but the news about the Hall Master helped him in understanding that this wasn't a blind attack.

He felt like it was a properly prepared plan and the ones that were attacking had everything under their control.

After thinking for some time, he decided that he was better to escape.

There was a good chance that it was an attack for revenge. Even if it wasn't, he didn't feel safe being trapped inside until he was surrounded by all the powerhouses of the attacker since they were moving deeper inside the Beast Hall. It would only get tougher to escape if he went with them.

He tapped on the shoulders of Mingyu and Zhiqing as he gestured them to leave with him. Since he was already at it, he decided to bring Ji Shan with him as well. It would only increase their combined strength and their chances to escape.

Ji Shan was somewhat hesitant, but in the end, he decided to listen to Long Chen and leave with him. He also had a feeling that it was better to escape. There was no benefit for dying inside a sect they spent only a few days inside.

Long Chen took the lead as they separated from the group of Elder Xin.

Since Elder Xin was now focused on the path ahead, she didn't notice the four people left.

"Hey, since we're leaving, how about we go on our beasts. It'll be faster than running." Ji Shan said as he ran behind Long Chen.

"Nope. That would attract too much attention and make us more visible." Before Long Chen could reply, Mingyu shot down the suggestion.

As they ran, they were able to see quite a lot of people running as well, the only difference was that they were running towards the other side.

Long Chen gazed at some distance and noticed someone.

"Hurry and hide under that tree. " He said abruptly as he pointed towards a tree.

They all ran and hid under a tree.

Not long after, they saw four Winged Lions and tens of various types of flying beasts pass from the sky.

A frown appeared on Long Chen's face as he saw the Winged Lions.

Five minutes after the Winged Lions and the others passed, Long Chen finally let out some words.

"Sky Realm Cultivators" He said.

His words shocked the other three.

"The four on the Winged Lions were Sky Realm Cultivators and the others were high-rank Earth Realm cultivators. Let's hurry." He said as he left the shade of the tree and continued on their path of escape.

Back in the Core of the Beast Hall, Elder Jun was standing in front of the Hall Master who was lying on the bed. His breathing was too weak.

A bearded man was sitting near the Hall Master. He was checking him.

"The poison isn't fatal, but it is still serious. It has weakened him and it is preventing Hall Master from recovering. The Hall Master can't use his cultivation now." The bearded man said with a frown on his face.

Elder Jun couldn't help but grimace about the situation.

"Take care of the Hall Master, I'll handle the things outside." Elder Jun said as he turned back and left the room.

As soon as he came out of the room, he was stunned to find the dead bodies of tens of Elders long on the ground.

They were all dead and only a few were still alive. The ones that were alive were fighting the red-robed masked men, but it was clear that they are about to be defeated.

"How dare you attack our Beast Hall!" Elder Jun roared in anger as he released his Sky Realm Cultivation.

He was a First Stage Sky Realm Cultivator.

He flew towards the masked men in anger. He wanted to kill them all for their sins.

Just as he covered half the distance, he stopped as he retreated.

As he stepped back, he saw a man landing in front of him from the sky.

"It's quite amazing that a simple branch of the Beast Hall has two Sky Realm cultivators. No wonder the Main Beast Hall is considered such a massive force." The Black Robed Masked man said with a smile.

A frown appeared on Elder Jun's face as he saw the masked man. He could feel a sense of danger from the man.

Chapter 277 - 277: I'll Handle The Rest

A frown appeared on Elder Jun's face as he saw the masked man. He could feel a sense of danger from the man.

No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't see the cultivation of the man in front of him. That combined with the dangerous feeling made him understand that he was facing someone who had a higher cultivation.

"Why are you guys attacking our Beast Hall? We never had any enmity with a force. Also, no force in the area can have cultivators as strong as you and your three friends above." Elder Jun said as he glanced at the sky.

Although he didn't notice it initially, after one of the black-robed men came down from the above, he took a glance and realized that there were 3 more people who had similar outfits standing in the sky.

"Oh? Don't worry, we know that you people don't have enough strength to offend us... It's your father, the Main Beast Hall that did it."

"Then attack them! Why are you attacking us? Whatever the Main Beast Hall did, isn't our fault!" Elder Jun let out in an annoyed tone.

"Someone from your Main Beast Hall destroyed a branch of our Sect. So our revenge is justified."

"And it's true, that attacking them would make more sense, but unfortunately, we can't attack them yet for some reason. That's why we came to destroy something of theirs. An arm for an arm." The masked man said with a smile.

"The main Beast Hall would never do something like destroying a sect, Unless... You are from the Evil Sects?"

"Hahaha... We prefer the term unorthodox, but yeah. The world does consider our supreme sect as an Evil Sect, quite unjustly if I must say so myself." The masked man laughed as he said.

"Also, don't worry. We have quite a lot of people. Not a single person shall be left alive." He said as his laughter turned creepy.

"You bastard!" Elder Jun said as he tapped his Beast Bag three times.

Ten Beasts came out of his beast bag. Surprisingly, every single one of them was a peak Earth Realm Beast.

Elder Jun ordered the masked man to attack the Red-Robed man behind while he flew towards the Black Robed sky realm cultivator and punched out. A fire started burning in his fist.

The fist was about to land on the man's chest, but before his fist could land, the black-robed man disappeared from his position and appeared behind Elder Jun and kicked his back.

His movement was so fast, that it somewhat touched the boundary of teleportation in the eyes of Elder Jun.

As Elder Jun was kicking while he was running ahead, he flew away towards the front and crashed on the ground. His face had some scratches but Elder Jun wasn't overly harmed.

"You're quite slow for a Sky Realm cultivator." The black-robed man chuckled as he observed Elder Jun.

He completely ignored the fight that was going on between Elder Jun's tamed beasts and his Red Robed underlings.

Elder Jun didn't give up as he immediately stood up as he brought out his treasured sword.

"I know that our branch most probably can't survive the calamity we are facing right now, but I promise that I will at least kill you before I die!" Elder Jun roared in anger as he roared in anger.

He poured all his Qi and cultivation into this one last attack as he broke through his limits. Surprisingly, in this challenging time, Elder Jun broke through to the 2nd stage of the Sky Realm.

Before he could swing his sword, a sword penetrated his heart from behind.

The black-robed masked man had appeared behind him and thrust his sword in Elder Jun's chest.

"You know, you talk too much. You also dream too much." The black-robed man said as a smirk appeared on his face as he pulled out his sword.

Elder Jun fell to the ground as his breathing stopped.

On the other hand, all of the tamed beasts were killed by the red-robed cultivators as well. Though five of the red-robed men died as well.

Three more people came down from the sky and landed in front of the black-robed man. They were all wearing similar clothes. One of the four was a girl.

"We knew that it was going to be easy, but never expected it would be so easy." The man who had just fought Elder Jun spoke.

"What did you expect? It's a Branch of the Beast Hall after all. The main challenge will be attacking the Main Beast Hall. They are not considered a peak force in the continent for no reason after all." The only girl amongst them said sarcastically.

"I'm quite excited for the day we do get to face the ones from the Main Hall." Another person said in quite an excited tone.

"That's for the later, let's go deal with the remaining pests first," The woman said as she took the lead and walked towards the door where Elder Jun had come out from.

On the other side of the field, Long Chen and the others were running as they tried to leave the sect.

Unfortunately, they had come at a dead end.

Three Red-Robed Men were standing in front of them, blocking their path.

The only way out for them was to get through the three men.

"Looks like we can't escape stealthily." Long Chen sighed as he brought out his sword.

"Can you handle one of them?" Long Chen asked as he looked at Ji Shan.

Although he knew that Ji Shan was strong, he wasn't sure if he could face a peak Earth Realm cultivator alone.

"I don't think I can beat him. Although I can delay one of them without dying, unfortunately, that's not going to be enough." Ji Shan sighed as he told Long Chen.

"That'll be enough. Take care of one of them for me. I'll handle the rest." He said as he stepped forward.

Ji Shan wasn't sure what was happening, but he decided to listen to Long Chen.

Chapter 278 - 278: Killing

Ji Shan wasn't sure what was happening, but he decided to listen to Long Chen. He stepped forward as he glared at the masked men.

"Which one of you is brave enough to face me? " He said in a mocking tone.

Since all three of them were at the peak of Earth Realm Cultivation, He didn't mind much as he let the other three decide the one who will fight him.

"I'll go handle that guy. He's just a kid after all. You take care of the kids." One of the Red Robed men said as he started walking towards Ji Shan.

"Does he think he's a Black-Robed Master? How dare he order me! " One of the remaining two let out in an annoyed tone.

" Let it go, Ju. It's just a kid after all. So what if the one he chose is stronger than others? All these kids are weak as hell. Even the one he chose is weak as hell in front of us. Let's just kill the remaining ones and get it done." The second red-robed man replied.

"Wei, I don't need help to take care of ants. You stay back, I'll deal with the three ants. " Ju said as he stepped towards Long Chen.

He brought out his sword as he ran towards Long Chen, but he stopped midway as he heard the scream of his partner.

He looked back and saw that the left hand of the Red-Robed Man was missing. There was blood all over the ground.

"You bastard! Beware! There's a Devil Hunter Beast nearby. Hiding in the darkness of night. " Wei said as he warned his partners.

He was right though. Long Chen had already released the Devil Hunter Beast which was followed them stealthily in the darkness of night.

"They got a Devil Hunter Beast? Looks like I underestimated the backwater branch of Beast Hall. " Ju let out in a serious tone. As he turned back, he was stunned as he saw a sword coming straight at him.

At the last moment, the man used his sword.

His sword collided with the sword of Long Chen. The impact of the force was enough for him to push him a step backward.

He could feel the force and the impact in the hand that was holding the sword.

"You!!! You're a peak Earth Realm Cultivator as well?" He let out with a shocked look on his face.

His words were enough to shock everyone.

Wei who was holding his blade as he tried to find the Devil Hunter Beast was stunned as well. He had almost exclaimed in shock.

He couldn't believe that a kid so young could be a peak Earth Realm cultivator.

"Huh... What the hell are you talking about? It's clear that he isn't a peak Earth Realm cultivator. It's something in the gold core realm. I can see his cultivation. He must be a Body Cultivator. You're such an embarrassment on the name of us Red Robes." The man fighting Ji Shan snorted as he said to Ju.

He was fighting Ji Shan and it was clear that Ji Shan was way weaker and was getting pushed back. Despite all that, he hasn't managed to harm Ji Shan even once.

"You damn bastard. An Earth Realm Sword and an Earth Realm Armor? You're quite rich, aren't you? " He said with a creepy grin on his face.

Since Ji Shan's clothes were torn off in places, his Earth Realm Armor was revealed.

"That's right. You must be a Body Cultivator. Still, it's quite amazing that you were able to gain such strength. Too bad that you'll die. " Ju said as he intensified his attacks.

His Earth Realm Sword was shining with a red light. He kept attacking and clashing his sword with Long Chen's sword.

Long Chen was slightly getting pushed back now that Ju was using his full strength.

"My physical strength still can't compare to a peak Earth Realm cultivator like him. " He muttered softly.

" What the hell are you talking about?" Ju roared in anger as he saw that Long Chen wasn't focusing on him.

"That's Enough, Time to finish it. No need to keep anything back. " He muttered as he teleported right behind Ju and thrust his sword at Ju.

Unfortunately, being a peak Earth Realm Cultivator had its advantages for Ju.

His sharp senses made him react quite fast as he tilted his body to the side.

Although his reactions were fast, they weren't fast enough as the sword still managed to penetrate his body.

Fortunately, the sword missed the heart and his vitals.

As Long Chen pulled the sword back, Ju created some distance between him and Long Chen.

He looked down and noticed that his chest was bleeding.

Even though he was in pain, he didn't make a noise.

Long Chen didn't give him an opportunity to breathe as he asked Ju again.

Wei kept looking, but he didn't see the Devil Hunter Beast again. He finally couldn't wait anymore as he ran ahead to help Ju.

He was starting to see that the situation wasn't as good as they initially hoped.

The kids weren't as simple as they thought.

Wei ran towards Long Chen but as he covered half the distance between him and Long Chen, his eyes opened wide as his neck started bleeding.

His head slowly separated from his body and fell down to the ground. His body was the second one to fall.

Long Chen was standing being him with a bloodied sword in his hand.

"You should've minded your own business." Long Chen said in a heavy tone.

Ju was starting to worry now as he saw Long Chen teleport once again. He saw Long Chen instantly appear behind Wei without even moving a single step.

No matter how unbelievable it was, he had started to believe that Long Chen could teleport.

He was starting to get worried. He secretly took out transmission Talismans and sent a message to someone.

Long Chen noticed the Talismans and used teleport once again.

Ju was killed as well. A sword was stabbed in his heart and Long Chen was standing in front of him.

Just as he had expected... It was teleportation.

He coughed out a mouthful of blood as Long Chen pulled out his sword. Ju fell down to the ground.

Back in the core of the Beast Hall, 4 black-robed men were walking towards the building in front of them when one of them brought out a transmission talisman.

He had just received a message.

Chapter 279 - 279: Plan

One of the four Black Robed men stopped as he pulled out a transmission talisman.

He had just received a message.

"Teleport? Interesting. Let me see for myself." He muttered as a grin appeared on his face.

" You guys go on ahead, I'll be right back." He said to the others before he left.

Although the others wondered what had happened, they didn't care and let him go.

They were more focused on killing the remaining elders. They had sent the Red Robed cultivators to find the disciples and slaughter them all.

The black robed man that received the transmission called out for his Winged Lion who landed in front of him.

On the other side of the sect, Long Chen had killed the two Red Robed cultivators who were blocking his path and only one was left.

The one that was fighting Ji Shan.

Although Ji Shan kept getting pushed back, surprisingly enough, Ji Shan was still quite safe.

"Will you come for my help or just watch?" Ji Shan called out as he saw Long Chen looking at him.

Although he couldn't believe that Long Chen was so strong, the reality was right before his eyes.

"I don't think I need to come there."

Long Chen's words had just escaped his mouth when Ji Shan noticed a shadow that appeared behind the Red Robed man and tore his leg off and instantly disappeared.

The Red Robed man groaned like mad in pain as he lost his leg. He fell down to the ground.

Ji Shan utilized this god-given opportunity as he attacked the red-robed man.

His sword cut the neck of the red-robed man.

Ji Shan had finally managed to kill a Peak Earth Realm cultivator, but he knew that the credit didn't belong to him.

"That shadow... was that... the Devil Hunter Beast?" He asked with a stunned look on his face.

" Yeah. We don't have much time though. Let's leave fast before the others arrive." Long Chen said as he started running towards the exit.

Long Chen had a theory as to why these three were left here. There was not much distance between them and the exit of the sect, that's why these three red-robed cultivators were assigned here. To stop anyone from leaving, while the others went inside to slaughter everyone.

Since Long Chen had killed them, he felt like he could leave, unfortunately, it was not that simple.

Although his theory was correct, the transmission sent by the red-robed man was more crucial.

There was not only one transmission that we sent.

The one that was fighting Ji Shan also sent a transmission as well, as he saw his partners get killed.

His transmission was sent to the Red Robed team that was assigned nearby.

Long Chen did manage to leave the beast hall with others, but he noticed around 5 flying beasts coming towards them.

Since they were out of the Beast Hall, they entered the forest on the mountain as they traveled down the mountain, but the red-robed assailants did manage to see them.

Long Chen saw them and he realized that it wasn't easy to escape. In Fact, in 5 minutes, they would be caught by the red-robed cultivator.

He looked towards the others while he was running.

"You guys, leave. I'll handle them and come right out. I'll see you at the inn." Long Chen said as he gazed at them.

" I'm not running. We can help you!" Mingyu said as she didn't step back.

"I can handle one of them as well. I might even handle two." Ji Shan said. He didn't want to leave Long Chen behind either. It was the same for Zhiqing.

"If you stay here, you'll only be a burden at this point. I have an idea. Nothing will go wrong. I'll safely come out unharmed, I promise." He said to them.

Even though he said it, The others still looked unconvinced.

"Mingyu, you've seen my special talents. You should know that I can come out safely." Long Chen said.

" Now don't make my life difficult, or we'll all die." He said in an annoyed tone as he still didn't see them nodding their head.

Mingyu looked at him for a moment as she nodded her head finally. She decided to believe him, his statement about being a burden and him being able to escape safely.

She realized that Long Chen had the winds and many other things that could help him escape. But if they stayed here, it would only be tough for him.

"We're leaving."She told Zhiqing. Zhiqing also nodded her head as she knew that she was the weakest here and not even the slightest help.

"But..." Ji Shan was still hesitant, but then he saw the confident look on Long Chen's face.

It was the same look he saw when Long Chen stepped forward to face the red-robed men last time.

He also gave up as he nodded his head.

"Good. Keep running and don't stop." Long Chen said.

He himself stopped, but the others followed his command and kept running.

Long Chen stopped as he looked at the flying beasts coming towards him.

The beast landed on the ground as they saw Long Chen.

5 red-robed cultivators got off the 5 beasts as they stood in front of Long Chen.

"Do you think that you staying behind will help your partners? We'll find them after we kill you." One of them said.

" Don't underestimate him, dude. If I'm not wrong, he should be the one who killed Wei's team."

" So what? Even if we are all in the same realm, Wei's team was clearly weaker than ours. There's no way this man can leave. " He said, but just as the words left his mouth, a red line appeared around his neck.

Blood started coming out of his neck and his head fell down to the ground.

Long Chen, on the other hand, hadn't even moved.

That's what they actually thought, but in reality, the Long Chen standing in front of them was an illusion.

The real Long Chen was standing right beside the man he killed.

Chapter 280 - 280: One Against Many

The real Long Chen was standing right beside the man he killed.

The biggest limitation of Long Chen's Illusion was that he had to keep his focus on the person he wanted to cast his Illusion on. If he couldn't see the man, his Illusion wouldn't work, that's why he stopped mid-way so that the others would land in front of him.

He didn't want a situation where he was fighting one and the others were fighting another which would make it difficult for him to cast his Illusion on everyone.

Fortunately, the 5 red-robed cultivators stood didn't beside each other.

Long Chen chose the one who was standing in the corner to kill so that he could keep his eyes on everyone.

As the 5th cultivator died, his sound did alert the others, but before they could react, Long Chen had managed to slice the head of another one.

In an instant, 5 red-robed cultivators had become 3, though they were more alert now.

"Something's wrong. He's doing something. You stay here, I'll kill the boy." The first red-robed cultivator said as he started running towards the illusory Long Chen.

Although it's not what he wanted, he had already expected something like this.

His Illusion broke as his eyes returned to his original color.

The first red-robed man stopped as he saw the illusory Long Chen disappear.

The others were finally out of the illusion as well and saw the real Long Chen.

Long Chen had his King's sword in his hand as he slashed towards the closest one.

"Jon, Lookout!" One of the red-robed men called out as he saw Long Chen attacking.

The man called Jon reacted fast as he used his blade and clashed with Long Chen's sword.

As the King's sword was clashing with the red-robed man's sword, another sword suddenly appeared in Long Chen's hand.

It was the Mountain Destroyer. The sword that Long Chen had since the beginning. Although its grade was quite low, he always kept it with him since it wasn't destroyed even after all these fights.

Jon was more focused on the King's sword and Long Chen's strength that was equal to him, he didn't notice that another sword appeared in Long Chen's hands.

Before he noticed it, it was too late. The Mountain Destroyer had penetrated the man's chest.

Even though the man's heart was punctured, he still managed to complete his last attack.

His sword did manage to touch Long Chen's body and cut his clothes, but the wound wasn't too deep as Long Chen had managed to move at the last moment.

Jon fell down to the ground.

The second Earth Realm cultivator who had warned Jon was shocked at his death, but his shock was even greater as Long Chen disappeared from the front.

Long Chen appeared behind the man through teleport as he thrust his sword at the man.

Clink

A metallic sound came as Long Chen's sword clashed with another sword.

"You should watch your back, Lang"

Another Red robed man had managed to get there in time as he managed to save his friend.

Long Chen didn't stop right there as he rotated his body almost 360 degrees as he slashed at the man who prevented him from killing his target but the man managed to dodge.

Now there were two red-robed men versus Long Chen. Long Chen could feel that his Qi was depleting quite fast.

He moved ahead as he dual-wielded the King's sword and the Mountain Destroyer to find two men at the same time.

He was also reaching the limit of teleport. There were only two uses left as he used it too many times during the day. He tried to save those two for the right moment.

While fighting, Long Chen placed his mountain destroyer back in the storage ring and only used one sword to fight them both.

While fighting, he raised his free hand towards the sky as he prepared to use his special skill.

The sky was already dark, but there was moonlight shining on them, but that too stopped as the sky was covered in dark clouds.

The Red robed men felt like something was weird. They couldn't understand why the sky suddenly thundered.

But they couldn't put much thought into it as their focus was on Long Chen who, despite fighting a two against one battle, was keeping up with them.

As they were fighting, Long Chen abruptly retreated back, the two men were shocked, but before they could react, a powerful thunderbolt fell onto them.

They felt the current course through their body, damaging some of their organs.

Long chen didn't waste the opportunity as he got in a sword stance.

"Steven forms of Saint Sword: Fifth form- Chaos! " Long Chen said as he utilized all his Qi and swung his sword at the two men in front of him.

A destructive beam of light escaped the Sword and advanced towards the red-robed men.

Every place the destructive light passed through was left with nothing but wreckage.

The men could feel the dread from the attack and wanted to move, but the thunderbolt had made their legs difficult to move skillfully. Also, the attack was just too fast.

In no time, the light passed through both their bodies. It still didn't stop as it continued ahead even after cutting through the bodies of the red-robed men.

The red-robed men fell down to the ground, or at least what remained of their bodies.

Most of their bodies were destroyed, though their heads were still intact. Long Chen could see that even after they died, their eyes were still open in shock.

Long Chen sighed in relief at it being over.

He was about to call Orion and leave when he heard the sound of clapping.

Long Chen was stunned as he heard the clapping.

He slowly turned back and looked towards the person who was clapping and a frown appeared on his face.

Chapter 281 - 281: Battle Against A Sky Realm Cultivator.

He slowly turned back and looked towards the person who was clapping and a frown appeared on his face.

There was a masked man standing there. Only the upper half of his face was covered by his mask.

Unlike the men from before, This man was wearing a Black Robe.

But what made Long Chen shocked was the man's cultivation.

The man was a sky realm cultivator.

Not an initial sky realm either, He was the 4th stage Sky Realm Cultivator. Long Chen couldn't help but worry now.

He realized that this man was one of the 4 sky realm cultivators he saw before, but he didn't expect the man to come here for a kid personally.

"Bravo... So young yet so skillful. I'm quite impressed." The man said as his lips formed a grin.

Long Chen didn't reply as he gripped his sword tightly.

"I must say, I was quite surprised to see you fight today. A kid who can teleport? I've only heard some crazy theories about a unique law existing called the Law of Space. Although the theories were impossible to believe, I still somewhat believed it."

"After all, the world we live in is quite crazy itself. Anything is possible here. Today, I personally got to see a glimpse of that. You must have comprehended the Essence of Space Law, Right?" The man asked, but Long Chen didn't reply.

He just silently stood there.

"You look like a shy kid. It's fine. Anyways, I quite like that law now that I saw it in action. It's quite powerful when used by the right person. Unfortunately, a law can neither be shared nor taught. So you knowing it, doesn't help me the slightest." The man sighed in disappointment.

"Also, you did kill my men. So no matter how special you are, you will die today. I apologize in advance for that." The man said in full seriousness.

From the man's words, Long Chen did understand that the man hadn't been there since the beginning of the fight, thus he didn't see him use the Law of Illusion, or he might have guessed it too.

"Before you die, Can you tell me one thing, though? From your expressions, it looks like you're ready to fight me to death. Why is that? Why don't you beg me to let you live? " The masked man asked with a smile.

" I'm not naive enough to think that begging can save someone. Quite a lot of people begged in front of me as well and didn't help them. It will only bring more satisfaction on your face when you kill me." Long Chen replied.

" But it's not going to be that easy." Just when the man was smiling, Long Chen continued.

Long Chen moved towards the man as he swung his Sword.

"I like your determination boy." The man muttered as he brought out his own sword and clashed it with Long Chen's sword.

The man stood in his position without being pushed back, while Long Chen was pushed back 20 steps before he landed.

"You're quite strong. No wonder you managed to kill my men." The man said as he looked at the man with an amused look on his face.

"Too bad I'll have to kill you." He said as he finally moved.

His speed... It was just so fast. He immediately appeared beside Long Chen as he swung his sword.

Long Chen couldn't even react since his speed was so fast. It was nearly touching the boundaries of teleportation in Long Chen's eyes.

Long Chen barely reacted and brought his King's sword between his body and the sword of the man as he saved his body from being cut in half.

The impact was so brutal that Long Chen flew back as he landed on the ground.

Long Chen coughed out a mouthful of blood. He could feel the pain in his internal organs.

His Qi was running low as well, and he had already used his spatial travel ability once before. There were still 20 hours before he could use it again. He

could see no path of escape other than somehow killing the Sky Realm cultivator.

Long Chen was still on the ground as he tried sitting up. The masked man slowly walked towards him.

"Although it's late for introduction, but still, I'll introduce myself. You should know the name of the man who's going to kill you."

"I'm Lang Jing. I'm an Elder of the Dark Soul Sect. You should be proud that you'll die by my hands." The Man smirked as he said.

He didn't stop walking towards Long Chen. He was walking quite slow as if he was enjoying the moment.

The distance between them was only 30 meters when Long Chen used one of the two remaining teleports as he disappeared from his position and instantly appeared behind the man.

Unfortunately, the man's reaction was even faster as he skillfully turned his body and swung his sword backward.

The sword clashed with King's sword. Long Chen was again at the defeated end as he flew away like a broken kite and crashed on the ground.

"Teleport is good as a surprise attack, but it's not as effective against me. I already know about your skill." The man said as he gazed at Long Chen.

Long Chen again stood up, though he sneakily used his Law of Illusion on the man.

The man saw Long Chen still lying on the ground weakly.

The man walked towards Long Chen, the Illusory Long Chen to be precise.

The real Long Chen stood nearby, ready to attack when the man was near.

Just like before, the man took his sweet time as he walked towards Long Chen.

There were 100 meters of distance between himself and the illusory Long Chen and 70 meters of distance between him and the real one.

Long Chen didn't use his last teleport as, if he used it, his focus would shift from the man for a brief moment and the illusion would break.

Considering the man's fast reflexes, he would survive. He waited for the man to come to him.

Finally, after a short period of time, the man was near him.

Chapter 282 - 282: Deadly Struggle

Finally, after a short period of time, the man was near him.

Long Chen silently raised his sword as he swung it at the man.

The King's sword slashed through the air as it advanced towards the neck of the black-robed man.

A smile appeared on the lips of the black-robed man as he raised his sword. His sword met Long Chen's sword head-on.

He raised his other hand swiftly as he punched out.

His fist collided with a shadow that had attacked him from the other side.

The Devil Hunter Beast tried to sneak in an attack on Long Chen's orders, but the man's senses were really too scary.

The Devil Hunter Beast was punched and flew away as it crashed on the ground.

Some of its chest bones were broken.

"Orion!" Long Chen called out.

"You should focus on the fight in front of you boy." The man said with a smile as he punched Long Chen.

"Urgh..." Long Chen coughed out a mouthful of blood as he felt like his chest bones were broken.

He flew away like a broken kite and landed on the ground.

His sword fell from his hand as he crashed.

So you can use illusion as well... That was surprising I must say. Though not as surprising as using the Essence of Space. Too bad that illusions have weaknesses of their own.

"You boy, have some really nice things. Also a rare beast like a Devil Hunter. I would be so happy if my disciple was as talented." The man sighed in disappointment as he stepped towards Long Chen.

Long Chen felt extreme pain as his chest was crushed.

He still bore with the pain as he tried to stand up. Unfortunately, his body wasn't supporting him.

It was like even his body had left him at this challenging time.

"I pity you, boy. Such a talented boy shall die before reaching his full potential, unfortunately, it's the way it must be. " The man smirked as he stopped in front of him.

He reached out his hand towards Long Chen's neck and grabbed it.

He pulled Long Chen in the air while gripping him by his neck.

"You can't move your body, can you?" The man said.

"Even if you can't move it, I'm sure you can feel pain, right?" The man asked with a smile.

Long Chen didn't reply and just glared at him.

"It's fine. You don't need to answer. I'll check for myself." The man said as he raised his sword and stabbed it in the right hand of Long Chen.

"Ahhhh..." Long Chen roared in pain as he felt his hand being penetrated by a sword.

"That's a nice sound. I quite enjoy it. Let me try again." The man said as he pulled the sword out and stabbed it in the other hand of Long Chen.

Long Chen clenched his teeth as he controlled himself from screaming.

"Once more." The man looked like he was enjoying it.

He pulled out the sword as he stabbed it in the right leg of Long Chen.

He repeated the same process for his other leg.

Long Chen's arms and legs both were bleeding by now. In fact, he couldn't even feel his arms and legs now.

"Good bye, little guy" The man said as he pointed his sword towards Long Chen's heart.

Far away from them, Mingyu and the others were still running down the mountain and they were almost at the bottom.

"He'll be safe, right?" Zhiqing asked with concern as she occasionally glanced behind.

"Don't worry. He can achieve anything. You know what he did in the Glorious Blossom Sect, right? If he can escape under that situation, then have faith. He'll come out safely." Mingyu said.

What she didn't know was that although Long Chen faced a sky realm cultivator at that time, he had a hostage with him.

Also, he hadn't used Spatial Travel before at that time, thus he escaped using that.

Long Chen had none of these things right now. He would be able to escape from peak Earth Realm cultivators, but a 4th stage Sky Realm Cultivator was a completely different thing.

Even Long Chen himself hadn't expected that a sky realm cultivator would come after him, instead of the Elders of the sect.

They came out of the forest as they reached the bottom of the mountain.

You both can ride on my Dark Horse. I'll go on whitey.

He said as he brought out both his Beasts.

A dark horse and a Soul Devouring Wolf.

He climbed on top of his Soul Devouring Wolf while the girls climbed on top of the Dark horse as they advanced towards the nearest town. The place Long Chen had promised to meet them.

Inside the Beast Hall, a slaughter was going on.

The Red Robed Cultivators were slaughtering the disciples of the Beast Hall as brutally as they could.

There was blood everywhere in the place.

5 Red Robed men were standing in front of a woman that was bleeding all over.

There were kid's bodies everywhere around her, and it looked like she would soon follow in their footsteps.

The woman was the Elder Xin, that Long Chen had interacted with before.

As she was escorting the kids, she was stopped by 5 red-robed Cultivators.

Elder Xin was a peak Earth Realm cultivator, but so were the 5 red-robed Cultivators as well.

She fought valiantly, but she wasn't able to save any of the disciples.

"You're so beautiful, wish we could have some fun time with you.

Unfortunately, our bosses are here as well. So we can't mess around today." A man sighed in disappointment.

He didn't like the thought of killing a woman. Especially a beautiful woman like Elder Xin.

Inside the Core Hall of the Beast Hall, Three people were standing.

Two black-robed men and a black-robed woman.

A few dead bodies were lying in front of them. One of which belonged to the Sect Master of the Beast Hall.

Chapter 283 - 283: Long Chen No More

Two black-robed men and a woman was standing in the main hall.

A few dead bodies were lying in front of them. One of which belonged to the Sect Master of the Beast Hall.

A black-robed man walked towards the dead body of the Hall Master and cut his neck with a sword.

He stored the Hall Master's head in his storage ring.

"Hahaha... This should be the perfect gift to send to the Main Beast Hall. I'm sure those guys would love it." The man said with a creepy grin on his face.

" Hey, Lang Jing is still not here? Just what is that man up to?" The man turned back with a curious look on his face.

" Who knows, maybe he found something fun to play with. I pity the person who attracts his attention." Another masked man said with a sigh.

" Well, we're done here. Let's go find him. We still have some time till our people kill all the disciples. Let's see what he's up to." The man said with a smile as he walked towards the exit.

The other two did the same and left. They called out for their Winged Lions and climbed on them.

The Winged Lions began flying above the Beast Hall.

Everywhere the three black-robed people passed through, they saw the wreckage and dead bodies of young as well as of old. The whole Beast Hall was covered in blood.

They flew over the whole place, but didn't see the 4th man they were looking for.

They sent messages to their underlings to ask if anyone had seen him.

They knew that even if they sent Lang Jing a message personally to ask him, he wouldn't answer. So they could only ask around indirectly.

Fortunately, quite a few people had seen him fly towards the exit of the sect.

They followed the direction and left the sect. They didn't have to fly too far outside the sect before they found who they were looking for.

They ordered their Winged Lion to go down.

"So here you were. We were looking for you all along. It's time to leave." The masked woman said to Lang Jing.

" Oh, is it? It's good I'm done here as well." Lang Jing said with a grin.

"That body lying there... It looks like a kid. Were you toying with him?"

"Yeah. This kid was pretty good. You see those 5 red-robed men lying here? They were killed by this kid. Unfortunately, he made the mistake of killing my men." Lang Jing replied with a smile.

" You're kidding. How can a kid do this? Someone else must have done this. There's no way a kid could do it."

It was clear that the other did not believe it.

"I was here when he did it. Are you calling me a liar?" Lang Jing said with a grin as he glared at the one who said it.

The masked woman could feel like the mood was getting heated, so she changed the topic.

"Hey, That's a rare Devil Hunter Beast. It's good that you didn't kill the beast. These things are hard to come by. Let's take the beast to our sect." She said as she looked at the unconscious Devil Hunter Beast.

Suddenly all their transmission talismans started shining.

They heard the message and were notified that everyone single person belonging to the Beast Hall was dead.

"We're done. Let's leave." Lang Jing said as he called his Winged Lion.

That night, The flying beasts left the Beast Hall just as silently as they came.

The only difference was that not a single living person was left behind to tell the tale. Not even the buildings were left intact.

The deadliest night passed away and soon the sun's rays started warming up the land.

Mingyu and the others had reached the nearest town. They had already booked rooms. They even booked a room for Long Chen when he came.

Ji Shan and the others waited for a whole day, but Long Chen didn't come.

They were starting to get anxious as so much time had passed.

"He's still not here. Something must have gone wrong. I'll go check the mountain. Maybe he escaped, but he's injured. I'll be right back." Ji Shan said as his worries started increasing.

" We will come as well." Mingyu and Zhiqing said.

"That would only delay us. My Soul Devouring Wolf is much faster than the Dark Horse. I can go there faster. We would only be slow if you guys came." Ji Shan shook his head as he rejected their offers.

The girls looked like they understood his reasoning as they turned silent.

Ji Shan climbed on top of the Soul Devouring Wolf as he moved like the wind towards the mountain where the Beast Hall was situated.

After half an hour of the journey, he got to the bottom of the mountain, but his eyes opened wide in shock as he saw the condition of the mountain.

All the plantations and the trees were burned to ashes.

He understood that most of the assailants burned down the mountain along with the sect.

His worries started increasing as he ordered the Soul Devouring Wolf to move towards the peak of the mountain.

He moved towards the location they separated from Long Chen.

As he stopped there, there was nothing.

All he saw was ashes. He couldn't even differentiate whether these ashes were of trees or of bodies.

He just stood there with shock on his face. He was having a bad feeling.

"Long Chen!!!" He roared loudly as he looked towards the sky.

There was no reply. The whole mountain was like a graveyard. There was nothing but death everywhere.

He still kept hope alive as he roamed around the mountain in search of Long Chen.

He checked every spot. He even entered the Beast Hall, or what remained of it. All he saw inside were some half-burnt bodies and ashes.

The structures were still standing, but they had lost their structural integrity.

He searched the whole day, but there was no result.

"Little brother Chen, Why did you have to die? I should have stayed here and helped you. It's all my fault. " Ji Shan said as he looked towards the sky that was starting to darken. His eyes were wet.

He left the mountain. He needed to inform the girls as well. No matter how painful it was, he needed to inform them that Long Chen was no more.

Chapter 284 - 284: I'm Dead Again?

It was darkness... darkness everywhere.

There was no sound. There was no sensation. There was no air.

It was nothing but an empty void.

Long Chen found himself floating inside that empty void.

He looked at his arms and legs. There was no problem with them. He could even move his arms, but what's strange was that, even when he moved it, there was no resistance. It was like there was no air to oppose his motion.

"Am I dead again? Looks like I died. It's awfully similar to the previous time." Long Chen sighed in disappointment.

" Are you in such a hurry to die?" A voice echoed in the surroundings.

" Who?" Long Chen let out with surprise.

He felt like the voice was awfully familiar.

"Me? I'm you... and you're me. To be precise, I'm the one you want to be, but you can't be since you're not ready to lose yourself." The voice said.

" Who the hell are you?" Long Chen asked again.

There was no reply, but a shadow formed in front of me that soon took a humanoid form.

It took the shape of a human. The human was none other than Long Chen himself.

"As I said... I'm you and you're me. Are you relieved to see me? " The person that looked like Long Chen replied.

" Now that I think about it, I might not be dead after all. Since I can have such weird dreams." Long Chen said as he observed his clone.

" It's not a dream. And I'm not lying. I'm you. Well, I'm your heart demon to be more precise." The clone smiled at Long Chen.

" My Heart Demon? Did you come out of your cocoon? And you can talk?"

Long Chen was stunned as he heard his words.

" Well, I couldn't before the evolution." The clone said with a smile.

"Where am I? " Long Chen asked.

"You're... You're nowhere. And you're not dead either. It should be about time you wake up." The clone looked at him and said.

The clone raised his hand towards the sky and snapped his finger.

"Huh!" Long Chen opened his eyes abruptly. He was breathing heavily as if he was having difficulty breathing.

After a few seconds, his breathing normalized.

He looked down at his body and found that his arms and legs were still fine. Although his clothes were still bloodied. Most of which was his own blood. Even his ring was still in his finger, though it was invisible.

He was just relieved that he wasn't dead.

After being glad that he was alive, he looked at his surroundings.

He found himself in a dark room. There was no window in the room, but he was able to see in the darkness because of how sharp his senses.

The room was completely empty. It was a small room that looked much like a prison. There was a door in the front. The door looked like it was made from metal, but Long Chen was sure that it would not be the case.

He stood up as he walked towards the door and touched it.

"Break it. That's the only way to escape. We can easily escape this place. You can't know what might happen if you stay here." A voice said in his ears.

Long Chen recognized that voice. It was a voice belonging to his heart demon that he just had a talk within that empty void.

Although he didn't want to hear his heart demon, it was true that his words did make sense to Long Chen.

"Don't worry. I won't use my strength to force you to do anything. I'm just something that is born so that you could fulfill your desires. It's not me that wants to escape from here, but you." The voice further said.

Long Chen also believed it to be the right suggestion.

Because he couldn't teleport outside since he could only use teleport to places he had seen before. He hasn't seen what the place outside the door looks like. So he couldn't use it to escape.

Spatial Transfer worked in a similar way. He couldn't teleport outside 200 kilometers range. And it was a must for him to have seen the place he wanted the portal to open.

Long Chen packed his fist and used his full cultivation.

When he was using his cultivation, he did feel something strange. It was like something was restricting him. It was like something was preventing him from using his full strength.

He used all the strength he could as he punched at the gate.

A heavy metallic sound came as the fist landed on the door, but not a single dent was made.

"As I expected, the door is not something I can break." Long Chen muttered in disappointment.

He walked back and sat on a corner.

"Xun!" He called out.

Xun appeared near him.

"Do you know where we are?" He asked her.

"I don't." She replied as she shook her head.

"Wait a minute! Where's Orion?" He suddenly stood up as he remembered that Orion had attacked the sky realm cultivator as well.

"Since you're alive, he must be as well. Orion and your King's sword. They both must be in the hands of Lang Jing." She replied.

"It's fine as long as he's alive." Long Chen sighed in relief.

Since he remembered about Orion, He decided to check on others as well. He used his divine sense to check the beast region inside his ring.

The condor was still sleeping. It looked like it was still going through an evolution. As for the Armored Rhino, It was roaming in the empty field. Lastly, little Snow. His eyes were wide open as he saw little snow.

A little snow looked like it was sleeping and the ancient-looking characters on its body were shining.

"What's happening with little snow?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"I'm not sure. Since the moment Little Snow helped you in taming the Condor and entered the ring, it has been sleeping."

"I'm not sure what's happening. Maybe it's going through an evolution as well, or maybe it's something else." Xun said.

Chapter 285 - 285: Kill Him

"She's going through evolution? It's fine as long as it's nothing serious." Long Chen let out.

"By the way, Do you have any idea how I can get out of here? " Long Chen asked as he looked towards her with a hopeful gaze.

"I think there are a few ways. One of them is for you to increase your comprehension of the law of space when you're locked in here." Xun replied.

"That will take too long. What else? " He asked.

He didn't want to wait here for years in hopes of achieving a breakthrough in comprehension.

"The second way is to talk to the guy named Lang Jing. He didn't kill you, there must be something he needs you for. You can negotiate your freedom. " She gave another suggestion.

"What can I give him? As he said previously, my space law knowledge can't be given away. So there's nothing for me to help him with. " Long chen did with a doubtful look on his face.

"Leave it for him to decide. I'm pretty sure he'll come looking for you himself. In fact, he must be on his way since your earlier actions have most probably alerted the guards outside. " She said with a slight smile on her face.

" All I can do is wait then." Long Chen muttered as he looked down.

"Hey, tell me one thing. If I had died, what would have happened to you? " Long Chen asked.

" Nothing. I and the ring would have been destroyed along with you." Xun said with a smile.

Long Chen was stunned as he heard her words. He couldn't believe she said something like this with a smile.

" Destroyed? Why? You wouldn't go to find the third inheritor?" He asked.

"Nope. The ring was made for two inheritors only. There were only two blood drops in the ring. One was given to Tian Shen and the second one to you. If you died, there won't be any purpose for me or the ring." She said as she sighed.

Long Chen was about to reply to her when the door opened.

The dark room was brightened.

A man entered the room and closed the door again.

The man was wearing a black robe, but he didn't have a mask on his face.

Without the mask, Long Chen clearly saw his face. The man looked like he was in his early forties.

His face had a small scar on his forehead that looked much like a thunder symbol.

"You're awake." The man said.

Long Chen recognized the voice. It was the voice that belonged to the masked man that defeated him.

"Why didn't you kill me?" Long Chen asked straight away.

"Are you that eager to die?" The man let out with an amused look on his face.

"Don't be so serious. I had my own selfishness for letting you live. I need your help. To be more precise, I need the help of your law for achieving a goal of mine." The man said with a smile.

"What goal? And why should I help?" Long Chen inquired. That was the main question that he wanted answered.

"You'll know when the time comes. Sad for right now, you just need to know that I'm your savior. I saved your life and for that, I had to use my precious Life-Giving Pill, since your wounds were more serious than I thought." The man said with a smile.

"Weren't you the one who gave me those wounds?" Long Chen said sarcastically.

"I can leave you some wounds again if you would like?" The man said with a grin on his face as he glared at Long Chen.

"Oh, By the way. I should probably tell you, that while helping you, I also gave you something special. A poisoned created by myself." The man said as if he suddenly remembered something important.

"The poison won't hurt you as long as you keep taking a special pill every week. But if you miss a dose, you'll die. Not even the Hundred Poison Healing Pill can cure my special poison." He continued.

" I'll give you a complete antidote when you complete the thing I need you to do. Also, if you don't mind, I'm willing to take you in as my personal disciple."He further said.

" I understand about the poison, but why a personal disciple? " Long Chen asked as he looked at the man.

" I have two reasons. Firstly, I'm quite impressed with your talents and I do wish for you to be my disciple. Secondly, It would protect you inside the sect. It's like an excuse I gave to the other black-robed elders for keeping you alive."The man explained

" Where's Orion and my Sword?" Long Chen asked another question that was bugging his mind.

" Orion? Oh, you must be talking about the Devil Hunter. You don't need to worry about him as he's safe. I'll give you your Orion when you complete my work. As for your sword... here. " The man said as he brought out a sword out of his storage ring and threw a sword at Long a Chen.

"It's a good sword, too bad that it's grade is too low. " The man said.

Long Chen caught the sword as he stood up. He pointed his sword towards the man.

"What makes you think that I would choose my life over my revenge?" Long Chen let out as he began using his cultivation.

" I said what I had to. Now it's up to you to decide what you want to do. You can either die or help me and become my disciple. You'll have an elevated position in the Dark Soul Sect." Lang Jing said as a smile formed on his face.

As Long Chen stood there, a voice was talking to him in his mind. A voice that belonged to his heart demon.

The voice was only repeating one thing. It kept repeating the same thing again and again as if it wanted to make Long Chen kill the man.

"Do it! Kill him! We can escape!"

Chapter 286 - 286: Not In The Open

There was a voice in his head that was only repeating one thing.

"Do it! kill him! We can escape!"

"Can you even kill me? Do it if you can." The man said.

He didn't look scared even for a moment.

Long Chen kept his sword pointing at the man, but he ultimately lowered it.

"Let alone if he could defeat him, even if he did, he wouldn't be able to escape. Even if he can escape, what about Orion and his sword? Orion was his partner and the sword was one of the keys to getting the inheritance of Saint King Xianwu.

Although Long Chen lowered his sword, he felt pain in his body that made him fall down to his knees.

Even Lang Jing was stunned as he saw Long Chen's reaction. He didn't know that Long Chen was suffering from his heart demon.

Long Chen pressed his chest tightly as he felt like his heart was going to burst.

"I'm not forcing you, doesn't mean that you have the right to not follow your desires. Don't make me force you. This is just a small punishment." His heart demon's ruthless voice appeared in his head.

Lang Jing just watched Long Chen sitting on his knees as he wondered.

"Are you sick?" He finally asked.

Long Chen didn't reply as he just pressed his chest tightly. He tried to calm his breathing.

After a few moments, he recovered as he stood up. But he was sure that the pain was the worst he had felt.

"Looks like you're fine now." Lang Jing said as he rubbed his chin and observed Long Chen.

"So, do you accept my terms? You won't be a prisoner, but a disciple of mine." Lang Jing said with a smile.

"I'll accept your request. I'll help you... but I won't take you as my master. You're not worthy." Long Chen replied to him.

" Hahaha... who can be worthy if not me? Whatever, You can do whatever you want, but you must help me when the time comes. Now, come with me." Lang Jing said.

He turned back and stepped out the door.

Long Chen followed him.

"I want to kill him as well. I want to kill him right here and right now, but I can't lose to my impulse. I will kill him soon. First, I need to find Orion and cure my poison." He thought. He wasn't sure if he was talking to himself, or talking to his heart demon.

As Long Chen stepped out, he noticed that this place was indeed a prison. There were hundreds of such rooms like the one he was in. There was quite a lot of noise there as well.

It felt like he wasn't the only one who wanted to escape by breaking the door, unfortunately, the doors were too strong.

"Long Chen, I need to tell you something. I was about to tell you when he came inside. I'll tell you after he leaves, but it's not good news." Xun floated right beside him as she said.

Long Chen looked towards her and nodded his head.

"Since this place is going to be your home from now on, let me tell you a little about it so that you don't die too soon." Lang Jing continued talking to Long Chen

"I've already told you that we are in the Dark Soul Sect. It's a sect placed in the secret location, we like to call Demon Valley." He said

"It's impossible to leave here without an Earth Realm flying beast. But even then, it's impossible as the whole sect is covered with an Earth Grade Barrier that not only is it impossible to enter, but it's impossible to leave as well. Unless it's with the permission of the Sect Master. " Lang Jing further explained.

"The Sect follows the rule of strength. As long as you have the strength, you can do anything. I feel like this place is perfect for you. Here, you can open

up and let your primitive nature out. " He said with a grin as he looked backward.

"I noticed it when I saw you kill the red robes. You didn't kill them because you had to. I could see that you were enjoying it. You were enjoying the slaughter and the bloodbath." Lang Jing said with a grin on his face.

" I don't think you know about it yet, but I feel like that's what you're made for. To kill! " Lang Jing let out as he glanced at Long Chen.

Long Chen heard his words in full seriousness, but didn't know what to think about it. His last statement made him seriously think about it.

Was a bloodbath something he really wanted? He never felt like it personally, but not that he thought about it, there was always a feeling of satisfaction every time he killed.

A satisfaction like never before. Was that feeling of satisfaction really because he enjoyed the slaughter? Or was it something else? He wondered.

They left the long corridor of that prison and stepped out in the open.

Long Chen was finally able to breathe the fresh air and surprisingly, he realized that the Qi in the air was denser than it was in the Beast Hall.

"Nice, isn't it? That's why the Sect was established here. The Demon Valley has one of the densest Qi Concentration in the land." Lang Jing said.

"By the way, I should probably mention that although I said that the strong can do anything here, there are still some things you shouldn't do. Like never kill a disciple of any Elder, At Least not in the open."

" It's fine as long as there are no proofs. If you kill one, then their master might come looking for trouble. I might save you in most cases, but even I can't protect you always. As you already know, you can't face a black-robed elder. " Lang Jing said.

" What if I kill one of your disciples? " Long Chen said with a mocking grin on his face.

" You can't kill him." The man said as he shook his head.

" Why not? Is he as strong as you?" Long Chen asked.

" Nope, he was weaker than me. Though he was one of the most talented disciples of the Sect. But he was killed by an Elder of the Beast Sect." He replied.

Chapter 287 - 287: Rank

"My disciple was weaker than me. Although he was one of the most talented disciples of the Sect, he was killed by someone by an Elder of the Beast Sect." Lang Jing replied.

Long Chen looked at the man, as he heard his words, but he didn't see any emotion on his face.

He wasn't sure if the man had a heart of stone or if he had recovered from the pain of losing a disciple.

'I'll send you to your disciple quite soon.' Long Chen thought.

"That might be one of the reasons why I joined up on the Beast Hall branch extermination. I would've liked to take the fight to the main beast hall, but the Sect Master thinks that it's not the right time." He muttered.

" Oh, right. There was one thing I wanted to ask. What's your cultivation realm? Why can't I see it? " The man asked as if he remembered something.

" You don't need to worry about my Cultivation." Long Chen replied.

" It's fine as well." The man didn't mind his rude tone.

"You will stay in the courtyard of my previous disciple. There are already servants there in case you need something. Stay inside and don't create trouble if you could. Pretty soon, it shall be the time to get to work." The man said.

"Since I'm here, Can I cultivate and learn the skills of the sect?" Long Chen asked in curiosity. He wanted to see how much freedom he had.

'You can do anything you want as long as it's nothing life-threatening like something that could annoy other black-robed elders." Lang Jing replied casually.

'Isn't he afraid that I could become stronger and kill him?' Long Chen looked somewhat confused as he thought.

"I think I can guess what you're thinking. I'm not afraid that you'll grow stronger. No matter how much you cultivate in this short duration, you won't be able to get stronger than me."

" Also, there's a poison inside you that will keep you in check even if this miracle happened somehow." The man said with a smirk on his face.

Although the man had a Winged Lion, he decided to walk with Long Chen just to show others.

He didn't want others to offend Long Chen and get killed. So he was acting as a deterrent so that the other disciples wouldn't bother him.

Long Chen followed the man through a long stoned path that led him from the prison to the core of the sect.

There were many beautiful buildings that he saw on both sides. The buildings were massive as well as beautiful and luxurious. It looked like most of them were made of pure gold.

He didn't know what most of these were. But he didn't ask Lang Jing nor for Lang Jing explained of his own volition.

They walked further and the buildings only kept getting better and better. Long Chen could feel like he was getting to the important places of the sect. He was finally able to see some people as well.

The man and the women both were wearing yellow robes over their clothes. They all had a badge stuck to their chests.

The yellow-robed people had a wide variety of ages. Some were as young as 13-14 while others looked like they were in their late 20s.

"Let me tell you the hierarchy of the sect. The Yellow Robed guys you're seeing are the disciples of the sect." Lang Jing further said as he started explaining.

" We don't have an outer sect or inner sect system here. We follow the star system. You can judge a disciple's rank by seeing the stars in the badges on their chests." He said.

"In simpler terms, the one-star yellow-robed disciples are equivalent to Outer Sect disciples of your normal sects. 2-star disciples shall be equivalent to Inner Sect disciples and the 3-star disciples are equivalent to core disciples. " He continued.

Long Chen heard everything he said, just so that he didn't miss any important detail that might lead him to Orion.

" There's a rank higher than those as well. A 4-star disciple." Lang Jing said.

"A 4 star is given to the personal disciples of the black-robed elders. They are considered to be the top of sect disciples since the elders won't choose a trash to be their disciple."

" Next in the hierarchy are elders. We have a classification for elders. One is Red Robed Elders. They are the ones who are still in the Earth Realm. You should know, you killed quite a few yourself. " Lang Jing chuckled as he said.

"The Elders who are in the sky realm are the Black Robed Elders. Only the black-robed elders in the sect have the power to give 4-star disciple badge to their disciples. The disciples of Red Robed Elders don't have the privilege."

" The one higher in the hierarchy are the Grand Elders of the sect. They can be recognized by their Grey Robes. You'll really see them outside of their places, but when they come out, you should be respectful."

" And finally, the peak of the hierarchy. The Sect Master of the Sect. The sect master wears a White Robe. Our Sect Master is quite an eccentric woman I must say. Her mood can flip in an instant, so better stay away from her. No one knows who she'll kill if she gets annoyed." Lang Jing said as he finished the explanation about the powers of the sect.

As Long Chen and Lang Jing were walking together, quite a lot of people saw them.

"Hey, That's Black-Robed Elder Jing. Who's that boy with him?"

"They look close. I've never seen Elder Jing smiling since Senior Brother Mu Chan was killed by that dog elder of the Beast Hall."

" Has he selected a new personal disciple? That must be it."

"I haven't seen that boy before. It's possible that Elder Jing found a disciple outside and now he's showing him our sect."

" Doesn't that mean that now there will be another 4-star disciple? There were only 23 four-star disciples in the sect. Not that number might increase by one."

" He doesn't look that talented. He's so young as well. He might be the weakest."

Chapter 288 - 288: New Badge

" It's so sad. Elder Jing's last disciple, Senior Brother Mu, was the second strongest disciple in the sect and now his disciple will be the weakest." Some people sighed in disappointment.

Although they all talked about Long Chen, they kept their voices low since they didn't want Elder Jing to hear them. They all knew about Elder Jing's anger after all.

It was unclear if Lang Jing heard them or not, but Long Chen clearly heard them because of his special senses.

He chose to ignore their chatter since they were all ignorant. But he did learn about Lang Jing's disciple from their mouths.

Long Chen and Lang Jing continued on their journey. Although Lang Jing didn't introduce most of the buildings, he did introduce some.

The buildings he introduced were the Skill Pavilion, the Artificers Hall, the Alchemy Pavilion, and the Martial Arena where disciples fought.

The Skill Pavilion was a place that had various skills of the sect and the skills that were stolen from other sects or collected from the vault of the sects that they destroyed before.

The Artificer Hall, on the other hand, was a place where the Artificers of the sect crafted various artifacts.

The Alchemy Pavilion was also an important place of the sect. It was a place where the Alchemists of the Sect gathered and shared knowledge. They made spiritual pills as well.

Lang Jing also showed him the ranking pavilion, but he didn't talk much about it. He just mentioned its name to him.

Even without him telling, Long Chen realized that the place must be something that ranked disciples. Most probably based on strength.

They further asked and finally got to a beautiful looking place.

It was a beautiful courtyard. The place was so big. It had an area comparable to the Long Mansion on the dragon city of the Shui Kingdom.

This place belongs to you now. There's a boy named Man Gu inside. He shall be your personal servant and guide that will teach you the things you don't know. Alright. I'll go now. Don't make trouble alright." Lang Jing said to Long Chen.

"Oh right. What's your name?" He asked as he glanced back

"I'm Long Chen." Long Chen replied to him.

"Alright." The man responded as he brought something out of his storage ring.

He closed his eyes as he sent his Qi to his palm. Long Chen didn't understand what he was trying to do.

The man soon opened his eyes.

"Take it. Your robe is already inside your place." Lang Jing said as he threw something at Long Chen.

Long Chen caught it and looked at it.

"A four-star badge." He muttered as he looked at the badge in his hand.

It was a black circular badge that had 4 stars on it.

"Keep that safe. Your name is crafted on the back of the badge. Even if you haven't accepted me as your master, This badge is proof that I have accepted you as my disciple."The man said with a smile on his face.

He looked towards the sky and called out the name of his flying beast.

A Winged Lion came flying and landed in front of Lang Jing

Lang Jing climbed on top of the Winged Lion and flew away.

Long Chen looked at him flying away. He felt somewhat perplexed. This man, just what was he planning? He wondered.

He shook his head as he threw things thought to the back of his head. The main thing, for now, was healing his poison and he knew how to do it.

Although he didn't know how Lang Jing made the special poison, he thought that the Thousand Poison Healing Pill should be enough to heal him.

The only problem was that he didn't have the ingredients. All his ingredients were used up when he was trying to make the Hundred Poison Healing Pill for Ji Shan.

Now he needed to find the ingredients without letting Lang Jing know.

He looked at the gate of his place and walked towards it. He decided that he could subtly ask the servants about where he could find the pills.

He stood at the door and pushed it open slightly. The door was locked. He knocked on it.

After about a minute or so, the door was opened towards the inside.

Long Chen finally saw the person on the other side.

It was a man. The man looked to be in his early 20s and looked quite handsome, to say the least.

"Are you my new Master?" He asked straight away as he gazed at Long Chen innocently.

Long Chen didn't respond and simply showed him the badge that was given to him by Lang Jing.

"Oh, you are. Welcome, Master. I'm Man Gu. I shall be taking care of you from now on. Please forgive me if I make any mistake in the future." The man said as he bowed down in front of Long Chen

"I'm Long Chen. Nice to meet you." Long Chen said as he entered inside. He closed the door behind him and walked up to a chair as he sat down.

"So Man Gu, Are you close to La... I mean Master?" Long Chen asked.

"I'm not, unfortunately. I wish I was though. I only met him once when he selected me to serve, master. He didn't tell me anything else. All he said was that I must take care of you and not let you go anything stupid." Man Gu replied to Long Chen.

"Man Gu, can you tell me where we are right now?" Long Chen asked.

"This... We are in the Demon Valley, master." Man Gu replied.

"I know that. What I meant was that 'In which Empire or Kingdom are we?'" Long Chen asked him again.

"We're not in any Kingdom or Empire Master. The nearest Empire is about a thousand miles away from the best valley." He replied.

"Which Empire would that be?" Long Chen asked further.

Chapter 289 - 289: Another Law Orb

"Which Empire is closest to us?" Long Chen asked Man Gu.

"The Blue Sky Empire." Man Gu replied.

"The Blue Sky Empire? There was nothing about it in the books I read? How far are we from the North Moon Empire?" Long Chen asked.

He tried to remember the name of the Blue Sky Empire, but he hadn't heard it.

"I apologize to the master, but I don't know much about the outside world. So I don't know about the North Moon Empire that you're talking about." Man Gu replied as he apologized.

"Is master from the North Moon Empire?" The man asked.

"Yeah. It's something like this." Long Chen replied in a casual manner.

"I heard that there was an Alchemy Hall in the sect? Do they sell and purchase Alchemy Materials like herbs and stuff?" He asked.

"They do. But a person can only purchase stuff using contribution points. Outside world's money holds no importance in the sect." Man Gu informed him.

"Really? How can I get contribution points then?" Long Chen asked.

He urgently needed the herbs so he could cure his poison.

"There are a few methods. One of them is to complete missions given by the sect. Every disciple has to complete at least one mission each month. The restriction doesn't apply to 4-star disciples though. They don't need to complete any mission if they don't want to. "

"The second method is by getting ranked. Master must have found out about the Rank Hall by now? The Rank Hall gives various ranks to the disciples based on their performance."

"Those who are in the top 50 are given contribution points every month according to their rank. Higher your rank, higher the contribution points you get." Man Gu explained to Long Chen.

"The third method is by selling. Many disciples of the sect sell things, like the medicines they make, or the treasures they craft to the sect or to other disciples. They get contribution points in return."

"And the last option is reserved only for the 4-star disciples. That is to ask their Black Robed Masters to give them contribution points." Man Gu further said with a smile.

"Hmm... tell me more about the ranking thing? I feel like giving that a try." Long Chen said.

"Of Course Master. There are 5 rankings in the Ranking Hall. First is Strength Ranking, which is classified based on the strength of the cultivator. Second is Alchemist rankings. I don't know much about that, but I heard that there are standard tests and your performance gets you points that place you on the ranking respectively."

"The third-ranking is Physician Ranking. It's mostly theoretical about cures for various diseases and stuff."

"The 4th ranking is the Artificer ranking. It's a ranking similar to the Alchemist rankings, but for Artificers. And the final ranking... that's a secret. Only those who are in the top 20 of at least 2 other rankings can participate in the 5th ranking. Only a few people have participated in this throughout the years. They never talked about this ranking and what it's about."

"The 5th ranking is called the Demon Ranking. It is considered the most important ranking by most, followed by the other rankings." Man Gu said with a smile.

"Alright. That's enough for right now. Where is the bedroom?" Long Chen asked as he saw Xun standing in front of him with a pouty look on her face.

"That way, Master." Man Gu said as he pointed towards a room.

"Alright. I'll call you when I need you. Don't disturb me unless it's something important." Long Chen said as he stood up and walked towards the room.

Long Chen entered the room and closed the door.

As he looked back, he saw Xun standing there. She was glaring at him.

"Why are you here? Go outside and talk some more!" She said.

"I'm sorry, I forgot about the important thing. The poison concerned me a little, but I apologize. So, tell me. What was it that you wanted to tell me?" He said in an apologetic tone.

"Hmph." Xun snorted as he started looking in another direction with puffed up cheeks.

"Come on. I already apologized. What do you want me to do?" He said as he moved towards her.

"Nothing. I'll tell you." She finally turned back after a few minutes.

"Tell me then. What was the thing that I needed to know?" He asked as he stepped towards the bed and sat down.

"There are two things I need to tell you."

"First is that I feel like there's a Law Orb in this place. I'm not sure where, but I have a strong feeling that there's a Law Orb in the sect, or nearby." She said to him.

"Ahmm...? So you don't know where the orb is? How can I find the orb in such a big place?" Long Chen said with a confused look on his face.

"Last time the Orb was in a mansion, so it was easy to find. But this time..." Long Chen fell into deep thought as he thought about it.

"What's the second thing?" He inquired as he looked at her.

"It's about your bloodline trial." She said in a straight manner.

"What about my bloodline trial? Will it begin soon?" He asked.

"Nope. It won't start soon... because it has already started." She replied.

"What?" Long Chen said with a look of disbelief on his face.

"What's the test? Why didn't we go to the bloodline temple?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her.

"Well, this trial is quite different than the last one. Though you'll still go to the bloodline temple to get your rewards if you succeed." Xun replied to Long Chen.

"Alright. So what's the trial this time?" He asked with a curious look on his face.

"The trial is about your determination. It's about your worthiness. If you can't pass this trial, then you're not worthy to be the successor of Master." She said as she looked towards him.

Long Chen didn't understand what she was talking about.

"I don't understand. Can you tell me in simpler terms?" Long Chen asked.

Chapter 290 - 290: Bloodline Trial

"I don't understand. Can you tell me about my trial in simpler terms?" Long Chen asked.

"Master's servant can't be defeated by anyone, and you were. That isn't good for the reputation of his successor. Thus the trial is for you to gain back what you lost." Xun replied.

"Your trial is for you to kill. It is to Lang Jing with your own hand. It's to kill the man that toyed with you." She further said.

"Ah... that's easier said than done. You know how strong he is, right? Though don't worry. I was already planning to kill him even before you said it. Just let me cure my poison first." Long Chen said with a slight smile on his face.

"Well, it's not going to be that simple," Xun said with a serious look on her face.

"What do you mean?" Long Chen asked. He was starting to have a bad feeling.

Xun walked closer to him as she gazed into his eyes.

"You felt some restriction when you were trying to break the door, right?" She asked.

"Yeah. I felt like I wasn't able to use my full strength. Maybe there was something in the room that was influencing me." Long Chen replied.

"There was nothing in that room that was affecting you. Try using your full cultivation here." She said.

Long Chen couldn't help but frown as he heard her words.

He stood up as he tried utilizing his cultivation, but he still felt like there was some restriction. Something was stopping him from using his full power.

"I can't use my full strength. Is this because of the poison? That bastard harmed my cultivation as well?" Long Chen exclaimed with anger on his face.

"It's not because of the poison either." Xun further said.

"What do you mean? What is it about then?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her.

"It's the bloodline temple that is preventing you from using your full cultivating. In fact, you can only use around 30 percent of your strength right now." Xun told him.

"What the fuck? I'm supposed to kill that freaking monster and I can't even use my full cultivation?" Long Chen exclaimed with shock on his face.

"Yeah. It's your challenge. Last time you were defeated and almost died. It was mostly because you were weaker than him. Your cultivation was way weaker. Thus, your trial is to kill him with an even weaker cultivation." Xun told him.

"Your cultivation is still the same and you can even increase your cultivation by cultivating, but you can't use more than 30 percent of your cultivation." She further explained.

"Is that even possible? How can I kill him without my full strength? Even with the law of illusion, it's impossible. That man's senses are too sharp. The only possible way to kill him is by using pure strength."

"Let alone overpowering him, I can't even overpower the me of 2 days ago!" He said with an annoyed look on his face.

"It's tough, but it's not impossible. Think of the possibilities. You can increase your comprehension and master the two laws that you already possess to an even greater level. If you do that, there's a possibility that you can overcome this impossible-looking feat." Xun replied to Long Chen after thinking for a while.

"The other possibility is for us to find that Law Orb that's in this place. We don't know what law it contains. If this is one of the Special Law Orbs, then it will be really helpful." She further said.

"So you're saying that I have to increase my comprehension. This trial sounds awfully similar to the last trial. The only difference is that I can't use my cultivation and I'm in the enemy base." Long Chen responded.

"Fortunately, there's no time scare like last time. It's good that it's not like that. It was quite bad last time with the time difference scare. I might have died in the real world if I had taken longer to learn that law." Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his hand as he looked at Xun.

"Although I can't delay. I have to kill Lang Jing and leave. I still have to kill that backstabber Meng after all. But I didn't make a mistake because of that as well. This sect is not that simple." Long Chen muttered softly.

"Lang Jing is only an Elder, but he has a mid sky realm cultivation. Then there are Great Elders as well. I don't even want to think about the Sect Master who is even above that." Long Chen said as he laid back on his bed.

"Hey Xun, I remember that you once said that the ring will guide me to the Law Orb if there's one nearby. Is that true? If I go around the sect, will that help us in finding the Orb?" Long Chen asked.

"It will, but for that, you would have to be quite close to it. Though I advise you against going around doing that. As that would only waste time in most cases." Xun said.

"You don't have to worry too much about it. You're his successor after all. The orb will find its way to you. You just focus on the things that you can do. Like increasing your comprehension and learning better skills."

"Although we are in enemy territory, it's still quite a good opportunity for you to get stronger. If I'm not wrong, this sect should be stronger than even the top sects of the North Moon Empire. Also, I think since it's an evil sect, it must possess quite strong skills. You can take advantage of this opportunity." She said with a smile.

"True. I can use the sect for myself. Since they dared to kidnap me, it's only fair if they pay for my stay. But first, I need to get the herbs. And for that, it's time that I make a name for myself in the Sect." Long Chen let out with a smirk.

Chapter 291 - 291: Mingyu's Reaction

"True. I can use the sect for myself. Since they dared to kidnap me, it's only fair if they pay for my stay. But first, I need to get the herbs. And for that, it's time that I make a name for myself in the Sect." Long Chen let out with a smirk.

"It's quite unfortunate that I don't have my complete strength. It would have helped me in the strength ranking. I don't know how that works, but apparently, the contribution points depend on the rank." Long Chen talked to himself.

Far, far away from Long Chen, three of his closest companions were standing together.

Ji Shan had just told Mingyu and Zhiqing about Long Chen's death.

The reactions of both the girls differed quite a lot.

While Zhiqing started crying as the sadness embraced her heart, Mingyu was only worried. There was no tear in her eyes, but there was an extremely worried look on her face.

Ji Shan couldn't understand why they both reacted so differently. He felt like Zhiqing's reaction was much normal compared to Mingyu.

He somehow felt like Mingyu didn't care for Long Chen as much as Zhiqing cared for him. At that point in time, he lost quite a lot of respect for Mingyu in his heart.

He felt bad for Long Chen who had a wife that didn't even cry over his death.

Not only did Mingyu not cry, she instead tried to stop Zhiqing as well.

"Don't cry. He's alive. I'm not sure about his condition, though, that's why we must save him!" Mingyu said.

"This..." Ji Shan gazed at Mingyu as he sighed.

'She's in denial. I guess I was wrong. She did care for him. It's just that she can't believe that he's dead.' Ji Shan thought as he gazed at her.

"Sister in law, As much as I hate to say this, it's the truth. All I saw were the dead bodies there." Ji Shan said as he remembered the horrendous scene he thought.

"They weren't Long Chen's bodies. He's still alive. I think that he must have been caught by those people. They took him with them to their base." She said with worry clear on her face.

"We need to save him at all costs." She declared.

"Why do you think that they took him? We killed their people, why would they keep him alive?" Ji Shan pointed out the hole in that theory.

"I can't explain much, but It's his destiny. He can't die. You don't have to believe me. You don't have to help me either. I'll find them on my own." Mingyu said with a determination filled voice.

"I... Even if I believe you. But how can we find those people?" Ji Shan somehow believed her words. Even he himself didn't know why though.

"I have a theory. Those people... It was clear that they were way stronger than the Beast Hall branch. And the way they slaughtered everyone, it's clear that they came here just to kill. What does that mean?" Mingyu asked as she looked at Ji Shan.

"It means that they hated the Beast Hall There must be some enmity between them and the Beast Hall, but why would the Beast Hall offend someone as strong as them? Just from the assault squad, it was clear that the enemy was way stronger than the Beast Hall." Ji Shan said.

"The ones that sent those people should be as strong as the Main Beast Hall if I'm not wrong." He further said.

"That's right. Even after knowing the backing of this Beast Hall branch, they dared to attack. It means they are as strong as the Main Beast Hall. I think the Main Hall must be the one that offended them, but since they couldn't attack that, they destroyed their branch." Mingyu explained what she thought.

"To find the enemy, we must go to the Main Beast Hall first." She further said.

"That makes sense, but the Main Beast Hall location is not known. Only a few people know its exact location." Ji Shan said with a concerned look on his face.

"Your father was a disciple of the Main Beast Hall, right? He should know about it." Mingyu said.

"That's true, but I doubt that my old man will tell me. Apparently, the Main Beast Hall doesn't allow their disciples to disclose their location." Ji Shan said.

"This time he should. The Branch of Beast Hall being destroyed is an important matter. We can act as the messengers and give the information to the Main Beast Hall. That way, your father might tell us." She said.

"Alright. We'll go with that plan. I hope that brother Chen is still alive." Ji Shan said.

He brought out his Soul Devouring Wolf and the Dark Horse from his Beast Bag.

"We should begin our travel for my Empire. Unfortunately, we don't have a flying beast. You girls can use the Dark Horse." He said.

Mingyu and Zhiqing climbed on top of the Dark Horse while Ji Shan climbed on top of the Soul Devouring Wolf as they began their journey. The journey to find Long Chen.

The Soul Devouring Wolf took the lead while the Dark Horse followed the lead.

Back at the Dark Soul Sect, Long Chen had left his courtyard with Man Gu. He wanted the contribution points so that he could get the herbs to make the Thousand Poison Healing Pill.

Long Chen was wearing a clean Yellow Robe. He had also placed his 4-star disciple badge on his chest.

Man Gu led Long Chen to the ranking hall.

Quite a few disciples saw Long Chen asking the way. A few of them had even seen him in the morning.

Those who had seen him before saw the 4-star badge on his chest now. They realized that it was true that Elder Jing had taken that boy as his disciple.

The ones who hadn't seen Long Chen in the morning were shocked to see a new 4-star disciple. They wondered which Elder he belonged to.

Long Chen stood in front of the Ranking Hall with Man Gu.

He slowly stepped forward and entered the place.

A lot of people saw him enter.

Chapter 292 - 292: Ranking Battle

Long Chen entered the Ranking Hall under the watchful eyes of everyone present.

There was one person amongst the crowd that was more shocked than others.

He left in a hurry in an effort to

"The new 4-star disciple is going to get ranked. I must tell, Master." That guy left in a hurry while ignoring everything else.

Quite a lot of people left as well. In fact, this small thing was about to become the biggest spectacle for the sect.

Long Chen entered the place. The first thing he saw was 5 doors in front of him.

There was no person or Elder there. That place was completely empty.

Long Chen was slightly surprised. Man Gu hadn't told him that this place was automated.

He stepped closer to the doors and war and to read what the small sign on the door said.

The first door had 'Strength'. The second door had 'Alchemy'. The third day had 'Artificer'. The fourth door had a 'Physician'. The fifth door had the word 'Demon' on it.

All the doors looked the same except the 5th door. It was slightly bigger compared to the others.

There were no locks on the doors.

Long Chen tried pushing the door open, but despite there being no lock, the door didn't open.

Long Chen was wondering why it was when he noticed a small circular shaped opening in the door.

He looked towards his badge and finally noticed that they both had the same size.

'I got it. Since they don't have anyone guard this place, they use the disciples identity badge for them to get tested. That's how they upgrade the rankings as well if I'm not wrong.

Long Chen took the badge out of his chest and placed it inside that small opening.

click

With a light sound, the door opened towards the inside.

Long Chen entered the room of 'Strength' since he didn't want Black Robed Elder Lang Jing to know that he knew Alchemy. At Least not before he cured himself of his poison.

As Long Chen entered the room, the door closed behind him.

The darkroom brightened and Long Chen finally saw the room clearly.

The wall of the room looked similar to the walls of the prison.

"They must have made it so that the room could survive the intense fighting." He muttered.

There was another door in front of him.

That door opened without making him wait for long and a man came out from there. He held a heavy sword in his hand.

"This guy..." Long Chen was stunned.

The man in front of him looked like a proper human, but the man had no breath.

His skin was quite pale as well.

Despite the man not having any breathing, Long Chen was able to see his cultivation.

The man had a cultivation of the peak Gold Core Realm.

"Are they using some special corpse warriors?" He wondered as he looked at the man.

"No matter what. I'll kill him." Long Chen let out as he looked inside his storage ring, but he suddenly realized that he didn't have the King's sword.

"What the fuck!" He cursed as he remembered that the sword was in Lang Jing's hand.

"Looks like I'll have to use the little guy." He muttered with a wry smile on his face as he brought out his Mountain Destroyer from his storage ring.

"Let's see how the restrictions are affecting me." He muttered with a smile.

He ran towards the man as he slashed with his Mountain Destroyer. He noticed that his speed was much slower than it had been before.

Although it was slow, it was still faster than the average speed of a 1st Stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

Long Chen slashed with his sword and it did manage to cut off his left arm, but the man didn't let out any noise. There was no blood that came out either.

The man only swung his big heavy sword that he held in his right hand.

The sword was so big, that it was twice the size of his Mountain Destroyer. Especially in length.

Long Chen jumped back as he dodged the heavy sword.

Even though he moved back, since the sword was so long, it did manage to graze through his skin.

"This bloody restriction!" Long Chen said in an annoyed tone.

The thing he hated the most was the loss of his speed.

He again ran towards the dead man.

The man again swung his heavy sword towards Long Chen, but Long Chen got down to his knees and slid forward. The heavy sword passed from above his head while Long Chen closed the gap between him and the man.

He slashed with his sword and cut off the right leg of the man.

The man lost his balance as he fell to the ground. The sword was released from his hand.

Long Chen stood up as he stepped towards him. He gazed at the heavy sword that was twice his size.

He placed his hand on the hilt of the sword as he picked up the impossibly heavy-looking sword with much ease.

"Not a bad sword." He muttered.

He held the sword in his single hand as he raised it high in the sky and slashed down.

The neck of the man was sliced off. Still, there was no blood.

"As I expected. It must be a corpse puppet they use for the ranking." Long Chen muttered.

He was still in thought when the door again opened and another person entered.

The person was a woman this time.

Although she looked different compared to the previous man as her skin was not pale, she wasn't even breathing.

What shocked him the most was the cultivation of that girl.

The girl had the cultivation of the peak Earth Realm.

"What the fuck is wrong with this order? A peak Earth Realm after a peak gold core realm? How can they rank disciples since most wouldn't be able to defeat the girl?" He thought out loud.

Chapter 293 - 293: Peak Sky Realm?

"What the fuck is wrong with this order? A peak Earth Realm after a peak gold core realm? How can they rank disciples since most wouldn't be able to defeat the girl?" He thought out loud.

The girl didn't give him the time to think through. She straight away attacked Long Chen.

The girl didn't have a sword or any other weapon. She only attacked using her hands.

Even though she used her hand, she was still able to oppose Long Chen's sword.

He didn't understand what was happening. At one instant, the girl even caught the sharp blade of his sword with her bare hands.

"There's something wrong. Her hands should be comparable to an artifact. Just what did those guys do to her?" He thought with a frown.

While the form was holding his sword's blade with one hand, she punched towards Long Chen with the other.

Long Chen also punched out.

Since his heart demon had finished its evolution, Long Chen realized that his strength had increased as well.

Previously, his physical strength was comparable to a peak gold realm cultivator if he didn't use any cultivation. With his cultivation, and his Demon Monarch Physique, he was able to face even the peak Earth Realm cultivators. Now he couldn't use his cultivation to its fullest.

Still, the good thing, for now, was that his strength should be comparable to a 5th or 6th stage Earth Realm cultivator.

Also, He felt like his physical strength that he received because of the Demon Monarch Physique wasn't restricted.

Only his cultivation and his bloodline strength were restricted.

Long Chen and the girl both punched at each other.

Their fists collided with each other, but the result was something he didn't expect.

He was tossed back like a broken kite. His sword was left in the hands of the girl.

"That girl is not a peak Earth Realm Cultivator! She's a Peak Earth Realm Body Cultivator!" Long Chen muttered as he stood up.

He could feel the pain in his hand that had exchanged blows with the girl. Fortunately, the girl wasn't strong enough to break his bones.

The girl threw away the sword that was in her hand.

'I thought I could fight a peak Earth Realm cultivator without using a law, but that doesn't seem possible.' He thought as he sighed.

He began using his law of space as he teleported near his sword that was lying on the ground and picked it up.

The woman ran towards him and punched towards him, but Long Chen disappeared before her punch could land. He appeared right beside her as he stabbed the sword in her chest.

He still didn't ease up as he pulled his sword out and swung it.

Her head was separated from her body and fell down to the ground. Her body soon followed and fell to the ground.

"Much easier when one is the master of space." Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the body of the woman.

He turned back and began looking towards the door as he waited for the next opponent.

The door opened once more as the next person entered.

This time it was an old man. The man had a white beard and white hair. His face was full of wrinkles.

"Are you serious right now?" He let out as he saw the cultivation of the man.

It was a man who was at the peak of the Sky Realm. Also, the man seemed like he was breathing. His eyes weren't blank like the eyes of others as he glanced at him.

"You are my opponent this time? A kid? It doesn't matter. Till now, no one has been able to defeat me. We'll see how far you can go." The old man said with a grin.

Long Chen was surprised to see the man speak. Although the man seemed like living, Long Chen still had a weird feeling. It was like this man was a puppet as well. Though a better quality corpse puppet.

He had no basis for his assumption, but that's the only thing that made sense. There was no way that a peak Sky Realm Cultivator would be signed to test disciples.

Long Chen wasn't even sure if the Grand Elders would have such high cultivation. Only sect masters should be that strong.

"Who are you? Tell me your name, boy. I don't like to beat unknown people?" The old man asked.

"I'm Long Chen. And what made you think that you can beat me? Your superficial cultivation? If I'm not wrong, you're the complete opposite of that girl." Long Chen responded as he pointed towards the girl.

"Although the girl had a strong Physique, she didn't have a brain or skills. You, on the other hand, have a brain and most probably skills as well, but I can see that your body is the weakest. It's even weaker than her who was a peak Earth Realm cultivator." Long Chen further said.

He observed the man as he waited for his response.

"Good observation, kid. Not bad. But even if I have a weak physique, do you think that you can face my skills? Body Cultivators are nothing against Qi Cultivators. I'll show you that! Too bad that I can't kill." The old man said.

He pointed his hand towards Long Chen as a small ball of fire appeared in front of him and moved towards Long Chen with a lightning-fast speed.

Long Chen reacted fast as he swung his sword. The small ball of fire was cut in two halves and the wind pressure from Long Chen's attack diverted both of them in the opposite direction. Not a single spark of fire managed to touch him.

"My turn!" Long Chen said as he grinned.

He got into a familiar sword stance.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Fifth form- Chaos!" Long Chen let out loud as he swung his sword.

A blinding arc of light left his sword and advanced towards the old man.

The old man was surprised as he felt the strength of that attack.

He made a strange motion with his hand.

Chapter 294 - 294: Law Of Gravity

The old man made a strange motion with his hand.

A small golden color lotus appeared in front of the old man.

The lotus seemed like it contained a massive amount of energy. The old man didn't even move and simply stood behind the lotus.

The chaotic slash of Long Chen's attack struck the lotus and something strange happened.

The chaotic energy of the slash was sucked inside the lotus that changed color from golden to red.

Long Chen's eyes opened wide as he saw one of his strongest attacks so easily stopped. Not only was his attack stopped, it was sucked inside the strange lotus.

"Is that what you were so proud of?" The man said with a smile.

"Y-you..." Long Chen was getting angry as he heard the mocking tone of the man.

'The illusion wouldn't have worked on the last girl because she didn't have a soul or a brain for that matter, but it doesn't look like this man is like that.' Long Chen thought as he glanced at the old man.

His eyes changed color and now it looked like a mist was surrounding his eyes.

Long Chen began using his law of illusion.

The old man began looking considered.

He saw Long Chen running towards him despite his attack being destroyed. He made another hand gesture. The lotus that had absorbed the attack sent the attack back as it gained back its original color.

Now the attack of Long Chen was coming to target him, but that wasn't real Long Chen, but an illusion of himself created using the law of illusion.

Long Chen was standing on the side and slowly walking towards Long Chen.

The chaotic attack was about to land on the illusion, but before it could, the old man saw Long Chen dodge the attack with the speed he had never seen before. Of Course, it wasn't real.

Long Chen was just outside the 10 meters range of the old man, but as soon as his feet landed within the 10 meters, a frown appeared on the old man's face.

The old man had set a formation around himself that had a diameter of 20 meters with him at the center.

As Long Chen stepped inside, he sensed it.

He looked towards the illusion of Long Chen that was in front of him as a smile appeared in front of him.

"Interesting." He said with a smile.

He tapped his feet on the ground as the gravity around him changed.

"Ugh..." Long Chen was walking towards the old man, but suddenly the gravity changed and everything was a thousand times heavier.

He fell down to his knees without even the slightest resistance.

This attack looked like the same thing that the Grand Elder from the Thunder Giant Sect had used on Long Chen when he was in the Glorious Blossom sect, the only difference was that Long Chen was able to resist the attack the previous time, but this time, it was much more powerful.

The Grand Elder of the Glorious Blossom Sect was much weaker compared to the man in front of him, also Long Chen's cultivation wasn't restricted by 70 percent at that time, but everything was against him now.

His Illusion broke as he dropped to his knees and he lost focus.

The old man finally saw Long Chen... the real one.

"That was quite interesting, I must say. You can be pretty dangerous again against the ones that are ignorant, but it won't work on most of the experienced cultivators." The old man said as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Chains of restriction!" The old man said.

More than 20 chains that were made from stone came out of the ground and trapped Long Chen. The gravity wasn't lifted as well.

"You lost!" The old man said as he sighed in disappointment.

"I expected better, but I guess it's not that bad either. You lasted for 20 minutes. It's quite good compared to others." The old man said as he glanced at Long Chen.

"You can leave." He said as he turned back and left from where he came.

The chains and the gravity disappeared.

'He wasn't a Corpse Puppet.' Long Chen thought as he stood up.

Originally, he could have teleported when he was under the influence of gravity, but he didn't do it since he realized that it wasn't normal gravity.

He had realized that the strength of this gravity was fierce because it was created using the Law of Gravity.

A corpse puppet shouldn't have been able to use the Law of Gravity. And if this man wasn't a puppet, then the only thing possible was that he was a Grand Elder of the sect.

He was already regretting exposing his law of Illusion, fortunately, the man didn't see him use the Law of Space.

The one thing he realized after the battle was that he needed to increase his comprehension and Strengthen his law.

Especially the Law of Illusion. Without the limitation of this skill, the law of Illusion would have been 10 times more powerful.

Unfortunately, he can't teleport while keeping the illusion intact, since one of the limitations of the skill was that the focus should never be shifted from the target. When teleporting, he had to pass through space, thus it was impossible to watch his target in that short moment.

Long Chen knew that it was impossible to defeat a peak Sky realm cultivator at the moment, but he was still quite annoyed. It was his second defeat after all.

His heart was slowly getting filled with anger that was just waiting to explode.

Long Chen stood up and left the room.

After leaving the room, he left the Ranking Hall without wasting time.

As he left the hall, he saw that there were hundreds of yellow-robed disciples out there.

He also noticed quite a few 4-star disciples as well.

One of the 4-star disciples stepped towards him.

It was a boy who looked to be 18-19 years old.

Chapter 295 - 295: Cutting The Hand

"Yo, you must be the disciple of Elder Jing. You're nothing special I guess. I wonder where someone like Elder Jing would have picked you. So what happened inside? Were you defeated by the Gold Core Realm puppet?" The boy said.

Long Chen could see the 4-star badge on the person's chest, but he didn't care at the moment.

He, who was already angry, was getting even angrier at the condescending tone of the person he didn't even know.

He ignored the boy as he turned to leave.

"Hey, trash! Did you not hear me? Answer me!" The boy said as he placed his hand on Long Chen's shoulders.

At that moment, Long Chen lost his control as he caught the boy's hand and tossed him out like a ball.

The man crashed 50 meters away from Long Chen.

"Touch me once more and you'll lose that hand of yours. They defeated me doesn't mean the others get the right to jump in front of me!" Long Chen said in a heavy tone.

"Man Gu, let's go." He said as he turned back to leave.

The man Long Chen had tossed, stood up. He looked around and he could see the mocking gaze of others.

Especially the other 4 star disciples. He felt like they were silently making fun of him from being manhandled by a kid.

The man brought out his sword from his storage ring as he ran towards Long Chen like a mad man.

Long Chen was already using his divine sense to keep an eye on the man since he had learned to never leave his back open for assault.

He had hoped for the man to not attack him, but now that he did, Long Chen also decided to play his game.

The man got near Long Chen as he thrust his sword towards Long Chen's shoulders. Although he was angry, he didn't want to kill Long Chen since

Long Chen was a disciple of a Black-Robed Elder as well. He just wanted to punish him a little.

The sword was about to strike Long Chen, but at that moment, he skillfully moved his feet as he dodged to the side.

He didn't stop with that. His feet skillfully danced as he turned around.

His sword appeared in his hand, as Long Chen swung it towards his target.

The Mountain Destroyer sliced through the hands of the boy. His sword and his hand, both fell to the ground, but not before his scream escaped his mouth.

He screamed like a dying pig as he fell down to the ground and cried in pain.

The only sound that could be heard in that place, was the sound of that boy screaming in agony.

The others were completely silent as they watched everything with their mouths wide open. The scene was enough to send a chill down their spines.

"My... my master will kill you!" He roared as he clenched his teeth.

"You attacked me first. Also, if your Master still wants to act tough, tell them to go talk to Elder Lang Jing first. Also, if you don't want your second hand to be cut off as well, you better stay silent. Your dog-like barking is annoying me even more!" Long Chen said as he glared at the boy.

The boy hurriedly shut his mouth as he clenched his teeth so that the sound didn't escape his mouth.

'This boy!!! He's simply crazy!' He thought.

Long Chen left with Man Gu.

He already knew that the results of the Ranking would be updated the next day and he would get the contribution points tomorrow as well. Thus, there was no need to stay here.

Long Chen left, but the others stayed there in shock.

"That boy... He's so similar to senior brother Mu Zheng. He's not to be offended by the ones with no Strength. Only the top 5 in the strength rankings can teach him a lesson!" One of the 4-star disciples thought out loud.

The others heard his words and simply nodded their heads.

A few people stepped forward to help the boy as they took him to the Medicine Hall.

There was a beautiful Palace inside the Dark Soul Sect. It was constructed at the place with the densest Qi inside the Demon Valley.

There was a throne on the hall that looked a little intimidating because it was covered in blood.

A woman was sitting on the throne as she looked at the man standing in front of him.

The man had white hair and a white beard. His face was filled with wrinkles and he looked quite old.

"Grand Elder Chu, You tested the boy that was brought back by Lang Jing. What do you think about him?" The woman asked. Although her expressions were serious, there was some charm in her voice.

"I did face the boy and I must say that he did surprise me. He had quite a few unorthodox skills, and surprisingly, he even knew a Law. It should be a law related to illusions if I'm not wrong." Grand Elder Chu replied in full seriousness.

"I can quite honestly say, that if I hadn't had hundreds of years of experience, and if I had the same cultivation as him, there was no chance that I would have won." He further said as he remembered Long Chen's performance.

"What do you think Lang Jing is planning? He brought an unknown person here and took him as his disciple." She muttered.

"I have a feeling that he's planning something. His activities have been quite suspicious on occasions. He has been acting quite different and mysterious since his father was killed by you in that battle." Grand Elder Chu said.

"Sigh... We can't even kill him. Since quite a few Grand Elders like that guy. Also, there's no proof that he's doing something wrong." He further said.

"Keep an eye on Lang Jing and send someone to look out for that boy. I'll kill them both myself if I found out that they were involved in activities that were against our sect." She said with a determination filled voice.

Chapter 296 - 296: You Leave Me No Choice

Long Chen stepped inside his courtyard and entered the bedroom as he closed the door.

He turned back, only to find Xun sitting on the bed.

"Now you understand the importance of a law, don't you?" She said with a smile.

"Yeah. I need to gain stronger control over my laws and remove the limitations. The law of Illusion is versatile and would be really helpful without the limitations and the Law of Space is a supreme law." Long Chen said.

"The possibilities are endless. I have barely managed to scratch the surface at the moment. I can't fall behind and waste the opportunity that I have." He further said in a voice filled with determination.

He walked to a corner and sat in a meditative position as he began meditating to calm his mind.

After his mind had calmed down, he sent his consciousness inside his martial space. As his consciousness entered the martial space, he noticed that his martial soul was just like before. Nothing had changed as it kept standing there.

His Red Core was still lightening his martial space while his World Seed floated at the center of the Martial Space.

He also saw his heart demon. His heart demon looked the same as him. The only thing that differentiated them was that the heart demon had two horns on his head.

The heart demon seemed like it was sleeping at the moment.

There were two more things that attracted his attention.

The Law of Space sapling and the Law of Illusion seed.

Since his comprehension about the law of illusion hadn't reached a proper threshold, his Illusion law seed hadn't evolved into a sapling of knowledge. It was the same as before, unlike the law of space seed that had evolved.

Long Chen started observing his Illusory looking law seed through his consciousness. He could feel that the seed itself had many mysteries inside the

illusion. He kept looking at the Illusory looking seed for hours as he stayed in his meditative position.

In another corner of the sect, there was a Black-Robed Elder sitting on a chair.

The Black Robed Elder was a woman who looked like she was in her 70s. She was reading a book in peace.

Suddenly, there was a knock on the door.

"Come in." The Elder said.

The door opened and someone entered in a hurry.

It was a kid who looked like he was 14-15 years old. The Little Kid had a cultivation at the peak of the Gold Core Realm.

"Master!" The little boy said as he breathed heavily. It seemed like he had been running for quite a long time.

"Little Zi, what happened? Why are you in such a hurry?" The woman said with a concerned look on her face.

"S-senior brother Tiyu! He is in the Medicine Hall! Someone cut off his hand!" The boy said with teary eyes.

"What!" The woman stood up in a shock as her eyes opened wide.

She hurriedly ran outside and called out for her Winged Lion.

A majestic looking Winged Lion came flying and landed in front of her. She hurriedly climbed on top of the Winged Lion with the boy she called little Zi.

The Winged Lion started flying towards the Medicine Hall.

It took them around 5 minutes before the Winged Lion landed in front of the Medicine Hall.

She hurriedly got off the Winged Lion and entered the Medicine Hall with little Zi.

As she entered, she was led to a certain room.

She entered the room and saw her precious disciple lying on a bed. He was groaning in pain as the physician wrapped the wound.

The first thing she noticed was that he was missing his right hand.

"Tiyu! Who dared to do this to you?" Elder Biyu said in a shrill tone.

"It... it was done by that new kid, Master! The trash that Elder Jing took as his disciple! He attacked me for no reason, Master! You must kill him and take revenge for me!" The boy clenched his teeth as he said with tears in his eyes. He looked quite pitiful at the moment.

'No matter whose disciple it was! He will be punished! He cut your hand, it's only fair that I cut off both his hands and legs!" She said as anger clouded her face.

"Take care of little Tiyu, Elder Mu." She said as she looked towards the physician treating the boy.

She turned back and left.

She climbed on top of her Winged Lion as it began flying.

She knew where Lang Jing's previous disciple lived, thus she was sure that the new one must be living there as well.

She wanted to punish him as soon as she could, but as the Winged Lion was flying, it suddenly stopped.

There was another Winged Lion at the front. A man was sitting on top of that Winged Lion.

The man didn't look much old, but he had a scar on his forehead.

"Where do you think you're going, Elder Biyu?" The man said with a smile on his face.

"Get out of my way! You have nothing to do with where I decide to go!" She said straight away.

"True. I don't care wherever you go, as long as it's not towards the courtyard of my disciple. You understand what I'm saying, right?" The man said as a smirk appeared on his face.

The woman realized that the man knew about her purpose. She had no reason to hide it anymore.

"Your disciple cut off the hand of my disciple! He deserves to be punished! I don't care what you think, but today, I'll cut off his hand." She said as she glared at Lang Jing.

"Are you sure about that? A kid who is not even 17 years old cut off the arm of a 20-year-old kid, and now a 300-year-old woman is going to punish him? You'll involve yourself in a kids fight? Don't you have any shame, Elder Biyu?" He said with a smirk.

"I don't care what you say! Today, I will cut off the arms of your disciple, no matter what!" She said as she looked at him.

"You leave me no choice, Old woman." Lang Jing said as his smile disappeared. He got off the Winged Lion and floated in the air.

"Let me see how you cut off his arms." He said as his whole aura changed.

His killing intent was so high, that even the people that were far from him were able to sense it.

Most of the disciples were shivering as they felt the powerful aura.

Chapter 297 - 297: I'll Kill You

Most of the disciples were shivering as they felt the powerful aura of Lang Jing.

"Lang Jing! You dare oppose me for a trash disciple? Have you forgotten that I'm older than you?" Elder Biyu said as she got off her Winged Lion as well.

"We are in the Dark Soul Sect! Respect is not earned because of age, but because of strength. If you have the strength to go past me, I'll respect you and let you do anything you want, but if you can't even defeat me, then what respect are you talking about?" Lang Jing said in a heavy tone.

"You insolent man!" She roared loudly as a staff appeared in her hand.

"Infernal Phoenix!" She said as she used her special skill.

More than 10 phoenixes, entirely made from fire, appeared near her as that started flying around her.

A frown appeared on Lang Jing's face. It was a well-known attack of Elder Biyu. Although he hadn't fought Elder Biyu before, he had heard of her powerful strength.

"Go, my children!" The woman let out.

All the blazing Phoenixes came flying towards Lang Jing.

"Wall of Ice!" Lang Jing said as an ice wall appeared between him and the blazing phoenixes. The phoenixes struck the barrier, but none of them was able to break his barrier.

The phoenixes were destroyed and the only thing that remained was the powerful Barrier of Ice.

That ice wall disappeared after some time and revealed the face of Elder Lang Jing who was still standing on his original spot.

The only thing that was different was that he had a sword in his hand now.

"That was it? Elder Biyu's powerful attack was just that? I gotta say, I expected better. I'm a bit disappointed." Lang Jing said in a disappointed tone.

"You!!!" She roared in anger, but before she could do anything, Lang Jing finally moved.

Elder Biyu had only blinked her eyes, but in that short moment, she found Lang Jing standing right before her as his sword was resting on her neck.

"H-how..." She stuttered as she couldn't believe her eyes.

Just how was Lang Jing so fast?

"What do you say, should I slice your neck off your body?" Lang Jing said with a smirk on his face as he slightly pressed the blade of his sword on her neck.

"The Sect Master would kill you if you dare kill an Elder!" Elder Biyu said as she looked in his eyes.

Although she looked brave, the sweat on her face was making it clear that she was worried for her life.

"Are you giving me the threat of the Sect Master? Even she can't do injustice and go against the rules. You, despite being an Elder, dared to target my young disciple. I think I have all the right in the world to kill you right now." Lang Jing said as he glared in her eyes. He didn't look intimidated by the threat in the least.

The old woman felt like he was serious and she might die. At the moment, all the thoughts of revenge in her mind had been replaced by the thoughts of self-preservation.

"L-lang Jing... Let me go. I promise I won't target your disciple. I won't involve myself in the fights of the young ones." She replied in a hurry.

Her heartbeat was getting faster and faster.

"I hope you won't forget your words, or I wouldn't mind decreasing the numbers of Black-Robed Elders in the sect by one." He said as he finally smiled and retracted his killing intent.

He removed his sword from her neck and turned back. He climbed on top of his Winged Lion and left.

The old woman called Elder Biyu was left standing there in silence.

She touched her neck and felt a little pain. There was a small wound on her neck that was bleeding, but not much.

She realized that it was kind of a warning from Lang Jing.

The woman turned back and left on her Winged Lion.

She realized that she couldn't harm Long Chen. Not in the open, at least.

A Winged Lion landed in front of Long Chen's courtyard and a man got off the Winged Lion.

"This boy...I told him to not do one thing, and he just had to do it just the next day." He muttered with an annoyed look on his face as he walked towards the courtyard.

Although he wanted to break the door open, he simply knocked on the door.

Man Gu opened the door.

He was stunned to see Lang Jing standing outside. He hurriedly stepped aside as he allowed him to enter.

"Where's Long Chen?" Lang Jing asked Man Gu.

"Master is in his room. He told me to not disturb him, so he might be cultivating." Man Gu replied as he pointed towards the door.

He didn't dare lie to a Black-Robed Elder, also he had no reason to. Long Chen was his disciple.

Lang Jing stepped towards the door and knocked on it heavily.

Long Chen who was still lost in his comprehension didn't ever hear the sound of the door knocking.

Lang Jing kept knocking, but the door didn't open.

Ultimately, he got annoyed as he got ready to break the door open, but Man Gu stopped him.

"There's a spare key, Master." Man Gu said. He didn't wish Lang Jing to get angry at Long Chen.

"Bring it to me!" Lang Jing said as he stopped his fist that was about to break the door open.

Man Gu came to him with a key and unlocked the door.

Lang Jing entered the room and closed the door behind him. He didn't want Man Gu to see anything that happened.

As he entered the room, he was stunned to see Long Chen, who was sitting in a meditative position.

He had his eyes closed, but Lang Jing had a strange feeling as he watched Long Chen.

He felt like Long Chen was looking different. There was an illusory force around him that was surrounding him.

Chapter 298 - 298: Poison

Lang Jing felt like Long Chen was looking somewhat different. There was like an illusory force around him, that was surrounding him.

"Is he about to have a breakthrough?" He muttered as he gazed at Long Chen.

"Geez, this kid is strange." He said as he looked at Long Chen.

He turned back and left the room since he didn't want to disturb Long Chen's cultivation and he didn't want to wait for days either.

"When he completes his cultivation, tell him to contact me. Give him this talisman, he can use it to call him when there is a need. Also, Keep an eye out on the surroundings. No harm should come to him." Lang Jing said as he left the courtyard.

"Sigh, I couldn't even finish my tea. I had to leave in such a hurry, after finding out about what he did, to save his ass. After all that, I didn't even get to scold him." He sighed as he climbed on top of his Winged Lion and left.

Long Chen was still lost inside his martial space and he had no idea that Lang Jing had come to look for him and even left.

As he started at the Illusion Law Seed, he was finally starting to find out the complexities behind the Law Seed.

As he kept looking at it, he felt like he was living through an illusion. Nothing was real. Even the world he thought to be real wasn't real.

It was nothing but an illusion of reality, just like the Illusory seed in front of him.

The restrictions on his illusion, the limitations, it was all an illusion that he himself wasn't able to break through. He had a feeling that as long as he mastered the illusion, the Illusory lock on his Illusion Skill would unlock.

Days kept passing slowly. Days that Long Chen spent in his comprehension in order to understand the mysteries behind his law.

While Long Chen was inside his courtyard, the sect outside was in complete chaos as the new Ranking List had just come out.

The unknown boy that had just entered the sect was now at the 3rd rank in the strength ranking.

The first person on the ranking was someone called Mu Zheng who had 2167 points.

The second person on the strength ranking was Chu Miao with 2150 Points.

And finally, the third person on the rankings was the new kid that appeared out of nowhere. It was Long Chen with 2149 points. He was just a single point short of taking second place in the strength ranking.

Su Zhen, the girl who previously held the third place was now on 4th. Everyone below her slid down one spot as well. There were no other changes except that.

Quite a few disciples that saw the rankings were surprised. They hurriedly left to inform the others about the change in rankings.

None of them had expected Elder Lang Jing's disciple to take such a high rank at such a young age.

Back in a courtyard, a man was sitting on the ground. He looked like he had just finished his cultivation when someone came to inform him about the new rankings.

"Interesting... After Mu Chan, Elder Jing found another freak. Not bad at all." The man said with a smile.

He was Mu Zhen, the first rank in the Strength Ranking.

In another place, a girl had gotten the information as well.

"He's just one point below me? Didn't you say that he was 16? How can he be as strong as me?" The girl let out with surprise on her face.

The girl looked to be in her early 20s.

There was another girl who got the information, but she wasn't too happy.

She has just dropped down a ranking. It was the same as her being defeated by an unknown person who had just entered the sect. She had already started hating Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't know any of this and even if he knew, he wouldn't have cared for it since he had other important concerns at the moment.

It was the 7th day of Long Chen inside the sect and he finally opened his eyes.

Although he wasn't able to comprehend the law of Illusion to its fullest, he did feel like his understanding of the law was better than before.

Long Chen stood up and stretched his arms. It felt good to finally move the body after so long.

He walked towards the door of his room when he suddenly felt some pain in his body.

It felt like thousands of poisonous ants were biting onto his body.

"Ughh... what is happening..." He fell down to his knees as he groaned in pain.

He was trying to understand what was happening when he suddenly remembered that he had poison in his body.

He was supposed to take a suppressant pill to keep the poison sleeping for another week.

He was already given the pill by Lang Jing. Because of comprehension, he had completely forgotten that it was soon about to be the 7th day since he was brought here by him.

He took out the pill that was given to him by the Black Robed Elder Lang Jing and swallowed the pill.

His pain was increasing constantly, but after a few minutes, the pain stopped as the poison stopped acting up.

"That man... he wasn't lying. He did put a strange poison in me. These effects, I haven't heard of any poison feeling like this." Long Chen weakly said as he stood up.

He gave up on the idea of going out and walked back to his bed.

He fell onto his bed and fell asleep.

Far away from the Dark Soul Sect, there was an Empire.

The Empire was known as the Blazing Sun Empire. It was the neighbor of the North Moon Empire.

Another thing, that was important, was that Ji Shan was the Second Prince of the Empire.

At the moment, Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing... they were just outside the Blazing Sun Empire.

Chapter 299 - 299: Meeting The Emperor

Ji Shan, Mingyu, and Zhiqing were standing just outside the Blazing Sun Empire.

They had traveled day and night just to get to the Blazing Sun Empire as fast as they could.

Fortunately, throughout the journey, they didn't face any major trouble.

Although they did face a few bandit groups, those were easily taken care of.

They kept their faces hidden under their cloaks throughout the journey since Ji Shan was that target of a few assassins.

Although Ji Shan didn't face the assassins after the first attack on him, before he met Long Chen, he still decided to keep caution.

After the long journey, they finally reached the Blazing Sun Empire, though it still wasn't their destination.

Ji Shan didn't consider himself safe from the enemies until he entered the Royal Capital of the Blazing Sun Empire.

They entered the Blazing Sun Empire and moved at full speed.

Even though they traveled without any break, it still took them 6 hours to get to the Royal Capital of the Empire.

Ji Shan was on his Soul Devouring Wolf while Mingyu and Zhiqing were on the dark horse. They had to stop right before the entrance of the city as there were carriages in front of him that were going through checking.

It was a known fact that the Royal Capital had a stricter security since the Royal Family and the sects were there.

The carriages entered the city after the checking was completed.

The Soul Devouring Wolf and the Dark Horse carried Ji Shan and others forward and stopped right before the guards.

The Royal guards were a little surprised as they saw the Soul Devouring Wolf since their Royal Prince also had a similar Beast

"Who are you? And what reason do you have to enter the Royal Capital?"
The Royal Guard asked.

"I'm the Second Prince Ji Shan. I just came back from my adventures with my friends. Also, Do I really need a reason to enter my own city?" Ji Shan said with a smile as he revealed his face.

He even showed the Royal Seal of the Second Prince.

"Your Highness!" The Guards let out as they got down on one knee and greeted Ji Shan.

"Alright. Now move aside and let me enter. I have more important business to attend to." Ji Shan ordered.

The Royal Guards hurriedly moved aside as they allowed them to enter.

Ji Shan and the Soul Devouring Wolf took the lead while the girls on the Darkhorse followed.

After a few more minutes, they had finally reached the Royal Palace.

They all got off the beasts and Ji Shan sent them back inside his beast bag.

They entered the Royal Palace with Ji Shan in the lead and the girls in the back.

All the servants recognized their Second Prince and saluted him as soon as they saw him.

Ji Shan nodded his head in appreciation as he continued ahead.

They walked through the long hallways of the Royal Palace.

"Hmm...? If it isn't little Brother Shan? You're back quite soon brother?"

A man who looked like he was in his mid-20s had just come out of his room when he noticed Ji Shan.

He was the first Prince of the Empire, Ji Shen.

The Empire had no crown Prince at the moment since the 4th Prince who was declared as the Crown Prince had died.

"Were you hoping that I wouldn't come back, brother?" Ji Shan said without a hint of a smile.

Previously, he would have behaved more courteously, but he was pretty sure that Ji Shen had poisoned him before he left. He had lost what basic respect he had for Ji Shen.

"Your mood seems bad, Did something happen on the journey?" Ji Shen didn't mind his rude tone. He still acted kind and generous.

"Who are the beautiful girls being you? Did you already find concubines for you?" Ji Shen further said as he looked at the girls.

"They are my sisters. Also, I don't have time to waste at the moment. I need to meet the Royal father. So, please excuse me, brother." Ji Shan said as he walked past Ji Shen, with Mingyu and Zhiqing.

As they left, the smile on Ji Shen's face immediately disappeared. His previously kind face was now looking quite ruthless.

He walked back to his room.

Ji Shan knocked on the door of his father's room.

His father's condition wasn't great, thus he spent most of his time inside his room.

"Come inside." A voice came from inside.

Ji Shan opened the door and entered.

"Father," He greeted as he got down to one knee. Mingyu and Zhiqing also bowed slightly.

There was a man lying on the bed in front of him.

The man was quite fat unlike the athletic First Prince and the Second Prince. His face was chubby as well.

Although the man looked physically healthy, there was a weakness that could only be seen in his eyes.

"Little Shan... you're back quite early. How was your adventure outside?" The man said with a smile.

"It was not good, father. That's what I need to talk to you about." Ji Shan said as he shook his head in denial.

"First let me introduce them. She is Mingyu and this is Zhiqing. They are both like my sisters. I hope you won't mind them being here. Anyways, back to the topic..."

Ji Shan started describing everything that happened with him since the moment he left the Empire. He talked about the assassination attempt on him, his journey after that.

The Emperor kept getting surprised the more he heard it. Fortunately, he didn't get much worried since he could see that Ji Shan was standing safe in front of him.

"I can't believe that someone dared to attack you right outside the empire. I'll send someone to investigate and find out the culprit." The Emperor let out with a furious expression on his face.

The Prince getting attacked right outside the Empire was a serious matter.

Chapter 300 - 300: Meeting At Beast Hall

"That's not all father. After we entered the Beast Hall as temporary disciples..." Ji Shan got onto the main part. The thing he actually wanted to talk about.

"The Beast Hall branch was destroyed by the mysterious men? Black Robed and Red Robed? Sky Realm cultivators?" Emperor Ji Mu frowned as he heard about it.

He somewhat realized who the enemy was. He couldn't believe that they attacked a branch so far away though.

"The assailants were from the Dark Soul Sect if I'm not wrong." He let out with a serious look on his face.

"Dark Soul Sect? Why have I never heard of them before?" Ji Shan exclaimed in surprise.

"You're not at that level yet. The Dark Soul Sect is one of the Evil Sects. Since the Beast Sect is a righteous Sect, there had been quite a few skirmishes between the both. Although I can't be 100 percent sure if it was them, I do know that their Elders are classified based on their color of robes."

"A Red Robed Elder is a peak Earth Realm cultivator while Black Robed Elders are the ones who are in the Sky Realm. From your description, it's most likely them. Unfortunately, I don't know where the Main Dark Soul Sect is established." Emperor Ji Mu explained.

"Father, Please allow us to go to the Beast Hall with the information. We should inform them." Ji Shan said.

"I can't let you go. It'll be against the rules if I tell you their location. Also, you don't need to go inform them personally. They must have gotten the information by now already." Emperor Ji Mu shook his head as he said.

"Please let us go, father. How can they know about the destruction of the branch?" Ji Shan couldn't understand.

"The Dark Soul Sect is such a giant existence, why do you think they would destroy a branch of the Beast Hall? Most probably, it's to provoke them. They must have informed the main Beast Hall themselves of what they did." Emperor Ji Mu said.

"Still, father. We should inform them from our side as well. I'm sure they'll understand if I go there. We can also take back my friend with their help." Ji Shan tried to persuade his father, but it didn't seem to be working.

"I understand that you care for your friend, but I'm sure that he'll be dead by now. The Dark Soul Sect doesn't have any kind people who are afraid to kill. They kill at any opportunity they get. It's just a false hope that you're keeping alive. Give up, Son," He said.

"But father..."

"No, but, My decision is final. I'm not sending you to the Beast Hall. It's not something you need to involve yourself in. You can leave."

Ji Shan tried speaking, but the Emperor stopped him as he ordered him to leave.

"Your Majesty, Someone I care about has been taken by them. I request you to please tell me the location of Beast Hall. Only those people will know the location of those men."

"I understand that you care for your son, that's why we'll be the only one going. I promise you that Prince Shan will stay behind. We won't get him involved," Mingyu requested as she saw that the situation wasn't going the way Ji Shan had expected.

"I understand your emotion, little girl. But I'm bound by the rules of the Beast Hall. I can't inform anyone about its location. Leave now. It's time for me to sleep." Emperor Ji Mu replied to Mingyu. He closed his eyes.

Ji Shan and Mingyu tried talking again, but the Emperor pretended to be asleep and didn't reply.

Ultimately, they couldn't do anything. They left the hall. They had to change the plan, but even that needed time.

Ji Shan arranged for Mingyu and Zhiqing to sleep in a room that was near his room.

Far away from the Blazing Sun Empire, there was a beautiful mountain. The mountain was shrouded with beautiful snow.

There was a beautiful sect on this mountain that was known as the Beast Hall. It was most famous for its fierce Beast Tamers.

The Beast Hall was one of the strongest forces of this continent and its members were all said to be strong since they had so many powerful tamed beasts that did the fighting for them.

Inside a large hall, around 20 people were sitting around a rectangular table.

Surprisingly, there was no one inside the hall that had the cultivation weaker than the Sky Realm.

The person sitting on the main chair was the Hall Master, while the others were the Elders.

The Hall Master looked to be in his early 50s. He had a black beard and long silver hair.

"Hall Master, we can't stay silent anymore! Those guys dared to destroy the branch of our Beast Hall and sent the head of the branch leader on our doors. They're clearly provoking us!" One of the Elders said.

"It's true. I was thinking that they would retaliate against us for destroying their branch and for killing their 4-star disciple, but I didn't expect them to be so cowardly and attack our branch." Another Elder sighed.

"There's no doubt about it. That evil sect needs to be destroyed." Another Elder chimed in.

"I agree as well. We must take action!"

Slowly all the Elders gave their opinions and mostly just repeated the thing about attacking them.

The Hall Master sighed as he glanced at all of them.

"Does anyone here know the location of the Dark Soul Sect?" Hall Master asked as he sighed.

The Elders shook their heads as they started looking down.

"We were lucky last time that we managed to locate their branch and we destroyed it, but their Headquarters? That still remains a mystery. How can we attack them when we don't even know their location?" The Hall Master spoke heavily.

"We could have found out their location if Elder Ju hadn't killed that 4-star disciple." One of the elders said in annoyance as he looked towards a bald Elder.

Chapter 301 - 301: Demon Of The Sect

"Hey, Can you stop blaming me for it? That boy was crazy! I tried capturing him, but he was surprisingly powerful. I had no choice but to kill him." Elder Ju responded in a loud tone.

He realized that he had screwed up by killing a 4-star disciple of the Dark Soul Sect, but he wasn't liking the blame that everyone kept putting at him.

"Alright. Stop arguing. Our main priority at the moment is to find the location of the Dark Soul Sect and destroy it. Increase your efforts everyone. We need to find them and get our revenge." Hall Master gave the final order before telling everyone to leave.

Somewhere inside the Beast Hall, A young boy was inside the practice hall.

He was testing the new skills that he had just learned.

He got into a sword stance as he made a slash towards the wall in front of him.

The walls of the practice halls were made in such a manner that they wouldn't be harmed even if a peak Earth Realm cultivator attacked them, but surprisingly, an 18-19-year-old boy's attacks had managed to leave a mark on the wall.

He was about to make another strike when he suddenly took out a talisman from his pocket.

"Hall Master?" He exclaimed as he heard the message.

He left the practice area and walked towards the Hall Master's place.

It took him around 20 minutes to reach the place. He knocked on the door.

"Come in." A voice came from inside.

The boy opened the door and entered inside.

"Greetings, Master." The boy bowed slightly as he greeted the Hall Master of the Beast Hall.

"Ah, Jichuan. Take a seat." Hall Master said with a smile.

"You must be wondering why I called you here. You must have heard of the Ancient Exploration, right?" Hall Master said with a smile.

A surprised look appeared on the boy's face as he heard the words of the Hall Master.

"Well. The time of the Ancient Exploration is near. Since you're the Head Disciple of the Hall, I wish for you to lead the team of Beast Hall. What do you say?" Hall Master explained.

"It would be my pleasure, Master. I'm really grateful that you considered me worthy of this position. I promise that you won't be disappointed." The boy called Jichuan said with an excited smile on his face.

"Alright. That's good. I'll give you more information later on after the team is selected." Hall Master said.

The boy stood up after getting permission to leave and left.

It was morning when Long Chen finally woke up from his deep sleep.

He yawned as he stretched his arms before leaving the room.

'Master, Good Morning.' Man Gu greeted Long Chen.

'Good Morning, Man Gu.' Long Chen responded. After the long sleep, he was in somewhat of a good mood.

'Master, Your Master had come here looking for you, a few days back.' Man Gu informed him.

'My Master?' Long Chen let out with a confused look on his face.

'Oh, right. You're talking about him. What did he say?' Long Chen realized that he must be talking about Lang Jing. He was his master in others' eyes after all.

'He looked quite angry. He must have found out that you cut off the arm of someone. He left after seeing that you were busy.' Man Gu explained.

'Oh right. He did tell me to give you this talisman. He said that you can contact him using this if you need him.' He further said as he gave Long Chen the Talisman that was given to him by Lang Jing.

"Oh? I guess he did save me as I expected, but there's still a risk of being attacked." Long Chen smiled as he took the talisman.

"The ranking is out, right?" Long Chen asked.

"Yes. Master's performance was so awesome that everyone in the sect knows your name now. Master is the 3rd on the strength Ranking." Man Gu excitedly said.

"Only 3rd? Oh well, There's nothing I can do about the ranking. As long as I have enough contribution points as the reward, I don't care either." Long Chen let out with a smile.

"Master's contribution points have been credited on his 4-star disciple badge. You can use the points now. There should be around 3000 contribution points for getting 3rd place." Man Gu exclaimed.

"Alright. Come with me to the Alchemy Hall. Help me understand how I can buy things." Long Chen said as he placed his hands on Man Gu's shoulders and took him out with him.

He left his courtyard with Man Gu.

They walked through the sect and reached the Alchemy Hall. Quite a few people saw Long Chen along the way, but they avoided Long Chen like he was a plague.

Long Chen was quite famous in the Sect at the moment. His cutting off the hand of a 4-star disciple and then getting the 3rd rank in the strength ranking had made him known throughout the sect.

He was called the Demon of the Sect because of his fierce nature.

They were also quite a few rumors about him going around in the sect.

One rumor was that Long Chen had cut off someone's neck because he didn't like his hairstyle. Another was that he cut off someone's legs because that person was too tall. Quite a lot of people were scared of him.

Man Gu led Long Chen inside the Alchemy Hall.

They stood in front of the counter. A 4 star Yellow Robed disciple was sitting on the other side.

"What do you need?" The man asked Man Gu.

"Ahm...I don't need anything. But my master needs to purchase some herbs." Man Gu said as he pointed towards Long Chen.

Although many people had heard Long Chen's name, most hadn't seen him. The boy in front of Long Chen was one of them.

He noticed the 4-star disciple badge on Long Chen's chest.

"Tell me the herbs you need and transfer the contribution points. The materials will be given to you." The man said to Long Chen.

Chapter 302 - 302: Skill Space

Long Chen brought out a list of ingredients and gave it to the disciple on the other side of the table.

The man went through the list. The more he read, the more surprised he became.

"What do you need all this for?" He asked in surprise.

"I don't think that you need to know about it. Just tell me how much they are going to cost," Long Chen replied.

"It will cost you a thousand contribution points. Do you even have that much?" The man asked Long Chen.

"Oh, it's fine then. Give me the herbs. I'm in a hurry," Long Chen replied in a hurry.

"Alright," The man stood up and went to the back. He came back instantly but without the list.

A few minutes later, another person came. That person was carrying a bag in his hand that was filled with the medicinal herbs and spiritual plants that Long Chen needed.

He gave that bag to Long Chen and left.

Long Chen transferred thousand contribution points from his badge.

Just as Long Chen was about to leave, the man asked.

"Are you an alchemist as well?"

"I'm not one. Maybe in the future, I'll be," Long Chen smiled as he responded.

He left the place with Man Gu.

"Interesting," The man let out with an amused smile on his face.

He left the place with Man Gu.

As soon as Long Chen came out of the place, he managed to meet up with someone he had seen before.

"Hey, Aren't you the guy whose hand I had cut off? Sorry man, I was in a bad mood that day," Long Chen said as he saw the guy coming towards the Alchemy Hall.

'They must have used a Life-Giving Pill. Well, he's a disciple of a Black-Robed Elder, so that's to be expected,' Long Chen thought as he noticed that the boy's arm had recovered.

"You! Stay away from me!" The boy saw Long Chen and hurriedly took a few steps back in horror.

"I won't hurt you. Don't be scared." Long Chen smiled as he stepped closer to him.

"I'm warning you! Don't come closer!" The closer Long Chen tried to move, the farther Tiyu went.

"Alright, alright. Don't worry. I'm going," Long Chen said with a smile as he turned back and started walking the opposite side.

"Where do you want to go, Master?" Man Gu noticed Long Chen walking opposite to his courtyard and asked.

"I'm going to check out the skill hall. I might as well enjoy the opportunity to learn something new," Long Chen said with a smile.

Tiyu watched Long Chen and Man Gu leave. Only after they left, did he enter the Alchemy Hall.

"This is the Skill Hall. I can only go so far with, Master. Though I do have some advice for Master. Since you have 2000 points, you should try going to the Skill Space. You might find a decent skill." Man Gu said to Long Chen.

"Skill Space? That's the first time I'm hearing of it. What's that?" Long Chen inquired.

"Every skill inside the skill hall costs contribution points. Some skills are worth a hundred thousand points while some are worth 10 points. There are two ways one can select a skill. One is to select one and pay normally. And the second way is to enter the Skill Space,"

"It's a special space where you can get any skill. Every try costs 2000 points. After paying, you are sent to a special space where millions of skills reside. Based on your luck and your potential, a skill itself comes to you. The only

downside is that you can't select a skill. If no skill comes to you, then the 2000 contribution points are wasted." Man Gu explained.

"Oh, so it's like a lucky draw. Interesting. Is there something else I should keep in mind?" Long Chen asked with an amused look on his face.

"The only thing to keep in mind is that you shouldn't forcefully take a skill. You can only select one Skill inside the skill space," Man Gu replied.

"Alright. That sounds like an interesting thing. I might give that a try and take the risk. You can go back. It might take some time," Long Chen smilingly said as he entered the skill hall.

A 4-star disciple was sitting on a chair inside the skill hall. She was reading a book.

The girl looked to be 18-19 years old.

"Interesting. The Dark Soul Sect is quite different. All the important places are left for the 4-star disciples to handle. She must be the personal disciple of the Skill Hall Elder," Long Chen muttered.

The girl was so engrossed in the book that she didn't notice Long Chen standing near her.

"Ahh... Miss? Are you the one who's handling this place?" Long Chen asked politely.

The girl lowered her book and raised her head to look at the person who had spoken.

"I am. Are you here to get a skill?" she asked with any expression.

"Yup. Why else would someone come here?" Long Chen let out with a smile.

"True. Anyways, I've seen you here for the first time," She said.

"Yea. I'm new to the sect." Long Chen replied.

The girl noticed the 4-star badge on Long Chen's chest and asked.

"Wait a minute. You're a new 4-star disciple? Are you the one called Long Chen? The ruthless newcomer of the sect?" The girl said with an interested look on her face.

"Ruthless newcomer? I never knew I heard such a nickname, but I'm indeed Long Chen. Who might you be?" He asked.

"I'm Chu Miao." The girl replied with pride on her face.

"Oh," Long Chen casually responded.

"Hey? Don't you know who I am?" The girl asked as she saw that there was no change in Long Chen's expression.

"Sorry, I'm new to the sect. So I don't know anyone. Are you someone I should know about?" Long Chen replied with a confused look on her face.

"I'm Chu Miao, the second rank on the strength ranking. Right above you," The girl said with a smile.

"Oh, Congrats on being the second rank. Sorry for not recognizing you. I didn't check the strength rankings." Long Chen said.

Chapter 303 - 303: Nine Steps Of Xianwu

"Oh, Congrats on being the second rank. Sorry for not recognizing you. I didn't check the strength rankings." Long Chen said.

"Didn't you check the rankings to see your rank?" She asked in surprise.

"Nope. Someone told me my rank," He replied.

"You're quite a strange guy. Others would be so excited to see their rank. Anyways, what skill do you need? An Elemental Skill, Martial Skill, or a Cultivation Skill? We have different sections for them all," She asked.

"I wish to enter the Skill Space instead," Long Chen informed her.

"You want to enter the Skill Space? Are you sure? Although the chances of getting a good skill are there, the chances of getting a bad skill are far more. You might spend 2000 points to enter the Skill Hall and come out with a mortal grade skill worth 10 points. You should think carefully," The girl told Long Chen.

"It's alright. It's only 2000 points." Long Chen smilingly said.

Although he wanted a skill, having a chance to get a great skill was far better than having a decent skill.

"Alright. Just don't come crying when you get a trash skill,"

"Come with me," She said as she started walking toward the stairs.

Long Chen followed her to the second floor.

She stopped in front of a room with a metallic door.

"Transfer 2000 points." She told him.

Long Chen listened to her and transferred his remaining contribution points.

She opened the door and took Long Chen inside.

The room was quite small. It was only 3 meters by 5 meters in size.

There was a small wooden table at the center of the room. There was a chair in front of the table.

A small circular formation had been drawn on top of the wooden table.

"Sit on that chair and place your hand on top of that formation. You'll be taken to the Skill Space.

"I'll leave since it only works when one person is inside. Give me a call when you're done." She said as she left the room and closed the door.

Long Chen walked up to the table and sat down on the chair. He placed his hand on the formation in front of him.

As his hand rested on the formation, the formation started shining brightly.

Out of nowhere, Long Chen's consciousness was sucked into a mysterious space. He found himself floating in an empty space.

There were thousands of colorful orbs floating in space.

'Those Orbs must be the skills. So I have to wait for one to choose me?' Long Chen thought.

He was hoping to get a powerful skill.

He waited at that place, but no orb came to him.

"What the heck? Why's no orb coming to me? Not even the so-called trash skills want me?" Long Chen let out as he looked around. It was as if they were all ignoring his existence.

"Do these skills not consider me worthy of them, or they don't consider themselves worthy of me? I'm the successor of a deity. I can't fail like this!" Long Chen said with determination.

He looked around as he tried to find a good skill.

It was quite difficult to judge a skill since none of them had any aura. They were all of similar size and shape. The only thing different was their color.

"That one," Long Chen let out as he pointed towards a red color orb of light.

Before he could start moving towards the Orb, the Orb that he pointed at excitedly came towards him.

It was like that orb of light was happy at being chosen.

"What the fuck?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise as he saw the red orb of light circling around him.

"It's good that you didn't make me chase you, at least," Long Chen said with a smile as he touched the orb.

As soon as the Orb was touched, the whole space disappeared.

Long Chen found himself back inside the small room.

There was nothing different, the only change was that there was now a small booklet between the formation and his hand.

He picked up the book and turned it, but there was no name on the book.

He opened it, and noticed a small name, but he couldn't read the name since it was written in some ancient language.

"Xun, Can you translate the name?" He called Xun softly.

Xun appeared beside him as she gazed at the book and read the name.

"Interesting. It says the skill's name is 'Nine Steps of Xianwu'," She informed him.

"Nine steps of Xianwu? It sounds like a movement skill. Wait a minute... Xianwu? Could it be the Saint King Xianwu?" He let out with a surprised look on his face.

"Seems like it. He should have known the ancient language so it's quite possible that he wrote the skill. Though I'm not a hundred percent sure." Xun replied.

"Looks like I indeed profited from this opportunity." Long Chen said as he stood up.

He walked towards the exit and left.

Chu Miao was still standing outside waiting for him.

"Which skill did you get?" She asked.

'This one,' Long Chen showed her, but he kept the book in his hand.

"This trash book? You indeed wasted the opportunity. This skill isn't even worth 5 contribution points since it's written in pure gibberish. No one can read it. I pity you, boy," She said with a wry smile on her face.

"It's alright. I don't regret anything." Long Chen said with a smile on his face.

Although he could have gotten this skill for 5 contribution points, that wasn't for certain. There was no guarantee that he would have found it, let alone get it.

It was all for the best in his opinion.

"You're just saying that. I can understand your disappointment. How about I take you on a treat? There's a small restaurant in the sect that is run by the disciples," She said as she placed her hand on Long Chen's shoulders to comfort him.

"Um... Aren't you busy? You're responsible for the skill hall, aren't you?" Long Chen asked with a wry smile on his face.

"Not anymore. My master's other disciple will be taking over now. My time is over. Come with me. Let's cheer you up." She said with a smile as he caught his hand and pulled him with her.

Chapter 304 - 304: Mu Zheng

Long Chen followed the girl since it was a good opportunity to get some information. He still didn't know how far he was from the North Moon Empire after all.

As Long Chen walked with the girl, he realized that the girl was quite talkative. She talked non stop throughout the way. And the topics she talked about weren't that interesting either.

She talked about various skills that he could have gotten for those 2000 points instead. In a way, it seemed like she was trying to make him regret his decision of not listening to her advice.

He kept his silence as he waited for the right opportunity to ask his questions.

They stopped before a small building. It was still inside the sect, but quite far away from the core. It was constructed in an empty place.

"You must be wondering why it's so far? Well, the logic is simple. A few elders didn't want such a place to open in crowded places. They thought that it would affect the atmosphere of the sect. Your master was one of those guys. In fact, they didn't even want to give permission for it,"

"But a few elders voiced their support. Finally the person got permission, but with certain limitations." Chu Miao informed him.

The place was made of wood with big glass windows and looked like a nice little restaurant.

Judging from outside, it seemed like it could only house 100 people at most.

Long Chen entered the place after her and it was quite different than what he had expected.

There were 50 circular wooden tables inside the place. Each of these tables had 3 chairs around them.

There were two counters. One was for a drink and the other one was for the food.

"Senior Sister Miao, You're here. I haven't seen you in such a long time. Who's this boy?"

A boy with a 4-star badge came up to them and asked.

"Oh? You might not have seen him, but I'm definitely sure that you've heard of him. It's the rising star of our sect at the moment," Chu Miao gave a slight hint.

"Rising Star? Brother, are you Long Chen? The 3rd ranked in the strength ranking?" The boy asked in surprise.

"Yeah," Long Chen said as he nodded his head.

"Amazing. Since it's your first day here, you can have anything. It's free for you guys." The boy said with a smile.

"As expected of Dai Hu. You do know how to run your business and establish relationships." Chu Miao said with a grin on her face.

"Anyways, I was hoping to give him a treat but since you're making it free for us, that works as well. He had a rough day today." She let out as she placed her hands on Long Chen's shoulders.

"I'll get you guys some spirit restoring drink. Your mood will be refreshed and you'll gain energy. Take any seat you like." Dai Hu said before he left.

Chu Miao and Long Chen sat on a seat that was near the window. They were both facing each other while the transparent window was on the right, allowing them to see the view outside.

"Only 3 star and 4-star disciples can come here. Dai Hu is the owner of this place," Chu Miao informed him.

"Do you know about the North Moon Empire?" Long Chen suddenly asked as he got to the main topic.

"Yeah. I have heard a little about it. There's a Beast Hall Branch there, right? I heard my master talk about it with another Elder. They talked about it when they were discussing which branch of the Beast Hall to attack." She replied.

"Why did you ask?" She inquired as she stared at Long Chen.

"I have an enemy that stays in the North Moon Empire. I was just wondering how far the Empire was." Long Chen asked.

"I'm not sure about the exact distance. I only heard him mention that it would take them 3 days to get there." She replied.

"3 days should be based on the sheet of their Winged Lions. A peak Earth Grade beast that is known for its strength and speed. I guess I have a general idea of how far it is." Long Chen muttered to himself.

Dai Hu came back with a tray that had 3 huge glasses filled to the brim.

He placed the tray on the table and himself sat down on one of the chairs near them.

"You know, you didn't have to personally bring them. You've employed a few 3-star disciples, haven't you? That could have done this," Chu Miao said with an amused smile on her face as she looked towards Dai Hu.

"It's fine. I have special guests after all. Rank 2 and Rank 3 at once. The only one left is Mu Zheng, and the trio would be complete." Dai Hu chuckled as he said.

"Hah, I don't think that guy is going to come here. He's such a party pooper. I don't think he even knows how to face fun," Chu Miao started laughing as she replied.

"Who's Mu Zheng?" Long Chen asked.

Dai Hu acted somewhat surprised as he heard the question.

"Brother, Are you pulling my leg? There's no way that you don't know who Mu Zheng is?" He let out with a look of disbelief on his face.

"I don't think he's lying. He didn't recognize me either, even after I told him my name. This guy here doesn't seem like he cares to know the outside world." She replied with a smile.

"Anyways, Let me tell you. Mu Zheng is the personal disciple of the Sect Master. He's a 4-star disciple that's the first in the Strength Ranking. Not only that, but he's also 1st ranked in the Artificer rankings." She explained.

"Someone at the top of 2 rankings? Did he enter the Demon Rankings then?" Long Chen asked.

"Well... Senior Zheng did attempt the Demon Ranking, but I think he failed. He didn't get a Demon Ranking." Dai Hu explained this time. He was starting to believe that Long Chen actually didn't know Mu Zheng.

Chapter 305 - 305: Looking For Orion

"Even the 1st rank couldn't get into the Demon Ranking? Was there someone who did manage to get ranked?" Long Chen inquired.

"There have been a few people who managed to get their demon ranking. All of them are the Elders or the Black Robed Elders now. In fact, I heard that your master was the 1st ranked in the Demon Rankings at a time,"

"After their generation, no one had managed to get on the Demon Rankings. No one except one person," She said in a heavy tone.

"Who?" Long Chen asked.

"Senior Mu Chan," She replied.

Long Chen felt like he had heard that name before.

He suddenly realized that he had heard a few people talking about the name when he was walking with Lang Jing.

"My Master's previous disciple?" He asked. No matter how much he hated it, in front of others, he had to call Lang Jing his master.

"Yeah. Senior Mu Chan was the only person in the Demon ranking in our generation. But those bastards of the Beast Hall killed him," She said.

From her expressions, it was clear that she hated the Beast Hall a lot.

"Let's stop talking about the stuff of the past, guys. Have the spirit drink that I prepared for you. Get energized." Dai Hu said in order to diffuse the sad atmosphere.

"Yup," Chu Miao picked up the glass and started gulping down the drink.

Long Chen picked one up as well and drank it.

"By the way, Is there a place here that takes care of beasts or where the sect keeps them?" Long Chen asked in a casual manner.

"There is indeed one such place. We keep the wild beasts there to train the young disciples. There are quite a lot of Earth Realm beasts as well. Do you need a beast?" Chu Miao informed him.

"Are we allowed to go there?" Long Chen asked her.

"Well, we should be able to get the entry. Do you want to go inside?" She asked back.

"I'm quite interested in the beasts of the sect. I would love to see it once," Long Chen said to her.

"Sure. Come with me," She said as she stood up. They had both finished their drink by now.

"Have fun on your date, guys," Dai Hu joked as he stood up as well.

"Hah, That was a bad joke you know?" Chu Miao smilingly replied to Dai Hu.

"Anyways, thanks for the drink," She said as she held Long Chen's hand and left.

At this point, even Long Chen was surprised. Was this girl thinking of him as a child? Every time holding onto his hand like he would get lost.

"Can you free my hand?" Long Chen told her.

"Hahaha, are you getting shy?" She couldn't help but laugh as she heard Long Chen.

Long Chen was getting quite annoyed at her teasing.

"Geez, you're such a baby. Alright, I'll free you," She said as she freed his hand.

'Let's see how you like being teased,' He thought as he moved closer to her and wrapped his arms around her waist as if they were a couple.

Chu Miao was stunned as she felt a hand around her slim waist.

"W-what are you doing?" She asked as he glared at him.

"Why? Are you getting shy? You're such a baby," Long Chen repeated her words, but didn't free her.

"Interesting. You're quite daring." She couldn't help but laugh as she heard Long Chen's words.

"Sure, If you want to walk like that, then let's see how long you can maintain that courage of yours," She said with an amused smile on her face.

Thus the situation turned out in such a manner. All the disciples were stunned as they saw the 2nd Rank Chu Miao and the 3rd rank Long Chen walking like a couple with arms around each other's back.

"What the hell? Am I dreaming?" Tiyu was coming out of the Alchemy Hall and noticed Long Chen and Chu Miao. His eyes were opened in surprise as he watched them stuck close to each other.

"Senior Brother, Are you seeing what I'm seeing?" Tiyu looked to his right and asked.

There was another man standing near him watching Long Chen.

"I see that as well. Quite interesting I must say," The man replied.

From that day, another rumor was added to the list of rumors about the Demon of the Sect.

It was said that he was a charmer who could charm girls with just one touch. He had managed to charm the Sect's top beauty Chu Miao and they were like phoenix and dragon now.

Long Chen didn't know about these rumors and he wouldn't have cared either. He was in the Dark Sect now. A place where he could do anything without being punished. He could let all his desires out so that his Heart Demon wouldn't involve himself in his matters.

After walking for around 15 minutes, they managed to get to a huge building. If one were to guess, it would be twenty times the size of the Skill Hall of the Dark Soul Sect.

There were a few 3-star disciples standing outside the building. They were guarding this place.

Long Chen and Chu Miao stepped towards the guards.

"Uh, Senior Miao." The guards greeted her.

She only replied with a simple nod.

"Where is Han Hu?" She asked.

"Senior Han isn't here yet." The guards replied.

"Alright then. I'll be going inside with Long Chen. You can inform Han Hu when he comes back," She said.

"Uh, Senior Miao. Can you at least wait till Senior Han comes back? He told us to not let anyone enter without his permission," The guards said in an apologetic tone.

"Hah, Do you think that your Senior Han would have the courage to defy me? Let alone me, do you think he could even oppose the Demon of the Sect, Long Chen? Let us enter before he cuts your legs off as well," Chu Miao said.

It seemed like she was about to get angry, but what scared the guards the most was the Demon of the Sect. They had heard a lot of rumors about him. As soon as they heard about him from Chu Miao, they took a step back in fear.

"We're only going inside for sightseeing. We can't steal anything after all. Inform Han Hu when he's here," She said.

She tried to grab the hands of Long Chen to pull her with her, but Long Chen reacted fast and caught her hand instead.

He walked in the lead with her hand in his hand. He entered the hall.

Chapter 306 - 306: Your Father

Long Chen was quite surprised when he entered the place.

This place was so big. It was like a big Zoo on the Earth.

There were hundreds of beasts inside this place, but they were all inside a semi-transparent box-like barrier.

There were hundreds of such barrier boxes that contained beasts. There were no walls in that place. It was just a big hall with the beasts inside their separate barriers.

He even saw a few Winged Lions amongst the beasts.

"Amazing, isn't it? There are quite a few strong beasts as well. Too bad that I can't tame a Beast or I would have taken one with me," She sighed as she looked down in disappointment.

She raised her head as she gazed at Long Chen, but realized that he wasn't even looking at her.

He looked around the hall as if he was looking for someone.

When he didn't find anyone from where he was standing, he started walking deeper into the hall through the gaps between the barriers as he kept his eyes on the beasts.

There was such a wide variety of beasts in that place. There were Winged Lion, Dark Spirit Crow, Mighty Horned Horse, Arboretum Bee, Heavenly Death Scorpion, Profound Earthly Lion, Armored Crystal

Elephants and many more.

What he cared about was someone else entirely though. He was in search of Orion.

He searched through the hall for over an hour, but he didn't find any hint of Orion at all.

He was sure after a while that Orion wasn't here.

Chu Miao was still waiting at the entrance for Long Chen.

Long Chen had walked to the other side of the hall in search of Orion, but all he received was a disappointment.

He turned back and started walking towards the exit when he noticed something.

He felt like he noticed something moving nearby.

Long Chen walked towards the corner of a semi-transparent box and noticed that a small weak-looking snake was hiding behind it.

"Little Guy, Did you escape from the barrier?" Long Chen casually asked. Although he knew that he wouldn't get answers, he still liked talking to small beasts.

The small snake had a width of around 5 centimeters and the length of a meter.

"Why would your father, I, need to escape from a barrier? Do you think those trash can catch your father?"

Unexpectedly, he did get a reply.

"What the fuck?" That's the only thing that left Long Chen's mouth in surprise.

"Who are you calling fuck? You are fuck! Your whole family is fuck. Your Father, I, is the Spiritual Snake Monarch!" The snake replied.

"Interesting. Someone from the Snake Monarch species. Long Chen, you must tame that beast!" Xun's voice appeared in Long Chen's head.

'Is this guy really so special?' Long Chen asked in his thoughts.

"I'll explain it later. For now, just tame it. You can use force if you need," She replied to him.

"Hahaha, You've gone silent. Well, that's the normal reaction. This Monarch's charm is just so deadly, I can do nothing about it. It's all a God-given gift," The snake again said to Long Chen as he saw him sitting there in silence.

"Now get out of here. Let your father rest!" The snake again said.

"You really have a foul mouth, don't you? Anyways, how about you become my tamed beast?" Long Chen tried to get him to agree without fighting.

"Hahaha, From looking at your face, I had a feeling that you should be a comedian. As expected, Your father, I, is never wrong," The snake replied in an amused tone.

"The tough way it is!" Long Chen said as he extended his hand towards the snake in order to catch it, but the snake's eyes started shining at that moment.

Long Chen was paused in time. It was as if he was paralyzed and wasn't able to move.

"Should have listened to your father. I'm going now. Don't show your ugly face in front of me ever again." The snake came out of the corner and slid past Long Chen.

"You bastard," Long Chen cursed in his mind.

His eyes changed their color to starry black as he started using his law of Space.

He broke through the boundary of restriction and appeared at a different place as he used teleportation.

Fortunately, the place he appeared was right beside the snake that was escaping.

He hurriedly caught the neck of the snake as he picked him up in the air.

"You Unfilial son! Did I give birth to you so that you could hurt me, your father? Leave me!" The snake cursed.

"Let's see you escape now," Long Chen said with a smile as he lightly cut off the thumb of his right hand. It started bleeding.

"What the fuck!" He let out in surprise as he noticed that the snake was getting bigger in size. Its size was increasing so fast that he was already having difficulty holding it.

He didn't want to waste more time as he hurriedly placed his blood on the forehead of the snake.

"Ughh..." The snake felt a current course through his body as it started getting smaller and got back to its original size.

It shone for a minute before the link was established.

"Strange. It was so fast. You didn't resist even a little, did you?" Long Chen chuckled as he gazed at the snake.

"What's the benefit of resisting? I felt like I'd only die if I resisted and I don't want to die! I'm not even married yet. What would happen to my dream of a harem if I died!" The snake let out in a prideful voice.

"Whatever. I'll talk to you later. Go to the Beast Region for the moment," Long Chen sent the snake inside the Beast Region of his ring.

Long Chen walked back and met up with Chu Miao.

"Thanks for showing me around. I'm finished looking around. Let's go back." He said as he left with Chu Miao.

He separated from her as he was near his courtyard.

Chapter 307 - 307: Real Boss

While Long Chen was entering his courtyard, The Snake Monarch was roaming around in the Beast Region.

There was greenery everywhere. Beautiful Spiritual Herbs and Ancient plants could be seen everywhere.

In fact, it looked like a completely different world of its own. A higher world that was like a heaven for the beasts.

"Where did that human send me? Is he a magician?" The Snake Monarch let out as he moved forward.

"Is that a Spiritual Dragon Fruit? Amazing!" He noticed a weirdly shaped tree and hurriedly moved towards the tree.

As soon as the snake was about to get near the tree, he noticed another beast nearby.

It was a big beast that looked like a rhino. It was the Dark Horned Armored Rhino of Long Chen. His 3rd tamed beast.

Before the snake could get to the tree, the Dark Horned Armored Rhino ate the dragon fruit.

"You damn weakling! How dare you take something that belonged to this King?" The snake roared in anger as it started increasing in size.

It was now a meter thick and 90 meters long.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino gazed at the giant snake with curiosity on his face.

"Raaa..." He let out a strange noise as he looked at the snake.

"What do you mean if I'm also a tamed beast of your master? Is that human also your master?" The snake let out in surprise.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino nodded its head.

"Sigh, alright. I'll give some face to that man and forgive you! But you shouldn't forget that I'm the Boss from now on!" The Snake Monarch said as he decreased in size and returned to his original size.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino let out another strange call as if he was telling him something.

"Your Elder Sister is the boss? Who the hell dares to take the title from this Lord! Take me to her!" The Snake Monarch said with a prideful look on his face.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino started moving in a certain direction and the small Snake followed him.

After walking for around 50 minutes, they stopped in front of a tree.

A small Ethereal Moon Cat was sleeping in the shade of the tree.

A blood-red caterpillar-like beast was on top of the tree and a beautiful Condor was flying like the wind in the sky.

"Is that small thing the boss?" The Snake Monarch asked as he looked towards Cati.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino shook his head.

"What? Don't tell me that fluffy cat is your boss? Aren't you ashamed of yourself! Let this Lord go make it clear to her. From now on, you'll be my subordinate!" The Snake Monarch let out in a prideful tone as he started slithering towards Little Snow.

"Yo, Little Fluff! Wake up. This Lord wants to talk to you," The Snake Monarch said as he stopped a few inches away from little snow.

"Uuu?" Little Snow opened her eyes slowly as she looked towards the little snake with curiosity in her eyes.

The Snake Monarch felt a chill run through his body as Little Snow's eyes fell on him.

The Snake Monarch had the blood of the ancient beast, but this was the first time he felt a reaction from that ancient blood. It was telling him to be afraid.

"Y-you! What are you?" The Snake Monarch asked.

"Uwu?" Little Snow tilted her head sideways in curiosity.

"You don't want to answer, do you? Well, I'll listen to my gut feeling and won't fight you for the throne. Be grateful for this Lord's greatness, you fluffy

beast!" The Snake Monarch accepted his defeat, but he didn't forget to boast about himself.

Back in the real world, Long Chen had entered his bedroom and locked the door.

He sat on his bed and called out for the Snake Monarch.

A tiny snake came out of his Ancient Ring and appeared in front of him.

"Hoh, you called for this great Lord? Tell this Lord what you need, and I might consider your request," The Snake Monarch said with pride.

"Stop boasting so much. I called you out to give you a name. You don't have a name, do you?" Long Chen asked.

"This Lord doesn't have a name, but people respectfully call me 'Your Majesty'. You can also call me that if you desire. Although that would not bring you into the good graces of this Lord, you can do it anyways," The Snake Monarch replied.

"You know, I'm not sure if I should laugh at your shenanigans or be annoyed at it," Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"Anyways, I've decided on a name for you. Since you're smart and you can talk, your name is going to be Dameon," Long Chen said.

"Dameon? Are you being serious? Such a basic name? This Lord here deserves a name like dragon king or God Emperor and you gave me such a normal name?" The Snake Emperor let out.

"I'll call you Dami for short," Long Chen let out with a smile.

He was taking quite a liking to this little guy. Although he was a little showoff, it was never boring when talking to him.

"Anyways, now that we're done. Back to the topic. What were you doing in that place?" Long Chen asked.

"I was looking for a wife," Dami said.

"Be serious. You wouldn't want me to change your name to cutiepie, right? Imagine being in a fierce battle and me calling you cutiepie, just think how

much the enemy would laugh at the lord. Are you sure you don't want to answer?" Long Chen said with an amused look on his face.

"You dare threaten this King? If you think that the threat will work... Then you're right! Don't make this King ashamed in front of the enemy!" The Snake Monarch said in full seriousness.

"Hahahaha, I can't tell if you're serious or not. Alright. Tell me what you were doing there?" Long Chen asked.

"This Lord was looking for something. I don't know what it is, but my blood is telling me that there is something important in this place that I need! I don't know what that is. I was just randomly looking in hopes of finding whatever that is," The Snake Monarch said.

Long Chen could feel that the Dameon was serious.

Chapter 308 - 308: Cured?

"This Lord was looking for something. I don't know what it is, but my blood is telling me that there is something important in this place that I need! I don't know what that is. I was just randomly looking in hopes of finding whatever that is," The Snake Monarch said.

Long Chen could feel that the Dameon was not lying this time.

"Do you know where the thing you're looking for might be?" Long Chen asked.

"This Lord only knows that it's somewhere in this Valley. Despite being the almighty God King, this Lord can't pinpoint the exact location. It might be the heavens trying to oppose me since they're jealous of this Lord's beauty," The Snake Monarch said.

"Alright, You can go back now. Oh right, did you meet the others in the beast region?"

"They? Yeah, I met them. From the moment they saw this Lord's charm, they came running to me to make me their boss. Since I wasn't in the mood, I made little fluffy the boss. I'm happy being the dark hand in the shadows that controls everything from behind," he replied.

"Little fluffy? Are you talking about Little Snow? That must be it, she's the eldest of the family after all. Alright, behave properly," Long Chen said as he sent the Snake Monarch back.

Long Chen stood up and placed the bed inside his storage ring as he made space in the room for his cauldron.

He brought out the cauldron that had the marking of the sun on one side and the moon on the other side.

'I only have the recipe for the Hundred Poison Healing Pill, but if I'm not wrong, this cauldron has some magical effects which can make it a Thousand Poison Healing Pill. Hopefully, this works today as well,' Long Chen thought to himself as he started the fire.

He began the process of pill making as he started placing the properly batched herbs and other materials inside the cauldron.

He kept his full focus on the cauldron and the flame temperature as he kept adjusting the temperature as per the requirements.

After a lot of effort, he finally finished. He was able to smell the fresh scent of the pill.

He opened the lid of the cauldron and saw 5 black pills inside.

He picked up one of the pills as he observed it carefully.

"It is a Thousand Poison Healing Pill indeed," Long Chen said with an accomplished look on his face.

He swallowed the pill instantly, while he kept the other 4 pills and the cauldron in his storage ring for later use.

He brought out the bed from his storage ring and placed that in its original position.

He could feel no difference in his body, but he was sure that the pill must be working.

He waited for 15 minutes, but instead of things getting better, it started to get worse.

He could feel the poison getting more active instead. His whole body was hurting. He felt as if a thousand swords were stabbing every inch of his body.

He fell down to his knees and he could feel his head going round and round.

He realized that he had screwed up. The Thousand Poison Healing Pill couldn't heal this special poison.

Seeing no other choice, he brought out the special transmission talisman of Lang Jing and sent him a message before he fell down to the ground. He lost his consciousness.

It didn't even take Lang Jing 5 minutes for him to appear in front of Long Chen's courtyard. He broke down the door of Long Chen's room and he entered in a hurry.

He could see Long Chen lying on the ground. Long Chen had a fever and he was sweating.

"This idiot! Did he try to use some poison healing pills? That will only make the poison act up," he muttered to himself.

He hurriedly brought out a pill from his storage ring and placed it inside Long Chen's mouth.

All he could do now was wait. He placed Long Chen back on the bed while he left the room.

He sat on the sofa in the hall and brought out a book from his storage ring.

"Sigh, this boy will never let me rest in peace," He muttered as he opened the book and started reading it.

5 hours had passed and it was already night when Long Chen opened his eyes.

He found himself lying on the bed and the pain was all gone.

"Did he get my message and came to save me?" Long Chen muttered as he got off the bed and left the room.

As he left the room, he found Lang Jing sitting on a sofa reading a book.

"You look better," Lang Jing said without looking back at him.

"Thank you for saving me," Long Chen said.

"Where did you get the healing pill from?" Lang Jing asked straight away.

"What healing pill?" Long Chen acted ignorant.

"Don't try to act innocent. One of the ingredients in my poison is Dark Mist Flora. Because of that ingredient, poison healing pills only make the poison more potent. Only the specific antidote can cure the poison," Lang Jing said.

"Now I'll repeat the question. Where did you get the poison healing pill?" He asked again.

"Since the Poison Healing Pill doesn't work, I might as well tell you. I found the pill," Long Chen said.

Although he wasn't afraid of telling Lang Jing that he was an Alchemist and that he made the pill himself, he was worried about the question that would follow.

This was because Lang Jing couldn't see his storage ring and Long Chen had no cauldron when he was brought here.

He wouldn't be able to answer when Lang Jing would ask about the cauldron. That's why he decided to not talk about Alchemy.

"You found it, right? You're quite lucky aren't you?" Lang Jing said with an amused smile on his face.

"Next time you 'find' the pill, don't consume it. I would just let you die the next time," Lang Jing warned Long Chen.

"Also, you don't need to worry. I sent Man Gu on an errand. So he didn't hear our little chat," Lang Jing said before he left.

Chapter 309 - 309: Specialty Of Snake Monarch

"Anyways, You should work on getting stronger. Soon, it will be time for you to get to work," Lang Jing said.

"Stop," he was about to leave when Long Chen called out.

"I need my Devil Hunter Beast and my sword back. You already have an incurable poison in me. You don't need a hostage," he said.

"It's true that I don't need to keep a hostage, but I'm still going to keep him with me for a while longer. You'll get him back when you finish my work in the future," Lang Jing said.

"As for your sword, you can have it back. It's good, but not good enough for me," He brought out the King's Sword and threw it towards Long Chen.

The strange thing was that whenever Long Chen used the sword, there would always be a sword aura accompanying the sword, but there was none when Lang Jing brought it out.

'Is the sword hiding its aura? That is only possible if it has developed a spirit though?' Long Chen wondered as he caught the sword.

Lang Jing left without saying anything else.

"Welcome back, my friend," Long Chen muttered as his gaze passed through the sharp blade of the sword.

He placed the sword back inside his Ancient Ring as he walked back to his room.

He tried to close the room, but he realized that half the door was missing.

He could guess what had happened, but he still felt odd.

Fortunately, the place had more rooms. He shifted into a different room and closed the door.

He sat on the bed as he called out for Xun.

"It sounds like it's high time you explain to me why you wanted me to catch the Snake Monarch at all cost," He asked Xun who was sitting beside him.

"There are 3 reasons. Firstly, Snake Monarch has an ancient bloodline. It has the bloodline of a God Beast Ancient Snake of Darkness. It'll be a big help for

you in the future if it even manages to awaken 1% of its ancient bloodline. Its strength will increase many folds. It was the best opportunity to catch it when its strength was still weak," Xun explained.

"The second reason is also for your own good. The Demon Monarch is a species that has gone almost extinct, but it's a known fact that if one manages to find and tame a Demon Monarch, they will have many more lucky encounters. That's why the Demon Monarch is also known as the beast of great fortune," She continued.

"Quite interesting. I never knew a beast could be so useful," Long Chen said with a surprised look on his face.

"What's the third reason?" he asked.

"The third reason? Well it's just for fun. I like watching your enthusiastic discussions," Xun said as she started laughing.

Her pearls of laughter resounded in his ears and sounded like a beautiful melody.

"You know, you look really beautiful when you laugh," Long Chen exclaimed as he gazed at her.

"You're talking nonsense again," she stopped laughing as she said in an annoyed tone.

"I'm not kidding. I've always known it, but I just felt like saying it just now. Might be because I don't want to keep any feeling hidden. From now on, I'm just going to be honest with everyone. I won't give my heart demon any more strength by restricting my actions," Long Chen said.

"Interesting. So you've decided to be true to yourself in front of the world. Anyways, I'll accept the compliment. This Queen is born beautiful after all," Xun said with a proud smile.

"Hahahaha, it's good that you know," Long Chen couldn't help but laugh.

"Anyway, did you get any clues about the new orb?" he asked.

"A little. It should be within 1000 meters of range from us. I can't be more specific than that," she said.

"A thousand meters of range? As far as I know, there are quite a lot of things in this area. There are the courtyards of a few disciples, the Ranking Hall, and

the Skill Hall. So the orb will be in one of those places, unless it's underground, waiting to be found."

"It shouldn't be underground," she said.

"How can you be sure about that?" he asked.

"Well, the thing is that the orbs are meant to be found. Unless they're in tombs or dungeons, they will always be out in the open," she said.

"Let's hope that's the case," he said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Anyways, all 3 possible places are problematic. I can't enter someone's courtyard to search. As for the Ranking Hall and Skill Hall, that's even tougher," Long Chen said.

"You can't give up. Finding a new law would be a big boost for you and your mission," Xun motivated Long Chen.

"True. Even if it's tough, I should at least try. I'll do it at night," Long Chen said.

"Good," Xun said before she disappeared.

Long Chen also began his cultivation as he waited for the night.

A few hours passed and it was finally dark outside.

Long Chen used his divine sense to check his surroundings, and after seeing that everything was normal, he left his courtyard.

He walked to the nearest courtyard. He glanced through the window since he needed to see the place he wanted to teleport to.

Long Chen teleported inside the room and silently began searching through the place.

He searched the whole place, but he didn't find any orb. Though he did manage to find a few articles of a girl's clothing.

He teleported outside and moved to another courtyard. He teleported inside, but he was surprised when he was able to hear loud moaning sounds coming from the bedroom.

'Geez, you guys sure do know about enjoyment,' He thought as he began searching throughout the place.

In less than 20 minutes, he managed to check every place in the courtyard. The only place that was remaining was the bedroom. It didn't matter how much he hated it, he still had to go check that place as well.

Chapter 310 - 310: Ghost

Long Chen stepped towards the bedroom despite his unwillingness to watch someone else do the deed.

His eyes were already shining in a misty white light as he was getting ready to use his Illusion law on the couple.

As soon as he got to the entrance of the room and got a view of the couple, he used his law of Illusion to make himself invisible in their eyes.

He stepped closer to the couple. The guy was simply lying on the bed like a king while the girl was doing all the work.

He stepped closer to them.

"That's it baby, faster!" The guy said he closed his eyes in pleasure. Long Chen struck the back of the girl's neck with his hand and made her lose consciousness.

The girl fell on top of the healthy boy.

"What happened? Why did you stop, babe?" As he didn't see the girl move, the guy opened his eyes and asked.

"You fell asleep? Seriously?" He said in annoyance when he didn't get a reply.

He moved the girl to the side as he stood up. Long Chen attacked the man as well and made him lose consciousness.

'Sorry for disturbing your love life,' Long Chen thought as he looked at the unconscious girl and the boy.

His eyes returned to their original color as he released his Illusion. He turned back and started looking around the room.

Unfortunately, he couldn't find the orb there either.

He left the courtyard and moved to a different courtyard.

Just like this, he searched through all of the courtyards within the thousand meters of range. He found many strange things, but the Orb he wanted wasn't one of them unfortunately.

It was 4 am in the morning and the sky was beginning to brighten.

He walked back to his courtyard as he entered his bedroom and fell asleep.

While Long Chen was sleeping soundly, the sect was talking about the strange things that were happening last night.

The guys who were sleeping didn't feel anything strange, but the people who were awake all said that they felt like someone attacked them before they lost consciousness.

The strangest thing was that there was no one in the room when most of them were attacked. Also, nothing was missing from their courtyard.

Most of them were saying that it was done by some ghosts. They all thought that it was a ghost of a person that was killed by the demon Long Chen since the strange things only happened in the courtyards that were closer to his.

Long Chen slept for a nice 8 hours and woke up when it was afternoon.

He got out of his bedroom and found Man Gu sitting in the hall.

"Good Morning, Master," he greeted Long Chen.

"Good morning," Long Chen greeted back.

"Master, did you feel something strange last night as well?" he asked.

"What do you mean something strange?" Long Chen inquired with a confused look.

"I heard a lot of people say that a ghost attacked them last night. I even heard people say that it was a ghost of a person you killed," Man Gu explained in full seriousness.

"A ghost of a person I killed? Don't worry. Whoever the ghost was, I'm sure that he won't attack me," Long Chen stood with an amused smile on his face.

"Anyways, I'll be going out. Take care of the place for me," Long Chen said before he left his courtyard.

He began walking towards his next target that was the Skill hall.

A lot of people were standing together as they talked about the incident of last night, but they hurriedly dispersed when they saw Long Chen coming.

"Idiots," Long Chen muttered as he ignored them.

It didn't take him long to reach the Skill hall.

He entered the Skill hall and again found Chu Miao sitting there.

"It's your duty again?" he said as he walked towards Chu Miao.

Chu Miao put down the book that was in her hand when she saw Long Chen.

"What're you doing here?" Chu Miao asked in surprise.

"What do you think? Of course I came here to see you," Long Chen said with a smile on his face.

"Hah, if you're going to say that you've been charmed by me, then keep that to yourself. Tell me what you really came here for," she asked with an interested look on her face.

"I came here to look for a skill," he didn't argue and got straight to the point.

"Hah, I knew that you would come for a skill. The skill you got was the most useless skill after all. Anyways, do you even have contribution points remaining?" she asked.

"Of course I have. I got 3000 points for getting the 3rd rank. I've only spent 2000 here last time," he said.

He had hidden the fact that he had spent 1000 contribution points on purchasing herbs and that he had nothing at the moment.

"Alright. Come with me," Chu Miao took Long Chen to the plane that housed thousands of skills.

"Take your time in choosing one and bring it to me," she said as she left Long Chen there and walked back to her place.

She wasn't worried that Long Chen would take more skills since the place had many restrictions and without the permission of the guardian, no book could be taken out. She had already explained this to Long Chen.

Long Chen himself didn't care for the skills as he was here for something else entirely. He wanted to find the Law Orb.

He began roaming around the large place in hopes of finding the Law Orb.

The place was divided into various sections, thus it took Long Chen much more time than he had thought.

After 4 hours of hard work, he managed to go through the whole place, but he didn't find the Orb.

"That must be in the Ranking Hall," he thought with a frown on his face.

Chapter 311 - 311: Crafting

Long Chen left the place and walked back to the main hall where Chu Miao was sitting.

"So, what skill did you select?" She asked as she saw Long Chen come out.

"None. There's no skill inside that I want at the moment," he said.

"Are you sure? You can get some pretty decent skills with thousand contribution points," she responded.

"I know, but I don't want one at the moment. I think I'll select one later if I feel the need for it. I'll see you later," he said as he turned back and left.

"Strange. If he didn't want a skill then why did he come here? It can't be that he wanted to see me, right?" she let out jokingly.

Long Chen had left the place and he was walking towards the Ranking hall now.

After a few minutes of travel, he reached the Ranking hall and entered.

He had already seen the strength ranking room and there was nothing there, but he still hadn't seen the room from where the opponents entered the strength room to fight the disciples.

He entered the Strength Ranking Room again.

A peak Gold Realm puppet entered from the door on the opposite side, but instead of focusing on the puppet, Long Chen entered the room where he came from.

As he entered, he managed to see 2 more puppets there. One was the puppet of a peak Earth Realm cultivator and the other one was the puppet of a peak Sky Realm cultivator.

The Peak Earth Realm puppet was the same one that Long Chen had faced last time. The peak Sky Realm puppet was a different one, though.

That was within his expectations since he realized that a Grand Elder had come to test him instead of the puppet that was usually decided for the test.

He searched through the room but he only found disappointment since the orb was not inside.

He walked back to the battle room where the peak Gold Realm puppet was still waiting for him.

Instead of fighting with the puppet, he pressed the button that was on the nearby wall.

It was a button that was placed there for the disciples taking part in the trials. If they wanted to surrender, they could just press that button. Since Long Chen didn't want to waste any more time, he pressed it.

The gold realm puppet walked back and the exit door opened for Long Chen.

Long Chen left the room. There were still 4 rooms remaining in the Ranking hall. There was a good chance that the orb was inside one of these rooms.

The rooms were Artificer Ranking Room, Alchemist Ranking Room, Physician Ranking Room, and the most mysterious one, the Demon Ranking Room.

Next he stepped inside the Artificer Ranking Room.

After entering, the first thing he noticed was the big furnace that was there. There were also a few tools there, including a giant hammer.

A big chunk of metal was also there. There was also something written on the wall.

"Make an artifact from the star metal in 30 minutes and place the artifact on top of the formation. The grade of the artifact will decide your ranking," He read the words on the wall.

He looked around the room, but there was no law Orb here either.

He searched for the button on the walls to leave this place, but this place was different from the strength ranking room. There was no option to surrender.

Long Chen looked towards the door and then looked back at the star metal in front of him.

'Since I can't leave, I might as well give it a try and get some contribution points,' he thought as he picked up the hammer.

He decided to make a sword from the star metal. He warmed the star metal and began striking it with the hammer. He was beginning to sweat since the room got so hot, but he didn't stop striking.

Thirty minutes passed and he made something. This 'something' didn't look like a sword at all though.

"Hah, it's not as easy as I thought. I can say I did well for someone with no knowledge though," he muttered as he gazed at his creation with pride on his face.

He placed the artifact he created over the formation and the formation started analyzing it.

The words on the wall changed.

"Artifact: Flat Plate. Quality is not up to the mark. No use found. The grade is mid mortal grade," he repeated the words on the wall.

"No use found? Come-on man! There are so many uses for it. You can use it to cut someone's neck off by using it as a frisbee, you can eat food in it, you can use it as a paperweight or a table without legs. You should've asked me its uses," He said in an annoyed tone.

He was quite hurt as his first creation as an Artificer was insulted like this.

The door was opened and he turned back to leave, but he didn't forget to put the artifact he made back into his storage ring.

He was done with searching 2 rooms and only three were left. The next room was something he specialized in. The Alchemy Room.

He entered the room without wasting any time.

He noticed a few things inside that room. There was a cauldron in the center of the room and a table at a corner. He could see a piece of paper on the table. There were a few ingredients lying near the cauldron.

He picked up the paper and began reading it.

"Answer the questions to the best of your knowledge,"

"Question 1: Name the ingredients you see near the cauldron," he read the first question out loud.

"That's easy," Long Chen said as he looked towards the ingredients.

Since his knowledge was quite good, he didn't take much time writing down all the ingredients' names.

"Question 2: write down the special characteristic of the Dark Mist Flora that makes it different from other similar herbs," he read the second question.

Chapter 312 - 312: Test

'Dark Mist Flora? Isn't that what Lang Jing talked about?'

He remembered the conversation he had with Lang Jing last time when he had come to save Long Chen from the poison.

"Looks like that dude did me a favor with this question," he muttered with a smile.

"The Dark Mist Flora makes the poison more active and dangerous when a poison healing pill is used," he wrote down his answer.

"Question 3: Which amongst these is not an ingredient of Nine Soul Strengthening pill?"

There were 7 ingredients written below the question.

"Such an easy question. Of Course you can't use the Green Efiona when making the Nine Soul Strengthening Pill," he muttered with an amused smile on his face.

Since he couldn't use the poison healing pill to cure himself, he didn't feel like there was a need to hide the fact that he could use Alchemy.

At least he would be able to buy more materials through the contribution points he would receive.

One after another, he kept answering the questions and soon he was done with all 20 of them.

After finishing the paper, he placed it over the formation on the table. The formation started shining and the paper disappeared.

After the paper disappeared, a few words appeared on the wall, similar to what was written on the wall of the Artificer ranking room.

He had to make a pill from the materials available. He would get points based on the usefulness of the pill and the grade of it.

"There are so many combinations that are possible with the ingredients. Which pill should I make?" He wondered as he went through the various recipes in his mind.

"Oh right, that would be perfect. I'll make a Vigor Strengthening pill. It's a low-level spirit grade pill, so it should be possible for me to make it, although it would not be easy since I only used Mortal Grade recipes till now,"

He stepped towards the cauldron and started the fire.

He left the cauldron on the fire while he started preparing the ingredients.

After half an hour, he was done with the pill. He picked up the pill and placed it on the formation. It disappeared as well.

'Hopefully the person who checks it will be male,' Long Chen thought.

The door of the room was unlocked and he left the room.

The Orb wasn't in the Alchemy Room either. Next was the Physician Room. Physical Ranking was the same for him as the Artificer ranking since he knew nothing about it as well.

In just a few hours, he had tried three of the 5 ranking rooms. He entered the 4th one as well.

The Physician Room was entirely different from the other three rooms since it was all empty. There was nothing inside it.

He was about to go back to the door and try to leave when characters appeared on the wall.

"Answer the questions related to medical knowledge. The questions will change every thirty seconds and you can only answer a question before the next question appears. Speak the answer out loud for it to be registered."

"Alright, it seems like it's going to be fun," Long Chen said with a smile.

"Question One: How will you treat a patient who suffered Qi Deviation?"

"Simple. Just leave him to recover on his own. I'm sure he'll heal in a month or so," Long Chen replied with a smile.

"Question 2: what causes Heart Luctio Disease?"

"Such a childish question. Of course his bad luck caused that disease," Long Chen replied.

"Question 3: how will you treat baldness caused by a lack of Yin Yang energy?"

"Easy. Give him a hair transplant!" Long Chen answered.

"Question 4: what will you do if you find a person going through devil cultivation backlash?"

"I'll kill him if he's an enemy, and I'll take him to a physician if he's a friend," Long Chen answered without taking long to think.

"Question 5: which meridian of a human is the most vulnerable?"

"I know that. The weakest meridian is the most vulnerable," Long Chen answered.

"Question 6: what is the major difference between the physicality of humans and beasts?"

"I never knew the questions would be so similar. The answer is simple. The human physique is weak as hell without cultivation while the Beast physique is strong even if they don't cultivate."

Just like that, Long Chen answered questions one after another hoping to get the answers right.

After the 20th question, no question appeared on the wall. The door was unlocked and he was allowed to leave.

"I think it went well. But the orb wasn't there either. The only place left is the Demon Ranking Room, but I can't enter before I get ranked in at least 2 rankings."

"I'm already on the Strength ranking. I should be able to get on the Alchemy Rankings as well when the result comes out tomorrow," he muttered as he gazed at the last door.

"Tomorrow," He muttered as he turned back and left the Ranking hall.

He walked back to his courtyard and locked himself in the room.

He sat down in a meditative position as he began cultivating so as to utilize the time to its best.

He wanted to learn the new skill he got as well, but he left that for later since he wanted to get an orb first. Depending on the law he gets, the learning of the movement skill might become easier for him. That's why he didn't try learning anything new yet.

The day passed and the next day arrived. Long Chen opened his eyes as he stood up. He was feeling quite energetic after a full night of cultivation.

He left his room.

"Oh, Man Gu? Are the new rankings out yet?" Long Chen asked.

"What new rankings Master?" Man Gu asked in curiosity.

"Oh, nothing. Just come with me and you'll see," Long Chen said.

He left the courtyard and walked towards the Ranking Hall. He was quite excited to see his rankings this time since his entry in the Demon Ranking Room depended on it.

Chapter 313 - 313: Rankings

When Long Chen got to the Ranking Hall, he was quite surprised to see the crowd surrounding that place.

"What the heck is happening here? Why is everyone surrounding the ranking hall now?" Long Chen muttered with a frown on his face.

"The demon is here!" someone amongst the crowd announced.

Suddenly there was chaos everywhere as the people pushed each other away to move from Long Chen's path.

Everyone separated and created an opening for Long Chen.

"Next time I hear someone call me a demon, I promise you won't be able to speak the next day!" Long Chen said loudly as he stepped towards the Ranking Hall and asked past the crowd.

There was a stone wall in front of the Ranking Hall that showed the rankings. All the rankings only listed the top hundred rankers. Thus only a hundred disciples could be on a ranking.

Long Chen stopped before the stone wall and glanced at the Strength Rankings. He was 3rd there and there was no change. Probably because of his first attempt, since he didn't even fight on his second attempt.

He skipped over the Artificer Rankings since he wanted to see the Alchemy Rankings first. The Alchemy Ranking was what he was more confident about. The other two were just casual tries after all.

As soon as he saw the Alchemy Rankings, a beautiful smile formed on his face. The first name on the Ranking List for Alchemists was now Long Chen. The previous 1st ranker was slipped down.

The second name was that of the same girl that was now the 4th in the Strength Rankings. So in a sense, Long Chen had made her drop down in two rankings unintentionally.

'Nice. I can enter the Demon Ranking room now,' he thought.

The biggest burden was off his shoulders since he now had permission to enter the Demon Ranking room.

Since he was relaxed now, he shifted his focus back to the Artificer Rankings. Although he was doubtful about this, he still didn't give up hope.

'It's quite possible that they loved my Star Metal plate and recognized my genius talent,' He thought as he read the list.

As he went through the names on the list one by one, he realized that unfortunately, his name wasn't on it.

"Looks like they didn't like my Star Metal plate after all. Their loss. They are missing out on the greatness," he muttered as he shifted his focus to the 4th ranking list, the Physician Rankings.

'Maybe the physicians are smarter and know how to recognize talent,' He thought.

He read the names on the Physician Ranking List starting from the first ranked.

"Dai Hu? Isn't this the name of the boy that runs that cafe nearby?" he exclaimed in surprise.

"Senior Dai Hu? yeah, he's the owner of that place. He's also the best physical amongst the disciples of the sect. That's one of the factors that helped him get the permission from the Sect," Man Gu explained to Long Chen.

"I think I saw him in the strength Ranking as well. He's a double Ranker? Did he attend the Demon Rankings at well?" Long Chen asked.

"Yeah, He did give it a try. But he failed," Man Gu answered Long Chen.

"Interesting. He told me that Mu Zheng tried to get on the demon ranking, but he hid the fact that he himself was a double ranker and that he tried as well?" Long Chen muttered.

"Whatever, since I'm going there myself, I don't need to ask anyone," He said as he continued looking at the names on the physician ranking list.

"What the f?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise as he actually managed to find his name on the list.

He was ranked the 99th in the Physician Rankings.

"Nice, I'm not the worst amongst the physician rankers," He said with a bright smile on his face.

"Amazing Master! You've managed to get a triple ranking! You joined the rare few people who managed to achieve this feat. I think you'll get 5000 extra contribution points for this." Man Gu exclaimed with an excited look on his face.

"Together with the 10000 contribution points for being ranked 1st in the Alchemy List and the 50 contribution points for being ranked 99th, you have 15050 contribution points," Man Gu further continued.

"Yeah. It's quite good," Long Chen said with a smile. Although he himself was surprised, he acted as if he knew about it.

"That's for the later though. I'm going to attend the Demon Rankings. Do you have any suggestions about that?" he asked.

"I apologize to the master, but there's no information about it. Those who entered it, never talk about it. All I can say is that you should be careful. It won't be simple," Man Gu replied.

"Alright. I can handle it easily," Long Chen said as he entered the Ranking Hall.

Watching him enter the Ranking Hall, the whole crowd in the background started talking amongst themselves.

"Do you think he's going to attempt the Demon Ranking?" Someone said.

"I'm sure that he'll attempt it. He already tried all the other rankings. Why would he go inside, if not for the Demon Ranking? The main question is, can he succeed?" Another person chimed in.

"There's no chance. Even Senior Mu Zheng wasn't able to do that despite being the 1st rank in Strength Ranking. He has no chance."

"He's the demon of our sect. Only a demon can enter the Demon ranking. I think he might succeed. Don't forget, he's the disciple of Elder Jing. Elder Jing's previous disciple Senior Mu Chan was also in the Demon Rankings, So I feel like he has a better chance than Senior Mu Zheng."

The crowd kept talking amongst themselves as if they were the real judges.

While the crowd was lost in their discussions, Long Chen had opened the door of the Demon Ranking Room. He entered the room.

It was less like a room and more like stairs that were going downwards.

As soon as he stepped onto the stairs, the door closed behind him. The previously lit room had turned dark.

The thing that surprised him the most was that he wasn't able to see anything. It was as if the darkness of this place was more powerful.

Long Chen was able to see in the darkness because of his special senses, but in this place his night vision didn't work.

"It's alright. I still have the Flame Essence," Long Chen muttered as he used Flame Essence to create fire. But even the fire didn't manage to brighten the place and disappeared. It was as if even the light was swallowed by the darkness.

Long Chen realized that maybe he wasn't allowed to see here.

He brought out his King's sword for his protection as he walked down the stairs.

He was trying to use his hearing senses to protect himself against any unknown dangers.

Long Chen kept going down the stairs carefully in order to not fall. After going down for 5 minutes, the stairs stopped and he reached a flat surface.

He gripped the sword firmly in his hand as he stepped forward. He also brought out the mountain destroyer and held it in his other hand.

He waved the mountain destroyer ahead to see if there was any obstruction in the path while just keeping the King's sword ready to attack at a moment's notice.

Ssssss

He hurriedly swung his sword to his right as he heard the noise, but the sword didn't make contact with anything.

Long Chen stopped in his tracks and stood still. He could feel that someone or something was nearby and he had missed them.

The strange noise appeared again, making him swing his sword, but it was another miss.

"Whatever you are, I'll kill you," Long Chen said as he kept swinging his sword whenever he heard a noise. Although he missed all the time, he was starting to familiarise himself with its pattern.

The thing kept switching locations, but there was a certain pattern in his movement. It was much easier once he recognized it.

This time when he heard the noise, he didn't attack in that direction. Instead, he attacked in the opposite direction, and finally his sword struck something.

Eeeee

He heard a loud screech as his King's Sword sliced through something.

Chapter 314 - 314: Kill Her

After killing the thing, he waited for over ten minutes, but he heard no sound.

He wanted to see what that thing was, but he couldn't see anything. He could have touched the thing, but he didn't want to. Whatever it was, didn't matter. To him it was only a dead body now.

He didn't forget to place that thing in his storage ring without touching it. He would see it when he left.

He resumed his journey as he walked ahead carefully. The darkness was just as dark. No matter how much he tried, he still wasn't able to see anything. He had only walked for a few minutes before he heard the sound of footsteps.

It sounded like the human footsteps that were closer to him. He couldn't see them, but from their footsteps, he realized that there was at least more than one person.

'There are other humans here? Are they facing the same darkness or can they see? It would be quite problematic if they were able to see since they were most probably the enemies," he wondered.

He stopped and waited for the people to get closer since he had no other path to choose.

"Stop right there!" the voice sounded like it belonged to a man, and the footsteps stopped approximately 30 meters away from him.

"I'm already standing still. I'm not even walking," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"Who are you? And what are you doing here? Also, did you see a strange creature? We were following it." The person in the front said in his heavy tone.

"Sorry, I haven't seen anything. You can go back," Long Chen said.

"We can't go back. We'll see for ourselves if you're hiding it," they said.

"Sigh, can't say I wasn't expecting it," Long Chen said as he gripped both his swords in his hands. He was ready for the battle that was about to come.

He heard the footsteps of someone. The person was running towards him.

Since he could not see anything, Long Chen had already closed his eyes. He was trying to visualize his opponent through the sounds.

Even the sounds made by their weapons when it slashed through the air was audible to him.

He could sense a sword being swung towards his chest. He moved the Mountain Destroyer to block the sword while he used his King's sword to strike the person down.

"Aaaa!" a scream escaped the man's mouth as his chest was sliced open by Long Chen's sword.

"You killed one of us? You will die!" said someone loudly.

As the man was killed, all the remaining people ran to him together. Too many footsteps were making it difficult to properly visualize them, thus Long Chen didn't wait for them to get to him.

He got into a sword stance.

"Seven Forms of Saint Sword: Third Form-Destruction!"

Long Chen slashed with his King's sword horizontally. The sword slashed even the wind apart. A bright arc of light left the sword and advanced ahead towards the people that were running towards Long Chen.

The footsteps suddenly stopped, but strangely enough, Long Chen didn't hear any screams this time. It was as if the people had disappeared into thin air as soon as his attack struck them.

He stepped to the front, where the first body fell, but even it wasn't there.

"What the heck is happening here?" he muttered with a perplexed look on his face.

He waited for over ten minutes, but he didn't hear any sound.

"Looks like they were part of the test and with their death, their job was finished," He muttered.

He started walking ahead again. He didn't face anything for quite some time. He was already starting to wonder how long this silence will last.

After walking for 10 more minutes, he saw light. The darkness was beginning to disappear and there was a light source some distance away.

He walked towards the light source in the distance and after 5 more minutes, he was able to exit that tunnel-shaped cave. He stepped inside a brightly lit hall.

His eyes took a few seconds to adjust to the brightness. He saw a handsome man standing at some distance from him. The man was wearing beautiful crimson clothes. He had donned a blood-red robe on his back.

"You did well coming here without being defeated. You might have a chance to get ranked. But now your real challenge will begin. I wonder if you have the strength to do what it takes," the man said with a grin on his face.

He stepped aside and allowed Long Chen to see what was behind him.

A little 7-8-year-old girl was standing behind him. She had an innocent face and crystal clear eyes. Her hands were tied by ropes and there were tears in her eyes.

"This is where the last challenger failed. Do you know what's really important to be in the demon ranking? It's to be like a demon. You need to be cruel to your core. Slaughter everyone that stands between you and your goal. Don't differentiate between a bad person and an innocent one. You'll be a demon as long as you have the heart to slaughter them all. And that is what it will take for you to succeed," The man said with a slight smile on his face.

Long Chen heard his words and couldn't help but be surprised. This test was getting quite weird.

"Behind me is a real girl that was caught from the nearby empire. She's to be used in the tests for this year. As long as she survives for a year, she will be freed," The man further said. He placed his hands over the head of the girl.

"Also, as long as you kill her, you'll get your rank. Your rank will depend on how long you take to kill her. Let's see if you have the conviction to do it or not," the man said as he freed the hands of the girl and pushed her towards Long Chen.

The man stepped back and sat on his chair as he began watching the scene in front of him.

A frown was already on Long Chen's face as he heard everything that man had to say.

"The test is to kill an innocent mortal? I need to kill a kid?" he asked as he looked at the man sitting on the throne.

"Yes. It's a simple test, but it's where most people fail. Not many people realize the true essence of being a demon. They can't do what they need to do. Let's see if you have the guts to go it. Do as I say and kill the girl," the man said with a smile. He didn't take his eyes off of Long Chen for even a second.

Long Chen made a determination as he gripped his sword and looked towards the little girl that was standing in front of him.

He wasn't sure if it was real or fake, but it looked real. The girl was shivering as tears kept falling from her eyes.

"Is that really what a demon is? A weapon of slaughter?" He muttered as he looked towards the girl.

'If I kill, will I gain what I need? The conviction, the strength, the determination. Is it really that simple? Kill an innocent?' he thought as he looked at the girl standing in front of him.

"I'm sorry little girl," He said as he stepped towards the girl.

He was just 1 step away from the little girl. He gripped his sword firmly in his hand as he gazed at the girl. Her tears never stopped for even a second.

"It's something I must do," he said as he raised his King's Sword high in the sky.

Chapter 315 - 315: Real Demon

"It's something that I must do," he said as he raised his King's Sword high in the sky.

"Good. It looks like you have potential. Finish the job and let out your true nature. A demon should never be caged within the boundaries created by the righteous. Make your own rules and slaughter the ones that oppose your rules," the man said with a grin on his face as he saw Long Chen raising the sword.

"A demon should release his wild nature," Long Chen repeated his words as he gripped the sword firmly.

His eyes started shining with a starry black light and he finally swung his sword.

Just as his sword was about to strike the girl, he disappeared.

Long Chen appeared right behind the man, but his sword didn't stop. In just a short instant, before the man could even react, the sword sliced his head off.

"You think you can tell a demon what to do? I'm not your servant! I'll kill when I want to! I'll kill who I want to!" Long Chen said in a heavy tone as he saw the headless body fall to the ground.

The girl stood shocked in her original position. A relieved expression appeared on her face as she saw the man fall down to the ground.

"Thank you big brother!" she excitedly ran towards Long Chen, but just as she reached near him, he swung his King's Sword once again.

Another headless body fell to the ground.

"Just because I didn't kill you before doesn't mean that I am soft-hearted. I just didn't want to follow someone else's orders, but you just had to run to me, didn't you? No normal mortal girl would run to a person who had murdered someone in front of her," Long Chen muttered softly.

"Hmm?" Long Chen frowned as he heard some sounds behind him.

As he turned back, he saw some words written on the wall.

"The test is over, you can leave."

"This was it? I thought the Demon Ranking test would be something more complicated. Well, even if the test is over, I can't leave. The test or the rank was never my target," he muttered as he started looking around the room.

He searched from top to bottom, but he didn't find the law orb anywhere in the room.

"It's not here either? Seriously!" he exclaimed with an annoyed look on his face.

He wanted to curse out loud since all this effort had gone to waste. All he wanted was the law orb. The ranking and contribution points were only secondary.

He turned back with disappointment on his face and left the large hall and again entered the dark tunnel that was connected to the exit.

"Wait a minute? The test is over, so why is this place still so dark? My eyes still can't see anything here. Also, I checked every place, but not this dark tunnel," he let out as a thought appeared in his mind.

"I can't leave this place without searching it thoroughly," he muttered as he got down to his knees as he started searching the ground.

Although the tunnel wasn't too wide, it was still wide enough that it took Long Chen 5 minutes to cover 1 meter of the tunnel.

The darkness wasn't making it easier and he had to search with only his hands which took even longer.

"Oh right! I have someone who can help me with that!" He abruptly thought. He gave a call to someone inside his storage ring.

A Beast came out of the Beast Region inside his storage ring.

"Tell me kid! Why did you call this heavenly king here? Have you fallen in love? Do you need me to act as a wingman? I must warn you that there's a good chance that the girl you like might fall for me. I can't control my dashing charm after all," Dami said as soon as he got out of the ring.

"Hmm? Why is it so dark here? Despite this Lord having night vision, I can't see anything," The Snake Monarch Dami said.

"Forget about that, there's something I need your help for!" Long Chen said.

"Don't worry, I already promised you that I'll be your wingman. Don't forget my warning though," Dami said before Long Chen could further speak.

"That's not what I need, you idiot! If there ever comes a time when I need you as a wingman, I would much rather just jump off a cliff!" Long Chen said in an annoyed tone.

He quite likes the nonsense of the Snake Monarch on a few occasions, but he felt like this was not the time.

"I can smell some jealousy. You don't need to be jealous of this Lord. This Lord won't take your girl. This King is not a person like that! I am very righteous," The Snake Monarch said.

"Can you stop wasting time and listen to me? We are in a tunnel-like cave at the moment. I need you to get large and search the floor of this tunnel. Since we can't see anything here, I can only depend on your big body to sweep through the floor. I am looking for an orb that's the size of my head," Long Chen explained.

"Is that something important? It won't be crushed under this Lord's body right?" The Snake Monarch asked.

"Yea, Don't worry about that. I don't think you can break that orb even if you use all your strength," Long Chen replied.

"That's an object like that in this world? This Lord will believe you if you say so," The Snake Monarch responded.

"Alright! Move to the back. Let this Lord handle it from here on," Dami said as he started getting bigger. His size kept increasing.

His width was half the width of the whole tunnel. The Snake Monarch started slithering ahead in a zigzag motion, but in such a way that no floor area was left unchecked.

Long Chen waited behind and hoped that Dami would find the law orb for him.

After around half an hour, The Snake Monarch came back.

"Did you find anything?" Long Chen asked.

"This King didn't find anything. There was nothing on the floor," The Snake Monarch said.

"I guess I really was wrong. It's not here after all," Long Chen muttered in disappointment.

He sent Dami back into the beast region and started walking towards the exit. Since it was dark, he walked closer to the wall and kept his hand touching the wall so he could navigate properly.

Since the test was already over, there was no danger in walking closer to the walls.

Chapter 316 - 316: Finding Law Orb

Long Chen stepped towards the exit using the support of the wall. It was much faster and much easier to go towards the exit this way.

He had traveled more than half the distance already and he was continuing ahead when he felt something strange.

The wall had mostly been rough till now. But it was quite smooth for a small instant before it became rough again.

He stepped back and moved his hand backward, and he was right. A small portion of the wall was indeed smooth.

He used his hand to feel the wall and just a small portion of it had a different texture. It was like a small circle of 2-3 centimeter diameter that was different.

"There's definitely something odd here. If I'm not wrong, it should be the law orb that's embedded into the wall," Long Chen muttered as a smile appeared on his face.

He closed his fist as he started the movement of his Qi towards his fist and punched the wall. He intentionally avoided the orb since the orb was like an unbreakable object and it would only hurt his hand.

Long Chen kept hitting the wall around the orb. In a way, it felt like he was breaking the wall around the orb so that he could take it out with less trouble.

After around 30 or so punches, he felt like it was enough as he heard the sound of a crystal-like object falling to the ground. He touched the wall and the orb wasn't there.

He began searching in the ground and looking for the small orb-like thing.

"Found you! I'll see you later, go back to the ring for now," Long Chen said with a smile as he placed the orb in his storage ring.

As soon as the orb entered the storage ring, the impossible darkness in the tunnel disappeared along with it and he was finally able to see.

"What the heck? So that orb was the thing that was causing this darkness? Is that related to its law?" he muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Xun! Is there a law of darkness?" he asked softly.

"Yeah. I think that the orb you got is for the Law of Darkness. It's a special law. It's really amazing that you managed to get it. It's also considered a supreme grade special law!" Xun said as she appeared beside him.

"Are you serious? The law of darkness is a supreme grade? I don't get it. It's just darkness, how can it be on the same level as the law of space? Shouldn't space be much more powerful than it, since space and time are the major forces in the universe" he asked in surprise.

"The darkness is not as simple as you think. The darkness has always been in existence. Even before the universe came to existence and began, there was darkness. Space itself contains darkness. So in a way, it's one of the oldest laws." Xun said in full seriousness.

"The darkness isn't only because of the lack of light, it's much more than that. The darkness of the heart, the darkness of the humans, and the darkness of the world. How can something that relates to them be so simple?" Xun said with a frown on her face.

"Interesting. I never knew it could be so important. I hope I get a good skill from it when I form my law seed of darkness," Long Chen said with a thoughtful look as he continued walking towards the exit.

He came out of the Ranking room and left the Ranking Hall.

As Long Chen exited the hall, he was surprised to see that half the sect was standing outside the hall.

"He's out," someone whispered amongst the crowd.

"He was inside for the longest, do you think he succeeded?"

"I see no wounds on his body. He doesn't look happy either. Maybe he failed?"

"It would be good if he failed. I want Senior Brother Mu Zheng to be the first person in this generation to get a Demon Ranking!"

"Yes, Senior brother Zheng is way better than that demon. I want him to succeed before anyone else,"

"I don't want this demon to get anything good. He's too ruthless. I still remember the day he sliced off the arm of senior Tiyu.

Many men amongst the crowd kept whispering amongst themselves and Long Chen was able to hear all of their words.

He walked towards the crowd and the crowd moved aside, giving him a path to leave.

Long Chen didn't leave though. He stopped midway as he turned to look towards the group of people that were talking about him just now.

"You people, there! Can you answer a question of mine?" Long Chen asked as he gazed at the boys.

"Ah, Of course, Senior," The men replied as they respectfully bowed their heads.

"It's nothing complicated. I was just wondering something. Do you think your Senior Brother would be able to save you if I slaughtered you all?" Long Chen said with an innocent smile on his face.

Although he was smiling innocently, his innocent smile sent shivers down the spines of the group.

"S-senior? W-what are you talking about?" They pretended to be ignorant, though inside they were shivering.

"I felt like I heard some of you say that I shouldn't succeed in anything, and I also felt like I heard you talk about some Senior Zheng. So I was just curious if he would save you when I slaughter you all?" Long Chen said with a smile as he brought out his sword.

he softly walked towards the men. The men couldn't even run as they were so scared that their legs stopped working. They fell down to their knees.

"Please forgive us, Senior! We made a mistake!" the men said as they began pleading with shaking hands.

The crowd had already moved aside from them.

Long Chen stopped before the men as he looked at their pitiful condition.

He didn't even feel like swinging his sword at these insects.

Long Chen didn't say anything else and simply turned back. He left.

As the crowd watched Long Chen leave, they finally breathed in relief. The only ones that were still sweating were the ones that Long Chen had talked to.

"He heard us!" one of them said as he tried to calm his fast-beating heart.

"He didn't kill us, maybe he's not that bad after all," another person said.

"You guys don't get it! He has seen our faces and he will kill us later on. He just didn't do it here since there are so many people," someone said as tears appeared in his eyes.

"Let's hide somewhere. Leave the sect on a mission! We must do something to save our lives," he continued as he looked at his friends.

While people were still misunderstanding his intentions, Long Chen had entered his courtyard.

"Master, you're back! How did it go?" Man Gu asked with an excited look on his face.

"It went quite well. You can go see tomorrow since I'll be busy. Anyways, I'm going in for closed-door cultivation. Don't disturb me, no matter what happens. Alright?" Long Chen told Man Gu as he entered his room and closed the door.

He fell down on his bed as he relaxed his body.

"Xun, tell me something," he asked softly.

"What do you want to know?" she appeared near him.

"How can I learn the law of darkness here?" he asked.

"What do you mean? Just do what you did with other Law Orbs," Xun replied.

"That's not what I mean! I meant, how can I do that here? As we all know, my comprehension can take a lot of time, and I'm poisoned. If I don't take the pill each week, I'll die from the poison." Long Chen replied.

Chapter 317 - 317: Glimpse Of The Dark Future?

"That is indeed concerning. The first thing just means that you have to complete the comprehension in less than 7 days, which should be possible for you, seeing your old records, but the real concern is the second one," Xun said with a thoughtful look on her face.

"It is indeed true that Lang Jing can barge in here anytime he desires, so it's not practical to use it here. We should go outside the sect," she suggested.

"That's easier said than done. Do you think Lang Jing will allow me to leave?" he asked with a frown.

"He might allow you to go outside. I don't think that he's concerned about you running away. It seems like he's quite confident about his poison," Xun said.

"I can give it a shot. I heard the sect gives contribution points for missions. That means there should be a mission hall. I can try getting a mission that allows me to go outside for some time. I might even be able to fool Lang Jing," he muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Exactly," Xun said.

"I'll do it tomorrow though. I'm dead tired for the day. So much happened," he said as he yawned.

He closed his eyes and fell asleep.

"Sigh, he's so fast to fall asleep when he wants to," Xun muttered with a wry smile on her face as she disappeared.

Back in the Blazing Sun Empire, Mingyu and Zhiqing were sitting in the same room. It had been a few days, but Ji Shan hadn't been able to convince his father to share the location of the Beast Hall.

Without that information, they were having difficulties in deciding what to do. That had no idea where those people took Long Chen, all they had was faith that he was still alive.

"How long are we going to wait like this? It's clear that the Emperor isn't going to tell us anything," Zhiqing said with a frown on her face.

"He's our only hope. Let's not lose faith. The King's health is getting worse, so he might be a little stressed about his son. I think if we keep bothering him like this, he's definitely going to tell us," Mingyu said with a thoughtful look on her face.

"If he still doesn't tell us within a week, I can just put a knife to his neck and force him to tell us. We should arrange for a teleportation Talisman for escaping before that," she continued.

They kept discussing for around 2 hours before ultimately falling asleep.

That night, Mingyu saw a dream, but it was unlike any dream she had seen before.

She felt like she wasn't seeing a dream, but reality itself.

She saw Long Chen standing at some distance. But he didn't look normal. He looked as if he was consumed by darkness entirely.

There was another person standing in front of Long Chen, but that person was wearing a cloak so she couldn't see who it was.

Both of them had a sword in their hands. While Long Chen had his King's sword, the person facing him had a black sword that was burning in black flames.

None of them said anything as they faced each other.

Mingyu also noticed another person at some distance.

She recognized that person. It was a man whose face was half-covered by his mask.

It was the same man that was able to kill peak Sky Realm cultivators with just a snap of his fingers. The same man that gave her the crystal that brought her to Long Chen.

The man was simply watching both of them from far away. It didn't look like he was willing to interfere as he rested his back against the tree behind him.

Long Chen raised his sword as he finally moved. The person facing him similarly made a movement, but before she could see the result, the scenery changed.

She found herself inside a small room. She looked to the front and saw two people standing there. She saw that a different version of her and Long Chen were facing each other.

Long Chen looked quite normal in this place. He wasn't scary like the Long Chen she saw just a moment ago. She didn't know if it was after the event from before, or before.

She had tears in her eyes and it seemed like she was scolding Long Chen for something.

Mingyu couldn't hear any of the words so she didn't understand why that version of her was scolding him, but it seemed like something was really wrong here.

Long Chen seemed like he was trying to speak, but he wasn't able to say anything.

The scene again changed as she found herself standing at a different place.

She was standing in a place that was covered by the blood. It seemed like a city. She didn't know where the city was, but she found it somewhat familiar.

The ground was covered in blood and she wasn't able to see anything but the blood. After some time, she saw a few people running, but a bright arc of light came from behind and sliced them apart.

More blood fell on the already bloodied ground.

After a few more seconds she saw a person come from the direction that the attack came from.

Her mouth opened wide in disbelief as she saw the person. It was none other than Long Chen.

There was no expression on his face. She couldn't see happiness, nor anger. All she saw was the thirst for slaughter.

He didn't stop there and continued on his path of slaughter.

This time she was able to hear the sounds, though all she heard were the pained screams.

She looked in a different direction and she once again saw the half-masked man. This time he was sitting on top of a roof, watching the chaos.

He didn't seem like he was enjoying it though. She could see his clenched fists that seemed as if they were raring to fight.

The man suddenly looked towards Mingyu as he opened his lips to say something.

She couldn't hear what he was saying, but from the movement of his lips, she felt like he was saying:

"Watch, Seer of Destiny."

"Huh!" Mingyu abruptly woke up as she breathed heavily.

She was covered in sweat as if she had a really bad dream. Her heart was still beating as fast as it could.

She looked around and breathed in relief when she found out that she was still in her bed. Zhiqing was still peacefully sleeping nearby.

"Was that just a bad dream? Or a glimpse at what's to come?" she muttered with a frown on her face.

Back in the Dark Soul Sect, Long Chen was having a pretty comfortable sleep.

In his dream, he was at the Long Clan. He had already introduced Zhiqing and Mingyu to his mother. He even informed his mother that Xue and Mei were his women.

Since that moment, there was an atmosphere of happiness in the whole clan. Everyone was happy for him.

He also dreamt of the night where he spent the night with all 4 of his women on the same bed.

Throughout the night, his smile never disappeared from his face.

The night passed and the morning arrived as Long Chen woke up.

"That was some great dream," he let out with a smile as he stretched his arms.

He got off the bed and started getting ready. After getting ready, he left his room and found Man Gu in the hall.

"Good morning Master!" Man Gu said.

"Good morning," Long Chen greeted back.

"I need your help for the day. I want to select a mission that requires me to go outside the sect. Can you take me to the place where I can get missions from?" Long Chen asked.

Chapter 318 - 318: Clash With Mu Zheng

"Oh, That's easy. You just need to go to the Mission Hall and you can select a mission. Master can follow me, I know the direction," Man Gu said.

Long Chen left his courtyard with Man Gu.

"The missions are classified according to the danger levels of the mission. There are 5 levels of difficulty. The 5th level is reserved for black-robed elders."

"Since Master is in the top 3 in the Strength Ranking, I think you should be able to get a level 4 mission with ease," Man Gu said with a smile.

"Oh right, Master! The Demon Ranking! Your result is coming today. Should we go there first?" Man Gu said.

"Yea, we might as well go there and see the results before I get my mission," Long Chen nodded his head as he accepted Man Gu's suggestion.

They stopped before the Ranking Hall and strangely, no one was there unlike the other days.

"Looks like I didn't get ranked, that's why there is no one here," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

He still walked towards the Ranking Wall and glanced at the Demon Ranking that was previously empty.

"Hmm? I succeeded?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise as he saw his name on the list.

There was only one name on the list, and that belonged to him. There were no ranks or points in front of his name.

"Why isn't anyone here then? Shouldn't it be big news that I got into the Demon Rankings?" Long Chen exclaimed as he looked at Man Gu.

"Maybe everyone already saw the rankings and they ran away. I think it's possible that they're afraid of meeting you since you are a Demon Ranker," Man Gu replied.

"Why would they be afraid of me now? They weren't that afraid before?" Long Chen asked with a perplexed look on his face.

"It might be because of the privilege that you now have. You're a Demon Ranker. So your position is the highest in the sect. You're even higher than the Red Robed Elders at the moment," Man Gu exclaimed.

"Oh? Interesting. Do I get any other privileges?" Long Chen asked.

"Of Course. You can now kill anyone in the sect. You can even kill a 4-star disciple without worrying about the retaliation from their Master, as long as you have a valid reason. You must have the strength to kill them though. That's a privilege given to you now," Man Gu said.

"Nice. I guess that's why no one is here. Anything else?" Long Chen further asked.

"Yup. You can get all materials from the sect at a 50% discount. You can also get skills from the Skill Hall by giving half the contribution points that were previously needed for the skill," Man Gu explained.

"Also, you get 50000 contribution points for getting on the Demon Rankings. There's one more advantage. Now you can even select level 5 missions that are only reserved for the black-robed elders, but I would advise against that," Man Gu said in a concerned tone.

"Why is that? I guess that must be quite difficult since they are usually reserved for black-robed elders," Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"They're really dangerous and can get you killed. Senior Mu Chan chose a Level 5 mission when he left the sect. He was killed by an Elder of the Beast Hall. I don't know what that mission was, but since it got the Elders of Beast Hall involved, I can only imagine how dangerous it was," Man Gu exclaimed in a worried tone.

"Hah, don't worry about it. It's not like I lack contribution points. I'll choose a simple mission. Probably a level 3 since I don't want it to get dangerous, but I can't choose something too low risk either, since that would not help me in convincing him," Long Chen said as he smiled slightly.

"Let's go, I need to select a mission," he said.

"Oh, right," Man Gu scratched his head as he realized that he had to escort Long Chen as well.

He led Long Chen towards the Mission Hall.

They saw a few people along the way, but most of them turned back straight away and went in the opposite direction as soon as they noticed Long Chen.

They were only halfway there when Long Chen noticed a disciple. The disciple noticed him as well, but unlike others, he didn't run away. He simply walked towards Long Chen quite casually.

The man looked to be 23-24 years old. He had long sky blue hair that came down to his waist. His hair was tied.

The man was wearing quite clean clothes that made him look like a scholar and not like a disciple of the Dark Soul Sect.

Long Chen noticed the 4-star badge on the chest of the man. The 4-star badge was of a different color compared to the normal 4-star badges.

Through that badge, Long Chen got a little bit of an idea about who that person might be.

After a short time, the man reached Long Chen and stopped in front of him.

"You must be Long Chen. I've heard a lot about you," the man said in a carefree tone as he observed Long Chen top to bottom.

Long Chen did the same thing as he observed the man from top to bottom.

"You must be Mu Zheng. I've heard a lot about you as well," Long Chen said with a smile.

"Oh? Is that how you talk to a senior?" the man smiled as he said.

"Do you need anything from me?" Long Chen didn't reply to his question and asked straightforwardly.

"You've got quite the attitude, don't you?" Mu Zheng said, though his tone wasn't the same as before. Long Chen could hear the annoyance in his voice.

"Can you get straight to the point? I have more important things to do," Long Chen said as he looked at Mu Zheng.

"Hmm, I won't lower myself to your level. I'm here to ask you something. I heard that you got into the Demon Ranking," Mu Zheng said.

"Yeah, what about it?" Long Chen inquired.

Mu Zheng didn't answer him and looked at Man Gu.

"Leave us alone for a second," he told Man Gu.

Man Gu didn't immediately listen to him and just gazed at Long Chen. Long Chen nodded his head and Man Gu moved away from them.

"Now that he's gone. Tell me what you need," Long Chen said.

"Tell me how you passed the test of the demon ranking!" Mu Zheng asked.

"Hmm? Aren't you the disciple of Sect Master? Can't you ask her?" Long Chen asked in curiosity.

"I went to my Master when I failed the first time, but she didn't tell me anything. The Elders don't tell the way either," Mu Zheng said.

"I can't think of anything that I did wrong the first time. I passed the dark tunnel by killing every obstruction. I even killed the girl without taking much time. I still didn't get a ranking. Tell me what you did differently?" Mu Zheng asked.

"I'm sorry, but I don't think that I can tell you. As far as I know, talking about that is not allowed. And even if that was allowed, I wouldn't tell you. Your Master wants you to succeed through your own efforts. I won't tell you the easy way out," Long Chen said.

"What easy way out! Are you calling me a coward!" Mu Zheng roared in anger as he brought out his sword and pointed it at Long Chen.

"You know that I have the license to kill, don't you? Still, you dare to point your weapon at me?" Long Chen said with an amused smile on his face.

Chapter 319 - 319: Martial Soul Awakens!

"I agree that you are allowed to kill anyone, but you need to have the strength for that. Do you really think that you can face me?" Mu Zheng said.

"I took the Strength Ranking test half a year ago when I was way weaker than I am now. If you can't even defeat the old me in the Strength Rankings, do you really think you can defeat me now?" he said in a mocking tone.

"If you don't put your sword down in the next 10 seconds, I promise that you'll find out!" Long Chen said as he got serious as well.

"You're really getting on my nerves. I guess I won't kill you. I'll destroy your Martial Soul instead. You'll have a life way worse than death. Although I'd get scolded, it's worth it if I get to teach respect to an arrogant prick like you," Mu Zheng said as he glared at Long Chen.

"Soul Devouring!" Mu Zheng said loudly.

Before Long Chen could respond, A black, semi-transparent specter came out of My Zheng's hands and struck Long Chen.

It entered Long Chen's body.

"What?" Long Chen groaned in pain as he fell down to his knees.

A dark mist was starting to shroud his martial space.

Long Chen felt extreme pain as half of his martial space was covered in the mist.

Mu Zheng, on the other hand, was enjoying the pained look on Long Chen.

Long Chen's heart demon was sleeping calmly when the dark mist touched him, but it disintegrated without even affecting it.

From that moment on, the mist stayed away from his heart demon.

One-third of Long Chen's Martial Space was swallowed by the mist. Long Chen's face had turned pale white.

"That's what you get for having so much attitude without having the necessary strength to back yourself up," Mu Zheng chuckled as he stared at Long Chen.

Long Chen was struggling to even think clearly. He wanted to bring the Talisman out and contact Mu Zheng, but before he could do that, everything changed.

His long silent Martial Soul finally opened his eyes.

The blood-red eyes seemed like they had seen countless people die. They were so fierce that they looked like the eyes of the God of Slaughter itself.

As soon as the eyes opened, the mist disappeared entirely as it had never been there.

The heart demon that was sleeping felt a terrifying aura as it hurriedly opened his eyes as well.

Long Chen's Martial Soul didn't stop there. It looked like it was angry that someone had dared to attack it. It was looking for revenge.

It looked straight ahead.

Mu Zheng, who was laughing till now, suddenly coughed out a mouthful of blood.

"Aaaaaa," he roared in pain.

Mu Zheng couldn't see it, but it was all because of his Martial Soul. His martial soul had suddenly started burning.

The revenge didn't stop here. Somehow, his martial soul was sliced in half by some invisible force.

Mu Zheng fell down to the ground as his body lost all its strength. His eyes lost their focus.

After being done with Mu Zheng, Long Chen's Martial Soul glanced towards Long Chen's heart demon that was shivering by now.

It didn't do anything though. His Martial Soul closed its eyes and returned to the way it had been for years.

"W-what was that?" Long Chen's Heart Demon said. He was still shivering in fear.

"Is that his Martial Soul? How frightening," the Heart Demon muttered to himself.

"Why didn't it attack me though? Maybe it does not consider me harmful to his existence? I'm after all not trying to hurt him. I have no such intention. I just want him to be true to his instincts. Maybe that's why it didn't target me?" he said.

Long Chen was groaning in pain, but the pain suddenly disappeared as if it was never there. His pale face also gained back its original color, but his heart was still beating fast.

He stood up as he brought out his King's Sword. He was ready to slaughter Mu Zheng. He was ready to throw his Illusion at a moment's notice, but he was shocked to see Mu Zheng lying on the ground.

His eyes had lost all focus. In fact, if he didn't see him breathing, he would have thought that Mu Zheng was dead.

"Just what the heck happened here?" Long Chen said with a frown as he saw Mu Zheng.

He moved closer to Mu Zheng and kicked him.

Mu Zheng flew back and crashed on the ground, but Long Chen still didn't see him move his body.

"Has he gone crazy?" Long Chen muttered with a frown on his face.

Right that instant, a Winged Lion landed near them. An Elder hurriedly got down of the Winged Lion and ran towards Mu Zheng.

Long Chen recognized that Elder. It was the same person who he faced in the Strength Ranking test. He was a peak Sky Realm cultivator of the Sect and the Grand Elder.

The Grand Elder checked Mu Zheng and frowned.

"What did you do to him?" Grand Elder asked as he glared at Long Chen.

"I did nothing. He himself fell on the ground and started acting like that!" Long Chen explained.

"Oh really? Why is his sword lying there?" Grand Elder said as he pointed towards Mu Zheng's sword that was lying on the ground.

"Also, why do you have a sword in your hand?" He continued asking.

"Let me explain everything. He came to me to ask about the secrets of passing the Demon Ranking test. I refused to tell him and he brought out his sword," Long Chen began explaining.

"I warned him and instead of using his sword to attack me, he used some spell to target me. I went through so much pain as I was struck by that spell," he explained.

"When I recovered, I brought out my sword, but just as I stood up and looked towards him, I saw him lying on the ground in this condition. I don't know what happened to him," Long Chen finished his explanation.

"That? Am I supposed to believe that? You must come with me to the Sect Master. She'll judge you," Grand Elder said. He didn't believe a single word Long Chen had said.

Right at that instant, another Winged Lion landed there and a person came down from it.

It was Lang Jing, the person that brought Long Chen here.

"Grand Elder Chu, May I ask, what happened here?" Lang Jing asked as he stood between Long Chen and Grand Elder Chu.

"Look for yourself. Your disciple made Mu Zheng like that!" Grand Elder Chu said as he pointed towards Mu Zheng lying on the ground.

"He's also lying that he didn't attack him. He's saying that he himself fell to the ground and became like that. Only an idiot will believe that!" Grand Elder Chu said.

"How can a cultivator's Martial Soul be destroyed like that! It's clear that he used some strange spell to do that. I need to take him to the Sect Master for his Punishment!" He said.

"Grand Elder Chu, if my disciple is saying that he didn't do it, then I believe him. Also, aren't you forgetting something?" Lang Jing said in full seriousness.

"Are you siding with him? What am I forgetting?" Grand Elder Chu asked.

"You should know that my disciple is a 1st Ranked Demon Ranker. Even if he killed someone, he can't be punished as long as he hasn't betrayed the sect. Even the Sect Master herself can't break the rules made by the sect ancestors!" Lang Jing said. The more he said, the louder his tone got.

"Y-you dare oppose the Sect Master!" Grand Elder Chu said loudly.

Chapter 320 - 320: Mission

"I'm not opposing anyone. I'm just telling you the rules. When a Demon Ranker kills someone, he can't be blamed since it was the opponent who was weaker." Lang Jing replied.

"My disciple is younger than Mu Zheng, so you can't say that he misused his strength. Also, he didn't kill Mu Zheng. Only his martial soul was destroyed. He'll recover," he elaborated.

"Very well. I'll tell the sect master everything that happened here. We'll come to a decision," Grand Elder Chu said in a threatening manner as he picked up Mu Zheng and climbed on top of his Winged Lion and left.

"Hahahaha," Lang Jing burst into laughter as soon as Grand Elder Chu left.

"It was so amazing to see the defeated look on old man Chu's face. You did well, little guy! You did a great job by destroying the martial soul of her disciple. And you even got the demon ranking. Such a perfect timing of events. Even I wouldn't be able to save you if you didn't get the Demon Ranking," Lang Jing said with a pleased smile on his face.

Long Chen didn't respond to his comment.

"Yeah, Can I go?" He asked.

"Where do you want to go? If I'm not wrong, you got a lot of contribution points and I gotta say, it was quite a surprise to find out that you had such great Alchemy. Though I must say, you shouldn't make pills like that for the test. I was quite surprised when I saw the vigor pill that you made," Lang Jing said as he glared at Long Chen.

"You were the judge of Alchemy Hall?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise.

"Of course. I'm the best Alchemist of the sect. Who else could be the judge but me," Lang Jing said casually.

"Anyways, give me your disciple badge," Lang Jing said.

"Alright," Without a second thought, Long Chen threw his disciples badge to Lang Jing.

Lang Jing gave him a different badge that was pitch black in color.

"It's your new badge. This is the proof of you being a Demon Ranker. All your contribution points have been transferred to it," Lang Jing said.

"Oh, Alright," Long Chen responded.

"Anyways, I should probably tell you one thing just to make it clear. It doesn't matter if you know Alchemy, you can't heal the poison made by me. As you know, the healing pills won't work, so keep that in mind. You're still 500 years too young to be able to solve the problem," Lang Jing further said as he looked at Long Chen seriously.

"That's why I won't restrict you. You can do your Alchemy practice or whatever, just keep my warning in mind. I'll free you myself after you do what I need. That's a much safer path for you," Lang Jing said as he turned back and walked towards his Winged Lion.

The Winged Lion began flying as soon as Lang Jing got on top of it.

"Hah, What the heck just happened here. I still can't understand what happened to him. His martial soul was destroyed? How? I didn't even do anything. Wait a minute, could it be because of his skill's backlash?" Long Chen muttered with a frown.

"That must be it. His skill didn't work on me and it backlashed on him," Long Chen let out as if he had discovered the true reason.

"Whatever, it has nothing to do with me now. I need to get a mission, and get the heck out of this place," Long Chen muttered as he began walking.

He walked for 2 minutes and found Man Gu waiting ahead for him.

"Oh, Master. You're done with Senior Mu Zheng?" He inquired.

"Yeah. He needed some help. He got the help he deserved," Long Chen chuckled as he patted Man Gu's shoulders.

He and Man Gu continued towards the Mission Hall.

It didn't take them too long as they had already covered most of the distance. In just 20 minutes, they stood outside the Mission Hall.

"That's as far as I can go, Master. Only the person selecting the mission is allowed inside. So only you can go," Man Gu said with a disappointed look on his face.

"You'll see 5 tables inside the mission hall. There's a number in front of each of those tables. Go to no.3 table. There you can get level 3 missions," He further explained.

"Alright. Stay here, I'll be right back," Long Chen told him.

He entered the Mission Hall and followed the instructions given by Man Gu and went to the third table in the Hall.

"Excuse me, Elder, I need to select a mission," Long Chen told the Elder that was sitting behind the table.

The Elder was reading a document, but he put it down as he looked towards Long Chen.

"You need a level 3 mission? Alright," The Elder nodded his head as he placed a big bundle of similar size papers in front of Long Chen.

These are all the level 3 missions we have. You can choose any amongst them," The Elder casually said as he again continued reading the document in his hand.

"So many?" Long Chen muttered in surprise as he saw more than 1000 papers in front of him. He was surprised that the sect had so many missions in level 3 since they weren't easy either.

He went through the missions one after another.

"Mission: Kill the disciples of Beast Hall," Long Chen read one of the missions out loud.

Before he could skip to the second mission, the Elder sitting nearby spoke.

"That mission is quite rewarding, but You will need to have your soul marked by the Protection Curses. If you ever get caught by the enemy sect during the mission, you'll die because of the curse. The skill will be canceled when you come back to the sect," The Elder explained further.

"Cheh, I don't need a mission that needs me to curse my own soul," Long Chen skipped to the next mission.

"Collect ten drops of Sky Realm Bright Flame Snake blood."

"Hmm, Why only ten drops. If we can get ten drops, doesn't that mean we have defeated the Bright Flame Snake and we can get more drops?" He muttered.

"The sect only needs ten drops. You can do whatever you want with the Bright Flame Snake after that," The Elder responded.

"This looks like an interesting mission, though defeating a sky realm beast won't be easy," Long Chen muttered as he skipped to the next mission.

"Kidnap the princess of the Maltia Empire," He was quite surprised as he read the mission.

"Kidnap the princess? Why is that?" He asked.

"You don't need to know that. You just need to kidnap her and bring her to the sect. The sect will handle everything else," The Elder replied.

Long Chen skipped that mission as well and started reading the next one.

"Steal the Heavenly Mountain Ruler of the king of the 1st Rank Kingdom of Dimentia," The mission said.

"Hmm? Stealing? That's an interesting mission. I'll select this one," Long Chen said as he showed the mission paper to the elder.

"Don't think that it's an easy mission. The King of Dimentia is a Sky Realm expert. Although the mission doesn't need you to fight him, it would be quite bad if you're caught," The Elder warned him.

"That's fine. I think I'm confident in my skill," Long Chen said with a smile.

"Sigh. Alright. If you're that confident, I won't stop you. Give me your disciple badge so that I can register this mission in your name," The Elder said.

Long Chen brought his badge out of his pocket since he wasn't wearing it, He gave the black 4-star disciple badge to the Elder.

Chapter 321 - 321: Failed To See Mount Tai

The Elder subconsciously took the badge without much care, but as soon as he saw the color of the badge, his mouth opened wide in shock.

"Y-you are a Demon Ranker?" He exclaimed in shock.

The nearby Elders and disciples heard the loud tone of the Elder and started looking towards them.

They were all shocked. As Long Chen wasn't wearing his badge, they didn't realize it before.

Although everyone knew about Long Chen by now, most of the people haven't seen him.

No one expected the boy that just came here to be the one that shocked the whole sect.

"Ah, I'm sorry for not recognizing you. You must be the rising star of our sect. Long Chen, right?" The Elder stood up with a fawning look on his face.

"Yeah," Long Chen casually replied.

"Great great! I'll immediately issue the mission to you. You're a Demon Ranker, Of course, you can handle a level 3 mission with ease. I was being stupid to doubt you," The Elder said with a smile as he sat down.

He immediately prepared everything and assigned the mission to Long Chen.

"The mission has been issued to you. I should explain the rules of the mission. You have 6 months to finish the mission. You must come back after 6 months whether you're successful or not," The Elder started explaining.

"You'll get the mentioned rewards and contribution points if you're successful within the time limit. If you failed, you must pay contribution points as compensation to the sect," He further said.

"Alright. Is there anything else I should keep in mind?" Long Chen asked.

"Yeah. Although you're going quite far away from the Beast Hall and you won't be marked with a protection curse, but you must never get caught by anyone. Under any condition, the sect's location can't be disclosed. Alright?" The Mission Elder said.

"You don't need to mention that. I don't intend on getting caught and becoming a prisoner," Long Chen muttered.

'Again,' He added another word to his statement, but he didn't say it out loud.

Long Chen turned back and left the place.

As soon as he left, quite a lot of people began talking about him.

"So that was the demon of the sect. Gotta say he looked quite intimidating. I could feel his scary aura till here,"

"He's the first person in our generation to get the Demon Ranking. He even left his senior brother, Mu Zheng behind. Of course, he won't be simple,"

"I'm not sure if he is stronger than Senior Mu Zheng. Just look at the Strength Ranking. The Demon Ranking just tested him on something different. Senior Mu Zheng is still stronger,"

"Shhh, Don't let him hear you. You know that the demon has an open license to kill now. Don't offend him in any way. Though I agree. I think only Senior Mu Zheng has the strength to talk to him as an equal,"

Their discussions continued, but none of them had any idea that Long Chen had just had a clash with their Senior Mu Zheng a few minutes ago.

Long Chen left the Mission Hall and met up with Man Gu.

"Did you get a mission, Master?" Man Gu asked.

"Yeah. I chose a Level 3 mission. I'll be going to Dementia. But before that, I'll go to the Alchemy Hall. I need to get herbs with the contribution points that I have now," Long Chen said with a smile.

"Ah, Sure," Man Gu nodded his head.

They started walking towards the Alchemy Hall and soon got there.

This time, Long Chen wore his Black 4 star badge since the badge was beneficial when purchasing things from the sect. He would be able to get a 50 percent discount on anything.

As soon as he entered, he noticed that Tiyu was also there. It looked like he was purchasing something as well.

His back was facing Long Chen so he didn't see him coming. Long Chen silently walked near him.

"Oh, Hey. We meet again," Long Chen said with a smile as he placed his hands on the shoulders of the man.

"Who the hell..." Tiyu looked back, but as soon as he saw the face of the person standing behind him, his face lost all its color.

He hurriedly got down to his knees.

"Please forgive me Senior for offending you previously. I couldn't recognize Mount Tai and offended you. Please forgive me. Don't kill me!" Tiyu said as he begged.

Long Chen could see tears in his eyes.

As Tiyu saw Long Chen not responding, his fear only increased.

He began kowtowing to Long Chen as he smashed his forehead on the ground near Long Chen.

"Please forgive me!" He repeated every time his head struck the ground.

Long Chen was quite amazed at how far this man was willing to go. The ground was also covered in his blood.

"You can stop that. I won't kill you," Long Chen said to him.

"Really? Thank you, Senior. I'll never forget your grace," Tiyu immediately stood up and ran outside. He even forgot his herbs in that place, he didn't care about them at the moment anyway.

Long Chen shifted his focus back to the 4-star disciple that was handling the place.

Long Chen was quite amused as he saw the fear in that person's eyes as well.

"Don't worry. I don't bite," Long Chen jokingly said.

"Anyways, I need some herbs," Long Chen wrote down a list of herbs. He added a huge quantity of all the herbs that he could get.

He gave the list to the man behind the counter.

"How much will it cost?" Long Chen asked.

The man looked at the list and told the price after calculating the discount.

"Hmm? Only that much? Alright. Double everything that I wrote," Long Chen said.

He spent all the contribution points he had in that place and kept only 1000 contribution points with him.

After much effort, the Alchemy Hall staff brought out the herbs that were written in there.

"Here you go," Long Chen transferred the contribution points and placed all the herbs in his storage ring.

He left the place since he was finished.

"Now I just need to go to one more place. I saved 1000 contribution points. I need to go to the Skill Hall," Long Chen muttered.

He sent Man Gu back since their courtyard was nearby and entered the Skill Hall alone.

"Oh? Mr. Demon Ranker? Congrats on getting the rank. I must say, I was quite shocked when I first found out about it. Anyways, are you here to use that 50 percent discount by getting a skill?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen as soon as she saw him.

"I'm here to use the Skill Space," Long Chen answered her.

"Oh? Despite the failure of last time, you want to try it again? Alright. I'm sure you know what you're doing. Anyways, since you're a Demon Ranker, you can use the Skill Space by paying only 1000 contribution points. Transfer the contribution points to me," She said.

"Alright. Long Chen replied as he transferred his remaining points to her.

"Nice. Come with me," Chu Miao said. She took Long Chen to the first floor of the skill hall.

Since Long Chen had done this before, he didn't need any explanation. He entered the room that had the Skill Space formation.

"Hopefully, I'll be able to choose a nice skill this time as well. Can't fall behind," Long Chen muttered as he placed his hands on top of the formation.

The formation started shining brightly, and Long Chen's consciousness was brought to the Skill Space.

There were thousands of colorful spheres of light floating in space. Long Chen knew that each of these spheres had a skill. While some had weak skills, some had frightening ones.

Chapter 322 - 322: Best Skill

This time as well, no skill sphere came near him, but after the experience of the previous time, he was certain that it wasn't because of him being unworthy.

It was on him to select a sphere amongst the thousands of them to take with him.

He observed each sphere carefully, but there was no hint about what skill they contained. They all felt similar except the color they had.

"I don't know why, but I feel the urge to choose that blood-red one," Long Chen muttered to himself as his eyes fell on one of the spheres.

It was similar to all the others, but its color was much more intimidating and reminded him of blood.

He pointed his finger towards the blood-red sphere and excitedly, it came flying to him.

"Good, Let's hope that the skill is a good one," Long Chen muttered as he touched the blood-red sphere of light.

As soon as he touched the sphere, he was sent out of the Skill Space.

His eyes opened and he found a skill book in his hand.

The book had an old cover that was somewhat worn out. It was clear to see how old this small booklet must be.

The book had an interesting name as well.

"Spiritual Blade!" Long Chen read the name of the book out loud.

"Sounds like a nice skill," Long Chen said with a smile.

He stood up and left the room. Chu Miao was still waiting outside for him.

"You were much faster this time. Anyways, which skill did you get?" She asked as she glanced at Long Chen.

"I got Spiritual Blade. Is that a good skill? How much is it worth?" Long Chen inquired.

"Spiritual Blade?" Chu Miao exclaimed in shock.

"Why are you acting so shocked? Is that too expensive?" Long Chen asked with a pleased look on his face.

"Is it expensive? It is damn expensive!!! You need 1 million contribution points to get that skill and even if you somehow manage to get that much point, you still need to get through a test to get to that skill! It's the skill made by the Sect's first ancestor after all. I can't even begin to describe how lucky you are to get that skill!" She said. She still wasn't over her surprise.

"That sounds nice," Long Chen let out.

"It's too bad that you can't share that book with anyone. Since the book chose you, as soon as someone else sees the content inside, or touch it, the skill book will burn to ashes," She sighed as she further explained.

"I don't understand. What's so special about the skill? I read a little description, and from what I got, you can only make a blade from your Qi and fight with it. It shouldn't be so special?" Long Chen asked in curiosity.

"It's not that simple. You can't only make a blade. You can make any weapon from your Qi. The weapon will stay in existence until your Qi is depleted or you cancel the skill. It's such a useful skill when you lose your weapon during a fight," She said.

"That's not the most special thing about it. The real advantage of skill is the strength of the weapon that is made from your Qi! The weapon won't be as weak! It would be equivalent to a graded weapon only one realm lower than your actual cultivation!"

"If you're an Earth Realm cultivator, the weapon you can form will be equivalent to a Gold Grade weapon. Similarly, if you're a Sky Realm cultivator, the Qi weapon will be equivalent to an Earth Grade Weapon! I'm really jealous that you got the skill," Chu Miao further explained.

"Interesting. That does sound like an awesome ability. It can come really handy when we don't have a weapon," Long Chen let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Hah, You're quite lucky nowadays. First, you got triple ranked. Then you got demon ranked and now you got one of the best skills of the sect. Sigh, Your achievements make me jealous," She said jokingly.

"You're jealous of me? You wouldn't be when you know everything about me," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

He was more like a prisoner in the sect after all. He had a deadly poison in his body and now there was a possibility that he had somehow offended the sect master. His tamed beast was missing as well. He couldn't understand what was there to be jealous about. He didn't tell her though.

"Oh right, I heard that Mu Zheng was collecting contribution points so that he could get this skill one day. Don't let him find out that you have this skill. He might get annoyed and come looking for a fight," She further added.

"Mu Zheng? I don't think that I need to worry about him anymore. Still, thanks for the warning. I'll take my leave now," He said.

Long Chen turned back and left the skill hall.

He had finished everything that he needed to do. He spent all his contribution points as well. Now the only thing left was talking to Lang Jing.

If he wanted to go out, he needed Lang Jing's pills that suppressed the poison for 7 days.

"The mission has the maximum duration of 6 months, So I should be able to get 26 pills," He muttered as he left.

He walked towards his courtyard as he brought out the transmission Talisman that was given to him by Lang Jing. He sent him a message and told him that he needed to meet him.

He also received a message from Lang Jing that he would send his Winged Lion to Long Chen's courtyard. The Winged Lion will bring him to his place.

Long Chen got to his courtyard and began waiting for the Winged Lion to get there.

After 10 or so minutes, the Winged Lion landed in front of Xu Chen's courtyard.

Long Chen climbed on top of the Winged Lion and the Winged Lion began flying in the sky. The Winged Lion flew so fast. Long Chen could feel the fast wind brushing against his skin.

His long hair was also affected by the wind.

Long Chen was able to see at the distance and saw how big the sect actually was. What he saw was just a small part of it.

He was just starting to enjoy the view when the Winged Lion landed in the ground.

It stopped before a normal-looking courtyard.

"This is where he lives?" Long Chen let out with a surprised look on his face.

He had assumed that Lang Jing must be living in a palace-like place, but this was completely out of his expectations. It was just a normal-looking courtyard that looked similar to the one Long Chen was staying inside.

"Was he not given a better place, or is he just that down to earth?" He wondered as he got off the Winged Lion.

He started walking towards the courtyard and knocked on the door after getting there.

"The door is open. You can come inside," A voice came from inside.

Long Chen pushed the door open and it was actually unlocked. He entered the place and saw Lang Jing sitting there, reading a book.

"You don't have a servant?" Long Chen asked in curiosity.

"Why would I need a servant?" Lang Jing replied casually.

"To open the doors or take care of things?" Long Chen let out.

"There's no need for someone to do that. Anyways, what did you want to talk about?" Lang Jing inquired.

"I want to leave the sect!" Long Chen said in a straightforward manner.

"Hahahaha," Lang Jing didn't respond and just started laughing out loud as he looked at Long Chen as if he was looking at an idiot.

Chapter 323 - 323: Kill Him

After quite some time, Lang Jing stopped laughing.

"Do you think you're at a picnic here? You can leave when you feel like it?" He asked with an amused smile on his face.

"I'm not asking about leaving forever. I just want to go outside on a mission and get some outdoor experience. I'm tired of cultivating inside. It's a 6-month long mission, So I'll be back before that," Long Chen said.

" Don't worry, I won't run away before completing your task. I don't want to die from your poison after all!" He further said.

Lang Jing fell in deep thought as he observed Long Chen.

"What is the level of the mission that you chose?" He asked after some time.

"A level 3 mission," Long Chen replied.

"A level 3? Yeah, that shouldn't be life-threatening to you. Also, the thing I need you for, won't happen in 6 months, so I can allow you to leave I guess," He responded.

"Alright. You can leave. But I won't give you 6 months. I want you back in 5 months. Also, you need to take a heavenly oath before you leave!" He further said.

"Heavenly Oath?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

Lang Jing brought out a weird disk-like object from his storage ring. There were various strange patterns on it.

"This is an artifact I found from an old ruin. I don't know what its grade is, but I do know its use. When you hold it in your hand and take an oath, that oath becomes binding. If you break your oath, you will die brutally in an instant," Lang Jing said with a grin on his face.

"What oath do you need me to take?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

"Not much. I just want you to take a few simple oaths. Firstly, you won't disclose our Sect's location to anyone. Secondly, you won't contact or meet anyone you know when you're outside. Also, you won't tell anyone about you or me!" Lang Jing said.

"Alright," Long Chen agreed.

Lang Jing gave the disk-like artifact to Long Chen who held it in his hand firmly.

"I, Long Chen, Take an oath that during the time I'm outside the sect, I won't meet or talk to anyone that I know! I won't disclose the location of the Dark Soul Sect and I won't talk about you or myself!" Long Chen said as he gazed at Lang Jing.

The Small Artifact began shining and returned to normal after a brief moment.

"That's better. Now give that back to me," Lang Jing said with a pleased smile.

Long Chen gave the disk back to Lang Jing.

Lang Jing brought out a few pills from his storage ring and gave them to Long Chen.

"Here are the 22 pills. These should last 5 months for you. You must come back before that or you'll die. I'm sure you know that already though. Take this map as well. It's the map of this region," Lang Jing said with an amused smile on his face.

"You can leave now if that was all you wanted to talk about. My Winged Lion will take you to the exit of the sect. You will need to handle your journey ahead," He further said.

"Yeah, I'm done," Long Chen turned back and left the place.

He climbed on the Winged Lion that brought him to the main gate of the sect.

Long Chen came down from the Winged Lion and walked outside the sect.

The guards saw him and generally, they would have asked if he had the permission to leave, but they noticed the Winged Lion and something even more intimidating. The black 4-star disciple's badge made them not even dare to come near him.

Long Chen walked for quite a Long distance and when he was sure that no one was following him, He called out for his Sun Destroying Condor.

A beautiful white condor-like beast came out from his storage ring.

The Condor began flying excitedly as soon as it saw Long Chen.

"Hey, little guy. Looks like you're doing quite good. I'm glad to see you as well. Anyways, we need to leave this place," Long Chen said with a smile.

The Sun Destroying Condor landed near Long Chen. Long Chen noticed that there were a few strange blue patterns on the Sun Destroying Condor since its evolution, but he noticed no other change.

Long Chen walked forward and climbed on top of the white Sun Destroying Condor and ordered it to fly.

The Sun Destroying Condor rose high in the sky and kept going higher. This was the Sun Destroying Condor's ability. It could fly at a higher altitude for a longer duration of time. Its speed wasn't much weaker as well.

Long Chen had already seen the map along the way and he had an idea as to where the Kingdom of Dementia was. He also found out that there was a mountain range between him and the Kingdom of Dementia.

Long Chen had decided that he would stop in that mountain range and look for a cave or something where he would comprehend the Law of Darkness.

He hoped that he would be able to comprehend the law in 7 days and then learn the 2 skills he received in the Dark Soul Sect.

Only after learning those 2 skills, will he leave for the Kingdom of Dementia. He wasn't worried about the mission much.

Long Chen was quite confident in his stealth abilities and he was sure that he would be able to steal from under the King's nose even if he only had a few days.

The Sun Destroying Condor kept flying at it's the best speed while Long Chen sat on top of it and started his cultivation since he didn't want to waste his time.

While Long Chen was flying away from the sect, The Sect Master of the Dark Soul Sect was looking at her personal disciple that was lying in front of her like an idiot.

"His Martial Soul is gone, but I might be able to help it recover. We need to use our Sect's oldest ancestral treasure to help his Martial Soul recover though," The Sect Master said as she looked at Mu Zheng.

"You want to use the Heavenly Origin Lotus on him? You can't. That's our Sect's oldest treasure and our strongest weapon. It might have many miraculous uses but it's a one-time use item. If you use it on him for a small thing like healing his martial soul, it would be a big waste!" Grand Elder Chu insisted.

"A treasure is not more important than my disciple. Also, what other use does it have? As a destructive weapon? We don't need that! We have so many strong cultivators and even more treasures. We won't be destroyed if we use the Heavenly Origin Lotus!" The Sect Master said.

"It's just sitting in the treasury for so long. At Least now we have a use for it," She further said.

"This... Are you sure about it?" Grand Elder Chu said with an uncertain look on his face.

"Yeah. Don't worry Grand Elder. Our sect won't come to harm because of me using this thing. Our Sect might only benefit. Mu Zheng's talent will only increase after he heals his soul using the Heavenly Origin Lotus. That can be a good thing for the future of our sect," The Sect Master said.

"If you say so. Anyways, What about that kid Long Chen? What do you want to do about him?" Grand Elder Chu asked.

"I want to kill him. I wasn't to destroy his soul and watch him burn!" The Sect Master responded as she clenched her fists tightly.

Grand Elder Chu just silently looked at her.

Chapter 324 - 324: Chasing Strength

"But I can't do it. That boy is a Demon Ranker now. If I kill him for petty reasons like revenge, all the Elders and Grand Elders will move against me. We can't kill him secretly either since no one would be stupid enough to not doubt me. I don't want our sect to go through a civil war," she further said.

"So we will let that boy go free?" Grand Elder Chu asked.

"We can't do anything, but Mu Zheng can. Just let him recover once. He won't be the old Mu Zheng. He'll take the revenge on his own," She said with a smile.

The Kingdom of Dementia was quite far from the Dark Soul Sect. While it took them 3 days of travel on a Winged Lion to get to the North Moon Empire, it would have taken them 8 days to get to the Kingdom of Dementia.

The worst thing was that, according to the map, the North Moon Empire was to the South of the Dark Soul Sect while the Kingdom of Dementia was to the North.

"It would have been so good if this stupid Dementia was to the South as well. At least I would be able to see Mingyu and Zhiqing. They must be in the Blazing Sun Empire at the moment," Long Chen muttered as he thought about Mingyu and Zhiqing.

"I hope they don't think that I died. Mingyu should know that I won't die. She looked so confident when she told me that I'm her destiny. I hope she kept that confidence. I'll come back to you guys soon," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the sky.

"Hey Xun," he let out softly.

"Yeah?" she said as she appeared behind him.

Long Chen turned back and faced her.

"What do I think my future holds? From the journey it had been so far, I'm quite sure that it'll result in my death ultimately," Long Chen let out in a joking manner, but Xun's expressions turned serious as if she didn't like his statement.

"Do you think it's something to joke about?" she asked Long Chen.

"I'm sorry. I didn't mean it like that. The thing is that I'm actually worried about my future. Just look at me now. I'm poisoned and I can die at any moment, and Lang Jing also needs me for something," Long Chen said.

"Since he can't do it himself, it might be dangerous. Then there's that Ghost Temple that I need to go against in the future. Sometimes, I can't help but wonder how my life would be like if I had stayed at home with Mom and Grandpa after killing Long Su," he said.

"Is this strength really worth it? Constantly killing or struggling to keep your life? Sigh, sorry about that. I can't help but think nonsense sometimes," he continued.

"If you were given a choice between strength and the life of your true love, which would you choose?" Xun asked Long Chen.

"Of course, I would choose love," Long Chen replied.

"And what if you were given a choice between strength and the life of your family?" she again asked.

"I would choose family," Long Chen answered again.

"Not just you. Most of the people in this world would choose the same answer as you. But still, everyone runs after strength while leaving their families behind. Do you know why?" she asked.

"Why? Because they need strength to protect?" Long Chen replied.

"That's one of the reasons, but there's another one. It's the feeling of weakness. Not just humans, the other species as well feel that they are weak. They constantly run after strength, but they are never satisfied. They keep trying to climb the mountain."

"Most people fail, but a rare few succeed as well. And when they get on top of the mountain, they realize that there are even bigger mountains. The same thing continues," Xun said.

"Strength is the ultimate ruler in this world and the weak have no voice. They have no control over their destiny. No one wants to be weak. They all want to control their destiny. That's why they chase after strength. Some manage to achieve it, while others perish trying," she finished explaining.

"And that's only for a normal person. They have a choice. You, on the other hand, don't have a choice. You have already left the scope of destiny. You

can't stay in peace anywhere. If you don't get stronger, you'll die. Even if you hide in a small village, the trouble will find you. You won't be the only one losing then. Your family will also get hurt," she let out.

"Sigh, you sure do know how to scare me. Whatever, I wasn't planning to stop there. I want to reach the very peak of cultivation. Only then can I have a carefree life," he said.

"Anyways, let's change the topic. It's getting too dark and we still have a long journey ahead of us. Tell me, what is the first thing you would do if we manage to get you a real body?" Long Chen asked as he changed the topic.

"The first thing? I'll kiss you. Hey, don't make that pleased face. I'm only joking. The first thing I would do is eat. I want to try what the food tastes like. Tian Shen always made me jealous when he ate the delicious things. I wish I could try them too. That's why, the first thing I'll do is eat," she said.

"Hahahaha, gotta say, I didn't expect that answer at all. Anyways, another question. If you could control the process, how would you like your real body to look like?" he asked with an amused smile on his face.

"Hah, that's simple. I'd make myself taller. At least as tall as you," she said with a smile.

"That's all?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"Yup. I wouldn't want to change anything since I quite like the way a look," she replied.

"What about your small Jade Rabbits? You'd keep that same as well? Not that I would mind. I quite like them the way they are," Long Chen said as he lowered his gaze.

"Y-you! Can't you stop being shameless for a minute?" Xun scolded Long Chen as she wrapped her hands around her chest.

"I'm just being honest. I like them. What's shameless about that?" Long Chen continued teasing her.

Xun couldn't take it anymore and just disappeared. She didn't forget to call Long Chen an idiot before disappearing.

"You're so cute when you're shy," Long Chen muttered with an amused smile on his face.

He laid down on the back of Sun Destroying Condor and brought out a small booklet. Since he was free, he decided to use the time to read about the skill he had just received.

The skill was called the Spiritual Blade, but in reality, it had nothing to do with Spiritual Energy. Using this skill, a cultivator could make any weapon from his Qi. The creation of the weapon was tough since it required an immense control of Qi.

"One Blade to oppose all weapons! The Qi is supreme and nothing is above Qi. The artifacts themselves are nothing but things that store and use Qi. By mastering the Qi, one can oppose all weapons without owning a weapon," Xu Ming read the front page of the skill.

"Interesting, from what I can understand, this skill seems different from what Chu Miao told me. I guess she herself didn't know everything about it since she didn't get this skill," Long Chen muttered to himself.

"This skill isn't something that can only make weapons, it teaches us to control our Qi so that we can use our Qi as weapons. Creating the sword and blade from Qi is just a part of it,"

Chapter 325 - 325: Darkness

"Once I master it, I would be able to use my Qi for many more things. I can even use it as a Shield and that would work as well as a Gold Grade Sword since I'm in Earth Realm," Long Chen muttered.

With a pleased look on his face, Long Chen began reading the next page of the skill book. It described how one should improve his control of Qi. The next page talked about how the flow of Qi inside the body should be like.

It also talked about making various weapons and maintaining them outside without losing control of them.

Long Chen could already imagine himself using a bow made of Qi, and firing an arrow made of Qi. He could also see himself using a scythe, a blade, a sword, and a shield.

The skill was so useful in real-life battles. The only downside was that the weapon created by the Qi would be one realm lower than his actual cultivation. That might be bad if his opponent had a higher grade artifact.

Long Chen flew during the day and camped during the night since he also needed to give his Sun Destroying Condor a rest.

He continued his journey again in the early morning.

The same process continued for 4 days before he reached a long mountain range.

He could see more than 10 mountains in that place. The top of the mountains was covered in snow, while the lower parts of the mountains had greenery that made them look weird yet beautiful to look at.

Long Chen didn't want anyone to disturb him during his comprehension, thus he chose a mountain that was at the center since not many people would be able to come here without their flying beasts. This place was much safer.

He didn't land on the peak of the Mountain since it was cold, nor did he land at the foot of the mountain, he landed somewhere in between.

He was sure that there must be some caves in the mountain, but he had no time to find them. He just decided to make one of his own.

Long Chen brought his King's sword out of his storage ring and started using the strikes from the 7 forms of Saint Sword.

After half an hour of effort, he had managed to make a 400-meter long cave. He also covered the opening of the cave with stones and locked himself inside so that others could not enter.

After closing the opening, it was dark in the cave, but Long Chen didn't have a problem in navigating it.

He went to the deepest portion of the cave and sat there.

"Everything's ready now. Time to take the jump. I just hope that I will be able to succeed before I die of poison," Long Chen muttered as he took a deep breath.

He brought the Orb of Law of Darkness out of his storage ring.

As soon as the Orb of darkness came out, the cave turned even darker. The impossible darkness again appeared and shrouded everything in its embrace.

Long Chen couldn't even see the orb. In reality, he had never once seen the Orb of darkness, since every time the Orb was outside, he saw nothing but darkness everywhere.

Since he couldn't see anything, he just closed his eyes and placed the Law Orb in front of him.

He followed the process and sat in a meditative position in front of the Law Orb and placed his hand on the orb.

Long Chen waited like that for over 10 minutes, but nothing happened. He couldn't help but frown as he wondered if something was wrong.

"Xun? Why isn't it working?" he asked as he couldn't wait anymore.

"Xun?" Long Chen repeated as he didn't get any answer the first time.

He waited for 5 minutes for her reply, but he didn't get any.

"Is something wrong?" he frowned as he stood up. Unfortunately, he couldn't hear anything.

He decided to place the Orb back in his storage ring, but the orb wasn't there.

"What the heck?" he cursed as he started looking around, but he didn't find it.

He noticed something even more shocking. It was the fact that no matter how long he went in search of the Orb, he never got near the wall.

In fact, he wasn't even sure if the wall was there anymore. He walked in a straight direction just to test his assumption. He walked straight for 20 minutes, but he faced no obstruction.

"I guess my assumption is right. I'm in the trial of darkness. I need to comprehend it, only then can I leave," he muttered.

"How do I comprehend it though? It's different from the trial of the Illusion Orb and more similar to the Space Orb trial. I was left in empty space there and now I'm left in pure darkness," he muttered.

"Sigh, can't say I wasn't expecting similarities. They're both supreme laws after all," He said as he sat down on the ground.

He just sat there and watched the darkness.

"I only have 7 days, can I really comprehend it?" he couldn't focus for even a single second as he wondered about the passing time.

The time limit was affecting his focus. He wanted to speed up his comprehension and that worry was becoming his biggest obstruction.

Just like that, a day passed, and he wasn't able to do anything but worry. Only 6 days were left and his useless thoughts only increased.

Ultimately he couldn't take it anymore and just lay on the ground as he looked towards the sky, but there was no sky, just darkness.

Another day passed and he just blankly stared at the darkness.

"The darkness is so painful. It's so empty. It's tormenting. I never knew it could be so frightening," Long Chen muttered to himself.

After all this time, he was so engrossed in the darkness that he had realized the true pain of darkness. It was just his second day in this dark place and he understood the torment of darkness.

"Looks like you are not that stupid," a voice came from nearby.

"What is it? Is anyone nearby?" Long Chen asked as he stood up.

He asked again and again, but he didn't hear the voice again, instead, he found space had changed around him.

He found himself in a different place.

There was still darkness, but he could see a few stars taking form amidst the darkness. After a moment, the stars lost their shine and they died. Everything that remained was darkness. Many things came into existence, but darkness truly never left. It was always there.

"Light can die. Life can die. Worlds can die. But darkness is truly immortal," Long Chen muttered as he saw the process of creation and destruction again and again.

He had already forgotten how much time he had spent in this dark world. In fact, he was so engrossed in the darkness, that he had completely forgotten his original motivation. All he wanted was to truly understand the boundless mysteries of darkness.

Long Chen found himself in a different place once more. It was as if he was inside a small village. It was night time, but he was able to see everything.

He stood in front of two young boys, but apparently, they couldn't see him. Both of them looked like they were 20-21 years old.

One of the two boys had tears in his eyes.

"Why are you crying?" one of the guys asked the other.

"I can't come to the brothel with you," the boy replied.

"Why? You don't have the money? Just steal some from your father if you don't have it!" his friend responded.

"I was trying to steal some money off my father, but he caught me. He beat me up over a few gold coins. I hate him!" the boy said.

Chapter 326 - 326: Law Seed

"Cheh, I pity you. You really have a stupid father. He has so much money, can't he let his son enjoy his life? Fortunately, my father is not like that. He lets me do whatever I want. I guess you can only truly enjoy your life once your old man dies," his friend said with a smile on his face.

"He dies? Right! If that old man was dead, I would get the family money and I would be able to enjoy my life to the fullest. I can't wait for the old man to die myself," the boy said as he clenched his fist.

After a few more words, he left that place.

Long Chen felt like he was sent here by the orb to see something. He followed the boy since the boy looked most suspicious.

Long Chen followed him and entered his house.

The house looked quite decent, but it wasn't too big.

He didn't see any servants in the house either.

The boy entered his bedroom and closed the door. He didn't see, but Long Chen was inside his room as well.

The boy laid on his bed and closed his eyes.

Long Chen was getting quite bored as he didn't see the boy do anything but lay on the bed.

After 2 hours, the boy stood up and left the room.

He walked to the kitchen and picked a knife.

"Sigh, He'll kill his own father for money? All because he wasn't allowed to go to a brothel? The world is indeed a stupid place," Long Chen muttered as he saw every action of the boy.

He opened the door of his father's room and entered inside. His father was still sleeping peacefully.

The boy stood near his father as he raised his knife high and stabbed it in the chest of his father. His father opened his mouth to scream in pain, but he closed his mouth and didn't let him scream.

His father died as he watched the ruthless eyes of his son.

Long Chen just watched everything. He didn't try to stop it since he knew that he couldn't do anything.

The room had a window as well and Long Chen noticed someone looking inside from the window.

He couldn't see who it was since the person left before he could clearly see.

"You beat me for a few gold coins, didn't you? Now I'll spend your money on the whorehouse and you can just watch from hell," The boy said with a grin on his face.

"You're a really stupid kid. Some people cry for parents, while you killed your own," Long Chen muttered as he turned back. He didn't want to watch it, but that's when he heard a heavy knocking on the door.

The boy started getting worried as he heard the sound. He wanted to hide the dead body of his father, but before he could do anything, the door was broken and more than 20 people entered the house.

They all saw the boy standing near the dead body of his father with a knife in his hand.

"See father? I told you that he might kill his father! He was talking about that a few hours ago when I met him. I informed you and we told the Villagers, but we were too late," A person passed through the crowd and came to the front as he pointed towards the boy.

It was none other than the second person whom Long Chen saw this boy talk to.

"Sigh, Gotta say, I didn't expect that. A son that betrays his father and a friend that traps and then betrays his friend. Although I knew about it, the darkness inside people is frightening as well," Long Chen muttered.

He appeared in a different place.

He was back in the dark space, but there was a screen in front of him.

On that screen, he saw 4 people running away. One looked to be a young man in his early 20s. The second one looked like a man in his early 30s who was wearing a beautiful golden armor. There was a boy who looked like he was 5 years old and a young woman who looked like she was 30-40 years old.

They were running in a hurry and left the palace. As they came out, the woman called for her flying beast and the beast landed near her.

Before they could even take a step forward, a man landed behind the beast. Long Chen was amazed as he saw the man.

Despite not being there, he could feel his aura. The man looked like he was in his 40s, but Long Chen felt like he must be older to have that much strength.

The man that looked like he was in his 30s attacked the man, but he was defeated instantly and thrown back.

The young boy ran to him with the 5-year-old boy in his arms. Long Chen felt like that boy in his 20s was the kid's father.

The boy in his 20s threw a strange crystal ahead and a Spatial portal opened at some distance. He told the kid to go there while he decided to bring the other man that was injured with him.

Long Chen couldn't hear most of their conversation, he only heard a few key sentences. He heard the man that was in his 40s talk about killing both of them and his kid.

"Sigh, That's what happens when you have no strength. You can't even save your family," Long Chen muttered in disappointment as he saw the man coming towards them.

"What the fuck?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise as he saw the sky getting clouded and the lightning in the sky. It was as if the weather had suddenly turned extreme.

He noticed the eyes of the boy that was in his 20s change color. They turned fully white. Long Chen could feel a powerful aura that was like nothing he had seen before. It was the first time he felt an aura that was even more powerful than the aura of Tian Shen.

In fact, it looked like he was watching a god awaken.

He didn't know why, but he also found that aura somewhat familiar. He could feel his blood react to this aura. It was like his blood was boiling.

He didn't even see what happened, as he found the 40-year-old man lying on the ground in the blink of an eye.

The only one that was still standing was a 20-year-old boy that looked entirely different from his previous self. He looked much more powerful.

Long Chen saw a few swords appear above the 40-year-old man out of nowhere. The sword stabbed his hand and legs.

"That skill... that's so OP," Long Chen muttered as he saw the skill of the boy.

He was somewhat glad that the man was defeated, but then something happened that made him even more stunned.

He saw the 30-year-old man stand up. He stabbed the boy in his back.

The boy's scary aura disappeared as he coughed out a mouthful of blood and fell to the ground.

"What the heck? You were together! He was trying to save you!" Long Chen said in shock, but it didn't stop there.

The man stepped towards the 5-year-old kid to kill him as well.

The screen disappeared and Long Chen found himself back in his dark place.

He couldn't help but wonder what he just saw. He also felt somewhat sad as he wondered what happened next.

He just stayed in the darkness for longer as he processed everything he saw inside this place. He got to know so much about darkness and its scariness.

Previously he didn't consider darkness as powerful as Space, but now he felt like it was more lethal for the world.

He couldn't help but wonder if the world would be better without darkness.

Chapter 327 - 327: Complexities

(Note: Corrected as some stuff was missing because of arrangement issues. Somehow, this chapter's content was added there and that chapter's starting content went missing. It's Corrected now)

Time kept passing slowly without him realizing.

Long Chen just stayed there, but he didn't know that the seed of darkness had started to come into existence inside his martial space.

As the Law Seed finished taking shape and appeared beside his Sapling of space in his martial space, his eyes opened as he came out of his dark world.

Long Chen found himself back in the cave, but it wasn't as dark anymore. To him the cave looked as bright as it could. He also saw the broken pieces of Law orb in front of him.

He realized that he had succeeded, but he just couldn't feel the happiness.

"Since I'm not dead, it must not be 7 days yet. How many days has it been?" Long Chen asked as he looked to his right.

"It has been 6 days. Why do you look so sad? Shouldn't you be happy?" Xun asked as she gazed at him. He couldn't understand why he looked so sad.

"It's nothing. I'm fine," Long Chen replied to her as he stood up.

He walked towards the exit and removed the stones from the entrance and he left the cave.

It was early morning and the sun was shining brightly in the sky. The whole mountain range was covered in light and the warmth of the Sun.

Long Chen just watched the light for an extended period of time before he used his Heavenly Demon wings and started flying towards the summit of the mountain.

The top portion of the mountain was covered in snow. Long Chen landed in the snow and just laid there.

"Are you alright? Tell me what's wrong," Xun again said.

"I told you it's nothing. It was just so hot in the cave, I was starting to get uncomfortable. I feel much better here now," Long Chen smilingly said.

"Oh. Anyways, which skill did you get from the Orb? Is it useful?" Xun inquired.

"It is indeed useful and would have been quite wonderful if it didn't have limitations as well. I got to say, all the skills I have received from the orbs have been like that," He muttered with a wry smile on his face.

"Indeed. But it's only because you don't have enough control over their law. When you master the laws perfectly, there won't be any limitations. So don't worry about that. it's still too soon for you," She comforted Long Chen.

"You're indeed right. Even though the skill is not as strong as it could be, it's still going to be pretty useful in the fight that's to come," Long Chen muttered with a smile as he clenched his fist tightly.

"Yup. That's more like it. Just keep trying your best," She said with a beautiful smile on her face before she disappeared.

"I would," Long Chen muttered as he lay in the snow.

He brought out the Spirit Blade manual once more and decided to comprehend it.

Since he had already comprehended the Law orb, he didn't feel like he needed to hide anymore. He decided to practice his skill on the summit of the mountain amidst all the snow.

Long Chen stood up after he finished reading it and started to imitate the postures described in it. He controlled his Qi to pass through alternate acupoints along his meridians. He followed every single step written down in the book carefully.

He got to the last stage of the initial level of spirit blade training and all he needed was to bring the Qi, he was circulating, outside his body using his finger and form a needle.

He changed the flow of Qi and subtly diverted some of it towards his hands, but instead of going to his finger, his Qi was absorbed by his body.

He tried once more, but the same thing happened again.

"This skill is tougher than I thought," Long Chen muttered with an upset look on his face.

He was able to control the Qi, but his control wasn't as precise as needed.

Generally, he would use a large amount of Qi whenever he used a skill, thus even when some of it was absorbed by his body, he would still be able to cast his skill successfully, but this time, he couldn't do that since he needed to use the smallest amount of Qi he could.

He kept trying, but since the quantity of Qi that he was allowed to use was so small, it kept getting absorbed by his body before coming to his finger.

Long Chen repeated the same process for hours and each time he noticed that he had improved slightly.

Although he had improved, he still wasn't successful.

He did the same thing for 2 days and 2 nights straight, before he was finally able to bring the small thread-like Qi to his wrist before it was absorbed. He needed to bring it to his finger. Although he wasn't successful, he could see hope.

Although he still wanted to try, he felt like he needed to give rest to his body as well. He was getting quite tired since he had been trying it for days.

He ultimately decided to go back. He walked back to the cave and closed the opening once more.

He was already carrying a bed in his storage. He brought out the bed and slept on it comfortably.

Long Chen slept for 18 hours straight before getting up.

He again went to the summit of the mountain and began his practice.

He only needed a little bit more to succeed, but that small bit was the toughest part. He spent 20 more days before he was finally able to make a small needle from his Qi while following the proper steps of the manual.

This small achievement had taken so much time. He had 5 months of freedom and 1 month had already passed, but Long Chen didn't worry about that.

All he wanted was to learn the Spirit Blade at the moment.

"I passed the initial and most crucial part of mastering the skill. Now time to get to the final part and get some awesome weapon," Long Chen muttered as he moved to the next part.

The next part of learning the skill involved making a sword from the Qi. But just making the Sword wasn't enough. The sword should be durable and powerful enough to slice a stone in half like butter.

Since the summit of the mountain was covered in snow and no stones were visible, Long Chen walked back to his cave. There were too many stones nearby to practice.

Long Chen started trying to form a sword and it was much easier than forming a needle and he had succeeded in his second try easily.

The only problem was that although the thing he made looked like a sword, it wasn't like one. It wasn't able to slice off a stone, instead, it disappeared as soon as it came in contact with them.

Long Chen decided to increase the power of his Qi sword by sending more Qi to it, but it still didn't solve the problem. The Qi sword was so unstable that it just blasted off the stone instead of being able to cut it.

Again, the grinding began as Long Chen continued trying again and again. Fortunately, it didn't take much longer. In only 5 days, he succeeded in slicing the stone in half with just his Qi Sword.

Long Chen was really starting to like this skill. Although it was one of the skills that took him the longest, he didn't mind it since Qi control was something much more useful.

He knew that he would be able to use it in many more skills and increase their efficiency.

Long Chen kept using the skill during the day while he cultivated during the night.

After 4 more days, he had mastered the skill successfully. Now, he was able to make any weapon with his Qi whether it be a Sword, a knife, a needle, a blade, a bow, a hammer, or a scythe. He had succeeded in forming all these weapons at least once.

Long Chen had a wide smile on his face as he mastered the skill entirely. It was quite tiring, but he was much more excited.

He went to sleep and gave rest to his tired body since he needed to give his focus to another skill from the next day onwards.

He hasn't even touched the second skill he got from the Skill Space since he couldn't read the language. That's why he left the skill for the last.

Finally, he would learn the skill that he believed to be a skill developed by Saint King Xianwu.

Long Chen had a relaxed sleep since he had succeeded. It was easily the best sleep he had in a while since he achieved his goal.

The night passed and the Sun rose outside once more, but it was only darkness inside the cave when Long Chen woke up.

Chapter 328 - 328: Forcing The Emperor

Another day arrived and Long Chen started his journey to learn the Nine Steps of Xianwu.

Since he couldn't read it, he called Xun for help.

Xun appeared near him and started reading the book. Since she couldn't touch physical things, Long Chen did all the page-turning.

"First step to cover the town, second step to cover the city, third step to cover the kingdom, 4th step to cover the Empire, 5th step to cover the Earth, 6th step to cover the Sky and 7th step to cover the heavens!" Xun read the description of the skill.

"Hah, Is that really what it says? I gotta say, the description of this skill is, even more, intimidating than the Spirit Blade," Long Chen let out with an interesting look on his face.

"Since you can read the book, how about you teach me this skill. Guide me through the process. You're so experienced after all. It might be faster that way," Long Chen said as he looked at Xun with a pleased look on his face.

"I can give it a try. Though it's not going to be as easy as learning the Spirit Blade," Xun said.

"That was considered easy?" Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face.

"You can't think of this skill as just one skill. It would be better to think of each step as a different and improved skill. I got to say, whoever made this skill was really talented to make it. It's said to be a movement skill, but it's touching the boundaries of space laws itself. Despite being so close to the space law, this skill doesn't utilize it even a little. Although you know space law, I would consider you quite lucky if you manage to learn the first step in less than a month," Xun replied to Long Chen.

"I'll try my best. Leaving one month aside for the mission, I still have 3 months to train the skill. If I try my best, I don't believe that I won't be able to learn the 2nd step in this time," Long Chen let out with a determined voice.

He began his practice under Xun's guidance. Although Xun didn't have experience in guiding, she was very knowledgeable and she was able to convey her meaning to Long Chen without any miscommunication.

Their practice continued as days kept passing slowly.

Soon, 2 more months had passed and Long Chen had just managed to learn the first step of the Nine Steps of Xianwu. The speed was way worse than he had expected.

He realized that Xun wasn't lying when she talked about the difficulty of the skill.

The skill worked like teleportation, but it was much different than the teleportation he learned through the space law.

This skill looked like it used the law of space, but it was something different. It didn't use space law. It worked by increasing the reaction of the body for a brief moment, but the increase was so much more that it felt like time had stopped.

The user would select a location where he wanted to appear and he would be there in an instant. The best thing was that the person could change his direction as well, in between his skill, if he noticed danger at his destination.

At most, a person could appear anywhere within a 5km range in just a single step, but the skill would end as soon as the person got to his selected destination, or stopped in between.

The worst thing was that this skill depleted more than half of Long Chen's Qi reserves at the first try. A person wouldn't be able to use this skill twice unless he recovered his Qi.

"It would have been so good if this skill could be used to attack the opponents, but it can't be used for that. I can't believe someone like Saint King Xianwu made a skill that is so awesome, but it can only be used for running," Long Chen muttered.

"Despite the problems, it's still a pretty good skill. So stop complaining," Xun said with a smile on her face.

"In two months, I had only learned the first step. I don't think I'll be able to learn the second step in time. I'm getting bored as well. Let's go to the Kingdom of Dementia first. We might as well complete the mission first and get that done with," Long Chen suggested.

"Alright, If you want that, then let's do that first. I've gotten bored in this desolate mountain as well," Xun responded.

"Hah, That's like my girl," Long Chen chuckled as he brought his Sun Destroying Condor out of the Beast Region.

"Cheh, Who the hell is your girl. I'm your master!" Xun said, but she didn't wait to hear his reply as she disappeared.

Long Chen just smiled at her reaction as he climbed on his Sun Destroying Condor.

The Sun Destroying Condor started flying towards the Kingdom of Dementia.

Back in the Blazing Sun Empire, Mingyu, Zhiqing and Ji Shan were standing in front of the Emperor of the Blazing Sun Empire.

They had come once more to request the Emperor.

Although Ji Shan didn't know about it, Mingyu had already prepared for a transmission talisman for herself and Zhiqing.

She has decided that if the Emperor still didn't tell them the location of the Beast Sect, she would just put her sword in his neck and force him to tell her.

After finding out the location, she would escape with Zhiqing using the transmission talisman.

"Father, I'm requesting you once more. Please tell us the location of the Beast Hall. We wouldn't create trouble there, I promise!" Ji Shan said in a pleading voice.

"I'm sorry Little Shan, But I can't tell you. My hands are tied by the rules of Beast Hall," The Emperor responded to Ji Shan.

Mingyu saw that their try had failed once more. She was just about to bring her sword out of her storage ring, but she stopped when she heard the Emperor start talking once more.

"Although I can't tell you about the location of Beast Hall, I do have some information that might help you out," He said.

"What information, Father?" Ji Shan inquired with curiosity on his face.

"Some people from the main Beast Hall will be coming here in a few months. You can get to know them and get the information you need from them," The Emperor said with a smile on his face.

"The people from the main beast hall are coming here? Are they coming to investigate the destruction of their branch?" Ji Shan asked in shock.

"Maybe, or maybe not. I was just told that they would be passing through here. They'd stay in the Beast Hall branch that's situated in the North Moon Empire, but since I was a part of the Main Beast Hall as well, they told me about it," The Emperor answered Ji Shan.

"I'd also be throwing a banquet for them. You'd get the opportunity to talk to them and get to know them. You can get all your answers from them," He further added.

"That... What do you think about it?" Ji Shan looked towards Mingyu and asked.

Mingyu was still considering if she should wait for a few more months or put the sword at the Emperor's neck.

There was a risk in the second option after all. If she went with the second option, and Ji Shan's father still didn't answer them, that would be quite bad as that would end all the doors for her and she wouldn't be able to get any information and she wouldn't be allowed to meet the entourage that was coming from the Main Beast Hall either.

Ultimately, she nodded her head in affirmation. She decided to wait for a few more months.

Chapter 329 - 329: Assassination Attempt

After 3 more days of flying, Long Chen had entered the Kingdom of Dementia.

It took him 6 more hours to get to its Royal City that was known as the Bright Moon City.

The Kingdom of Dementia was a 1st rank Kingdom that was ruled by the Rui Clan.

Originally, the Rui Clan wasn't the Royal Clan.

That was a time when the Rui Clan was just the third strongest clan in the Kingdom of Dementia. The strongest clan at that time was the Wu Clan that was also the Royal Clan of the Kingdom. The second strongest clan was the Mu clan at that time.

The whole hierarchy changed during the rule of the 15th king.

The King had 4 brothers and no sisters. Since he was quite insecure and he worried about his throne, he had his brothers executed.

He was also worried that the kids of his brothers might come for revenge when they grow up, that's why he had them executed as well.

Just like that, only the King was left in the Royal Clan. He was only 24 years old when he did all that.

At the age of 26, he got married for the first time, and right after, he was assassinated by some masked men when he was going to another Kingdom for official purposes.

The Kingdom only had a Queen remaining who had no powerful Clan's backing and she was worried about the Kingdom.

The Rui Clan and the Mu clan, both secretly sent marriage proposals of their Clan Master for the Queen.

Although the Clan Master of the Mu Clan was said to be more talented and smarter than the Clan Master of the Rui Clan, he wasn't handsome. He was only 35, but he looked like he was in his 50s.

The Clan Master of the Rui clan on the other hand was more handsome than the Clan Master of the Mu Clan, but he lacked in the other areas.

The Queen ultimately decided to marry the Clan Master of the Rui Clan for his looks.

Thus, the Clan Master of the Rui clan became the new King, the Queen still held the most power and the Wu Clan was still said to be the Royal Clan since she had taken the Wu Surname after her marriage with the previous King.

The new king had a son with the Queen, but when the boy was only 1 year old, the Queen got into a mysterious accident and she died.

Only the New King and his Son were left. The New King got the full power after the Queen's death and he changed the name of the Royal Clan and made the Rui Clan the new Royal Clan.

That King's great-grandson was ruling the Kingdom at the time.

Long Chen landed on an empty street of the Bright Moon City and sent the Sun Destroying Condor back in his storage ring.

He walked through the city and noticed a lot of guards patrolling the city. Although the city was the Royal City, he still found it quite strange to see so many guards patrolling it.

He asked for directions and found a hotel that was nearest to the Royal Palace.

There were only 30 minutes of walking distance between the hotel and the Royal Palace.

The hotel was called the Luxem. It was said to be the most expensive hotel in the city and a person had to pay 2 silver coins for spending a night there.

Long Chen didn't find that strange since the hotel was so close to the Royal Clan.

He didn't worry about the money either since he had quite a lot of it.

"Excuse me. I would like a room please," Long Chen said to the receptionist of the palace.

The receptionist was a girl in her late 20s. Long Chen could see that she was a 3rd stage gold realm cultivator.

"How long would you like to stay? The cheapest room would cost you 2 silver coins for a day," The receptionist said.

"And your best room?" Long Chen asked with an amused smile on his face.

"That would be 10 silver coins each day," She replied.

"Alright. Give me your best room for 10 days. If I need, I'll extend the days," Long Chen said as he placed a gold coin in front of the girl.

"Ah, Of Course Sir! I'll do that right away," The girl said politely.

Long Chen could see that the girl was talking much more kindly now.

He just smiled as he took the key of the room.

"Your room is on the 3rd floor. It's room no. 301. I hope you'll enjoy your stay," She told Long Chen.

"Thanks,"

Long Chen turned back and walked to the stairs nearby.

He got to the 3rd floor and entered the 1st room.

"Not bad," Long Chen said as soon as he entered the room.

The room was less like a room more like a big hall. There was a giant bed at the center of the room. More than 30 people could easily adjust in that bed.

There were sofas as well and many antique paintings on the wall. There was a whole beer bar in the place and he could see at least a hundred bottles there.

He walked to the balcony and he was able to see the view of the Royal Palace that was shining brightly under the light of the sun.

'So that's the place. It's so heavily guarded. I can still take care of it though," Long Chen muttered as he gazed at the entrance of the Palace.

He left the room and again walked to the reception.

"Do you need something, sir? Was there a problem with the room?" The girl asked.

"Oh, it's nothing like that. I just had something to ask. I thought that I should ask you," Long Chen replied.

"Sure. You can ask me anything. I'll answer to the best of my knowledge," She answered him.

"It's my first time in this city, so I couldn't help but be amazed at the fact that there were so many guards patrolling the city. Is this always like this? Or is this a special occasion?" Long Chen inquired.

"You're new here? I guess that's why you don't know about it. It's not like this generally, but something big has happened that resulted in it," She told him.

"Something big? What happened?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"An assassin managed to enter the palace and he attacked the King a few days ago. The King survived as the Royal Guards got there in time, but the assassin managed to escape. Since then, it has been like this," The girl told him.

"Oh? An assassin? Interesting. So that's why the whole place is like this. I gotta say, the assassin was really stupid. He screwed so big," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face

"Yea! He shouldn't have dared to attack the king. I'm sure that he would soon be found and killed," The girl said.

"Who knows, since he hasn't been caught yet, it's quite possible that he has left the city," Long Chen let out.

'All he did was make things more difficult for me,' He thought.

"That's possible as well," She replied.

"Anyways, Is the king fine after that attack? Did the assassin steal anything?" He further asked.

"The King is perfectly fine. As for him stealing? The King keeps all his valuables in his personal Treasury. It's impossible to steal from it," The girl said with a slight smile.

"Why is it impossible to steal from it? Is there something special about it?" Long Chen inquired.

"Indeed. And not just one thing, there are special things about it. Our King is so proud of it, he didn't hide anything about it. I think every citizen of the Royal City knows how special it is," She smilingly replied.

Chapter 330 - 330: Demon Cultivation

"Interesting. I would love to hear about those," Long Chen said to her.

"His personal treasury is made from the Jaedite Ore. It is said to be the strongest material that is found in our kingdom. Even a peak Sky Realm Cultivator can't break it," she said.

"Oh? Interesting. So it's impossible to break the treasury and enter," Long Chen said with a frown.

"Indeed," she replied.

"That's not all. The most amazing thing is the way to open it. It's said to be designed by the best Formation Master of the Beast Hall," she replied.

"There's a small formation at the entrance of the treasury. The formation can read palm prints and it will only open with the Palm Prints of His Majesty. There's no other way to enter it," she continued.

"That's strange. The Beast Hall is quite far from here. Why would their Formation Master come here and establish that formation for your king?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

"That's a long story. Apparently, His Majesty helped the Formation Master of the Beast Hall with something. In order to thank the king, that Formation master decided to make that formation for the King," she told him.

"Why would the Beast Hall Formation Master need the help of a small kingdom's King? The Beast Hall is even stronger than most of the Empires after all," Long Chen muttered.

"It has something to do with the Dark Soul Sect," she said as she looked at Long Chen.

"The Dark Soul Sect? How?" Long Chen was already curious about why the Beast Hall formation Master would take the help of a small king, but the name of the Dark Soul Sect got him even more interested.

"The Beast Hall Formation Master was chasing after a cultivator from the Dark Soul Sect. He lost the trail of the cultivator, but only because of our King was he able to find the cultivator once more. That's how it all happened," she explained.

"Oh, that makes sense. The Beast Hall has a deep enmity with the Dark Soul Sect after all. I can understand why the Formation Master rewarded your king," Long Chen said

"Back to the topic, the treasury can only be opened by the King? Is there no other way? What if the king died? What would happen to the treasury?" he let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

"I don't know about that. Maybe there are other ways as well? Or maybe the king has authorized another person and the treasury can be opened with someone else's palm print as well? Your guess is as good as mine at the moment," she muttered.

"Right. Thanks for explaining that to me. I'll go back now," Long Chen said with a smile as he turned back and walked back to his own room.

He entered his room and sat on his bed as he started thinking of a plan. It wasn't as easy as he just thought. He hadn't expected this kind of security after all.

He didn't care about the guards, but what would he do if he even managed to enter the palace. He needed a way to open the treasury.

"It might be possible if I cut the hand of the king. But he's a Sky Realm cultivator. I'm not even sure if I can do it safely. He shouldn't have reflexes like Lang Jing, but I just don't want to take the risk," he muttered.

"It's there really no other way? Can I really not do anything?" he muttered with a frown.

'Oh right. I can use him,' Long Chen thought of a plan as a smile appeared on his face.

"I can't believe I've totally forgotten about him," he muttered.

"The King might be strong, but I can control his closest aid. The King must have kids. If he doesn't have kids, I can move onto his ministers or his servants. No matter what I have to do. I'll achieve my target and get the Heavenly Ruler," he said in a low voice.

It was already evening so Long Chen didn't put his plan in motion. He decided to rest for the day and start everything fresh from tomorrow.

He stood up and walked to the shower room and took a long shower before he came out and sat in a meditative position.

He began his physical cultivation that he had never stopped doing. No matter how busy he was, he always took time out to cultivate his Demon Monarch Physique.

His cultivation speed had only gotten faster from the moment his heart demon woke up after its evolution. The best thing was that his Heart Demon hadn't forced him to do anything. He thought that it might be because of him not keeping any feelings inside his heart, but he hadn't faced anything big either.

Since coming to the Dark Soul Sect, Long Chen hadn't stepped back from a fight whenever someone seriously annoyed him. He didn't step back even when the disciple of the sect master was in its path. He thought that was the reason, and he was somewhat right. Though there was another reason that he didn't know about.

His Heart Demon had seen the destructive power of his martial soul, that's why he was going easy on Long Chen on minor things, but it had decided to not go easy if Long Chen opposed his heart and desires since that was the reason for its existence.

Long Chen absorbed the Natural Qi from the surroundings, which was turned into Demonic Qi by his Heart Demon. The Demonic Qi nourished his body and increased his strength.

The Demon Monarch Physique had separate levels of its own, just like cultivation.

The first level of technique had 5 steps. The first step was Bone Condensation. The stage in which the focus was given to the bones in the body. The Second Step was the Tendon Nourishment. Just like this, the first level only focused on the body and its components.

Long Chen had already completed the first level of the Demon Monarch Physique after all this time and his body was as strong as an initial level Earth Realm Cultivator without using any Qi.

He had begun the second level of the Demon Monarch Physique that was called "Body Forging".

In this level, the natural Qi was converted into the Demonic Qi, but it was not absorbed by the body. Instead, the Demonic Qi was stored in the flesh and the bones of the cultivators. They could release that energy when they needed it.

It was much like using a long-distance attack, but it was much more dangerous since it used the Demonic Qi.

The Body Forging level had 10 stages and Long Chen had just got to the first.

Xun had told him that a cultivator who reached the 10th stage of the Body Forging Realm of Demon Monarch Physique, he would be as strong as an initial level Heaven Realm cultivator. Long Chen was quite excited and wanted to get there as fast as possible.

He cultivated his Demon Monarch Physique for 2 hours before he began his Qi cultivation.

Long Chen was the 2nd stage Earth Realm cultivator when it came to his Qi Cultivation, but he believed that he would be able to battle a peak Earth Realm Cultivator with ease. In a way, his Demon Monarch Cultivation and the Qi Cultivation was at the same level.

He cultivated for the whole night and only stood up when the first ray of the morning light fell upon him.

Long Chen stood up and stretched his arms while yawning.

He went to the shower room and washed his face before he left his room.

He had decided that he would put his plan into motion and hopefully everything would go well.

Chapter 331 - 331: Crashing The Prince's Party

Long Chen again stopped before the reception and started talking to the receptionist.

"Good morning," he said to the receptionist.

"Good morning. Are you going out?" she asked.

"Yeah, I wanted to see the city. Do you have any suggestions for me as to where I should go?" Long Chen replied.

"There are a lot of places. You can go to the Drunken Pavilion. It's a place that sells the best wine in the kingdom. People from different kingdoms come here, just to have a sip of their wine," she replied.

"That sounds interesting. I'd go there then. Anyways, since the place is so famous, does the king or his closest associates come there?" he asked.

"You can see a few of them there if the timing is right," she replied.

"Oh right, You said that the king was attacked some time ago? Would they still come out of the palace? The king or his kids would generally stay inside the palace in times like this, right?" Long Chen asked.

"Hah, You'd think that should be the case, but the things are different here. The king has only 2 kids. Both are boys. The Crown Prince is more sensible and is rarely seen outside, but the little Prince..." she spoke till here before she shut her mouth and looked around.

Seeing that no one else was nearby, she continued talking.

"The second son of the king is kind of a rogue. He spends most of his day inside the Pleasure Inn. Although the name sounds decent, in reality, that place is a brothel. You can understand the nature of the second Prince from that," She said.

"Oh? That's interesting to know. Doesn't the king stop his son? Why does he let him go to the brothel?" Long Chen inquired.

"I think the king has already given up on his younger kid. Since the Crown Prince is decent, he doesn't care about the second one. Although he still loves him and punishes the ones who don't respect the Second Prince, I don't think he himself has high hopes placed on the Second Prince," she finished.

"That makes sense. So, will the Second Prince still be inside the pleasure inn?" Long Chen inquired.

"It would be strange if he wasn't," the girl chuckled at Long Chen's question.

"Thanks for explaining everything. I'll be going now. I need to check out the Drunken Pavilion as well," Long Chen said with a smile.

He turned back and left the hotel.

'So I need to go to the Pleasure Inn. I should probably ask the directions from someone,' He thought as he walked on the streets of the city.

He didn't ask the direction of the Pleasure Inn from the receptionist since he didn't want her to suspect him of something. He had asked a lot of questions about the Royal Family while acting ignorant, but him going to the Pleasure Inn right after knowing about it might make things too obvious.

He was walking when he saw a man walking towards him. The man looked like he was in his 60s and his hair had already turned white.

Long Chen stopped him.

"Excuse me. Can you tell me the directions to the Pleasure Inn?" Long Chen inquired.

"Oh? So you're a man of culture as well. I see," the old man gave a creepy grin as he looked at Long Chen.

"Just keep going straight until you see the intersection of roads. Turn left from there and walk for around 15 minutes and you should see a large board on your left with the name of the Pleasure Inn. The building right behind that is the Pleasure Inn," the man said. As he talked, his grin never left his face.

"Thanks," Long Chen said and continued walking.

"Sigh, It has been so long since I went there. I should take another trip when I have time," the old man muttered as he left as well.

Long Chen followed the directions given by the old man and after walking for around half an hour, he stood in front of the Pleasure Inn.

He could see two men in cultivator's robes standing at the entrance.

"They should be the guards," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the entrance of the Pleasure Inn.

"Stop right there. Our young Prince is inside the Inn. You can't go inside," One of the guards said as they stopped Long Chen.

"Ahh? There's not only a single girl inside, is there? Or is your Prince going to monopolize everyone?" Long Chen let out softly.

"Everything in this kingdom belongs to our Prince! Who the hell are you to ask questions! Now go back, or we'd have to break your bones." they replied to Long Chen.

"Sigh, you just had to do this, didn't you? I know that you're probably doing your job, but my hands are forced as well. I'm feeling slightly angered because of you as I don't want to waste any more of my time. If you guys really don't move aside, I might just have to act on my impulse to protect myself from unnecessary pain," Long Chen said to them.

He still remembered the pain of opposing his desires right after his heart demon's evolution.

He was still not as angry, but he didn't like their attitude one bit. He had decided to not be merciful because of his heart demon, but he still didn't want to kill them for such small mistakes.

"Can I please go inside? I won't disturb your Prince's rest," he said in an effort to calm things down.

"Hey, you son of a bastard! Can't you understand the human language? Did your mother not teach you anything?" the guard replied to Long Chen.

"Don't talk about his mother like that man. Maybe she's just as retarded as him," the second guard said as he started laughing.

His laugh was still echoing when a bright flash of light appeared for an instant and his head fell on the ground. He couldn't even wipe off the happy look from his face as he died.

The first guard's eyes opened wide in shock. He didn't even see what happened, and in the next instant, his partner was dead.

He was about to raise his sword, but just as his hand touched the hilt of his sword, his head was separated as well.

The Qi sword in Long Chen's hand disappeared into nothingness after doing its work.

Both the guards were dead before they could even scream.

Long Chen placed the bodies inside his storage ring since he couldn't leave them outside.

He pushed the door open and entered the place.

As he entered, the first thing he saw was a big hall. The hall was completely empty at the moment.

He used his divine senses to search through the place. He noticed that in a nearby room, a man was lying on the bed.

There were around 8 women in the same bed as him, giving him their services.

He also saw a few women in the other rooms, but they looked like they were just talking amongst themselves. Other than the Prince, he could see no other man in the place.

He walked towards the room to his right in which he found the Prince.

He pushed the door open. The door was already unlocked, so he didn't have any problem opening it.

The prince heard the noise of the door opening.

"Hey, Didn't I tell Wiyu that I don't need more women for the day?" he called out without even seeing who opened the door.

"Don't worry, I'm not a girl," Long Chen said with a smile.

The girls who were completely naked heard the man's voice and couldn't help but look back.

"Who the heck are you! Get the hell out of this place, before I order your execution!" the Prince said with a distorted look on his face.

Chapter 332 - 332: Power Of Heart Devouring Insect

"Ah, Girls. Would you mind leaving the place for a moment? The prince and I are friends. I need to talk to him in private," Long Chen ignored the Prince and told the girls.

The girls thought for a while before they left the room.

They didn't even wear their clothes before they left.

Long Chen locked the door as soon as the girls left.

"If you don't tell me who the fuck you are, I swear that I'll chop off your hands and legs with my own hands!" the Prince stood up on the bed and said to Long Chen with the proud look on his face.

"Can you at least wear some clothes before we talk? I have no interest in seeing your little thing more than I, unfortunately, have," Long Chen replied to him.

"Hmph! You're no one to order me around. Say what you want to say. Let me just tell you in advance. If I don't like what you said, you'll lose your life," the Prince said.

"Sigh, You're really keen on exposing yourself to men I guess," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face. He continued getting closer to the bed, the more he talked.

"I'll tell you. I'm here to talk to you about something. Your future depends on it. You might even become King if you listen to me," Long Chen said in a soothing voice as he kept getting closer.

The Prince was so engrossed in his words, he didn't realize how close Long Chen had come. Long Chen was only 1 meter away from him when he realized it.

But it was already too late. Before he could create any distance between them, Long Chen caught him by his neck and smashed him on the bed. Since the mattress was soft, the Prince wasn't injured much. The same couldn't be said for the bed though. The bed was utterly broken.

"W-who are you. You dare! You'll die if something happens to me," the Prince said after much struggle.

"Sorry Prince, but this might be the only option I have. You'll have to bear with it for a little longer," Long Chen said with a smile on his face.

He brought Cati out of his storage ring. Cati was his tamed beast that looked like a caterpillar. Its real name was much more frightening though. Cati was a Heart Devouring Insect that could live inside the heart of the person.

As long as Cati managed to enter someone's heart, it would be nearly impossible to remove it. And at a single thought of their master, a Heart Devouring Insect would be able to kill their host.

Long Chen held both the hands of the Prince while he placed Cati on his chest.

In less than a minute, Cati entered the body of the Prince. After some more time, it was already inside the heart of the Second Prince.

After being done, Long Chen released the Second Prince.

"W-what the hell did you just put inside my body? Remove it this instant," the Second Prince let out loudly.

"Calm down, Second Prince. Whatever it was, it isn't harmful to you as long as you listen to me. If you don't listen to me, then it would be harmful to you," Long Chen said with a smile.

"The thing that entered your body is a Heart Devouring Insect. It's a rare beast, but I'm sure you'll be able to find out about it if you search in the books. Anyways, I'd explain in simple terms. The Heart Devouring Insect had entered your heart and now it won't come out until I order it to come out,"

"Also, with just a single thought from me, my Heart Devouring Insect would be able to kill you. Wanna see a glimpse of it?" Long Chen asked with an amused smile on his face.

Long Chen didn't even move, but the Second Prince felt extreme pain in his heart. He couldn't help but clench his chest tightly as he fell to his bed and cried in pain.

"See? That was a small glimpse of what it would do. If you don't listen to me, then your death would be much more painful," Long Chen said to him

"Why are you doing this to me? What do you need me to do?" The Prince asked. He was sweating excessively as he felt fear for his life.

"I just need a little help from you. That's why I had to follow this path. Anyways, let me tell you more about me," Long Chen started talking.

"I'm a thief and I wish to become the biggest thief known in the land. That's why I wish to steal your father's heavenly ruler that he keeps in his treasury. That's why I need your help. As long as I get the Heavenly Ruler, I'll free you," Long Chen added.

"How can I help you with that? Only the Palm print of my father and my Elder Brother can open the treasury. I don't think I can help you with that," the Second Prince said.

"Oh? So your brother's palm print can open it as well. I guess your father is not stupid enough to keep only his prints on the treasury. As a king, there's always the risk of battle with other Empires and death," Long Chen muttered softly.

"Anyways, you can still do it. Just get your father or brother to open the treasury and steal the ruler for me," Long Chen said with a smile.

"It's not that simple. Neither my brother nor my father like me that much. They would never open the treasury when I ask," the second Prince shook his head as he said.

"That's for you to decide. It's your life that's in danger. Think of a way to get them to open it for you. I'm sure you'll be able to think of a way. When you leave that place, go straight to your Palace and get to work," Long Chen said.

"Also, don't even think about telling anyone. I can hear everything you say through the Heart Devouring Insect since I have a link established with it. As soon as I find anything even the least bit suspicious, I will kill you. You're smart enough to know what's better for you yourself after all," Long Chen continued.

"I... Alright, I'll think of something. Just give me time," the Second Prince said.

"You can have as much time as you want. As long as you get the Heavenly Ruler to me before 7 days. If you're unsuccessful, I don't think I need to explain what will happen," Long Chen said smilingly.

Tears had already appeared in the Second Prince's eyes as he cursed himself for coming to this place today. If he hadn't come, he wouldn't have met this frightening existence.

"I'll be leaving now. If someone asks, just tell them that I'm your friend. Also, I accidentally killed your guards that were standing outside. I took care of the

bodies, but you should handle that as well," Long Chen said as he glanced at him.

"Accidentally?" The Second Prince muttered with a crying face.

"You'll handle the stuff right?" Long Chen asked.

"Yeah, I'll do it. You can leave," The Second Prince said.

"Good boy," Long Chen smiled as he unlocked the door and left the place.

The Prince didn't feel like staying there either and he left as well.

Long Chen walked through the city once again. He stopped a person and asked the direction of the Drunken Pavilion. Since he heard so many praises from the receptionist, he couldn't help but look forward to tasting their wines.

After following a complicated set of instructions, he reached the Drunken Pavilion. He had to walk for another 30 minutes to get to the Drunken Pavilion from the Pleasure Hall.

Chapter 333 - 333: Beast Hall Plan?

Long Chen entered the Drunken Pavilion which looked quite different than what he imagined it to be.

The whole place seemed like it was made in glass which made it look a lot different compared to the other buildings. Long Chen tried but he couldn't see inside the place through the glass.

He stepped towards the doors and pushed the doors open as he entered the place.

The inside looked much fancy as well. The floor was also made of glass, but it still provided some friction and didn't make him slip.

There were around 200 glass tables inside as well. The only thing in that place that wasn't made of glass were the fancy chairs.

Long Chen found an empty table in that place and walked towards it.

Coincidentally, from a different location, another man was walking towards the same table.

The man had long blonde hairs that matched the color of his eyes.

He looked twice the age of Long Chen. There was also a girl beside him who was slightly younger and looked like she was in her early 20s.

The girl's face had a few similarities with the face of the boy. She also had blonde hair and similar color eyes.

There were 3 chairs around the table they were walking to. Both, Long Chen and the man, got to the table at the same time as they touched the chairs on their side.

"Hey, little kid. This table is mine. Go play someplace else," The man said as he glanced at Long Chen for a short second.

"What's your table doing in this place? Can't you keep your table under your control?" Long Chen smilingly said.

The blonde-haired girl couldn't help but laugh at Long Chen's words.

"You can use sharp words. Leave this place before I make you unable to use your sharp words," The man said in full seriousness.

"Really? How do you wish to achieve that?" Long Chen said with an amused smile on his face.

"By cutting your tongue off," The man said as he glared at Long Chen.

"Pfff... Hahahaha," Long Chen couldn't control himself from laughing out loud.

"Do you think I'm joking? Don't make me prove my words kids. I don't want to use violence in front of my sister," The man said.

"Wanna give it a try? Long Chen said as his smile disappeared.

"You!" the man glared at him as he tried stepping towards him, but the girl caught his hand.

"Please don't fight. Let him have the seat. We can sit elsewhere," The girl said.

"But..."

"You guys don't need to leave. You can have the table. Treat it as a gift from me to the beautiful lady behind you," Long Chen smilingly said as he turned back and went to the table that was right beside.

"You!!!" The man could feel his temper rising as he struggled to find words to respond.

"Brother, Let it go. We already got the table," The girl said to the boy as she sat on the chair.

"Hmph, I'm leaving him only because you're asking for it," The man grumbled as he sat down on the chair.

Long Chen gave his order to the waiter and the blonde-haired man did the same.

"Brother, You still haven't told me. Why are we selected to go to the North Moon Empire? What are we supposed to do there?" The girl said in a low voice.

"As I said, I'll tell you later. We still have a few months after all. So many top talents from our Beast Hall have been selected. I'm just glad that the elders trusted us and made us join the team as well," The man replied. He kept his tone down as well.

"The Elders trusted you, not us! They didn't even tell me anything. All they said was that I need to be in my best condition when it's time to leave," The girl said with an unhappy look on her face.

"Don't worry about that. They didn't tell me anything extra either. I think we'll be given a brief about everything a few days before it's time to leave," The man said to her.

"They didn't tell you either? Then how do you know what it's about?" The girl asked.

"Well, someone special told me a few things about this," The man said with a proud smile on his face.

"Someone special? Who?" The girl inquired with a confused look on her face.

"I can't tell you who it is, but I can tell you that the person who told me is going to be the vice-captain of our team. That's why he knew. Now don't ask more. You'd find out soon enough. Just be patient," The man said smilingly.

"You're so bad. You won't even tell your little sister. Fine, I won't ask anymore," The girl said with an annoyed look on her face.

The man didn't say anything. He didn't even look at her since he didn't want to be defeated by her pleading eyes and end up telling her everything.

In a few more minutes, the wines arrived for everyone.

The waiter placed 2 wine bottles and glasses on the table of the man. He placed 1 bottle and 1 glass on Long Chen's table.

'So they're from the beast hall. Interestingly, it looks like the beast hall is preparing something as well. I wonder if Lang Jing's plan had something to do with that. He also said that he needed me after a few days,' Long Chen thought with a frown on his face as he glared at the wine bottle.

The blonde-haired man glanced at Long Chen and saw him looking at the bottle intensely.

"Why are you staring at it? Is this your first time seeing an expensive wine? I wonder if you even have the money to pay for it," He said in a mocking tone.

"Can't you come up with something better than these childish taunts?" Long Chen responded to him.

"Brother!" The blonde-haired girl glared at the man as she called out.

"Hmm, Since my sister is not happy with me messing you up, I will let you go again," The man again shook his head as he said.

'Sigh, He is so weird,' Long Chen thought with a frown on his face.

He opened the bottle of the wine and poured the wine in the glass.

He picked up the glass and took his first sip. He quite enjoyed the taste of it and took another sip. In less than a minute he had emptied the whole glass.

As he put the glass back on the table, he felt something inside his body. His Qi was somewhat stimulated. He could feel his cultivation had also increased slightly.

'This wine can increase my cultivation? That would be so amazing. I'd buy all their wine,' Long Chen thought as he filled the glass with wine once more.

He picked up the glass and emptied the glass once more and waited for his cultivation to increase even further.

More than 5 minutes passed, but nothing happened. There was no reaction and no increase in cultivating.

He couldn't help but frown as he filled the glass to the brim and drank the wine. He waited for some time, but it was the same. Nothing happened.

'What is wrong with it? It's the same bottle of wine and nothing is different. Why isn't my cultivation increasing like the first time though?' Long Chen thought as he looked confused.

He didn't notice that the blonde-haired man was looking at the change in his expressions with an amused smile on his face.

"It's your first time in this place, isn't it?" The man asked as he looked at Long Chen.

"Yeah," Long Chen replied.

"I guess you don't know the secret of this wine yet. That's why you're acting so strange," The man chuckled as he took a sip of his wine.

"Secret of the wine?" Long Chen asked with a perplexed look on his face.

Chapter 334 - 334: Heavenly Lotus

"Yeah. The secret of the wine," The man said smilingly as he pointed towards the wine bottle in his hand.

"The wine is the greatest attraction of the Fragrance Pavilion and it can stimulate the Qi inside a person's body. It can make them gain a small boost in cultivation, but if there was really such a wonderful thing in this world, wouldn't there be wars over it?" the man told Long Chen with an amused smile on his face.

"Indeed," Long Chen responded.

"The wine isn't as miraculous as it's first sip would make you believe. The wine only gives a small boost to the cultivators that drink or for the first time. No matter how much you drink it after that, your cultivation won't increase," The man said as he glanced at Long Chen.

"Oh, Thanks for the explanation," Long Chen thanked him for solving a question he had.

The man couldn't help but laugh proudly.

"It's alright. I'm the bigger person, I should educate the ignorant kids," He said.

"Yeah, You're indeed the older person. Your daughter is really lucky to have a father like you," Long Chen said as he took a glance at the blonde girl.

cough *cough*

The man couldn't help but cough extensively as soon as he heard Long Chen's statement.

"I'm not that old! Also, I'm not her father! I'm her elder brother!" The man let out loudly.

"Oh? my mistake. I thought that you were her father as she looked so young and you looked so... Ahm, anyway, I'm Tian Shen. What's your name?" Long Chen asked.

He didn't tell him his real name since he had taken an oath in front of Lang Jing that he won't talk about himself or about Lang Jing and the people in front of him were from the Beast Hall. He gave out fake information.

"Tian Shen? That's a pretty cool name. I'm Mu Fan and this is my sister Mu Xin," The man said with a wide smile.

"Your last name is Mu? Are you the members of the Mu Clan in this city?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yeah. Our father is the Clan Master of the Mu Clan. We live outside and came back for a few days to visit our clan," Mu Fan told Long Chen.

"Oh, that's nice. I'm new to this city as well. It's a nice city," Long Chen replied.

"Yup. It is indeed a nice city. It is even better normally, but because of the assassination attempt on the Prince, everyone is on high alert," Mu Fan said as he sighed.

"Yeah, I heard about that. I personally think that it's useless though. If the assassin isn't caught until now, he has most probably escaped. This whole thing looks useless at the moment," Long Chen let out softly

"I agree that this thing is useless. It is also possible that he has escaped. If he was able to escape from the Royal palace despite him being caught, it would be strange if he wasn't able to escape the city," Mu Fan let out with a thoughtful look on his face.

As Long Chen was having a discussion with Mu Fan, the Second Prince had returned to the Royal Palace.

As he walked towards his rooms, he managed to see his brother at some distance.

"Brother!" He called out as he ran towards Crown Prince Rui Yao.

"Yu? You're back from the brothel so soon?" Crown Prince Rui Yao inquired.

"Ah, I didn't feel like staying there anymore," Second Prince Rui Yu said.

"Oh? I guess you're finally growing up. Alright, I'm leaving. Go back to your room," Rui Yao said as he left, leaving Rui Yu behind.

From the beginning till the end, Rui Yao looked as expressionless as always.

'It would be suspicious if I ask him to open the treasury right now. I'll ask him tomorrow,' Rui Yu thought as he turned back and walked back to his room.

Back in the Dark Soul Sect, there existed a dark room. There was a small pool filled with water inside that room and a pitch-black lotus was floating in the pond.

The doors of that room opened as a beautiful woman entered the place. She was the Sect Master of the Dark Soul Sect.

The Great Elder was following behind her. He was carrying a boy in his hand.

"Place Mu Zheng on the ground. I'll bring that lotus out," The woman said in her soft voice.

The Great Elder nodded his head as he stepped forward and placed the boy down on the ground.

The Sect Master slowly stepped inside the water and walked closer to the lotus.

The Lotus was calmly floating in the water until the woman caught it and picked it up. She came out of the water.

Her dress was entirely wet and sticking closer to her body that highlighted her figure even further.

Even though the Grand Elder was so old and out of the worldly affairs, he himself couldn't help but sneak a few glances subtly.

The woman walked closer to the boy on the ground and sat on her knees in front of him.

She slowly moved her hands and gently placed the black lotus on the chest of Mu Zheng. She took her hands off the lotus.

She straightened her posture and started chanting something. Her voice was so inaudible, that even the Grand Elder wasn't able to understand what she was saying.

The Sect Master kept chanting the mantra for 15 minutes straight before the black lotus started shining brightly.

It was shining in a heavenly radiance. Even Grand Elder was feeling lighter as the shine fell on top of him.

He didn't notice, but an invisible aura had started to come out of the black lotus and it was seeping inside the body of Mu Zheng.

It kept going deeper and deeper until it reached inside his Martial Space.

His martial soul was still there, though it was in 2 pieces.

The foreign aura moved towards his martial soul and shrouded it.

Mu Zheng's martial soul started recovering slowly. In less than 20 minutes, his martial soul was completely recovered, but the process didn't stop.

Mu Zheng's martial soul had started changing. It was becoming denser than it had ever been.

It was also getting bigger, though the increase in size was so small that it was barely noticeable.

The aura transfer continued for 10 more minutes before it stopped.

Mu Zheng's martial soul looked more real than ever and it looked even more threatening. It was also 30% larger than our original size.

"It's done," The Sect Master said as she finally stopped chanting.

She noticed that the Black Lotus was starting to disintegrate. In just a few seconds, it disappeared entirely.

"Sigh, Too bad that it was only usable once. Not even 0.1% of the heavenly energy inside it was utilized today," She sighed.

'You just wasted such a heavenly item on something that could only use 0.1 percent of its energy. If we used it properly, we would be able to destroy the Beast Hall with ease,' Grand Elder Chu thought, but he didn't say anything out loud.

A few seconds later, Mu Zheng also opened his eyes. The first thing he noticed was the face of the Sect Master.

"M-master? Where am I?" He asked with a confused look on his face as he looked around.

"You stupid disciple of mine, You had a fight with Long Chen and you even lost. Sigh, I feel like I lost all my hard-earned reputation because of you," The Sect Master said as she glanced at Mu Zheng.

"Ah, Master. It's not that. I didn't even know what happened, he..." Mu Zheng tried explaining.

"You don't need to explain. Just tell me, do you feel something different?" She stopped him as she asked him a question.

Chapter 335 - 335: Trapped In Darkness?

"Different? I... I do feel something. I feel like I'm filled with energy. I feel like I'm filled with strength. And my brain, it's much sharper than before as well. The concepts that I wasn't able to understand before, they're all clear in my head now. I feel so great," Mu Zheng replied with clear excitement on his face.

He has been feeling strange since the moment he woke up, but only when his master asked him the question, did he realize how different he was compared to before. He couldn't help but wonder as to what actually happened.

"Yeah, but that shouldn't be all. I'll teach you everything about how you can use what you have been given. From now on, I'll train you and make you stronger. I won't involve myself in your fight, but I do expect you to take your revenge yourself. Don't disappoint me again," She said.

"I won't master! He was just lucky last time. I'll kill him with my own hands," Mu Zheng clenched his teeth as he said.

"You need to keep that determination and work hard. Don't forget the shame of defeat. Let's go. Your training will start right now," The Sect Master stood up and walked towards the door.

Mu Zheng followed her and left the hall after her. Grand Elder Chu also followed them outside.

Back in the Dementia Kingdom, Long Chen had finished his conversation with the disciples of Beast Hall that he coincidentally met and he had left the Fragrance Pavilion.

Long Chen walked back to his hotel through the heavily guarded streets of the city.

"You're back. Did you try the wine?" The girl at the reception asked as soon as Long Chen entered the place.

"Yeah, the wine was nice. Also, it helped me as well since it was my first time there. Thanks for the suggestion," Long Chen said smilingly.

"I'm glad you liked the place," The form responded.

Long Chen left and walked back to his room.

He couldn't help but be pleased with everything that happened. The day went great. He got a pawn to help him in stealing the Heavenly Ruler and he gained a free increase in cultivation through the wine.

He also got some information about the Beast Hall and the fact that they were preparing to send a team to the North Moon Empire.

He lay in his bed as he started thinking. He was also tired as he hadn't slept in a long time. He laid in bed but he didn't realize as he fell asleep.

As Long Chen slept, he dreamt of something weird.

He found himself trapped in a dark place. There was nothing but darkness and the Demonic Qi everywhere. That wasn't the weird part though.

The weird part was that he could feel that he didn't want to get out of that place. He could also feel an urge to get out of that place.

It was such a conflicting feeling that he himself didn't understand what he actually wanted. The dream felt so surreal.

Just like that, the dream continued until Long Chen ultimately woke up.

It was already midnight as he woke up.

"Such a weird dream," Long Chen muttered. He could feel that his heart was still beating faster.

He walked to his balcony and looked outside. The moon was high in the sky, but the Moon looked red tonight, giving off a weird feeling once more.

Long Chen had seen nights with a red Moon before as well, but he hadn't felt like this before.

"Might be because of the dream," He muttered as he glanced at the moon.

He looked down and noticed that the guards were still patrolling around the palace.

"Should I go inside the palace to see myself?" He let out as he looked towards the palace.

"There's no need I guess. That kid should be able to handle it. He's a Prince after all. And no matter how useless, he's still a part of their family. He should be able to get them to open the safe," Long Chen muttered as he walked back inside.

He sat on the ground in a meditative position as he began his cultivation.

The next morning arrived. Another day began like normal.

The Second Prince was walking back and forth inside his room with a worried expression on his face.

"I know that I said that I will talk to him to open the treasury for me, why am I getting worried so much then? He's my real brother. He also never scolded me. He should open the treasury most probably," He thought.

"I'm just worried that he might discuss this with father. I don't want him to get suspicious," He muttered as he paced back and forth.

"Whatever! I can't stop here! My life depends on it. It's just a measly ruler after all!" He let out as he made a decision and stepped out of his room.

The Second Prince walked towards the Room of the Crown Prince and knocked on the door.

"Brother? Are you inside?" He called out as he knocked on the door of the Crown Prince.

"Yeah, come on inside," Came a voice from inside.

The Second Prince opened the door and entered the room.

He noticed that the Crown Prince was sitting on a chair in front of a table. He seemed to be writing something.

"What do you need?" The Crown Prince asked without shifting his focus from whatever he was writing.

"Ah, Brother. The thing is that I was lying on my bed and I suddenly realized that I've never been inside the treasury before. I couldn't help but wonder about it. I really wish to enter the treasury once. Can you please open it for me and let me enter?" The Second Prince asked.

"I'm sorry, I won't be able to open it for you. You should go ask father's permission first," The Crown Prince said.

"But, father would never agree. Please brother. Please do it for me this once. I'll just take a quick look inside," The second Prince insisted.

"My answer won't change. Although I can open it, father is the real owner of that place. I won't open it for even a second without his permission," The Crown Prince didn't take a step back on his stance.

"We'll have a quick look. Father won't even find out Just do it for me this once. You're the only one who still loves me after my mother died. Please brother," Tears appeared in the eyes of the Second Prince as he said.

"Really? I told you so many times to stop going to the brothel, have you ever listened?" The Crown Prince inquired.

"I will listen from now on. I'll never go to the brothel again. Can't you see that I haven't gone today either?" The Second Prince said.

"Hmm? Do you really mean that?" The Crown Prince asked.

"Yes, Brother. I promise that I won't go there," The Second Prince replied.

"Alright. I'll let you have a look in that case. But you can't break the promise. You won't go to the brothel ever again," The Crown Prince stopped writing as he stood up.

The Second Prince repeatedly nodded his head.

"Alright. Come with me," The Crown Prince walked towards the door and left the room. The Second Prince followed after him.

Soon, they arrived in front of a silver door.

There was a small circular formation at the center of the door.

The Crown Prince placed his hands on the formation which started shining.

Soon, the door opened and the Crown Prince entered inside. The second Prince also entered.

He couldn't help but be shocked as soon as he entered.

"This is our treasury," The Crown Prince said with a smile.

There were treasures everywhere. There were weapons, gold, artifacts, Armor and so many more things.

"Amazing," The Second Prince exclaimed in shock as he started walking through the place and looked at each treasure. He was actually trying to find only one specific thing. The Heavenly Ruler.

Chapter 336 - 336: Caught

As the second Prince roamed through the place and looked at every item carefully, The Crown Prince just stood there as he casually checked things out.

"How's it?" The Crown Prince asked.

"It's amazing brother. It's such a cool place. I can't believe that I never saw it before. At Least I got to see it now," The Second Prince replied happily as he continued looking through the treasures.

"Indeed. Now can we leave? You've already seen everything," The Crown Prince inquired as he turned towards the exit.

"Ah... " The Second Prince struggled to answer as he had still not found the Heavenly Ruler.

He was just thinking about what he should do when his eyes caught the glimpse of something that looked like the thing he was looking for.

It was a Golden Ruler that was 30 centimeters long and 3 centimeters wide.

The Second Prince couldn't help but smile. He hurriedly picked the Heavenly Ruler.

"Yeah, Let's go, brother," He said as he turned back.

The Crown Prince left the place and the Second Prince followed after him as he left the treasury as well.

His hand was behind his back, in which he held the Heavenly Ruler, to hide it from the Crown Prince.

"Why?" The Crown Prince asked out of nowhere.

"What happened, brother?" The Second Prince let out in confusion. The Crown Prince turned back and glanced at the Second Prince and slowly stepped towards him.

The Second Prince's heartbeats were getting faster and faster as he firmly gripped the Heavenly Ruler behind his back.

The Crown Prince moved his hand and before the Second Prince could react, he gave him a tight slap.

A palm print appeared on Second Prince's left cheek.

"Why did you steal from your own house," The Crown Prince finished his question as he glared at the Second Prince.

"I knew that you were spoiled and you made so many wrong decisions in life, but I never expected that you would stoop down to such a low level and steal from us as well?" The Crown Prince said with a disappointed look on his face.

"I... I... " The Second Prince tried explaining, but he couldn't explain as he knew that Long Chen would be listening. If he said anything, he would die. He just closed his mouth and looked down.

"Give me the thing you took!" The Crown Prince said sternly.

The Second Prince hesitated for a moment before he brought his hand forward and gave the Heavenly Ruler to the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince took the Heavenly Ruler and threw it inside the treasury before closing the doors.

He caught the hands of the Second Prince and pulled him along with himself.

"Please brother, don't tell father. I won't do it again. Please!" The Second Prince pleaded but the first Prince acted as if he didn't hear a single word and didn't stop.

"It's not in my hands today. You did something so big, that I must tell father," The Crown Prince said in an emotionless voice.

The guards and the maids watched the Crown Prince pull the Second Prince like a criminal and they couldn't help but wonder as to what the Second Prince did this time.

The maids continued talking after the Crown Prince and the Second Prince left.

"I've never seen the Crown Prince this angry. The second Prince must have done something extremely bad. I feel bad for the Crown Prince for having to deal with a brother like that,"

"I can't even imagine what it could be. He had done so many shameless things, still, I didn't see the Crown Prince so angry before," Another maid said.

"I wonder if the Second Prince tried to assassinate the Crown Prince. That might have this effect," She further said.

Everyone had different theories of their own on this matter, but not a single one of them had managed to guess correctly.

The Crown Prince brought the Second Prince in front of the room of their father.

This was the king's resting time which he spent inside his bedroom every day.

The Crown Prince knocked on the door.

"Father!" He called out.

"Come in," The king replied from inside.

"What are you two doing here at the same time? Did you guys need something? Also, you! Why haven't you gone to the brothel yet? Have you finally grown tired of destroying the reputation of the Royal family?" He asked as soon as he saw them before he started to scold the Second Prince.

The Second Prince didn't even dare to look in the eyes of the king.

"Sorry to disturb you Father, but this matter is really serious. I think that you should know about it," The Crown Prince said to the King.

"Hmm? I'm intrigued. Tell me about it," The king said.

"Little brother came to my room this morning and told me his wish to see the treasury from inside one time. He also promised me that he would stop going to the brothel if I fulfilled his request," The Crown Prince said. The King kept listening intently.

"I took him inside the treasury and after we came out, I noticed that he had stolen the Heavenly Ruler from inside the treasury. He was hiding that from me as well," The Crown Prince explained.

"Preposterous! He dared to steal as well!" The King roared loudly in anger.

"You shameless son! Don't you have any shame left! You'd even steal from your family? Did you want to reward your whore at that brothel? Is that why you didn't feel the least bit of shame when you tried to steal!" The king said furiously.

"But father... "

"Don't call me father, you Unfilial kid! I'm not your father from now on! I only have one son and that's not you!" The King said as he lost to his anger.

"Take this boy and put him in the prison! He shall stay there for 5 years as his punishment," The king declared.

The Crown Prince opened his mouth, but before he could speak, the king spoke.

"Don't speak! We won't decrease his punishment. Now follow our order and lock him up!" The King said as he looked at the Crown Prince.

"Yes Father," The Crown Prince said as he nodded his head.

He held the hands of the Second Prince and left the room.

"In a way, it might do you good. You'll learn from your mistakes and come out as a better person," The Crown Prince said softly as he walked with the Second Prince towards the prison.

The Second Prince only had tears in his eyes. In just a single day, he had lost his status and respect. And he couldn't even give an explanation or he would lose his life as well.

The Crown Prince took him to the underground Prison that was below the Royal Palace. Although there were no prisoners in this person, there were still a few guards placed there.

The Guards saw the Crown Prince and Second Prince come towards them.

They all got down to their knees. They all assumed that the princes were here for inspection.

The Crown Prince nodded his head and told them to rise up.

He walked up to one of the cells and opened the door.

He sent the Second Prince inside and locked the door.

All the guards had their mouth wide open as they struggled to understand what just happened.

The Crown Prince locked the cell and looked at the guards who were standing there shocked.

"Listen carefully! From today onwards, the Second Prince will be a prisoner here. You need to take care of his security and make sure that he doesn't come out until further orders," the Crown Prince said.

"Yes, Your Highness!" The guards hurriedly replied. Although they found the whole situation to be weird, they still nodded their heads and decided to carry out the order up the letter.

Chapter 337 - 337: He Lied To Me

"Use the time you're going to spend here wisely and think about your wrongdoings. I hope that you'll be a better person when you come out," The Crown Prince said to the Second Prince before he left.

Only the Second Prince remained inside the cell. Even the guards didn't go near him. They weren't sure if they should treat him as a Prince or as a prisoner now.

"Is the Second Prince really a prisoner now? Should we treat him like a Prince or as a prisoner?" One of the guards whispered to his partners.

"Even I'm not sure. This might be temporary after all. Let's treat him with respect, but don't give him any facilities inside the prison. Let him live the life of a prisoner for as long as he's inside," Another guard replied.

The other guards nodded their heads in affirmation at the suggestion and got back to guarding the place.

5 minutes had passed since the Crown Prince left the place when the Second Prince spoke, alerting the guards.

"Guards!" The Second Prince called out.

Everyone just looked at each other blankly.

"You go there,"

"No to go listen to him,"

"You're closest to him, so you go,"

They all kept telling each other since none of them wanted to deal with the Second Prince.

"Guards!" The Second Prince called out again.

"Stop wasting time! Let's all go together,"

They all decided to go together.

They all walked together and stood in front of the Prince's cell.

"Yes, Your Highness," They said.

"Is my brother gone?" The Second Prince asked.

"Ah, Yes. The Crown Prince has left this place," One of the guards replied.

"Oh, Good. Now open this cell for me. Let me leave this place," The Second Prince ordered the guards.

"T-this can't be done, Your Highness. It's the Crown Prince's orders. He ordered us that you are to be treated like a prisoner. We can't let you out," The guard said.

The Second Prince was stunned and couldn't find words to speak. He ultimately started laughing.

"Y... Good, very good. You passed!" The Second Prince said with a smile on his face, confusing the guards.

"We passed?" The guards let out in confusion.

"Yes. You passed. It was all a drama. I'm not actually a prisoner. This whole thing was like a test for you. We wanted to see your passion for your duty. You guys have passed with full marks. I'm so proud of you," He said as he glanced at them.

"This was a test?" The guards let out in shock.

" Yes. Now that you've passed, the test is over. You can let me out now," The Second Prince casually said. He looked as confident as he had always been.

"Ohh... so it was a test! I had a feeling that it was something like that. It was such a clever plan, Your Highness. Let me get you out now," One of the guards said as he stepped towards the cell in order to unlock it.

"Wait!" Another guard called out.

"What happened?"

The guards looked back in surprise.

"Don't open the cell," He said.

"Why not? The test is over. We can't let His Highness stay in the prison," The Guard let out.

All the other guards looked confused as well. They couldn't understand why that person had stopped him from bringing the Second Prince out.

"If you bring him out, we'll fail the test!" the man said.

"W-what? Haven't we already passed the test?" The guard inquired.

"I don't think we have! Can't you see, the Crown Prince told us that he's a prisoner. If you bring him out without the Crown Prince's orders, we'd fail the test,"

"You must realize that the Second Prince intentionally told us about the test. He wanted us to get him out. If we did as he said, we would fail. The Second Prince is role-playing a criminal. We can't listen to a criminal. If we do, we'd fail!" The man said as if he had discovered the secret.

"Ohhh, you're so clever. The test isn't over yet. Indeed, we can't let him out," All the order guards nodded their head.

"You idiots! I'm telling you that the test is over! Get me out now," The Crown Prince said.

"Sorry, Your Highness. But we won't fall for that. We fully intend to pass the test. Thank you for telling us about it though,"

All the guards thanked the Second Prince before they walked back to their post.

The Second Prince kept bellowing loudly as he tried to convince them, but the guards didn't listen to him.

Feeling defeated, he just walked back to a corner of the cell and sat down.

"Those idiots!" He cursed under his breath.

'Now how can I get the Ruler? I'd die if I can't go back with the Heavenly Ruler in 7 days. Why did my life have to be so bad,' He thought. He wanted to cry but no tears came out of his eyes.

'Oh right! He told me that he would hear me if I tried to spill his secret. It means that he can hear my words through the insect. I should inform him of what happened. At Least he wouldn't go crazy if I don't show up after 7 days,' He thought as he remembered the words of Long Chen.

He started looking towards his chest as he began talking.

"Hey, you. Can you listen? Well, I won't be able to get you the thing that you wanted. I tried, but I was caught by my brother. So please don't kill me when you don't find me after the 7th day. If you can hear me, please give me a signal through your insect," The Second Prince said softly.

He made sure to keep his voice low so that his voice doesn't reach the guards.

He waited for the signal after speaking, but he got none. He again repeated everything.

Long Chen was sitting inside his room and cultivating peacefully. Even though the Second Prince believed that Long Chen was able to hear him, in reality, he wasn't able to hear anything. He had just bluffed last time to frighten the Second Prince.

He spent 2 days straight in cultivation and didn't leave the room for even a second.

2 days had passed, and the Second Prince was still waiting for a hint from Long Chen confirming that he had received his message. He expected a shock on his heart like last time, but he got none.

He just couldn't help but wonder if Long Chen was actually able to hear him or was he just lying?

"Did he lie to me? He must have lied to me! He can't hear anything. Although I don't know about this Insect, it should be impossible that he could hear him from so far away. He must have lied," The Second Prince said in a low voice.

Even after saying that, he waited. He believed that if Long Chen was able to hear him, he would have given him a heart-wrenching pain by now. He had verified his notion that Long Chen couldn't hear him.

'It means that I don't have to worry anymore! I can just tell my brother and get out of this whole trouble! Brother and Father can think of a way to get this Insect out of my body,' The Second Prince thought as he excitedly stood up.

"Guards! Call my brother here! Tell him that I wish to meet him. I have something important to tell him!" The Second Prince let out loudly.

"Yes, your highness!"

One of the guards left the place in order to convey the message of the Second Prince to the Crown Prince.

"I can finally get out of this hell of a place! I'd be free. And when this Insect is out of my body, I'd get the boy imprisoned and torture him personally," The Second Prince said with a grin on his face.

Chapter 338 - 338: Exposing

Half an hour later, the Crown Prince arrived there.

He straight away walked up to the cell of the Second Prince without wasting any time.

"I was told that you wanted to talk to me urgently? What is it about?" The Crown Prince asked as he glanced at the excited looking Second Prince.

"Ah, Yes Brother I want to tell you everything today. Everything will be clear after that!" The Second Prince declared.

"Hmm?" The Crown Prince couldn't help but frown as he looked at the Second Prince

The second Prince began explaining without wasting any more time.

"I did it because of that damned Ins...Aaaaaa" He was talking when midway he started screaming loudly as he felt a heart-wrenching pain.

He fell down to the ground while clenching his chest as he continued screaming.

The Crown Prince just watched him scream, frowning.

"Is that why you called me here? To act in order to gain my pity? I'd tell you one last time. It won't work on me. I'm not getting you out of the prison without father's orders," The Crown Prince said as he turned back and left the place.

The Second Prince was left behind, lying on the ground. The pain had stopped by now and he was lying on the ground, covered in sweat. His heart was beating like a drum, as loud as it could and his breathing was heavy.

'He, He wasn't lying. He can indeed hear me. That bastard was testing me! He wanted me to talk so that he could punish me! Such a cruel person,' The Second Prince thought.

In reality, he had completely misunderstood the situation. The truth was that Long Chen could not hear him. But he still didn't let him go without any backup plan. He had told Cati to harm him if he tried to spill the secret to anyone.

The first time was to act as a warning, and if he still didn't understand, then he was to be killed.

After some effort, the Second Prince managed to stand up, though his legs were still shaking. He walked to a corner and sat there in silence.

The Crown Prince was walking back through the long hallway in the palace.

'That idiot! He never learns. Did he think that I was stupid?' The Crown Prince thought.

'Did he really think that I wouldn't understand that he wished to steal something when he asked me to open the treasury for him? He's a really big idiot who thinks that everyone is an idiot. Well then, now that he's out of my path, I can indeed live my life without worry,' The Crown Prince smiled as he walked to his room.

He opened the door and entered his room before locking the door again.

He walked to his bedroom and found a woman waiting in bed for him. The woman had long black hair and she looked like she was in her 30s. She was wearing the Maid's uniform as she lay on the Crown Prince's bed.

Most of her fair thighs were exposed for the prince to look at.

"How did you enter my room?" The Crown Prince asked with a grin on his face.

"Hah, Are you really going to ask that? If I can enter your father's room, how difficult can your room be?" The woman replied seductively as she stretched her arms.

"I remember. Wasn't that the day you failed so badly?" The Crown Prince chuckled.

"Hah, Are you mocking me? If it weren't for that unknown formation around your father's bed, that man would have been long dead. The formation not only protected him but also informed everyone of my presence. I had no choice but to escape," The woman said smiling.

"Hah, Indeed. All you could do was escape. If only you had managed to finish the job, father would be long dead and I would have been the king. That old man is so old, yet he won't die! I'm getting so tired!" The Crown Prince let out in an annoyed tone as he walked and sat near the girl.

"Hah, That man is indeed troublesome. I can't kill him in his room and he won't leave his room without the guards. This whole thing is getting problematic," The Woman let out with a thoughtful look as she sat up.

"Can you even do it? I'm starting to lose faith in you?" The Crown Prince inquired.

"I can kill him, but I would need to think of a plan. I would definitely kill him, no matter what," The woman asserted.

"Hahahaha, I wish you would. As long as that man is dead, I would be the king. I won't have to worry about him going crazy with old age changing his mind about me. I don't want him making that trash brother of mine the king," The Crown Prince replied.

"Then I can become a king and I can make you my queen," The Crown Prince said smiling as he glared at the bountiful breasts of a woman.

"Hah, I don't think that you have what it takes to make me yours. It's a hundred years too early for you," The woman chuckled as she said.

"Though I don't think you need to worry about him changing his mind anymore though. I heard that your brother is already in prison now," The woman said as she stood up and walked up to the mirror.

The Crown Prince's laughter echoed in the room.

"Hah, Yeah. That idiot tried stealing from our treasury. He thought that he wouldn't get caught. Such a stupid brother of mine," He said as he tried to control his laughter.

"That is strange though. Is he really so stupid as to steal from his own house for a whore?" The woman said with an amused smile on her face.

"Hahaha, Yeah. Of course, he's as stupid. He's the biggest trash I've ever seen in my life. Such an idiot," The Crown Prince let out as he lay down on the bed.

"If that's what you think. It has nothing to do with me though. All I need is to kill the King and complete the mission. I'll come to you when I've come up with a plan," the woman said before leaving the place.

"Idiot. Just wait till you kill the king. I would get my guards to capture you. No one would believe you even if you try to blame me for it. And after

you're in prison, you would have no choice but to become my woman," The Crown Prince muttered as a creepy grin appeared on his face.

He closed his eyes and began dreaming about his coronation ceremony.

Time kept passing slowly, and before long, 5 more days had passed.

It was the 7th day. The day when Long Chen was supposed to meet the Second Prince to get the Heavenly Ruler from him.

Long Chen stood up and walked to the shower. After having a nice shower, he got dressed and left the room.

He stepped down the stairs.

"Good morning. Are you going out? I haven't seen you in such a long time?" The receptionist asked as Long Chen got near her.

"Yeah, I was cultivating. I got tired so I decided to have a walk outside and probably get some of that tasty wine once again. I'll see you later," Long Chen replied to her.

"Oh, Have fun," The receptionist wished Long Chen luck.

Long Chen left the hotel and walked towards the Pleasure Inn.

As he already remembered the path, he got there much faster this time.

Long Chen entered the place and noticed that the place was more crowded today. There were many men inside the place, being entertained by the girls.

Long Chen walked to one of the girls and asked.

"Has the Second Prince come here today?" Long Chen asked.

Chapter 339 - 339: Infiltrating The Palace

The girls looked at him weirdly as if they were looking at an idiot as they heard his question.

"I remember you, aren't you the friend of the 2nd Prince that came to meet him last month?" A woman walked closer to him and held his hand as she pulled him towards a room.

She took Long Chen inside the room and closed the door.

"To be the Second Prince's friend, you must not be a simple person. Let me service you for the day," The girl said as she walked closer to him.

Before Long Chen could even react, she took her top off and exposed her bare breast before him.

"That's not what I'm here for. I'm here to meet the Second Prince. We had decided to meet here today," Long Chen said as he sat on the bed.

He didn't act flustered at the sight of breasts and acted casual as if there was nothing that affected him. He looked straight at her as he talked.

The girl smiled as she walked towards Long Chen.

She sat beside him as she brought her chest closer to him. Long Chen could feel her soft chest sticking closer to his arms.

"Do you really not know?" She whispered in his ears.

"Don't know what?" Long Chen asked. The girl didn't reply and just pushed his chest as she made him lie down on the bed. She climbed on top of him.

She brought her lips closer to his face. Her chest stuck closer to his chest.

"The Second Prince has been put in prison. Everyone in the city knows it. It doesn't look like he'll be coming out soon," She said before she brought her face forward.

Her lips met Long Chen's lips, but instead of enjoying it, Long Chen rolled over. He was now lying on top of her as he separated his mouth from her.

"He's put in prison? Why?" He asked in surprise.

The girl placed her hand over his chest as she rubbed it gently.

"I don't know what he did. The only news that came out of the Royal palace is that the Second Prince has been put behind bars. He's not going to come out in the near future," She informed Long Chen.

Long Chen couldn't help but frown as he fell in deep thought.

'Was he caught trying to steal? That should be the reason they put him in prison,' Long Chen thought.

While he was lost in thought, the girl raised her head as she kissed Long Chen once more.

Long Chen came out of his daze as he realized that this wasn't the place to think. If he stayed here for longer, he would just start feeling the urge to devour the girl because of his heart demon.

He hurriedly separated his lips from hers as he tried to move back, but the girl didn't let him leave. She had wrapped her arms around his back as if she was a dying person that wanted to hold onto life.

Long Chen could feel like things were getting dangerous and his worries turned out to be true.

His Heart Demon had woken up and was looking at everything. The lust inside Long Chen's heart multiplied many folds as his Heart Demon noticed that Long Chen was trying to resist his emotions and leave.

Long Chen finally lost control as he kissed the woman back.

For over 3 hours straight, the moaning voices of a girl kept echoing inside the room. Their intensity didn't decrease and only increased with time.

After 3 hours, Long Chen came out of the room and left the Pleasure Inn. He didn't look the least bit tired. In fact, he looked even more energetic than before.

He did not look happy though. In fact, he was quite annoyed at the moment.

"You made me waste so much time!" He cursed out as he continued walking.

"It was your desire. I only gave you a slight push," A voice appeared in his head. It was the voice of his Heart Demon that was able to reply to him after

it's evolution. It was as if his Heart Demon had gained sentience since it's evolution.

"I don't even feel like cursing you anymore," Long Chen said as he ended the conversation.

He started thinking about his mission. The Second Prince was caught, which meant that he would have to go and get the job done himself. He decided that he would infiltrate the Palace at night.

For now, he walked back to the hotel. He talked to the receptionist briefly before he walked back to his room.

He spent the rest of the day inside his room. He cultivated his Demon Monarch Physique and only stopped when it was midnight.

Long Chen walked towards the balcony of his room and jumped out as he noticed that the streets were empty.

He landed on the street as he started walking towards the Palace.

As he got near the palace, He started using the Law of Darkness.

Long Chen had received 2 skills when he comprehended law space. One was that he could teleport to any place within the hundred-meter range as long as it wasn't a place he hadn't seen before. It had limitations that he could only use it a limited number of times in a day and that its range was only 100 meters.

The Second Skill was Spatial Travel. He could open a spatial crack and travel anywhere within a 200km range. It also had a few limitations. He could only use the skill once in a day. He could only go to the places he has seen before. And the Spatial Movement rarely took him to his exact destination. Most of the time, he was sent anywhere within the 500-meter range of the destination he wanted to get out in.

Just like that, Long Chen had received 2 skills from the law of darkness.

The first skill was that he could disappear. It was called Shadow Transformation. He was able to disappear into the wind. Not a single person would be able to see him unless he had a cultivation that is one major realm above him.

The skill had a few big limitations though. The skill could be used at night only. It could only be used once in a day and that too for 5 minutes at maximum. This was a minor skill though.

The really strong skill was the Second Skill. Long Chen wished that he would never have to use the Second Skill in his lifetime.

For now, he used the first skill.

His eyes that were slightly golden in color had turned pitch black. He used Shadow Transformation and disappeared.

He used his Heavenly Demon Wings as he flew high in the sky and landed near a balcony.

He looked inside the palace through the window and as soon as he saw that no one was inside, he teleported inside.

Long Chen was able to sense the Heart Devouring Insect. Long Chen had a link with all his tamed beasts. As long as they were not too far away, and no barrier was surrounding them that disturbed the link, he would be able to sense their location.

Long Chen was still invisible as it had only been a minute since he began using the skill.

He walked through the long hallways of the palace. On many occasions, he passed right by the guards. None of them was able to see him.

Long Chen got to the underground cellar and saw a heavy metal door. He could sense that Cati was behind that door. The Shadow Transformation was over as well as it had been 5 minutes already.

He used his divine sense and noticed that there were 5 guards on the other side of the door. The Second Prince Rui Yu was also in a cell there.

Long Chen brought his Mountain Destroyer out of his storage ring as he prepared for slaughter.

Chapter 340 - 340: Kill

Long Chen felt like using his King's Sword here might be overkill as the Heavy Sword Aura of his King's sword might alert the guards.

Long Chen stepped closer to the door and knocked on it.

"Hmm? Who could be here at this time?" One of the guards asked.

"Maybe it's Crown Prince? He's here to bring the Second Prince back? It has been 7 days since the Second Prince has been imprisoned?" Another guard replied as he walked towards the door to open it.

He opened the door. As soon as the door opened, a kick arrived and landed on his chest that made him fly back. The guard crashed on the ground.

The other guards immediately brought their weapons out as they saw a man enter the cell.

Long Chen entered the place and locked the door behind him so that no voice could go outside.

He was about to say something, but before he could speak, one of the guards attacked him.

The attack targeted Long Chen's neck. If it had managed to get to his neck, there was a good chance that he would be dead.

Long Chen used his Mountain Destroyer to intercept the sword of the guard before it could get to his neck.

The guard attacked once more, but Long Chen didn't feel like giving him a chance as he teleported behind the guards and stabbed his sword in his chest.

"Kill the intruder!" The guards roared as the 3 of them attacked Long Chen at the same time.

Long Chen used his sword with one hand while he used a sword that was entirely made of Qi to match the attacks of the guards.

Long Chen stabbed the Qi sword in the chest of one of the Guards while he sliced the neck off of the head of another one.

He thrust both, his Qi Sword, and the Mountain Destroyer in the chest of the 3rd guard at the same time.

"Urghh..." Blood came out of the mouth of the guard as Long Chen pulled the swords out. The guard fell down to the ground. The ground was covered in blood.

In the Meantime, the very first guard that Long Chen had kicked had stood up as he ran towards Long Chen with his sword.

Long Chen didn't even raise his Mountain Destroyer. He made a knife made of Qi on his left hand and threw it towards the man.

The knife managed to penetrate the forehead of the last guard, killing him. The guard fell down to the ground. Till the moment he died, his eyes remained open.

Long Chen put the sword back in his storage ring as he walked towards the cell of the Second Prince Rui Yu.

The Second Prince was sitting in the corner watching everything with wide eyes. He couldn't believe that Long Chen was so strong.

He was terrified of Long Chen. His legs were shaking.

"Where's the key?" Long Chen asked as he stood in front of the cell.

"I-it must be with one of the guards. I don't know which one," The Second Prince replied after some hesitation as he glanced at Long Chen.

Long Chen looked towards the guards and noticed that they were all covered in blood. He didn't feel like searching for it.

"Well, whatever," He let out in an annoyed tone as he made a heavy sword with his Qi and swung it with full force.

The sword managed to cut the bars. Long Chen again swung the sword, but this time slightly lower.

An opening was made that was big enough for the Second Prince to come out.

"Come out fast! I don't have all day! I only have this one night," Long Chen let out in an annoyed tone as he glared at the Second Prince.

"Ah, Yeah!" The Second Prince was already scared of Long Chen and he didn't delay in the slightest. He didn't want to be killed after all.

He came out of the cell and stood in front of Long Chen like a good little boy.

"Do you have the Heavenly Ruler?" Long Chen asked.

"I don't. I had it in my hands, but the Crown Prince caught me. He placed the Heavenly Ruler back in the treasury and put me in prison," The Second Prince said.

"What is the cultivation realm of the Crown Prince? Long Chen inquired.

"H-he is a 2nd stage Earth Realm Cultivator," The Second Prince replied instantly, although he did stutter as near because of the fear.

'2nd Stage Earth Realm Cultivator? Before coming to the Dark Soul Sect, I was only slightly stronger than the peak Earth Realm Cultivators. Despite having most of my strength sealed, I would be able to handle him. I've grown stronger since then as well,' Long Chen thought.

"Take me to his room," Long Chen ordered him.

"Y-yes!" The Second Prince walked towards the exit as Long Chen followed him.

"Act casual and walk with confidence. You're not a thief. Act as if you have been freed and you're back to being the Second Prince. Don't look back!" Long Chen kept giving his suggestions as he saw the Second Prince walking like a thief as if he was trying to not get seen by the guards.

The Second Prince followed Long Chen's orders and started walking proudly.

As he walked through the hallways, he passed in front of a lot of guards and maids.

They all greeted the Second Prince.

'Hmm? The Second Prince is out? They must have freed him. He's a royal after all,' They thought on the inside.

The Second Prince couldn't help but wonder why the guards didn't ask who Long Chen was. It was as if the guards couldn't see Long Chen. He wanted to ask if Long Chen was a ghost, but he didn't dare to ask.

The truth was that Long Chen was using the law of Illusion to hide his presence as he used the illusion of him not being there.

Fortunately, they didn't have guards coming from 2 different sides as he wouldn't be able to cast his Illusion on both of them. He would have no choice but to kill them.

After over 20 minutes, the Second Prince and Long Chen got to the room of the Crown Prince.

"This is the room of my brother," The Second Prince said.

The room had no windows or anything thus Long Chen couldn't teleport directly inside.

"Knock on the door and enter the room. Keep him occupied in talk," Long Chen said to the Second Prince.

"What would I say if he asked how I came out?" The Second Prince asked.

"Just tell him that you fooled the guards and they let you out. Make an excuse for telling him a secret. Get him as far away from the gate as you can," Long Chen said.

"Alright," The Second Prince nodded his head, although he still didn't understand what Long Chen was planning to do.

He knocked on the door.

"Who is it?" After 5 minutes, a voice came from inside. It was a voice that belonged to the Crown Prince.

"It's me, brother. Please open the door;" The Second Prince responded.

The door was opened immediately.

"Yu? What're you doing here! How did you get out of prison?" The Crown Prince asked with shock clear on his face.

"I fooled the guards and had them release me," The Second Prince said with a cheeky smile on his face.

'Those idiots!' The Crown Prince cursed in his mind.

"Brother! I did all this because I wanted to talk to you! I have a secret to tell you!" the Second Prince said in a low tone.

"What secret?" The Crown Prince inquired.

"I can't talk here as someone might hear. Let's get inside," The Second Prince said. He acted as if he was actually worried that someone might hear them.

"Alright. Come inside," The Crown Prince said as he stepped back.

Chapter 341 - 341: Dealing With The Crown Prince

The Crown Prince stepped back and allowed the Second Prince to enter, but he didn't realize that he had allowed Long Chen to enter as well.

He wasn't able to see Long Chen as he was under the illusion that Long Chen wasn't there.

"Say what you wanted to say," The Crown Prince asked as he locked the door.

"Well, ah. Let's sit down first. This might take some time," The Second Prince said as he pointed towards the chairs that were present inside the hall.

"Alright," The Crown Prince said.

He walked to the chair and sat on it. The Second Prince sat on the chair in front of him.

"Tell me what you wanted to say now," The Crown Prince asked again.

"Well, I just want to..." The Second Prince was wondering as to what he could say when he heard a whisper in his ears. It was Long Chen that was speaking.

Long Chen told the Second Prince what to say.

"Well, brother. The thing is that I'm about to die," The Second Prince said.

"What the heck are you talking about? Do you want to kill yourself?" The Crown Prince asked with a frown.

"No. I don't want to kill myself. I want to live brother, but I won't be able to live if you don't let me take the Heavenly Ruler," The Second Prince said as tears appeared in his eyes.

"Tell me straight away. Don't speak nonsense," The Crown Prince didn't look like he was the least bit affected by the tears of the Second Prince.

"There's a poisonous insect inside my heart. Someone placed it there to force me to get the Heavenly Ruler for them. If I don't get the Heavenly Ruler, I would be killed by that insect. Please, Brother. Let me take the Heavenly Ruler peacefully. It's better for everyone," The Second Prince said.

'He'll die? That might even be better,' The Crown Prince thought, but he didn't let his thoughts show on his face.

"Are you threatening me? Why should I care if you were to die? I'm not letting you take anything from inside that place. Stand up. I'm taking you back to the cell," The Crown Prince said as he stood up.

"Oh well, I tried the peaceful path," A voice appeared from nearby that shocked the Crown Prince.

Before he could speak anything, he felt a sharp pain course through his body. He looked down and realized that his right hand was lying on the ground. It had been cut off.

Just as he was about to scream, his other hand was cut off as well. He couldn't help but fall down to the ground as he screamed loudly.

Long Chen didn't care for his screaming either as he had already found out from the Second Prince that the room of the Crown Prince was soundproof. No amount of sound would be able to leave this room.

Long Chen's Illusion stopped automatically. It had been a long time since he had been using it.

He had almost reached his limit, but he didn't care at the moment. He had already made the Crown Prince incapable to do anything.

He wouldn't be worried even if the Crown Prince was able to use his hands as he was confident in his strength, but he still chose the easy route.

"W-who are you?" The Crown Prince shrieked as he glared at Long Chen.

"I'm just someone that really wants the Heavenly Ruler. You should've heard your brother's suggestion," Long Chen said smilingly.

He stepped towards the man with his Qi Sword.

"Stop! You can get the Heavenly Ruler. There's no need to kill my brother! Please leave him alive," the Second Prince called out from behind in an effort to stop Long Chen.

Long Chen looked back for an instant.

"Why would I do that? I cut his hands off. Our enmity is already established. Why should I leave him alive now? So that he could plan revenge? I'm not afraid, but I don't want insects coming after me," He said as he kicked the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince flew off and crashed on the wall.

He coughed out a mouthful of blood as he glared at Long Chen. He opened his mouth to speak.

"I'll kill..."

Before he could even finish his sentence, a sword came and penetrated his heart. Just to be sure, Long Chen swung his sword once more and sliced the head off the body.

The Second Prince was standing behind with a horrified look on his face as he watched the Crown Prince being killed brutally.

For a moment, he couldn't even believe his eyes.

"Which hand?" He heard a voice that brought him out of his daze.

"Huh?" He let out with a confused look on his face.

"Which of his hands open the door of the Treasury?" Long Chen repeated the question.

"Right hand," The Second Prince let out with a blank look on his face.

"Good. Wait here, I'll be right back," Long Chen said as he picked the right hand of the Crown Prince and placed that in his storage ring.

He walked towards the bedroom of the Crown Prince and started looking in his wardrobe. He chose some of the clothes that he liked and wore them.

He was wearing the clothes of the Crown Prince as he brought something out of his storage ring.

It looked like a mask that he placed on his face.

It was the item that Long Chen had found when he killed his cousin Long Su at the beginning of his journey in this strange new world.

Long Chen placed the mask on his face and changed his looks. He now looked exactly like the Crown Prince.

No one could spot the difference between their faces. Only the body build had a slight difference, but it was so minor that no one would even notice it.

Long Chen looked at himself in the mirror and adjusted the clothes properly before he left the room.

The Second Prince was still standing there, looking at the body of his brother. He was feeling sad that his brother had died, but he cared more for his life at the moment.

He couldn't blame himself either as he had told his brother the truth. If his brother had believed in his words and gave him the Heavenly Ruler, he would have been alive.

"Let's go. Take me to the treasury," Long Chen came out of the room and said to the Second Prince.

The Second Prince turned back and his eyes opened wide in shock as he saw Long Chen.

"Brother? How are you alive?" He exclaimed in shock as he took a step back.

"I'm not your brother, you idiot. Stop wasting time and take me to the treasury. I only have this night to take care of things," Long Chen said in an annoyed tone.

"Ah, It's you?" The Second Prince let out loud.

He had so many questions in his mind, but he didn't dare to ask. He could already feel that Long Chen was getting annoyed because of the delay.

He hurriedly walked towards the door and left the room. Long Chen followed after him.

Long Chen and the Second Prince Rui Yu walked through the hallways of the palace. So many guards and maids saw them, but no one found anything strange. They all felt like it was the Crown Prince and the Second Prince walking together.

They all assumed that the Second Prince was forgiven for whatever he had done. The Crown Prince didn't look angry from the Second Prince anymore.

In less than 10 minutes, they got to the treasury. Since the King was so confident in his treasury and its safety, he didn't place any guards here.

Chapter 342 - 342: Against The King

The King believed that no one would be able to enter his treasury without his permission. It was the world's safest place in his eyes.

Long Chen was glad that there were no guards here as he would just have to kill more people if there were.

He stopped in front of the door and observed it carefully. He noticed the small formation on the door.

Although Long Chen knew nothing about the formation, he was able to see that the formation looked quite complex.

He brought the hand of the Crown Prince out of his ancient ring and placed it's Palm on the formation.

The formation scanned the palm and unlocked instantly as it changed color from red to blue.

Long Chen removed the hand and threw it back inside his ancient ring.

He pushed the door open and it opened without any effort. Long Chen entered the treasury.

The Second Prince also entered and picked up the Heavenly Ruler that was lying on the ground.

He gave the Heavenly Ruler to Long Chen.

"Now that you have received the Heavenly Ruler, let's leave this place before someone comes here," The Second Prince insisted as he looked towards the door.

"There's no hurry," Long Chen said with a smirk on his face as he saw the treasures in the place.

"I would only be stupid if I don't take everything that's here. The king is already so rich. He doesn't need these treasures anyway," Long Chen said with a smile as he started putting all the treasures that were here in his storage ring.

The Second Prince just stood there gobsmacked. He wanted to cry as he watched the treasury being looted.

These were the treasures of so many generations of the Royal Clan and it was all going to an individual, but he couldn't do anything. To him, his life was worth more than any treasure in this world.

The time it takes for an incense stick to burn was enough for Long Chen to empty the treasury. There were so many treasures there. Now that all these treasures were inside his storage ring, the room looked just too empty.

"Take me to your room," Long Chen said to the second Prince.

The Second Prince nodded his head as he left the treasury. Long Chen followed after him and closed the door.

As soon as he turned back after closing the door of the treasury, he saw the Second Prince just standing there in a daze.

His hands, arms, and feet were shaking as his face was covered in sweat as if he had seen a ghost. Long Chen couldn't help but look in the direction he was looking at and even he started getting worried.

He saw a white-bearded man walking towards them. The man had 20 powerful guards around him.

Long Chen was able to guess who that person was as he saw the Crown on his head. It was none other than the King of the Dementia Kingdom himself.

Long Chen also saw his cultivation. He was now sure that the man was a Sky Realm Cultivator. He was a Second Stage Sky Realm Cultivator. All the guards around him were peak Earth Realm Cultivators.

"Yao? What're you doing here? Why did you bring this prisoner here?" The king asked as he glared at Long Chen.

The Second Prince was so scared of his father, but he realized that if things went south at the moment, both Long Chen and he would be killed. While Long Chen will die from his father's hands, he will die because of the Heart Devouring Insect.

He knew that he needed to intervene and salvage the situation.

"I'm sorry, father," The Second Prince immediately got down to his knees as he began crying. The king frowned as he saw this.

"I fooled the guards and escaped the prison, but brother caught me. He's taking me back to the prison. Please stop him, father. I promise that I will never make a mistake like before," The Second Prince pleaded.

He hoped that his father would scold him and order Long Chen to do what he was doing and take him back to the prison.

The King looked at the Second Prince before he looked at the Crown Prince.

"You're not my son, are you?" The King said in full seriousness as he glared at Long Chen.

Long Chen couldn't answer either. Even though the mask changed his face, his voice was still the same.

"Capture both of them!" The king ordered his guards.

4 guards amongst the 20 stepped out and walked towards Long Chen with their sword.

The Second Prince was horrified at this turn of events. He had already started considering himself as a dead man.

"I was hoping for it to be over peacefully, but you just had to appear at the wrong time, right, old man?" Long Chen let out in an annoyed tone as he glanced at the king.

He brought out his King's Sword. With the appearance of his sword, a heavy sword aura appeared as well.

"He must be with the assassin that came before. There's no need to capture him. Just kill him right away," The king ordered.

"Yes, Your Majesty!" The guards responded.

All the 4 Guards ran towards Long Chen together.

They swung their swords just as they got near Long Chen.

Long Chen also swung his sword as well. His sword was about to clash with the sword of the one that was in front of him, but there were 3 others as well.

Three more swords were coming at him all from different angles.

A smirk appeared on Long Chen's face as he disappeared from his position and appeared behind the guards.

His swinging sword hadn't stopped and it managed to slice the guards whose backs were facing him.

Just like that, 4 guards were killed.

"I'm not at my peak, but I won't be defeated by someone like you. One time was enough for me," Long Chen let out in a heavy tone as he turned back to face the king.

"All of you, go! Watch out for his speed! Even we weren't able to see how he appeared behind them. Keep that in mind," The King let out as he ordered the guards.

The 16 remaining guards ran towards Long Chen with their swords in their hands.

Long Chen didn't stand still as he used his movement skill. His speed got much faster than it had been, but because of the restriction on his cultivation, it was restricted as well.

He was only just as fast as the peak Earth Realm Cultivator like the ones facing him.

Long Chen attacked with his sword which was intercepted by the sword of a guard. Sparks flew everywhere. Long Chen sneakily formed a Qi Blade and stabbed it in the heart of the guard.

The King saw the strange skill of Long Chen and he couldn't help but frown.

He still didn't interfere in the battle. He wanted Long Chen to expose all his tricks even if all his guards had to lose their lives.

For him, his life mattered the most. The guards were just tools that could be used and thrown out when needed.

In a short time, Long Chen had killed 4 more guards. There were only 11 left now, but they had surrounded Long Chen from all sides.

8 guards attacked Long Chen from all directions while 3 stayed in their position.

Long Chen again used teleport as he appeared 100 meters away from the guards.

"7 Forms of Saint Sword: 5th form- Chaos!" Long Chen let out as he swung his sword in full force.

A devastating arc of light left his sword and advanced towards the guards that were all standing where Long Chen had been previously.

Before they could even react, the arc of light passed through their body. Their bodies were cut in half. They couldn't even close their eyes when they died.

The ground was already covered in blood.

The King's frown just got deeper.

Only 3 guards were left. They all just stood there in a daze as they saw their partners being killed. They had already lost all their courage to battle. Long Chen managed to kill all of them without any resistance.

"I guess it's only you left now. I must say, I didn't expect that you would just stand there and watch your men get slaughtered. I guess you're indeed a king. Were you trying to see my secrets before you make your move?" Long Chen said smilingly.

"I will say, You're indeed strong. You must be a hundred-year-old ghost," The king let out. He used an old anecdote that Long Chen didn't understand in the least.

"Sigh, I'm not a ghost and you can't turn me into one either," Long Chen replied as he firmly gripped his sword.

He had made a decision in his mind.

'I won't be defeated, even if I have to use my Second Darkness skill!'

Chapter 343 - 343: Nine Swords Destruction

"You do know how to be proud. Too bad that your pride will be your downfall today," The King said as he brought his weapon out of his storage ring.

It was a silver color hammer. From first glance, Long Chen had recognized that it was an Earth Grade treasure.

Long Chen didn't attack and instead started speaking.

"Let me ask you a question first. Do you think..." Long Chen asked, but before completing his sentence, he disappeared from his position as he appeared behind the king and swung his sword towards the King's neck.

The King's reaction was much faster as he turned back and used his hammer to stop the sword.

Both the weapons clashed, but the difference between their strength was just too much.

Because of Long Chen's power being restricted, he wasn't able to use his full strength. He was pushed back 10 steps, but he wasn't harmed as his body was still quite strong.

"I can't win, I'll go then," Long Chen smiled as he started running away.

That is what the king saw, but in reality, Long Chen was still standing there and he had begun using his law of Illusion on the king.

He had already used the law of Illusion a lot today, and he was sure that he wouldn't be able to keep it up for long. Still, he did hope that the King would fall for his trick and chase after the Illusion.

He had planned that when he would reach near him, Long Chen would attack him with his sword.

He had tried something similar on Lang Jing during their first fight, but it had failed. Lang Jing was too sharp and his senses were too amazing. Long Chen was caught, but he did hope that the King won't be like that.

The King didn't have the resources and skills of the Dark Soul Sect, he wasn't even as strong in cultivation as Lang Jing.

Long Chen was sure that if his cultivation wasn't restricted, he would not have such a hard time in this battle. He would have been able to match the King, even though barely.

The King did fall for the trick as he chased after the illusion that was running away from him.

In no time, he had reached in front of the real Long Chen who was waiting eagerly.

As soon as the King got near him, Long Chen swung his sword. The sword cut the neck of the king and separated his head from his body, but Long Chen didn't look happy.

He saw the king standing 10 meters away from him. There was a scratch on his neck that was bleeding, but it was only a minor injury.

"I must say, you almost got me. I lost my life-saving treasure because of you, but I did survive. You won't survive though. You must pay for my treasure with your life!" The King said as he glared at Long Chen.

The King had a life-saving Jade in his pocket that had been passed down from generations in the Rui Clan. It was a treasure that was always in an active state. As soon as the person that was protected by the treasure, it would get to work.

As soon as a life-threatening attack would break his defenses and touch his body, he would be teleported to a nearby place while a clone would be left behind.

Unfortunately, it was a one-time use item. As soon as its effect was activated to save a life, the treasure would be destroyed. Long Chen's attack killed the useless clone, not the real King and he realized that.

Even though the treasure activated, Long Chen was still able to give him a wound.

Without waiting for the King to attack, he teleported behind him as he attacked with his sword. His attack was again intercepted, but he made a Qi Knife and threw it towards the King's chest.

The King didn't try to stop the knife and let it hit his chest, but he wasn't injured.

"My armor is Earth Grade treasure. It automatically projects my chest against weapons of lower grade. You can't do anything to me," The King sarcastically said.

"Vajra Finger!" He called out as he used his left-hand finger to strike Long Chen, but Long Chen once again used his teleportation and changed his location. He appeared behind the king and threw a Qi knife towards his neck this time.

He didn't wait there as he knew that the King would intercept the Qi Knife, that's why he teleported once again and appeared on the other side and attacked with his sword.

At the moment, 2 attacks were coming towards the king. One was the Qi Knife, coming towards his neck while the other one was the King's Sword coming towards his chest.

Long Chen was sure that his King's Sword would be able to penetrate an Earth Grade armor.

The King also seemed to have sensed the sword's power. He realized that he was in a big problem.

He decided to use his hammer to protect his neck that was most important, while he moved his body to dodge the Sword.

His speed was quite fast as he took care of the Qi Knife, but he still wasn't able to dodge the Sword completely.

Although he did manage to protect his heart that was targeted by Long Chen, the sword did manage to penetrate his chest. The sword missed King's vital organs by a small distance only.

The King moved back and the sword was removed from his chest.

His chest had started bleeding, but as his cultivation was high, he didn't show the least bit of pain on his face.

"Good! Very Good! You dared to harm our Royal Body? I'd let you see the real meaning of pain when we slaughter you," The King laughed hysterically as he glared at Long Chen.

"Nine Swords Destruction!" The King roared loudly. The Shadow of 9 swords could be seen appearing over his head that kept getting bigger.

"You like to dodge right? Let us see where you run to now!" The King said as the swords advanced towards Long Chen.

Long Chen used teleport just when the sword shadows were about to strike him, but the sword shadows didn't stop. It was as if they had a soul and they knew that they had to kill Long Chen no matter what.

Long Chen threw his Qi knife towards one of the swords before he teleported once again and dodged the attack.

The Qi Knife clashed with the sword and immediately got destroyed.

"That knife was equal to the Initial Gold Grade weapon, but it was destroyed. Just how powerful are those sword shadows?" Long Chen muttered.

He was constantly chased by the swords without even having any time for relaxation.

He ultimately teleported right in front of the king and when the sword shadows got there, he instantly teleported 100 meters away.

"Let's see how you like Xianwu's skill. 7 Forms of Saint Sword:5th Form-Chaos!" Long Chen slashed towards the King.

A powerful arc of light came out of his sword and advanced towards the king.

The Sword shadows dodged the king right before striking him and moved towards Long Chen, but they were met by Long Chen's strongest skill, the 7 forms of Saint Sword.

The Sword shadows clashed with the 5th form of Saint sword, Chaos, and after a bitter struggle, both of these attacks were destroyed.

Long Chen had used so much Qi during this and he realized that if things keep going on like this, he would end up losing this battle. He had already used most of his Qi.

If he lost all his Qi, he would have no choice but to run away or use the 2nd darkness skill which he didn't want to use unless he absolutely had to.

Right at that moment when Long Chen's attention was diverted, he sensed danger as a hammer flew towards him, but it was too late now.

The hammer struck his chest.

Chapter 344 - 344: Time To Die

The hammer struck Long Chen's chest, making him fly away like a broken kite as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

He crashed 200 meters away from the king.

Long Chen could feel that a lot of his Bones were broken, but fortunately, he hadn't died.

His Demon Monarch Physique had taken care of most of the damage, but the attack was just too powerful and Long Chen hadn't achieved a high enough realm in Demon Monarch Physique cultivation, otherwise, he wouldn't even be scratched from an attack like this.

He struggled to stand up and used his sword as support to stand up. His chest was aching and he could hear the sound of his bones making noise as he stood up, but he didn't let the pain show on his face, even after all that.

"Hah, I guess it has actually come to this. I can't win without giving myself to the darkness," Long Chen muttered as he saw the king stepping towards him.

He was just about to use the Second Skill of Law of Darkness when he heard the sound of claps.

"Great work kid. I hadn't expected that you would have taken care of my enemy and weakened him for me. You even made him use a protection treasure that I didn't even know he had. I hadn't realized that this old guy would have so many tricks up his sleeve, but then again he survived last time because of something similar as well,"

Long Chen saw a woman walking towards the king from behind.

"It's you!"

"It's you!"

Long Chen and the King both said at the same time.

"Huh, so my assumption was correct. You're with the assassin that targeted me a few weeks ago!" The King glared at Long Chen as he said.

"And you! Don't think that I won't be able to take care of you just because I'm injured!" The King told the girl that was walking towards him as he picked up his hammer.

"You old fool, you've lost everything. You're injured, your armor is destroyed, your life-saving treasure has been used up, your guards are dead and you have even used most of your Qi. I don't think you should be that confident," The girl said with a grin on her face.

"You witch, even if you dare to seek benefits at others expenses, you should see your strength first! Just like a single spark can create a blaze, even an injured lion like me can burn you to ashes!" The King let out.

"Hahaha, You old guy. Even in such a situation, you don't stop bragging. Today is the day you'll be punished for all your crimes. With your death, the sins of your clan shall be wiped clean," The girl said smiling as she took 2 knives out and held one on each of her hands.

Long Chen was still standing there with the support of his sword. He was astonished at how the situation had changed. The one on one death fight that was unfavorable to him had changed. A new member had joined the fight while giving Long Chen a way out.

What really shocked Long Chen was the identity of the girl. The girl was none other than the same girl that he had talked so many times since coming into the Kingdom.

The girl that managed the reception and took care of the hotel in which Long Chen was staying.

'She was the assassin that attacked the King previously?' He wondered.

He was quite surprised that she hid her identity so well. She seemed like such an average girl. Even he himself wasn't able to guess that she would be an assassin.

He walked towards the wall and sat down as he started restoring his Qi and healing his internal injuries.

The girl looked so confident that he was sure that she would defeat the king.

The fight between the king and the girl began. Although the king had been fighting for so long, his Qi reserves were still not depleted.

Even though he was injured, he was able to utilize most of his strength. But it still looked like he was not in his optimal condition.

Long Chen could see that the girl was definitely an expert from the way she fought. Surprisingly, her cultivation was also revealed at the moment. She was

a Sky Realm cultivator as well. Although she was only in the first realm, unlike the king that was in the Second Realm already.

'She must have an artifact that was able to hide her cultivation from my eyes before. But that artifact can't hide her cultivation now that she's using her Qi,' Long Chen thought as he looked at the girl.

"Your Majesty, we're here!" It was at that moment 10 more guards came there. They were all in Earth Realm as well, but none of them were in the higher stages of the Earth Realm.

Even the strongest cultivator amongst them was only at the 6th stage of the Earth Realm.

"Hah, My men are here! You can't escape, you witch! Last time you were lucky but this time, you won't be!" The King said smiling as he continued his battle with the girl.

Even though they were weak, Long Chen realized that if they all joined with the king to attack the girl, she might be in danger.

"Looks like they won't let me get rest in peace," Long Chen muttered as he sighed.

He used one of the strongest martial skills of the Dark Soul Sect and used his Qi to make a bow. He even made the strings of the bow with his Qi along with the arrows.

Long Chen shot an arrow after aiming at one of the guards. The guards were focused on the king and didn't see an arrow coming towards them.

The arrow penetrated the forehead of the strongest guard and killed him instantly.

The guards began searching the direction where the arrow came from, and soon their eyes fell on Long Chen who held a bow in his hand. Right at that instant, Long Chen fired another arrow that penetrated the head of another guard.

"There he is! Go catch him before he kills us all!" The guards said loudly as they ran towards Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't stop firing arrows and one after another, the guards kept falling down to the ground.

Before a single guard could even reach him, they had all died.

"Poor guys. Looks like they didn't even have shields or any defensive skill," Long Chen let out loud as if he was trying to mock the king himself.

"You bastard! You ruined everything again!" The king roared loudly as he glanced back at Long Chen for an instant.

The small moment of diversion was enough for the girl though. She utilized the opportunity and managed to break the defense of the king as she stabbed one knife at his neck, and the other one at his chest.

"Urghh," The king coughed out a mouthful of blood as his heart and neck were stabbed.

"Have a great journey to hell," The girl said, smiling as she sliced his neck off. The King's head was separated from his body. His headless body fell down to the ground.

The girl looked towards Long Chen after killing the king.

"Thanks, kid. You helped me so much. Without you, it wouldn't even be possible to complete the mission so soon," The girl said with a bright smile on her face as she stepped towards Long Chen.

"Now that I've thanked you, it's time for me to kill you. Even though you helped me, I can't let you live. Sorry kid. Tough luck," The girl said as her smile widened. She once again brought her knife out as she stood just 2 meters away from Long Chen.

Chapter 345 - 345: Wrong Place At The Wrong Time

"Now that I've thanked you, it's time for me to kill you. Even though you helped me, I can't let you live. Sorry kid. Tough luck," The girl said as her smile widened. She once again brought her knife out as she stood just 2 meters away from Long Chen.

"Sigh, I'm not your enemy. Why do you want to kill me? I even helped you?" Long Chen let out as he looked at the girl.

"I have my reasons. Just think of it as you being in the wrong place at the wrong time," The girl said with a grin as she threw a knife towards Long Chen's chest.

Long Chen didn't even have the time to react as the knife reached him, but it passed through his body.

She hasn't realized that she had become a target of Long Chen's illusion as well.

Right after killing the guards, Long Chen used his illusion to make her think that he was sitting there, but in reality, he had walked up to the Second Prince who had lost consciousness out of fear.

Without taking his eyes off of the girl, he brought Cati out and sent him back to the Beast Region before he walked up to the door of the treasury.

"I'm sorry, but I'm gonna have to take a rain check on the offer. I don't wish to die yet," Long Chen's voice came from behind.

The girl looked back and found Long Chen standing near the door of the treasury.

"Now if you can come inside the treasury, then you might be able to kill me," Long Chen smilingly said as he used teleport and teleported inside the treasury.

As he had already been inside the treasury once and it was within his 100-meter range, he was able to teleport inside it now.

"You idiot, do you think you can hide inside the treasury?" The girl muttered as she walked up to the body of the king. She cut off the king's hands and placed his palm on the formation to open the treasury.

As soon as the treasury opened, she saw that no one was inside. The treasury was completely empty and not even a single gold coin was left.

"He escaped. Interesting kid," She muttered as she closed the door.

"You owe me your life. I'll collect it when I find you," The girl said as she threw away the hand of the king.

"Hmm? Where am I?" The Second Prince gained consciousness and opened his eyes as he sat up. Unfortunately, he had chosen the wrong time to wake up.

As soon as the words left his mouth, the girl threw a knife towards him which penetrated his forehead. He was killed instantly without even knowing why.

It was at that moment, she heard the sound of footsteps coming towards her.

"Cheh, more pests are coming. Now that the King and their strongest guys are dead, I can kill them without worries," A smirk appeared on her face as she brought more knives out and got ready to battle.

A Spatial Crack appeared inside a city and a person came out of it.

Long Chen had used his skill Spatial Travel to go outside the city, but as soon as he came out, he realized that he was in the wrong place.

He was inside a bathroom and a girl was taking a shower at the moment. Her back was facing him, so she didn't realize that a person had appeared behind her.

'Not again!' Long Chen thought as he started wondering what to do.

The door of the washroom was near the girl.

'Fuck it. It's not like she knows me or something!' Long Chen thought as he walked towards the door.

The girl saw him and a scream escaped from her mouth, but Long Chen didn't wait to explain. He just walked out of the shower and left the room.

The room had a window, from where Long Chen jumped out and landed on the streets.

The girl left her washroom as she screamed. She had covered her body by now.

Long Chen brought the Sun Destroying Condor out of Beast Region.

"Time to go back," He muttered as he sat on the Sun Destroying Condor and ordered it to begin flying.

The journey this time had been oddly successful. He just learned the skills that he wanted to, he had comprehended the Law of Darkness and he had got all the treasures of the king. He was now as rich as the King of a First Rank Kingdom.

He took the mask off his hand. Although he had the mask, it had stopped working midway as the time had run out. That's why everyone managed to see his face as it didn't even work as a normal mask after its limit was hit.

"Alright. I still have 2 suppression pills so there are still 2 weeks left in my free time, I can easily get back to the sect in this time," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the 2 pills in his storage ring that were given to him by Lang Jing.

He traveled for 1 day before he called out Xun.

"Xun!" Long Chen said as he looked towards the sky.

"Yes, my dear disciple?" Xun said smilingly as she appeared near Long Chen.

"Hah, Who the heck is your disciple. I don't want to take a kid as my master," Long Chen replied as he started laughing.

"I only see one kid here and that's you," Xun said with a smile on her face.

"You girl, If I could touch you, I would show you who the real kid is!" Long Chen let out as he casually moved his hand towards Xun's cheeks.

He thought that his hands would pass through her, but it didn't happen. His hands landed on the cheeks of Xun and he realized that he was able to touch her.

It came as the biggest shock of his life as his mouth opened wide. He couldn't believe what just happened. He felt like he was dreaming.

Previously, he hasn't been able to touch her as she wasn't a real person. She was the spirit of the ancient ring and his guide. This whole thing should have been impossible.

Xun also looked the same. She was also in shock and looked as if she had no clue as to what just happened.

"I can touch you?"

"You can touch me?"

They both exclaimed at the same time in shock.

"Let me test," Xun said with a frown on her face as she moved her jade-like hand towards his cheeks as well and she was able to touch him as well.

"How is that possible? It should not be possible!" She let out with a frown on her face.

"See if you can touch him," Long Chen said to Xun as he glanced at the Sun Destroying Condor.

Xun moved her hand towards the Sun Destroying Condor and tried to touch it, but her hand passed through it.

"I can't touch it," She said.

"So you can only touch me. I have a theory. Can it be because of me learning the Law of Darkness?" Long Chen replied after thinking for a while.

"It should be. Although I know about the law of darkness, my understanding of it is limited as well. It's one of the oldest and one of the most mysterious laws of the universe. I can't claim that anyone in the world knows much about it," she said.

"It doesn't matter how it happened. Now I can show you who's a kid," Long Chen grinned as he reached out his hands towards her cheeks and started pinching it like he was playing with a kid.

"You idiot! Release me this instant," Xun said to Long Chen, but he didn't listen and kept having fun.

"You idiot!" Xun also reacted as she grabbed his nose.

Their playful fighting continued for quite some time as they both asked the other person to release them first.

Chapter 346 - 346: Harmful

After some more struggle, Xun started speaking first.

"Alright! Let's release together! 3... 2... 1..."

They both released each other at the time. Xun began rubbing her cheeks as she glared at Long Chen.

"Hey Xun, Now that you can finally touch something real, how does it feel?" Long Chen asked.

"It feels nice. I never thought that I would be able to touch anything," Xun said as a pleased smile appeared on her face.

"You'll be able to touch many more things when I become the strongest and make a body for you," He said smilingly.

"I'll wait for that day," Xun replied as she glanced at him with a bright look on her face.

"Yeah, then you'll be able to eat to your heart's content. Maybe you'll grow a little as well," He chuckled as he told her.

"Hmph, you're just jealous of my beauty," Xun snorted.

"Hah, maybe. Oh right, I completely forgot that I called you out for a reason," Long Chen said as if he suddenly remembered something.

"What reason?" She inquired.

"It's about the poison. You're so knowledgeable, don't you have an idea what I can do? I can't kill him without healing the poison and my strength won't recover without killing him," Long Chen described his problem.

"I can tell you that your poison problem will be solved as soon as you kill Lang Jing. As for how you'll do that, That's a whole different matter," She told him.

"The poison problem will be solved?" Long Chen exclaimed.

"Yup. There's something in the bloodline temple that will solve your problem as soon as you complete this trial," She said.

Long Chen fell in deep thought as he tried to analyze the meaning behind her words.

"Does this have something to do with the rewards?" He asked.

"You'll know soon enough. For now, you should focus on killing Lang Jing," She smiled as she told him before she disappeared.

"Sigh, Killing Lang Jing, that's easier said than done. I feel like I'm still not strong enough. I'll need to find an opportunity to get the better of him," Long Chen muttered as he tried to come up with a plan.

It took him one week to get back to the sect and he landed right before the mission hall.

He walked inside the punishment hall and walked up to the table of level 3 mission elder.

"Little friend, you're back quite fast. It's only been 5 months. As expected of a Demon Ranked disciple, you're indeed strong," The elder saw Long Chen and with a pleased look on his face, greeted him.

"Here is the Ruler and here's my badge. Can you transfer the contribution points faster? I'm in somewhat of a hurry," Long Chen told the Elder.

"Oh, Of course. I'll do it right away," The Elder didn't mind Long Chen's tone and picked up the badge as he started transferring the contribution points.

"It's done," He said as he gave the badge back to Long Chen.

"Thanks," Long Chen took the badge and thanked the Elder before he left.

He walked back to his courtyard and didn't forget to message Lang Jing that he was back.

He did that as he needed Lang Jing to send the suppression pills of the poison to him.

He walked back to his courtyard and knocked on the door.

Man Gu opened the door and looked visibly surprised to see Long Chen.

"You're back, Master. Welcome back. How did the mission go?" He asked.

"It went well. I don't think it was as troublesome as I was expecting it to. No trouble at all," Long Chen said as he entered inside.

"I'll have a rest. I'm quite tired," He told Man Gu as he walked back to his bedroom and closed the door.

He fell down on the bed and immediately fell asleep. The journey had indeed been quite tiring and he didn't rest much either.

As he was sleeping, A meeting between the Sect Master, the Grand Elders, and the black-robed Elders was taking place.

Lang Jing was here as well and he had received Long Chen's message.

"And that's how we know that it will be appearing near the North Moon Empire this time. I'm sure the other sects know about it as well and they'll send their teams as well. We will also send our team. The team of our greatest disciples. I've already made a list and Mu Zheng will be the leader of the team and Chu Miao shall be the vice leader," The Sect Master said.

"I object!" Lang Jing raised an objection as he raised his hand.

"What do you wish to say?" The Sect Master asked.

"Long Chen is a Demon Ranked disciple! And even if Mu Zheng had also passed the Demon Trial a few months ago, his rank is still below Long Chen. I think Long Chen should be the team leader," Lang Jing said.

"Elder Lang, the team leader needs to be strong. Although Long Chen is higher in demon ranking, Mu Zheng is higher at Strength Ranking. I think that Mu Zheng deserves to be the captain as well," Another Elder voiced out her opinion.

A few more elders supported the Sect Master's suggestion about choosing Mu Zhenfeng, but there were a few on Lang Jing's side as well that said that demon ranking had always held more importance in the sect.

"When it comes to strength, I don't think there's any doubt that Long Chen is stronger. Some of you guys might not know, but Long Chen had already fought Mu Zheng and Mu Zheng was defeated. You were there Grand Elder Chu, did this happen or not?" Lang Jing asked as he looked at Grand Elder Chu who was sitting beside the sect master.

"It did happen but..." Grand Elder Chu tried explaining, but Lang Jing cut his sentence midway.

"See? I think it's fully justified that Long Chen should be the captain. I'm sure the sect master will take the right decision regarding this," Lang Jing said smilingly.

"Indeed, that did happen. But from what I heard, it wasn't a fair battle. It was Long Chen attacking Mu Zheng out of nowhere," The sect master said.

'Hah, Is that so? I won't say that the sect master is lying, but I do believe that his disciple had lied to her about what happened," Lang Jing said.

"I'm sure you weren't there either, Lang Jing. You can't be certain as to what happened. And as far as strength is concerned, why don't we let them have a battle. We'll be able to see their Strength. If you don't agree, then I'll declare Lang Jing as captain," She said.

'Long Chen becoming the captain is the most crucial part of my plan. I can't let it go wrong,' Lang Jing thought.

"I agree. If he can do it once, he can go it 10 more times as well," He said to the sect master in a confident tone.

"Very well. They'll have a fight in the 3rd martial arena in 3 days' time," She said with an interested smile on her face.

Before Lang Jing could reply, another Grand Elder said.

"That's a good suggestion to see who's stronger, but it might be harmful to our sect. Both are the star disciples of our sect and I don't think that we should risk them getting seriously injured right before this special occasion.

"I agree with Grand Elder Min. If they fought each other after what happened before, I'm sure that one of them will be seriously injured. And no matter who is injured, it is harmful to our sect as we wouldn't be able to send the best team we could. This upcoming occasion is really important for everyone. There's no need to take this risk," Another Grand Elder said.

Slowly, all Grand Elders gave their suggestion and most of them agreed that the 2 shouldn't fight.

"But who should be the captain then?"Someone expressed a concern.

Chapter 347 - 347: Blood Essence

"It is a real problem. Long Chen is higher in demon ranking while Xu Ming is Higher in Strength Ranking. They are both great disciples of the sect,"

"Alright. Since all of you are so concerned about the sect and their safety, I have another suggestion," The Sect Master opened her mouth and said.

"As Lang Jing said, Long Chen is strong enough to defeat my disciple. Let them go take the Strength Ranking test once more. The one that is ranked higher will be the captain," The Sect Master said.

"Hmm, That's a good suggestion. They would be much safer that way. This is what should be done unless Lang Jing thinks that his disciple can't defeat Mu Zheng. In that case, there won't be any reason to go through this," Grand Elder Chu asserted.

"I agree," Lang Jing let out without the least bit of worry.

"Good. Both of them can take the strength ranking test in the next 7 days as they please. The one that's ranked higher at the end of the 7th day will be the captain," The Sect Master declared.

"Alright. That is all for today's meeting," She further said as she stood up and left the hall. The others left as well.

"It would have been better if Lang Jing had accepted my proposal to have them both fight. Mu Zheng would be able to take his revenge without any trouble, but there's no worry. He can do that after he becomes the captain as well,"

" He and Long Chen would be on the same team. There will be many opportunities," The Sect Master muttered as she walked towards the Hall where Mu Zheng was training.

She entered the hall and saw Mu Zheng taking a bath in the pool of blood. He was absorbing the blood essence in order to strengthen his physique even further.

"How's everything going?" The Sect Master asked as she smilingly looked at Mu Zheng.

"Everything is going great master. I've already achieved a breakthrough and my body is also strengthened. I should be able to match a gold grade artifact with just my Physique," He said smilingly.

"Long Chen is back in the sect, but you can't kill him inside the sect. You can only kill him when you leave the sect with him later," She told him.

"It's alright, Master. It doesn't matter where he dies. He will definitely die by my hands for what he did to me. Also, my skill has evolved as well. I should be able to destroy his Martial Soul and give him the same pain," Mu Zhang let out as he looked at his master.

"Good, there's one more thing. You'll need to take the strength ranking test once more. Long Chen will also take the test. The one that's higher in the ranking will be the captain of the team on the mission. Make sure that you give your best. Let the sect see the difference between yourself and Long Chen," she said.

"I will, Master! He was weak even before he hurt me by using despicable means. He definitely can't even dream to match me now that I have broken through," He said in a confident tone as he kept absorbing the essence from the blood.

"The Secret Art of Blood Desire is great, master. Thank you for imparting such a great art to me," He further added.

"It is indeed a great art. The only downside is that so many girls need to die so that the blood can be collected. It's fine though. There's no lack of mortals in the world. Just keep absorbing the essence and strengthening yourself," She said smilingly before she turned back and left.

Lang Jing had directly come to Long Chen's courtyard after the meeting ended.

He straight away walked inside the courtyard as the door was unlocked and went towards his room.

The whole place looked empty as even Man Gu was not there.

The door of Long Chen's room was locked and Lang Jing knocked on it heavily but the door wasn't opened.

In his frustration, he just broke the door and entered the room of Long Chen.

Long Chen was sleeping, but he woke up at the sound of knocking on the door. He had just sat up when Lang Jing broke the door and entered.

"That's the second time you broke the door of my room. Can't you wait for a little, I was just about to open the door," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

"I don't feel like waiting. It's about time for you to do something for me. The thing I need you to do will be starting soon, I'll tell you what it is later. For now, you just need to know that you have become the leader of the team of Dark Soul Sect," Lang Jing informed Long Chen

"Leader? And how can I become the leader? Long Chen inquired.

"The person that is no. 1 in the strength Ranking after 7 days will be the captain. Also, Mu Zheng has recovered. He will be fighting for the leadership as well. You need to know, if you don't become the leader, it will be quite difficult for you to complete the task that I need you to do," Lang Jing said.

"Alright. I'll take the 1st rank. But you must return my Devil Hunter Beast to me," Long Chen put forth a condition. He felt like it was the right time to do it.

"Alright. I'll return your beast to you if you agree to take the 1st rank," Lang Jing agreed.

"Great. You can leave without worry. The victory is already in the bag," Long Chen said confidently.

"Don't become overconfident. I don't even know how they healed his destroyed Martial Soul, but now that his Martial Soul went through the tempering of being destroyed and recovering, it would be much stronger," Lang Jing said.

"Also, from the confident look in the sect master's face, I can confidently say that it's not going to be that easy. She must have helped him get stronger But you can use your law of space and you shouldn't have a problem. Still, be careful," He further added.

"I'll keep that in mind," Long Chen nodded his head.

"Good. Here's the pill for you. This vial contains 4 suppression pills. You can use them for now," Lang Jing said as he left.

"Becoming the leader of the team of Dark Soul Sect. I'm 90 percent sure that it's about the same secret mission that the disciples of the Beast Hall were talking about. It would be such a great chance to go to the North Moon

Empire and deal with things," He muttered smilingly as he lay back on the bed after Lang Jing left.

After some more time, he sat up as he looked at the door.

"Sigh, I'll have to change the room again. He just had to break my door once more, didn't he? I might run out of rooms to sleep if things keep going on like this," He let out.

He stood up and placed the bed on his storage ring as he left the room and walked to the nearby room.

It was the last room in this place that still had a door. He decided to make it into his bedroom. He entered the room and closed the door.

He brought the bed out once more and started resting on it.

Time kept passing slowly and just like that, 6 days had passed. It was the 7th day today and the day of the final test, but the Ranking Hall was strangely silent.

No one knew Long Chen and Mu Zheng were going to have a trial here, but when they saw so many Elders standing here, they just didn't dare to come near the Ranking Hall.

Chapter 348 - 348: Against Peak Sky Realm

Long Chen and Mu Zheng, both had been standing in front of the Ranking Hall. Other than them, there were 2 more disciples there. Mu Zheng had constantly been glaring at Long Chen as if he wanted to eat him.

Rank 2 in Strength Ranking, Chu Miao was also there. She was standing behind the elders.

"Since Mu Zheng is older, he'll go first. Long Chen will be second," Grand Elder Chu stood before the Ranking board and announced.

Mu Zheng finally took his eyes off of Long Chen and stepped towards the ranking hall. He entered the place and entered the strength room while others waited outside for him.

Mu Chen didn't have any difficulty defeating the peak Gold Core Realm puppet and he only used one move to clinch the victory.

The next opponent was the Puppet that had the cultivation of Peak Earth Realm.

Even though Mu Zheng was way stronger than last time, it still took him 10 minutes to defeat the peak Earth Realm puppet. Last time, it had taken him 30 minutes to get the victory, but this time he was 3 times faster.

In no time, the final opponent arrived. The Peak Sky Realm puppet that was the opponent that no one was able to defeat. It was clear that a person wouldn't be able to defeat the peak Sky Realm puppet. Even black-robed elders would have difficulty, but that wasn't the mission of the test.

The final puppet was only placed there to see how long a disciple can last against it.

Mu Zheng gave it all he had, but despite getting so much stronger than last time, the results were still the same. He was defeated and the Sky Realm puppet wasn't even scratched.

Even though he was defeated, he fought for over 50 minutes before being defeated. Last time he had only lasted 10 minutes, so he was quite happy about his result.

He had already guessed that it was his victory. There was no way that Long Chen would be able to defeat him now.

He proudly left the Ranking Hall.

"He looks quite confident. He was inside for longer as well. Maybe he might break the previous score record this time," An Elder muttered as he observed the facial expression of Lang Jing.

"Indeed. I'm quite inexperienced but I can still see his confidence. I wonder how well Long Chen will be able to do,"

The Elders started discussing the results amongst themselves as they saw Long Chen step in the ranking hall.

Long Chen entered the Strength Ranking room and the entrance was closed behind him.

Long Chen brought his King's sword out and got ready to battle. Last time he had attended this test, he didn't have his King's Sword and he just battled with Mountain Destroyer, but today, he was fully prepared.

The first opponent was a gold core puppet, but before he could even start fighting, its head was separated from its body under the attack of the King's sword.

In less than a second, the first puppet was destroyed as it fell down to the ground.

The Peak Earth Realm puppet came out next and instantly attacked Long Chen without giving him a chance, but Long Chen used his teleport and appeared behind the puppet as he swung his sword and cut the puppet in half.

In less than 2 minutes, he had defeated 2 puppets and he had already got to the final stage of the trial.

The peak sky realm puppet stood in front of a Long Chen.

The puppet had 2 swords. One sword in each of his hands. Long Chen hadn't fought this puppet last time and it was his first time facing it, but he had guessed that the puppet was a dual wielder.

To not fall behind, he also brought his Mountain Destroyer out of his storage ring. He had also fought with 2 swords on occasions thus he decided to use 2 swords as well.

The battle began with Long Chen attacking first, but just before his sword could clash with the swords of the puppet, he used teleport and appeared behind him as he continued the movement of his sword towards the neck of

the puppet, but the puppet's reaction was much faster as it turned back and intercepted the sword.

Long Chen again used the teleport to create distance between himself and the puppet as he realized that his speed wouldn't be able to match the puppet.

"The Sky Realm puppet is indeed strong. It would be strange if he wasn't though," He muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

As he got into a sword stance.

"Seven forms of Saint Sword..."

He started circulating his energy to use his sword skill, but before he could have enough time, he saw the puppet coming towards him.

He didn't break his stance and just teleport to the other side of the room behind the puppet.

"Fifth Form: Chaos!" Long Chen swung his sword.

A bright and destructive arc of light escaped his sword and struck the puppet that was coming towards him.

The sky realm puppet used both his swords to intercept the attack, but he still failed as he was tossed back.

The puppet crashed on the wall behind. Fortunately, the walls were strong and they were able to bear the impact.

A deep sword wound could be seen on the sky realm puppet, but there was no blood.

Without wasting a single moment, Long Chen teleported near the Sky Realm puppet, and thrust both his swords down towards the chest of the puppet. He has read that most of the puppets were powered by the energy crystals that were mostly situated in their chest.

He wanted to break those energy crystals, but before his sword could even touch the chest of the puppet, the puppet used both his hands and caught the blade of Long Chen's sword just a few inches away from his chest.

Long Chen tried to push the sword further, but he wasn't even able to move the sword. His strength was much lacking compared to the Peak Sky Realm puppet.

Furthermore, he wasn't even able to free the swords from his grip as the puppet stood up.

The puppet kicked towards Long Chen's chest who was still trying to free his sword.

Long Chen saw the kick coming and he instantly used the teleportation. He barely dodged the kick by half a second. If he was even a second late, his bones would have been broken and he would be lying on the ground in agony.

The puppet threw Long Chen's swords away and picked his sword as he attacked. This gave Long Chen the opportunity to pick his swords and he did just that as he teleported near the swords.

The battle continued like this. Long Chen tried to defeat the Sky Realm puppet, while keeping his safety.

He was getting success in staying safe. It had been 30 minutes since the battle began, and he hadn't even been touched by the puppet whereas the sky realm puppet had sword wounds all over his body. Although the puppet was like that, its proficiency hadn't decreased even a little bit. Its speed, strength and defense had stayed the same since the beginning.

Even after all that, the victory wasn't in sight. Although he was able to graze the Sky Realm Puppet, he hadn't been able to deal heavy damage so far.

Whatever little bit of damage he was able to provide had all been thanks to his space law as he was outmatched in everything else.

Even at his full strength, he wasn't a match for a peak Sky Realm puppet, let alone now when his strength was restricted.

Chapter 349 - 349: Orion

Long Chen and the Sky Realm Puppet kept fighting for quite some time.

It didn't look like Long Chen had any advantage in the battle, instead, his Qi was getting depleted rapidly.

Fortunately, in the last 7 days, Long Chen had fully utilized his talent in alchemy and made Qi Replenishing Pills. Although those pills didn't recover his Qi fully, they still made him able to fight for longer.

The fight lasted for 2 full hours before Long Chen felt like it was enough.

As time went on, the puppet was only getting stronger. He wasn't sure if the puppet hadn't been using his full strength before, but he was definitely stronger now.

"There's no way Mu Zheng could have defeated this puppet! It seems impossible after everything I tried. Then that must mean that the test is about who could last longer in the test with the Sky Realm Puppet,"

"Mu Zheng spent only an hour inside the Ranking Hall whereas it has been more than 2 hours for me. I think I've won. There's no need to try to get injured. Even the Qi Replenishing pills aren't able to keep up now," He muttered as he moved towards the wall on the left and pressed the button.

As soon as the button was pressed the puppet stopped fighting. It went back to the room.

The exit door was open and Long Chen left the room.

He was able to hear the voices of the people outside as soon as he stepped outside the Ranking Hall.

"He spent more than 2 hours inside. I feel like it's clearly his victory," A Grand Elder Said.

"Not necessarily. Who knows, he might have been fighting the Earth Realm puppet for 2 hours and still couldn't win? Only the results that come tomorrow will give the clear picture as to who won," Grand Elder Chu said.

Long Chen walked up to Lang Jing and nodded his head calmly as if he was telling Lang Jing that it was his victory.

Lang Jing nodded back and left with Long Chen without talking with anyone.

"Huh, He knew that he was defeated and he was ashamed to stay here for longer. It's clear," Mu Zheng let out as he looked at Long Chen walking away.

"We'll see the results tomorrow and the captain will be decided. Then we can select the rest of the team members other than Long Chen, Mu Zheng, and Chu Miao" The Prime Grand Elder said as he looked at Grand Elder Chu.

The Prime Grand Elder was said to be the strongest amongst the Grand Elders. It was also rumored that he was even stronger than the Sect Master but he wasn't greedy for the Sect Master position. All he cared about was the Sect.

He was the only person in the whole sect that gave worries to the Sect Master. In fact, it wouldn't be wrong to say that he kept her in check so that she doesn't do anything wrong in the sect.

Only because of the Prime Elder, she did not attack or punish Long Chen herself when Mu Zheng was harmed. According to the laws of the sect, Long Chen wasn't in the wrong as he was a Demon Ranked disciple.

The Prime Elder would definitely have opposed her. Prime Elder was also close to most of the Grand Elder, so it was clear that they would have supported him as well.

All the Elders and Grand Elders left that place and walked back to their courtyards. They were all expectant for the results of tomorrow.

Lang Jing was walking with Long Chen. He hadn't said anything throughout the journey, but he opened his mouth as they got near Long Chen's courtyard.

"How long did you fight the Peak Sky Realm puppet?"

"Around 2 hours I think," Long Chen replied.

"Hmm, Good. It's your victory then. Come with me, I'll take you to your beast," Lang Jing said.

"Aren't you going to wait for the results?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"No need. If you're lying, I can still take back the beast. But if it actually turned out that you are lying, I won't just take back the beast. I'll kill him right before your eyes," Lang Jing said as a grin appeared on his face.

A Winged Lion landed in front of them.

"Let's go," Lang Jing said to Long Chen as he climbed on his Winged Lion. Long Chen also climbed on it.

The Winged Lion began flying.

Long Chen could see that they were going towards Lang Jing's courtyard.

'Was he hiding Orion in his courtyard?' He wondered, but the Winged Lion didn't stop near the Courtyard and continued flying.

After a few more minutes, the Winged Lion did come down to the ground and landed near a small building. It seemed like an abandoned building.

Lang Jing and Long Chen got off the Winged Lion and walked towards the door. As they got near the door, Long Chen noticed that the door looked similar to the door of the prison he was in when he first woke up in the Dark Soul Sect.

It meant that the Door was unbreakable, or at least unbreakable for a Sky Realm expert. He wasn't sure if a Heaven Realm cultivator could break it or not.

"What is this place?" Long Chen inquired as he observed the old building.

"Think of it as an old relic of the past," Lang Jing said smilingly.

Lang Jing opened the door and entered the building.

Long Chen followed after him.

As soon as he entered, he saw Orion sitting in a corner of a building. There was a barrier surrounding him.

'That barrier must be the thing that was preventing me from sensing his location,' Long Chen thought as he observed the barrier.

The barrier was disabled and Orion was free. As soon as Orion was free, it jumped towards Lang Jing in order to kill him, but it was too weak compared to Lang Jing.

Lang Jing easily caught Orion by his neck. Orion couldn't help but struggle fiercely, but he wasn't able to free himself.

"Put him down!" Long Chen let out loudly. He couldn't bear seeing Orion hurt.

"Your beast is quite good. Too bad that you have already tamed it," Lang Jing said smilingly as he threw Orion towards Long Chen.

"Hey buddy, Calm down. You're free now. I won't let anyone hurt you," Long Chen said smilingly as he looked in Orion's eyes.

Orion calmed down as he heard Long Chen and started looking back at him excitedly.

Long Chen had a fake beast bag in his hand and he pretended that he sent Orion in his Beast Bag, but in reality, he had sent Orion in the beast region inside his storage ring, but Lang Jing didn't know that.

Lang Jing and Long Chen both left the place and Lang Jing once again locked the door. They got on the Winged Lion that started flying and stopped near Lang Jing's courtyard.

"My Winged Lion will take you to your courtyard," Lang Jing told Long Chen before he got off the Winged Lion.

The Winged Lion took Long Chen back to his courtyard and left him there as he went back.

Long Chen entered his courtyard and straight walked back to his room.

"It will soon be the time when I know what Lang Jing wants me to do and what this whole thing is about. What could be so important that all these big sects are willing to move out? Can it be that a Heavenly Artifact is about to appear?" Long Chen thought.

He couldn't help but be excited at the thoughts of it. As Xun had already made it clear that his poison would be cured at the bloodline temple after he killed Lang Jing, he didn't have to worry about it.

Chapter 350 - 350: Meeting In Beast Region

All he wanted was to get even stronger. With the Heavenly Artifact, he might have a stronger chance to kill Lang Jing.

Even though he thought of the possibility, it was all just an assumption, so he didn't let it get to his head as he began his cultivation. He could feel that he was close to a breakthrough and soon he would be a 3rd stage Earth Realm cultivator.

The Beast Region was a place filled with heavenly herbs and dense Qi. Just staying inside the beast region was enough for a beast to get stronger, but this beautiful place was reserved for Long Chen's beasts as it existed inside his Ancient Ring.

At the moment, all of Long Chen's beasts were together except Orion that hadn't returned from quite some time.

Little Snow was still sleeping in the shade of the tree, the Heart Devouring Insect was lying on top of a leaf of the tree.

The Sun Destroying Condor was drinking water from the beautiful lake nearby.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino and the Snake Monarch were together.

It seemed as if Snake Monarch was telling the Dark Horned Armored Rhino a story.

"And then I told the Heavenly Emperor that I can't marry his daughter. She is too ugly for this Monarch. That poor guy started begging, but I just kicked him and made him fly back. He crashed into the wall," The Snake Monarch said proudly.

"Uaa," The Dark Horned Armored Rhino gave a light whimper.

"What? What do you mean that I don't have legs and you don't believe that I could kick him? This Monarch never lies! Which idiot told you that you must have legs to kick? I kicked him with my tail!" The Snake Monarch said.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino nodded his head.

"Hmm! Good. You're not as stupid as you look. Anyways, let me continue,"

"Then I left the Palace, but the daughter of the Heavenly Emperor came running after me. She told me that she will always wait for me and never marry anyone else," The Snake Monarch finished the story.

He looked towards the Dark Horned Armored Rhino and saw that he was stunned.

"You're amazed that I'm so awesome, right? That's a normal reaction. Your master was just like that when he saw me," The Snake Monarch said proudly, but he saw that the Dark Horned Armored Rhino stood up and started running.

"Hmm? What happened to him? Is he role-playing the daughter of Heavenly Emperor and trying to show me how he runs?" The Snake Monarch thought.

He looked in the direction the Dark Horned Armored Rhino was running in.

"Now who the heck is that dude?" The Snake Monarch let out as he saw Orion coming from a distant horizon.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino stopped before Orion and it seemed as if they talked about something before both of them started walking back.

Orion walked up to Little Snow. Little snow woke up and looked excited to see Orion. After talking to her, Orion talked to the Heart Devouring Insect and the Sun Destroying Condor.

It had been so long since he had seen them. Even Orion was quite glad to be out of that prison and back to the family he had left.

The Snake Monarch saw Orion coming to him and raised his head proudly as if he wanted to tell Orion who the boss was.

"Arr,"

"No, I'm not the new tamed beast of your master. Well, I am the tamed beast of your master, but this King is much more than just that! I'm the dark hand being the curtains," Snake Monarch replied to Orion.

"Arrg?"

"What do you mean? Do you think I can't be the Dark Hand Behind the curtains just because I don't have a hand? Why is every beast in this place so literal! It's an idiom! It means I'm the real boss! You guys might think that the fluffy is the boss, but I'm the real King here! I just let her handle the stuff for me," The Snake Monarch said proudly.

Orion made a slight sound as he looked at the Snake Monarch in confusion.

"How dare you ask if this King is crazy? Do you want to fight? Let's fight! I'll take you on and show you the real might of the king!" Snake Monarch let out angrily. His loud voice was enough to wake up Little Snow.

The Snake Monarch saw little snow looking at him and he immediately turned silent.

"Hmph! I'll forgive you just because you're new here!" The Snake Monarch said to Orion in a low voice.

Orion looked as if he had given up on trying to get close. He just walked back and sat near little snow as he began resting.

A day had passed and it was already morning. Long Chen cultivated all night long, but he wasn't able to break through. He could feel that he was just at the edge of a breakthrough. He was sure that today, he will break through to the 3rd stage of the Earth Realm.

It was early morning and he stood up as he left his courtyard. The results were about to be updated soon.

As Long Chen got to the Ranking Hall, he saw that most of the Grand Elders and black-robed elders were already there.

He walked to the front and realized that the results weren't updated yet. He stood beside Lang Jing.

He could also see the Sect Master. It was the first time he saw the Sect Master of the Dark Soul Sect and he found her just as the rumors described her. Pretty as a flower and fierce as a thunder.

The Sect Master saw Long Chen looking at her and she looked back, but Long Chen had shifted his gaze by then and he was looking at Mu Zheng who had a proud smile on his face.

"The scores are changing," An elder pointed out, attracting everyone's attention.

Everyone started looking at the board and they saw the scores of both Long Chen and Mu Zheng increasing.

Previously, their score wasn't even 300, but now it had crossed 400.

Mu Zheng's score stopped at 402, whereas Long Chen's score kept increasing. From 400, it got to 500 and then 600.

Long Chen's final score turned out to be 719. It was clear that he had won by a landslide.

"H-how is that possible! There must be something wrong with the ranking hall! He cheated!" Mu Zheng let out loudly.

All the other Elders looked at him as they sighed. They could see that he wasn't able to accept reality.

"Silence!" The Sect Elder scolded Mu Zhenfeng who closed his mouth, but his venomous gaze never left Long Chen.

"It's decided. Long Chen will be the captain of the team. We can all meet tomorrow to select other members of the team," The Sect Master said as she left with Mu Zheng.

"Good work," Lang Jing also praised Long Chen before he left with the Prime Grand Elder. All the other Elders departed as well, but most of them didn't forget to congratulate Long Chen before leaving. There were only 2 people that didn't congratulate him, Grand Elder Chu and a Black-Robed Elder whose disciple Long Chen had beaten previously.

Long Chen also left and walked back to his courtyard. What happened next had nothing to do with him. The sect can decide on the team and they will finally give him information about what this whole thing is about, but that was all for the later.

For now, he only wanted to go back and breakthrough. He was so close, if he didn't have to come here today, he would have stayed in his courtyard and already broken through.

Chapter 351 - 351: Arrogance

Long Chen walked back to his courtyard.

He saw Man Gu standing at the door as he got there.

"What happened? Why are you standing outside?" Long Chen asked.

"Nothing Master. I was just waiting for you," Man Gu replied. He seemed somewhat hesitant.

"Waiting outside for me? Did something happen?" Long Chen inquired as he saw the worry on his face.

"Ah, Young Master. I... I need your help. I know that I shouldn't ask you for help, but you're the only one that can help me," Man Gu replied.

"What happened?" Long Chen asked.

"My little brother, He's an outer disciple of the sect. He's just 12 years old. The thing is that... ah, he was bullied by a few Outer disciples of the sect. They broke his hands and legs. He is heavily injured. I did give him medicine and his condition is better, but..." Man Gu started existing.

"But you don't want to let the disciples that beat your brother go free, isn't that right?" Long Chen finished his sentence with a smile on his face.

"Yes. When my brother goes back, they will just bully him again. I even went complaining to the outer elder, but he didn't even meet me. I heard from someone that the disciple that beat up my brother is the son of the Outer Elder. Please, Master, only you can help me. I don't want to see my little brother get beaten again," Man Gu said in a pleading tone.

"Huh, so that's why I didn't see you for quite some time. You were taking care of your brother," Long Chen said.

"Yes,"

Man Hu nodded his head.

"Alright. It's only a minor matter. I'll help you," Long Chen said to him.

"Take me to where those guys live," He told Man Gu.

"Yes Master," Man Gu said as he started walking towards a certain direction.

The Outer disciples and outer elders lived on the outer edge of the sect. Their places and infrastructures were farthest from the core of the sect where Long Chen lived.

The arrangements of the Dark Soul sect were in a manner such that the Core Sect was in the center, the outer sect was the farthest and the inner sect was somewhere in between.

Long Chen had never been to the Outer Sect of the dark Soul sect.

It took him around 40 minutes to get to the courtyards of the outer sect disciples.

Man Gu looked back at Long Chen and Long Chen just gave him a look of confidence as if he was allowing him to call them out.

"Yao Li! Yu Manxin! Chi Feng! Come out right now!" Man Gu roared loudly.

"Who the heck dares to bark at our door?"

A door opened and 3 guys came outside.

All 3 of them looked like they were 18-20 years old.

"You 3 beat up my brother! It's time for you to settle the scores! As long as you promise that you will never trouble my brother again, I'll let things pass!" Man Gu announced.

"Hah, So you're the brother of Man Ling? I gotta say, you're even less impressive than your brother," Yao Li said in a mocking tone.

"Yao Li! I know that your brother is the Elder, but that doesn't mean that you can run rampant in the sect!" Man Gu said.

"So? What're you going to do about it?" Yao Li said in a threatening manner.

"He won't do anything, but I will. I've seen enough. If the 3 of you don't want to die, then start behaving properly," Long Chen said in between their conversation.

"Who the heck are you kid? You dare talk to us like that?" Yao Li said as he glared at Long Chen.

Long Chen usually didn't wear his Demon Ranked disciple badge and it was the same at the moment. He wasn't wearing his disciple badge.

He also didn't wear the clothes of the core sect disciple as he didn't find them good enough. No one told him to wear them either as he was a Demon Ranked disciple who was basically on a rank that was even higher than a normal elder.

Only the Sect Master, Grand Elders, and Black-Robed Elders were considered to be higher than a Demon Ranked Disciple.

The kids in front of him didn't consider him anything special as Long Chen looked even younger than them.

"It doesn't matter who he is. Let's just beat the heck out of him for talking to us so rudely," Chi Feng said as he licked his lips.

"Yeah. Let's teach this son of a dog a lesson!" Yu Manxin also said.

Long Chen couldn't help but sigh. In his eyes, these guys were already dead.

"Hahaha, Yeah. Go and break all their bones! Let him feel the pain of trying to act like a hero," Yao Li said as he laughed out loud.

Both Yu Manxin and Chi Feng smirked as they started walking towards Long Chen.

Yu Manxin was the first person to get to Long Chen as he punched out, but before his fist could even get near Long Chen, a slap landed on his face.

Long Chen's single slap was enough to burst his head off while his body fell down to the ground.

Chi Feng stopped in his tracks as he started shivering at the sight of Yu Manxin's body.

He couldn't even move as Long Chen walked towards him.

"Arrogance only suits the ones that actually have strength," Long Chen said as he gripped the neck of Chi Feng and crushed it.

Long Chen turned back to look at Yao Li who looked as if he had seen a ghost. He couldn't help but take a step back, but he stumbled and fell down to the ground.

Long Chen started walking towards him.

"Don't come near me! I have already informed my father! My father is an elder of the sect. He'll be here soon. If you did anything to me, you'll die a painful death!" Yao Li let out loudly.

Almost every other Outer Disciple had come out of their courtyard to watch, but none of them dared to help Yao Li.

In fact, some of the disciples were even happy now that Yao Li was getting punished. Most of them hated Yao Li as he was a big bully who always hurt others and didn't face any consequences just because he was the son of an elder.

They didn't know who that young man was, but they all wished that he would kill Yao Li.

"Your Father? Sure. Let him come here! I'll wait. I also want to see the father that allows his son to behave so atrociously in the Dark Soul Sect," Long Chen said smilingly, but he didn't stop walking towards Yao Li.

He stepped near him and grabbed his neck as he picked him up in the air like a toy.

"Y-you... St...op..." Yao Li struggled to speak. He was finding it hard to breathe as well.

He vehemently prayed for his father to get her at soon as he could. Only his father could save him from the pain as he had seen that not a single person here was willing to save him.

'I'll punish everyone that's here after my father kills this person!' he thought.

"Your father is taking awfully long. Are you sure that you informed him? He should have been here by now. Should I walk up to him instead? Tell me where he stays," Long Chen said smilingly.

"Y-you!"

Yao Li couldn't help but feel as if Long Chen was crazy. He was so eager to die.

"Did you try to say something?" Long Chen inquired as he tightened his grip on Yao Li's neck.

"You vile beast! Leave my son alone!"

Chapter 352 - 352: He's Master Chen?

"You vile beast! Leave my son alone!" A loud roar came from behind.

Long Chen turned back only to find a man running towards them.

The Man looked quite old. it seemed as if he was older than 60. He had a head full of long white hair, but no beard.

"You must be his father," Long Chen said to the man that had stopped just 20 meters away from them.

"Yes, I'm Yao Mu! Release my son right now if you do not wish to die!" Outer Elder Yao Mu said to Long Chen.

"Why should I listen to you?" Long Chen inquired with an amused smile on his face as he tightened his grip once again. Yao Li found it even more difficult to breathe now. His eyes were turning red.

"You bastard! You must be an Inner Disciple! Don't think that I can't punish you! If you release my son, I won't punish and I won't kill you. I have already informed an Inner Elder. He should be coming here soon. He'll take you to your punishment, but you won't be killed! If you don't release my son, you'll definitely die" Outer Elder Yao Mu said to Long Chen.

"Hmm. So I won't be killed if I release him?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"Yes! Your life will be spared," Outer Elder Yao Mu said.

"Oh, nice," Long Chen smiled as he looked towards Yao Li.

Yao Li saw that smile and felt a chill run down his spine. It seemed as if he was looking at a devil just before a slaughter.

"I'll repeat the same thing. Arrogance only suits the ones with strength or the ones that believe that they can survive," Long Chen said to Yao Li as he crushed his neck.

Yao Li died with his eyes wide open.

Long Chen threw his body away.

"See? I released him. I can live now, can't I?" Long Chen asked as he looked towards Outer Elder Yao Mu.

"Youuuuu!" Outer Elder Yao Mu's eyes turned red as he ran towards Long Chen like a wild beast and punched his head.

"Only a 1st stage Earth Realm. cultivator? Why doesn't anyone understand? It's so simple!" Long Chen muttered as he sighed.

He saw the fist coming towards his head. Although it was Elder Mu's fastest speed, to Long Chen, it was as slow as a turtle.

He moved his hand and easily caught the fist.

"You! H-how!" He exclaimed in shock as he found it difficult to move his hand. He wasn't even able to free his hand.

"Because," Long Chen muttered as he kicked the chest of Outer Elder Yao Mu, making him fly far away.

Yao Mu felt like his chest was broken as he coughed out a mouthful of blood before he crashed on the ground.

It was at that moment, Long Chen saw that more outer sect elders were coming towards him.

"Friends, this inner disciple came here and killed our disciple. He even attacked me! Kill him!" Outer Elder said to the other Elders.

Yao Mu's body and his face were bleeding and he couldn't even stand up, but he was able to talk. He wanted Long Chen to die and he thought that with all these elders, there was no way he could survive even though he was unusually strong.

The Elders didn't attack Long Chen, instead they all looked towards the sky.

Another elder was coming towards them on his flying beast.

Long Chen saw the clothes of the Elder and realized that he was an Inner Elder.

The Inner Elder landed on the ground and looked at Yao Mu lying on the ground.

"Elder Du, you're here! Please serve justice! A disciple from your inner sect came here and killed 3 of our disciples! He even attacked me! Please serve justice and kill that vile creature. He doesn't deserve to live in our great sect!" Outer Elder Yao Mu said to the Inner Elder Du.

Elder Du was an Inner Elder. He was just 40 years old. He had long black hair and a pretty decent face. He always looked serious and no one had ever seen him smile.

"Oh? Someone did that? I was wondering why you called me here, I didn't know it would be such a big matter. Don't worry. Now that I'm here, I'll handle everything. I'll deal the proper punishment," Elder Du said calmly as he turned to look towards the person that was standing in front of him.

As soon as he saw Long Chen, his eyes opened wide in shock.

"M-m-master Chen?" He exclaimed in shock as soon as he saw Long Chen.

"Yeah. Do I know you?" Long Chen asked in surprise. He didn't remember seeing a face like that.

"How can someone as great as you know me? It's just that I saw you from a great distance when you went to take the test for leadership," Elder Du said with a fawning smile on his face.

All the Outer Elders that were present there were shocked as they saw the man smile for the first time. They couldn't believe their eyes.

The condition of Yao Mu was even worse. He couldn't understand why Elder Du was talking so nicely to the kid.

"Elder Du! Why are you talking to that kid with so much respect! He caused so much destruction. You must punish him!" Yao Mu again said.

Elder Du turned back to look at Elder Yao Mu with a furious look on his face.

"You idiot! You dared to mess with Master Chen? Has your brain been eaten by a pig! You don't even know how to respect a Demon Ranked disciple?" Elder Du scolded as he kicked Yao Mu.

Yao Mu flew even farther before he once again crashed on the ground. His injuries that were already bad had grown even worse, but he didn't care about them at the moment.

He was more worried about what he had heard.

'That kid was a Demon Ranked Disciple? Master Chen, That's right! He should be the demon of the sect, Long Chen! What did I do! How could I be so stupid! Why isn't he wearing the badge!' Yao Mu wanted to cry and slap himself and his son for making such a big mistake. Now even his own life was in danger.

"Master Chen!" The Other Outer Elders greeted Long Chen as they joined their hands. They were glad that they hadn't attacked Long Chen a moment ago, or they would all be in serious trouble.

"Master Chen, that fool made a big mistake. How do you wish to punish him?" Elder Du asked Long Chen.

"There's only a single punishment, death. You must have heard, If small holes aren't fixed, then big holes will bring hardship. It's a similar principle. As soon as the enemy is killed, it's over. Otherwise, they would just keep coming back like insects in order to get their revenge," Long Chen muttered as he began walking towards Yao Mu.

'As expected from the Demon of the Sect. So ruthless and decisive. He isn't afraid of killing anyone,' Elder Du thought as he saw Long Chen's back. He couldn't help but praise Long Chen's decisiveness when it came to killing potential enemies.

Long Chen stood near Yao Mu.

"Please forgive me, Master Chen! I was blinded by my love for my son. I had eyes, but I failed to see Mount Tai! Please don't kill me! I'll never do this again!" Yao Mu said as he started pleading.

"An elder should be impartial. Your sect should be your family. We are in an Evil sect, that doesn't mean that you can let your son do unjust, while you turn a blind eye. That's how a Sect loses prominence. I didn't wish for any potentially gifted disciple to be harmed by that son of yours, that's why I came to punish your Son. Despite being an elder, you supported this behavior. Guilty," Long Chen said softly as he sliced the neck of Elder Yao and separated his head off his body.

Chapter 353 - 353: Selection

Long Chen killed Elder Yao Mu before he turned back.

He looked towards the kids that were outside. His single gaze was enough to send chills down their spine.

"If anyone dared to bully his brother, you'll be next," Long Chen warned them before he started walking back.

The Outer Elders wanted to talk to him and get close, but after seeing everything, they didn't dare.

Only Inner Elder Du ran after him.

"Master Chen, you must be walking towards the Core Sect, my courtyard lies along the way, how about you come to my place. I've just received a fresh batch of the world-famous Fragrance of Blossom Tea Leaves. The tea is said to be heavenly. I would love to host you for some tea," Elder Du said with a smile on his face.

"Hmm? Sorry, but I'm not free today. I just came here to help someone. Maybe some other day," Long Chen rejected the offer.

"Oh, alright. I can at least escort you back, right?" Elder Du said.

"Are you saying that I would need your protection to walk back?" Long Chen inquired as he looked towards Elder Du.

"Ah, not at all. Who am I to provide protection to someone like you. I just wish that I would be able to keep you company for some time," Elder Du said with a fawning look on his face.

"You don't need to go through the trouble. Just go back to your courtyard when we get there. Maybe I'll come to visit you in the future," Long Chen casually said, though he didn't mean it.

"Indeed. I'll wait for that day," Elder Du said, smilingly.

He accompanied Long Chen to the inner portion of the sect and left as he got to his courtyard. He did not forget to remind Long Chen to visit him though.

Long Chen walked back to his courtyard and entered with Man Gu.

"Thank you for everything you did for me, Master. Now my brother can cultivate in peace," Man Gu thanked Long Chen.

"Don't worry about it. Anyways, I'm going to cultivate. I'll keep the door unlocked, so if he comes again, tell him that the door is open. I don't want him to break another door," Long Chen said to Man Gu.

"Him?" Man Gu inquired in confusion.

"The person that broke the last 2 doors," Long Chen said in annoyance.

"Oh, you mean your master. I'll tell him," Man Gu nodded his head.

"Yeah,"

Long Chen entered his room and closed the door, but he did not lock it.

There was no benefit in locking the door as Lang Jing would just break it if he needed it.

Long Chen sat down in a meditative position as he began his cultivation that was already delayed quite a lot.

Long Chen had only cultivated for half an hour before he was able to break through to the 3rd stage of the Earth Realm.

He finally breathed in relief before he continued his cultivation once again.

A day passed, and all the Grand Elders and the Black Robed Elders were sitting around a round table. The Sect Master was also there.

"Alright. So it is already decided that Long Chen will be the team leader. Mu Zheng will be the vice-captain. We have 1 Ancient Token and we can only send 10 people from our sect to that place. I already have 4 names decided, and I wasn't to hear your opinions on who else to choose. Should we simply choose the top 10 in Strength Ranking?" The Sect Master enquired.

"I believe that the 4 names you already have are Rank 1 Long Chen, who is also Rank one in Alchemy Ranking and Demon Ranking. Rank 2 Mu Zheng who is Rank 1 in Artificer Ranking and Rank 2 in Demon Ranking. Rank 3 Chu Miao who doesn't hold any other ranking. Rank 4 Su Zhen who is now ranked 2 in Alchemy Ranking," Prime Grand Elder said.

"Yes," The Sect Master replied.

"Since we are going with Strength Ranking, you can choose Rank 5 to Rank 9 from Strength Ranking as well," The Prime Elder said.

"Why not rank 10 as well? We'll have all 10 people then?" The Sect Master inquired in confusion.

"I believe that we should include Rank 11 Dai Hu instead of Rank 10 Mu Mu," Prime Elder said.

"I think I understand what you're talking about. Dai Hu also holds the 1st Rank in Medicine Ranking. His worth is more than the Rank 10 Mu Mu. I support this suggestion," Another Grand Elder said.

"I support it as well,"

"I support it as well,"

Slowly, every elder started speaking. All in support of the Prime Elder's suggestion. Even Lang Jing and Grand Elder Chu agreed.

"Alright. The team is decided. Now we should decide on the one that will escort them. There will be other sects there as well and some righteous ones might attack our team. I believe that the other sects will send only 1 elder as decided between all the sects. We need someone strong and smart," The Sect Master said.

"Lang Jing can be the one," Prime Elder said.

"No, His own disciple is part of the team. Other members might talk about potential partiality. I believe that it should be Mi Yao," Sect Master said as she entered a suggestion.

"Mi Yao is back from her mission?" Prime Elder inquired.

"Yeah, she just came back. She finished the mission. The king that caused Mu Chan to be caught by the Beast Hall Elder is dead," The Sect Master said.

"Lang Jing, what do you say about this? Do you wish to go or should it be Mi Yao instead?" Prime Elder asked Lang Jing.

"It's alright. It doesn't matter much. Let her be the one to go. I believe the sect master won't allow me just because my disciple is involved. Just like I wasn't allowed to go kill the king that caused my disciple to get caught," Lang Jing said.

"Good. It's decided then. Mi Yao will escort the team," The Sect Master said.

"I and Prime Elder will call them tomorrow to explain the mission. You can leave," She said as she stood up and left. Everyone else left as well.

Lang Jing sent a message to Long Chen that he needed to come to the conference tomorrow to get the briefing about what they had to do. After the briefing by the sect master and the Prime Elder, he would be given a private briefing by Lang Jing about what Long Chen actually had to do.

Long Chen cultivated for the whole night and only stopped when it was morning. His cultivation sessions had been going quite effectively. In fact, the higher his cultivation reached, the faster his Qi absorption speed became.

He believed that after completion of the bloodline trial, his cultivation speed will increase even more.

Long Chen stood up and walked to the shower. He came out and changed his clothes to the newer ones before he left his courtyard.

He walked up to the Discussion Hall that was right beside the Skill Hall. It was a place used for important meetings.

Long Chen got there at the same time as Chu Miao.

"Hey there, Captain," Chu Miao greeted him with a grin on her face.

"You're also in this team? I guess I should've expected that," Long Chen muttered.

"Hey there!" A voice came from behind.

Long Chen turned back and found Dai Hu standing behind them. He was the person that took care of the drinking Establishment in the sect. He had treated them to free Spirit Replenishing Wine last time they went there.

Chapter 354 - 354: Divine Heaven Sect

"Dai Hu? You were selected as well? I thought they selected people from the Strength Ranking?" Chu Miao said.

"What can I say, I didn't expect myself to be chosen either, but I got a message to come here," Dai Hu replied.

"Get inside. It's not the time to talk," Long Chen told them as he started walking towards the Discussion Hall without waiting for them.

"Wait for us!" Chu Miao called out as she entered the Discussion Hall with Dai Hu.

As Long Chen entered the place, he saw that there were already 7 disciples inside. Amongst those 7, he only recognized Mu Zheng.

There were 5 chairs in 2 columns facing towards the front.

The chairs on the right side were filled, the 3rd and 4th chair on the left side were filled as well.

"I guess they are sitting according to the strength rankings," Long Chen let out as he walked to the first chair on the left side. Chu Miao sat on the chair behind him whereas Dai Hu sat on the last chair.

Not much time had passed when 3 more people entered the hall. The Sect Master and the Prime Elder were walking in the front. The 3rd person was the one that attracted Long Chen's attention.

It was the same girl that killed the King of Dementia. The one that wanted to kill Long Chen as well.

They walked to the front and looked at the disciples that were sitting there.

The girl's eyes opened wide in shock as soon as she saw Long Chen.

She couldn't help but point towards Long Chen as she called out.

"It's you?"

"Mi Yao, So you know Long Chen?" The Sect Master inquired.

"I met him in the Dementia Kingdom. Who is he?" The girl asked.

"He's the leader of the team. The 1st Ranker in a Demon Ranking, Strength Ranking, and Alchemy Ranking," Prime Elder answered instead.

"You seem surprised to see him, and not the good kind. Was your previous meeting bad?" He asked.

"Bad would be an understatement. She tried to kill me after I helped her kill the King of Dementia," Long Chen said as he stood up.

"Yao? Did you really try to kill him? You went there to avenge one Demon Ranked Disciple and you tried to kill another Demon Ranked Disciple instead?" Prime Elder looked at her furiously.

"I'm sorry, Elder. I didn't know that he was a disciple of our sect, let alone the Prime Disciple! I would never have tried to do it if I had known. I thought that he was a random kid. You know the sect rules. When we perform a mission, we can't leave any witnesses alive! That's what I was trying to do, but he escaped," She said.

"So it was a misunderstanding. Fortunately, he managed to escape, but still, you should apologize," Prime Elder said.

"It's fine. I don't think she needs to apologize. It was just a misunderstanding and he's safe. there's no need for it," The Sect Master gave her opinion.

"There is. As the Sect Master, you should know. A Prime Disciple has the same dignity as a black-robed elder. That's the rule of the sect that had been established by our ancestors! Even if it was a misunderstanding, she should apologize," Prime Elder said.

"This..." The Sect Master found it hard to respond as the Prime Elder talked about the rules that had indeed been written by the ancestors.

"Alright. Mi Yao. Apologize," The Sect Master finally said.

"I'm sorry for what I did," Mi Yao apologized.

"It's alright," Long Chen replied.

The Sect Master and Mi Yao walked up to the seats in the front and sat on them.

"Escaping before the eyes of someone like her, I must say that I'm impressed," Prime Elder said to Long Chen before he walked there and sat as well.

"Today, I invited you all here to talk about something important," The Sect Master began speaking.

"You all know that you have become the part of a 10 people team that would be doing something really important, but you don't know what. That's what you'll get to know today," She further said.

"Let me begin with a story first. There was once a really powerful sect. It was called Divine Heaven Sect. It was known as the strongest sect of the continent, some even called it the strongest sect in the world. But I believe that none of you have heard about it right?"

"That's because it was destroyed. No one knew who did it or what actually caused it, but all the disciples and the Elders died,"

"As everyone got the information about the sect being destroyed, all the sects went to the Divine Heaven Sect to get the benefits they could. Basically, they went there to loot the sect and take all they possessed. As they got there, they found out the sect wasn't there. It was missing. Even after searching for years, no one could find the sect,"

"500 years passed when the sect appeared again, at a different place far away from where it originally was. It was surrounded by a barrier. Many people tried, but none could enter. The Sect disappeared after 14 days,"

"Again 500 years passed and the sect again appeared. This time at an entirely new place. People tried, but no one could enter except one. It was an Earth Realm cultivator. It was discovered that he was able to enter because he possessed the token of appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect. There were only 20 tokens of appreciations that were distributed during the Prosperity of the Divine Heaven Sect,"

"The sects disappeared after 14 days. The boy that had entered came out with quite a lot of treasures. Although he was killed, the sects knew that the treasures this boy found were actually the worst ones that the sect possessed, yet they were so precious to the outside world. The Divine Heaven Sect contain many precious treasures and skills that helped them dominate the other sects,"

"The Sects tried their best and soon, all 20 tokens of appreciation were found. The Divine Heaven Sect appeared after 500 years. The sects sent many people but even with the token, the sky realm Cultivators weren't able to enter. Only Earth Realm Cultivators could. It was also found out that with one token, a

maximum of 10 people could enter the sect if they all held hands with the token holder,"

"They entered and explored and found a lot of treasures, but still not the best treasures and skills. The sect was so big and vast that it was difficult to explore it completely in 14 days, still, people kept exploring every time the sect appeared. Even after all these years, the best treasures aren't found,"

"The Sect will be appearing once again, and based on the previous locations it appeared, we can say for certain that it will appear near the North Moon Empire this time. We got a token of appreciation as well and we want you guys to go there,"

"You all will be the one that enter the Divine Heaven Sect from our side. Try to get as many benefits as you can and if you are able to find the Heaven Divination Skill of the Divine Heaven Sect, it would be considered the biggest merit and our sect will have the possibility of becoming the strongest sect," The sect master said.

Everyone in the room was surprised except Mu Zheng as his master had already told him about it.

"As Long Chen is the leader, he will be the one that carries the Token of Appreciation. You can all enter with him and search for treasures," Prime Elder informed them.

Chapter 355 - 355: The Dead Awakens(I)

"You'll all be given a list of the top treasures and skills of the Divine Heaven Sect so that you can know the things you'll have to be on the lookout for. It is a godly opportunity that can change the fate of a person. I hope you will all do your best," He further added.

"This is Mi Yao. She's a black robe Elder that most of you already know about. She'll be the one escorting you. That's all we had to say. You can leave. The list will be sent to your courtyards in a few hours. You'll be leaving tomorrow night, so be ready. Also, you might face other sects that hate our sect like the Beast Hall. You can kill them all, but you aren't allowed to die," The Sect Master said before she stood up and left. The Prime Elder and Mi Yao also left.

"Interesting, So we'll get to explore the strongest sect that has ever existed. I can't wait. It would be so great if we could find any treasures. There might even be heavenly herbs there. We'll grow by leaps and bounds," Chu Miao said excitedly.

"The teams of other sects will be thinking the same thing. Don't die for greed, alright," Dai Hu walked up to them and said.

"Right. There are 20 tokens of appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect, we can expect 19 more sects. Most of them will be our enemy as we're a dark sect," Long Chen let out.

"So what? Are you scared? Geez, I can't believe that they made you our captain! The captain should've been Senior Mu. I don't know how you got the 1st rank on all those rankings. You must've cheated, right?" A girl that was sitting nearby stood up and said sarcastically.

"Do I know you?" Long Chen inquired.

"She's Su Zhen Rank 4 in Strength Ranking," Chu Miao informed Long Chen.

"Rank 4? Is she strong enough to be in our team? I'm sorry, but I haven't held a rank lower than rank 3 even when I was new here, so I have no idea how she compares," Long Chen said casually. It seemed as if he was talking to Chu Miao. He didn't even look at Su Zhen.

"You!!!" Su Zhen fumed in anger.

"Long Chen, you should control your arrogance, or you might be the first person to die during our mission," Mu Zheng said to Long Chen as he looked at him venomously.

"Die? Maybe or Maybe not. Anyway, As I'm the captain, you should listen to me. Don't be late when it's time to leave, or you will be left behind," Long Chen said casually before he left, leaving Mu Zheng and Su Zhen behind.

"Senior Mu, he is so arrogant. I'm sure he cheated. You're the real Captain in my eyes and I will only follow your orders," Su Zhen told him.

"Thank you. How about we go for a drink," Mu Zheng said with a smile on his face as he extended his hand towards Su Zhen as if he was inviting her.

"Ah, Sure," Su Zhen agreed.

Mu Zheng held his hand as he left the place with her.

"I have precious Wine in my courtyard. Let's go there," He told her as he left the hall. She didn't deny.

Mu Zheng brought her to his courtyard and took her to his bedroom.

Su Zhen sat on My Zheng's bed while he served the drink.

They started drinking.

"Su Zhen, You know, I've always thought that you are really beautiful," He told her after she had drunk 3 glasses of wine. He placed his hand on her back as he looked in her eyes while he talked.

"Senior Mu, I've also thought that you were the most handsome man in the Sect," Su Zhen said as she gazed in his eyes. Her face was already crimson by now.

Mu Zheng slowly brought his face closer to her face and kissed her on her lips. She passionately replied to his kiss as she wrapped her arms around him.

Both of them fell down to the bed as they embraced each other. Their lips didn't separate.

They tore off each other's clothes before they began fulfilling their carnal desires.

Su Zhen didn't know about this, but Mu Zheng had begun using the new skill that he had received from his master.

He wanted to absorb her primordial yin to boost his cultivation further. Although Su Zhen wouldn't lose her cultivation, she would lose her talent and wouldn't be able to increase her cultivation further.

On the other hand, Mu Zheng's cultivation as well as his talent will increase. The scariest thing was that Su Zhen wouldn't even realize what just happened to her. She would never know how she lost her talent.

Long Chen separated from the others and walked back to his courtyard.

He sat on his bed as he thought about the information he had collected.

"Divine Heaven Sect, I never heard about it. I wonder how a Strong Sect like this can be destroyed in a single day. Who could be strong enough to cause this?" Long Chen thought.

In a deserted place, a person was walking under the heat of the sun. He was wearing a cloak and his face was covered in a mask

He was the same person that had given Mingyu the destiny crystal that had sent her to Long Chen. The same person that was able to kill 2 peak sky realm cultivators in a snap.

"Destiny is such a strange thing. Despite having so much power, I can't change it," The man muttered as he glanced towards the sky.

"I can see the darkness shrouding this planet, but I can't see the person who this darkness belongs to," He spoke softly as he continued walking ahead.

He stopped walking abruptly as he looked down at the ground.

He waved his hand and the heavy wind started flowing towards the direction he was facing.

The wind took the sand with it and something that was previously covered below the sand came into view.

It was a body that looked like it belonged to a boy that was in his early 20s.

"I wonder what role you will play in everything," the man said in a low voice as he got down to his knees and placed his hand over the forehead of the body.

The boy that previously looked dead abruptly opened his eyes.

Long Chen closed his eyes as he began his Demon Monarch Physique cultivation. He was close to a breakthrough in his physical cultivation as well and he believed that in a few days, he will achieve it.

Time kept passing slowly and the day of departure arrived.

Long Chen opened his eyes as he stood up.

"Finally, I can leave. After so long, I'll get to see Mingyu and Zhiqing. I can even finish my revenge," Long Chen muttered as he walked to shower.

He came out of the shower. His long black hair was still somewhat wet.

He changed his clothes to the best ones he had before he left his courtyard. They had to leave at night, so he still had time, but he also had to meet Lang Jing who was supposed to tell him his true mission. The thing for which he kept Long Chen here.

Long Chen went to Lang Jing's courtyard and had a long talk with him.

There he was told what he had to do, he couldn't help but be shocked as he learned what Lang Jing wanted.

"Do you want to destroy everything?" Long Chen inquired but he only got a vague reply.

"You don't need to worry about why I need you to do it or what I intend to do with it. Just do as I said and you will be free," Lang Jing said.

"Here, Take this map," Lang Jing told Long Chen as he gave him a map.

Long Chen took the map before he left the courtyard. It was already night as he left.

It was decided that everyone will meet in front of the Discussion Hall. From there, they will leave.

As Long Chen got there, he noticed that every team member was already there. It seemed like they were waiting for Long Chen and the Mi Yao.

Long Chen walked to them. He stood beside Chu Miao. As he looked to his side, he saw that Mu Zheng was standing together with Su Zhen. She was holding onto his hand.

'I guess they were indeed a couple. That might be why she came after me like that last time,' Long Chen thought.

'She looks different though. I don't know why it is, but something is missing. I can't put my finger on it though,' He thought as he looked at her.

Chapter 356 - 356: Secrets Of The Token

"Hey Creep! Stop looking at me!" Su Zhen saw Long Chen looking at her and scolded him.

Everyone heard her, but no one said anything. Both Long Chen and Mu Zheng were in the top 2 of Strength Ranking and Demon Ranking. They didn't want to get involved in the trouble.

Long Chen stopped looking at her and put the thought to the back of his head. He didn't feel like he needed to involve himself in whatever happened to her.

After some time, the Sect Master came flying on her Winged Tiger and landed near them. Lang Jing, Prime Elder, and Mi Yao also came with her.

"You're all here. Good. Long Chen, come forward," Prime Elder said.

Long Chen walked to the Prime Elder.

"This is the Token of Appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect. Keep it safe. This is the key to entering the Divine Heaven Sect. You must not lose it," Prime Elder said as he gave Long Chen the token.

Long Chen took the Token and observed it.

It looked like a plain silver coin, there was nothing extraordinary about it.

"It might look normal, but it's made from something quite special. No matter what we do, this coin can't be destroyed," Prime Elder said.

"Also, this coin can't be stolen, it can only be given. If the coin is stolen or forcefully taken from the one that is holding it, the coin will disappear. It will appear in a random place in some unknown corner of the world, but you can imagine how difficult it would be to find it then. So don't do any foolishness," Lang Jing also said. He casually glanced at Mu Zheng while speaking.

"Jing is right. I must warn you. Don't try to steal it or forcefully take it from Long Chen if there is an argument. This mission is really important and I don't want it to fail," Prime Elder said, but he specifically meant it for Mu Zheng.

Mu Zheng didn't react. He was already told this by his master. She told him that he couldn't kill Long Chen before they entered the Divine Heaven Sect. She had warned him that if he did anything to Long Chen before getting to the Divine Heaven Sect, she would personally kill him.

"Alright. That's enough explanation. I'm sure you guys are smart and you will work as a team. You must know what's truly important," Prime Elder further said.

"We have arranged for 11 Winged Lions. You will travel on them so that you get there on time," The Sect Master said.

11 Winged Lions landed near them and the elders that brought them there got off the Winged Lions.

"Mi Yao has the Map, follow her lead," The Sect Master said.

Everyone nodded their head as they climbed on top of the Winged Lions. They departed from the Sect.

Although the Sect Master only gave the Map to Mi Yao, Long Chen also had a map.

The map was already given to him by Lang Jing when he went to meet him during the day, so he didn't mind. He was sure that Mu Zheng and Chu Miao must have a map of their own.

They traveled for day and night without stopping. They only stopped when they got to the North Moon Empire.

As they were all on Earth Realm or higher, they could go for longer periods of time without sleep but still, it was a lot. All of them were extremely tired.

They landed right beside the Royal City of the North Moon Empire and sent the Winged Lions inside the beast bags.

Long Chen always kept a beast bag with him in order to fool others as he didn't want anyone to suspect where he actually kept his beasts. Long Chen sent the Winged Lion in the beast bag instead of sending it to the Beast Region.

They all jumped through the walls as they entered the city since they didn't wish to go through the official entry.

They had also changed their clothes and wore more normal clothes. Although the North Moon Empire was weaker than their sect, they didn't wish to attract much attention before it was time as they knew that other sects must be nearby as well.

The 11 of them walked to a hotel.

Mi Yao was talking to a receptionist as she tried to get 11 rooms.

"What's your name? You remind me of the cute receptionist I met in the Kingdom of Dementia. She was just as kind and gentle," Long Chen said to the receptionist but in reality, he was saying it to Mi Yao. Her face couldn't help but twitch.

"Thank you," The receptionist replied with a smile as she gave them the keys of the room

"Unfortunately, that receptionist turned out to be a killer," Long Chen said smilingly as he walked beside Mi Yao.

"Oh? Fortunately, you didn't die by the hands of that killer," She said as he glanced at him.

"Sigh, I must say, I had a crush on her. She was really cute. I was hoping to propose to her after I went back to the hotel," Long Chen said jokingly.

"Hah, Aren't you too young to be thinking about those things?" She said in a mocking tone.

"I'm a full-grown adult. You can test if you doubt me," Long Chen replied but she didn't answer him.

They met up with the others and walked up to the first floor where the rooms were allotted to them.

Long Chen's room was in between the rooms of Mi Yao and Chu Miao. Mu Zheng got the room next to her and Su Zhen got the room next to him.

They all walked to their own room as they were all tired. The first thing they all did was sleep.

Back in the Blazing Sun Empire, 11 flying beasts of various species landed in front of the Royal Palace of the Blazing Sun Empire.

"Welcome Respected Masters," A lavishly dressed boy greeted them.

"Who are you?" The Elder who was escorting the team of the Beast Hall inquired. He was bald, but he had a long black beard.

"I'm Ji Shen, I'm the Crown Prince of the Blazing Sun Empire," The boy replied.

"Oh, you're the boy of Ji Mu. Why isn't he here to welcome us himself?" The Elder asked.

"Well, Master. Father, don't know that you have arrived yet. I was standing outside when I saw you coming. I couldn't let you wait, so I decided to greet you in my father's stead," Ji Shen answered him.

"Oh, Alright. Take us to your father," the elder said.

"Of course," Ji Shen nodded his head as he escorted them towards the Royal Hall where the king was sitting at the moment.

Although his health had been bad previously, it had started to get better and he was able to come out of his room.

Ji Shen entered the hall with the Elder and the team of the Beast Hall.

"Elder Ku, You're here. I'm so sorry that I couldn't escort you myself. I thought that you would be coming tomorrow," The King stood up as he walked to the elder.

"Yeah, I can't blame you, Ji Mu. We were faster than we planned," Elder Ku replied.

"It's alright. I can shift the banquet ahead. We can have it tonight?" Ji Mu suggested.

"That's no need. We have been traveling for days straight, and I believe that everyone is tired. Just arrange some rooms. I believe that they would love to sleep for a day," Elder Ku replied.

"Oh, Right away. Shen, take our respected guests to the royal guest rooms and arrange for servants to stand outside their doors to take care of all their needs," Ji Mu ordered.

"Yes father," Ji Shen nodded his head.

"This way, Master" Ji Shen told Elder Ku as he walked towards the exit.

Chapter 357 - 357: Meng Arrives, Disaster?

The team of the Beast Hall followed Ji Shen and they were brought to the guest rooms.

They were given the most luxurious rooms in the palace. Even though the rooms were best in the Blazing Sun Empire, they were nothing compared to the rooms in Beast Hall, but they didn't mind. They were already too tired. All of them walked to their room and fell asleep.

The people of the Dark Soul Sect woke up the next day, but none of them left their room. They had all decided that they would stay in their rooms and cultivate until it was time for their mission.

Although everyone had woken up, Long Chen was still sleeping.

Chu Miao had just come out of the shower and she had finished getting dressed.

Knock *knock*

She was about to start her cultivation when she heard a knock on the door.

She walked towards the door and opened it. She was momentarily stunned as she saw Mu Zheng standing outside the door.

She and Mu Zheng had never been that close as Mu Zheng was too arrogant and didn't talk to anyone. That's why it was surprising for her to see him standing at her door.

"You? Is there something you need?" Chu Miao inquired.

"There's nothing much. I was just wondering if we could have a talk about cultivation. I have some Spirit Wine with me as well. We can have that as well?" Mu Zheng said.

Chu Miao found it quite suspicious.

"I'm extremely sorry, but I just want to cultivate in peace. Maybe next time," Chu Miao politely rejected.

"Oh, alright. You can knock on my door if you decide to take my offer. I just wish to get to know you as I realized that we haven't talked much throughout the years" Mu Zheng said.

"I'll keep that in mind," Chu Miao replied before she closed the door.

'That bitch! One day I'll definitely take your profound yin for myself!' Mu Zheng cursed in his mind as he turned back.

He walked towards Su Zhen's room.

As soon as Su Zhen opened the door, a smile appeared on her face.

"Brother Mu," She said with affection.

Mu Zheng entered her room and closed the door behind him as he took her into his embrace and started kissing her.

Long Chen finally woke up as he opened his eyes. He sat up and stretched his arms before getting off the bed.

"Let's see what the others are doing," He muttered as he used his Divine Sense to see in the nearby rooms.

Chu Miao and the others were still cultivating whereas Mi Yao was in the shower. What attracted Long Chen's attention the most was Su Zhen's room. He saw Mu Zheng and Su Zhen embracing each other as they kissed like animals.

"Sigh, I was right. She was indeed his girlfriend. Now I understand where her negative feelings towards me were coming from," Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face.

He continued spreading his divine sense and soon he was able to see everything that was happening in the hotel.

There was another thing that shocked him. He saw some people enter the hotel. They looked like they belonged to a sect, but Long Chen recognized the Symbol on their chest.

They were from the Mighty Sword Sect. It was also a great sect that was said to be as strong as the Dark Soul Sect and the Beast Hall

Shockingly, they also had 11 people. A female Elder and 10 disciples.

"They must be here to get the Legacy of the Divine Heaven Sect as well," Long Chen thought as he stopped using his divine sense. If he kept using it for longer, Mi Yao and the Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect might notice him.

Long Chen walked inside the shower and spent over 10 minutes inside.

As the water droplets fell over his body, the only thing he could think about was Mingyu and Zhiqing.

"The Blazing Sun Empire is nearby. Should I go there right now? But from what I'm told, it does look like the Heavenly Divine sect will be appearing after a week. If I go there right now, I might be able to get back in time?" Long Chen muttered.

"Alright. I'll go. I cannot waste my time thinking. I should go inform them that I'm alive. After I kill Lang Jing, I'll be back to take them," Long Chen let out as he made a determination.

He walked out of the shower and got dressed before he walked out of his room.

As he got down to the ground floor, he saw that the team of the Mighty Sword Sect was still there. He walked past them. As he wasn't wearing his sect badge or dress, they didn't recognize him and didn't pay attention to him.

"Mingyu and Zhiqing are my bigger priority at the moment. I can take care of Meng after I'm back," Long Chen muttered as he brought the Sun Destroying Condor out of his storage ring and jumped on top of it.

He had already studied the map completely and he knew where the Blazing Sun Empire was.

Just as Long Chen left the city on the Sun Destroying Condor, a girl stepped inside the hotel Long Chen had walked out of.

The girl was none the same girl that had plotted against Long Chen and Mingyu in order to kill them while she took away the small box. She was Meng. She still didn't know that Long Chen was alive.

If she had been a little faster, she would have been able to meet Long Chen, though it was uncertain how their meeting would have gone. The most probable outcome was her death, but there was an unexpected component in the situation as well.

It was uncertain if the Mighty Sword Sect would have just stayed there silently and watched the girl die or would they have interfered.

The Mighty Sword Sect was known for its Righteous Dao. Their disciples fought for justice and they couldn't bear injustice.

If they had interfered, then it might have resulted in a battle between the Mighty Demon Sect and the Dark Soul Sect. As Long Chen held the token of appreciation, Mi Yao and others would definitely fight for him.

But all of that was prevented just because Meng was 5 minutes late.

Meng walked up to the Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect.

"Excuse me, Master. Are you from the Mighty Sword Sect?" Meng asked the elder.

"Yes, child, who are you? Do you need anything?" The elder answered before she asked a question of her own.

"Respected Elder, I'm the First Princess of the North Moon Empire. I was informed that a team from the Mighty Sword Sect has entered our Empire. I was quite hurt as I found out that you had decided to stay in a small inn instead of our Palace,"

"Will you please grace our Royal Palace with your gracious visit?" She asked.

"This..." The Elder struggled to answer.

"Please, Master, Don't say no. Even my father would be happy to know about your visit. There are so many rooms in our palace. You can stay there with ease. Please?" Meng said with a pleading look on her face.

"Hahaha, You are so nice. You look like a pure soul. I'm sure the North Moon Empire will never fall as long as people like you exist in the Empire," The Elder said, smilingly.

"Does that mean you will come?" Meng asked expectantly.

"Hahaha, Yeah. How can I say no to such a nice girl's request? Lead the way," The Elder told her.

Chapter 358 - 358: Long Chen Returns

"Everyone, we will be staying in the Royal Palace of the North Moon Empire for the next few days. Please be respectful," The Elder told the disciples.

"Yes Elder," The Disciples replied in unison.

"Thank you, Master. The carriages are already waiting outside for everyone," Meng said.

The Elder nodded her head with a pleased smile on her face.

They left the hotel and saw 4 royal carriages already standing there.

Meng opened the door of the first carriage for the Elder. The Elder entered the carriage. Meng also entered after her.

The other disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect entered the other carriages. The carriages departed towards the Royal Palace.

Long Chen was sitting on the Sun Destroying Condor while having no idea that he had just missed the enemy he was trying to get to for so long.

Back in the Blazing Sun Empire, the people from the Beast Hall were up as well. They all got ready.

It was night time and the time for the banquet. The King had personally come to bring the Elder and the team of the Beast Hall to the dining hall. His eldest son, Ji Shen was also with him.

They entered the Dining Hall and sat on the Dining Table. While the Elder sat on the Main Seat, Emperor Ji Mu sat right beside him.

On the left of Elder Ku, sat the disciples of the Beast Hall while on the right of him was the king. Ji Shen sat on the right of the King.

Even Ji Shan, Mingyu, and Zhiqing were also there. Ji Shan was on the seat next to Ji Shen while the girls were in the seat next to him.

The boys of the Team of the Beast Hall couldn't help but glance at Mingyu and Zhiqing occasionally as they all found them attractive despite the fact that Mingyu and Zhiqing wore ordinary clothes.

"Let me begin the introduction first," The king began speaking.

"You already know my Eldest, Son Ji Shen. That's my second son Ji Shan and those are his friends Mingyu and Zhiqing," The Emperor gave the brief introduction.

After the King, Elder Ki began his introduction.

"I'm the 1st Rank Elder of the Beast Hall. He is the head disciple of our beast hall and also a personal Disciple of the Hall Master, Jichuan. He's the leader of our small team. That's Wu Ten, the vice-captain of our team. That's Mingxu, Mikali, Sima Bing, Gu Nili, Minami, Yao Li. And lastly, He's Mu Fan and that's his Sister Mu Xin," The Elder finished the introduction as well.

The dinner was served. The king had the greatest dishes made for the special occasion of today in order to welcome the guests.

"Miss Mingyu, I can see that you have really high cultivation. You look so young and yet you're at the 6th stage of Earth Realm. Which sect are you from?" Head Disciple Jichuan asked casually as he glanced at Mingyu.

"Hmm? what?" Ji Shen was surprised as he hadn't thought that the girl would be so strong. He hasn't even bothered looking at her cultivation as he had previously assumed that the girls were just the pretty faces that Ji Shan had found to entertain himself, but he didn't expect that she would be so strong.

"Mine is just a small sect that is not even known by the world. You can just say that I was lucky to attain such high cultivation. In fact, I'm the only disciple in my sect who broke through the earth realm in the last 500 years," She lied, but with an honest expression in her face.

"Oh, that is indeed amazing. So you're like a lotus that appeared in the mud," Vice-Captain Wu Ten said.

"I wouldn't dare call myself anything," She replied.

"Master Jichuan, since you're the Head Disciple of the Beast Hall, you must be quite informed right?" Mingyu asked as she changed the topic.

"Of course. Brother Jichuan is highly informed. In fact, he has even more knowledge than most of the elders at the moment," Wu Ten answered before Jichuan could answer.

"Do you have a question to ask?" Jichuan inquired as he understood her hidden meaning.

"Yes, I want to know the location of the Dark Soul Sect. Can you tell me?" She asked.

Everyone from the Beast Hall was stunned as they heard the name of the Dark Soul Sect.

"Why do you want to know the location of the Dark Soul Sect. Do you wish to join the devil sect as well?" Jichuan asked. A small bit of killing intent was clearly visible in his eyes.

"Master Jichuan, that's not what she meant. I'll tell you everything. Mingyu is my sister in law. Her husband and I had become the temporary disciple of the Beast Hall branch that was destroyed by the Dark Soul Sect. Although we managed to escape, I believe that they caught her husband and took him with them. She just wishes to find him and help him escape from the clutches of the evils," Ji Shan gave the explanation in order to clear the misunderstanding.

"Oh," Jichuan and the others calmed down as they heard the full story.

"If your husband is caught by them, he's already dead. You should leave the false hope otherwise you would never gain happiness again. The Dark Soul Sect doesn't keep prisoners. They are the devils that take pleasure in slaughter and killing. Your husband is dead without a doubt," Jichuan said as he picked up the glass of wine and took a sip.

"I would still appreciate it if you could tell me their address so that I could check myself if he is alive," Mingyu said again.

"We can't even if we try. Even we don't know the true location of the Dark Soul Sect. They are so good at hiding, if we knew where they hide, we would have already destroyed their sect for what they did to our Beast hall branch and all the atrocities that they committed," Wu Ten said as he sighed.

"Even you don't know?" Mingyu asked with a disappointed look on her face.

Jichuan shook her head.

"There's a chance that some people from their sect will appear in the North Moon Empire. If we managed to catch one of them, we might be able to get the location. We can tell you on our way back if we succeed," Jichuan said.

"Thank you," Mingyu expressed her gratitude.

"Hah, You don't have to thank brother Jichuan with just words. He doesn't help anyone he doesn't like, so it's clear that he likes you. How about you spend some time with brother Jichuan?" Wu Ten said with a grin on his face.

"Wu Ten!" Jichuan scolded him.

"Brother, I can see that you like her. Why are you scolding me?" Wu Ten asked.

"I'll talk to her on my own if I need to spend time with her. It sounds rude when you talk about it," Jichuan said as he glanced at Wu Ten.

"Miss Mingyu, would you like to spend some time with me? We can talk about the things that I know about the Dark Soul Sect. That might be helpful in finding your husband if he's still alive," Jichuan said.

Although Jichuan looked quite innocent, Mingyu felt like he was the biggest hypocrite. Fortunately, she had already gotten the information that they didn't know about the location of the Dark Soul Sect either and more importantly, she now knew that the disciples of the Dark Soul Sect would be appearing in the North Moon Empire. If she could directly go talk to them, or force them, then that would be faster.

"I apologize, Master Jichuan, but I would have to decline," Mingyu answered.

A Sun Destroying Condor landed near the Royal Palace of the Blazing Sun Empire as Long Chen got off it.

Chapter 359 - 359: Long Chen Escaped?

"Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing, I can feel that all 3 of you are here. It feels like it has been years since I separated from you guys," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards the palace.

"I'm here to meet Prince Ji Shan. Can you go inform him that Long Chen is here?" Long Chen said to the guards that were standing at the entrance of the palace.

Although he could infiltrate the Palace easily, he didn't do it since there was no need to. It was Ji Shan's palace after all.

"Let me go inform him," one of the guards said as he went inside the palace.

He came out soon after, "the Prince is busy in an important meeting. Please come in the morning."

"Did Ji Shan tell you to say this to me?" Long Chen inquired as he looked at the guard in full seriousness.

"You dare call our Prince by his name? You deserve to die!" The guard roared as he pulled his sword and attacked Long Chen.

Long Chen's anger rose as he pulled out his sword and slashed without thinking anything. The guard died in an instant.

"He's an enemy! Kill him!"

The other guards pulled their sword out and attacked Long Chen, but Long Chen was already angry. He killed all the guards.

"He doesn't wish to meet me? I need to come later?" Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the palace.

Everything ended so fast, that there was no commotion. In fact, the people inside the palace were still unaware as to what just happened outside their door.

"Let me see what he's busy in," Long Chen muttered as he kept the bodies in the storage ring and entered the palace.

Although he was angry, he still hadn't lost his sense of reasoning. He realized that the King of the Blazing Sun Empire must be a high stage Sky Realm cultivator, so he didn't do anything more stupid than he had already done.

Even if he did anything, he was sure that he would be able to escape because of Spatial Travel, but he wished to see if Mingyu and Zhiqing were here or not.

He spread his divine sense throughout the palace and saw the place where Mingyu and Zhiqing were. He could see them sitting near Ji Shan.

"Beast Hall?" Long Chen muttered as he recognized Mu Fan and Mu Lin that he had met in the Dementia Kingdom.

Long Chen brought out the Mask of Mischief and covered his face as he changed himself to the guard that had just come inside to inform Ji Shan.

As soon as Long Chen got near the dining hall, he saw two guards standing outside the door.

"You're again back! Didn't we tell you that the Prince is busy tonight? He can't meet anyone!" The guard told Long Chen as he got near.

'So Ji Shan wasn't the one that said it,' Long Chen thought as he understood what must have happened.

"It's really urgent. A girl is outside that claims that she is His Highness' lover. If she isn't allowed to meet him, she will commit suicide. Please let me meet the Prince. The Prince will punish all of us if something happens to her," Long Chen said as he pretended to be concerned.

"This? This is indeed important. Alright, you can enter, but be careful. There are important guests inside," the guards said as they allowed Long Chen to enter.

Long Chen stepped inside the hall and attracted everyone's attention, but he hurriedly walked up to Ji Shan and whispered in his ears.

"Your Highness, there's a boy outside that claims that he is your friend Long Chen," he said.

"What?" The Prince stood up in shock before it turned into excitement.

"Long Chen managed to escape from the Dark Soul Sect? Awesome," Ji Shan exclaimed in surprise.

'That Idiot! I wanted to see his reaction, but that didn't mean that he had to scream it out loud! Why did he even talk about the Dark Soul Sect? Can't you see the wolves of the Beast Hall sitting here?' Long Chen cursed in his mind.

Even Mingyu and Zhiqing's expressions changed when they heard Ji Shan's words.

"He escaped? Where is he?" Mingyu asked hurriedly.

"There's a person outside that claims that he's Long Chen," Ji Shan told them.

"Excuse me, father. Something important has come up and I need to leave," Ji Shan told his father before he turned to leave.

Even Jichuan and the people of the Beast Hall were frowning at the moment.

Before things could escalate, Long Chen again whispered something in Ji Shan's ears.

"You Idiot! Can't you see the beast hall people beside you? Do you want Long Chen to die? Make an excuse that you misheard and that it was Wang Chen outside, not Long Chen!"

Ji Shan looked suspiciously at the guard before he repeated what he said.

"Oh, You meant there's a Wang Chen outside, Damn! I was so happy for a moment. Sorry, everyone. I misheard. It's not Long Chen, but a friend of mine, Wang Chen. I'll go meet him," Ji Shan said to the others.

Mingyu and Zhiqing were disappointed as their hopes were crushed. They sat down with a depressed look on their beautiful faces.

"Hahaha, So It was a misunderstanding. I knew that it must be something like that! That's no way someone can escape from the grip of the Dark Soul Sect," Wu Ten couldn't help but laugh as he commented.

Jichuan on the other hand still glared at the guard with a frown.

Ji Shan left the dining hall with the guard and followed the guards. When they were in an empty portion of the hallway, he stopped.

"Who exactly are you?" Ji Shan asked as he looked at the guard.

Long Chen slowly removed the mask and kept that in his storage ring.

"You don't even recognize me, do you?" Long Chen smiled as he turned back.

"It's you!" Ji Shan jumped excitedly as he stepped forward and hugged Long Chen.

"That's enough," Long Chen said after only 5 seconds of hugging.

"You almost got me killed there. Do you know that they would have attacked me if they knew I was Long Chen?" Long Chen said in an annoyed tone.

He didn't retract his divine sense and kept it spread throughout the hallway to know if someone got near them.

"Why will they attack you? It's not like you're a part of the Dark Soul Sect?" Ji Shan said as he chuckled. Long Chen didn't react.

"I remember you screaming that I escaped the Dark Soul Sect!" Long Chen let out.

"Yeah, I told them that you were kidnapped by them. We needed their help to get the address of the Dark Soul Sect as the girls wanted to come to save you," He replied.

"Great. So you wanted to die. I must say, I'm glad that the Dark Soul Sect keeps its location a secret otherwise so many idiots would have died," Long Chen said.

"Anyway, You already told them that I'm in the Dark Soul Sect. There's no way for someone to escape from there. They can only do 2 things in that case. One, they will think that I joined the Dark Soul Sect and attack me. Second, they will take me with them to get the location of the Dark Soul Sect out of me. Both are equally bad," Long Chen said with an annoyed look on his face.

"True, I should've thought of it. Come with me. I'll take you to my room. Rest there, I'll bring my sister-in-laws after the dinner is finished so that I don't arouse suspicions," Ji Shan told Long Chen before he left the room and walked towards the Dining Hall.

Chapter 360 - 360: Reunion

"Alright," Long Chen replied.

Ji Shan took Long Chen to his room and left him there before he walked back to the Dining Hall.

"Did you meet your friend Wang Chen? Why was he here so late?" Jichuan asked as he glanced at Ji Shan.

"He needed something from me. It's done and he left," Ji Shan replied.

"You sure that it was Wang Chen and not Long Chen? It would be nice if it was Long Chen. You wouldn't have needed to try so hard to get to the Dark Soul Sect," Jichuan further said.

Ji Shan could feel that he was testing him.

"You can't imagine how glad I would be if it had been brother Long Chen, but don't worry. We will get the address of the Dark Soul Sect and we will definitely save him!" Ji Shan said in full determination.

"Hmm, I'm done. Excuse Me," Jichuan said as he left the Dining Hall.

He spread his Spiritual Sense throughout the Palace as he tried to see if things were normal.

His Spiritual Sense scanned through the whole palace. Starting from the Dining Hall. He saw guards, maids, cooks, and many more. He even saw some maids being involved in sexual activities with the guards, but that wasn't what he was looking for.

His Spiritual Sense got to the room of Prince Ji Shan and he saw something, but before he could get a clear idea as to what it was, it disappeared as if it was just his illusion.

"Strange," Jichuan muttered as a frown appeared on his forehead. He started walking towards the room of Prince Ji Shan.

Long Chen was simply sitting on the bed in Ji Shan's room. He was casually sitting there as he looked towards the door when he felt a spiritual sense cover him.

He instantly used the first skill of darkness, Shadow transformation as he disappeared. The Skill hid him in such a manner that even the Spiritual Sense of the Head Disciple of the Beast Hall wasn't able to sense him.

Long Chen canceled the skill only after he saw the Spiritual Sense disappear. He began using his Divine Sense as he scanned the whole palace.

"That guy? Was he the one using the Spiritual Sense? He is the strongest disciple amongst them, so he must be the captain," Long Chen muttered as he saw Jichuan coming towards the room.

"Should I kill him?" Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the door.

Long Chen retracted his Divine Sense. His Divine Sense was better than the Spiritual Sense of Jichuan and it was even further improved after he learned the law of darkness. Now he was able to use his divine sense without being caught, but there was still a risk of getting caught if he used his divine sense for too long or if the other cultivator had a cultivation that was 2 Major Realms higher than him.

"I should be able to kill him, but there's still Mingyu and Zhiqing here. If their elder goes crazy and creates a disturbance in the Palace and hurts them, it would be bad," Long Chen muttered as he fell in deep thought.

'Later. There's no need to kill them. We aren't enemies yet," Long Chen thought as he again used his divine sense.

When Jichuan got close to the door, Long Chen used Spiritual Transformation once again as he disappeared.

Jichuan tried opening the door, but it was locked from the outside.

He brought a key out of his pocket and inserted it into the keyhole as he unlocked the door.

This was the Key of Thousand Transformation. It was only a Spirit Grade artifact, but it was much more useful. It could transform into any shape of the key and open any lock. This was something his master had found from an ancient ruin. Since he didn't need it, he gave the Key of Thousand Transformation to Jichuan.

The door opened as Jichuan entered the room.

Jichuan carefully searched the whole room, but he didn't find anything suspicious.

"Was that really an illusion?" He muttered as he left the room and closed the door.

'Illusion? You haven't even seen a real illusion yet,' Long Chen thought as he looked towards the door.

He used his divine sense and only after he was sure that Jichuan left, did he cancel Shadow Transformation.

"Why is that guy trying to stick his foot in something that doesn't involve him? Don't he know that it can get him killed?" Long Chen sighed as he lay on the bed.

The dinner was soon over and everyone walked back to their room.

As Mingyu and Zhiqing's rooms were nearby, they were walking with Ji Shan.

"You heard right? The people from the Dark Soul Sect will be coming to the North Moon Empire. If I'm not wrong, their destination should be the same as the people from the Beast Hall. If we can catch one of them, we might be able to get some information about their sect and Long Chen," Mingyu said.

"Indeed. We must go there as well. I can't even imagine what atrocities Long Chen must be going through in the Dark Soul Sect," Zhiqing said in concern.

"Don't worry, I don't think you would need to do through all that to meet him," Ji Shan replied.

"What do you mean?" They asked at the same time.

"I got a letter from someone. They said that the letter contained some information about Long Chen," He made up an excuse to get them to his room. He didn't want to spoil the reunion.

"A letter? Where is that letter?" Mingyu asked.

"It's in my room. I haven't read it yet. You can read it first," Ji Shan said as he opened the door and entered his room.

"I hope it's not a prank by someone, or I will personally go and kill the one that gave you that letter," Mingyu said as she entered his room after him. Zhiqing entered as well, but both of them froze in their places as they saw the person standing in front of them.

"Will you keep standing there, or greet your husband?" Long Chen said with a gentle smile on his face.

Mingyu was the fastest this time as she jumped into Long Chen's arms and hugged him tightly.

Her eyes were full of tears as she said, "I missed you so much. You're not hurt, are you?"

"I'm perfectly fine. And I missed you as well, Yue'er," Long Chen said as he hugged her back. Mingyu released him after a long hug.

"And what are you waiting for?" Long Chen said as he looked at Zhiqing that was still crying in the back.

She also stepped forward as she hugged Long Chen tightly while tears of happiness kept falling from her eyes.

"I missed you so much, Zhiqing," Long Chen said to her.

Zhiqing just looked in his eyes.

"Aren't you going to say..." Long Chen was about to ask a question, but before he could finish, his mouth was closed by her mouth as she kissed him.

Long Chen replied to her kiss with full zest. He even sent his tongue inside her mouth for conquest.

After 5 minutes of deep kiss, their lips separated along with their bodies.

Long Chen looked to his left and saw Mingyu glaring at them.

Zhiqing walked up to Mingyu as she caught her hand and pushed her in Long Chen's embrace.

"There's no need to be jealous. You can have your share as well," Zhiqing said.

"Mm," Without giving Mingyu a single chance to say anything, Long Chen kissed her.

Their kiss lasted for even longer than the kiss with Zhiqing.

Long Chen felt like there was a certain relief in the depths of his soul as he kissed Mingyu. It was as if this was the moment where he was most at peace. He didn't know why it was like that with Mingyu and not with Zhiqing or with Xue and Mei.

Why was Mingyu so special? Was she really his destiny? Did he really have a destiny in this world? Or was she something made by the universe to keep his chaotic soul in control? There were so many strange questions in his mind, but

he didn't need answers to those questions at the moment. All he wanted was for this moment to halt on time, but it did end as Mingyu separated herself from Long Chen.

Her heart was beating fast and her breathing was just as messed up. Her face was as red as a tomato.

"Ahem Ahem, Now that you guys are fine, can we get back to the topic? What happened after we left that night?" Ji Shan inquired.

"It was just as you expected. I was taken by the Dark Soul Sect and I became their disciple. At the moment I'm something like their Head Disciple. That's why I didn't wish to meet the people from the Beast Hall while I'm inside your palace or that would just affect you and your kingdom negatively," Long Chen said.

Chapter 361 - 361: Night Of Desire(★)

(Warning: This Chapter contains some adult stuff, so if you're a minor or you don't like such content, please skip the part between the first break line and the second.)

"It was just as you expected. I was taken by the Dark Soul Sect and I became their disciple. At the moment I'm something like their Head Disciple. That's why I didn't wish to meet the people from the Beast Hall while I'm inside your palace or that would just affect you and your kingdom negatively," Long Chen said.

"Y-you became their head disciple?" Ji Shan exclaimed in shock.

"Yeah. It's a long story, but I guess life's not bad there. Anyways, I finally got the opportunity to come out of the sect because of this mission. I'm here as the leader of the Dark Soul Sect's team. My team is in the North Moon Empire while I snuck out to come here," Long Chen finished.

"Amazing! You became the head disciple of such a powerful sect, but isn't that an evil sect? All the righteous sects will be your enemy! I heard from Jichuan that more sects are coming to the North Moon Empire. One of them is already there. It's the Mighty Sword Sect! Don't go there. You will be killed by them all!" Ji Shan said.

"Yeah, I passed by them when I was coming here. They indeed looked strong, but I'll be fine. There's something in this mission that I really need to complete to gain my full freedom and to finish my bigger goal," Long Chen told them.

"If you say so, but I still suggest that you should not go back," Ji Shan repeated.

"Don't worry. I'm not going back, at least tonight," Long Chen said smilingly.

"Hah, that's what I expected. Anyway, the room on the left is theirs. You guys can have your privacy there. Don't worry about the sound, the walls are solid," Ji Shan chuckled as he glanced at Long Chen.

"That's good. I'll test it later," Long Chen said as he held Mingyu and Zhiqing's hands and left the room. He entered the neighboring room.

"So, what happened with you guys after I was taken by the Dark Soul Sect guys? I heard that you were planning to come to the Dark Soul Sect?" Long Chen said with an interested look on his face.

"Of course we had to save you," Mingyu said.

She began explaining how they came here and all their efforts in order to get the information out of the King. Their plan to go to the Beast Hall to get the location of the Dark Soul Sect and everything else that happened after that.

"Interesting. How did you know that I was still alive? Destiny?" Long Chen asked with a knowing smile on his face.

"Yes. You are my destiny. You can't die before me," Mingyu said with a gentle smile on her face as she sat beside Long Chen.

"And you can't die before me," Long Chen looked into her eyes as he said before he wrapped his arms around her and pulled her closer.

His lips found the way to her lips before they began greedily sucking on them. Zhiqing stood there, but she wasn't jealous of Mingyu. She was just too glad because of Long Chen's return that she didn't bother wasting any time in jealousy.

She walked towards Long Chen and sat down in front of him before she lowered his pants.

She exposed Long Chen's erect sword that was standing proud like a tall mountain Tai. She gave it a gentle lick before she took it into her mouth and started sucking on it like a candy.

Long Chen sent his tongue inside Mingyu's mouth and began playing with her tongue while he used his left hand to fondle her soft breasts. His right hand was on the breasts of Zhiqing who was passionately sucking on his stiff sword.

After a long time, Long Chen removed his hands from Zhiqing's breasts and started removing Mingyu's top.

Mingyu was sitting completely topless in front of Long Chen who brought his face closer to her breasts and playfully bit her soft mountain peaks before he began sucking on them. Mingyu gave a light moan as she closed her eyes.

After 5 minutes, Long Chen removed his lips from her perky mountains.

He looked towards Zhiqing who was fully focused on sucking his little Chen.

He placed his hands on her shoulders and made her stand up. She wasn't willing to take his sword out of her mouth, but she still stood up.

Long Chen also stood up as he removed her clothes along with his clothes. Even Mingyu was completely bare now.

He held Mingyu's hands as he pulled her towards him on the bed.

He was lying on the bed while he made her sit on top of him. His sword entered her body making her give a loud moan. She started moving her body up and down making his heavenly sword reach the depths of her soul. Her moans never stopped for even a second as she savored the feeling of Long Chen inside her.

Long Chen told Zhiqing to come close to him. She climbed on his bed and brought her face closer to his face as she kissed him.

Long Chen ravished Mingyu for 3 hours straight before she fell down to his chest tired. He placed her on the bed gently and grabbed Zhiqing's waist as he made her position herself in such a way that she was on her knees and hands while her butt was facing him.

Long Chen positioned his stiff pole near her entrance and pushed it inside. He placed his hands on her waist as he increased his movement.

Pat *Pat*

Sound of flesh hitting flesh was mixed with the loud moans of Zhiqing who was filled with pleasure at the moment. She kept enjoying every stroke that reached the depths of her heart and filled her with satisfaction.

Long Chen stayed in the same position and without stopping, he caught both her hand and pulled them towards him. The sounds intensified as the night passed away.

It was early morning. Long Chen, Mingyu, and Zhiqing were sleeping on the bed and none of them had the least bit of clothes on their bodies.

Long Chen was the first one to wake up. He gazed at the beautiful sleeping faces of the girls on either side of him. He gave each of them a gentle kiss before he stood up and got dressed.

The first thing he did was to use his divine sense to see if the people from the Beast Hall were still here or not, but he didn't find any of them.

'I guess they have left for the North Moon Empire,' Long Chen thought as he stopped using his divine sense.

Mingyu and Zhiqing also woke up and they began getting dressed.

"Are you preparing to leave?" Mingyu asked.

"Yeah, I need to finish the stuff. At most I will take a month to finish this whole chapter of my life," Long Chen told them.

"I think you girls should stay here for a little longer. The North Moon Empire is going to be a dangerous place with all those peak sects targeting each other. I'll come to take you after I'm done with the troublesome stuff. As I said, it will take a month at best," Long Chen said.

"Is this going to be dangerous?" Zhiqing asked.

"Don't worry. You guys know that I have skills that can help me if things go south," he said.

"Isn't that what you said last time as well? Before you were kidnapped by the people of the Dark Soul Sect?" Mingyu told him.

"Ah, that was different! It's different this time. At that time, I had already used my skill before the invasion began, but this time, I'll keep those things in mind. Not even the god can stop me now," Long Chen said, smilingly.

Chapter 362 - 362: Instant Breakthrough

"I believe what you're saying is true, but still you should always have a backup plan," Mingyu said.

"I have 3 back up plans to escape if the first one fails. Don't worry, I myself don't wish to find myself in the same situation as that time ever again," Long Chen said as he remembered the moment when he faced Lang Jing in the forest.

"Oh right, I just noticed that the both of you broke through. Mingyu, you're already at the 6th stage of Earth Realm and Zhiqing, you broke through to Earth Realm as well?" Long Chen said in surprise.

"Yeah, We were lucky. I found some Qi Crystals when we were coming here. We used them to break through," Mingyu said smilingly.

"Qi crystals? That is indeed lucky. Anyway, I'm happy for you," Long Chen told them.

"I'll leave now as I snuck out without telling anyone back there. I'll be back to take you, alright?" Long Chen told the girls who nodded their heads.

Long Chen kissed both of them once before he left the room and walked up to Ji Shan's room.

"Who are you? And what are you doing inside our palace?!"

Long Chen was just about to knock on the doors of Ji Shan when the Crown Prince arrived there and saw him.

"I'm the friend of Prince Ji Shan, my name is Wu Chen," Long Chen explained as he knocked on the door.

"Oh? You're that poor friend that disturbed our dinner last night? What the heck are you doing inside the palace? Is this a place where people like you can barge in?" The Crown Prince scolded Long Chen.

Ji Shan opened the door and saw his brother and Long Chen facing each other.

"Is there a problem?" Ji Shan asked. Although he was asking Long Chen, the Crown Prince thought that he was asking him.

"Yes! There is a big problem! This trash friend of yours thinks that he can barge inside the Royal Palace? Shan! Did you bring him inside?" The Crown Prince asked.

"Yes, I called him here. Also, I would appreciate it if you stopped calling him trash. His position is equivalent to the person you were sucking up to last night. So please don't create trouble for Father and our Empire," Ji Shan said as he glared at Ji Shen.

"Who was sticking up to who? If you are talking about Master Jichuan, then I was just getting to know him! He is the head disciple of the Beast Hall after all! Who the heck is your friend to be compared to him!" The Crown Prince said as he glared back at Ji Shan.

"Crown Prince. One should be righteous and not lose themselves in arrogance. Our sword Dao teaches us that only the righteous have the right to live in this world!" Long Chen said as he released some of his powerful aura.

"W-who are you?" The Crown Prince asked in surprise. He was somewhat intimidated by Long Chen's words.

"This simple guy is the Head Disciple of the Mighty Sword Sect, Wu Chen. I was passing by here and decided to meet an old friend Ji Shan. I don't mind if you call me trash, but I do mind when you call a disciple of the Mighty Sword Sect a trash! That's insulting to my sect and my fellow disciples! I need an explanation! Why should I not inform this to my Elder and have my Elder come here for answers?" Long Chen said as he glanced at the Crown Prince Ji Shen.

He even released a little more of his aura to intimidate the guy.

"T-t-this... Please forgive me, Master Chen! This poor guy made a mistake! I'm the trash, you aren't! Please forgive me," The Crown Prince got down to his knees and started asking for forgiveness. He realized the intensity of his mistake and how it can even cause harm to the empire and even his death.

"Is a verbal apology enough for such a daring mistake? Give me something worthy to show your sincerity. Something that's on the same level as the respect of our sect," Long Chen said.

"I-i-i have something. I don't believe that it is enough to show my complete sincerity, but it's the most precious thing that I possess," The Crown Prince said as he brought something out of his storage ring. There was a small pill in his hand.

Long Chen took the pill in his hand and observed it.

"Instant Breakthrough Dan?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"Exactly. It was something that I found because of great luck. I believe that only a few rare alchemists in the whole world can make this pill. It is really precious for me, but I'm giving it to the Master to atone for my mistake," The Crown Prince said.

Although he had a sincere expression on his face on the outside, on the inside, he was cursing his luck for coming here this early in the morning and for offending this calamity. He has assumed that Long Chen was a poor friend of Ji Shan that was here to ask for money.

'How could I have known that he is not a beggar but someone from the Mighty Sword Sect. A Head disciple of the Mighty Sword Sect, Someone on the same footing as Master Jichuan of the Beast Hall,' He thought.

'The Instant Breakthrough Pill. Only an Earth Grade Alchemist can make a pill like this. Unfortunately, a person can only use one pill in his lifetime. No matter how many pills he eats after that, they won't be effective,' He thought as he observed the pill.

'I am keeping it for the future. It's not beneficial to use it when my cultivation is higher,' Long Chen placed the pill in his storage ring.

"Ji Shan, I'm going now. I'll meet you in the future when I return," Long Chen informed Ji Shan.

"You're leaving? So soon?" Ji Shan asked in surprise.

"Yea, I already told you that I have some important things to do. I'll see you later," Long Chen told him before he walked towards the exit.

Long Chen left the palace and sat on his Sun Destroying Condor before he started going back towards the North Moon Empire.

After a short trip, Long Chen found himself back in the North Moon Empire. He landed in front of the hotel his team was staying in and walked towards his room on the first floor.

As he stepped on the first floor, he saw Mi Yao standing in front of her door as she glared at him.

"Where did you go?" She asked.

"I went to take a walk. Did something happen?" Long Chen asked back.

"For a walk? Are you serious right now? We're here for such an important thing and you go for a 2 day walk? Do you think this is a joke?" She started scolding Long Chen.

"Don't be so hyper. It's not like that place is appearing anytime soon. Anyway, don't stand in the hallway and scream. Come inside the room if you have something to talk about," Long Chen said as he opened the door and entered his room.

Mi Yao also entered his room without taking her eyes off of him.

"Tell me honestly where you went?!" She said as she closed the door behind her.

"I went to meet my lover," Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"Stop joking! Do you know how risky it is for you to roam outside alone? Most of the sects are already in the city. You're the person that has our token. If you are killed, our chances of entering that place die with you!" She said to him.

"Don't worry about that. I am not going to die any time soon," Long Chen replied as he picked up a water bottle and started drinking the water.

Chapter 363 - 363: The One That Took All The Lives Universe

"You can't be sure of that! If you want to go outside like that, I would suggest that you give the Divine Heaven Sect token to someone else. Give it to Mu Zheng and you can go die for all I care! Just don't spoil our mission," Mi Yao told Long Chen.

"As I said, I don't plan on dying so stop being so eager to take the token from me. I'm not giving the token to anyone," Long Chen replied to her without the least bit of care.

"Then don't leave! Also, I was waiting for you to tell you something. I went to the exact location where the Divine Heaven Sect was expected to appear. From the disturbance in the natural Qi of that area, I'd say that in about 96 hours, it will appear. So you should stay prepared," She told him.

"Hmm? It's the same as you had initially predicted. I think we should get there faster as you might be wrong here as well," Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Oh, right. I've already seen people from the Beast Hall and the team of the Mighty Sword Sect. I believe there would be more righteous sects as well. Can we enter the Divine Heaven Sect without having to fight all of them? There's a chance that the Righteous Sects will attack us without giving us a chance to even enter," He further added.

"True, the righteous sects will definitely go crazy after they see us, but we aren't alone," Mi Yao told Long Chen with a smirk on her face.

"What do you mean?" He inquired.

"What I mean to say is that we are not the only evil sect in the world," She answered.

"More evil sects are coming? how many?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"There are 20 Divine Heaven Sect's tokens of appreciation in the world. Amongst those 20 tokens, Nine are with the evil sects while the 10 are with the righteous sects," She answered Long Chen.

"That's only 19, what about the last Token?" Long Chen inquired.

"The 20th token hadn't been found in the last 1000 years, so I don't know who has it," Mi Yao replied.

"So it's 10 against 9, it's better than 1 against 19 that I assumed," Long Chen chuckled as he said.

"Not really. Amongst the 9 evil sects, the Blood Devouring Sect, Dual Cultivation Sect, and the Profound Yin Snatching Sect are not close to us at all. In fact, it wouldn't be wrong to say that there's enmity between us," Mi Yao said.

"Hah, Awesome. You don't even have closeness amongst the evil sects. I should've expected that. Anyways, is the Dual Cultivation Sect what I'm thinking it is?" Long Chen inquired.

"I don't know what you're thinking, but the Dual Cultivation Sect disciples choose the path of pleasure to increase their cultivation. I don't like that sect one bit. They are vulgar and overall bad. They kidnap mortals and use them as cultivation cauldrons. The males use the girls to boost their cultivation until the girls die whereas the girls use the males," She said.

"The Dark Soul Sect kills people as well, right? You yourself must have killed many mortals," Long Chen said. In his eyes, they were all killers. The slight difference was that the Dual Cultivation Sect used the practices that disgusted him the most.

"No matter how bad our sect is, we never kidnap thousands of people and take their lives to increase our cultivation!" Mi Yao said with a proud look on her face.

"Maybe, or maybe not. There are so many people in the Dark Soul Sect. You can't say for sure that no one has done something like that," Long Chen casually said as he walked towards the window of his room and looked out on the street.

"Why are you accusing our sect like that! If you weren't a Prime Disciple, I would have decapitated you for such blasphemy," Mi Yao bellowed as she glared at Long Chen's back.

"Don't get me wrong. I'm not saying that the sect is bad. From what you've told me about the Dark Soul Sect, our sect is a hundred times better than the Dual Cultivation Sect! But what I'm saying is that we are all evil at the end of the day. Even if we aren't as evil as the Dual Cultivation Sect, we are still bad," Long Chen said.

"Hah, So what! Even the righteous sect people kill innocents!" She responded.

"True. Not only the sects but most of the cultivators, in general, have taken a life. Even the mortals have taken the lives of other mortals. This world is just like that. It's filled with holes. We all know that it's wrong, but it can't be changed. Not without the absolute power at least," Long Chen said.

"Hah, You talk like a scholar. Do you want to change the world?" Mi Yao laughed out loud as she said.

"I can't. I don't hold the power, but maybe I can one day," Long Chen muttered.

"Do you think that the God who created us wanted this? The humans chase after immortality, the humans kill others for fame, for power, and for greed. This whole thing is messed up. No one is happy in this screwed up world, " Long Chen said.

"Those who think that they are happy are under the illusion of happiness. If they really opened their eyes and simply looked, they would realize the reality. No one is truly happy. People are born, people die, people kill, people get killed. The only thing that's worth something is the family, but even that is screwed up when family members try to kill family members," Long Chen said as he thought about this world from what he had experienced.

"That's right. We are all living under the illusion of happiness trying to do what we think is right for us. Trying to make our lives better with each passing day. We cultivate to achieve immortality, and we kill so that we could survive. I agree that this world is not perfect, but this is all we have," Mi Yao answered him in full seriousness.

"If you become a god, will you change everything?" Long Chen asked.

"Me? That's impossible. I don't even dream of reaching the heaven realm, let alone becoming the god of this universe," Mi Yao replied.

"Just imagine that you succeed. Will you do something to change this world?" Long Chen asked.

"What can I do? Is it really possible to change this world?" She inquired.

"It should be possible. Imagine if every person had immortality. People could live for eternity. No one would chase after cultivation. Won't that world be amazing?" Long Chen said.

"Hah, That would indeed be good. I wouldn't mind having immortality," Mi Yao laughed out loud as she said.

"Or would it be better to just destroy this whole universe? End all this suffering?" Long Chen muttered.

"If you do that, that would just make you the biggest Evil. The person that took the lives of the whole universe. Not a bad title I must say," Mi Yao said with an amused smile on her face.

"Sorry for ranting. I was just having some random thoughts," Long Chen said as he turned back and looked at her, smilingly.

"Don't worry about it. Everyone has some strange thoughts once in a while. It's not like you're going to have the power to do anything like that," Mi Yao chuckled as she said.

"Maybe," Long Chen answered her.

"Oh right. Don't go anywhere today. Just stay in your room and cultivate," She told Long Chen before she walked out of his room.

"Don't leave the room? Sorry, but I have someone to find," Long Chen said as he glanced back at the window.

Chapter 364 - 364: Marriage

Long Chen spread his divine sense in the hotel to see if Mi Yao had entered her room or not.

Although he was glad to see that she was in her room, he was unhappy at seeing something that he didn't wish to see.

Mu Zheng and Su Zhen were both in the same room. Su Zhen was standing against the wall while Mu Zheng filled her up from behind.

"Those guys can't control themselves," Long Chen muttered as he shifted his focus.

"Hmm? Where are the people of the Mighty Sword Sect?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise. He couldn't see the people of the Mighty Sword Sect.

"Were they denied rooms here? That shouldn't be what happened. There are so many empty rooms here. Why would they leave?" Long Chen frowned as he fell in deep thought.

No matter how much he thought, he couldn't come up with a conclusion.

Ultimately he just thought that they left because they didn't like the inn. That was possible. It was said that the people of Mighty Sword Sect were humble, but they didn't stay in the places that they didn't like.

"Although the hotel is good, maybe it was not up to their taste," Long Chen muttered.

'Whatever, I'll see them in a few days anyway,' Long Chen thought.

"For now, I need to find that Meng. I need my answers," Long Chen muttered as he left the room and stealthily passed through the hallway and left the hotel.

He wore a normal mask to cover his face as he walked through the city. There were quite a lot of people that had seen his face. One of them was the Master of Meng, Ling, and Ruan.

The Grand Elder of Thunder Giant Sect was standing right in front of him when Long Chen had killed his disciple, Ruan, and managed to escape from him.

He was sure that the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect must hate him to his core. There was no way that he would forget his face.

"Now should I go everywhere in the city using my Divine sense to find her? It would be so easy if I had a picture of her," Long Chen muttered, but that's when he saw a poster on a wall.

"What the heck?!" Long Chen exclaimed as he walked up to the poster.

The poster had a portrait of Meng who was sitting on a chair and a boy that was standing behind her. They looked like a married couple.

The strangest thing was that the person who stood behind her was someone he had seen 2 days ago.

The boy was someone from the Mighty Sword Sect. He also had a badge on his chest that was distinct from the badges of the other team members. Long Chen had guessed that the boy was their team leader at that time. He never expected that the head disciple of the Mighty Sword Sect would be with Meng. He started reading the poster.

"The Princess of the North Moon Empire has been betrothed to the Young Master of the Mighty Sword Sect. Their Marriage will be held on the beautiful night of the full moon in the Royal Palace. Everyone is invited to arrive in front of the palace as the Royal Palace will distribute a bronze coin to every citizen that comes to join on the auspicious occasion,"

'The night of the full moon? Isn't that in 2 days? They'll be getting married? I don't understand. Is the Mighty Sword Sect here to explore the Divine Heaven Sect or to marry?' Long Chen thought with a frown.

"The Mighty Sword Sect guys have the wrong priorities it seems," Long Chen muttered

"Hey, Did I hear you talk about the Mighty Sword Sect?" Someone called from behind.

Long Chen turned back and saw a young boy who looked to be 19-20 years old standing there.

There was a heavy sword on his back and he wore the clothes of the Mighty Sword Sect disciples.

"Yeah, I was reading the announcement," Long Chen replied.

"You said that the Mighty Sword Sect guys have the wrong priorities. No matter how much I think about it, it feels as if you were looking down at our sect," the boy said as he glared at Long Chen.

"Of course I said that. You guys came from so far just to marry a girl like that? What else can I do if not look down on you," Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"You dare!" The boy roared as he pulled his sword and pointed it towards Long Chen.

"Come on man, don't make the mistakes. As far as I can see, none of your teammates are nearby," Long Chen said as a wry smile appeared on his face, but his mask hid that.

"So what! I don't need them to take care of you!" The boy said.

"I guess the rumors were just that, the rumors," Long Chen sighed.

"What do you mean?" The boy asked with a frown.

"I had heard people say that the disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect are the most righteous, but what you're doing proves otherwise. You guys are just as snotty as others," Long Chen replied.

The boy's face turned red as he glared at Long Chen, "You! Of course, we are righteous! Me pointing my sword at you doesn't prove otherwise! You insulted our sect and as it's disciples, it's our duty to protect its prestige! I can still forgive you if you apologize to me and to my sect," the boy said.

"Apology? I don't think I've ever apologized to anyone for stating my honest opinion and I don't plan on doing it today. Let me leave without any problems, I'm not in the mood to kill today," Long Chen said as he started walking away from the man.

"I told you to stop!" The boy let out loud as he ran towards Long Chen and swung his heavy sword at his back.

Sigh

Long Chen sighed as he stopped. He appeared behind the man and kicked his back.

The boy flew to the front and crashed on the ground. His sword fell out of his hand.

The boy stood up in a hurry and turned back, but just as he turned back, a hand grabbed his neck.

Long Chen tightened his grip around the boy's throat as he picked him up.

"I told you that I don't wish to involve myself in unnecessary drama today, but I guess you don't believe me," Long Chen muttered as he thrashed the boy in the ground.

"Urghh,"

The boy groaned in pain as his back hit the ground that was cracked from the impact.

Long Chen again raised the boy in the air before he again thrashed him on the ground.

There were many people watching the scene, but none of them dared to involve themselves in the matter.

"Now I do have a principle in my life. I try to never leave a person behind that I have established an enmity with. So as much as I hate killing you, you must die," Long Chen said to the boy whose eyes were filled with terror.

Long Chen pulled his sword out of his storage ring.

"No! Leave me! I'm from the Mighty Sw..." the boy started screaming, but before he could finish his sentence, a sword stabbed his heart.

Long Chen threw the body on the ground before he walked up to the boy and sliced off his head from his body.

Long Chen tried to never leave bodies with their head intact as that would defeat his purpose.

"You killed our junior brother Ming, I'll kill you!" A voice came from behind. Long Chen heard the footsteps of what sounded like they belonged to more than one person.

Chapter 365 - 365: Devil Worshipping

It was a world where miraculous pills like the Life-Giving Pill existed, that could bring a person back to life as long as he was not dead for over 10 minutes, but even that pill would not work as long as the person didn't have a head attached to his body. That's why Long Chen never left bodies with head intact. Especially of the powerful cultivators that could become a threat to him in the future.

Long Chen was about to leave when he heard a voice from behind.

"You killed our Junior Brother Lu! I'll kill you!"

Long Chen turned back and saw 3 disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect.

All 3 of them were stronger than the boy that he had killed. As he saw their Cultivation, he was able to guess that even the strongest of them was just as strong as Su Zhen from his team.

"Take the body and leave. At Least you can walk now. If you died as well, who will take the bodies back?" Long Chen told the men as he turned back to leave.

He didn't want to involve himself in the matter and just wanted to let them leave if they didn't create trouble for him, but what he feared did happen as one of the 3 men attacked him with a sword skill.

A bright arc of light came towards Long Chen's back like lightning.

Long Chen created a shield from his Qi using the skill of the Dark Soul Sect.

Even though the shield was made from his Qi, it was still as strong as a 3rd refinement gold grade artifact. The attack landed on the shield, but it wasn't able to break through the defense.

"So you've made your decision," Long Chen muttered as he glared at the men.

He gripped his sword firmly as he moved towards the guys like lightning.

Long Chen attacked with his King's Sword. His main target was the strongest Cultivator of the team and the person that had just attacked him.

Long Chen's sword clashed with the men's Sword. Even though there was no difference between the cultivation realms of Long Chen and the guys, his actual battle strength was much more powerful.

The boy was pushed 10 steps back because of the heavy impact but Long Chen didn't give him the chance to breathe as he attacked the man once more.

The man used his sword once more to defend, but he hadn't expected that Long Chen was able to make a sword of his own just by using his Qi.

The Qi Sword stabbed through the chest of the man and penetrated the man's heart.

"Die!"

The other two men thrust their swords towards Long Chen's back, but before their swords could touch his back, Long Chen used his teleportation as he appeared behind the man.

Their Swords penetrated their partner's body instead. The man's chest was already bleeding, but the situation was made worse as 2 more swords stabbed his chest. The man died instantly.

The two Mighty Sword Sect cultivators stood there in shock. Long Chen swung his sword from behind and cut off the neck of both the cultivators.

Their heads were separated from their bodies. Long Chen walked up to the body of the man that was still intact as he cut off his head as well.

"You can't blame me. I told you to leave," Long Chen muttered as he walked away.

"Are you going to attack me as well? Or are you more sensible?" Long Chen abruptly turned back to look to his back.

There was a man standing amongst the crowd who wore a cloak. Long Chen was gazing at the same man.

"Kekeke, I can't believe that you were able to notice me in the crowd of so many. Anyway, don't worry about me. I won't attack you. It's not like I have any friendship with the arrogant self-righteous idiots of the Mighty Sword Sect," the man said.

"Good," Long Chen replied as he walked away.

As Long Chen walked away from the crowd and got to an empty place, he wore a cloak.

He removed the full face mask that he was wearing and wore a mask that covered 3/4th of his face. It covered the top half of his face and the right side of the bottom half.

"You say that you have no interest in fighting me, yet you chase after me. Shall I consider you a friend, an enemy, or a stalker?" Long Chen asked out loud without looking back.

"Oh, man. You're better than I thought. You can see me even when I hide my aura. You're really incredible. Which evil sect are you from?" The cloaked man behind Long Chen said. He had been following Long Chen since the moment he left.

"Why do you think that I'm from the evil sect? Just because I killed people from the Mighty Sword Sect? Are you saying that the Righteous Sect Disciples don't kill each other?" Long Chen inquired.

"They can kill each other, but the Righteous idiots won't do it so openly right before such an important occasion," The cloaked man said.

"Important occasion?" Long Chen Inquired.

The cloaked man started laughing out loud as he heard Long Chen's question.

"Don't pretend to be ignorant. You know that I'm talking about the matter of the Divine Heaven Sect," The man said.

"Which sect are you from?" He asked Long Chen.

"First you answer. Which Sect are you from?" Long Chen asked as he finally stopped and looked back.

"Kekeke, This poor guy is from the Devil Worshipping Sect of the east," The man replied.

"Hmm, Do you have proof? How can I believe that you're from the Devil Worshipping Sect?" Long Chen asked.

"This poor guy only has this small thing as a proof," the man said as he pulled out his sword.

There was a blood-red character carved on the blade of the sword.

"Strength," Long Chen read the character.

"Indeed, you're from the Devil Worshipping Sect. I've heard about this. Only those guys use the sword carvings like that," Long Chen said.

"From the size of the character and its color, I guess you're their chief disciple, aren't you?" Long Chen inquired.

"Good observation. I'm Manxiang Li, the chief disciple of the Devil Worshipping sect. Which sect are you a chief disciple of?" The boy nodded his head as he answered, before asking a question of his own.

"How do you know that I'm the chief disciple of a sect?" Long Chen asked with an interested smile on his face.

"I saw you fight. You were quite strong. Even I'm doubtful if I could win against you or not. There's no way that you're a normal Disciple of a Sect, you're a chief disciple as well," The man said.

"Indeed, that's no point in hiding. Our Sects aren't on bad terms and we'll meet in the Divine Heaven Sect as well, I'm the head disciple of the Dark Soul Sect," Long Chen replied.

"The Dark Soul Sect? Isn't Mu Zheng the strongest in the Dark Soul Sect? I've met him before. You aren't him," The man said doubtfully.

"I'm not Mu Zheng, I'm the new head disciple of the Dark Soul Sect. Also, Mu Zheng is here as well. You'll meet him later on," The man said.

"Oh? Did you push him down? Hahahahaha, I can't wait to talk to him about that. That guy was just too arrogant. Even I wanted to beat him to a pulp on many occasions, but I didn't because of the relationship of our sects," Manxiang Li said to Long Chen.

"He's arrogant alright, but who isn't nowadays? Look at the guys from the Mighty Sword Sect for example. Just because of their position, they have all gotten arrogant. I know that I'm arrogant as well, but I know when things are against me and when I should retreat," Long Chen said.

Chapter 366 - 366: It's Not Love

"True. So, are you planning to spoil the wedding?" Manxiang Li asked Long Chen.

"Why do you think I will do that?" Long Chen asked with an interested look on his face.

"You were looking at that poster so intently, it was easy to guess. You either hate the princess of the North Moon Empire, or you hate the guy she's getting married to. Either way, I believe that spoiling the wedding should be your plan," Manxiang Li explained.

"Why are you so interested in my plan? Even if I plan to spoil the wedding, what does it have to do with you?" Long Chen inquired.

"True. It doesn't have anything to do with me, but I'm a sucker for chaos. I believe that this would be fun, so I want to join you," Manxiang Li told Long Chen.

"Hmm, you want to join me in creating chaos? You know the elder of the Mighty Sword Sect will be there, right? They might invite other righteous Sects as well. The Beast Hall might be there too. Are you willing to die for your thirst for chaos?" Long Chen asked.

"What's a life without excitement. Dying in excitement is better than living with the same old boredom. Also, I believe you won't be stupid enough to face them head-on. It's going to be fun either way," Manxiang Li said with a wide grin on his face.

"I heard some things about the Devil Worshipping Sect, but I guess they are right. The sect is indeed filled with crazy people," Long Chen said.

"Hahaha, Maybe. I can't talk about others but I'm indeed crazy for adventures that make me enjoy the boring life," Manxiang Li replied.

"Hmm, You guys are still better than the disciples of the Dual Cultivation Sect,"

"I guess I can use your help. Things have gotten complicated with the addition of the Mighty Sword Sect, but that's no reason to give up," Long Chen said as he glanced at Manxiang Li.

"Anyway, Where is your team staying?" Long Chen asked.

"My team? It's already in position and waiting at the location where the sect will appear," He said.

"So fast? Isn't the sect going to appear after quite some time?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"It's alright. They've set up a camp there. I'm sure they'll be fine," Manxiang Li chuckled.

"What are you doing in the city by the way? Shouldn't you be there as well?" He asked in confusion.

"I was there, but then I started getting bored, and then I snuck out," Manxiang Li said as a grin appeared on his face.

"I should've expected that," Long Chen muttered.

"Let's go, get a drink. We still need to come up with a proper plan about how we can crash the party," Long Chen said as he started walking through the streets.

He had seen a bar along the way, that's where he decided to go as he didn't know much about this city at the places that sold the best drink.

Manxiang Li followed after him until he caught up.

"So, who are you after? The girl or the boy? It should be the boy, right? I don't like those righteous idiots either," Manxiang Li started talking as they walked.

"It's the girl I'm after," Long Chen answered.

"Girl? Is it love? Have you fallen in love with her? Do you want to snatch her? I guess it's not bad. Love is a good motivation," Manxiang Li let out as he observed Long Chen.

"It's not love. Quite on the contrary, it's hate. I hate that girl," Long Chen responded.

"You hate that girl? Why? Did she offend you somehow? How is she still alive after offending you?" Manxiang Li asked in shock.

"She tried to kill me and managed to escape. It's now that I found her again, she won't live for long," Long Chen answered.

"Oh? Then she deserves to die. Those that try to kill us should never be left alive, It doesn't matter if they are strong or weak, they need to die," Manxiang Li said.

"Yeah, she will die," Long Chen said.

They got to the bar and entered the place.

"Give us your best drinks," Long Chen told the bartender.

"That would be 2 silver coins each," The bartender replied.

Long Chen brought a gold coin out of his storage ring and placed it on the table.

"Here, get the drinks," Long Chen said.

The bartender hurriedly took that gold coin and left to get them the drinks. As Long Chen had emptied out the treasury of the Dementia Kingdom, he didn't feel like there was any need to be stingy about it.

"That's the style I like. Worthy of a head disciple," Manxiang Li laughed out loud as he sat beside Long Chen.

The bartender came with the drinks and served them.

Long Chen and Manxiang Li began drinking.

"It's not as good as the one from the Dementia Kingdom," Long Chen let out as he placed the empty glass back on the table.

"Hmm? The Dementia Kingdom? Are their drinks really that great?" Long Chen inquired.

"You never drank it?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"I haven't," Manxiang Li said as he shook his head.

"You should go there after you go back. You'll be glad that you went there. Their drink works like a miracle for the first time drinkers," Long Chen said, smilingly.

"Hmm? I'll do that if you're suggesting. I look forward to having a taste of that," Manxiang Li laughed as he agreed.

"Hah, I'm sure that you'll thank me for suggesting you to go there when you drink it," Long Chen replied as he poured more in his glass and drank it at once.

While Long Chen and Manxiang Li were drinking peacefully, the city was going through a commotion.

The Disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect stood at the front of the alley when they stared at the dead bodies of their fellow disciples.

There was a boy that stood in the lead. He was Ru Shan, the head disciple of the Mighty Sword Sect. He clenched his fist tightly as he stared at the bodies.

The Princess of the North Moon Empire, Meng was standing with Ru Shan.

"Who did this Meng?" Ru Shan asked.

"The guards asked around and they informed me that it was a masked person. It looked like a boy that was around 6 feet tall. He had long black hair and he wore normal clothes," Meng answered.

"Bring me the people that watched it when it happened," Ru Shan said.

"Guards! Bring the witnesses," Meng Ordered.

The Royal Guards brought 1 man and presented them in front of Ru Shan.

Although there were more people that watched it, most of them had left and only these 1 guy could be found so far.

"Did you see them die?" Ru Shan asked the man.

"I-i did," He answered.

"Tell me what actually happened. Don't miss out on any details," Ru Shan said in a heavy tone.

"Y-yes Master. Although I did not see how it started, I did see him trying to stop the masked man," The man said as he pointed towards one of the dead bodies.

When the masked man didn't stop, he attacked him from behind. I did not know how it happened, but the next thing I saw was the masked man standing near that boy sad he moved his sword like lightning and killed him.

He again began to leave, but that's when these 3 arrived.

They stopped him. There was some exchange of words amongst them that I did not manage to hear, but as the masked man turned to leave, that boy attacked him," The man said as he pointed towards a different body.

Chapter 367 - 367: Kidnap

"I don't know how that masked man did it, but he was able to use his Qi to form a shield that protected him from the attack. Then he began attacking. He was so fast before I could even see anything, the 3 guys were dead. The masked man left with another person that was wearing a cloak," The man replied.

"The Dark Soul Sect! I would never forgive you guys!" Ru Shan let out as he clenched his teeth.

Meng looked at Ru Shan and wondered how he found out that the masked man was from the Dark Soul Sect. She decided to ask him.

"Do you know the guy that he described?" She asked.

"I don't know who he is, but I do know about the skill that is used for making things with Qi. It's one of the top 3 skills of the Dark Soul Sect!" Ru Shan replied.

"I can't wait for the day when he appears before me, to kill them! I want their location! They must be in the city," Ru Shan told Meng.

"Right. I'll put the Royal Guards to work. They should be able to find the person that matches the description. How about we take the bodies back for now? These should be like your brothers. Let's take care of the bodies with proper rituals," Meng suggested.

Ru Shan nodded his head as he walked forth and kept the bodies in his storage ring before he left with his teammates and entered the carriages.

Meng stayed behind to tell the guards about what they had to do before she entered the carriage as well.

The Carriage drove away towards the Royal Palace and the guards began searching for the masked man.

The leader of the guards was given a transmission talisman that he was ordered to use when they found the masked man.

Two boys were standing on top of a building as they watched the carriages driving away.

"Interesting, Someone dared to kill 4 guys of the Mighty Sword Sect. Almost half of their team is already wiped out. They should have been one of the

strongest teams, but now they became one of the weakest," The Vice-Captain of the Beast Hall's team, Wu Ten said as he chuckled.

"Nope, the true strength of that team is their captain Ru Shan and their vice-captain, Light Moon. Even if we combined the battle strength of all those that died, it wouldn't even be equal to 10% of Ru Shan's actual battle Strength," Jichuan, the leader of Beast Hall team explained.

"I guess every team is like that. Just like our team's weak members are not even close to you in strength. The power balance of all the teams should be something similar. There can only be a single head disciple in the sect that's had the highest potential and that's given more care," Wu Ten said.

"Are you saying that I gained my strength just because I was the disciple of the Hall Master?" Jichuan asked as he glanced at Wu Ten.

"Ah, N-not at all. You are different. You should have been able to become stronger even without the help of the Hall Master," Wu Ten explained.

"Whatever. Let's focus on the main topic. From the way Ru Shan screamed the name of the Dark Soul Sect, I guess it was done by their disciples. It means that they are in the city already. Let go on a hunt. We can find them and capture them... after breaking a few of their bones," Jichuan said as a smirk appeared on his face.

"Of course. We have so much free time today, what better way to spend it other than hunting some dark souls," Wu Ten responded as he laughed.

"I think I have an idea how I can make it memorable," Long Chen said as a smile appeared on his face.

"Hmm? How?" Manxiang Li asked with an interested look on his face.

"Let's leave this place. I'll tell you the plan," Long Chen said as he stood up and walked towards the door.

"Hey, wait for me!" Manxiang Li called out before he gulped down the last of his drink and ran after Long Chen.

They got to an empty-looking street after walking for a few minutes.

"Hey, how long are you going to keep the suspense? Tell me!" Manxiang Li let out with an eager look on his face.

"I'll kidnap the bride," Long Chen replied.

"Kidnap? What then? Will you fulfill your weird desires with her? I would expect something like that from the Dual Cultivation Sect members, not you," Manxiang Li said in disappointment.

"Why would I do something like that with the girl I hate? I only fulfill my weird desires with the girls I love! Listen to the whole plan first," Long Chen said in annoyance.

"Oh, I guess I misunderstood you. I apologize for that. What's the real plan?" Manxiang Li asked.

"The Real plan is to kidnap the girl tonight. After that I..." Long Chen began describing the plan.

"What?! Are you serious? Hahahaha, It is indeed a good plan. I like it!" Manxiang Li said, smilingly.

"It's good that you like it because I would need your help with it. Your role is really important in all of this," Long Chen said.

"It's fun. Of course, I'll join," Manxiang Li said, smilingly.

"There's still 8 hours before it's night. Where will you stay till then?" Long Chen asked.

"What do you mean where? Of course, I'll stay with you," Manxiang Li told Long Chen with an innocent look on his face.

"Alright. Come with me. I'll get you a room where you can stay for the day. It's about to be quite a hectic day since 4 disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect were killed. There's no need to get in a fight before it's night," Long Chen said as he walked back.

He walked to a different hotel that was quite far from his original hotel.

They entered the hotel together and Long Chen booked the rooms for 2 since he didn't want to go back before he was done with this.

They got the rooms that were next to each other. They both entered their rooms as they began cultivating to pass their time.

Time kept passing slowly. The guards were searching far and wide for the masked man, but they couldn't find any. They even asked the receptionist of the hotel that Long Chen was currently in.

Long Chen wasn't wearing a mask when he entered the hotel. It was because even though Long Chen had changed the masks, he felt like it was quite troublesome.

The chances of the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect coming out of his sect were too low and the chances of them meeting him were even lower. Also, Long Chen wasn't as weak as last time when he faced the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect. At that time, he didn't even engage in a fight as he used the Spatial Travel to escape.

Now it was completely different. Long Chen was much stronger than before and he was sure that even if the Grand Elder tried his best, he wouldn't have an upper hand in a fight with him.

That's why he had removed his mask after finding an empty street. He even told Manxiang Li to remove the cloak as it was too attention-grabbing just like his mask. Long Chen had already guessed that the people would begin looking for the masked guy.

Even when he went to the bar with Manxiang Li, he wasn't wearing a mask.

As the receptionist denied seeing any masked man, the guards left the hotel after asking a few more people.

They resumed their search for the masked man.

While the guards were searching, they did see 5 masked people walking together. One of those 5 people was wearing the same mask that Long Chen wore.

Chapter 368 - 368: That Trash Was Your Brother?

The Chief of the Guards hurriedly used the transmission talisman as he sent the message to Meng.

Meng conveyed the information to Ru Shan who promptly left the palace with other disciples.

"Hey! Stop right there! You aren't allowed to leave!" The captain of the guards told the masked people as he saw them walking away.

"Hmm? Is that trash talking to us?" the first masked person asked the others. From his voice, it was clear that he was a boy that wasn't much old.

"Kekeke, the kingdom is indeed amazing. Even the guards can talk to us like that," another masked guy said.

"Hehehe, Brother Liao, I quite like the bravery of that man. Can I please take him with me? I would love to use him as a cultivation cauldron. I want him on my bed. I can already imagine the pleasure I would get when I suck all his essence on the bed," The third person said. This time it sounded like a girl's voice.

"Sister Lin, I don't think he can even last 5 minutes in bed with you. We should just kill him and get it done with," the second masked guy said.

"Hmmp, Alright. I will let you do as you please this time, but you must spend time in bed with me instead!" the girl said.

"Kekeke, Why wouldn't !! The sexy sister Lin is the dream of all men. Who wouldn't like to make love to Sister Lin? Although we can't steal each other's essence because we cultivate the same technique, we can still have some wild fun," the guy replied with a grin on his face.

"Little Sister Mimi, How about you join us as well. I would love to take care of both of you," the guy looked towards the 4th masked person that was a girl as well.

The Chief of the Royal Guard stood there with a weird look on his face.

'Here I'm trying to stop them, and they're talking about having s*x?' He thought.

"Brother Liao, I don't think you will be able to take care of both of us. You might even find it difficult to satisfy sister Lin alone, let alone the two of us," Mimi replied.

"You can never know until we try. Let's see when we get back. If I win, you girls will become my slaves for 10 days?" Liao said.

"Senior Brother Liao, That's something you can talk about later. Aren't you forgetting something? Just kill those guys and then we can leave. The others must be waiting for us," The 5th masked person said. It was a guy as well.

"Sigh, Senior Brother Xiaoli, why haven't you killed him yet? Come-on, you always leave such boring work to me. Alright, I'll be fast," Liao said as he looked towards the Chief of the Royal Guards.

"You should die so that I can hurriedly establish my bet with my beautiful junior sisters," Liao said as he pointed his right-hand palm towards the Chief of the Guards.

"Burn to ashes for me?" He said.

A ball of fire appeared in front of his palm and attacked the guard chief before he could even react.

His body started burning and no matter what he did, he couldn't put out the fire.

His gruesome screams were heard by everyone on the street. Everyone who saw it started shivering at how easily the chief of the Royal Guards was killed. The Chief was a mighty existence in the eyes of the citizens, but it seemed as if he was nothing in the eyes of these guys. He was killed easily like an ant.

"What are all of you here for? Do you want to die as well? Scram!" Liao said to the remaining guards. The guards wanted to run away, but they didn't run as this was the city they were charged to protect.

If they ran away, they would be put to death along with their families.

"S-stop! Master Shan is coming here soon! He will kill you if you don't stop!" One of the guards said.

"I guess you want to die as well. Let me fulfill your desires," Liao said smilingly as he raised his hands again, but before he could attack, he started looking in a different direction. He could see 2 carriages coming towards him.

"Hmm? More people are coming to the party. I guess we are going to be late," Liao said.

The carriage stopped right before them as 6 boys came out of the carriage.

"Hmm? Mighty Sword Sect? Did you send these guards after us?" The first masked man, Xiaoli asked as he glanced at Ru Shan with his deep black eyes.

"Those badges? You are from the Dual Cultivation Sect?" Ru Shan asked as he noticed the badge on the chest of Xiaoli. It depicted a cauldron.

"Yes. You must be Ru Shan if I'm not wrong. You send the guards after us without even knowing who we are? Did you really think they could do anything to us? Looks like your Mighty Sword Sect doesn't put anyone in its eyes anymore. If you really want to go through it before the appearance day, I wouldn't mind putting some of you to sleep forever," Xiaoli said.

"Were you guys the ones that killed my junior brothers?" Ru Shan asked in full seriousness.

"Kekeke, was that guard your junior brother? I guess your sect is quite trashy. It selects anyone nowadays," Liao laughed out loud as he heard the words of Ru Shan.

"Silence!" Ru Shan bellowed in anger as he swung his sword. A bright arc of light came out of his beautiful sword and advanced towards Liao. This attack was powerful enough to kill Liao if it had managed to hit him, but the attack was stopped.

Xiaoli brought his sword out and made a slash as well. Their attacks collided and destroyed each other.

"Ru Shan, why do you attack my Junior Brother? You should fight with someone at your level. I wouldn't mind fighting you. It's not like our sects are on any good terms that would turn bad if I Kill you" Xiaoli said as he glared at Ru Shan.

"Answer me first! Were you the ones that killed my junior brothers this afternoon?" Ru Shan asked again

"We weren't the ones that killed your junior brothers, but we would definitely be the ones that kill you if you don't stop annoying us. Take it as my last warning and leave. It's still not the time to burn all the bridges," Xiaoli said to Ru Shan.

"Brother, Don't believe him! He is definitely lying. That man and his body build is the same as what we were told. He has long black hair as well. It was definitely him. It's the right time to avenge our junior brothers,' The Vice-Captain of the Mighty Sword Sect, Du Qian told Ru Shan. He was standing right beside Ru Shan.

"I believe that it was them as well, but I'm still not sure. The skill to make weapons using Qi is the Dark Soul Sect's skill," Ru Shan said with a frown.

"They are all evil Sects. They are close to each other. It wouldn't be shocking if the Dark Soul Sect shared their skill in exchange for another one from the Dual Cultivation Sect. That explains how these guys got that skill!" Du Qian said to Ru Shan.

"True. That would explain everything. The mask and the skill," Ru Shan muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"Alright. You guys are guilty of killing our brother and that guard! As much as I want to kill you myself, your punishment should be decided by our Elder. You're coming with us!" Ru Shan said.

Chapter 369 - 369: Running Away

"Do you really believe that it will work? Either you overestimate yourself, or you underestimate us. Well, it might even be both, but you should know, there are mountains beyond mountains. The ones standing before you are one of those mountains that you do not have the power to tame," Xiaoli said as he stood tall.

"Senior Brother Xiaoli, enough talking. Let's just kill them and be done with it. Although they have one more person than us, it doesn't look like it's going to be difficult," Liao said, smilingly.

"Brother Xiaoli, let's capture them instead. There's no need to kill them, is there? They are so strong and they look so yummy. I want them on my bed! I want to suck all their vigor until they have nothing left. Mmmm, I can already feel how heavenly it will be. I'm already getting aroused, just thinking about it," Mimi said as she licked her lips while looking at Ru Shan's waist.

"Hmm, That girl behind them doesn't look bad either. I'd take her then," Liao said as he glanced at Meng who was standing behind the disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect.

"You evil cultivators can not leave this place alive! You killed my junior brother and now it's your turn to die for your sins!" Ru Shan said as he ran towards Xiaoli.

The other 5 Cultivators of the Mighty Sword Sect also ran towards the 4 cultivators of the Dual Cultivation Sect.

Ru Shan started fighting with Xiaoli as their swords clashed with each other. Both of their strengths were almost equal. Although Ru Shan was a little bit stronger than Xiaoli, it wasn't enough to make a difference. Similarly, Xiaoli was slightly faster, but Ru Shan was able to keep up.

They both attacked each other with their martial skills occasionally, but the opponent managed to dodge the attacks. It resulted in the attacks landing on the nearby buildings. Their attacks kept causing destruction everywhere. the citizens ran away as they tried to get as far away from the fight as possible.

Du Qian was fighting Liao and their battle strength was similar as well.

The only person that was fighting 2 people was the girl they called Junior Sister Lin. She was just as strong as Liao, thus she was able to handle two cultivators of the Mighty Sword Sect at once.

The cultivators kept attacking her with their sword, but she kept dodging. Even though she dodged, the swords managed to cut through her clothes every time, but it never managed to graze her body.

It was uncertain if she was actually lucky that the sword didn't cut her or if she was much faster than them and she was intentionally allowing them to cut off her clothes on occasions.

Just like this, the clothes near her shoulders were torn off. It was the same for her arms. Even the clothes on top of her chest were in similar conditions. Small cuts could be seen that exposed her fair skin underneath.

"Mmm, They call us evil cultivators, but I must say, you're way better than it compared to us. The way you keep tearing off my clothes with your swords, do you really want to see what's underneath? I wouldn't mind showing you if you just ask nicely like a good boy," the girl chuckled as she kept dodging.

"Shut up you vixen! Your tricks won't work on us!" The guy said as he intensified his attacks.

"Hehehe, I wonder if you're just as vicious on the bed as well. Now I really want to see it. How about you come with me? We can get a room and continue our battle under the sheets. I wouldn't mind taking care of both of you at the same time," Lin said in a seductive tone.

The guys were somewhat stunned for a brief instant as they heard the offer and surprisingly, it was at the exact same moment that her mountain peaks were fully exposed before their eyes that stunned them even further.

Lin utilized the opportunity as she attacked swiftly. The attack managed to slice the head of one of the cultivators. She didn't stop as she did a 360-degree turn and stabbed the sword in the chest of the second cultivator. In an instant, she had killed 2 cultivators of the Mighty Sword Sect.

Her breasts were fully exposed, but she didn't even try to hide them. She ran towards Mimi to help her.

"You dared to kill my brothers!" Ru Shan bellowed in anger as he dodged the attack of Xiaoli and attacked Lin.

"Righteous Sword Punishment!" He roared as he swung his sword.

A frighteningly powerful arc of light escaped his sword and moved towards Lin. The attack was so fast that she didn't even have the time to dodge and her body was cut in half.

Lin died without even getting the opportunity to close her eyes.

"You bastard!" Xiaoli's eyes turned red as he saw Lin die.

"Heaven Suppression Strike!" Xiaoli said as he used his strongest sword skill.

"Righteous Sword Punishment!" Ru Shan repeated the same attack. It was his most powerful strike as well.

A blue arc of light escaped from Ru Shan's swords whereas a black arc of light left Xiaoli's sword.

Both the attacks collided at the center which caused a huge energy blast.

Xiaoli and Ru Shan, both of them were thrown back because of the impact. They both crashed on the ground as they coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Xiaoli again stood up as he prepared to attack once more, but that's when he got a message from his transmission talisman.

"Liao, keep the body of Lin in your storage ring. We are leaving right now!" Xiaoli said.

"But Senior Brother..."

"No buts! I said we are leaving!" Xiaoli commanded.

"Yes," Liao affirmed as he retreated back. He kept the body of Lin in his storage ring. The other two also retreated as they met up with Xiaoli.

"Do you think you can leave after you did all that?" Ru Shan said as he glared at Xiaoli.

"Even your father can't stop us from leaving," Xiaoli replied in full seriousness as he brought a small grey ball out of his storage ring and threw it towards Ru Shan.

"Move back!" Ru Shan commanded everyone. He didn't know what it was, but he felt like it was an explosive.

His assumption turned out to be wrong as smoke started coming out of the ball that spread everywhere in less than a second. It covered an area of 1 square kilometer in an instant.

"I won't let you escape so easily!" Ru Shan let out loud. Although he couldn't see anything, he still ran towards the location he last saw Xiaoli, but he didn't find anyone.

He kept looking for them throughout the fog, but he didn't see them.

Over 2 minutes had passed when heavy wind started flowing and blew the smoke away.

Ru Shan looked towards the direction the wind was coming from and he saw a woman standing there.

"Elder," Ru Shan greeted the woman.

"What happened here?" the woman asked with a frown.

"It was the Disciples of the Dual Cultivation Sect. They are the ones that killed out junior brothers this afternoon. We found them and tried to capture them. I killed one of them, but Gu Hao and Su Li were killed as well. They used the smoke device to escape," Ru Shan explained.

"Dual Cultivation Sect?" The elder muttered as she frowned.

The disciples of the Dual Cultivation Sect entered the house they were staying in. The house belonged to a couple previously, but they killed them and they were using the house now.

Xiaoli and the others entered the house and walked up to the first floor where they saw a person sitting on a chair.

Chapter 370 - 370: Meeting Meng

"You made quite a commotion today, didn't you?" the person sitting in the darkness said. It was a woman that looked like she was in her early 40s.

"It wasn't our fault. It was those guys of the Mighty Sword Sect. They stopped us and accused us of something we didn't do. They wanted to capture us and we simply retaliated," Xiaoli replied.

"You guys retaliated alright. But you lost Lin. Tell me? Was it worth it?" the woman asked.

"It... wasn't," Xiaoli replied.

"Indeed. It would have been worth it if you had managed to kill them all, but you failed. Isn't that right?" the woman replied.

"It's not brother Xiaoli's fault. We would have definitely killed them, but we had to leave," Luan replied.

"I know you had to leave. I was the one that sent Xiaoli the order to leave. Their Elder was coming towards you. You're quite stupid to not think that when you're fighting in the middle of the city, aren't you? There are so many righteous Sects here," the woman answered.

"So what if there are righteous sects? Are you saying that we should be scared of the righteous idiots? I can't be like that," Xiaoli shook his head.

"You don't need to be scared, but you need to be fast when fighting. You need to strike to kill. If the fight stretches for too long, many uncertain situations can arrive. Anyway, you guys can go to your rooms," the woman said to them.

"Yes Elder Sima," the disciples nodded their heads as they turned back to live.

"Xiaoli, you stay behind," the woman called out as she pointed towards Xiaoli.

Xiaoli stopped and the others left and closed the door behind them.

"Elder Sima," Xiaoli said as he looked at the woman.

"We're alone and you're still calling me Elder? You didn't call me elder last night when you were ravishing me, as far as I can remember," the woman said as she chuckled.

"My darling sima, I guess you want some more," Xiaoli grinned as he stepped towards her and kissed her on the lips.

Time kept passing, and soon, it was night.

It was midnight as Long Chen came out of his room and knocked on the door of Manxiang Li.

"Finally it's the time! I was starting to get bored!" Manxiang Li opened the door and said excitedly.

"Yea, it's the time. Come with me. We're going to the palace," Long Chen told Manxiang Li before he turned back and started walking away. Manxiang Li followed after him.

Although it was midnight, the streets still had people. The Royal City of the North Moon Empire was a busy city that had many types of people. Most of them were the ones that came out to enjoy the nightlife of the city.

Long Chen saw many people on the streets, but he didn't know that half of these people were coming back from the Brothels while the other half were going to the Brothels.

There were guards on the streets as well. They searched everywhere throughout the day to find the masked people that killed the Disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect and when they found them, it resulted in the disaster.

Even after all that, they were still assigned to keep an eye on the city and to inform the Royal Palace in case they saw the masked men again.

"Hey, I got a different idea. I think it would be better revenge than my last plan, but for that, I don't need you right now. I'll need you tomorrow," Long Chen suddenly stopped as if he thought of something.

"Hmm? What are you talking about? What's the new plan?" Manxiang Li asked in surprise.

Long Chen told him the plan which made Manxiang Li laugh out loud.

"Such a cruel plan. I like it more than the last one. It is indeed worse for her, but I don't understand, why would she do that?" Manxiang Li inquired as he thought of something.

"I have my ways. You can go back to the room for the night. I'll be back after setting things up there," Long Chen told him.

"Alright. I'll wait for the morning then. It's going to be so interesting to see the faces of those righteous idiots," Manxiang Li chuckled as he turned back and left.

Long Chen got near the palace and used shadow transformation as he went invisible.

He used his Heavenly Demon Wings simultaneously as he flew high in the air and landed on the balcony of the palace.

He stopped his Shadow Transformation and used his Divine Sense to see inside the palace. He scanned the whole palace and found what he was looking for.

He looked inside the room through the glass window as he teleported inside the palace.

He again activated his Shadow Transformation as he walked through the hallways of the Royal Palace and stopped before the room of Meng.

Knock *knock*

He knocked on her door.

"Who's outside?" Meng called out before she opened the door, but she didn't see anyone. Long Chen was still using shadow transmission. She stepped out of her room as she looked at both sides of the hallway, but she didn't see anyone.

"Was that my misconception?" She muttered as she turned back and entered her room.

She closed the door and walked back to her bedroom as she sat on the bed.

She didn't know that someone that she thought to be dead had entered her room the moment she stepped out of her room and now he was sitting behind her.

Long Chen brought his lips closer to her face as he canceled the Shadow Transformation.

"We meet again, Miss Meng," Long Chen whispered in her ears.

Meng was shocked as she looked back instantly.

"Aaa...mmm," As soon as she saw Long Chen's face, she started screaming, but Long Chen closed her mouth with his hand before he again whispered to her.

"Why are you so scared? It's not like you see someone you tried to kill, right? Have you forgotten that we are friends?" Long Chen said.

Meng tried to free herself from Long Chen, but her power was quite weak in front of him. She gave up struggling.

"Mmm... mmm," Meng tried speaking, but her words weren't clear as Long Chen had his hand on her mouth.

"Oh, you want to talk? Alright. wait a minute. Let me just give you a gift first. Tell me how much you like it after I free you, Ok?" Long Chen said as he moved his free hand towards her breasts, but he stopped his hands just a short centimeter away from her chest.

He brought something out of his storage ring. It was Cati, the Heart Devouring Insect.

"Little Guy, she is so pretty. So many people want to establish their place in her heart, but you're the first one to actually do it. I'm quite jealous," Long Chen laughed lightly as he glanced at Cati.

Meng looked at the Heart Devouring Insect. She could feel fear gripping her heart. She again started struggling to free herself. As Long Chen's hand was so close to her chest, her mountain peaks grazed against his hand a few times.

"Miss Meng, This is inappropriate. I already have girls waiting for me. You can't seduce me like that," Long Chen said in her ears.

"Come on Cati, don't make Miss Meng wait!" Long Chen told the Heart Devouring Insect that moved to her body and slowly entered her chest as it found its way to get heart.

"Alright Miss Meng, I don't know if you know about that little guy or not, so just let me explain. He's a Heart Devouring Insect. Quite a cool name, isn't it? That little guy is indeed cool. If you do anything against my wishes, he would kill you instantly," Long Chen said.

Chapter 371 - 371: Inside The Box

"Also, there's no way to take it out without you dying, unless I wish for it. So please don't try screaming. Because before your scream can even reach the door, you will be killed by the little guy," He continued before he removed his hand from her mouth.

"You're still alive! Do you want to kill me with that Insect? Were you the one that killed Ruan?" She asked as she glared at Long Chen.

"Indeed. It was me," Long Chen replied.

"How did you survive? And why did you use that insect on me? If you want to kill me, why didn't you kill me directly?" Meng said. Even though she acted bravely, her heart was beating so fast because she was afraid.

She was scared but it was as he had said, she couldn't take the beast out. All she could do was get answers.

"Why would I want to kill you? I just want a single thing from you," He said as a grin formed in his face.

"You want to have s*x with me? Is that it?" She asked as she stared at his face.

"What if I say yes?" Long Chen asked as he looked at her with an interesting look on her face.

Meng didn't say anything for quite some time before she moved her hand. She removed her top as she exposed her proud peaks.

"You can do as you please," She said to him.

"You have no shame, do you? I feel bad for the guy that's going to make you his wife. By the way, You're not bad looking, and I would have loved to spend some time with you before you caused us to fall to our potential deaths, but now that I know your true face, do you really think I would have such thoughts like sleeping with you?" Long Chen asked with a frown on his face.

Meng felt her ego take a hit as she heard his reply. She had thought that since she was so pretty, there could only be one reason for Long Chen to not kill her. She thought that he wanted to spend a night with her and that's why he used the Heart Devouring Insect, but his rejection made her feel as if he was looking down at her. She didn't even cover her chest and sat bare in front of him.

"Then what do you want?" She asked.

"Nothing much. I just want you to do something for me. It's your wedding tomorrow, right?" Long Chen asked as she looked at her with a slight smile on his face.

"Yes. What about it?" She inquired.

"Well, I have a friend. His name is Manxiang Li. He will come here tomorrow before your wedding. All you need to do is agree to whatever he says. You're good at acting, so I'm sure that you'll manage. If you didn't do it properly, or if someone found out that you're not genuine, then the Heart Devouring Insect will kill you. Oh right, if you tell anyone about any of this, you'll die then as well," Long Chen told her.

"You will get the Insect out of me if I do that?" She asked Long Chen.

"Yup. I'll take the Heart Devouring Insect back after it's done and I will never trouble you. I won't even think of killing you," Long Chen said to her in full seriousness.

"Alright. I'll do it," She nodded her head.

"That's better. Oh right. I have another question. What was in that small box that you 'killed' us for?" Long Chen asked.

"There was nothing in it. It was empty. From the information I had, there was supposed to be a special crystal inside that could help a person on their path of understanding the Law of Illusion, but when I opened the box in the Glorious Blossom Sect, I found it empty. That's why I left the Glorious Blossom Sect instantly as I was in such a bad mood," She replied.

'I guess my hunch was right. The box was indeed empty. If I'm understanding her correctly, the Law Orb was supposed to be inside, but someone found the cave before us and took the law orb from the box. He must be the person that once upon a time stayed in the mansion I stayed at. That's why I found the Law Orb there,' Long Chen thought as he connected all the dots.

"It feels strange to hear that we were pushed to our deaths because of an empty box. Your Senior Brother Ruan died because of that empty box as well," Long Chen chuckled as he said.

"Oh right. Another question. Was Ling involved in your plan? Did she know that you guys wanted to kill us?" He asked another question.

"No. We didn't tell her. Ling is an idiot and there was a possibility that she would have blurted something by mistake. There was no need to involve herself in something like killing someone," Meng answered him.

"Yeah, she is indeed an idiot. If I'm not wrong, you were also the one that told her to break her engagement, right?" He asked.

"Did she tell you that? Yeah, I did tell her to break off the engagement. She was always depressed at the fact that she was supposed to marry a stranger that she had never even met. She was a cultivator of the best sect of a great Empire while the guy was a poor boy of a small 2nd Rank Kingdom," She said.

"She herself wanted to break off the engagement but she wasn't brave enough to take the step for that. I just gave her a slight push. I gave her the much-needed courage," she continued.

"I guess I should thank you for that one," Long Chen chuckled as he stood up. Meng looked confused as she didn't understand why he thanked her.

"Alright. I'm leaving. Don't forget. Tomorrow, Manxiang Li," Long Chen told her.

"Oh right. That was a good show, but you can cover your chest now," Long Chen said as he stepped out of her room.

He again used his Shadow Transformation as he left the palace.

"Tomorrow should be fun," Long Chen muttered as he walked back to the hotel where he booked a room for himself and Manxiang Li.

It was 2 am in the night as he entered his room and fell on the bed. He instantly fell asleep.

He woke up at around 7 in the morning because of the heavy knocking on the door.

He stood up as he walked up to the door. He opened the door and found Manxiang Li standing there.

"Did you prepare everything?" Manxiang Li asked Long Chen.

"Yeah. Everything's ready. Now all that's left is to go there," Long Chen replied.

"Awesome. Let's go. I can't wait to see their faces!" Manxiang Li excitedly said.

"There's no hurry. The wedding ceremony will begin at 12 in the afternoon. We still have around 5 hours. Wait in your room a little more. I'll tell you when it's the right time to go," Long Chen told him.

"Alright, hurry up ok?" Manxiang Li said to Long Chen before he turned back and walked back to his room.

Long Chen closed the door of his room.

"Geez, this guy is so excited. It feels as if he is a child," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face as he took off his clothes and threw them on the bed before walking inside the shower.

After the shower, Long Chen came out as he dried his hair using a towel. He wore his clothes before he sat on the bed in a meditative position and began cultivating.

He cultivated for hours and only stopped when it was 11 in the morning. There was only 1 hour left before the start of the wedding.

He left his room and knocked on Manxiang Li's door.

"About time," Manxiang Li said with a grin on his face as he opened the door.

Chapter 372 - 372: Call Him Out!

Long Chen and Manxiang Li left their hotel as they walked towards the Royal Palace. They could see that there were a lot of people walking towards the Royal palace as well.

"We do not need to cover our faces, right?" Manxiang Li asked.

"There's no need for that. I want them to know our identity. Also, It's not like they are our friends. We will be fighting them in the Divine Heaven Sect, so no benefit in keeping cordiality," Long Chen replied.

"Also, I wish to see someone's expression when they see my face. I hope that person will be there," Long Chen chuckled as he said.

The Royal Palace of the North Moon Empire was heavily decorated for this special occasion.

There was a special stage set up in a big hall for Meng and Ru Shan to sit. Many seats for guests were arranged as well.

Although it was a Royal Wedding, not many people were invited inside. Only the guests from the supreme sects and some really important ministers and generals were truly allowed to attend the wedding.

The crowd was standing outside waiting. They were told that as soon as the wedding ceremony was completed, they would be given a bronze coin each in celebration. Some would even receive silver coins if they were lucky.

Even though thousands of people were outside the palace, the Royal Guards still managed to keep the peace. They kept the path open and didn't let it get blocked by the crowd so that the real guests don't have any trouble.

11 flying beasts abruptly landed before the palace as Elder Ku, Jichuan and other disciples of the Beast Hall got down and entered the palace.

After some more time, another set of flying beasts landed in front of the palace as the disciples of another righteous supreme sect arrived.

Just like that 3 more righteous sects arrived.

The Royal Palace now had people from 5 Righteous Supreme Sects, the Mighty Sword Sect, the Beast Hall, the Buddha Temple, the True Nirvana Sect, and the Wind Chasing Sect.

***"

"Those guys are such a showoff," Manxiang Li commented as he saw the people of Wind Chasing Sect fly on their flying beasts towards the Royal Palace.

"How about we show off as well?" He asked Long Chen.

"That's the plan. We're going as an envoy of the Evil Sects after all," Long Chen said as he brought the Winged Tiger out of his beast bag.

"Hahaha, I was waiting for you to say that. It's much better to enter like Kings," Manxiang Li said as he tapped his Beast Bag. A 4-Winged Eagle came out his beast bag and landed in front of him.

"4-Winged Eagle? That's quite a rare beast. I heard that it's pretty fast," Long Chen said as he saw Manxiang Li's beast.

"Yeah, It's slightly faster than the Winged Lions of the Dark Soul Sect, but the Winged Lion has a high battle power. Your Winged Lion will assist you much better in battles," Manxiang Li replied as he climbed on top of his 4-Winged Eagle.

Long Chen also got on top of his Winged Lion. Their beasts rose high in the Sky.

"Alright little guy. Time to inform the others of our arrival," Long Chen said to the Winged Lion that roared out loud after Long Chen's commands.

Its powerful roars attracted the attention of the crowd and the guards.

They all started looking high in the sky and saw 2 flying beasts above their heads. The flying beasts landed in front of the palace. Long Chen and the Manxiang Li got off their beasts.

"Masters, may I ask which sect you're from?" The guard chief stepped towards them and inquired.

"Silence! Do you think we are someone who will go to marriages without being invited? Or is this a plan of the Mighty Sword Sect to insult our sect! Call them out! I need answers right now!" Manxiang Li let out loud as he glared at the guard. He even released his aura.

The guards started shivering in fear.

"Ah, S-sorry master. That's not what I meant. Please go inside," The Chief of the guards said as he allowed them to enter.

"Hmph!" Manxiang Li snorted as he walked towards the entrance of the palace with Long Chen.

A maid brought them towards the main hall.

In the Main Hall, the king was standing right beside Meng and Ru Shan as he thanked the guests for coming. He had already started since everyone they sent an invitation to was already there.

"My Daughter Meng and Little Friend Ru Shan are getting married today. Please give them your blessings. Meng, Ru Shan, let's begin," the king said.

A maid came forward with a tray in her hand. The tray had two bowls that contained some blue liquid.

It was called the Soup of Eternal Connection. It was said to be something that was a gift from the heavens to tie two people's destiny lines with each other in the form of marriage. The marriage was only completed when the boy fed the soup to her form with his hand while the girl fed the soup to the boy with her hands at the same time.

"I never expected that you guys were here for marriage and not for the treasures," the Elder from the Beast Hall, Elder Ku said to the Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect.

"It wasn't the plan initially, but what can I say, the girl was so nice, that Ru Shan instantly fell in love with her and started saying that he wants to marry her. That's why we decided to finish the marriage before the exploration," The Elder from the Mighty Sword Sect, Sui Ru, replied.

"You mean they didn't know each other before you came here?" The Elder of the Wind Chasing Sect let out with a surprised look on his face.

"Indeed. In fact, they met each other for the first time only a few days ago. Even though I can't believe how fast everything ended, I'm glad they fell in love. The girl is really nice and kind. Ru Shan is lucky to find a girl like her," Sui Ru replied.

"That's amazing indeed," Elder Ku nodded his head as he said.

"I think our Jichuan might get married soon as well. He's finally met a girl that had made him restless. I'll see how things progress when we go back to the Blazing Sun Empire after the Mission," Elder Ku added.

"They lost 6 people from their team of 10 and they are still in the mood of marriage? Ru Shan doesn't care for his brothers, does he?" Wu Ten said to Jichuan.

"That's not it. I think Ru Shan had no choice. The marriage was established before his junior brothers had died and the invitations were distributed. If he delayed the wedding, it would have been insulting for his future wife and father in law," Jichuan said what he understood.

"Still, he's an idiot for marrying the girl he just met, right before such an important mission," Wu Ten said.

"I agree with you on that one. He is indeed an idiot," Jichuan replied.

Ru Shan picked up the bowl and Meng also did the same.

She had been quite scared all this time as she wondered what Long Chen had planned for her, yet she still didn't see him or the person he talked about.

'He must be trying to scare me. He isn't going to do anything today. I think he will use the insect to blackmail me and use me as a spy against the Mighty Sword Sect after I'm married. Or maybe he wants to sleep with me after I'm married so that he could put a green hat over Ru Shan's head,' She thought.

"Is something wrong, Meng?" Ru Shan asked as he saw the frown on Meng's face.

Chapter 373 - 373: Scheme Against Me!

"Ah, no. Everything's perfectly fine," Meng said with a smile.

"Alright. The perfect time decided for the marriage is in 10 seconds. 8... 7... 6... 5... 4," the king started talking.

Meng and Ru Shan, both were ready as they placed the bowl right before the other person's lips and waited for the right time. Just as the king said, they were about to feed the other person, but the door abruptly opened as a person called out.

"Wait!" Manxiang Li called out, shocking everyone.

Ru Shan and Meng looked towards the person along with everyone else.

"Who are you?! Why did you interrupt the wedding?" The king roared in anger as he glared at the 3 guys that had just entered the hall.

Everyone looked confused, but Meng looked scared. She recognized Long Chen standing beside Manxiang Li. She had guessed that the second person must be the boy called Manxiang Li.

"How dare you forcefully marry my lover to someone else, just because he threatened you! Don't you have any dignity?" Manxiang Li said.

"What?" Meng felt like coughing out blood as she heard his shameless word.

The other Elders looked at Elder Sui Ru with a suspicious look on their faces.

"Such bold accusations! Who are you? How dare you accuse our Sect of doing something so immoral like forcing a girl to marry him? If I don't get a satisfying answer, you won't be going back alive from here!" Elder Sui Ru said as she stood up.

"You bastards! Do you dare call yourself a righteous sect when you do things like this? Do you think that there is no other Sect in the world? Today I'm the one that wants the answers!" Manxiang Li roared full of emotions as he pulled his sword out.

Long Chen couldn't help but praise Manxiang Li in his mind. His acting was so realistic. If he wasn't the one that had made the plan, he would truly believe that Manxiang Li was actually the lover of Meng.

The elders and a few disciples noticed the patterns on his sword.

"Interesting," Jichuan muttered as he observed the man

"Those marks on the Sword? You're from the Devil Worshipping Sect?" Elder Ku asked in full seriousness.

Although the Devil Worship Sect was an Evil Sect, it was also one of the Supreme Sects that was said to be one of the strongest supreme sects.

"So you're from the Devil Worshipping Sect! As expected of an evil sect! They sent you to spoil the wedding along with our reputation," Sui Ru said as she glared at Manxiang Li.

"Hahahahaha," Manxiang Li started laughing.

"You call us an evil Sect, but from where I'm standing, you look like the evil sect! How dare you force a girl to marry someone she doesn't like!" Manxiang Li said.

"You're talking nonsense. She loves me and I love her! There's no need for us to force her! I will kill you if you don't stop spouting nonsense," Ru Shan bellowed.

"Oh? Let me make everything clear in front of you all! Meng'er, you don't love him, right?" Manxiang Li said as he affectionately looked at Meng.

Meng could feel her legs shaking, but she could also feel the Heart Devouring Insect in her heart. It was as if it was warning her that it would kill her if she didn't do what Long Chen had told her.

"I don't love him!" Meng said, shocking everyone in the room. The ones that were shocked the most were Ru Shan, Sui Ru, the King, and the other disciples of the sect that knew the truth.

"So it was true? The Mighty Sword Sect has been pretending to be righteous for so long, but their darkness has come to light at last," The Elder from the Buddha Sect said.

The Elder of True Nirvana Sect also looked at Sui Ru with a disappointed look on his face.

"I was wondering how a marriage could be decided so fast when they only met 2 days ago. I guess it is possible when you force the girl," The Elder of the Wind Chasing Sect said as he sighed.

"Y-you're lying! It's your scheme!" Sui Ru said as she glared at Manxiang Li. She still couldn't believe it.

"Oh? You don't believe that I'm her lover? Meng! Aren't we lovers? Tell them how many times we have spent the nights together. It's more than 10 times if I can remember correctly," Manxiang Li said.

'Thar Bastard! He planned all this to get me insulted! And I can't even tell the truth!' Meng cursed in her mind.

"Yes, We are lovers. We have spent the night together many times. More than 10 times," Meng replied.

Ru Shan's face lost all its colors as he heard her words.

"That Elder and Ru Shan were the ones that forced you to marry him, right? Did they threaten you?" Manxiang Li asked again.

"Yes, they forced me to marry him. They threatened me many times," Meng replied.

'Marriage seems impossible now. I lost such a good opportunity to marry someone so powerful. It's all because of that Long Chen! I swear that I will kill him!' Meng thought as she looked down.

"You Bit*h! You dare to scheme against me! I'll kill you!" Ru Shan lost his temper as he raised his sword and cut off the neck of Meng.

Meng couldn't even believe it as she died. The last thing she saw was Long Chen's smirk before her head we separated from her body.

'Such poetic justice. You used someone else's hand to push me to my death and now I used someone else's hands to send you to death. You used your Senior Brother, I used your future husband. With this, the enmity of the past is over,' Long Chen thought as he saw the body of Meng lying on the ground.

"Y-you killed my daughter!" The king let out in shock. He wanted to kill Ru Shan but he didn't even dare to attack. Although he was stronger than the elder of the Mighty Sword Sect, the Mighty Sword Sect was an even scarier existence. If they sent a Grand Elder of the Sect for revenge, his whole Empire will disappear in a single night.

"Sui Ru! I guess that girl was indeed right. You guys even killed her to silence her!" The Elder of the Buddha Sect said.

"After all that she said, was there really a doubt left? These guys are so bad. Stealing someone's lover and forcing them to marry? That is indeed bad. I

expected better from you guys," The Elder of the True Nirvana Sect said as he sighed.

"It's so funny to think that the Mighty Sword Sect had the reputation of being the most righteous Sect amongst all the righteous Sects, but when this news spreads outside, that reputation will be destroyed instantly," Elder of the Wing Chasing Sect said as he looked at Sui Ru.

Sui Ru found her face getting heated from the anger. It was even more frustrating when it was all just a lie. She would have killed everyone here if she could, but neither did she have the strength to kill 4 elders, nor did she have the courage as that would just make things worse.

The others will claim that she tried to silence everyone to hide her crimes.

"Ru Shan! You killed my lover! Prepare your neck! I will cut it when we meet after a few days! Be Glad that your Elder is here to protect you today," Manxiang Li said as he stepped forth and picked up the body of Meng when everyone was stunned. He started walking towards the exit with Long Chen. Their work here was done already.

"Wait a minute!" Someone called out from behind.

Chapter 374 - 374: Fight Against The Head Disciple

"Why do you want to take the body of your lover and not fight the one that killed her? Is that the extent of your love?" Jichuan said as he stood up.

Manxiang Li stopped as he turned back.

"I didn't love her body, I loved her soul. Now that her soul is already in heaven, what will I do with the body? But still, I want to give a proper burial to my love. Only after that will I deal with that guy," Manxiang Li said as he turned back again.

Long Chen was laughing in his mind at Manxiang Li's acting. He gave Manxiang Li a big thumbs up in his mind as he heard his spontaneous reply.

"You planned this all with this girl! It was all to spoil our reputation! You think I will let you leave?" Ru Shan called out as he pulled out his sword.

"Little Guy, don't be so eager to die. You already got in a fight with Dual Cultivation Sect and lost 6 of your members. Are you so eager to see your team being wiped out even before the true event? Or are you underestimating our Devil Worshipping Sect?" Manxiang Li commented as he glared at Ru Shan.

His words stabbed like needles in the heart of Ru Shan as it was indeed the truth that his team had already lost 6 disciples before the Divine Heaven Sect even appeared.

"Stop. Are you forgetting that you're a part of an Evil Sect and we are the righteous sects? How can we let you leave alive!" Jichuan said as he stood up.

Even Elder Ku was stunned as to what Jichuan was doing? There was still time. They didn't have to do anything unnecessary. If the Devil Worshipping Sect jointly attacked them with the Dark Soul Sect, then they would indeed be in trouble.

It was much better when they would be in the Divine Heaven Sect as the Righteous Teams would support each other against the Evil Sects, but in the city, they wouldn't come to save them if 2 sects attacked them.

"Who the heck are you? Another person pretending to be the savior of justice like them?" Manxiang Li asked Jichuan.

"I won't claim myself to be the savior of justice, but you have come to a place with so many Righteous Cultivators. Even if your reason wasn't wrong, you're still an evil cultivator and it's our duty to punish the evil!" Jichuan replied as he took a step forth.

"Do you know, if you keep your mouth shut, people would still think that you're an idiot just by seeing your face, but they won't have any proof. Was there really a need to give everyone a proof?" Manxiang Li asked.

"You bastard! You called me an idiot!" Jichuan called out as he jumped towards Manxiang Li and punched towards his face.

Manxiang Li still had Meng in his arms and both his hands were occupied but he didn't look worried. He believed that Long Chen would jump in. He was quite eager to see Long Chen in action again.

Just as he had expected, Long Chen jumped in as he punched out as well. Both their hands collided which resulted in Jichuan being forced half a step backward while Long Chen was pushed back 2 steps. Long Chen didn't use his Demon Monarch Physique as he wanted to see how strong his body was compared to an average head disciple of the sect.

Jichuan was a 7th stage Earth Realm cultivator, still, Long Chen had managed to keep up. That too after the fact that his cultivation was being restricted.

Mostly because of his special bloodline. The stronger he got, the more useful his bloodline became. Still, these were just passive effects. The real magic of the bloodline hadn't even begun as his bloodline conversation wasn't even 1/4th yet. There was still a long way to go to see the true mysteries of his bloodline.

"You're strong, but not strong enough," Jichuan chuckled.

"Do you want to fight my friend?" Manxiang Li asked Jichuan.

"He's not worthy. He's weak," Jichuan replied.

"Hmm?" Manxiang Li couldn't help but smile. He saw something entirely different. He could see that Long Chen wasn't even serious in that exchange.

"How about that? If you managed to defeat him, I'll stay here as your prisoner and my life will belong to you," Manxiang Li said, surprising even Long Chen.

'He's going off script,' Long Chen thought with a frown.

"Alright, I agree," Jichuan said, smilingly.

"Not so fast. If you win, I'll stay here as your prisoner, despite being the head disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect. What will I get if you lose?" Manxiang Li asked.

'As I expected, he's Manxiang Li, the head Disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect. Then the other person must be their vice-captain. That's why he's so weak,' Jichuan thought.

"What do you want?" He inquired.

"Of course I want something of equal value. If I won, you will come with us as a prisoner and your life will belong to me," Manxiang Li said.

"I agree," Jichuan said, without even thinking about it. He couldn't even imagine a scenario where he would be defeated by such a weak guy.

"Hahaha, that's more like it. It's good that you're not a coward. But let me ask your elder first," Manxiang Li said.

"The Elders of the Righteous Sects! This bet has been established in front of all of you. If you have any problem with it, say it right now. You can't say anything after he loses! Even though there are some corrupt righteous sects like the Mighty Sword Sect, I believe that you can still maintain your dignity if you don't cry after he loses," Manxiang Li said.

"Jichuan?" Elder Ku asked in concern as he gazed at Jichuan.

"Don't worry Elder Ku. This is an easy victory. In my eyes, I already got a new servant in the form of the head disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect," He said smilingly.

"Alright. I agree with the bet!" Elder Ku said.

"The other Righteous Sects can be witnesses," Manxiang Li said.

"We agree as well," The Elders of the Buddha Sect, the True Nirvana Sect, and the Wing Chasing Sect agreed.

"That's good. The fight can't begin here though. This place is too small," Elder Ku said.

"Isn't there a fighting arena in this palace?" He asked as he looked at the king.

'My daughter was just killed and instead of that you're talking about a fight!?' The King wanted to curse out loud, but he controlled himself.

"There's a martial arena. I'll take you guys there," The king replied.

The king brought everyone to a Martial Arena nearby. The place was around 900 meters wide and 900 meters long.

The Elders and the disciples of the 5 sects stood at the corner of the hall along with the king while Long Chen and Jichuan stood at the center.

Along the way, Long Chen kept glaring at Manxiang Li who gave an embarrassing smile.

"You're quite brave for even thinking to fight with me. Although you will die, it's not bad to die by my hands," Jichuan said as he glanced at Long Chen.

"Sigh, You talk too much," Long Chen muttered.

"Arrogant!" Jichuan said as he ran towards Long Chen and punched out again.

This time Long Chen used his Demon Monarch Physique and punched out with his full force.

His fist collided with Jichuan's fist just like last time but the result was completely different.

Long Chen stayed there just like a tall mountain, not moving in the slightest, but it wasn't the same for Jichuan.

Jichuan was pushed back 6 steps before he managed to balance himself.

He looked at Long Chen as if he was looking at the ghost.

He couldn't believe that Long Chen was so powerful. His hand was still aching.

Even the elders are surprised at the result.

Chapter 375 - 375: Fighting With Beasts

"You hid your strength previously. Clever," Jichuan stared at Long Chen as he said.

"Think of it however you want," Long Chen replied before he attacked Jichuan. Since Jichuan wasn't using his sword, he didn't use a sword either. It turned into a fistfight and Jichuan seemed to be the one on the losing side.

The fight stretched out for over 10 minutes and Jichuan had realized that he couldn't beat Long Chen with pure strength so he decided to use Skills.

"Arcane Fire Rain!" Jichuan let out as he pointed towards Long Chen. One after another, balls of fire started attacking Long Chen. It was as if he was under the rain of fireballs.

Long Chen finally brought his sword out.

It was not mountain destroyer, but it wasn't his King's sword either. It was another Earth Grade Sword that he had found in the Treasury of the Dementia Kingdom.

As he emptied out the treasury, he took the sword as well.

The Sword had a golden hilt and a silver blade. Long Chen didn't know the name of the sword so he had named it the Silver Fury.

He waved silver fury and took care of the ball of flames. His footsteps were so nimble that it seemed as if he was dancing with the wind.

"Interesting," Manxiang Li muttered on the sidelines.

Seeing it not working, Jichuan brought his sword out as well.

"Strike of Earth!" He called out as he waved his sword.

"Seven Forms of Sword Saint- 5th Form: Chaos!" Long Chen also swung his sword which blazed through the wind.

A bright arc of light left his sword that clashed with Jichuan's attack. Long Chen's attack had managed to cut off Jichuan's attack. The bright arc of light still didn't stop and kept advancing towards Jichuan.

Jichuan's expressions turned grave as he cut off Long Chen's already weakened attack with his sword, but that's when he saw Long Chen's sword coming towards his neck.

He was so immersed in Long Chen's attack that he didn't see Long Chen. At the last moment, he raised his sword and protected his neck, but he was thrown back like a broken kite. Jichuan crashed on the ground 50 meters away from Long Chen.

Jichuan stood up and again attacked Long Chen. Their swords kept clashing but even after a long time, Jichuan was still on the losing side. Everyone could see that Jichuan was the weaker one in this fight.

"It is clear that the boy from the Devil Worshipping Sect is stronger, but why isn't Jichuan using his true strength? Isn't Beast Hall famous for their beast Tamers? Their beasts account for half their strength," The Elder of True Nirvana Sect asked Elder Ku.

"I'm not sure, it might be because Jichuan wants to test his limit and if possible, he wants to win without using his beast," Elder Ku replied.

"I can understand. If Jichuan brings his beasts out, that would mean that he's using his full strength. And if he had to use his full strength to defeat someone from the Devil Worshipping Sect that is not even their Head Disciple, it would be insulting for him," Elder of Buddha Sect said.

Another half an hour passed and Jichuan could feel his Qi getting depleted. He realized that he couldn't win like that. In fact, it was quite possible that he would lose.

"You are strong as a warrior, but you're forgetting the most important thing about Beast Hall. Our real strength is in our beasts! Come out, guys!" Jichuan said as he tapped his beast bag.

3 Tamed beasts came out. One of them was like a Komodo Dragon that was 5 meters long and half a meter tall. It had Heavenly Armored skin that was said to be its strongest suit that multiplied its defense by multiple folds. Its tongue was also extremely poisonous. It was called the Venomous Earth Lizard.

The second beast was like a leopard that was 2 meters tall and 3 meters long. It had a dragon-like horn on its head. Its skin was black along with a few stripes of green. It was known as Wing Snatching Leopard.

The 3rd beast looked the strongest amongst the 3. It was a giant Mammoth that had two black teeth near its trunk. It seemed as if it was around 4 meters tall and 9 meters long. It was called the Earth Shaking Mammoth. It was known for its frightening power.

"You should be proud of making me use my full strength to kill you!"

"Say your prayers boy. And tell me, which of my tamed beasts would you like to kill you?" Jichuan said with a grin.

"Are we fighting with beasts now? I don't mind if that's the direction you want to take," Long Chen casually said. His words gave Jichuan a bad feeling.

"Come out guys. It's time to have some fun," Long Chen muttered as he called out his tamed beasts. He chose 3 beasts as well since he knew that they would be enough to handle them.

Long Chen's first beast came out. It was the Dark Horned Armored Rhino. A beast that was known for its explosive strength, fast speed, and incredible defense. Its Defense was said to be even more powerful than Venomous Earth Lizard.

The Second Beast to come out was the Devil Hunter Beast. It was known as one of the fastest beasts in the world that could merge with shadows. It was like a fully trained assassin that was powerful, fast, and lethal.

The Last Beast to come out was the Snake Monarch. A beast with an ancient bloodline that had many mysteries surrounding it.

"Hey, kid? Why did you call me? Are we going on a double date? I'll take the pretty one, you take the ugly one and we have a deal," The Snake Monarch said as he looked at Long Chen.

'What the heck? That Snake can talk? Is it a rare beast? I didn't hear anything about it. I would love to take the snake from the kid, too bad the beast will die if he is forcefully taken from his master and his master wishes for its death!' Elder Ku sighed in disappointment.

"A powerful Dark Horned Armored Rhino, a rare Devil Hunter Beast and a snake beast that I've never heard about before? Is this kid a beast tamer as well? How did he get such amazing beasts!" The Elder of Mighty Sword Sect muttered.

"Can you stop talking nonsense for a minute? I'm in a fight. And I called you out to help me!" Long Chen said.

"Who would dare to fight with this King's friend? Let me see!" The Snake Monarch proudly turned to look towards Jichuan.

"He? the kid that looks like a boiled egg dared to fight you? Did his mother not teach him manners? I'm glad that I don't have a useless son like him! Just look in his eyes. I can clearly see that he's not a good guy. He must have stolen many people's wives in the town! Does such a shameless guy dare to fight with this King's friend? Kid! Listen carefully! When you weren't even born, this King was already roaming through galaxies, flirting with heavenly beauties. Just ask your mother if you don't believe me. She was one of those beauties. I don't understand how such a beautiful girl can give birth to such an ugly boy. Sigh, life is indeed unfair!" The Snake Monarch said to Jichuan without stopping for even a second.

Jichuan was so angry that his face had turned completely red. He even felt like coughing out a mouthful of blood as he heard the Snake Monarch's insulting words.

"You bastard! Earth Shaking Mammoth! Crush that bastard to smithereens!" Jichuan roared in anger.

Chapter 376 - 376: Transformation

The Earth Shaking Mammoth started running towards Snake Monarch!

"Oh? Do you want to bully this King with size? I've never seen such stupidity! This King will show you what it means to crush someone!" The Snake Monarch said as he started getting bigger.

Everyone's eyes opened wide as they saw the Snake Monarch getting bigger and bigger. They felt as if they were seeing something truly incredible. Even Jichuan was shocked.

Snake Monarch got so big that it started looking like a dragon. It wrapped itself around the Earth Shaking Mammoth that looked tiny in comparison to Snake Monarch now.

"You dared to attack this king? Even your Father called me grandfather, and you dared to attack me. Is there nothing in your stupid brain?" The Snake Monarch cursed the Earth Shaking Mammoth.

"Raaaa," The Earth Shaking Mammoth struggled to free itself, but it wasn't able to, no matter what it tried.

"You two go as well!" Ru Shan ordered the Venomous Earth Lizard and Wind Snatching Leopard.

They started running towards the Snake Monarch, but that's when the Dark Horned Armored Rhino and the Devil Hunter Beast moved as well.

The Devil Hunter Beast was as fast as lightning and appeared right beside the Wind Snatching Leopard as it attacked with its claws. The Wind Snatching Leopard was also known for its speed, but it was slower than the Devil Hunter Beast as it was scratched by the claws of the Devil Hunter Beast.

It had a defensive skin but even still the Wind Snatching Leopard was wounded and started bleeding. It jumped towards the Devil Hunter Beast, but the Devil Hunter Beast turned into a shadow as it dodged and appeared right beside the Wind Snatching Leopard.

The Devil Hunter Beast opened its mouth and a black orb of darkness came out of his mouth and struck the Wind Snatching Leopard. That orb of darkness penetrated its body and landed on the other side of the wall.

The Wind Snatching Leopard was instantly dead.

"No wonder the Devil Hunter Beast is called the dream beast by the Beast Tamers. It's so fast and so incredibly powerful," Elder Ku muttered in shock.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino was also engaged in a battle with Venomous Earth Lizard. Their speeds were almost equal, but the Venomous Earth Lizard was more powerful. As long as it managed to wound its opponent, and lick their wounds, the chances of their death would be really high, but the Defense of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino was more powerful.

No matter how much the Venomous Earth Lizard tried, it wasn't able to wound it. On the other hand, the Dark Horned Armored Rhino used its most powerful skill, the Dark Mountain Shattering Stomp which landed on the back of the Venomous Earth Lizard.

Even though the defense of the Venomous Earth Lizard was strong, it wasn't able to bear the attack of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino as it was crushed to its death.

The Earth Shaking Mammoth was still wrapped by the Snake Monarch. It was going through a lot of pain as the Snake Monarch kept wrapping him even tighter. The Earth Shaking Mammoth couldn't even resist now and it was starting to feel its bones crack now.

"See how big of a chump your master is? Even after seeing you getting hurt and your friends dying, he's still just watching. This King had already predicted that he is the biggest sack of trash on this planet just by seeing his face. That's why his real father ran away with his mother, leaving him with the maid!" The Snake Monarch said.

"You bastard! I'll kill you!" Ru Shan bellowed in rage as he ran towards the Snake Monarch with his sword to cut him, but before he could even get near the Snake Monarch, Long Chen appeared before him.

"Very Well! I'll kill you first!" Ru Shan raged as he attacked Long Chen. Their battle continued once more.

"See the human that's with me? He's a pervert and he doesn't look as good as this King, but at least he is a good human," The Snake Monarch said.

"You idiot! Can you at least stop insulting me?" Long Chen called out amidst his fight as he heard the Snake Monarch's words.

"Oh right. Let me correct my statement. He's a pervert and he doesn't look as good as this King, but at least he is better than a good human," The Snake Monarch said.

Long Chen wanted to facepalm himself as he heard his words, but he was engaged in a fight.

Manxiang Li was laughing in the background as he saw the things that were happening before him.

"Interesting indeed. I can understand how he managed to rise above Mu Zheng. He's special," Manxiang Li muttered.

Long Chen was proving to be a difficult opponent for Ru Shan. His speed was lower than Long Chen and his Strength as well.

As a Beast Hall Disciple, his true strength was fighting a single opponent with a bigger team that included him and 3 of his powerful beasts, but Long Chen had managed to destroy his biggest Strength and now he was under the threat of the same thing being used against him.

"I will never be defeated!" Ru Shan roared out loud.

Elder Ku's expressions changed as he called out, "No! Don't use that Ru Shan!"

"Beastly Transformation!" Ru Shan said as his body started changing.

His eyes changed color and turned red. His height started increasing. He was previously just under 6 feet but now he was 8 feet tall.

His body also started getting wider. His hands increased in thickness by 5 times. His clothes were torn off at sleeve and near his shoulders.

Brown Hair started growing on his body just like a Wolf and soon covered every part of his body except his face.

A horn also came out of his forehead that looked similar to the Horn of the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

"You forced me to do this and now you will face the wrath!" Ru Shan roared as he glared at Long Chen.

It ran towards him and swung his sword. Long Chen's sword clashed with his sword, but this time, Long Chen was the one that was pushed back.

Long Chen was pushed back 5 steps before stopping.

"Interesting. This skill doubled his strength. This should be the special skill of the beast hall that's only taught to the Core Disciples," Long Chen muttered as he glanced at Ru Shan.

"Oh? So that's the special skill of the Beast Hall, the Beastly Transformation. Not bad. I can feel that he's much more powerful and even faster than before," The Elder of the True Nirvana Sect

'Amitabha! The True Soul of a beast can wake up the hidden power hidden in a human but it must come at a cost," The Elder of the Buddha Sect replied.

'He's right! That Ru Shan! Why did you use that skill now! Did he not even think about the backlash! He should've saved it for the Divine Heaven Sect exploration!' Elder Ku scolded Ru Shan in his mind.

"That kid should be dead now. There's no way he can survive. When Ru Shan is in that form, he's as strong as me," Elder Ku told the other Elders. He didn't talk about the cost that the Elder of Buddha Sect talked about.

"As strong as you? That boy is indeed dead then. It's good too. If we try to kill him to take his beasts, he would just order them to die. But if he perishes during the fight, I don't believe he'll be worried about the beasts. It's quite possible that they will survive and then we can take it," The Elder of the True Nirvana Sect said.

Chapter 377 - 377: Did Not Lose

"I can't see that happening. I can see it in the eyes of his Beasts. They are too close. The beasts will just die with him intentionally if he dies during the battle," The Elder of Buddha Sect said.

"Really? I will believe it as you are the one saying it, but it's really incredible. It's quite rare for a tamer to have formed such a bond with their beasts. That boy is quite special. I wonder how the Devil Worshipping Sect managed to find a Disciple like that," The Elder of True Nirvana Sect said.

In all their conversation, the Elder of Mighty Sword Sect has been silent, not saying a word.

"Die for me!" Jichuan again attacked Long Chen, who kept getting pushed back.

'I don't know if that skill has any backlash, but it would've been really great if I could have it,' Long Chen thought.

He started using the Earthly Monarch Effect, which was one of the skills he had received in Bloodline Temple as a reward when he completed the first Trial.

The Earthly Monarch Effect was neither an Offensive skill nor a defensive skill. It wasn't even a moment skill, but it was something similar to a movement skill.

It was a skill that could amplify the effects of any movement skills multiple folds. Even if a mortal person didn't have a movement skill and he just ran randomly, if he used the skill, he would be as fast as a beast.

Long Chen used the Earthly Monarch Effect, and his speed was multiplied.

Jichuan tried to attack him, but he disappeared and appeared behind Jichuan. He didn't even have to use his teleportation. Although he wasn't so fast that he couldn't be seen by the Elders present when he moved, he was still quite fast in Jichuan's eyes who didn't even see him move.

Long Chen appeared behind Jichuan and kicked him in the back, which made Jichuan fly ahead. He crashed on the ground, face first.

"You!" Jichuan stood up and again ran towards Long Chen like a mad beast, but Long Chen did the same thing again and appeared behind Jichuan and kicked him.

Jichuan again crashed on the ground, face first.

'The Skill gave him incredible strength and speed, but it decreased his thinking prowess. He's just like a wild beast now. I should've expected that. No skill can be so overpowered without having problems in it,' Long Chen thought.

"Sigh, It seems the fight is not going in Jichuan's favor. He has Strength and speed because of the Beastly Transformation, but he now lacks quick thinking. If it were before the transformation, he would have known that when the boy disappears, he needs to protect his surroundings," Elder of Buddha Sect commented.

"It looks like that boy is just toying with Jichuan at this point," Elder of True Nirvana Sect said.

"Come on, Brother Long! Finish it fast! I'm starting to get hungry!" Manxiang Li called out.

'You bastard, weren't you the one that caused this fight to happen in the first place?' Long Chen thought. He wanted to curse Manxiang Li out loud, but that man did help him. And this fight wasn't a bad idea either in the long run.

Jichuan stood up again and chased after Long Chen, but the same thing happened. Long Chen appeared behind him, but this time he didn't kick. This time he thrust his sword towards Jichuan.

He didn't aim at Jichuan's vitals as he didn't want to kill Jichuan, but before the sword tip could even touch Jichuan, it was stopped.

Long Chen raised his head and found Elder Ki standing in front of him. He had held onto Long Chen's sword.

It was at that time when the effects of Beastly Transformation were over as well. Jichuan returned to his original form and instantly fell down to his knees. He could feel that his body had no Strength.

"It's just a friendly spar. There's no need to deal fatal wounds, is there?" Elder Ku said as he looked at Long Chen.

"That wasn't a fatal attack, but whatever. It's our victory," Long Chen said as he kept the sword back in his storage ring.

"Hahaha, awesome! The Head Disciple of the Beast Hall, Jichuan, is my servant now!" Manxiang Li walked up to Long Chen, as he said.

The king was surprised as he saw Manxiang Li laughing so freely while he held the body of his daughter in his arms.

'Isn't he the so-called lover of my daughter? Why isn't there any sadness! Is a servant more important than my daughter? The cultivators of the big sects are really beasts!' He cursed in his mind, but he didn't say anything out loud.

Every person present in this room was from a supreme sect that could wipe out the existence of his Empire.

If he wasn't the Emperor responsible for his Empire, he would have even given his life to kill the ones that were involved in the death of his innocent daughter. It was supposed to be a day of her marriage. The day that was supposed to be a day of happiness has turned into a day of mourning for him.

"Little Friend, how about we call it a draw? The fight isn't over, but it was interrupted because I am responsible for protecting him. So he has not lost. You can't say that he became your servant," Elder Ku said with a grin on his face.

"Even if you give that excuse, he still lost. It's your side that interfered in the battle, so it's technically your defeat. That guy has clearly lost," Manxiang Li said.

"I can't say that he lost. I agree with Elder Ku. He is the one that interfered in the battle and for good reasons, but Jichuan didn't call for his help, so the blame can't be put on Jichuan. He isn't defeated," The Elder of True Nirvana Sect said.

"Hahaha, I can't say that I'm surprised. You guys are all going to side with each other despite saying that you will be impartial and make sure that the bet is followed to the end," Manxiang Li let out with an amused look on his face.

"It's alright. You can keep him. I won't take Jichuan, but you can never lie that he is my servant as you all know the truth. And you too, Jichuan! Don't ever forget that you're my servant, and this master is leaving you here for a few days. I'll see you again, my dear servant," Manxiang Li laughed out loud as he said.

"Emperor Ni, it's better that you keep her body. Her father should perform her last rites. I'll take my leave," Manxiang Li said as he placed the body of Meng in the Emperor's arms and left with Long Chen, who had sent his beasts back to his storage ring.

Actually, the only reason Manxiang Li had taken Meng's body was on Long Chen's orders. When they were coming towards the battle hall, Long Chen took out the Heart Devouring Insect and kept it back in his storage ring before he told Manxiang Li to give the body back when they were to leave.

Long Chen and Manxiang Li left, leaving everyone else behind.

'Those bastards! If they weren't from a powerful sect, I would have killed him right here for spoiling our reputation! Why the fuck is the True Dao Sect not here yet! If they were here, I wouldn't need to worry about the Devil Worshipping Sect.'

'It's alright. They should be on their way. Once they're here, everything would be balanced, and I can still kill those bastards outside the Divine Heaven Sect!' The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect thought to herself.

Chapter 378 - 378: Disappeared (I)

"How do you feel now? Was the revenge satisfying?" Manxiang Li inquired as he fastened his steps to match the speed of Long Chen.

"It was good and kinda like poetic justice, but now that I think about it, it would've been better to do it myself," Long Chen replied as he glanced back at the palace for an instant.

"Hahaha, that's human nature, my friend. No matter how much you get, you'll be thirsty for more. I don't know how she tried to kill you, but to be killed by one you loved should be one of the better revenge I have seen. Losing the reputation and getting killed by her lover," Manxiang Li chuckled.

"You're wrong with that. She didn't love Ru Shan," Long Chen replied to Manxiang Li.

"What the heck? Are you saying that it was the truth that the Mighty Sword Sect forced her to marry them?" Manxiang Li asked with a surprised look on his face as if he hadn't expected that.

"It's the opposite in a sense. It's something like she fooled them in order to get Ru Shan to marry her. She invited the guys from the Mighty Sword Sect to her palace as guests and then she schemed to win the heart of Ru Shan. She made him feel as if she loved him and that he loved her," Long Chen replied.

"So she didn't love Ru Shan and it was all her plan? Why? Oh, I get it. Ru Shan is the future Sect Master of the Mighty Sword Sect. If she married him, her life would have been set," Manxiang Li let out as with an amazed expression.

"Yup," Long Chen replied.

He called out the Winged Tiger and climbed on top of it.

"How did you know it?" Manxiang Li asked, but Long Chen didn't answer as the Winged Tiger began flying away.

"Hey, wait!" Manxiang Li called out as he brought his flying beast out and chased after Long Chen in the air.

Both of them landed some distance away from their hotel.

"You didn't tell me how you found out so much about her? Also, how did you convince her to go along with your plan?" Manxiang Li asked.

"I already doubted her intentions behind her marriage so I talked to her and she told me herself. As for why she went along with my plan, it doesn't really matter now, does it?" Long Chen smilingly said.

"Anyway, are you going back to your people or will you stay in the city for longer?" Long Chen asked Manxiang Li.

"I'll go back. I already had plenty of fun and the Elder must be getting worried. I don't wish for him to come here looking for me," Manxiang Li said with a wry smile on his face.

"Alright. I'll see you in the Divine Heaven Sect then," Long Chen bid his farewell before he left.

Long Chen walked back to his hotel and he was stunned as he saw Mi Yao standing in front of her door. It was as if he was having a Deja Vu.

He walked up to her and said, "You're quite weird. Why are you always standing outside your door when I come back? Are you scared to stay alone in your room? Should I shift in your room to keep you company?"

"I'm not a child and no I'm not scared to be in my room but more importantly, can you not understand what I told you last time? Why did you still leave?" She asked as she glared at Long Chen with anger clear in her eyes.

"I remember. You told me that the outside is not safe now that so many supreme sects are here and I also remember that I said that you don't need to worry about me and that I will be fine," Long Chen replied to her.

"Do you know that the Mighty Sword Sect and the Dual Cultivation Sect had a fight yesterday? Both sects suffered losses and people died. Do you think you can't be one of those dead? Why are you making my life so difficult!" Mi Yao said. She felt like crying, but no tears came out.

"Why do you think that I go out to cause conflict? None of those sects has seen my face and I don't go around claiming that I'm from the Dark Soul Sect. I just went outside to take in the fresh air," Long Chen replied.

"Oh? It took you 2 days to take fresh air?" Mi Yao said sarcastically.

"What can I say, my lungs are quite big. Anyway, I'm tired so I'll be going to get some rest. Good night. And don't worry, I won't leave anymore. I'm done with everything," Long Chen said as he entered his room and closed the door.

He walked to his bedroom and sat down before beginning his cultivation.

While Long Chen was cultivating in his room, a weird phenomenon was taking place right outside the Royal City of the North Moon Empire.

It was the place that was assumed to be the one where the Divine Heaven Sect was said to appear.

The Sky in the 1 km range of this place was covered in dense dark clouds. The Qi in this place was also unstable and it was only getting more and more unstable.

A few sects were already waiting here. The Devil Worshipping Sect was one of those sects.

"Brother Li, You ran away again. You can't imagine how angry he was when he found out. Hurry and apologize to him. You're his favorite even though you trouble him the most. I'm sure he won't scold you," A girl informed Manxiang Li who had just got back.

"It's just Elder Devi, I'll be fine," Manxiang Li said as he confidently entered the tent of Elder Devi of Devil Worshipping Sect.

The girl stood outside and she was able to hear the loud voice of the Elder who was scolding Manxiang Li. She couldn't help but chuckle as she heard the scolding of Manxiang Li.

She was standing right outside their tent when she noticed something shining at some distance.

The girl grew curious as she stepped towards that shining item. She entered the core of the unstable region but her eyes never left the item.

As she got near it, she was able to see it clearly. It was a golden brick that had a carving of sun and moon.

"So beautiful," She muttered as she bent down to pick it up, but as soon as her hand touched it, she disappeared along with the golden brick. It was as if she disappeared in thin air.

The Unstable Qi was stabilized for a brief moment when the girl disappeared, but it instantly returned to being unstable.

After an hour of scolding, Manxiang Li left the tent. He looked so tired after an hour of scolding that it seemed as if he hadn't slept for weeks.

"That naughty girl! She talked as if the Elder really won't scold me much as I was his favorite! Even the apology didn't work. Where the heck is she! I'll teach her a lesson for messing with me. You'll get just as much scolding as I got," Manxiang Li seemed as if he was a kid that was bullied by that girl.

He wanted to find her, but no matter where he went, he couldn't see her. He even asked other disciples, but even they didn't know about it. He was starting to get worried about her.

"Siqi!" He called out loud, but he didn't get any response.

"Stop messing with me! I promise that I won't scold you!" He said again, but Siqi didn't come out.

He walked back to Elder Devi's tent in a hurry to inform him about it.

Chapter 379 - 379: Search

"Are you saying that Siqi sneaked out this time?" Elder Devi asked as he glared at Manxiang Li as if he didn't believe his words in the least.

"I'm not saying that Elder. Siqi is not someone who will leave the place. She is the most obedient one of us. But it's the truth that she is missing. When I came to the tent, she was outside, but when I left, she wasn't. I tried looking for her, but she is nowhere to be found," Manxiang Li said.

Elder Devi frowned as he stood up.

"Alright. Let me check. She was wearing the bracelet that I gave you all, right?" Elder Devi asked as he pointed towards the bracelet Manxiang Li's hand.

"Yeah. She was wearing it," Manxiang Li said.

"Good. I can use that to track her as the bracelets have a small tracking formation in them," Elder Devi said as he stepped out of his tent.

He closed his eyes and stood still as if he was a statue.

"How is this possible?" Elder Devi let out in shock as he abruptly opened his eyes.

"What's wrong Elder? Is she in trouble?" Manxiang Li asked in concern.

"I can't track her. I can't even sense the bracelet," Elder Devi said as if he was talking about something unbelievable.

"Did someone break her bracelet? It might be what happened after she was kidnapped," Manxiang Li told his assumption.

"That's impossible. Those bracelets can't be broken, no matter how much power one has. They can be taken off and thrown away, but breaking them is impossible," Elder Devi said as his frown deepened.

"What does that mean, Elder? We can't find Siqi now? I'll go to the city to look for her. If she was kidnapped, it must be those righteous sects! No matter what happens, I'll definitely find them!" Manxiang Li said as he brought his beast out and left on it.

The Elder told him to stop, but he didn't listen. Elder Devi also went after Manxiang Li, but he kept his eyes on the ground as he flew on the beast in the hopes of finding Siqi on the ground.

After flying around for a short period of time, they got to the Royal Palace.

"People of the Mighty Sword Sect! Come out, right now!" Manxiang Li called out loud.

The Elder, on the other hand, spread his Spiritual Sense over the Royal Palace as he scanned the whole place, but he didn't find Siqi.

"Siqi is not here," He said to Manxiang Li.

"So what if she's not here! They must have hidden her elsewhere!" Manxiang Li told Elder Devi.

"Why are you back here again? Do you really want a fight between our 2 sects right before the important occasion? Last time I let you leave but don't think that it was because I was afraid. Even if you bring your elder, I'll never be afraid of a fight. If it's a fight that you want, a fight you shall receive!" The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect came out of the palace along with Ru Shan and the other 3 disciples.

"We are not here to fight. We just want to know if you guys were the ones that kidnapped our disciple some time ago," Elder Devi asked as he glared in her eyes.

"We didn't kidnap anyone, but if you're trying to use that as an excuse to fight, you don't need to do that. As I said, if you want to fight then you'll get a fight," The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said as she brought her sword out.

"She's telling the truth. She didn't Kidnap her. I can see that she knows nothing about it," Elder Devi sighed as he informed Manxiang Li.

"Then it must be the Beast Hall people that kidnapped her. I had a few skirmishes with them. Tell me where I can find the people of the Beast Hall? Are they still inside?" Manxiang Li asked.

"They've left long ago. As for their address, they live in the Crystal Water Inn on the south of the city. Leave this place and don't disturb us anymore if you guys are here because of a misunderstanding," The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said as she stepped inside the palace with Ru Shan and the others.

"I'm 90 percent sure that it was done by them. Other than these 2 sects, there was none that I had a problem with," Manxiang Li said as he got back in his beast.

"I don't want to scold you as this is a precarious situation, but please don't fight random people for fun. You never know who can do what," Elder Devi said as he got on his beast as well.

They went to the Crystal Water Inn on the south of the Royal City

Manxiang Li again called out for the Beast Hall out loud. Elder Ku was the only one that came out.

"You brought your Elder here? Didn't you understand that it was a draw? I'll never let you take Jichuan as long as I'm alive," Elder Ku said with stubborn expressions on his face.

"What's this all about?" Elder Devi asked as he looked at Manxiang Li full of confusion.

"It's nothing. I and their head Disciple made a bet in front of the Elders of all the righteous sects. Their head disciple lost and according to our bet, he's my servant now," Manxiang Li explained.

"He's not!" Elder Ku let out loud as he glared at Manxiang Li.

"That a matter is for the future. For now, tell me why you kidnapped my disciple?" Elder Devi asked Elder Ku.

"Kidnapped your disciple? What are you talking about? What disciple? I've been here all the time, taking care of Jichuan as he's going through his backlash. Are you here to destroy our Sect's reputation just like you did with the Mighty Sword Sect? That won't work on us! I have nothing to do with it if your disciple actually got kidnapped. So stop talking nonsense," Elder Ku snorted.

Elder Devi used his spiritual senses and scanned his surroundings and in the hotel, but Siqi wasn't here either.

"She's not here. Also, he's not lying either," Elder Ku said.

"Oh? You understand? Are you really not here to accuse me falsely? I guess you are different from that kid. Ok, you can leave now. I have more important things to do now," Elder Ku said as he turned back and walked back inside the inn.

"Even he doesn't have her? I'm out of ideas now. Where the heck did Siqi go! It can't be that she disappeared in thin air, can it?" Manxiang Li said as his frown deepened.

"This shouldn't be possible. She's not a ghost who will disappear in thin air. I'll search the whole city with my spiritual sense to find her," Elder Devi said.

Long Chen was still cultivating in his room, not knowing the strange event that had taken place outside.

He was so engrossed in cultivation, that he didn't stop for even a second in the next few days.

One night, Just as he stopped his cultivation, he heard the knock on the door.

He stood up and walked to the door. He opened the door and saw Mi Yao standing outside the door.

"It's time to leave. Get ready in 30 minutes," She said before she walked to the nearby room to inform the others.

Long Chen closed the door and walked back inside.

In the next 30 minutes, he took a long shower and got dressed before he left his room.

As he left his room, he saw that the others were already standing there. Mi Yao, Mu Zheng, Chu Miao, Su Zhen, and the others looked ready to go for the most important mission of the sect.

Chapter 380 - 380: Barrier

As soon as Long Chen got out, Chu Miao walked closer to him.

"Finally, we can leave. I was getting so bored inside," Chu Miao said, smilingly.

Mu Zheng just glared at Chu Miao and looked somewhat upset.

'After entering the Divine Heaven Sect and after killing Long Chen, I'll definitely take your Primordial Yin,' He thought to himself.

"Alright. Let's leave," Mi Yao said as she started walking towards the stairs.

Long Chen and the others left the hotel and got on their Winged Tigers. The winged tigers started flying and took them outside the Royal City, and after 20 minutes, they landed in a deserted place.

They could see that a few sects were already there. They saw the people of the Devil Worshipping Sect, Dual Cultivation Sect, Profound Yin Snatching Sect, and the Blood Devouring Sect were already there from the Evil Sects.

From the Righteous Sects, the Buddha Temple, the Beast Hall, the Mighty Sword Sect, and the Wind Chasing Sect and the True Nirvana Sect were there.

The other sects were still not here. Amongst the 19 factions that were supposed to appear, only ten were here yet.

The righteous and the Evil sects were standing on the opposite sides. There was a distance of 500 meters between them.

"I thought the Righteous and the Evil side would fight as soon as they saw each other. Why is everyone so peaceful?" Long Chen asked Mi Yao.

"That's because no one wants to take the risk. No side has a clear advantage, and if both sides start fighting now, people will die. And if by accident, their head disciples died, then their token of appreciation will be lost, and they won't be able to enter the Divine Heaven sect to search for treasures," Mi Yao said to Long Chen.

"That makes sense. So the fight may only begin when everyone's inside," he muttered.

Long Chen and the others walked closer to the team of the Devil Worshipping Sect as, amongst the 5 Evil Sects present at the moment, only Devil Worshipping Sect was closer to the Dark Soul Sect.

"Why do you look so angry? Did something happen?" Long Chen asked as he saw the strange expressions of Manxiang Li.

'He knows the Chief Disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect?' Mi Yao thought with a shocked look on her face.

"Someone kidnapped my Junior Martial Sister. We searched the whole Royal City, but we couldn't find her," Manxiang Li replied with a depression evident in his eyes.

"Did you ask the Mighty Sword Sect and the Beast Hall? If she was kidnapped, then they should be the one who did it," Long Chen let out as he glanced towards the Righteous Sects on the other side.

On the other side, the Righteous Sects were also looking towards Long Chen with shock.

"He's from the Dark Soul Sect?" Elder Ku said with clenched teeth.

Jichuan also clenched his fists tightly as he glared at Long Chen with a murderous gaze.

It was embarrassing to be defeated by someone from an evil sect, but it was even worse now that he knew that Long Chen was from their nemesis sect, the Dark Soul Sect.

"That's not all. From the way he was walking in the lead when they landed here, he should be their leader and the Head Disciple of the Dark Soul Sect. Now it makes more sense. I was wondering how Jichuan was defeated by someone who wasn't even the head disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect's team. Still, now it makes more sense knowing that the boy was indeed on the same level in position as Jichuan," Elder of the True Nirvana Sect commented.

"It must be the plan of those two head disciples to embarrass our sect! They must have planned the thing with the girl at the marriage as well. It was all a plan to spoil the reputation of us Righteous Sects!" Elder Ku exclaimed in anger.

"Jichuan! You must kill that boy for making such a devious plan. You must gain back the respect of our sect that you lost by losing," Elder Ku told Jichuan.

"Ru Shan, you killed the girl who betrayed your love, but you must not leave the true culprits alive!" Elder Sui Ru told Ru Shan.

The other Sects also told their head disciples the same thing that they should destroy the Evil Sect disciples if they got the opportunity.

"I asked them, and even Elder Devi checked, but they didn't have her. They weren't the ones who did it," Manxiang Li replied to Long Chen.

"Strange. Who could have done it if not them? Does your sect have enmity with any other sect?" Long Chen asked.

"Yeah, We have had a few problems in the past with the True Dao Sect, but they haven't arrived yet," Manxiang Li replied. Long Chen could see the sadness in his eyes.

"Isn't True Dao Sect said to be the Strongest Sect amongst the Righteous Sects? Maybe they already came and are in hiding?" Long Chen let out softly.

"They aren't. They haven't arrived. We are certain of that. Elder Devi and I searched every place. We searched this desert, the Royal City, and even the nearby cities. We scanned every place using Spiritual Sense, but she wasn't found. It's like the earth swallowed her," Manxiang Li replied.

"Strange. I can't think of anything that might have happened," Long Chen muttered.

"It's alright. I think that she is already dead by now. Whoever did it should have buried her in the ground. That's why our spiritual sense couldn't find her. I am just so angry at not being able to protect her. I don't know how to let this anger out. I'll probably kill a lot of the righteous bastards in the Divine Heaven Sect. The treasures are a second priority to me now," Manxiang Li said in full seriousness.

A few more seconds passed when they saw three more sects arrive.

They were from the Evil Side this time, the Eternal Blood Sect, the Dark Art Pavillion, and the Night Demon Sect.

These three sects also landed near the people of the Devil Worshipping Sect.

Not much time had passed when four more sects arrived. The sects were from the Righteous Side, the Profound Sword Sect, the Rising Phoenix Sect, the Eternal Peace Sect, and the Heaven's Blessing Sect.

With their arrival, the power balance shifted as the Righteous Side had nine sects, whereas the other side had eight sects. The most influential sects from both sides weren't here yet.

It was at that moment that it started thundering. The clouds began roaring as if a massive thunderstorm was near.

A bright yellow light fell from the sky and landed on the ground, which started expanding until it took the shape of a barrier that covered a circular area of 200 km diameter. Everything that touched the barrier was turned to dust, which was an apparent show of its power.

"Is that the barrier of the Divine Heaven Sect? Why can't I see the sect inside?" Chu Miao asked with a confused look on her face.

"That's because the sect hasn't appeared yet. Only the barrier has appeared. It's always like this. The Sect should be appearing soon as well. When the Sect fully appears, you can use the token to enter," Mi Yao replied to her.

"How can the barrier and the Sect appear separately? Are they not related?" Chu Miao asked again.

"Logically, that should be what happens, but it doesn't. It has always been like this. The sect appears after the barrier. As for a reason? I'm not sure. The whole Divine Heaven Sect is a mystery at the moment. No one knows how it was destroyed. No one knows why it disappears and appears again. It's all a big mystery, so there's no need to overthink it," Mi Yao replied.

Chapter 381 - 381: Control Yourself

After the barrier appeared, an Illusory figure of the Divine Heaven Sect also began to come into existence slowly.

While everyone was engrossed in watching the sect appear, the teams of 2 more sects appeared from the opposite sides.

From the right, the True Dao Sect's people arrived. The True Dao Sect was said to be the strongest righteous sect in the continent.

From the other side came the strongest Evil Sect. It was the Heavenly Slaughter Sect. It was said to be the only sect on the continent that was on par with the True Dao Sect.

The True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect were enemies. Whenever the disciples of the two sects met, it always resulted in the complete wipeout of one of the sides. There were only a few occasions when both sides left without any fight, and today was one of those days.

Even though both these sects saw each other, they didn't clash with each other as they could see that the Sect was about to appear.

They both landed on the ground at approximately the same time.

Xu Ming saw the newly arrived people, and he could see two people that gave him a feeling that they were quite strong, just from their aura alone.

While the Head Disciples of the other Sects were in the 6th or 7th stage of Earth Realm, the Head Disciples of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect and the True Dao Sect were actual peak Earth Realm cultivators. They were just a step away from becoming Sky Realm Cultivators.

There was also something strange that he noticed. Even though their cultivation was at the 10th Stage of Earth Realm, Long Chen could see that they already had sufficient Qi for becoming Sky Realm cultivators.

'They must be delaying their breakthrough by suppressing their true essence. I get it. Only Earth Realm cultivators can enter this place, so they didn't break through because they didn't want to lose the opportunity,' Long Chen thought as he shifted his gaze between the Head Disciple of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect, Tang Jin and the Head Disciple of the True Dao Sect, Yang Sen before finally turning his gaze towards the Divine Heaven Sect.

Both of them sensed someone's gaze on them and looked towards Long Chen.

'Hiding his cultivation? Why did I have a feeling like someone dangerous was looking at me?' Yang Sen Sect thought as he observed Long Chen.

Tang Jin, on the other hand, looked at Long Chen more seriously.

"The Sect appeared completely!" someone called out as they saw the full Divine Heaven Sect coming into existence.

The Sect looked quite strange from the outside. Unlike other sects that made their infrastructure look beautiful and majestic, the Divine Heaven Sect was clearly on the opposite end of the spectrum.

The Divine Heaven Sect looked like a giant dome from the outside. It was pure white as if it was made of the purest of white marbles. Even though it seemed mostly like a simple dome, there was still a unique charm to it.

Without waiting for even a single second, the team of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect and the Team of the True Dao Sect were the first to move out.

"Go now. Remember to work as a team and keep an eye out for the treasures on the list. Best of luck," Mi Yao told Long Chen and the others before they stepped out as well.

Tang Jin and Yang Sen were already near the barrier. They brought their Divine Heaven Sect token out and held it in one of their hands.

The Other disciples of their teams touched them and entered the barrier together.

The team of 10 from the True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect quickly passed through the barrier.

The entrance of the Divine Heaven Sect was near the barrier on Tang Jin's side; thus, Tang Jin and his team managed to enter first. Yang Sen wasn't too far behind and entered a short moment later.

Long Chen stood near the barrier and brought the Divine Heaven Sect Token out of his storage ring.

"Alright. Place your hand on me. I'm about to enter," Long Chen before he stepped forth and entered the barrier.

The other teams also entered. Most of them were in a hurry to enter the Divine Heaven Sect, but Long Chen was casually walking towards the entrance as if he was in no hurry.

"Why are you moving so slow?" Su Zhen asked Long Chen as she glared at him. She was annoyed as she felt as if Long Chen wasn't serious about the mission.

"There's no benefit in being the first one to enter. Don't you remember that there have been many Disciples that have entered the place before us? All the easy places should be wiped clean. The tough places, on the other hand, won't follow the rules of those who come first can enter; otherwise, they would be wiped clean as well," Long Chen replied.

"So a few minutes of distance won't make a difference," He added.

"You!" Su Zhen found it hard to respond, but she was still angry at Long Chen.

"If only we didn't have to stick as a team, me and Brother Mu would have gone alone and found the treasures for the sect!" She finally let out after a long time.

"You can leave. It's not like you'll be contributing anything to the team," Long Chen chuckled as he replied to her.

"Y-you are so arrogant! Do you think that you don't need our help? Can you do it alone? Such stupidity. I don't even know how someone trashy like you can be our leader and not someone great like Brother Mu!" She said to Long Chen.

"Little Girl, don't forget who you're talking to. You'll never know when you might lose your head next. I don't want to be the one to kill you, but I'll definitely do it if you don't shut your mouth," Long Chen let out loud as he glared at Su Zhen in anger.

He was controlling himself a lot in front of her nonsense, but he wasn't sure how long he could do it before he killed her in anger.

Su Zhen saw the deep eyes of Long Chen, and she felt his powerful aura locked into her. She couldn't help but start shivering as she saw a glimpse of Long Chen's anger. She remembered the news she heard about Long Chen being the Demon of the Sect and him slaughtering many people in the sect.

For a moment, she felt as if the next moment might be her last.

She hurriedly hid behind Mu Zheng.

"Brother Mu, t-that demon is threatening to kill me! He wants to spoil our mission; he must be a spy of other sects!" She said to Mu Zheng.

"Long Chen, control yourself! Do you think just because you're stronger than her, you are allowed to bully her? You think no one can put you to your place?" Mu Zheng let out loud as he also released his aura.

All the disciples of the other Sects had entered the Divine Heaven Sect, and only Long Chen and his team were standing outside the entrance. It seemed as if a fight was about to ensue.

"I can't believe it. It looks like they're about to fight! Is the Dark Soul Sect really that little united?" Elder Devi asked as he looked at Elder Mi Yao.

Mi Yao herself looked furious as she saw what was happening. She was cursing them all in her mind.

The Elders of the righteous sects, on the other hand, were laughing at the team of the Dark Soul Sect.

The Elders of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect and the Elders of the True Dao Sect looked at the team of the Dark Soul Sect as if they were looking at trash.

Chapter 382 - 382: Stairs Of Heaven

"Are you saying that you're the one that can show me my place?" Long Chen asked him as he smiled.

"If you want to go separately, then do it. If you want to fight, then do that. Either way, my team will have a few people less," he told Mu Zheng.

'Have fun while you can, Kid! I'll definitely kill you inside later!' Mu Zheng thought as he glared at Long Chen.

"Brother Mu, let's do it! Leave this guy behind. It wouldn't matter if he's in our team or not," Su Zhen said to Mu Zheng.

Without giving Mu Zheng even a chance to respond, she continued, "Do you think brother Mu needs you? We are going separately! Brother Mu isn't scared to go without you!"

Mu Zheng, on the other hand, was stunned as things took a different turn entirely. He wanted to stay with Long Chen so that he could kill him inside, but after the words Su Zhen said, he felt as if he would be insulted if he stayed with Long Chen.

'You idiot! You spoiled my plan! Whatever, I can still kill him inside! It's not like we won't meet,' He thought.

Su Zhen looked towards the other disciples of the team.

"You guys! Do you want to come with us or stay with the Demon of the Sect who might kill you at any time?" she said to them.

The disciples of the Dark Soul Sect thought for a while before they stepped closer to Mu Zheng.

"See? Most of the disciples want to come with us! Senior Martial Brother Mu is the real leader in everyone's mind!" She said.

"You two! You guys are worse than trash to stay with him! Do you want to stay with that demon? I can understand Chu Miao. She must have been having an affair with him, that's why she sticks close to him, but why are you staying there?" Su Zhen asked Dai Hu.

"I have faith in him," Dai Hu simply replied.

"Then, so be it! Let's go, Brother Mu," Su Zhen said as she held Mu Zheng's hand and took him with her.

Long Chen's team of 10, now had only three people remaining. Only Dai Hu and Chu Miao stayed behind with him while the others entered the sect.

"They're so naive if they think that they can succeed without teamwork," Chu Miao muttered.

"Let's get in as well," Long Chen said as he started walking towards the entrance. They entered the sect as well.

"It hasn't even begun, and your team has already been divided. Sigh, the young never understand that there are things that are more important than petty fighting," Elder Devi said as he sighed.

"They are idiots!" Mi Yao let out as she clenched her fists.

"Alright. How about we start the bet guys? Which team will have all their members wiped out first?" The Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect cracked a peal of laughter.

"I will bet on the great team of Dark Soul Sect!" The Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect said as she glanced at Mi Yao.

"I say the same. They are divided and weak. It would be quite shocking if they managed to survive," The Elder of the Blood Devouring Sect said.

Almost every elder said the same thing. The Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect, Dark Soul Sect, and the Devil Worshipping Sect kept their silence, each having a different reason.

The Dark Soul Sect was the joke in the bet; thus, Mi Yao didn't bet. Elder Devi didn't bet as his Sect had a friendship with the Dark Soul Sect. Even though he believed that the team of Dark Soul Sect behaved stupidly and that they were going to be wiped out, he didn't place his bet. The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect Rin Shan didn't think that these small sects were worth him getting involved.

As Long Chen entered the Sect, the first thing he saw was the beautiful Red Sky. The inside of the sect was like a completely different dimension that had a sky of its own.

Other than the sky, the next most Intriguing thing was the Stairs in front of him.

They had to climb through the stairs to move forward, but it wasn't as easy as it looked.

From what Long Chen was told, he knew that the stairway was called the 'Stairs to Heaven'. The stairs were a trial that the Divine Heaven Sect had placed on their entrance.

The first thing someone had to do after entering was climbing the stairs. The Stairs tested the person's faith and beliefs, and only if that person succeeded, he could get to the top.

As for what the test was, Long Chen didn't know. It was said that the Stairway of Heaven gave every person a different test based on their memories. The test can be about anything, Courage, trust, family, love, etc.

Long Chen could see that amongst the ones that had entered previously, some of them were still on the stairs going through their test.

Mu Zhen Su Zhen and a lot of people he knew were on the Stairs.

Manxiang Li was still there as well.

Long Chen stepped towards the stairs, but before he could place his first step on the Stairs, he saw Manxiang Li moving upwards.

"That guy, he passed the test quite fast," He thought.

Long Chen stepped on the stairs, but nothing happened. It was said that the higher one received their test, the tougher it would be.

There were 13 stairs, and no one was over the 6th stairs for the test. Even Manxiang Li himself was only on the 7th stair previously.

Long Chen stepped on the second step, but he still didn't receive his test. Very Quickly, he took five more steps and reached the 7th stair, but he still didn't receive his trial.

With a frown, he took the next step and kept climbing until he was on the last step, but that was when he received his test.

He could feel his surroundings turn white before they changed entirely.

Long Chen found sitting on a chair. There was a small table in front of him. He heard the noises of the people talking in his surroundings.

Long Chen raised his head and saw the blackboard on the wall. A male teacher was writing a mathematical question on the board.

"Alright, Who will solve the question? Raise your hand. I need the value of X," The Teacher said as he looked back at class.

He waited for a few minutes, but no one raised their hand.

"Alright. I'll choose myself! Long Chen, come to the board," The teacher said.

Long Chen stood up and walked towards the door. His eyes were looking here and there as if trying to understand what was happening.

The Staircase of Heaven has restricted his memories so that he couldn't know that he was in a test. In fact, he didn't even know about the Cultivation world where he went to after his death.

"Stop getting distracted! Solve the question on the board and give me the value of X," The teacher said.

"Oh, right, Sir," Long Chen picked up the chalk and solved the question on the board.

"X should be 27," Long Chen ultimately said.

"Good. Very good. You can go back to your seats now," the teacher said to Long Chen.

"That's how the question is solved! Did everyone understand, or should I solve it for you myself?" the Teacher asked.

"We Understood everything, Sir!" the students replied.

"Good. So let's continue with the next question," The teacher said as he picked up the chalk again and walked towards the board with a book on his hand, but right then, the bell rang, signaling the lunch time.

Chapter 383 - 383: Little Brother Chen

"Hey, are you coming to the cafeteria or not?" Someone said from behind.

Long Chen turned back and saw a girl standing behind him with her hand behind her back.

"Su Min?" Long Chen responded after looking at her for quite some time with a perplexed look on his face.

"Hey? Why are you looking at me like it's your first time seeing me? Cheh, you should take proper sleep, man. You always sleep in class, and now your memory is getting weak. I can't believe that it took you so long to remember my name," the girl laughed out loud as she tapped on Long Chen's head.

"Ah, Sorry. I remember. I guess I had a dream, and now I don't even remember what dream it was, but it should be a good dream," Long Chen replied as he stood up.

"I'll come with you to the cafeteria," Long Chen muttered as he stood up and left the room with her.

Long Chen and Su Min walked to the cafeteria and collected their lunch before sitting on one of the tables together.

"Were you reading those weird fantasy novels last night as well? You should keep your health in mind as well, right? Don't read the stuff at the cost of your sleep. You have so much time in the day for that," Su Min told Long Chen.

"What can I do? The novel is so good that I can't stop reading. And the damn author always ends the chapters on a cliffhanger, and I can't stop myself from opening the next chapter," Long Chen replied with a wry smile on his face.

"Alright. Tell me about the book. I'll read it as well. We can both sleep in the class then," Su Min said as she let out a pearl of laughter.

Long Chen just looked at her laughing and couldn't help but smile.

"It's a book called Divinity written by this new author Demonic; it's really good. You should really give it a try," Long Chen replied to her.

"I sure will. Oh, right. Do you have any plans for Sunday?" She asked Long Chen.

"Plans for tomorrow? I have no particular plans. I'm just going to stay at home and be lazy," Long Chen answered her.

Su Min looked at Long Chen for a brief moment in hesitation as she played with her fingers.

"Well, ah, the thing is that there is an amusement park that is having an opening tomorrow. It's nearby, and I heard that it's a beautiful place. I have also received two entry passes from my father. Would you like to come with me?" she ultimately said to him.

"Sure. I would love to go with you," Long Chen replied excitedly, but he immediately controlled his emotions and started looking more casual.

"Great," Su Min replied with a bright smile on her face.

They ate their lunch before they walked back to class together.

After a few more lectures, the school was over, and the students started leaving.

Long Chen and Su Min left the class together.

As they left the school, they saw a luxurious black car waiting outside.

"My ride's here. Don't forget tomorrow, alright? I'll wait for you there at 9," Su Min said to Long Chen before she entered the car.

The car drove away.

"How can I forget it. I myself wanted to ask you out for so long. Maybe I'll use the opportunity to ask her to become my girlfriend," Long Chen muttered as he started walking home as well.

He was walking on the side of the road when he heard a loud scream from behind.

"Thief! Stop him!" a female voice bellowed from the back.

Long Chen looked back and saw a man running towards him with a female purse in his hand.

Long Chen decided to try to stop the thief by blocking his way. As soon as the thief was near him, he jumped at the thief. The thief swiftly took out a knife from his pocket without Long Chen noticing.

As soon as the thief grabbed hold of the thief, the knife was fiercely thrust at Long Chen's chest. But Long Chen's body reacted on its own as he caught the knife of the thief and kicked him in the balls.

The pain made the thief tremble. It made it difficult for him to breathe. The Thief's face turned red as he fell down on the ground.

More people stepped forward and caught the thief.

After Long Chen had died last time because of the thief, he had thought so deeply about how he could have survived when he came to the new world. When he thought about it, there were so many ways he could have done it better.

Even though Long Chen only had fake memories at the moment and he didn't remember anything about his rebirth in the new world, or his previous life, he still had a small bit of subconscious reaction and survived.

"Thank you so much!" the middle-aged woman came to him and thanked Long Chen profusely. She had seen how bravely Long Chen handled the thief. She took the purse back and gave Long Chen some money as her gratitude.

The cops also arrived and took the thief under arrest.

Everyone praised Long Chen, but Long Chen wasn't thrilled. He had realized that if he hadn't reacted fast, he would have been dead and that too for someone else.

The thought kept floating in his mind as he walked home. He thanked God that he hadn't died by the knife.

Long Chen entered his home and got busy in his book, ultimately forgetting about the happenings of today as he threw that to the back of his head.

The night passed away, and the day arrived as Long Chen left the house, dressed like a boy that wanted to impress someone.

The new amusement park was near his house, and it only took him 20 minutes of walking to get there from his home.

As Long Chen got there, he saw Su Min standing right outside the entrance.

A smile formed on Su Min's face as she saw Long Chen there.

"You are right on time, But I wouldn't have minded if you were earlier," She said jokingly as Long Chen got close to her.

"Sorry, I'll be earlier next time," Long Chen replied.

"Yup. I'll hold you to that!" She said.

They entered the Amusement Park after showing their passes at the entrance.

The time inside was enjoyable as they went to many rides together, and only after 2 hours of going to various rides, did they go to a food court.

Su Min sat on one of the chairs while Long Chen left to bring ice cream for her.

He was coming back with ice cream for her while making a firm decision in his mind. He had decided to ask the question right now. It was a perfect time, according to him.

Just as he got near the table, he stopped abruptly as he saw the table empty. Su Min was not there.

He started looking around, but he didn't find her anywhere.

He called her phone number, and after some time, the other side picked up the phone.

"Su Min? Where are you!" He asked in a concerned tone.

"Su Min can't come to the phone, Little Brother Chen," a male voice said to him, from the other side of the connection. A frown appeared on Long Chen's face as he heard the voice on the other side of the phone. He felt as if he had listened to the voice before.

"Who are you?" Long Chen asked.

"You forgot your elder brother that you killed? Hahaha, so cruel. I only put you to sleep, and he decided to kill me? Such a cruel little brother," the person on the other side said as he cracked a burst of laughter.

Chapter 384 - 384: Tests

"What the heck are you talking about! I have no brother, and I would never kill anyone!" Long Chen said though he kept his voice down as there were so many people nearby.

"Ahahah, think of it like that then. Anyway, I have your little girl with me. She's sleeping comfortably, but if you don't do one thing for me, she might fall asleep forever, and I would slit her throat," the person on the other side said.

"What crude joke is this! Stop it immediately and give the phone to her before I call the police!" Long Chen bellowed. He didn't control his voice this time, and everyone heard his voice.

"Yo, kid! Can you stop screaming? We are trying to have a conversation here!" said the girl that was sitting on a nearby table, but Long Chen ignored her as he focused on the call because the other person was saying something.

"I'm not joking, and you can try going to whoever you want, but if you don't do as I saw in 20 minutes, then your friend will die, "

"What do you want me to do?" Long Chen asked.

"Nothing much. I just need you to come to the red tent that you see straight ahead. I'm waiting for you inside with your girl. If you delay or bring anyone else, she will die," the man replied.

"I'm coming. Don't do anything to her," Long Chen said as he started walking towards the red tent. He left the ice cream on the table.

It took Long Chen only a short instant to get to the tent, but as soon as he entered, his eyes opened wide in shock.

He saw two chairs present there, and two girls were sitting in the chairs. There was a bomb tied to both the girls.

One of the girls was Su Min, whereas the other girl was someone Long Chen didn't know, but he felt like she was someone he knew really well.

The second girl was Mingyu that he didn't recognize at the moment.

"Welcome little brother," A boy came out of the shadows. The boy had long black hair, and he looked to be 20 years old.

"Who are you? Why are you doing this?" Long Chen asked the boy.

"Hmm? Did you forget me, little brother? I'm Long Su, and don't worry, I won't let you forget the name," Long Su said to Long Chen.

"Are you a terrorist? Why are there bombs on them? What do you want from me?" Long Chen asked questions one after another.

"Of course, I called you out to play a game. It's to test your morals. On one side is your classmate and the girl you like and on the other side is a complete stranger. You can only save one person,"

"Both their bombs are connected. The bombs can be diffused by removing the red wire on it, but as soon as you remove the wire of one bomb, the other bomb will explode, killing the other person. If you moved the chairs or if you removed the wires of both the bombs, then instead of being diffused, they will all blast,"

"Also, if you don't do anything, then in 5 minutes, both the bombs will blast. The decision is yours. Which girl do you want to save? Although the decision is simple, I'm quite curious if you will go with the usual option or not," Long Su said as he started laughing.

"You bastard! Stop playing and stop both the bombs!" Long Chen stepped towards Long Su and caught his collars as he commanded him.

"Little brother, I can't do anything even if I want. The bombs are already set, and they don't have a remote. It all depends on you now. Which one to save and which one to let die. Do it fast, only 4 minutes are left," Long Su said as he started laughing like mad.

Long Chen released him as he ran to the girls. Both the girls were unconscious.

"Sorry, Miss, but I can only save her," Long Chen muttered as he looked at Mingyu before he walked to Su Min.

He got down to his knees and found the red wire on the bomb.

Long Chen caught the wire, and he got ready to remove it, but no matter what he tried, he wasn't able to move his hand. It was as if his body didn't want to remove the wire.

Long Chen had a feeling that if he did it, he would regret it. He felt like it was wrong, and it was not something he wanted to do.

He glanced at Su Min and knew that he loved her. That was what his brain was telling him, but when he looked back at Mingyu and felt a sense of happiness coming from his heart. It had suddenly become a fight between the heart and brain.

His brain was telling him to save Su Min whereas his heart was telling him to save the girl that was stranger yet familiar

In this confusion, three more minutes passed away.

"Only 1 minute remaining," Long Su said.

"Fuck it,"

Long Chen stood up and ran towards Mingyu and removed the red wire from her bomb.

"Congratulations. You passed the test," Long Su laughed out loud as he said.

"A love that can be forgotten but not forgotten at the same time. A love that can make its way in your heart even with all the darkness residing there. A love that can make you choose a stranger that you do not even remember. You have passed the trial of love. Remember, boy, there can be darkness in the works, but when you let it consume your heart entirely, that's when you've really succumbed to it," Long Su said before he disappeared.

Long Chen found himself back in the real world. He was standing on the Stair of Heaven.

He took the final step and got on top of it.

He looked down and saw that Dai Hu and Chu Miao were still in their test. While Dai Hu was facing the trial of the 4th step, Chu Miao was facing the trial of the 6th step.

There are also the disciples of the other sect there. A few of them passed the test, whereas some of them failed the test and disappeared forever as if they were destroyed by the Stairs of Heaven.

Amongst the five disciples that had gone to Mu Zheng's team, three were dead, whereas only two succeeded. Su Zhen and Mu Zheng also passed the test, although both of them faced the test of the lower step.

After half an hour, Chu Miao passed the test as well, and after another 20 minutes, it was Dai Hu.

Most of the people had reached the top of the test, and the remaining were dead. Almost all the teams lost members except two teams. All the Members of the True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect had passed the test.

The teams started advancing deeper into the sect.

"What test did you face?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen as she walked behind him.

"I think it was called the test of love. I had to save a girl," Long Chen replied.

"What about you two?" He asked her.

"Mine was a test of courage. I was getting arranged married, and I had to gather courage and voice my opinion against my father. The fake memories were so real. I still can't believe that I passed the test," Chu Miao chuckled as she said.

"What about you?" Long Chen asked Dai Hu.

"Mine was also called the test of courage. I was a Prince, and our kingdom was under attack. It was a supreme sect that was attacking us. I had to be courageous and go out to fight even when I knew that it would result in my death. There was also an escape path there, but now that I think about it, I would have failed if I had escaped," Dai Hu replied.

Chapter 385 - 385: Natural Qi Pond

Long Chen and his small team moved deeper into the sect.

"It's so beautiful. The grass and the trees. I've never seen some of these trees and flowers. These must be what Ancient cultivators liked," Chu Miao muttered as she walked through the soft grass in the sect.

"It is amazing. Most of these rare trees should be extinct in the outside world, and they only exist in here," Dai Hu muttered.

They kept walking, and it had been 4 hours, but they saw nothing but grass, plants, and trees.

"Just how big is this place! We have been walking for so long! The Sects have entered this place so many times. They should've told us how long we would have to walk!" Chu Miao complained with a confused look on her face.

"That didn't say it because it's not the same every time. The entrance brings the people to the Stairs of Heaven, but the stairs of heaven are on a different part of the sect every time the sect appears. Apparently, this time it brought us to a place like a garden," Long Chen replied.

"A garden? Why didn't I see Medicinal Plants and rare herbs then?" Chu Miao asked.

"That's because it would be a normal garden and not a herb garden. This should be a garden that was made for people to take morning walks in. There should be a different medicine garden in the sect which would be full of rare herbs," Long Chen responded.

"Hey! Look there!" Chu Miao pointed in the distance.

They saw a beautiful white structure that looked like a tall tower.

"I'm not hallucinating, am I?" She asked.

"Not unless I'm hallucinating about the same thing. That place should be real," Dai Hu replied.

"Awesome. Finally, something good. I hope we can find some good things inside," Chu Miao muttered with a smile.

After ten more minutes of walking, Long Chen and the others entered inside the tower.

The beautiful tower had three floors with no doors.

"What the heck? Did they forget to make a door?" Chu Miao cursed as she saw that the tower had no entrance.

"There is a door," Long Chen replied to her.

"Where?" Chu Miao asked him.

"Look up," Long Chen said as he looked at the top of the tower.

"The heck! They made the door of the tower on the 3rd floor? Did they go crazy? Why would someone make the door on the 3rd floor instead of making it on the ground floor?" She asked.

"I'm sure that they would have loved to answer you if they were alive," Dai Hu said as he burst into laughter after seeing the expressions on Chu Miao's face.

"The problem is how to get to the top? We can't fly yet!" Chu Miao said with a depressed look on her face.

"Just jump. It's not that high," Long Chen let out as he jumped towards the sky and caught the handle of the door on the 3rd floor. He was hanging on the handle, but after some effort, he opened the door and entered inside.

Long Chen looked down at Chu Miao and Dai Hu, who still had mouths wide open.

"Come on. Just do as I did. It's not difficult!" Long Chen tried to convince them.

"We're not like you! We can't jump like we're flying!" Chu Miao said with a wry smile on her face.

"Alright. Take this rope," Long Chen said as he brought a rope out of his storage ring. He held one end of the rope and threw the other end on the ground.

"That's better," Chu Miao said with a bright smile.

"You go first," She said to Dai Hu. She was wearing a knee-length skirt and didn't want to go before Dai Hu.

Dai Hu understood her concern and didn't say anything as he went up first.

Chu Miao was the last person to climb up.

Long Chen closed the door of the tower and turned back.

"It's completely empty," Dai Hu muttered as he looked around. There was nothing on the 3rd floor.

"There might be something on the lower floors. Don't forget; the building starts from the 3rd floor. It should be considered the ground floor if we were to look at it normally," Chu Miao replied.

"True,"

They walked towards the stairs that spiraled down to the second floor.

The Second Floor was quite different from the 3rd floor. The walls of the second floor were painted in various colors. There were also many portraits and paintings on the walls.

Long Chen walked closer to one of the paintings, which was of a person, although Long Chen didn't know if it was a painting of a real person or a painting that was the work of a painter's imagination.

The man in the painting only had the top half of his body painted. He was wearing a beautiful white dress and a starry black robe on the back.

Although the man wasn't smiling, his eyes expressed happiness.

The more Long Chen looked at it, the more he felt as if something was unique about the painting. He took the painting off the wall and put it in his storage ring before he walked up to another painting.

The Second Painting was a painting of a sword. Even though it was just a painting, Long Chen was able to feel the sharpness of the sword. Even some of its sword intent was also apparent.

Long Chen put the painting in his storage ring as well. There were 12 such paintings in the hall, and he kept them all in his storage ring.

"Are you taking those paintings? Although these don't look like treasures, they would be good to hang in your room," Chu Miao smilingly said.

"Something like that. Let's go down," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the stairs. They got to the first floor, which also had something similar to the 2nd floor. There was something on the wall. This time it was the paintings of the beasts.

There were nine paintings on the wall which looked to be the paintings of powerful beasts.

Long Chen saw a White Tiger in one of the Paintings, Black Tortoise on another. There was also a painting that belonged to Azure Dragon, Phoenix, Ice Phoenix, 9-tailed fox, and others.

Even though the paintings were so well made and looked so detailed, they failed to capture the true essence of these god beasts, which was impossible for any mortal to do as these 9 were the 9 God Beasts.

Long Chen placed the paintings in his storage ring.

"This place is useless. There's nothing but paintings here. I wonder whose paintings the ground floor will have," Chu Miao muttered with a frown.

They moved to the ground floor, but instead of seeing paintings, they saw something that shocked them.

There was a Pond on the ground floor that was filled with a deep blue liquor.

"T-that's Natural Qi Pond! I can't believe we found it!" Chu Miao jumped excitedly into the air as she saw the pond.

"Amazing! It's said that you can absorb the Natural Qi in the pond to increase your cultivation! We are quite lucky to have found it," Dai Hu said with a bright grin on his face.

"It's really great. I really needed something like this. Let's get into it and cultivate," Long Chen muttered as he entered the pond without taking his clothes off.

Dai Hu and Chu Miao also entered the pond fully clothed as clothes didn't affect the absorption of Qi.

They all closed their eyes as they began absorbing the Qi.

Even though they were all absorbing the Natural Qi, Long Chen's speed was multiple times faster than the others.

Chapter 386 - 386: Herb Garden(I)

Long Chen's Qi absorption speed was much faster than the speed of Chu Miao and Dai Hu.

He rapidly kept absorbing the Qi from the pond, which resulted in the Natural Qi water level of the pond getting lowered slowly.

Even though the water was getting used up, he didn't mind as he was more focused on breaking through.

Long Chen was in the 3rd stage of the Earth Realm, but in less than an hour, he had achieved a breakthrough to the 4th stage of the Earth Realm, but it didn't stop there, and his breakthroughs continued.

He had broken through to the 5th stage of the Earth Realm by night.

Chu Miao was the 4th stage Earth Realm cultivator, but she has broken through to the 5th stage of Earth Realm. Dai Hu had also jumped a realm. He broke through from the 3rd stage of Earth Realm to the 4th stage of the Earth Realm.

Long Chen continued absorbing without a break, and he received another breakthrough by morning. He had broken through to the 6th stage of the Earth Realm. Long Chen wanted to continue absorbing, but that's when he realized that he couldn't absorb any more.

He opened his eyes and looked around only to find out that the deep blue Natural Qi water has returned to normal water. All its Qi was absorbed.

"Sigh, I hoped that I would be able to gain more, but it was good while it lasted," Long Chen muttered as he walked out of the water.

"If I'm not wrong, there should have been more Natural Qi in the water, but most of it should be depleted. There's a good chance that someone came here when it previously appeared," He let out softly.

"It was so great. I'm at the peak of the 5th stage Earth Realm. I feel more powerful," Chu Miao said with a bright smile on her face.

"It was a good reward. I hope we find some more Natural Qi Ponds," Dai Hu muttered.

"Let's leave. That's nothing else here," Long Chen muttered as he approached the top floor of the tower.

He opened the door and jumped outside, landing safely on the ground.

Chu Miao, on the other hand, tied the rope to the door and got down with its help. Dai Hu did the same as Chu Miao.

"Oh, Come on! You're cultivators! Have some courage," Long Chen scolded them. For him, it was embarrassing to see Earth Realm cultivators being this scared.

"We are cultivators, not god. It is the 3rd floor, it's not as easy," Chu Miao replied to Long Chen with a wry smile on her face.

"Whatever, let's continue. We haven't seen anyone yet, the others must've gone in different directions in the garden," Long Chen told them before he started moving North.

"I wonder if the others would have found something good as well or not," Dai Hu muttered as he followed Long Chen and Chu Miao.

On another portion of the Sect, the cultivators of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect had entered a building which they thought contained treasures, but it turned out to be a training hall that had a very powerful formation in it.

As soon as they entered, the formation activated, which brought them to an Illusory realm where they had to face opponents that grew increasingly stronger the longer the fight went. The place was something where the Divine Heaven Sect cultivators came to test their progress by fighting inside the formation. Although there was no reward for it, they did get a ranking based on their performance in the formation.

Mu Zheng had entered a forest with Su Zhen and two more of his disciples, which turned out to be really unfortunate for them as this was a place where Giant Demon Wasps lived.

As soon as Mu Zheng and the others got near their area, they were attacked.

Mu Zheng and the others tried fighting, but the numbers of Giant Demon Wasps were too high. In the end, they could do nothing but run. They wanted to leave the forest as far as possible.

"This sucks! We have been here to get treasures, and instead of getting treasures, we are getting beasts after us!" Su Zhen bellowed. She wanted to cry, but no tears came out of her eyes.

"I hope the others go through the same thing as well!" She added.

"The Divine Heaven Sect is rewarding, but it's dangerous as well. There must be many people there who should be in trouble right now," Mu Zheng replied to her.

"Yeah, it's also possible for the Demon of the Sect to already be dead," She responded.

"You're underestimating him. Getting the 1st Rank in the Strength Ranking is no way an easy feat. Even though I don't want to believe it, he must have been pretty powerful, but not anymore. I'm now much stronger than I had been thanks to you," Mu Zheng told Su Zhen.

"Aww, are you saying that my support makes you stronger? You're so nice, brother Zheng," she said cutely.

'Naive girl!' Mu Zheng thought as he glanced at her.

In between their conversation, Mu Zheng kept attacking the Giant Demon Wasps that managed to get near them.

In another portion of the sect, Manxiang Li and his team were standing near a beautiful clear river.

"Brother Li, these should be the Mithril Crystals! These are pretty expensive in the outside world. Can we collect them?" a girl asked Manxiang Li as she pointed towards the small red crystals in the water.

"Go take it. These should be useful for the Sect. These are a treasure that can be used to buy treasures from other sects after all. We have 6 hours. Collect as many as you can before it's gone. We'll move ahead then," Manxiang Li said to her.

Long Chen continued moving ahead with the others before he saw another building. This time it wasn't a tower but a glass dome. The whole building was made from glass, but as the glass was reflective, he couldn't see inside.

Long Chen walked towards the building with Dai Hu and Chu Miao.

He pushed the door open and entered the place. As soon as they entered, everyone was surprised. Long Chen was the most excited at the moment as he was an Alchemist, and the thing that was in front of him was a heaven for Alchemists.

It was the herb garden of the Divine Heaven Sect that contained thousands of rare and mysterious spiritual herbs and medicinal plants.

"Amazing! All these herbs! Although I'm not an Alchemist, these herbs should be quite rare. We're so lucky to find it," Dai Hu let out softly.

"You're an Alchemist, right? You should collect them all," Chu Miao said to Long Chen.

"Oh right, I forgot that you're an Alchemist. Take the herbs. You can make the best use of it!" Dai Hu also said.

Long Chen nodded his head as he started walking towards the plants.

'Xun! Is there a way for me to take the garden? The Ancient Ring has so much space. Is there a way for me to place the herb garden there?' Long Chen asked Xun.

"No, you can't take the herb garden there. You would have been able to take the herb garden to your inner world, but you haven't formed that yet as well," Xun replied.

Long Chen couldn't help but sigh as he started picking the herbs and Plants as he put them manually in his storage ring.

It has already been 3 hours, and even after his fast speed, Long Chen was only able to collect half the herbs and Plants.

He was collecting more as he saw something moving. With a frown, Long Chen stood up as he walked ahead.

Chapter 387 - 387: Unexplored Region

Long Chen was collecting the herbs when he saw something moving. With a frown, Long Chen stood up as he walked ahead.

As he got to the spot, he saw that it was empty. There was only a hole left in the ground.

"There's something here. Keep an eye out for it. It's in the ground. It might be a beast!" Long Chen warned everyone.

"It's here!" Chu Miao let out a whimper as she saw something coming out of the ground.

Long Chen ran towards Chu Miao.

"Where's it?" he asked.

"It entered the ground," She replied.

"What did it look like? It might be a powerful beast if it has been living in a garden with so many resources," Long Chen asked her.

"It... It was..."

"It's here!" Before she could answer, Dai Hu called out.

Long Chen and Chu Miao got there, but they only found a hole there as well.

"What did it look like?" Long Chen asked once more.

"It seemed to be a plant," Dai Hu muttered with a weird look in his face.

"Yeah, it was a tiny plant," Chu Miao added.

"A plant that can move? It should be a Spiritual Plant that has gained consciousness. These things are only mentioned in legends. I must catch it," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the hole in the ground.

"First, I need to empty the room. There should be no place for it to hide," Long Chen muttered as he started putting all the herbs and plants in his storage ring. It took 2 hours for the room to be completely empty.

Long Chen saw the empty ground and the many holes present in it, as he stood in the corner.

"There!"

As soon as he saw the small plant appear, he used the greatest speed he had to get to it, but he was still slow, as the plant had already entered the ground.

"It's just too difficult. The plant never steps outside the hole," Long Chen muttered as he stared at the ground.

"Don't move even if the plant appears!" He told Dai Hu and Chu Miao.

He sat down on his knees as he prepared to use his Space Law as he kept an eye on the room and stood still.

After five more minutes, the plant again came out of one of the holes, but this time, Long Chen used his teleportation and instantly appeared behind that plant and caught it.

He pulled the plant out of the ground and saw that it had white roots with stripes of red.

"Isn't that the extinct Plant of Immortality? From what I've heard, it's an extinct Plant that was only seen in ancient times," Chu Miao muttered as she saw the tiny plant in Long Chen's hands.

'Plant of Immortality?' Long Chen thought with a confused look on his face.

Despite being a peak spirit grade alchemist, he knew nothing about it.

"It's a good plant, but it's still immature. Send it in the beast region, when it grows up, it will bear the fruits, which would be quite useful for your beasts. Its fruits can wake up the bloodlines hidden in your beasts, no matter how small its quantity," Xun's voice sounded in his ears.

"So that's its use. Sounds great for my beasts," Long Chen muttered as he sent the plant back in his beast region.

"Don't keep that plant in your storage ring. It can't live in environments that aren't filled with spiritual qi. It would die if we take it out of this place," Chu Miao told Long Chen in a hurry as she saw him keep the plant.

"It's alright. Don't worry about it. Let's continue. There's nothing left here," Long Chen replied to them as he walked out of the medicine garden.

The others nodded and followed after him as they left the place with him.

As they walked out of the spirit garden, they found themselves in a different place. When they had entered the Medicine Garden, there were no buildings around it, but when they left, they were in an area that was surrounded by

buildings. Even though they used the same door for entry and exit, the outside seemed to have changed.

"Did the sect use some spatial formations? It's so strange," Long Chen muttered as he saw the new surroundings.

Previously, it seemed like a desert, but now it seemed like a proper sect with beautiful structures everywhere. They even saw a water fountain in front of them.

They were not the only ones there, though. They saw a few more disciples there. A few people from the other teams had also managed to get there.

"Looks like we're not the only ones that are brought here. Also, why do all these buildings have so many stairs? There seem to be over 100 stairs in each one of those," Long Chen muttered as he stared at the tall building.

"There was no mention of a place like this in the briefings. Is it possible that we have found a previously unexplored region?" Chu Miao let out as he looked towards Long Chen.

"That seems to be the case. All these buildings are either unexplored or explored by a sect that didn't mention about this," Long Chen responded.

"Let's enter that one. That seems to be the tallest," Dai Hu said as he pointed towards the building in the front.

Long Chen agreed to his suggestion as they walked towards the building, but the disciples of the Buddha Temple had reached there first.

One of the disciples stepped on the stairs, but as soon as he stood on the first stair, heavy pressure was exerted on his body that forced him to get down on his knees.

His face turned red, and he coughed out a mouthful of blood. He could feel his foundations getting hurt as he struggled to move back.

He got down from the stairs, and the pressure disappeared.

Everyone that saw his condition was intimidated by what they saw. The stairs were not normal, and everyone had realized that by now.

"It must be some kind of special gravity," Long Chen concluded. Many others came to the same conclusion.

"You Buddha Temple disciples train your soul and don't focus on your body. I don't think the place is for you," a disciple of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect laughed at the condition of the Buddha Sect Disciple as he stepped towards the stairs.

He climbed the first step, and the same gravitational force fell on his body. His face turned white, but he didn't fall and kept standing. Even his blood vessels had become visibly, showing how much strength he had to use to resist the gravitational force.

Long Chen watched the man with great interest. He was also praising the guy for being his test subject and letting him have some information.

The man took the second step. His condition worsened as he stood on the second step. It seemed as if he was under more force now, but he still held on. He took the 3rd step, but that's where he fell down to his knees.

He coughed out a mouthful of blood and fell. He rolled on the stairs and landed on the ground.

He had lost consciousness.

"The gravitational force seems to be getting more powerful the higher one gets," Long Chen muttered.

"If his condition is like that on the 3rd step, I don't even want to imagine how fierce the 100th step will be. It seems impossible," Chu Miao said with a frown on her face.

"Maybe it's these stairs that are under gravitational force; there are more buildings here. Maybe those would be safer," Dai Hu muttered as he looked at other buildings, but he saw a similar situation there.

Chapter 388 - 388: He's Dead

Many disciples have thought of the same thing as he was thinking now, and they have even tried it and failed.

"How about we use our flying beasts? If we don't step on the stairs, we won't be under the gravitational pull, and then we should be able to get to the top as well?" Dai Hu gave another suggestion.

"That seems possible. We can try that," Chu Miao agreed.

Long Chen also nodded his head as this idea made sense, but he still felt as if this couldn't be as simple.

Chu Miao tapped on her beast bag as she tried to bring her Winged Tiger out, but nothing happened.

"Why can't I bring my flying beast out? You try it!" She told Dai Hu.

Dai Hu also tried bringing his beast out, but it didn't work.

"It should be some restriction on the Divine Heaven Sect. We can't use our beast here," Long Chen told them. He had also tried calling out Orion and the Snake Monarch, but it didn't work.

The Snake Monarch informed him that there was a strange force that was stopping him from coming out.

"So we can't use the beasts either. I can't think of any other idea. It's impossible to enter these places. Let's try finding something else instead of wasting our time here," Dai Hu suggested as he gave up.

"These places should be where real treasures are kept. Should we really give up? It's an unexplored region, and it might even contain various treasures that we are looking for," Chu Miao looked unconvinced as she didn't want to give up on the treasures.

"There's only one way to get there, and that seems to be walking up with brute force. A person not only needs a powerful cultivation but an incredible physical strength as well. You guys stay here, I'll try going in," Long Chen let out as he walked towards the tallest building.

He took a long breath before he took his first step on the stairs. The Gravitational Force started acting on his body.

Just on the first step itself, Long Chen understood how powerful the gravitational pull was. He has been affected by the same force once before when he was in the Glorious Blossom Sect.

It was right after he had killed Ruan in front of the Grand Elder of the Thunder Giant Sect. He also used gravity to get Long Chen down to his knees. The gravitational pull on the step itself was only slightly weaker than the pressure he was put through at that time.

Long Chen took the second step amidst the curious eyes of the watchers. The Second Step did increase the force on him, but it was not enough to get him down to his knees. The force now was equivalent to what he had gone through in the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"When the second step itself is applying the force equivalent to a sky realm cultivator, can I really get to the top?" Long Chen muttered.

"Look! The Head Disciple of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect is going to do it!" a disciple exclaimed loudly.

Long Chen glanced back and saw the man on the first step.

"Tang Jin?" he muttered.

'Yang Sen as well?' he thought as he saw another man coming behind him.

The other disciples were shocked as they saw them both.

"Wait, isn't that Yang Sen? The Head Disciple of the True Dao Sect is going to try as well?" Chu Miao muttered.

"If anyone can get to the top, it should be them. I'm sure they can do it. I hope Long Chen succeeds as well," Dai Hu let out as he watched them climb eagerly.

Long Chen was already on the 5th step, whereas the other two were on the 3rd step.

The pressure was already twice compared to the pressure on the 1st step, but Long Chen was able to manage. He had activated his Demon Monarch Physique, which decreased most of the pressure on him.

Long Chen kept climbing higher, but he was taking his proper time. He was allowing his body to get adjusted to the pressure on a step before taking the next step.

After 20 Minutes, he was on the 11th step, whereas Tang Jin and Yang Sen were on the 8th step. The performance of Long Chen and the others inspired many more who gave it another try.

Almost everyone was now trying to climb, but none of them managed to get to the 3rd step before falling down to the ground.

Only the Head Disciples of the various sects had managed to hold on.

Even Manxiang Li had also arrived there, and he was trying to climb the stairs.

Although there were many buildings, everyone tried to climb the one where Long Chen was going. It had become something like a race to protect the reputation of your sect, and they all thought that there must be a reason for Tang Jin and Yang Sen to be choosing this particular building.

Long Chen felt like he was at his physical limit on the 42nd step.

Although he was able to see the top of the building, he didn't think that he would be able to take even a step further.

He stayed on the 42nd step for over 30 minutes, barely holding on.

'I can see the top, I should be able to use teleportation now,' Long Chen thought as he looked above, but there were just too many people here.

Long Chen waited there for some more time. Ultimately, most of the others gave up.

Only Tang Jin and Yang Sen were left on the stairs; both of them were on the 40th step. They realized that they couldn't climb higher, but they didn't want to lose face by giving up before overtaking Long Chen.

"I can do it!" Tang Jin muttered as he took the 41st step, but he soon realized his mistake as he felt the pressure. He jumped back and got back to the ground before his knees could be crushed.

"Senior Brother Tang!" His fellow disciples came running as they looked at him with concern.

"I'm fine. Nothing happened to me," Tang Jin muttered.

Yang Sen also gave up as he tried the pressure of the 41st step. He also jumped down to the ground.

The only person on the stairs was Long Chen now, who was sitting in a meditative position on the stairs.

"Let's go; we'll look at other places. It's impossible to get to the top here. I'm sure that kid is also feeling crushed, he's just not showing it. That's why he's not taking a step ahead. There's no benefit in wasting time here," Yang Sen said to his men.

Their team left the place. The other groups also left. They all felt that there was no need to waste time here as they only had two weeks of time inside the Divine Heaven Sect. Instead of wasting time trying to climb the impossible stairs, it would be better to explore other regions.

"Almost everyone left, except Chu Miao, Dai Hu, Mu Zheng, Su Zhen, and two other disciples of the Dark Soul Sect that had stayed behind.

"Chu Miao, Don't waste time here waiting for that idiot. It's impossible to climb the stairs, and we all know it. Even Yang Sen and Tang Jin weren't able to climb to the top, do you really think that Long Chen can do it?" Mu Zheng said to Chu Miao.

"Yeah, As far as I can see, he's already dead there. That's why he's not moving. The gravity isn't letting his body fall down. Even though you were stupid to choose his team, at the end of the day, we are all the disciples of the Dark Soul Sect. I'll allow you to join our team," Su Zhen said.

Chapter 389 - 389: True Demon

"It's alright. You guys can go on ahead. I'd like to stay here," Chu Miao told them.

"Hmph, you've lost your sanity. You can die here for all I care," Su Zhen said as she held Mu Zheng's hand.

"Let's go, Brother Mu," Su Zhen said to Mu Zheng, but Mu Zheng didn't move in the least.

"Shut up!" Mu Zheng scolded Su Zhen.

"B-brother Mu?" Su Zhen stuttered as she stood shocked.

"What Brother Mu! You're making me crazy, spoiling all my plans from the beginning! I wanted to stick closer to Long Chen and kill him when I had the opportunity, but because of you, I wasn't able to do that! Now that bastard is on the stairs, dead, and I can't even get to him! It's all because of you that I lost the opportunity to kill him myself!" Mu Zheng bellowed in anger.

"B-but..."

"It would've been better if I had allowed Long Chen to kill you then! At Least I would have a reason to kill him there! Who do you think you are to make me follow your commands? You hold no importance to me anymore! I already got what I needed, You can die for all I care," Mu Zheng let out as he glared at Su Zhen.

"Senior Brother Mu, calm down. You're angry," the remaining two members of Mu Zheng's team walked up to him and placed their hands on his shoulders. They thought that he was angry, but he would calm down.

Their gesture worked completely opposite as it made Mu Zheng even angrier.

Mu Zheng pulled his sword out and swung it, killing both of them in an instant.

"How dare you trash touch me! Did you forget who I am?" Mu Zheng let out as he looked at the dead bodies there.

"Y-you killed them!" Su Zhen exclaimed in shock as she stepped back in fear.

"I was wrong; you're the real demon!" She muttered, but her words didn't sit well with Mu Zheng, who got even angrier.

"You called me a demon? let me show you what a true demon is like!" Mu Zhen muttered as he stepped towards her.

"Stop. I feel like you're not yourself at the moment. Something is definitely different. Don't do something you'll regret!" Dai Hu stepped forward and stood between Mu Zheng and Su Zhen.

"You think you can save that bit*h from me? Did you forget that you're the weakest one in the team?" Mu Zheng muttered as he moved. He instantly appeared in front of Dai Hu and thrust his sword in his chest.

Dai Hu looked at him, shocked before he fell down to the ground, dead.

"You've gone crazy!" Chu Miao let out as she attacked Mu Zheng.

They both used their swords, which clashed, but it only resulted in Chu Miao flying back like a broken kite. Chu Miao crashed on the ground. Mu Zheng was just way too strong for her.

"Be glad that there's something that I still need from you; otherwise, I would have killed you in an instant!" Mu Zheng said to her before he started walking towards Su Zhen.

Su Zhen didn't even move from her position and just stayed there. Her face had lost all its color, and she was completely white in shock.

"I should thank you for what you gave me, but you aren't important anymore. You've even lost your talent, and you're even useless for the sect. I still kept you alive, but you're not even worthy of that. Die!" Mu Zheng said to her before he swung his sword, which sliced off her head in an instant.

"You should've stayed more well behaved, and I wouldn't have killed you," he muttered as he looked towards her body.

He turned back to look towards Chu Miao.

"You know what this whole situation with Long Chen taught me?" he asked her.

"It's that I shouldn't delay things. If I had killed him when I had the time, he shouldn't have been killed by the stairs. I had the opportunity to kill him by my own hands, but I blew it up. I don't want to make the same mistake again. I'll take your primordial yin right here and right now!" Mu Zheng let out as he looked at Chu Miao with a grin on his face.

"You've lost your sanity!" Chu Miao stood up, but instead of walking towards him, she stepped back.

"Long Chen! Wake up!" Chu Miao roared as loud as she could, hoping that her voice could reach Long Chen.

She didn't believe that he was dead.

"Hahaha, do you want a dead guy to save you? You're too naive, my dear Chu Miao. Now be a good girl and come to me," Mu Zheng said as he continued walking towards her.

Unbeknownst to him, Long Chen had heard her scream for help.

He opened his eyes and looked back only to find the dead bodies lying on the ground, and Mu Zheng walking towards Chu Miao with a sword in his hand.

Long Chen stood up and jumped down to the ground.

"hmm?" Mu Zheng heard the noise and turned back.

"Hahaha," Mu Zheng started laughing like mad as he saw Long Chen.

"Looks like heaven truly loves me! They gave you life so that I could fulfill my wish to kill you," Mu Zheng said to Long Chen.

"Was he the one that killed Dai Hu?" Long Chen asked.

"There's no need to ask her. I can tell you what she would say. She would say something like, 'He killed them all! He's lost his mind completely!'. Aren't I right, dear Chu Miao?" Mu Zheng responded before Chu Miao could answer.

"She wouldn't be wrong if she said that, would she? From what I can see, you've indeed gone mad, not that you were any better before," Long Chen muttered as he brought his King's Sword out of his storage ring.

"I don't know how you hurt me last time, but it's not going to be repeated. You can't even imagine how strong I've become since the last time we faced off," Mu Zheng said with a grin on his face.

"Even I don't know what happened last time, but what I do know is that you're going to die, no matter how strong you've grown," Long Chen muttered before he used his teleport and appeared behind him.

Long Chen swung his sword towards Mu Zheng's neck, but Mu Zheng turned back and intercepted his sword.

"My Martial Soul is more powerful now, and I'm more aware of my surroundings. Your tricks won't work," Mu Zheng said, smilingly.

"Oh? Thanks for telling me. I guess I'll just use brute force then," Long Chen muttered as he used his Demon Monarch Physique and swung his sword once more.

The Sword was once again intercepted by Mu Zheng, but Mu Zheng had failed to guess the strength behind that attack.

He flew back like he was iron being pulled by a magnet far away from him. Mu Zheng fell down on the ground.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen muttered as he pointed towards the sky that got covered in dark clouds. A big thunderbolt fell down on the ground, directly over Mu Zheng's body.

Mu Zheng roared loudly in pain as the electricity coursed through his body.

"You think that a single thunderbolt can stop me? My body is reinforced by the blood essence of countless people. A single thunderbolt can do nothing to be!" Mu Zheng said as he stood up.

Most of his clothes were burnt off.

"Did I say that it is going to be a single thunderbolt?" Long Chen muttered as he looked towards him.

"Thunderblade!" he again called out.

Another thunderbolt fell on Mu Zheng's body, making him scream in pain.

Chapter 390 - 390: Real Treasure

One after another, a thunderbolt kept falling on Mu Zheng's body, which brought him down to his knees.

"You know, Mi Yao said that there are sects that kill thousands of people to increase their strength, and the Dark Soul Sect isn't like that. I didn't believe her at that time, and you have proved me right. There's no difference between all these sects. They pretend to be different from the others, but on the inside, they're all the same," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards Mu Zheng, who was lying on the ground, weakened.

"I'll destroy your soul, you bastard! Last time you survived, but my soul is way stronger now!" Mu Zheng roared like a mad person as he used his dark skill.

A dark mist left his body and went towards Long Chen, but Long Chen had already been affected by it last time, and he was ready.

Before the mist could touch him, he appeared behind Mu Zheng and thrust his sword in Mu Zheng's neck.

The sword penetrated his neck and came out of the other side. Long Chen pulled the sword back, and blood started flowing everywhere.

Long Chen swung his sword and separated Mu Zheng's head from his body.

Mu Zheng died, and his dream of killing Long Chen remained unfulfilled.

Long Chen put the sword back in his storage ring.

"I can't believe Mu Zheng was like that. He talked about stealing Su Zheng's primordial yin. Such a beast. Because of him, our whole team is dead now," Chu Miao muttered with a blank look on her face as she stepped towards him.

"Our team isn't dead, You and I are still alive," Long Chen comforted her as he placed his hands on her shoulders.

Chu Miao nodded her head but didn't respond.

"Stay here; I'll be going into the building. I'll try to be back as fast as I can," Long Chen said before turning back towards the building.

"Wait, can you really get to the top? It seems impossible. Don't harm yourself for treasures," Chu Miao told Long Chen.

"It is indeed impossible with just strength, but I have more tricks up my sleeve. Anyway, you should hide behind the building. There might be other disciples who will come here. If they're enemies, they'll attack you. Stay behind the building so that they don't see you. I'll find you there when I'm back," Long Chen told her before he stepped on the stairs.

The pressure felt less this time, but Long Chen assumed that it was because his body had adjusted to the pressure of the higher steps, and that's why he didn't feel much pressure.

Long Chen stepped higher and higher until he was back in his original position, but he didn't stop and kept climbing higher until he reached the 60th step.

He could feel good blood acting up under pressure, which further helped him resist the pressure.

Long Chen was standing on the 75th step before he felt like he couldn't climb higher, if he took even a single step higher, his knees would be crushed, but being able to come so far was enough for him.

He had a clear view of the top, which was a necessary condition for him to use his teleport.

Long Chen used his teleport and disappeared from the 75th step and appeared on the top.

Just as he had imagined, there was no pressure on the top.

"As I expected, I was able to use the space law in the herb garden and similarly, here as well. I should be able to use all my laws, just not my beasts," Long Chen muttered as he turned back to look toward the door.

He walked to the door and pushed it, but it didn't move. He decided to pull it towards him, and the doors opened this time.

Long Chen entered the place. He was amazed at how beautiful it looked. It seemed as if this whole place was made from gold. The ground was covered in ancient carvings. There were various planets carved on the walls as well, and one of them looked exactly like the earth with the position of continents and sea.

"Just what is this place?" Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the wall.

He touched the carving of the earth, which started shining.

The carving came out of the wall. It seemed as if it was a golden globe of the earth. It even showed his home country.

"Amazing," Long Chen muttered as he walked toward the different carving. He touched that, and it came out of the wall as well.

Long Chen kept walking through the room, touching the carvings on the walls.

After some time, he had touched all these carvings. There were hundreds of planetary spheres floating around him.

"It looks so magnificent," Long Chen muttered as he looked around the room and all these golden planet replicas.

"I can't help but grow curious about the Divine Heaven Sect. They even knew about the earth? I would have loved to ask them if I had an opportunity," Long Chen muttered.

He tried putting the globe of earth in his storage ring, but he wasn't able to. It looks like it's impossible to take these things," Long Chen let out as he left them behind and walked towards the stairs in front of him.

He went to the 1st floor, and what he saw brought a smile on his face.

"Incredible. These are the treasures that I did need," Long Chen muttered as he looked at what laid before him.

There were hundreds of shelves filled with books in there.

"The Vault of knowledge of Divine Heaven Sect. This knowledge should be so important. Maybe I can find more about this earth and the mysteries of this world," Long Chen muttered as he walked to the nearest shelf and picked up a book.

He opened the book and started reading it. His facial expressions went through a wide variety of changes. He opened the book excitedly, but he went from excited to stunned to blank immediately.

He put the book back in its place and picked a different book, and opened it. He put that back as well. He went to the books on various shelves and checked them as well.

"This is useless. They are all in the ancient language. Xun should be able to read the language, but I can't ask her to narrate these books for me when I don't even know which one of these might contain important information. She can't even hold the books," Long Chen muttered, disappointed.

He still didn't leave them behind, though. He placed all these books along with their shelves in his storage ring.

He walked to the second floor, but it contained the same thing. There were only books as far as his eyes could see, but the number of books was half compared to the first floor.

He checked one of the books, and it was in the ancient language as well. He put all these shelves of books in his storage ring before he walked up to the 3rd floor.

No matter which floor he went to, there were only books. The number of books kept getting halved the higher he went. The highest floor was the 9th floor, which had less than a thousand books.

Long Chen checked one book there and sent all the books back in his storage ring with a disappointed look on his face.

"I should ask Xun to teach me the ancient language. It would be better than asking her to read hundreds of thousands of books for me," Long Chen muttered as he went to the lower floors.

He walked out of the tower and straight away teleported to the ground instead of going through the stairs.

Chapter 391 - 391: The First Kiss

Even though there was a chance that the gravitational force didn't work on the ones going down, he didn't take the risk. He didn't want to face the full force of the 100th step.

Long Chen walked behind the building and saw Chu Miao sitting there.

"Are you alright?" He asked her.

"Oh, yes, I'm fine. I was just getting bored waiting for you. Anyway, did you see what was inside? What did you find? Were there any treasures from the list in there?" she inquired.

"It was a library. There were only books inside, which are impossible to read as they are all in Ancient languages. I'll be going to the second building, so you might have to wait a little longer," Long Chen told her.

"It's alright. It's not like I can enter. I'm weak after all," Chu Miao said self depreciatingly.

"It's not that. Even I myself can't enter the place without having to cheat, so don't think that you're weak," Long Chen told her before he turned back to leave.

"Can you use that cheat on me as well? I want to see inside," Chu Miao said.

"It doesn't work like that. I would've taken you if I could. Just wait slightly longer, I'll be right back," Long Chen said to her before he left.

He stepped on the stairs of the second building and walked up to the 60th step before he teleported to the top.

This building was way smaller than the first one, but its door was much bigger.

Long Chen had to use his Demon Monarch Physique to push the door open.

As soon as the door opened, Long Chen was presented with the magnificent view.

While the inside of the first building seemed to be made of gold, the second building was made from silver. There was a water fountain in the center of the hall.

"You should wash your body under that fountain," Xun said as she appeared beside Long Chen.

"Why? Do you want to see me bathe?" Long Chen joked.

"Do you think I haven't seen you yet?" Xun responded in an effort to counter his joke, but she soon realized how wrong it sounded.

"The fountain water is called the Heaven Cleansing Water. It can be used to clean your body and remove the impurities of your body. Even though the Ancestral Bloodline had already removed some of your impurities, but since you haven't truly awakened the bloodline yet, there are still a few impurities remaining in your body," She explained.

"You should really use the fountain. Your cultivation speed will improve a little if you do that," she added.

"Alright. That does sound beneficial," Long Chen said as he started taking his clothes off.

He got completely naked and sat under the fountain.

"You have no shame, do you? You didn't even think twice before you stripped yourself," Xun said to Long Chen as she looked towards him.

"Come on; it's not like you haven't seen me naked before. You said that yourself. Also, I even doubt that you've seen me make love to my women, am I right?" Long Chen asked her.

"T-that's because I see what you see! It's not because I wanted to see you do that! It was only because I had no choice!" Xun reacted fiercely.

"Hahaha, don't worry about that. There's no shame in watching your man naked," Long Chen chuckled as he told her.

"Exactly," Xun said as she nodded her head.

"Wait a minute, what did you just say?" she said as she realized the meaning behind his words.

"Well, I said that there's no shame in watching your man naked," Long Chen said.

"Cheh! Who the heck is my man? You're my disciple!" Xun told him.

"Your man is your disciple? That's quite an immoral relationship you got there, Love," Long Chen responded as he laughed.

"Y-you shameless disciple! Let me teach you a lesson!" Xun said as she stepped towards him. She wanted to push him in the water that was getting collected behind him.

She moved her hands towards his chest and pushed him, but Long Chen caught her and fell down in the water with her. The water wasn't deep.

They both laid in the water, and the situation had somehow turned strange. Long Chen was lying on his back, and Xun was sitting on top of him.

Long Chen stared deep in her eyes, and even Xun was shocked at how the situation had changed.

Long Chen couldn't control himself as he saw her sweet lips. He felt a strange attraction. He moved his head and kissed her soft lips.

"Y-you!" Xun moved her head back and glared at Long Chen with a red face.

She couldn't find words to react and disappeared instantly.

Xun didn't know how to react as Long Chen was the first person that was able to touch her because of his law of darkness, but now he had become the first person to kiss her as well.

She sat in the darkness with a face that was as red as a tomato as she licked her lips.

"So that's how a kiss feels like," She muttered as an embarrassed smile covered her face.

Long Chen continued cleaning his body with the Heaven Cleansing Water. He could feel the impurities of his bodies being washed.

He only left the water when he felt the effects of the cleansing water diminish.

Long Chen got dressed and went to the second floor.

The Second Floor also had a fountain, but its water was different.

"Xun? What's that?" Long Chen asked Xun, but she didn't respond.

"Come on, don't be like that. I'm sorry, alright?" Long Chen told her to convince her.

"Hmph, I'll forgive you because Master is generous," Xun appeared near him and told him as she puffed up her chest.

Long Chen saw her and couldn't help but be reminded about that kiss.

"Can I kiss my generous master again?" Long Chen asked her, smilingly.

"Do you want me to leave?" She told him as she glared at him.

"No, don't. I'll behave. What's that fountain?" Long Chen asked her.

"That fountain? The water looks like the Immunity Water, incredible. It's so useful to you at the moment. Go drink it," Xun told Long Chen.

"What does it do?" Long Chen asked her as he stepped towards the fountain.

"The water is really magical. It is said that it can heal any ailment and even poison," Xun said.

"It can heal poison?" Long Chen asked in shock as he turned back.

"Yup, it should be able to heal your poison," Xun told Long Chen.

"Awesome, Now I don't need to worry about the poison in me," Long Chen let out as he drank the water from the fountain.

He could feel the water getting to every corner of his body and filling him up with energy.

It lasted for some seconds before he started feeling some heat in his stomach.

"Don't worry about that. That should be because of the poison getting destroyed. You'll be fine in a few seconds," Xun told him.

Long Chen nodded his head, and after a few seconds, everything did return to normal.

"I feel like it worked, but I can't be sure," Long Chen said.

"You don't need to doubt it. There are only a few heavenly poisons that this water can't destroy. Although the poison you were inflicted with was rare, it wasn't on the level of Heavenly poisons," Xun informed him.

"That's good to know. At Least now I can act freely without having to worry about taking suppression pills on time. Anyway, this water is really incredible. I should collect some of it," Long Chen muttered as he brought the jug out of his storage ring.

Chapter 392 - 392: The Words Of Tian Shen

Long Chen placed the jug underwater to fill it up, but no matter what he did, not even a drop of water stayed in the jug.

"It won't work. This Water can only be drunk here; it can't be collected in anything. You don't need to waste your time with that," She said.

"I can't take the water with me? That's such a waste," Long Chen sighed in disappointment.

"Don't worry about that; there are many treasures between Heaven and Earth that are even more miraculous than this. With your heritage, you are destined to find them," Xun comforted Long Chen.

"I understand. I can't complain either way. At Least I got my poison healed," Long Chen said.

"Oh, right, Xun, what's that on your face?" he exclaimed as he walked closer to Xun.

"What's in my face?" Xun asked in confusion.

"I see clearly, it's so small," Long Chen muttered as he brought his face closer to hers. Xun was still in confusion when he kissed her lips once more.

"Sorry, I couldn't control myself from doing it one more time. It's so addictive," Long Chen muttered as he stepped back.

"You shameless hooligan! Behave properly with your master," Xun scolded him as she pointed her finger towards him.

"Yes, Master," Long Chen nodded his head.

"You know Master, I can't tell you how glad I am of being able to touch you," Long Chen said with an innocent smile on his face.

"I never knew master's lips were so sweet, I am so thankful for the Darkness that gave me this ability," Long Chen told her.

"Hmph, shameless. I know that I'm great, but you need to control yourself unless you want to die," Xun snorted, but she didn't disappear.

"I'll try, but I can't guarantee it. You've been with me the longest, so you're kinda my first wife that I love the most," Long Chen chuckled.

Xun just stood there stunned.

She couldn't help but remember a similar scene.

"You've been with me the longest. You're the only family I have, Xun," the words of Tian Shen floated in her head.

"Hey? Why are you in a daze? Let's go to the top floor," Long Chen told her.

"Oh, right," Xun came out of her daze and looked towards him as she said.

Long Chen walked to the top floor, and he again saw a fountain.

"I'm starting to see a pattern here. The first building had libraries on all floors, and this place had fountains on all floors. What does this one do?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"This should be the Blessed Water of Phoenix. How can a sect in the mortal realm have it?" Xun exclaimed in shock.

"Blessed Water of Phoenix?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

"When a phoenix blesses the water with its prayers, that becomes the blessed water of Phoenix. Although this water isn't as miraculous as the Phoenix Essence or the Phoenix Blood, it's still an incredible treasure," Xun said.

"What are its effects?" Long Chen asked her.

"You can't drink more than a sip of this water, but even a single sip is enough to increase the range of your Divine Sense, and it will increase your comprehension as well, making it easier for you to comprehend difficult skills," Xun responded.

"Also, before you ask, I'll tell you that you can't collect it and take some of it with you," Xun added. Long Chen nodded his head.

"If I'm not wrong, this should be a place where new disciples were brought when they joined the sect. They got their impurities cleaned on the first floor, their ailments treated on the second floor, and their comprehension boosted on the 3rd floor," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the fountain.

"That would make sense," Xun responded.

Long Chen stepped towards the fountain and took a sip of the water.

Even though he didn't feel much change, he noticed that the range of his divine sense was increased when he tried to use it.

There was a 20% increase in the range of his Divine Sense. Even though he couldn't feel the improvement in his comprehension, he was sure that it was the case as he believed Xun's words.

"This trip is turning out to be really beneficial for me," Long Chen let out with a bright smile.

"Now, all I need is to find some incredible treasures, and I would be set for killing Lang Jing," he added.

"There are two more buildings here. Maybe one of these will have the treasures," Xun said to Long Chen.

"I hope so," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards the stairs. He couldn't help but look back at the fountain one last time before leaving. He didn't want to leave the fountain behind, but there was no choice.

Long Chen walked out of the building and teleported on the ground.

He walked to the 3rd building that only had the ground floor and the 1st floor.

Long Chen climbed the stairs, and after he was halfway through, he teleported to the top.

Long Chen entered the building and saw nothing but ash there.

It seemed as if this whole place was burnt down, and only ash had left.

"What the heck happened here?" Long Chen muttered in confusion as he walked in deeper. He looked at the grey ash everywhere.

"Even I can't understand. Maybe someone burnt this place down for some reason?" Xun replied.

"Why this place and not the other place? What did this place have that warranted for it to be burnt like this? The other buildings are left intact. Even the library wasn't burnt down," Long Chen let out as he looked around, but no matter what he tried, he found no clue.

Long Chen decided to go to the second floor, and it was the same. Nothing was left but ash on the ground.

"Hmm? a mask?" Long Chen muttered as he saw a piece of mask lying on the ground. He picked up the piece.

"A half piece of a mask? There doesn't seem to be anything special about the mask, though," Long Chen muttered as he observed the mask.

"It looks like a piece that broke off from the main mask. Maybe someone fought here, and the piece broke off?" Xun muttered.

"Maybe, that's possible as well," Long Chen replied.

He tossed the piece of the mask back in his storage ring.

Long Chen left the building and went down before walking to the last building in that area.

He stepped up the 60th step on the stairs, but he didn't use teleport this time. He wanted to see how much stronger he had become after washing his impurities.

He kept going higher, but on the 69th step, he gave up. He felt as if he was at his limit. There was no way he could face stronger gravity.

He finally used teleport and teleported to the top of the building.

Long Chen pushed the door open and entered inside, but it was nothing like he had expected.

From the outside, it seemed as if the building had two floors, but it was clear as he entered that the building had no floors.

As he looked up, he only saw the room that was higher than it should have been.

"I got to say; they fooled me," Long Chen muttered.

Even though there were no floors above him, there were stairs. The only difference was that instead of going up, the stairs were going down.

"There should be an underground location here," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards the stairs.

He went down and found himself in a tunnel-like place. The floor was uneven, but there was light in that place.

He walked deeper into the tunnel, and after walking for over 10 minutes, he saw a hall like place.

"What the f*** is that?!" Long Chen exclaimed in shock as he saw what laid ahead of him.

He had expected treasures, but not this.

Chapter 393 - 393: Spirit

Long Chen saw what he never expected to see here. Even Xun was stunned.

"What the heck is this place? I thought that the place would have treasures, but this?" Long Chen exclaimed with a frown on his face.

"I have a possible explanation for this," Xun responded.

"An explanation for having so many skeletons at the end of this building? I have a few assumptions as well," Long Chen muttered as he glanced back towards Xun.

"Yes. There is a possibility that it was a place that was used as a prison to punish the bad Disciples, right? Every sect has a place like that. Normally, the disciples are released after their punishment duration is over, but the calamity struck before that," Xun said.

"Either these people were killed by whatever destroyed the sect, and only their skeletons remained, or they survived, but with no way to escape, they died here. Their bodies deteriorated, and only their skeletons remained after thousands of years," she further added.

"I was thinking the same thing. So these should be the skeletons of the disciples. I wonder what happened to the Sect. I heard that even the bodies of the cultivators of the Divine Heaven Sect had disappeared. All that was left behind was their treasures and their clothes. It sounds like their bodies disintegrated into thin air. At Least, these guys had their skeletons intact, but they didn't even have those," Long Chen muttered as he sighed.

"Let's leave. There's nothing useful here. Unfortunately, no treasures at all," Long Chen muttered as he turned back and left the place.

He went upstairs and left the building before teleporting down to the ground.

"Chu Miao, I'm done. We can leave," Long Chen told Chu Miao, who nodded her head.

They started walking away.

As they walked together, Chu Miao asked him about the other three buildings.

"The second building had a few fountains. The water from those fountains could cure ailments of the body and purify it," Long Chen told her.

"That sounds incredible. Didn't you bring some of it for me?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen.

"I wanted to, but it was impossible to collect that water in anything. A person was only able to drink the water from its source. That's why I was not able to bring it with myself," Long Chen replied.

"Oh, what about the other two buildings?" Long Chen asked her.

"The other two buildings? They were useless. The 3rd building had nothing but ash. I think that someone burnt everything there,"

"The 4th building was something like a prison, I believe. It went underground and only had skeletons there, which I believe belong to the prisoners," Long Chen replied to her.

"Oh, I guess we still haven't found a place that contains true treasures. Let's increase our speed. Others are already ahead, and they might find treasures before us," Chu Miao said.

Long Chen agreed with her words. They both started moving ahead, hoping to catch others.

They walked for around 2 hours. In these 2 hours, they saw many things. They saw small lakes, gardens, beautiful statues of beasts, and many more things, but not the buildings that they were looking to find.

Some more time passed away before they saw the wall up ahead. There was a long wall and a door at its center. The wall was only 3 meters tall, so it was clear that people didn't worry that someone would infiltrate the other side.

Long Chen walked towards the door and tried opening it, but it was locked.

"You can jump over the wall, right? Or do you need a rope's help again?" Long Chen glanced back at Chu Miao and asked.

"Of course I can jump this small wall. There's a big difference between a 3-floor building and a 3-meter wall," Chu Miao replied to Long Chen.

"Just making sure," Long Chen said as he jumped on the other side of the wall.

Chu Miao also jumped over the wall and appeared on the other side of the wall.

"This looks like their graveyard," Long Chen muttered as he saw the tombstone everywhere.

"The Graveyard of incredibly powerful cultivators of the Divine Heaven Sect. We should leave. Let's not desecrate a place like this in search of treasures," Chu Miao said.

"Yes, I was thinking the same thing. There's no way we can find anything we need here," Long Chen muttered. He was about to turn back to leave when he saw something shining at some distance.

He walked deeper into the graveyard after that thing.

"Hey, wait. Don't go there. Let's just leave," Chu Miao called out, but Long Chen didn't stop.

He walked towards the shiny object and picked it up.

"An earring?" he muttered as he observed the earring that he found.

"It should be an Earth grade treasure. Not a bad find," Xun informed Long Chen.

"It feels creepy picking up an earring from a graveyard, but a treasure as a treasure," Long Chen muttered as he put the earring in his storage ring.

Now that Long Chen stood at the center of the Graveyard, he was able to see a cave at the end of it.

"I see a cave. Come here," Long Chen informed Chu Miao. He kept his voice loud so that it could reach her.

Chu Miao hesitatingly walked towards him.

"There's a cave there. We should explore that as well. There might be something useful there," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the cave.

It didn't take them long to get to the cave. Both of them entered the cave together.

As Long Chen walked deeper into the cave, he found it mostly empty. He only found something significant when he got to the end of the cave.

There was a coffin lying at the end, and a girl was sitting in front of the casket.

Long Chen recognized the dress. It belonged to the cultivators of the Devil Worshipping Sect.

"Are you a disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect? What are you doing here alone?" Long Chen asked her. He could only see her back, so he didn't know who the girl was.

The girl stood up slowly and turned back. Long Chen finally saw her face.

"You weren't in the team of 9 of the Devil Worshipping Sect? Wait a minute, are you the girl that disappeared? Your senior brother and the others have been quite worried for you," Long Chen informed her.

"Do you bleed?" the girl didn't answer him; instead, she asked a question of her own.

"We all bleed," Long Chen replied to her, but he found something strange. He was having a feeling as if he was in danger.

He looked at the girl suspiciously and instantly took out his King's Sword.

"Who are you? Long Chen asked her as she pointed his sword towards the girl.

"If you bleed, can you bleed for me?" the girl asked another question without answering.

"I won't bleed for you, but I will definitely make you bleed if you don't answer me," Long Chen told her.

"I don't bleed," the girl said.

"Please bleed for me. Mamma needs to wake up!" the girl said in a soft voice.

"What are you saying? Who is mamma?" Long Chen muttered in confusion.

"Long Chen, you need to stay careful. If I'm not wrong, a spirit has taken over the body of the girl. She must be talking about waking up the body in the coffin by using your blood," Xun informed Long Chen.

"Chu Miao, leave this place. It's dangerous here," Long Chen told Chu Miao.

Chu Miao shifted her gaze between Long Chen and the girl before she decided to listen to him. She ran outside the cave.

"Are you someone from the Divine Heaven Sect?" Long Chen asked the girl, more specifically, he asked the spirit inside her.

"Divine Heaven Sect..." the girl muttered. Some emotions were evident in her eyes.

Chapter 394 - 394: Spirit Weapon

"Yes, the Divine Heaven Sect. Are you someone from the Divine Heaven Sect?" Long Chen asked the girl.

"Divine Heaven Sect needs to be destroyed!" the girl abruptly roared as she looked towards the sky.

"Why? What did they do?" Long Chen asked the girl.

"Give me blood!" the girl didn't answer and commanded Long Chen instead.

"I'm sorry, but my blood is more precious than you can ever imagine," Long Chen told her as he shook his head.

"Blood!" The girl roared as she pointed her finger towards Long Chen.

Long Chen could feel an invisible force holding onto him, preventing him from moving.

Long Chen used teleport to break through the restrictions as he appeared behind the girl and swung his sword towards her neck.

Even though Long Chen knew that the girl was someone from the Devil Worshipping Sect and that she was under the control of a spirit, he didn't go easy on her.

Long Chen knew that going easy on an opponent might cause his death, so he ignored everything when he fought. It didn't matter if the one that wanted to kill him was someone close to Manxiang Li; his life was on the line after all.

Before Long Chen's sword could get near her, her head did a 180-degree turn. Even though her back was facing Long Chen, her face was also facing him.

She caught the sword with her bare hands, but she had underestimated the power of the King's sword.

Her hand was cut off along with her neck.

The headless body of the girl fell down to the ground.

"The body should be dead, but the Spirit won't die from a sword," Long Chen muttered as he observed the girl.

After some time, a small sphere of light came out of the girl's body and took a humanoid form.

The spirit took the form of a girl with long hair, but she had no face.

"You destroyed my body!" the spirit shrieked. Her voice was so sharp that it managed to give a headache to Long Chen.

"That wasn't your body, and you had already destroyed that body from what I saw. The real host of the body was already killed by you!" Long Chen told her.

"I'll take your body and give male blood to mama!" the spirit let out as she flew towards Long Chen.

Long Chen swung his sword, but it just passed through the body of the spirit, not harming her in the slightest. Before the Spirit could touch Long Chen, he used teleport and appeared as far away from her as possible.

"Xun! She's a spirit; my weapons can't harm her. What can I do to stop her?!" Long Chen asked Xun as he kept dodging the spirit using teleport as he believed that she might possess him if she touched him.

"Did you forget that you have comprehended the law of Darkness? You can touch spirits, and she should be able to touch you. She won't be able to enter your body no matter how much she tries," Xun informed Long Chen.

"Ah, Right," Long Chen chuckled as he put the King's Sword back in his storage ring.

He waited on his spot for the spirit to get near him, and as soon as the Spirit got near, Long Chen punched out. He used no skills. It was just a simple pinch reinforced by his Demon Monarch Physique.

The fist landed on the Spirit, making her fly back. The spirit gave a surprised shriek as she flew back.

"I can beat her, but how can I destroy her?" Long Chen asked Xun once more. He had thought that his attack might harm her as he was able to touch her, but it didn't seem as if she was hurt. He wasn't even sure if a spirit could feel pain.

"There is a way for you to stop her, and I think you can definitely do it as you can catch her. You need to put the spirit inside your sword. When you do that, the spirit will be under your control, and your weapon will become a spiritual weapon," Xun said.

"Oh? Interesting. I can put the Spirit in the Fury. That sword is a golden grade weapon and the strongest sword I have after the King's Sword," Long Chen muttered.

"Why not in the King's Sword?" Xun asked.

"Because King's Sword is something that belonged to the Saint King Xianwu himself. I don't want to make any changes to his sword," Long Chen muttered.

The spirit once again flew towards him, but Long Chen didn't punch her this time. He caught the spirit's neck, preventing her from escaping.

"Leave me!" the spirit bellowed, but Long Chen didn't respond. He also held Fury in his other hand

"What next?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Cut your finger lightly with your sword and cut the spirit with the portion of the sword that has your blood on it," Xun told him.

"Alright," Long Chen nodded as he cut his finger lightly.

There was a small amount of blood on his sword now.

Long Chen cut the spirit with the same part that had his blood on it, and surprisingly, for the first time, the Spirit roared in pain. It seemed as if it was actually harmed.

"Leave me!" the Spirit bellowed in pain.

The spirit started changing shape, but it looked as if she was unwilling.

It changed form and turned back to a small sphere of light that merged with Long Chen's sword.

Long Chen could feel that a link was established between him and his sword, similar to the link that was between him and his beasts.

"I have a spiritual sword now," Long Chen muttered as he observed the sword with a smile on his face.

He tried testing it.

Long Chen commanded the sword to fly, and it began flying as it orbited around him. After testing further, he found out that he didn't even need to speak the command loudly. He just had to think of something, and the sword did it.

The only thing that the sword couldn't do was that it was not able to go farther than 100 meters from Long Chen.

"This should give me a great boost when I fight Lang Jing next," Long Chen muttered as he kept the Sword back in his storage ring.

Next, he walked up to the coffin in front of him.

Long Chen tried opening the coffin, but he wasn't able to. It seemed as if he wasn't strong enough yet.

Long Chen put the coffin in his storage ring. He had decided to see inside it after the restriction on his powers were lifted.

There was nothing else in that place. Long Chen looked towards the body of the girl on the ground and wondered if he should take her.

He wasn't sure if it would make things better or worse for Manxiang Li. He ultimately decided to keep the body in his storage ring as well, but he wasn't certain that he would show it to Manxiang Li.

After dealing with everything, Long Chen started walking towards the exit.

As he left the cave, he saw Chu Miao standing there.

As soon as Chu Miao saw him, she jumped into his embrace as she hugged him.

"I'm so glad that you're safe," Chu Miao said as she breathed in relief.

"I told you not to worry about me. It wasn't like it was anything dangerous," Long Chen said.

"Was it difficult to defeat that thing?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen.

"Nope. It was super easy, barely an inconvenience," Long Chen responded.

They both separated from each other's embrace.

"Let's continue. We still need to catch up to others," Long Chen said as he started walking towards the exit of the graveyard. Chu Miao followed after him.

Chapter 395 - 395: Attacked

Long Chen reached the door of the graveyard and saw a key lying in front of it.

"A key here?" he muttered with a frown as he picked up the key and started observing it carefully.

He tried putting the key in the lock of the door, but it didn't fit. He realized that it wasn't the key to this door.

He started wondering what this key opened. As he was coming here, he didn't see anything that used a key. The only lock he saw was on the door of this graveyard, but the key didn't open it.

"What happened?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen as she saw him stop.

"Ah, nothing," Long Chen put the key in his storage ring and jumped on the other side of the wall.

Chu Miao also jumped after him.

They both continued on their journey in search of treasures.

They were walking on the grass when Long Chen sensed the danger. He reached out his hand to his left and caught an arrow that was targeting him.

If he hadn't been careful, the arrow would have penetrated his head and killed him.

"Come out; you can't do anything with these weak arrows. Face me properly if you're not ashamed of yourself," Long Chen let out as he looked to his left.

"Your reactions were quite fast. I thought this would be faster and less time consuming, but I guess that's not what's going on here," a man came out from behind the trees.

Four more men came out as well.

"Mighty Sword Sect. Manxiang Li was right. Your reputation as a righteous sect is really undeserving," Long Chen said.

"Did you leave any reputation behind for us to protect? Weren't you the one that falsely accused me and our sect of forcing a girl to marry me? We both know that it was a lie that you and that bastard fabricated with Meng as your accomplice!" Ru Shan told Long Chen.

Chu Miao looked confused as she heard their conversation.

"That, I agree. I involved you in something that you guys didn't need to be involved in, but on my defense, it was one of you that attacked me first," Long Chen said, smilingly.

"What do you mean? We never attacked you! Wait a minute, were you the one that killed our disciples in that alley?!" Ru Shan let out as he thought of something.

"Yes, I was the one. Wasn't it obvious? I thought there were many witnesses that saw me use my skills related to the Dark Soul Sect," Long Chen muttered.

"You! 5 of our disciples died because of you! You need to die for your sin!" Ru Shan roared as he attacked Long Chen, but Long Chen teleported and appeared behind Ru Shan as he swung his sword.

The battle between 2 head disciples ended in an instant as Ru Shan's head fell off of his body.

"You were not a match for me before and definitely not now," Long Chen muttered as he watched the dead body of Ru Shan.

The other disciples of the Mighty Sword Sect were still in a daze. Long Chen used that advantage and killed another one of them.

Only three disciples remained, one of whom was their vice-captain. They attacked Long Chen together, but they were all inexperienced in how to deal with Long Chen.

Their reactions were slower, and Long Chen's teleportation made it even more difficult for them to fight him.

One after another, they kept dying. None of them was even able to wound Long Chen.

Soon, all of them were dead.

"The breakthroughs because of the Natural Qi Pond really worked miracles for my strength," Long Chen muttered as he watched the dead bodies lying on the ground.

"What were they talking about? And who is Meng?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen.

Long Chen only replied to her with two words, "My enemy."

"Let's continue," He further added.

They continued on their journey, and this time, Long Chen used his Divine Sense on regular intervals so that the same thing wouldn't repeat itself.

They walked for over an hour before they saw a crowded place.

There was a tall tower, and many people were standing around it.

Long Chen and Chu Miao walked up to the tower.

"You're here. You took so long to get here," Manxiang Li saw Long Chen and walked up to him. His team followed him.

"What's happening here? Why is everyone standing outside this place and not entering?" Long Chen asked.

"That's because they can't enter. This place has no door and no window. There's no opening to enter it," Manxiang Li said.

"Really? Why is everyone standing here and not leaving then? Aren't they just wasting time here? Unless there's something important here, that's stopping them from leaving?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

"Exactly. There is something here. Look at the top of that tower," Manxiang Li told Long Chen as he pointed towards the top of the tower.

Long Chen looked at the top of the tower and saw something.

"That?" Long Chen muttered with a frown.

"Isn't that the Flute of War?" Chu Miao exclaimed in shock.

"Exactly. It's one of the well-known treasures of Divine Heaven Sect when it was at its peak. They all want it," Manxiang Li said.

"It's in the list we were given as well," Long Chen muttered as he watched the flute floating at the peak of the tower.

"Can't they climb the tower?" Long Chen asked.

"They tried, but it's impossible to climb the tower. That's no way to grip the walls of the tower. They tried everything they could, including their weapons as mounting treasures, but nothing worked," Manxiang Li responded.

"Doesn't it mean that it's impossible to get the flute? Is there still a reason to stay behind?" Long Chen muttered in confusion.

"There is. You can't see it as you're too far away, but when you get near the towers, a small sphere of light appears below your feet. A barrier also engulfs you. No other person can enter your sphere or attack you because of that barrier. No one knows what it does, but they believe that it's the key to getting to the top," Manxiang Li replied to him.

"Interesting. Let me see for myself," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the tower.

As they got near the tower, spheres of lights appeared below their feet. A semi-transparent barrier also surrounded each of them.

"See? This is what I'm talking about. There is definitely a way to get that Flute, and it is somehow related to this light above our feet. They are still trying to figure out how they can use it to get to the top," Manxiang Li told Long Chen.

Long Chen walked away from the tower and walked back again.

"Interesting. When I move away from a certain range of the tower, this sphere disappears, and when I come closer, it appears again. It's either a neat trick just for entertainment, or it's actually related to the artifact at the top of the tower," Long Chen muttered.

He walked closer to the tower to observe it.

Yang Sen and Tang Jin were also standing close to the tower with their hands on it as they observed it.

Long Chen also walked to the tower and touched it.

The texture of the tower was way too smooth. Long Chen finally understood why no one was able to climb the tower this way.

There were also a few specks of white on the mostly black tower.

He was still observing it when another person stepped in the vicinity of the tower.

As the last person entered the vicinity of the tower, there were precisely 50 disciples near the tower.

The sphere of light below their feet started shining even more brightly.

Chapter 396 - 396: Rising To The Top

The sphere of light below them rose higher in the air and carried them along.

The spheres were floating 15 meters above the ground.

"What the heck is happening?" Long Chen muttered with a frown.

As they were high in the air, a change occurred on the ground.

A square box appeared on the ground that seemed similar to a chessboard and had smaller boxes of black and White Color. But instead of having a composition of 8x8, it had a composition of 25x25.

"That?" Long Chen muttered with a frown as he looked at the ground.

He was still wondering what was going to happen when 2 of the floating spheres landed in the ground over the square box.

Amongst the 50 disciples, only two were on the ground as the barrier and sphere disappeared from below their feet.

Both of them just stood there confused as they wondered what they had to do. The others also watched them in confusion.

Amongst the two people on the ground, one was from the beast hall, whereas the other person was from the Profound Yin Snatching Sect.

They waited for 10 minutes for something to happen, but nothing happened.

"Eunli! Kill the other kid! I'm sure that is what it's about. It's a battle arena, and you need to be victorious! Do it! Kill that evil remnant!" Jichuan told his fellow disciple.

The others also thought of the same thing. The Head Disciple of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect also commanded his fellow disciple to kill his opponent, but he was too slow to react. Before he could attack, he was stabbed in the chest by Eunli.

A sphere again appeared below the feet of Eunli and made him rise high in the air. Now his position was higher than the others. While the others were 15 meters above the ground, Eunli was 20 meters above the ground.

"So this is a pyramid battle scheme. Each victory brings one higher. I am not sure that we need to kill the opponents, though. Immobilizing them should be

enough to gain victory," Long Chen muttered as he saw the dead body on the ground.

It was Manxiang Li's turn next as he landed on the ground. His opponent was his own fellow disciple, who was a girl.

As soon as the girl saw Manxiang Li as her opponent, she dropped down to her knees and started crying.

Even Manxiang Li was stunned as he didn't know what to do. He could never attack his own Junior Sister.

"Come on, you trash! Finish the battle! You're wasting all of our time!" a few people from other sects started screaming at Manxiang Li as they saw none of them attack each other.

"Don't worry. I won't kill you," Manxiang Li said as he sat down on the ground as well.

"You don't have to kill her! Tell her to step out of the boundary!" Long Chen told Manxiang Li.

"Hmm?" Manxiang Li heard Long Chen's words.

"Lin, try stepping out of the box," Manxiang Li told the girl.

The girl nodded her head as she stood up and left the boundary of the box.

A sphere again appeared below Manxiang Li's feet and took him higher as well. He was now at the same height as Eunli.

"Thank You!" Manxiang Li told Long Chen. Long Chen nodded his head.

"So that's a way as well," Yang Sen muttered as he smiled.

Just like that, battles continued. Sometimes enemies were paired for battles, and other times, they were fellow sect disciples.

Whenever there were two different sects in the arena, there was a battle to the death, whereas when it was fellow sect mates, the fight simply ended with one of them stepping out of the arena.

Whenever it was fellow disciples in the ring, the head disciple of that sect decided on who should step out.

After some time, it was Yang Sen's turn. His opponent was the head disciple of the Blood Demon Sect, but his opponent simply stepped out of the ring as he didn't consider himself as Yang Sen's opponent.

It was the same for Tang Jin, whose opponent stepped out despite being someone from the opposite faction.

Finally, Long Chen's turn arrived as he landed on the ground. His opponent was the head disciple of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect, Zi Zhan.

"You know, I consider the Profound Yin Snatching Sect and the Dual Cultivation Sect to be the worse of the worse. What you do really irks me, and I really hope that you won't step outside. I want to enjoy the fight to the end," Long Chen told Zi Zhan.

"Kekeke, you are really overconfident, aren't you? Do you really think that you are Yang Sen or Tang Jin for me to step out willingly? Naive Kid!" Zi Zhan said before he ran towards Long Chen with his blade in his hand.

He thrust the blade towards his chest, but he missed as Long Chen moved to the side.

Long Chen didn't stop and continued his step work as he twisted his body and thrust his sword towards Zi Zhan's back.

Zi Zhan dodged the sword, but a Qi Knife appeared in Long Chen's hand that he threw towards Zi Zhan's head.

Zi Zhan was so focused on Long Chen's Sword that he didn't notice the knife coming towards him.

The knife penetrated his head, killing him instantly.

"Idiot," Yang Sen muttered as he saw Zi Zhan die.

Long Chen also reached the same level as Yang Sen, Tang Jin, and Manxiang Li.

The fights continued until there were 25 victors. Those 25 stood at the same level.

Everyone was expecting there to be the same format of battle until only one of them remained. They thought that they would keep fighting and getting higher until the last remaining person would be able to get the Flute of War, but reality turned out to be different.

The Square Box disappeared on the ground, and the ground returned to normal.

As everyone was wondering as to what was happening, a bow and three arrows appeared in front of each of them.

"A Bow and arrows? Is the second round about shooting?" Long Chen muttered as he took the bow and arrows.

He set up the arrow in the bow and waited.

After a few more minutes, a bright beam of light shot towards the sky, which took the form of a hundred birds that were made entirely from Qi.

"Looks like we need to shoot the birds!" One of the disciples let out loud as he shot an arrow towards one of the birds, but since the birds were too fast, the arrow missed their target.

He tried again and missed again. Now he only has one arrow remaining, and that arrow also missed the birds that flew like Lightning.

The Sphere of light disappeared from below his feet, and the man fell down to the ground.

Contrary to that man, another disciple had managed to hit the bird on his last try. His sphere started flying higher, and he rose ten more meters in the sky.

Everyone else followed that as well, but not many succeeded as the birds were as fast as lightning and flew unpredictably. The test was about skill and luck as well.

Only a rare few of them succeeded in hitting their target, and that too only once.

Amongst the 25 remaining disciples, 22 had spent all their arrows, and only 7 of them managed to hit the birds once.

Tang Jin, Yang Sen, and Long Chen had also shot an arrow, and all three of them managed to hit the bird on their first try.

The second try missed for Tang Jin and succeeded for Yang Sen, whereas the 3rd try missed for Yang Sen and succeeded for Tang Jin.

Both of them rise 50 meters higher.

Long Chen still had 2 of his arrows remaining.

Chapter 397 - 397: You Aren't My Son

Long Chen's Second Arrow also hit its target. He was brought to the same level as Tang Jin and Yang Sen.

After the platform stabilized, he prepared his 3rd arrow as well.

Long Chen shot the 3rd arrow, which hit its target as well, bringing him the highest position.

Long Chen was already halfway to the top already. All the birds disappeared along with the bows.

"Do you see? That kid is even higher than Tang Jin and Yang Sen. He managed to reach the farthest on the gravity steps as well. Just who is he?"

Almost everyone was shocked at Long Chen's performance. They've seen him outperform the strongest people in their eyes twice now. They couldn't help but wonder if he was really as strong as the two of them or just lucky.

Yang Sen and Tang Jin also felt anger as they watched someone standing higher than them.

They felt as if they were being insulted, and they couldn't help but feel anger towards Long Chen.

'I'll be the one to get that flute, no matter what,' they both thought to themselves.

Long Chen watched the Flute of War. He knew how incredible the Flute of War was, but he realized that there was a certain charm in it as well.

It was one of the most beautiful artifacts he had seen by now.

He was observing it when he heard Xun's voice.

"That Flute of War, I remember that. They used that in a war. It's a troublesome item,"

"Who used them? Which war?" Long Chen inquired.

"The war against Tian Shen. It must've fallen to the lower world after that war, and the Divine Heaven sect somehow found it," Xun muttered.

"What's the use of it? I know that it's important, and the Dark Soul Sect wants it, but it should be really incredible if people from the higher realm used it as well," Long Chen asked Xun.

"It is an incredible treasure. If you play it for yourself right before a fight against a small army, your cultivation will rise by a major realm. The increase in cultivation will last until the fight is over. And if you play the flute for your army, everyone in your Army will have a breakthrough of 1 major realm. The only limitation is that no cultivator in the army would have a rise in cultivation that would bring him to the same cultivation realm as the flute player," Xun explained.

"Incredible. It seems like a handy war tool. I'm at Earth Realm; if I have an army of Spirit Establishment Realm cultivators, they will all be Gold Realm cultivators during the war. Or I can achieve a breakthrough for myself and become a sky realm cultivator," Long Chen muttered.

"Yeah, this was quite a hassle, especially when you are against the one that holds it," Xun let out.

Long Chen and Xun were still talking when the sphere of light below their feet started shaking.

A mist started coming out of the tower that took every place in its embrace. No one was able to see anything other than the fog.

"What's happening now?" Long Chen muttered as he looked around. Even he wasn't able to see anything.

Long Chen sensed something and sat down. He felt something pass by above his head.

"Something is here, trying to attack us," Long Chen let out as he stood up.

He brought out his Spirit Sword, Fury, which started orbiting around Long Chen.

He heard the small sound of the wind movement on his left.

Fury instantly moved to Long Chen's left, and it managed to hit something, but he wasn't sure if that thing was dead or not. Abruptly, something came to him from the other side. Long Chen used his King's Sword and swung it.

He was sure that he managed to cut something.

Long Chen wasn't the only one who was facing it, but almost everyone was undergoing the same thing. The mist not only affected their vision, but it also prevented the sounds.

None of them was able to hear a singly voice other than their own.

Some of them were already killed by whatever it was that was attacking them.

Everyone tried to protect themselves the best they could while staying alert, but it was proving to be complicated.

Previously, they were only attacked from one direction, and it seemed that there was only one that was attacking them, but soon the attack multiplied, and it was clear that it was not a single thing that was attacking them.

Even Manxiang Li was harmed. His right cheek was grazed by something, and it was bleeding now, but he didn't care for it as he kept attacking whenever he felt a movement.

This strange phenomenon lasted for a few hours before the attacks stopped altogether.

The mist also started dispersing, and soon everything came to view.

Only ten people were still in the air, and the rest were lying on the ground. They were either injured or dead.

The Spheres of light started rising higher. It was all according to everyone's performance.

Even though none of them could see it, they were attacked by small beasts, and the more they killed, the better their performance was considered.

Everyone reached higher based on how many they killed. Once more, Long Chen was the one that had the best performance.

After his sphere stopped, he was just 10 meters away from the Flute of War. Tang Jin and Yang Sen were 50 meters away from it, and Manxiang Li was 65 meters away, whereas the others are also in the range of 80-100 meters.

Long Chen felt as if there was going to be one more test, and his performance will decide if he gets the flute. He waited for 20 minutes, but nothing happened.

Some more time passed away, but nothing changed.

"It's just 10 meters, I should be able to get it," Long Chen muttered as he got ready to jump.

He sent his Qi in his legs and jumped with as much power as he could in the direction of the Flute of War.

Long Chen reached the top of the tower and caught the flute before he landed on the ground on the other side of the tower.

"Got the Flute of War. Another great weapon in my arsenal to fight Lang Jin," Long Chen muttered as he smiled. He put the Flute in his storage ring.

Yang Sen, Tang Jin, and the others also jumped down to the ground as they walked to Long Chen.

"Give me that Flute," Both Yang Sen and Tang Jin, commanded Long Chen at the same time.

"Why? I don't think my property belongs to you. You're neither my wives nor are you my sons, fortunately," Long Chen responded sarcastically.

"Impudence! It doesn't belong to you!" Yang Sen let out angrily.

"Who does it belong to, if not me. I'm the one that got it," Long Chen said as he glanced at the others.

"It should belong to the winner of that trial! You didn't wait for it to finish and jumped. You cheated! Give it back before I'm forced to bring my sword out!" Tang Jin warned Long Chen.

"Please take your sword out. I've already killed a few since coming here. A little more of them shouldn't be any big deal," Long Chen told Tang Jin with an amused smile on his face. He had already brought his King's Sword out of his storage ring.

"Die then!" Tang Jin pulled his sword out and attacked Long Chen.

His speed was so fast that even Long Chen was amazed for a moment. Tang Jin reminded him of Lang Jing when he had fought him, but he was still much slower than Lang Jing.

Tang Jin attacked with his sword, but Long Chen didn't even raise his weapon; still, Tang Jin's sword was stopped mid-way.

Chapter 398 - 398: She's Dead

"A Spirit Weapon?" Yang Sen let out with a surprised look on his face as he saw a sword blocking Tang Jin's sword, but Long Chen wasn't holding that sword. His sword was flying in the air.

Everyone else was shocked as well. A Spirit Weapon was one of the most special types of weapons that had a soul of its own. Although a Spirit Weapon was not super strong compared to other weapons of similar grade, it was much more useful for a cultivator as it could defend them and attack the opponents without them having a need for it.

Tang Jin moved back as he stared at the Sword flying near Long Chen.

"That was a surprise. I didn't know that you had a treasure like that. I'll definitely take it after killing you!" Tang Jin said as he again attacked Long Chen, but this time he used a martial skill.

"Wind Blades!" He muttered. A few invisible blades appeared near him, made entirely from dense winds.

The Wind Blades attacked Long Chen, which were supposed to make it difficult for Long Chen to escape, but Tang Jin didn't know that Long Chen had also comprehended Wind Essence. Even though his comprehension was only minor, he was able to feel the blades coming towards him.

He gestured for his Spirit Sword, and it accordingly dealt with the wind blades.

"How did you find the blades!" Tang Jin exclaimed in shock, but Long Chen had already disappeared from his position and appeared behind Tang Jin.

Tang Jin sensed the danger and moved to the left, barely dodging Long Chen's King's Sword, but he hadn't expected the Spirit Sword to be waiting on the other side of the mountain.

The Spirit Sword stabbed Tang Jin's stomach but missed his vitals as he managed to make a slight adjustment to his trajectory at the end moment.

Long Chen was about to deal the finishing blow when he abruptly used teleport.

An orb of red flame passed through where he was just standing.

He appeared in a different spot.

"What's the benefit of attacking from behind? Come to the front as well," Long Chen told Yang Sen, who had attacked him.

"I must say your speed is too fast, even for my eyes. I didn't see you move at all. It feels so surreal," Yang Sen muttered as he stepped forth with a blade in his hand.

"No matter how fast you are, you'll die!" Yang Sen let out as he attacked once more.

"Palm of Judgemental Blessing!"

A giant golden palm appeared above Long Chen's head and fell on top of him, crushing everything in its path. The palm disappeared as it left a deep crater on the ground, but Yang Sen wasn't happy.

He looked back and saw the Spirit Sword coming towards him. The Sword struck his chest but wasn't able to harm him.

"A Gold Grade Sword can never break my barrier. Even an Earth Grade treasure can't do it. It's something made using our Sect's Defensive artifact and reinforced by our core skill," Yang Sen laughed, but he heard a scream.

He looked to his side and saw Tang Jin lying dead on the ground.

"Good. Done with one idiot, I can focus on another," Long Chen muttered as he looked at Yang Sen.

"You can dodge my attacks with your speed, but it won't last long. Your Qi will definitely be depleted, whereas my barrier will be unbreakable for days. Silently accept your death!" Yang Sen told Long Chen.

"Let me try that unbreakable defense of yours!" Long Chen muttered as he teleported near Yang Sen and attacked with his King's sword.

"Hahaha, it's a futile effort," Yang Sen laughed, but his face was immediately covered in pain as his barrier was broken. A deep sword wound was left behind on his chest.

"H-how," He was so shocked at his barrier being broken that he didn't even react as Long Chen's Spirit Sword penetrated his chest.

"Arrogance begets death," Long Chen told Yang Sen right before he closed his eyes.

"Alright. Now it's time to kill all of you as well," Long Chen said as he looked towards the rest of the disciples.

"W-we didn't even do anything!" The other disciples said as they stepped back.

Long Chen teleported behind the person who said it and sliced his head off of his body.

"Well, I just killed two heirs of 2 of the strongest sects. I feel like killing you as well; otherwise, you might go out and try to create difficulty for me. Don't think that I didn't see you guys getting your weapons ready," Long Chen said as he smiled.

He attacked the disciples nearby. His Spirit Sword also killed the disciples one after another.

The ground was covered in a massive amount of blood that seeped out of the bodies of the disciples that Long Chen had killed.

He killed all of them except the disciples of the Devil Worshipping Sect and Chu Miao.

"Aren't you going to kill us as well?" Manxiang Li asked as he glanced at Long Chen.

"I believe you. And I'm sure that you'll teach your fellow disciples not to spill the beans as well," Long Chen chuckled.

"I don't care who you killed. I would've killed most of them myself, but I must say, that was interesting, to say the least," Manxiang Li said.

"What was interesting?" Long Chen asked.

"I knew that you were strong, but I realized that I underestimated you when you defeated Jichuan last time, but that wasn't enough for you, was it? It turns out that I was still underestimating you. I wouldn't even be able to kill Tang Jin alone, let alone killing both, Tang Jin and Yang Sen," He said.

"I expected them to come after me for the flute, so it was clear that I had to eliminate them all right here. Anyway, now there's less competition for the treasures," Long Chen let out.

"What less competition? There's only my team left other than your team, and I would only be crazy to consider fighting you for treasures. We can search for it, and if luck wills it, I'll get some, but if I had to face you for them, then you can have them," Manxiang Li chuckled.

"I found the girl that you were looking for," Long Chen abruptly said. He decided that he didn't need to be worried about it. At Least he could give Manxiang Li some closer this way.

"What, girl? Do you mean my Junior Sister?" Manxiang Li asked eagerly.

"Yeah," Long Chen replied.

"Where is she?! Please tell me she's safe," Manxiang Li asked Long Chen in concern.

"She's dead," Long Chen replied. Manxiang Li's face lost all its color.

"S-she is dead?" Manxiang Li muttered.

"Yeah. She was already dead when I got there. A Spirit was possessing her body. I'm not sure how she got in the graveyard of the Divine Heaven Sect," Long Chen told him.

"In the graveyard? I need to go see her right now!" Manxiang Li let out as he turned back to leave.

"You don't need to go. I brought her body here," Long Chen told him as he brought out the body of the girl.

Manxiang Li looked back and saw a body lying on the ground.

He walked up to the girl and put her body in his storage ring without giving many reactions.

"Are you alright?" Long Chen asked him as he saw his blank look.

"It's nothing. Let's go," Manxiang Li said as he started walking ahead.

Long Chen also went in a similar direction with Chu Miao.

That walked through the Sect for a day. They saw nothing but desert, but on the next day, they found a small hut at the end of that desert.

Chapter 399 - 399: Secret Of Heaven

Long Chen stepped towards the hut with Chu Miao following closely behind.

Manxiang Li and the others had gone their different ways as they wanted to look for treasures separately; thus, Long Chen was alone with Chu Miao at the moment as he walked to the Hut.

Long Chen got near the hut and started to observe it from the outside.

It seemed to be a hut made entirely from wood, but it seemed as if the wood was starting to decay.

Long Chen used his Divine Sense to look inside the hut, but even then, he wasn't able to see inside the place.

It was the first time his Divine Sense had failed to see inside a place he wanted to see, which he found strange considering the fact that it was made from simple looking wood.

He stepped towards the door and tried opening it, but it didn't open. The door was locked.

"It needs a key," he muttered as he noticed the keyhole.

He thought for a while before he brought a key out of his storage ring. It was the same key that he had found in the graveyard some time ago.

He tried putting the key in the keyhole, and it fit perfectly.

The door was unlocked.

He pushed the door open and looked inside. The room seemed mostly empty.

There was a square table placed at the center of the room and a crystal ball set on top of it. There was nothing else other than that.

Long Chen stepped inside the hut and walked to the table in front of him.

He tried to pick up the crystal ball, but he stopped his hand Mid-Way as he saw something in the crystal ball.

He could see himself inside the crystal ball, but he had red hair instead of his usual black hair, and he looked to be much older.

There was also a girl standing beside him that he didn't recognize.

The girl had pitch-black eyes and hair as red as the flames of hell. She wore a beautiful black dress. A small crystal necklace hung over her chest.

Chu Miao also walked up to him.

"Look in the crystal ball. Tell me what you see," Long Chen told Chu Miao, who was still standing at the door.

Chu Miao stepped inside the hut amidst the creaking noises of the wooden floor.

She looked at the Crystal Ball.

"What do you see?" Long Chen asked her again.

"I see me. I look older, though. I am wearing a Black Robe that looks similar to the robes that our Black-Robed Elders wear," Chu Miao replied.

"You see only yourself in there? Is there no other person?" he asked.

"Yup. I see no one else. It's so strange. What is this orb?" Chu Miao inquired.

"I'm not sure," Long Chen muttered.

'Xun? Do you know what it is?' he asked Xun.

"I don't, but it looks fun. Let me see as well," Xun chuckled as she appeared beside Long Chen and gazed deep in the orb.

She saw a completely different person in the orb. It was a girl, but she was much taller than her. She was as tall as Long Chen. The girl had pink hair like her. The girl seemed to be smiling as she looked to her left. A man was standing near her.

The Man looked like an older version of Long Chen. Long Chen had red hair, but his eyes weren't visible as he had his eyes closed. The girl was holding Long Chen's hand, and their fingers were intertwining.

'What do you see?' Long Chen asked her using his thoughts.

"I see nothing," Xun replied as she disappeared.

Long Chen picked up the orb and put that in his storage ring.

Long Chen left the hut. He couldn't help but think about who the red-haired girl that he saw was. He was also curious as to why he had red hair.

'Was that a future? Divine Heaven Sect was said to be able to look through heaven's secrets. They sound like diviners, who were able to see the future. This might be something related to that,' he thought.

"What is your greatest desire?" Long Chen asked Chu Miao as they moved forward. He wanted to know if his assumption about that orb was wrong or not.

"My desire? I want to be stronger. As strong as I can," Chu Miao said.

"Why do you chase strength?" he further asked.

"Because I don't want to go through the same situation again. I don't want someone to die right before me again," Chu Miao replied.

"You mean..." Long Chen muttered, but he stopped. He could guess that someone important to her must have died.

"I was born in a mortal village. There was no cultivator in my village. We didn't even know about cultivators. One day my mother watched a person killing a Villager, but the murderer was the village chief himself. He accused my mother of the murder instead,"

"My mother was killed in front of the whole town, and I couldn't even die with her. That day, I promised that I would gain strength and kill them all. I left the village and fortunately I met my master,"

Chu Miao told him her whole story from how she was taken by her master and how she started cultivating.

She also talked about how she went back and slaughtered the whole village.

"Even though I got my revenge, I still don't think I have enough strength to protect someone I care about from being killed like my mother. I want to be so strong that even the kings don't dare to touch someone close to me,"

Long Chen smiled as he heard the determination in her voice.

"It's good that you have a reason to become stronger. I have a similar reason, but I feel like my thirst to become stronger is not exactly related to my reasons. It's like something inside me that pushes me to get stronger. I can't slack off even if I desire," Long Chen let out.

Chu Miao glanced toward him and sighed.

"You're already so strong. I wish I were as strong as you,"

Long Chen laughed lightly.

"It's the same thing. No matter how much one gets, they won't be satisfied. You're not satisfied with what you have, and I'm not satisfied with what I have. This world is complicated. I wonder if the gods were satisfied or they were like us as well," he said.

Chu Miao shook her head.

"Why would the gods not be satisfied. They can have everything they want. They created everything. There can be nothing that they're dissatisfied about," she said.

"I always imagine Gods living in their paradise, drinking immortal wine, and enjoying life," she added.

"It's not for certain. If there are more than one gods, then there's a good chance that they argue more than they enjoy life. There's no way two or more beings can live for eternity and still be close. No one can escape from the darkness in this world," Long Chen replied.

"The Light and the Darkness, they should all be created by Gods. How can something they created affect themselves," she inquired.

Long Chen heard her statement as he looked towards the sky.

"The demons we give birth to, are the ones that are strong enough to swallow us," he said.

"Hah, that's all imaginative. We can't know what actually happens there and how strong they actually are. Maybe you're right, or maybe I am. It's just speculative at this point," Chu Miao responded

Long Chen didn't reply and just smiled.

They explored to the depths of the Divine Heaven Sect and saw many statues of beasts. Some Beasts were normal beasts that could still be seen in the world, whereas some of them were rare beasts that had gone extinct by now.

Chapter 400 - 400: Trapped

Long Chen and Chu Miao went further and noticed that the number of statues that they saw was increasing.

Previously they saw a statue every 500 meters, but now they saw the statues on both sides of the roads every 20 meters.

Long Chen felt as if these statues were leading him somewhere, and he thought that it was somehow related to beasts.

Long Chen kept walking ahead, and he saw something.

He saw a giant spherical golden barrier that was surrounding a large portion of land.

The barrier was semi-transparent, and Long Chen was able to see on the other side of the barrier.

He saw trees everywhere.

"A barrier that surrounds a forest? It somehow reminds me of the beast mountain of the Beast Hall branch. I wonder if they keep their beasts here. I might be able to get something," Long Chen muttered.

He looked around and found a small piece of stone.

He picked up the stone and threw it towards the barrier just to be sure.

He expected the stone to either bounce back or be destroyed, but what happened was completely opposite.

The stone passed through the barrier with ease and landed on the other side of the barrier.

"The heck? Is this really a barrier or a decoration?" Long Chen muttered as he stepped forward.

He stepped towards the barrier and brought his Mountain Destroyer out of his storage ring. He thrust the sword towards the barrier, and it passed through with ease. There was no resistance whatsoever.

He put the sword back and tried touching the barrier with his finger; still, nothing happened.

His hand passed through the barrier, and he also stepped inside with ease.

He wasn't stopped and didn't feel any resistance this time, either.

"Strange. This barrier is useless," Long Chen muttered as he looked back.

Chu Miao saw him enter, and she also passed through the barrier.

"Really strange," he frowned.

"Maybe it's just for show," Chu Miao said.

"Maybe," he let out as he turned back and started walking deeper into the forest.

"Do you think there will be something good here?" she asked Long Chen.

"If this place is what I think it is, then this place might have something that's even more important than a treasure," Long Chen muttered as he looked forward.

He used his Divine Sense and scanned his surroundings as he walked further.

Long Chen walked for over 3 hours, and he got to the end of the forest, and he saw the other end of the barrier.

Long Chen stopped using his Divine Sense as he sighed.

"That was a waste of time. There was nothing here," he muttered with a disappointed look on his face.

"That wasn't a complete waste. Think of it as us taking a shortcut instead of going a long way around the barrier," Chu Miao said as she looked at the positive side of it.

"Yeah," Long Chen let out, but he clearly didn't look happy.

Long Chen walked to the barrier, but as soon as he tried to pass through it, he felt a powerful shock.

He hurriedly moved back.

"Are you alright?" Chu Miao ran to him and provided support.

"I'm fine. It's nothing," Long Chen let out.

He picked up a rock from the ground and threw it towards the barrier, but the rock was stopped by the barrier. It didn't pass through and fell down to the ground.

"I get it. This barrier doesn't prevent someone from entering, but it prevents someone from leaving. My assumption should be right. This place is their beast sanctuary," Long Chen said as a frown covered his face.

"So, we can't leave?" Chu Miao said as she started getting worried.

"We should be able to leave. There should definitely be a way for humans to leave in case someone accidentally entered this place," Long Chen told her.

"Do you have an idea," she asked as she looked towards him with a hopeful gaze.

"I don't have anything yet," Long Chen replied, crushing her hopes under his honest words.

Long Chen sat down on the ground with his back resting against a tree.

'Xun, do you have any idea?' he inquired.

'I don't have anything yet,' Xun replied in a similar manner.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile.

"You should be able to use teleport to leave this place, but that would mean leaving the girl behind to die," Xun added.

"Me outside... Yeah, that might work," he muttered as he stood up and walked towards the barrier.

Using his Law of Space, he teleported outside.

He tried touching the barrier, and nothing happened this time.

"I'm right. This only stops someone from leaving," He let out.

Chu Miao was looking in her surroundings to find something when she noticed Long Chen standing outside the barrier.

"How did you leave?" she let out loud.

"I cheated," Long Chen said, smilingly.

"Tell me the way. I want to leave this freaking forest as fast as I can," Chu Miao told him.

"There's no way for you to leave. I was only able to bring myself out, but I can't bring you out. There's no way. You can stay there; I'll go ahead. If I find

something, I'll come to save you. If I don't find anything, well, goodbye," Long Chen said to her as he started walking away.

Chu Miao stayed there stunned. Her eyes started getting wet.

Long Chen stopped after taking a few steps as he turned back.

"I'm kidding. I was only messing with you. I have an idea to bring you out," he said as he walked back towards her.

"You asshole!" she cursed him as she wiped off her tears.

"I never expected that a girl like you would start crying. Anyway, let's get you out," he said as he inserted his hand inside the barrier.

"Hold my hand. You should be able to leave as long as you're holding my hand," Long Chen told her.

Chu Miao walked up to him and caught his hand. Long Chen pulled her towards him, and she came out of the barrier.

"Thank you," Chu Miao said as she hugged Long Chen.

Her chest pressed against Long Chen's chest as she embraced him tightly.

After five minutes, she freed him.

"How did you know that it was the trick of coming out?" she inquired.

"When I left the barrier, I tried putting my hand inside, but I didn't feel shock, you know why? The barrier thinks that you're outside as long as you have a part of your body touching outside. You touched me, and I was touching the ground on the outside. The barrier didn't stop you from leaving. That's how this barrier was made. It was for beasts, not humans who will help each other," Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"Whatever the reason, I can only thank you. I can't even imagine spending the rest of my life inside that barrier," she let out with a wry smile on her face as she looked towards the barrier.

"It wouldn't be that bad. The Qi here is quite dense. You can cultivate here for decades with ease," Long Chen said.

"I don't want that. I'm more than happy to cultivate in the Dark Soul Sect. I don't want to be a trapped cultivator who can't even use her cultivation for anything other than punching trees in frustration all day," Chu Miao said.

"True. Also, the fact that those who stayed inside were never found again when the Sect appeared after years. It's tough to survive here after the sect disappears," Long Chen said to her.

"Anyway, let's move forward. We should be getting somewhere. I see something up ahead," Long Chen let out as he started walking ahead. Chu Miao followed after him.

Chapter 401 - 401: Heaven Divination

Long Chen and Chu Miao had come out of the barrier, and after walking for only a short time, they found themselves at a steep downward slope that kept going down for several kilometers.

There was something at the distance that was visible, but it wasn't clear what it was as most of it was hidden behind the trees, but they did see what seemed like a stone.

"Be careful and don't fall," Long Chen warned Chu Miao as he started going down the slope.

Chu Miao followed suit and went down as well. The slope was so steep that they were having difficulty keeping their grip on the ground, and Chu Miao barely escaped falling down a few times.

After two hours, Long Chen got to the end of the slope and stepped his foot on the plane ground.

He looked back and saw Chu Miao still coming down. After a few minutes, she managed to catch up to him as well.

They continued ahead and advanced towards the thing which they saw from the top.

Long Chen had the general idea of the direction. So even though they could not see it now because of the tall trees, they knew where they needed to go.

After another 20 minutes, they reached the place that they wanted to reach.

They had guessed that they might see a small tower or something, but they saw a giant statue of an old-looking man there. It was the biggest statue that Long Chen had seen till now. The Statue was so tall that he didn't even get to the knees of the statue.

The Man in the statue looked like he was around 70-80 years old. He had long hair that came down to his waist freely.

The statue had something in both of its hands.

In his right hand, it was holding what seemed like a stone replica of the crystal orb that Long Chen saw in the wooden hut some time ago.

In his right hand, the statue was holding a stone book. Long Chen understood that it must be a stone replica of something real as well.

He walked closer to the statue as he saw something written on the cover of the stone book.

"Ancient Heaven Divination Technique," he read the title.

"Sounds like a future prediction book," Long Chen muttered as he read the name of the book.

Chu Miao heard the name and pulled out the list that Long Chen had given her to hold. It contained the list of items that they had to get.

"It's right here! The book of Ancient Heaven Divination Technique. It's at number 2 in importance, so it must really be important," Chu Miao told Long Chen as she tried to show him the list.

"I remember that. I've read the list; I wouldn't forget the items. It's not the Book of Ancient Heaven Divination Technique, though. It's a stone replica that is made to match the guy in the statue. If the real book is still in the sect, then we might find it later if we're lucky," Long Chen said, smilingly.

Back in a faraway place, a man was walking in the desert. The mask half covered his face, and he also wore a cloak.

A young boy was walking behind him.

The masked man suddenly took out his book and started looking inside.

"Interesting. The stars are changing," he muttered before he closed the book and put it back.

He started looking towards the sky and started muttering something as if he was talking to himself.

"The light is starting another cycle of its endless turmoil in its imprisonment, whereas the darkness is still in its infant phase down here. Some really interesting times are ahead. I wonder if the light will be free before the darkness swallows the whole world or if it's in the destiny of light to stay imprisoned,"

Long Chen walked around the statue as he observed it as if he was trying to see if there was something unique about it.

"What are you doing? Shouldn't we go further? Is there something wrong?" Chu Miao asked as she watched Long Chen circle the statue.

"Did you notice one thing? This statue is not straight. It's somewhat tilted," Long Chen told her.

"Now that you mention it, I do see it, but it's only a minor tilt. I think it's pretty normal," she said.

"It would be normal if we hadn't seen those thousands of statues that were perfectly straight. A sect that put so much attention to the alignment and position of those statues shouldn't screw up like this, especially when it's the status of one of the most important people of their sect," Long Chen explained.

"How do you know it's the statue of someone that great? It might be an elder or something like that," She inquired.

"The person that holds the Ancient Heaven Divination Technique can't be someone simple. Also, his statue is the largest we have seen. No statue was even close to this height," Long Chen responded.

"Alright. I understand that he must be someone great, but is there still a need to spend so much time here? As you said, this statue is the biggest, and it's quite possible that it got tilted with time because of its large size," Chu Miao said.

"That shouldn't be it," Long Chen muttered as he continued looking, but he found nothing strange in the statue.

"Is there really nothing strange about it?" he muttered as he fell in deep thought.

Suddenly, his gaze fell over the feet of the statue. The statue was tilting toward the left.

"That might be it," he muttered as he walked towards the right leg of the statue.

He caught the feet of the statue and raised it.

Even though he should've been able to raise the statue of this size with ease, it was much heavier somehow. He had to use all his strength just to raise it's right feet a little. He even used his Demon Monarch Physique.

"Hurry. Look if there's something under the leg," Long Chen told Chu Miao as he kept the statue raised higher. His muscles were bulging because of the effort he was putting into keeping it raised up.

Chu Miao ran to him and got down on her knees as she started looking under the feet of the statue.

"There is something," she said as she extended her hand there and took something out.

"Is there something else?" Long Chen asked her.

"No," She replied.

Long Chen released the legs of the statue, which got back to its original position.

"Yup. Now it looks straight," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the statue while standing up.

"It's what I found," Chu Miao muttered as she gave something to Long Chen.

It was a small, square metallic plate that was the size of a book. There was a pattern drawn on it with various intersecting energy lines on it.

"It seems like a formation plate," Long Chen muttered.

"I can still feel the energy in it. It should still be able to work," Long Chen muttered.

"How about you try using it? Let's see how it works," Chu Miao suggested.

"No. I still need to study it more before using it. It might be a killer formation, after all. You will die if it is a killer formation, and I use it," Long Chen told her as he put the formation plate in his storage ring.

"It shouldn't be a killer formation, though. From what I heard, even though the Divine Heaven Sect was powerful, they were known for not using formations that could kill. Their strength wasn't dependent on formations like that," Chu Miao told Long Chen.

"You only know what you heard from the world, and the world only knows whatever rumor escaped the walls of the Divine Heaven Sect. No one can be sure about what they didn't use," Long Chen told her.

Chapter 402 - 402: Treasure Hall?

"That's possible, but..."

"No buts. I'll show you what it does in the future. This is not the place to be taking the risk," Long Chen said to her in a calm tone.

"Also, before you ask, I'll tell you, if this formation is bad and we are injured or trapped, it would be much worse than being trapped in the forest. There's no need to be that eager," he added.

"Alright," Chu Miao nodded her head with an understanding look on her face.

"Let's continue. We still haven't found their treasure hall or their Skill Hall. No benefit in wasting time," Long Chen said as he started walking ahead. Chu Miao ran after him.

They walked for over 24 hours without seeing anything.

Chu Miao abruptly dropped to her knees midway. She looked exhausted

"I can't take it for longer. It has been days since we entered this place, and I haven't rested properly. Can we rest for at least a few hours?" Chu Miao said to Long Chen.

"Alright. Let's rest here," Long Chen muttered as he walked to a tree and sat under its shade.

Chu Miao stood up and walked to him. She sat beside him.

"Just how big was the Divine Heaven sect? We would have covered our Dark Soul Sect so many times if we walked this much, and somehow it feels like we aren't even halfway through the Divine Heaven Sect," Chu Miao complained.

Long Chen looked towards her.

"I can understand what you mean. This place is really too big. To be able to establish such a big sect and maintain its sovereignty at that time must be tough, but the Divine Heaven Sect clearly handled it well from what I heard," Long Chen said.

"Which is even strange considering how they were wiped out like this. The enemy must be someone really frightening," Chu Miao said.

"Or maybe they left and abandoned the sect for some reason. Whatever happened, it changed the history of this continent," she added.

Long Chen brought the formation plate out of his storage ring and started observing it, whereas Chu Miao fell asleep as she was already sleepy because of not sleeping for long.

'Do you understand anything about it?' Long Chen asked Xun.

"I've seen a few formation plates when I was with Tian Shen, but nothing like that one. Its energy lines don't match the ones that I have seen. After seeing the energy lines, I can also guess that it contains less power compared to the ones I saw, which makes sense as the ones I saw were from higher realms,' She replied.

"It sucks that I don't know anything about formation and formation plates," He muttered in disappointment as he put the formation plate back in his storage ring.

"Don't worry; it's never too late to start learning. There should be many places that teach formations," Xun said.

"I don't have time to waste there, but maybe when I'm free in the future," Long Chen replied.

He also closed his eyes and took a small nap. Just like others, he hadn't slept in a while, either. He decided to sleep for a few hours now that he had time.

Seven hours passed away, and both of them were still sleeping.

After 8 hours passed away, Chu Miao woke up.

"I'm sorry, I fell asleep. Let's continue," she said as she stood up, but she was surprised as she saw Long Chen sleeping.

"You were tired as well, weren't you? You just didn't show it," She chuckled as she sat down again.

She didn't try to wake Long Chen up and just waited on the side.

Two more hours passed away before Long Chen woke up. He stretched his arms as he yawned.

"That felt good," he muttered.

"Oh, you're up. Let's go," Long Chen told Chu Miao, who nodded her head.

They both continued ahead.

Manxiang Li and his team were the only ones that were still alive in the Divine Heaven Sect other than Long Chen and Chu Miao after Long Chen slaughtered everyone.

He knew that he wouldn't argue with Long Chen to distribute the treasures if they found it. He knew that he would just let Long Chen keep it, that's why Manxiang Li had decided to walk a different path.

They also had some lucky encounters along the way and found some rare fruits that were highly beneficial to them.

Even though the benefits were excellent, they suffered some losses as well.

Manxiang Li's team only had four people remaining, including Manxiang Li, when they separated from Long Chen. Still, after finding the fruits and smiling at their luck, they walked into a trap formation unknowingly.

Amongst those four people, 2 of them were killed in that trap.

Now the team of Devil Worshipping Sect also had only two people remaining. They were Manxiang Li and a female disciple, Lin Mina.

The deaths had made them realize how ignorant they were. They understood that there are traps in the sect, which can cause their deaths if they are not careful.

Manxiang Li had ordered Lin Mina to stay closer to him all the time.

Outside the Divine Heaven Sect, all the Elders were sitting on a mat, waiting for the disciples to come out.

"It's been five days already. Only nine days are left. I'm sure that half the disciples that entered should be dead by now. Most of them should be of Dark Soul Sect this time though." the Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect said with a smirk on her face.

Mi Yao didn't react to her provocation and just looked towards the sect.

Long Chen and Chu Miao walked for 7 hours before they had to stop again.

There was a lake in front of them that blocked their path.

"You know how to swim, right?" Long Chen asked Chu Miao.

"Yes," Chu Miao said as she nodded her head.

"Good. Because we need to cross the river," Long Chen muttered as he jumped into the river. The flow of the river was slow, so it wasn't difficult for Long Chen to swim in it.

The river was 1000 meters wide, though, which took him some time to cross it.

Long Chen walked out of the other side of the river. He looked back and saw Chu Miao in the middle of the river. Her speed was much slower, so she took twice the time Long Chen took.

She stepped out of the river as well.

Her clothes were wet and embracing her body as tightly as they could, which highlighted her figure perfectly.

"Wait a minute. I'll be right back," Chu Miao told Long Chen as she walked away from him. Long Chen lost her view ultimately.

Two minutes passed, but she didn't come back.

"Where is she?" Long Chen frowned as he spread his divine sense to find her, but he immediately stopped it when he found her. He saw her without clothes. Her wet clothes were lying on the ground, and she was about to wear the dry clothes

"I should've guessed that she went to change clothes. I should do it too," Long Chen muttered as he started changing his clothes as well.

Chu Miao came back, and Long Chen had also changed his clothes by then.

"Sorry for taking longer," Chu Miao apologized.

"It's alright. These things take time," Long Chen muttered.

They left the place and walked ahead in search of treasures that they wanted.

After only 2 hours, they got to a place. It was a giant building that was two times bigger than the biggest building he had seen in the sect.

"That should be an important place. Most probably their Treasure Hall," Long Chen said, smilingly as he walked towards the building.

Chapter 403 - 403: The Tower

The place before them was a cylindrical tower that had a diameter of around 600 meters, and its height was 900 meters.

The place had no windows or other openings in the tower other than a big gate that was facing Long Chen at the moment.

He trod towards the tower slowly, whereas Chu Miao followed him.

As he got near the tower, he noticed that the gravity had changed. It felt similar to how he felt when he stepped on the stairs. The only difference was that he wasn't on any stairs now, and the pressure was much weaker than it had been on the first step.

"Be careful. The gravity starts changing from here," He told Chu Miao. Even though he didn't feel any severe effects because of the gravity change, he knew that he and Chu Miao were much different.

Even though Chu Miao was one of the strongest disciples of the Dark Soul Sect, she was nowhere near him when it came to strength. She was weaker in physical strength and cultivational strength as well.

His thoughts turned out to be accurate as Chu Miao's face turned red because of the gravity when she stepped in the vicinity of the tower.

"I'm fine," she said.

"Good. Only move forward when you think you're ready. There's no reason to force it. This ground is something like those stairs. The gravity keeps changing the closer you get to the tower, so give up when you think you can't take it," Long Chen told her.

"I will," Chu Miao said.

"Good,"

Long Chen faced the tower and started walking towards it. The gravity kept intensifying, but he had already experienced the stairs, and his body had adjusted to the gravity of the 60th step of those stairs, so he didn't have much difficulty.

He got to the door of the tower, and the gravity returned back to normal.

"The strongest gravity here is only equivalent to the 50th step on those stairs, but she can't bear it," he muttered as he watched Chu Miao who had given up. She knew that she was weak and gave up when she couldn't take it anymore.

"Are you fine?" Long Chen asked her as he saw her lying on the ground, breathing heavily.

"I'm fine. I can't get there. You go on ahead, I'll wait for you," Chu Miao told Long Chen.

"Alright. I should be back soon," Long Chen said to her before he turned back.

He pushed the door open and entered the tower.

As he entered, he saw nothing but a long spiral stairway that was going upwards.

"Strange. They made such a tall building for nothing," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the stairs.

"There are so many stairs," Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face.

He stepped on the first stair and started going up.

When he stepped on the 100th staircase, he realized that he couldn't move ahead as if there was something stopping him.

He heard a voice in his ears that asked him a question.

"Tell me the most important thing a cultivator should strive for?"

Long Chen was surprised as he heard the voice, but he saw no one.

"Xun, is there another spirit here?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"No, there should be a formation here which is made in this way. Just answer the question based on what you think the answer should be," Xun replied.

"Tell me the most important thing a cultivator should strive for?" the voice asked again.

"A cultivator should always strive for strength," Long Chen replied.

He waited for a response, but he didn't get a reply from the voice

The voice didn't reply to him, and he tried stepping forward again, and this time he felt no restriction.

"Oh, so that's what it was. I can only move ahead if I answer," Long Chen muttered.

He kept going higher. He had guessed that he would get another question on the 200th step, but he didn't get any question, nor was he stopped.

He kept advancing, and on the 500th step, he was again stopped.

"Why does strength matter for a cultivator?" the voice asked him.

"Strength is the whole reason for cultivation, and cultivation is equivalent to strength. It also allows us, cultivators, to protect our family and friends," Long Chen said.

He was once more allowed to go ahead. He kept going on higher and higher.

On the thousandth step, he was again stopped as he couldn't take a step forward.

"Why do cultivators kill?" the voice asked this time.

This time, Long Chen had to think for a while as every cultivator had a different reason for killing. After thinking for a while, he came to a conclusion.

"Cultivators kill for Greed. They kill because they are greedy. They are greedy for their family's safety. Some kill because they are greedy for their reputation. They kill because someone is standing between what they want and themselves, which is also greed. Some are greedy for land while others are greedy for people of the opposite gender, and some are greedy for worldly happiness!" Long Chen said.

The voice didn't reply this time either, but he was allowed to go further.

The next question came on the 5000th step.

Once again, the voice asked a question, but it was way different compared to the last ones.

"Should a cultivator save his parents first or his kids?" the voice asked.

'That question?' Long Chen frowned. That was the toughest question that he hadn't even thought of. If his mother and his kid were in danger, who would be saved first? He fell in deep thought.

Even though Long Chen didn't have a kid, he knew that it wouldn't be an easy choice even though he didn't see the love a kid can make him have.

"Should a cultivator save his parents first or his kids?" the voice asked as Long Chen didn't reply.

"They should kill the one that is trying to harm their family first," Long Chen said. No matter how much he thought, he wasn't able to make a choice between who to save first.

The voice didn't say if he was right or wrong and allowed him to go ahead as if it was just interesting in hearing his answer and wasn't interested in the logic and the right or wrong.

Long Chen climbed 5000 more steps and got to the 10000th step before he received another question.

"Who is stronger? The Gods or the Demons?" The voice asked this time

"I know neither gods nor demons, but I know that a person's Inner Demons can cause him to fall no matter how strong they are. That's why I say Demons are stronger!" Long Chen said.

He started going higher.

"Just how many steps are here? I'm not even halfway," Long Chen let out as he looked towards the top.

He reached the 20000th step.

"You said Demons are stronger. Will you become a demon?" The voice asked him.

"I only want the strength to do what I want. If being a Demon is what's needed, then I will become a demon. We're already demons with the blood on our hands, though," Long Chen replied.

He again resumed climbing.

He got to the 50000th step. It had already been 2 hours of constant climbing the stairs.

That voice asked him another question.

"What will you choose between your life and your loved one's life?" The voice asked, but Long Chen again answered from outside the box.

"I'll choose both as they are the same. My loved one's life is my life, and my life is my loved one's life," Long Chen said.

He climbed more, but he stopped when he got to the 70000th step as he rested for a bit.

Chapter 404 - 404: We Were Wrong

"Divine Heaven Sect was crazy. Why the heck did they make so many stairs? I swear I'm going to be so pissed if I don't get anything useful when I get to the top," Long Chen muttered.

Long Chen rested for half an hour before he stood up and resumed his climb. He kept going up as fast as he could.

"Xun, You have been around for so long. You must know of great jokes from the higher world. Can you tell me some?"

He started talking to Xun as he was getting bored.

"I don't know anything like that. Tian Shen was a serious guy. No one dared to joke in front of him," Xun said.

"Oh, let me ask you a question. Who is more fun to be with? Him or me?" Long Chen asked

"You... ask some really stupid questions," Xun said.

"I'll take that as me. How about we learn some Ancient language in the meantime. It's not like we're going to get to the top anytime soon," Long Chen said.

"I can't teach you as I can't hold ink or paper to show you, but I can teach you how to speak," Xun said.

"That works for the time being," Long Chen let out with a smile on his face.

"Alright. Tell me something, and I'll tell you how it was said in Ancient Language," Xun replied.

"Alright," Long Chen said.

"Thiken," Xun replied.

"I didn't start yet," he said with a wry smile on his face.

"Si chere Xuin Wu," Xun responded again.

"That's not it," he said.

"Dis Nit Ate," Xun answered.

He couldn't help but smile. He realized that she was messing with him now.

"I love you," Long Chen said.

"Si Etes Xi," Xun replied.

"Si Etes Xi," Long Chen repeated.

"I love you," Xun translated subconsciously before she realized what had happened.

"I love you too," Long Chen laughed out loud.

"Hey, aren't you going to translate that?" Long Chen asked as he chuckled.

"You idiot. You tricked me into saying that," Xun told him.

"Really? I don't think I did anything like that. Also, why don't you come out?" Long Chen said to her.

"Hmph," Xun snorted as she stopped talking.

"Hey, don't do that. I'll die of boredom if I don't talk to anyone in this long journey," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face, but the formation stopped him.

He realized that he couldn't move ahead. He had gotten to the 100000th step.

The voice again asked him a question.

"What is more useful? Offense or Defense?"

"Of course, offense. There's no way to win if one is always on the defense," Long Chen said.

"The questions are all over the place. Why did they even make this formation? If I'm not wrong, it should serve some purpose that I don't know of," Long Chen muttered as he continued ahead.

The spiral stairs wrapped inside the wide tower in a way that made them longer than they should have been.

Long Chen kept going higher and answering questions whenever he got them and talked to Xun in the meantime, and this time, he genuinely started to learn the Ancient Language and how he could speak it.

He had so much time, and he learned many words of the Ancient Language. He was now able to make a short basic conversation in the Ancient Language.

After a long time, Long Chen got to the end of the stairs.

He was brought to a Black door.

Long Chen pushed the door open and entered it.

He found himself in a small room, and there was only one thing in front of him.

It was a set of black gloves that had red linings on them.

"The treasure hall has selected the treasure for you based on your answers and the time you took to get to the top," that voice said again.

"Oh, so that's what it was. This place doesn't have the treasures that a person can choose, but it's a place where the formation chose the weapon depending on the cultivator's answers," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards the gloves and picked them up.

He didn't know what grade they were, but they felt much more powerful than Fury, which was a Gold Grade Sword.

"That voice didn't tell me anything about these gloves. Sigh, I'm sure the disciples in the old times should be able to ask the elders about it, but there's no one in the sect anymore. I guess I'll give you a name myself. You'll be destroyers," Long Chen said as he wore the gloves.

He didn't know that the gloves which he called destroyer were called the Sea Severing Gloves.

These gloves were the strongest treasure of the Divine Heaven Sect, but the outside world didn't know about them, and that's why they didn't include them in the list that Long Chen was given.

Usually, a disciple would never have received these gloves as it required the answers to be much more specific. Long Chen had given the exact same answers.

When the formation was made, the answers for getting the Sea Severing Gloves were decided using the Ancient Heaven Divination Technique. Although the technique didn't specify the person that will get the gloves, it did show a glimpse to the Sect Master about what the answers should be.

Long Chen looked around in search of the place that had the treasures of the treasure hall, but he couldn't see anything inside the room.

There was no way to get to the treasures from here.

He left the room and searched on the floor, but there was nothing on this floor but a single room where Long Chen had received the Sea Severing Gloves.

"It doesn't look like I'll get more treasures," Long Chen muttered as he walked back to the stairs and started going down.

He got back much faster than he climbed and stepped out of the tower, but he didn't leave.

"When the Divine Heaven Sect was still fine, a disciple should be allowed to come here again to get treasures if they had permissions from higher-ups. It can't be a one-time thing. Should I try again? I'll try giving different answers this time," Long Chen muttered as he walked back inside again.

He tried stepping on the stairs, but he couldn't. He was stopped.

"I guess it doesn't work like that," Long Chen shook his head in disappointment as he turned back and stepped out of the tower.

He walked to Chu Miao, who was waiting for him near a tree at some distance from the tower.

"Was it really their Treasure Pavilion? Did you get the treasures?" Chu Miao asked.

"It should be the treasure pavilion, but we were wrong. Everyone was wrong. The treasure pavilion isn't a place that has artifacts on display for disciples to choose. It's a place that gives only one artifact to the person and that too after they climb hundreds of thousands of stairs," Long Chen told her.

"Those Gloves? Are these the one thing that was selected for you when you climbed the stairs?" Chu Miao asked him.

"Yeah. I call them destroyers," Long Chen said.

"What do they do? Do they increase your strength or Strengthen your attacks?" Chu Miao asked.

"I have no idea what these do. These are literally in the realm of the unknown, but they look cool," Long Chen said.

"Did you try punching anything?" She asked again.

"I tried everything. They don't increase my Strength or make my fist attack more powerful. I'll keep wearing them, though. Maybe I'll find out their true use one day," Long Chen said

"Should we go ahead? There should be more places that have treasures we need. We still haven't found anything from the list other than the Flute of War," She said.

Chapter 405 - 405: The Trapped Man

"The flute of war is already the 2nd ranked item on the list. We're pretty lucky to have found it already," Long Chen said to her.

'Also, it's not like I'm going to give anything to the sect even if I found the items,' he thought.

"It's not bad, but we shouldn't stop looking. There are still so many things to discover. We've barely scratched the surface of the sect," Chu Miao said to Long Chen.

"That's true, but even still, the rewards have been pretty substantial," Long Chen said as he walked further.

They got to another forest after walking for some more time.

They were in a forest at the moment, and the ground was covered from the dry leaves of the trees that fell down.

Their feet fell on the twigs and broken branches of the trees, which kept making noises the more they walked.

For the first time in a while, they heard the sound of something that was not their own.

It was the buzzing sound that was coming closer to them.

Long Chen looked to his left in curiosity and saw a group of giant bees coming towards him.

He brought Fury out of his storage ring and sent the sword to take care of the bees.

"Thunder Blade!" Long Chen muttered as he raised his hand towards the sky and made it fall in the direction of the bees.

The sky was covered in dark clouds that started roaring, and a massive thunderbolt left the deep embrace of the cloud and fell on the group of giant bees like a heavenly punishment.

The thunderbolt managed to kill most of the bees, whereas Fury killed the ones that had separated from their groups.

The spirit sword came back to him after killing all the bees.

Long Chen caught the sword.

"Good job, Fury," Long Chen muttered as he put the sword back in his storage ring.

"What happened?" Long Chen asked Chu Miao, who was looking towards him. Her face looked as if it had lost all its colors.

She raised her hand and pointed towards Long Chen.

"B-behind you!" She said.

Long Chen turned back and saw a bee that was ten times bigger than the previous bees.

It seemed to be much more powerful, as well. From what Long Chen understood, she was a Sky Realm beast.

"It should be their king or queen. It doesn't matter, though. It's going to be in the same condition as its family is in," Long Chen muttered as he brought out Fury once more.

Fury started flying towards the bee, but Long Chen didn't leave it at that.

He also used the Thunder Blade as the sky again darkened.

Long Chen teleported to the left of the giant bee.

"7 Forms of Saint Sword: 6th Form!" he muttered as he swung his sword.

A bright arc of light left his sword and moved towards the bee.

Three things were targeting the giant bee at the same time.

From the sky, the Giant Thunderbolt fell on top of its body, whereas from the front, the Spirit Sword cut off its wings.

Lastly, Long Chen's sword attack cut the bee in half.

"Amazing. You killed a sky realm beast with such ease," Chu Miao exclaimed.

"When the opponent might be stronger, it's best to overwhelm them," Long Chen muttered as he turned back and looked towards Chu Miao.

"That's a strategy, but it would not work on the opponent who is as versatile as you," She said as she chuckled.

"I don't even know if it's possible for anyone to defeat you," She added.

"That's not true. As much as I hate it, I've been defeated before?" Long Chen said as he sent the King's Sword and the Spirit sword back to his storage ring.

"Oh, really? He must have a way higher cultivation than you, I'm sure," Chu Miao let out as she shook her head.

"That's true. He had stronger cultivation, but that doesn't work as an excuse. One shouldn't be defeated no matter how strong the opponent is. Only then will the person be truly considered strong," Long Chen said.

"There's no one in the world that can remain undefeated against a person at higher realms. There are mountains beyond mountains. You should already be invincible at the same Cultivation Realm. From what I've seen, you can even defeat some of those that are in the higher cultivation realm," she said.

"Let's leave that topic. It's too broad, and I feel like we'll never get to a conclusion since you find me invincible, and I find myself trapped for not being invincible," Long Chen said as he continued walking ahead.

"It's so difficult to understand your words," she muttered as she looked at his back before she started following him.

In the Dark Soul Sect, Lang Jing was sitting in his room.

Another person was sitting in front of him, wearing a mask.

"You know how important it is, right?" the masked man said.

"I know. The person I sent will definitely achieve the target. Rest assured," Lang Jing told him.

"Good. If we're successful, then everything will change. Things will become how they should be," the masked man said.

"On the other hand, if it fails, then we won't have any other chance."

"We won't fail, Father. Everything is going according to plan so far. Now we just need that last piece to fall into place, and we will be set," Lang Jing said as he smiled.

"She still doesn't know, does she?" the masked man asked.

"She's naive. She has no idea what's going to happen. Her face would be worth seeing when everything unfolds," Lang Jing said.

The Sect Master of the Dark Soul Sect was sitting in her room. She was looking at a paper and frowning.

"This shouldn't be," she muttered as she crushed the paper and threw it towards the wall.

She looked towards the moon that was rising high in the sky from her window.

Far away in the distant horizon, there was a big island. Many people were living on that island. All of those people had high cultivation.

There was a giant black tower on the Island.

This tower was used to imprison the people, and in one of the cells of the tower, a man was sitting in darkness.

He was shirtless, and there were many wounds on his body.

Some of these were sword wounds, whereas some looked as if they were made because of being beaten by a whip.

The man had long black hair that looked ruff at the moment. Half of his face was covered because of the hairs, but if someone moved the hairs to the side and exposed the face of the man, they would have been able to see the face of a bearded man. The face seemed to contain similarities to Long Chen's face.

There was a peculiar mark on the back of the man, which wasn't visible because of the darkness.

The man had his eyes closed as he didn't seem to care about anything around him. His hands were tied together, whereas his legs were tied to the walls using a chain.

The condition of the man was proving that he had been here for a long time.

The metallic door of the cell opened with a creaking noise. The imprisoned man heard the sound of footsteps, but he didn't open his eyes.

It was a woman that had stepped inside the cell. She had beautiful blue hair, but her eyes were as dark as the abyss

"Are you still not going to cooperate with us?" the girl asked the man.

The man didn't respond and kept silent.

"You know, the higher-ups don't care if you agree or not. This is something that's going to happen, no matter what," The girl said.

Chapter 406 - 406: Ancestor

"They don't need your permission to get what they want from you, if they needed that, they would have long ago kidnapped your family and forced you to listen to them," The girl said.

The man still didn't say anything.

"You aren't going to listen, are you?" The girl muttered.

"Anyway, it's going to be the time soon. It's something that will happen if you want it or not," she said before she left.

The man finally opened his eyes and raised his gaze upwards. His eye color seemed to match Long Chen's eyes as well.

Long Chen raised his gaze and looked towards the sky. He saw a dark cloud. It was the first time he saw a natural dark cloud after he had entered the Divine Heaven Sect. Even though dark clouds appeared when he used his Thunder Blade, they were different.

Even though the wind was flowing, the cloud wasn't moving in the least as if it was stuck in its position.

Chu Miao had walked further, but she stopped and turned back.

"What happened?" she asked Long Chen.

"Did you find it's alignment wrong as well?" She chuckled as she joked around.

Long Chen didn't reply to her, and he simply looked down towards the place where the cloud's shadow was falling.

He walked to that place.

"This should be the place," he muttered as he stood at the center of the cloud's shadow.

He brought his Fury out and put it on duty to dig the ground.

His Spirit Sword started removing the soil from the ground and kept digging deeper.

Chu Miao just watched everything happen before her eyes with a curious look on her face.

After ten minutes of digging, Long Chen heard a metallic sound.

"There it is," he muttered as he stepped forth and removed some of the soil using his own hand and brought a small box out of the ground.

The box was the size of a book.

"You found a treasure? How is that so easy for you?" Chu Miao muttered as she stepped closer to Long Chen.

Long Chen opened the top of the small box and brought out the item from inside.

"A paper?" Chu Miao said with a weird look on her face.

Long Chen smiled as he put the paper in his storage ring along with the box.

"Aren't you going to read what's on that paper? I think I saw a glimpse of some words," Chu Miao asked Long Chen.

"You won't be wrong if you think that way. The paper has some words," Long Chen said.

"Really? Why didn't you read them?" She asked.

"It's not the right time yet. There will come a time for it," Long Chen muttered.

"Why do I feel like you knew about this? Is there something that we weren't told in the briefing, but you were told?" Chu Miao said.

"I'm the head disciple. What do you think?" Long Chen said as he smiled.

"I think that you knew about it and where to find it," She said.

"You might be right," Long Chen replied.

"Can you tell me what that letter is then? This curiosity is eating me up," she said.

"The letter is something that will get me to what I truly need. It's a key," Long Chen said as he put the Spirit Sword back in his storage ring.

"The letter is a key to get you to your destination? Does it have the directions to get to what you need? Oh, I get it. It should have the instructions to open some lock," she exclaimed after she thought about his words.

"Yeah, something like that," Long Chen said as he started walking ahead.

'Since I found that cloud, that thing shouldn't be far away. I wonder how Lang Jing even got this information. This information shouldn't be something that should be allowed to escape the walls of the sect,' He thought as he moved to his left.

He kept going further and ultimately got to a Black Barrier. Nothing was visible inside, and he couldn't see on the other side of it.

"Another barrier? Let's walk around it. I don't want to be trapped inside again," Chu Miao said to Long Chen.

"That's not it. It's not a place I can skip as it's my destination," Long Chen muttered as he told her.

"Your destination? You mean the one you talked about when you got that letter?" She inquired.

"Yeah. You stay outside. I'll go inside alone. You might die if you enter," He told her.

"What about you? Why are you entering if it's so dangerous?" Chu Miao asked.

"I'm stronger. I should be fine, but I won't be able to take care of you if you come as well. I'll be right back. Just wait here," he told her as he walked towards the barrier.

Long Chen stood near the barrier and brought out the paper that he had found previously.

He unfolded the paper and started reading from it.

"Heaven is divine, and the Divine is human. The Ancient is past, and the past is dead. O Merciful Lord, let this person enter to see the full glory of the Divine. Akhumba Mikaaku Xalami Sensen Kekeni," Long Chen read from the letter.

A door like opening appeared in the barrier. Long Chen stepped forward and entered the barrier.

Chu Miao thought for a while if she should let Long Chen enter alone when she saw a barrier open in front of him.

She ran towards him, but Long Chen had entered, and the barrier returned to normal.

"I hope you will be safe," She muttered as she looked towards the dark barrier.

Long Chen appeared on the other side of the barrier and found himself in a barren land.

There was no Qi in the place. Although there were trees, they were all dead.

"Exactly as described. It's scary how accurate Lang Jing's information is. This place is just as he described. Someone from the Divine Heaven Sect must've leaked this information which somehow found its way to Lang Jing and no other Sect," he muttered as he stepped forth.

He started his journey alone into the depths of that gloomy place.

Long Chen felt a mental message suddenly. The Snake Monarch was asking Long Chen to bring him out of the storage ring.

Long Chen guessed that it wouldn't work because of the sect restriction, but it worked this time.

He managed to bring out the Snake Monarch from his storage ring.

'Looks like this place don't have the restrictions of the sect,' he thought

"What were you talking about? Why are you so eager to come out," Long Chen asked the Snake Monarch.

"What is this place? Where are we?" the Snake Monarch asked.

"We are in the Divine Heaven Sect. What happened?"

"I feel my bloodline getting excited as if there's something really useful here for me here. Let me stay with you," The Snake Monarch said.

"Alright," Long Chen nodded.

He continued walking further before he saw something. It looked like the shredded skin of a giant snake.

"There it is!" The snake monarch excitedly said as it increased its speed.

"What is that?" Long Chen asked.

"It is something that belongs to my ancestor, I think. When we die, we leave our skin behind where our body turns to Qi and gets one with nature," Snake Monarch said.

"Is that thing useful for you?" Long Chen asked.

"Useful? It's super useful to me! I can absorb it, and I'll bring a Mid Sky Realm beast!" Snake Monarch said excitedly.

"Really?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"What's so shocking about it? The ancestor that was here should be a heaven realm beast. Even though the skin doesn't have any Qi, since I have the same species, I might absorb it to fasten my growth. Be happy kid, You'll be the friend of a sky realm beast!" the Snake Monarch proudly said.

Chapter 407 - 407: Growth

"A Sky Realm beast? That would be amazing and helpful," Long Chen said as he smiled.

The Snake Monarch slid over towards the skin lying over the dry leaves, amidst the cracking sound of the branches that came under his body.

"Finally, I will become the boss! When fluffy sees my Strength, she will bow down to me and beg me to become the boss! I'll become their leader," The Snake Monarch laughed out loud. Long Chen managed to hear his words and couldn't help but smile wryly.

The Snake Monarch positioned its body in such a way that it was lying over the skin on the ground.

He began the process of absorbing the skin.

The Snake Monarch's body started shining brightly as it slowly absorbed the skin and its Strength.

"I wonder how long it will take for everything to be finished," Long Chen muttered as he looked around.

"I know what this place has that Lang Jing wants, but I can't understand why the Divine Heaven Sect will have a gloomy place like this. It feels like a weird place, and there's no Qi here either. I can't cultivate either. If I use my Qi, I wouldn't be able to replenish it as long as I'm here," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards a nearby tree.

"The trees are all dead, which is understandable as this place doesn't have any Qi, but, strangely, these trees managed to grow even without the Qi. I wonder if this place was always like this, or it turned like this some time ago," Long Chen said as he touched the tree.

He could've left Snake Monarch behind and go ahead in order to explore further while it absorbed the strength, but even though he was told that there would be no beast here, he didn't leave the snake Monarch for even a second as he was still worried about its safety.

He sat near the tree and watched the Snake Monarch's process without taking his eyes off.

"A sky realm beast, the fight against Lang Jing just got a whole lot easier. As long as Lang Jing is as strong as I expect him to be, this should be an easy battle now," He muttered.

The Snake Monarch kept shining brighter and brighter as it started growing in size.

Soon, it got much bigger than Long Chen had ever seen it before. Even when the Snake Monarch fought the beast of Jichuan, he hadn't been as big.

Long Chen was unsure if it was because he was never forced to show its full size or his ability to get bigger became stronger because of its increase in Cultivation.

"If my second assumption is true, then wouldn't that mean that he would be big enough to swallow the planet if he reaches the highest realm? He even has the ancient bloodline," Long Chen muttered as he stared at the Snake Monarch.

Soon, two black wings came out of the Snake Monarch's back and started growing along with its body.

"Wings?" Long Chen muttered in surprise.

"Of course, he's going to have wings. Everyone from Ancient Snake Monarch Species develops wings when they become a sky realm beast," Xun replied to him.

"Really? So he can fly now?" Long Chen asked in surprise.

"That's a stupid question. Have you ever heard of a beast that has wings but can't fly? He should be able to fly," Xun replied.

'I saw some animal and birds like that in my previous life, but I guess there's nothing like that in this world,' he thought

After 3 hours, the Snake Monarch stopped getting bigger. It also stopped shining.

"Hahahaha, I succeeded. This King is a Sky Realm Beast now! Little Man, where are you? Come bow down to this King's glory," The Snake Monarch laughed as it looked around to find Long Chen and saw him sitting near a tree.

"Congrats on the breakthrough," Long Chen congratulated the Snake Monarch.

"That's right. Be glad that you know this king," the Snake Monarch said as it started getting smaller and got back to its tiny size.

He started sliding towards Long Chen.

"Alright. I'm going back to that place. Let me brag... I mean, show this King's power to fluffy," the Snake Monarch said.

Long Chen chuckled as he sent the Snake Monarch back to his storage ring.

He stood up and continued on his search.

The Snake Monarch entered the Beast Region and flew towards the place where the other beasts stayed.

"This King is back," he announced as he flew in front of them.

Orion stared at the Snake Monarch.

Little Snow opened her eyes and looked towards the Snake Monarch. She stood up and ran towards the Snake Monarch.

"Hehehe, You have finally seen this King's full glory, fluffy. That's right. Bow before this king. You aren't bad; this King will make you his assistant. You can handle my business-related matters and look for food for this king," the Snake Monarch said.

He was waiting for her to praise him when she jumped over the Snake Monarch and landed on his back.

"Hey, Fluffy! Get down this instant," the Snake Monarch said as he turned his head and looked at Little Snow.

"What the heck? Was your father the Sleep God? How can you sleep on this King's back? This King is not your ride," the Snake Monarch bellowed as he started shaking his body.

uwu

Little Snow whimpered as she opened her eyes in curiosity.

"What let me sleep?! I'm not your bed! This King is a Sky Realm Beast now!" the Snake Monarch said.

Little Snow made another small noise as she looked at the Snake Monarch.

"That's right. This King doesn't want you to sleep on me!" the Snake Monarch said.

Little Snow stood up and jumped down as she walked back to her tree in disappointment. She sat under the tree.

"Is this King the only one who's smart and mature here?" the Snake Monarch muttered as he looked towards the sky and sighed.

It landed on the ground and made its body smaller once more.

The Dark Horned Armored Rhino came to the Snake Monarch.

"You're the only one who's the least bit knowledgeable here. I wanted to make fluffy my assistant, but she's just a naive brat. This King will allow you the good blessing of serving me. You will be my second in command when we rule over this world!" the Snake Monarch said to the Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

Long Chen walked to the depths of this dreadful place that didn't have a shred of life. Let alone nature; even the air felt dead.

After walking for over 50 minutes, he got to a place that had a tombstone coming out of the ground.

"I never thought there would come a day when I would do something like this," Long Chen muttered with a disappointed look on his face as he walked towards the tombstone.

He caught the tombstone.

The Tombstone was pretty tall and came up to Long Chen's shoulders, but it was two times the width of Long Chen.

"I'm sorry for doing it," Long Chen muttered as he caught the tombstone and pulled it out of the ground.

Long Chen took the tombstone with him as he walked ahead.

The tombstone seemed to be as light as a feather despite its heavy-looking texture.

As Long Chen walked further, he realized that the wind was starting to get hotter.

The temperature was rising rapidly the further he went, and his clothes were covered in sweat by now.

After walking for over half an hour, Long Chen found the reason for this incredible heat right before him.

"There it is. Finally I'm there," Long Chen muttered.

Chapter 408 - 408: The Necklace

There was a river in front of him that circled around a place that looked like a temple.

The thing that made this river different was the fact that it was filled to the brim with hot molten lava.

He stepped forth and placed the Tombstone over the lava. The tombstone started floating over the lava. Long Chen stood on top of it.

The Tombstone started floating towards the temple.

The Tombstone floated over the lava and brought Long Chen to the temple.

Long Chen stepped over the land in front of the temple and brought the tombstone out of the Lava.

He held the tombstone in his hand as he looked towards the temple.

The temple seemed to be made from the same material as the tombstone. It was pitch black in color.

Long Chen stepped towards the door of the temple and pushed the door open as he entered inside.

The inside of the temple was similar to the outside. It was just as gloomy and dark. It seemed to be an empty-looking hall with nothing inside, but Long Chen knew that this was not all there was to it. He was already told about what he needed to do here.

He stepped towards the wall at the front. There was an opening in the wall that seemed to be of the same shape as the tombstone in Long Chen's hands.

He inserted the tombstone on that opening, which fit perfectly as if the tombstone was the piece of the wall that was taken.

The Wall in front of him started going downward and disappeared into the ground, exposing the thing that hid behind it.

There was a stone altar there, and a coffin-shaped necklace was lying there.

Long Chen walked to the stone altar and picked up the coffin.

"This small necklace is what Lang Jing's after. Even though he didn't tell me what this necklace does, it might be a weapon of destruction from the way he

talked about it," Long Chen muttered as he observed the small coffin shaped necklace.

"I can't feel any Qi from it, but it's giving me a strange feeling. Xun, do you know what this necklace is?" He asked Xun.

Xun appeared in front of him.

"I think I know about it, but I can be wrong," Xun let out.

"What is it?" He inquired as his curiosity peaked.

"Although we hadn't seen this necklace before, I heard a rumor about there existing a coffin-shaped necklace. This coffin-shaped necklace can keep a person or beast inside. That person can stay inside as long as they want because the time doesn't move inside the necklace. Time stays still inside," Xun explained.

"Really? If it's true, wouldn't this be an incredible item? A person can enter the necklace and cultivate for eternity," Long Chen said.

"It doesn't work like that. The time inside is still, even for the person that is kept inside it. They can't move, let alone cultivate. It's like they are in a limbo," Xun told him.

"That decreases its worth significantly, but still it's an incredible item. Lang Jing wants the necklace; it shouldn't be for no reason. Either he wants to put someone inside or bring someone outside that is already inside," Long Chen muttered with a thoughtful look on his face.

"That's what I heard about that necklace. I'm not sure if it's the same or just something that looks similar by coincidence," Xun said. "It might just be a coincidence, and I don't believe that item could find its way here. According to the rumor, it was with the ruler of the Demon Realm, so I doubt that the real one would be here." Xun said to Long Chen.

"Is there a way to test? How do I open it if it's the real thing?" Long Chen asked.

"How would I know the method to open it? I told you that I heard a few rumors about its existence. There was nothing about how it works or how one can open it," Xun said as she smiled wryly.

"So technically, we don't have a way to check if it's the real thing or not. Even if it's not what you're talking about, it should still be something important on its own," Long Chen muttered as he sent the necklace in his storage ring.

"I'll just ask Lang Jing how it works before I kill him," he added.

Long Chen was about to leave when the altar started shining. The whole temple started shaking as if it was enraged at its belongings being stolen.

He found out that the doors of the temple were closed automatically. The wall that had entered the ground appeared again and blocked his path.

"It looks like you're trapped. It must be the mechanism of the temple to prevent someone from leaving with the necklace," Xun let out softly.

"This wasn't what I was told. I think even he didn't know about it. Why would the Divine Heaven Sect do this? If they didn't want someone to take it, there was no need to place that tombstone out on the open," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

Long Chen was talking with Xun when he heard a voice from behind.

"You took something that doesn't belong to you,"

"If you don't put the thing back to its original position in 5 minutes, you will be killed,"

Long Chen turned back and found a stone statue there.

"Where did it appear from?" Long Chen muttered, but he soon got the answer to his question as he saw more stone statues coming out of the walls.

The stone statues were all different.

While some looked like humans, others were of beasts.

In no time, there were hundreds of statues that could move. Long Chen also felt cultivation from them. Most of these were Earth Realm statues where a rare few were at the Initial Sky Realm.

"Doesn't matter," Long Chen muttered as he took out his King's Sword.

He also called out the Snake Monarch and his Spirit Sword.

Orion was also called out along with Dark Horned Armored Rhino.

"Why did you call this King? I was in an important meeting with my second in command about the future of our world domination," The Snake Monarch said to Long Chen.

"I want you to destroy those statues. I thought it's better to take help than wasting my time destroying them alone. This place doesn't have any Qi; I want to save as much Qi as possible," Long Chen replied.

"You guys can replenish your Qi in the beast region, but I can't," He added.

"Isn't this a small matter? This King can alone handle them all. There's no need for others. Just sit back and watch," The Snake Monarch said. He was a 6th stage Sky Realm Beast now and didn't put these weaker statues in his eyes.

"Oh? Alright then. You guys come back and let your Junior Brother fight. He wants to do it alone," Long Chen told Orion and the Dark Horned Armored Rhino as he stepped back.

Orion and the Dark Horned Armored Rhino listened to him and stepped back, but the Snake Monarch was furious.

"You're their Junior Brother! Your whole family is their Junior Brother. This King is their leader!" the Snake Monarch let out loud.

"That's not how it works. The one that joins later is the junior brother. So technically, you're their Junior Brother, but there's no shame in it. You don't need to get offended," Long Chen chuckled.

"This King doesn't care about how it works! If you don't stop calling me their Junior Brother, this King won't fight," The Snake Monarch said furiously as he looked towards Long Chen.

Chapter 409 - 409: Gone?

"Alright, don't get offended. I won't call you that," Long Chen said as he smiled wryly.

"Hmph, that's better. This King might see Fluffy as an equal, but not others," the Snake Monarch let out.

Five minutes were over since the first statue had appeared, and the statues started moving.

"You statues want to go against this King? It would be a different matter if you were statues of someone as beautiful as this King, but despite being ugly statues, you want to fight me?" the Snake Monarch bellowed as it increased in size.

The Statues brought their stone swords and got ready to attack, but they stopped. It was as if they were stopped in time.

"I remember that attack. He used it on me the moment I met him to escape. It felt like a force was preventing me from moving. If I didn't have my Space Law, I don't think I would have been able to catch him," Long Chen muttered as he saw the attack of Snake Monarch.

As the statues stopped moving, things became a whole lot easier for the Snake Monarch, who crushed the statue under its massive body.

The Snake Monarch came back after a few minutes without a single wound on its body.

"You are getting worried for no reason. See how easy it was for this King? This King fought the Emperor's of heaven themselves, what are a few statues," the Snake Monarch said proudly.

"It was a good fight. You can go back now," Long Chen said. He was about to send them back when he saw the pieces of broken statues moving.

They moved towards each other and started joining together.

The hundreds of Statues combined into 3 Giant Statues that were multiple times bigger than last time.

"The battle isn't over yet. They look like 4th Stage Sky Realm Statues this time," Long Chen muttered.

"So what if those scrap stones are 4th stage? Did you forget the cultivation of this handsome beast before you?" The Snake Monarch inquired.

"I know that you're in the 6th stage, but you shouldn't underestimate anyone. Treat everyone as an equal when you fight, and you'll succeed, as soon as you start underestimating someone, your chances of loss increases," Long Chen told the Snake Monarch.

"Stay here and watch how this king handles them," The Snake Monarch said.

Even though Long Chen was confident in Snake Monarch's strength, he still sent his Spirit Sword Fury to help him out.

The battle this time also finished just as fast as last time.

Even though the statues were stronger than last time, they still couldn't move after the Snake Monarch used its unique skill on them.

"That skill, it's so powerful," Long Chen let out as he saw the Snake Monarch destroy the statues.

"Of Course, this skill is amazing. The Snake Monarchs are known for this ability. It's what makes them a force to be reckoned with," Xun appeared beside Long Chen and said.

"Wouldn't that make the Snake Monarch's invincible? Unless someone had something that could counter their skills, they would have no chance of winning a battle against them," Long Chen muttered.

"That's what it seems like, but it's not without its limitations," Xun said.

"This skill has limitations, as well?" Long Chen asked.

"Of course it does. There are only a few things in this world that are truly powerful without any limitations. Everything else has a limitation in some way," She told him.

"What are its limitations?" Long Chen inquired.

"There are a few important ones like their skill don't work as effectively on the ones that have a stronger cultivation than them. The skill will cause the opponent to pause in their position as well, but the duration is often unstable. If a cultivator has stronger Cultivation than the Snake Monarch and he is affected by the skill, he might be able to escape the effects of that skill in a second if he's lucky, and if he's unlucky, the skill might keep him stuck for longer," Xun explained.

"So this skill works based on luck if the opponent has higher cultivation. That's not bad. Most crowd control skills aren't even worth it to those with higher Cultivation, this one at least works," Long Chen let out as he thought about it.

"That's not all there is to it. Another limitation of this skill is that if it's used on a person once, it can't be used on that same person again, even if that person has weaker cultivation," she added.

"Oh? That one is bad. I thought that if the stronger cultivator broke the skill, we could cast this again, but the second limitation changes everything. It's still a decent skill though and pretty dangerous if used properly," Long Chen let out with a frown on his face.

"See? I told you that this wasn't difficult. The battle was easy," Snake Monarch came back and told Long Chen.

"Yeah, You were great," Long Chen complimented the Snake Monarch.

He turned back as he heard the noise from the back. He saw the wall go inside the ground, and the door was also opened.

"Looks like it's over. You guys can go back," he let out as he sent the beasts back to the Beast Region in his storage ring.

He stood up and stepped out of the hall. The Wall again returned to its original condition. Long Chen pulled out the tombstone and left the temple

He crossed the river with the help of the tombstone. As he stepped on the other side of the lava river, he sent the tombstone back in his storage ring.

He again called Orion outside and got on top of it. Because of Orion, Long Chen's speed was much faster. In about no time, he got back to the black barrier. He sent Orion back.

"Heaven is divine, and the Divine is human. The Ancient is past, and the past is dead. O Merciful Lord, let this person leave as it has seen the full glory of the Divine. Akhumba Mikaaku Xalami Sensen Kekeni," Long Chen repeated the words from the letter. A door shaped opening appeared in the barrier, allowing Long Chen to step outside.

As he left the barrier, he was expecting Chu Miao to be there, but no matter how much he looked, she couldn't be found.

He even used his Divine Sense to search his surroundings, but he didn't see her.

"Chu Miao! Where are you!" he called out loud as he walked around like a lost kid trying to find someone.

"Chu Miao!" he kept calling her name as he moved forth, but he didn't see her.

"He searched around the whole surrounding area but didn't see her

"Where is she? Did she leave," he muttered as he walked back to the barrier.

"Sigh, I guess she did decide to go ahead without me. Hopefully, I'll find her," He let out. He resumed his journey as he started walking ahead, leaving the barrier behind.

As Long Chen left that place, a shadow appeared behind him and disappeared.

"There is only a week left, but I've already hit the target. I hope I find their skill hall on time. The skills are what I'm truly after. The skills should be overpowered," Long Chen muttered as he kept going forth.

He even increased his speed somewhat as he was hoping to catch up to Chu Miao, who he thought was ahead.

"The heck?" He exclaimed in shock as he stood at the dead end.

It was standing at the end of a cliff. There was nothing ahead. He looked down the cliff, but all he saw was what seemed to be a sea at 50000 meters depth.

"This shouldn't be the dead end. The Dead End should be the outer walls of the sect; if it were, I should be able to see the walls," Long Chen muttered with a frown on his face.

Chapter 410 - 410: Walking In Air

"Is this place really the dead-end? This shouldn't be. There should be something that I'm not seeing. Why would they have a sea in their sect, That too at such depths,"

"I've walked so much, yet I never felt the ground level rise, so why would the water be so low with no ground around it? This doesn't make sense," he muttered.

Long Chen started looking around and found a small stone lying on the ground.

He picked up the stone and threw it at the down the cliff, but his frown deepened as he saw the stone floating in mid-air instead of falling down.

He threw another stone, but it also floated in mid-air, on the same level as the other stone.

"This is weird," he muttered. "Is this an invisible ground?"

He carefully tried using his feet to try it, and it was indeed ground that was invisible. He carefully took a step forth, and he was also standing mid-air, but that's what it felt like.

Long Chen knew that he was standing on the solid ground that was invisible below his feet.

"I didn't expect this, but they even managed to achieve this," he muttered with a wry smile on his face as he stepped forth.

He started walking ahead, but he had to carefully check if there was indeed ground ahead or not, for each step. It slowed down his speed significantly and, on occasions, even annoyed him as he found that some spots were indeed traps that didn't have ground there.

He looked down and saw water at the depths. A heavy wind was flowing in his direction, which made his long hair flow with the wind.

He kept walking on this tricky land, and another day passed away, but the end wasn't at sight.

He had come so far that he couldn't even see the land where he came from, and there was nothing visible on the front either.

He found himself in the middle of nowhere. After resting for half an hour, he continued on his journey.

He walked for half a day before he had to stop.

No matter where he checked, there was no ground ahead.

"This is stupid! Wasted so much time on this trip for there to be a dead-end after a trick dead end," Long Chen said in annoyance.

"Wait a minute. How come I never thought of using Fury like that," he muttered as he hit his head.

He brought Fury out of his storage ring, which flew around him.

He climbed on top of fury. Fury flew further and, as a result, carried Long Chen with it as well.

"It's a flying sword that can fly around me, so of course I should be able to fly on it. So much time would have been saved if I had thought of it before," he let out with a wry smile on his face.

Long Chen increased the speed of his Spirit Sword as he stood tall on it like a heavenly immortal who was above life and death. After half an hour, he finally saw something upfront.

There was an island that seemed to be floating in the air, but Long Chen felt as if it was just that the ground around it was invisible and not that it was floating.

There was nothing on this island except the single tower at the exact center of it.

He landed on top of that island and walked to the tower upfront.

Long Chen pushed the big doors of the tower. The creaking noise of the door was evidence, proving that the door hadn't been opened for a long time.

As he entered, the first things he saw were stairs and a beast standing before it.

It was a Snow Disaster Wolf that was said to have gone extinct. When these weren't extinct, the Snow Disaster Wolf was considered to be at the same level as the Devil Hunter Beast in terms of the rarity, Strength, and usefulness.

"You're not alive, are you?" Long Chen muttered as he frowned.

'I can't see any life force on it. It should be a puppet,' Long Chen thought, but the Snow Disaster Wolf attacked him.

The Spirit Sword came in front of Long Chen and stopped the attack of the Snow Disaster Wolf.

This small moment was enough for Long Chen to bring out his King's Sword.

The Snow Disaster Wolf jumped back, but Long Chen teleported right above it's back as he thrust his sword down.

The King's Sword penetrated the skull of the Snow Disaster Wolf.

Long Chen pulled the sword out instantly and sliced it's head off.

"If you were a real Snow Disaster Wolf, defeating you wouldn't have been so easy to kill, but you're just a corpse puppet. Your senses can never be as sharp as Orion or the Snow Disaster Wolf that is often compared to the Devil Hunter Beasts," Long Chen said as he landed on the ground.

He put the body of the Snow Disaster Wolf in his storage ring before he stepped on the stairs and went to the first floor of the tower.

The first floor of the tower had no beast, but it had writings on the wall.

Fortunately, it wasn't the Ancient Language; thus, Long Chen was able to read it.

"Isn't that a method to cultivate a skill?" Long Chen muttered as he read the first two lines on the wall.

"Doppelganger Effect. I should be able to use it to form a body double and give him half my soul, but I don't want to split my soul," He let out as he shook his head.

"That's right. Don't cultivate that skill. There are a few skills in this world that have the same effect, and you won't have to split your soul. Don't follow this skill's method as you would only affect your future prospects negatively," Xun informed him.

"I wasn't planning to cultivate it. It's not like I need another me going around if it's at the cost of half my soul," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

He ignored the writing on the wall and went to the second floor.

The second floor also had a beast, but there was a box behind that beast.

This time, it was the Mountain Swallowing Snake. It was said to be a snake that was capable of eating a mountain entirely, but it had also gone extinct.

"Another Corpse puppet of an extinct beast. My respect for the Divine Heaven Sect is going down watching them use Corpse puppets of these beasts. They were such a powerful sect, yet they dabbled in the shady practices of making Corpse Puppets. Truly Disappointing," he muttered.

The Mountain Swallowing Snake fired its poison arrow from its mouth to poison Long Chen and paralyze him, but Long Chen used teleport and dodged the arrow.

He appeared above the Mountain Swallowing Snake and swung his sword as it cut off its head.

"Again, the same thing. It's just not equal to the real deal," Long Chen muttered as he got off the bodies and put it in his storage ring.

He looked back towards the small box lying on the ground and walked towards it.

He opened the box and found a small golden key inside.

"A key? It might come in handy on the upper levels. It shouldn't be left here for no reason," he muttered as he climbed the stairs and walked to the next floor, and there was indeed another box there.

He walked to the small box and located its keyhole.

He inserted the key he found on the second floor and opened the box.

"Are they for real?" Xun exclaimed as she saw inside the box with a Long Chen

Chapter 411 - 411: The Reward

"Looks like the real deal," Long Chen muttered as he brought the thing out of the box.

"Isn't this a good thing? Who knows, We might use this on our private time in the future," Long Chen chuckled as he put his hands over Xun's head

"Cheh, throw that book away. You don't need that," Xun said.

"Come on. Don't be so quick to judge if it's good or bad. Who knows, it might be different. Let me read the content, only then can we know if it's what we're thinking, or different," Long Chen chuckled as he looked at the book in his hand.

The book had the title carved outside in bold letters, "Pure Dual Cultivation Technique."

Long Chen opened the book cover and looked inside as he started reading the content. His expressions kept changing the more he read.

"Incredible. It's so amazing," Long Chen exclaimed in surprise.

"Xun, It is indeed a Dual Cultivation Technique, but it's not a bad one. Generally, a Dual Cultivation Technique steals the Qi, Life Force, or Yin Yang Energy from the other partner, which benefits one and harms others, but this one is different. It does not work like that," Long Chen said.

"How does it work then?" Xun inquired.

"This one is different. Instead of harming one to benefit others, it benefits both parties involved. Their bodies absorb Qi much faster when they are doing dual cultivation. In a sense, it means that both of their Cultivation speed is joined during intercourse, and thus they are benefitted. Of course, the one that has the weaker cultivation and less Talent will benefit more, but the difference shouldn't be much," Long Chen said.

"That's somewhat better, but it doesn't change the fact that you'll have to do that to perform this skill," Xun let out.

"Do what?" Long Chen asked with a curious look on his face.

"Of Course, I'm talking about making love!" Xun let out loud.

"Is there something wrong with that? It just means that even our private time can be used for the betterment of our Cultivation. Isn't that right? Also, don't think that it's a bad thing. When you get a real body, you'll have 0 Cultivation most probably. You'll get the most benefits when I make love to you," Long Chen laughed out loud as he said.

"Puh, I'm never going to do that with you," Xun snorted as she turned back.

Long Chen extended his hand and caught her hand. He pulled her closer to him and took her in his embrace.

"Are you serious?" he asked as he whispered in her ear.

"I-i... " Xun struggled to answer as her mind went blank from the sudden embrace.

She was still in a daze when Long Chen kissed her sweet lips.

"You!" Xun pushed him back before she disappeared.

"I know you don't hate it," Long Chen muttered as he chuckled lightly.

He put the Pure Dual Cultivation Book in his storage ring before stepping on the stairs to go to the 4th floor.

He got to the 4th floor, but he found it entirely empty.

He looked around, but there was nothing here. The floor was empty, and the walls had no writing either.

He walked towards the stairs on the other side of the floor, but as soon as he got to the center of the floor, he felt some vibrations. He felt danger.

Woosh

He heard many sounds like this, and without waiting, he teleported to the lower floor.

As he had already seen the 3rd floor and it was within his 200 meters range, he was able to teleport there.

Long Chen appeared on the 3rd floor. Although he had teleported instantly, he still wasn't fast enough to remain untouchable, and an arrow had penetrated his hand and was still stuck there.

His hand was bleeding, and he was feeling the pain. His hand had stopped moving. He was able to move a little bit, but every movement came with extreme pain.

He looked towards the arrow that had penetrated his left hand in full seriousness.

He caught the arrow with his hand and broke it from one side before pulling the other side out of his arm. He felt pain, but he didn't make a noise.

A hole was left behind in his hand as soon as the arrow came outside, and the bleeding had increased with the flow of blood.

Long Chen brought a black pill out of his storage ring and ate it instantly. The pill started showing its effects, and bleeding soon stopped.

The wound started healing, visible to the naked eye, and soon, it was perfectly healed, and not even a mark was left behind on his arm.

"That was an unexpected attack. I made a mistake. I should've stayed alert. Even though the room looked empty, it wasn't. It must be a trap room," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the stairs with a grave look on his face.

He again started climbing and went to the 4th floor. As soon as he got there, a wry smile appeared on his face.

He saw over a thousand arrows lying on the ground, which had most probably managed to miss him because he teleported in time.

"This was a scary trap. If I hadn't teleported on time, I would've been killed without a doubt," Long Chen sighed as he looked at the ground that was filled with arrows. Even more, arrows were stuck on the walls, which showed their incredible powers.

He again walked to the other side. He was sure that the trap was only for the first time and wouldn't work now, but still, he stayed alert.

He safely got to the other side of the room and stepped on the stairs.

He got to the 5th floor, but the 5th floor seemed to be the same as the 4th floor. It had nothing there either.

Long Chen frowned as he tried to observe the walls.

He brought a body out of his storage ring and threw it at the center of the room.

As soon as the body touched the ground, he heard a noise which was different from the sound of the body falling to the ground.

He looked towards the sky and saw a portion of the roof disappear.

A box fell down on the ground.

Long Chen frowned as he stepped towards the box carefully.

He slowly opened the box while he kept himself ready to dodge at a moment's notice.

As soon as the box opened, a weird look appeared on his face. There seemed to be a small pill inside the box that seemed like a 'Life-Giving Pill'.

"Not a bad harvest," Long Chen smiled as he put the pill in his storage ring.

"I guess this was the trick. If the person survived the trap of the 4th floor, he would definitely not walk on the ground of the 5th floor, thinking that it would have the same trap. And if he didn't walk here, he would miss out on the chance of getting this pill. Either it was indeed planned, or I'm thinking too much," Long Chen muttered as he stepped towards the stairs on the front.

He stepped on the stairs and started climbing towards the 6th floor, but as he reached the middle of the stairs, he was shocked as the stairs disappeared, and he fell back to the 4th floor.

"This is getting annoying. They're tricking me," Long Chen muttered as he climbed to the 5th floor and started going up the stairs towards the 6th floor, but he didn't step on the stairs that had caused the trap to activate.

He skipped the stair and went to the next stair, and nothing happened. He easily went to the 6th floor without any trouble.

Chapter 412 - 412: King Versus King

The 6th floor finally had something different than the last two floors.

It wasn't empty, to say the least; instead, it was filled. There were thousands of insects wriggling on the ground here and there, and the scary thing was that all these insects were known to be the most poisonous insects in the world.

Even though they were just the corpse puppets, their poison was still as effective.

The whole floor was covered with them, and there was no place to step.

The stairs were 400 meters away from him so that he couldn't teleport there either.

"I would've had trouble with this before, but not anymore. I literally have a flying sword," Long Chen muttered, smilingly. He brought out his Spirit Sword from his storage ring and stood on top of it.

The sword flew above the insects wriggling on the ground and brought Long Chen to the stairs at the other end. He didn't get off on the stairs and flew higher on the sword as he went to the 7th floor.

The 7th floor again changed things. Long Chen could feel that the air here was different. It has something that was causing him to feel sleepy.

He stopped his breath as the Spirit Sword raced to the other side of the room.

He had also closed his eyes, and he was also covering his mouth to stop his breathing.

If he hadn't done that, he would've fallen asleep, and he would have stayed asleep for eternity. Also, the sleeping gas was only denser at the center, which didn't work on him as he maintained the safety from the start.

Long Chen only used his Divine Sense to look around and to control the direction of the sword, which worked perfectly and showed him the way.

The Spirit Sword brought him to the 8th floor.

Long Chen opened his eyes. He was still a little sleepy, but it was manageable. Fortunately, he had taken action at the right time.

Long Chen opened his eyes and looked around the room.

"I don't get it? What exactly is this tower? Is this a reward tower, a punishment tower, or a training ground?" Long Chen muttered as he got down from the sword.

He saw around 20 humanoid puppets in front of him.

He stepped forth as he brought his King's Sword out of his storage ring. He was ready for the battle, but even as he got there, he didn't see them move.

With a confused look on his face, he walked past them and reached the stairs, but the puppets didn't move.

"Are they broken?" Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face, but he ignored them as he started stepping up.

He got to the 9th floor, and it once again managed to stun him.

The room was less like a room and more like a chess field.

There was a Chess-like design made on the ground. It had six boxes in an 8x8 format.

Sixteen puppets were standing on the other side of the room, and 15 of them were standing on his side of the room. The King's position was still empty on his side.

"I thought about it before when we were fighting for the flute, but the ground did seem like a chessboard, and this confirms it entirely. The Divine Heaven Sect knew about Chess," Long Chen muttered. "That's why they have the same thing here."

He stepped further and passed by the puppet, but no matter what he did, he wasn't able to step on the 3rd row of the squares on the ground.

No matter what he did, he couldn't step forth.

"It's similar to how I was stopped on the stairs in the treasure hall and could only move forward when I answered. I guess I need to play by their rules here as well," He muttered. "They must want me to play the game and act as the king of the black side."

He walked to the empty square that was supposed to be the king's position on the black side.

The puppet at the front row seemed to be warriors that had a sword in their hands.

The Queen's were female puppets that wore Royal looking clothes.

The Bishops had fat puppets instead that seemed like the rich ministers in a Royal Palace.

A wolf-like beast puppet occupied the knight position.

The Rook Position was occupied by the puppet that seemed to be made from the body of the Heaven Shaking Elephant.

The King on the white side wore a kingly robe and had a white beard on his face. His head had a crown that was studded with jewels.

As soon as Long Chen got on his spot, the Pawn from the other side took a step forward.

"You! Move forward!" Long Chen commanded the puppet that stood in front of the Queen.

The White King sent another Pawn forward. Long Chen followed suit and sent a pawn ahead as well. This time, he sent a pawn that was standing before the knight.

The White King made the pawn take another step forth.

Long Chen didn't follow this time. He instead moved the knight and sent in on the playing field.

It was standing near the Pawn of the white king. If the White King didn't move the pawn, he would have died, but the White King didn't move it.

Instead, he sent his bishop outside, which stood near the Knight, directly aiming at him.

"Kill that pawn," Long Chen commanded the knight. The Wolf moved to the position of the pawn and cut it's neck off, killing it instantly.

The White King didn't seem to care as it brought out its horse as well.

The strategy battle continued for the next 20 minutes. Both sides had an equal number of losses, but the damage was more for the white side.

The White Side had lost both its knights, one rook, two bishops, and three pawns, whereas Long Chen had sacrificed one knight, one rook, and six pawns.

"Knight, Kill the rook," Long Chen commanded the knights who moved two and a half steps and killed the last rook of the white king.

Now the white side only had the king, the queen, and five pawns remaining, whereas Long Chen still had most of his firepower.

The Queen of the White made a move and killed Long Chen's second rook as well.

"A queen should never underestimate another queen," Long Chen muttered. "Black Queen, kill the Queen of White."

The Queen of Long Chen moved and killed the Queen of the White Side. Now the white king had no significant help and only had five pawns remaining.

Long Chen kept commanding his army that kept Killing the pawns that the King used to protect themselves.

Soon, there were no pawns left on the white side.

The White King was encircled from all sides. No matter where he moved, he would be killed.

He finally made a move and moved one step to the left.

"Queen, finish it and kill the White King," Long Chen commanded.

The Queen of Black moved to her right and sliced the head off the body of the king.

Long Chen tried moving, and finally, he was able to go further than the 2nd row of squares.

Long Chen was allowed to walk to the other side of the room freely, but before he walked to the center of the room, the roof once again opened as a small box fell down to the ground.

"Another reward?" Long Chen muttered with a questioning gaze, but he was ready to teleport if the box had a trap inside.

He opened the small box.

"What is this doing here?" he muttered with a confused look on his face.

Chapter 413 - 413: Chu Miao

Long Chen was the most surprised he had ever been as he saw inside the box.

There was an earring in the box.

It was a small blue earring that didn't look anything special, but the reason it shocked Long Chen was that he had seen that earring before.

Long Chen had seen Chu Miao wear the same earring the last time he saw her. It was one the only accessory she wore, which looked more highlighted on her.

"Is this the same earring? No, it might just be a similar earring. There's no way she can get here; she can't fly," Long Chen muttered as he observed the earring.

"But why is an earring here as a reward? This doesn't feel like an artifact or a treasure. It seems as normal as it can get," Long Chen let out with a frown as he looked around.

"Keep it. Some artifacts are often like that. They might look ordinary but hide incredible power. Even I'm not sure about it, but It might be an artifact like that. You might find out about it in the future if it is," Xun told Long Chen.

"Yeah, maybe you're right. It should be a treasure. The temple would not give a useless item," Long Chen muttered as he kept the earring in his storage ring.

He stood up to walk towards the stairs, but as soon as he stepped on it, he felt danger.

He instantly jumped back, and that was just at the right time as the Stairs disappeared.

"I should've just continued on Fury," Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face as he looked towards the empty spot where the stairs used to be previously.

He stood up and brought out his Spirit Sword. He jumped over the sword that was floating in front of him and moved towards the 10th floor of the tower without delaying a single second.

He flew up for over half an hour, but he didn't get to the next floor. He could feel himself moving, but the further he went upwards, the farther the next floor entrance went.

After continuing for another hour, he stopped his sword. He didn't attempt to go up in the least.

He looked down and noticed that the lower floor wasn't even visible by now, which meant that he indeed came up, but even after all that, he wasn't able to get to the next floor.

He looked around in confusion as to what was actually happening. Something seemed to be terribly wrong here, which was preventing him from going to the next floor.

He looked toward the entrance of the top floor that seemed to be around 500 meters away from him.

"I can't even teleport there either. Is there nothing I can do?" he muttered with a perplexed look on his face as he looked down.

"Wait, I think I found the reason for it," Xun told Long Chen.

"What reason? How can I get there?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

Xun appeared in front of Long Chen and floated in the air.

"Look behind you," she said as she pointed behind Long Chen.

Long Chen turned back and started looking carefully.

A frown appeared on his face, which only deepened.

"I don't see anything there," he told Xun.

"Maybe it's because I'm the spirit of an artifact, and that's why I can see it, but there is a mirror behind you. It should be around 300 meters away from you. I can already see your reflection in the mirror," Xun informed Long Chen as she looked at him gravely.

"Is this right? I'll try going to it then. It must be what's messing with the things here," Long Chen muttered as he turned his Spirit Sword back and started flying towards the direction Xun was pointing toward.

He had only flown for a short while before Xun stopped him.

"Don't bother with it. It's moving back as well. The closer you get to it, the farther it moves," she told Long Chen.

"I guess I have no choice but to destroy it then. If it's destroyed, the problem should be solved," Long Chen let out as he brought his King's Sword out of his storage ring.

"True, if normal methods don't solve a problem, just destroy the problem," Xun chuckled.

"Tell me the exact direction of that mirror. I'll break it in a single try," Long Chen told Xun.

Xun caught Long Chen's hand and adjusted them in such a way that the sword in his hand was facing the mirror.

"It's right there. Five hundred meters away from you now," Xun told Long Chen.

"Alright. That should be enough," Long Chen muttered.

He raised his sword high in the air.

"7 Forms of Saint Sword: 6th Form- havoc!" Long Chen let out as he swung his sword.

A bright arc of light left his sword. Its light managed to brighten the darkness, but its frightening Strength was causing the air to become hotter.

The arc of light moved forward like an attack that was hell-bent on destroying its target as fast as it could.

Long Chen's attack landed in the mirror, shattering the mirror.

crack

The sound of glass shattering broke the silence of the place and managed to reach Long Chen's ears even though the mirror was so far away.

The mirror broke, and finally, Long Chen got his first glimpse of the mirror, the pieces of which fell down.

"That's a beautiful mirror, I must say. Too bad that it had to be destroyed. I guess the destruction does solve the problems, but it does destroy the beautiful things around it as well," Long Chen muttered as he looked at Xun.

He turned back and looked towards the entrance of the 10th floor, which was still there. The height still seemed to be the same.

He started flying higher with the help of his sword, but this time the entrance didn't move away from him and stayed where it was. He got to the entrance of the next floor.

Long Chen looked around, and once more, a weird look appeared on his face.

"I want to meet the architect of this place. He really had a knack of making things weird and inserting the things one least expected.

The whole room was filled with water, which, surprisingly, wasn't spilling out of the entrance. It was as if there was a force keeping it in place.

The room was filled to the top with no air inside.

"I don't like the fact that I'll have to get wet now," he muttered with a wry smile on his face.

He took a deep breath before he commanded his spirit sword to move forth.

The sword flowed in the water, and Long Chen held the handle of the sword, which was to help him get to the other side much faster.

He was at the center of the room when a whirlpool formed in the water. The water started moving in the circular motion, almost forcing Long Chen to divert from his direction, but as he was using his Spirit Sword to pull him, he wasn't caught in the whirlpool and passed by it.

He got to the other side of the room and got out of the water as he stood on the stairs.

He again climbed on his Spirit Sword and moved upwards.

"If I were swimming instead, I would've been caught in the whirlpool. The traps look simple, but they're not so simple as they seem. Without proper tools and skills, it would've been nearly impossible to get this high," Long Chen muttered as he glanced back at the water.

He flew higher and soon got to the 11th floor.

"Chu Miao, You're here?" Long Chen exclaimed in shock as soon as he got to the 11th floor.

Chapter 414 - 414: Death

Just as Long Chen got to the 11th floor, he saw a girl standing on the other side of the room.

Her back was facing him, but Long Chen recognized her as Chu Miao.

"Chu Miao? What are you doing here?" he asked her.

Chu Miao didn't turn back as if she didn't hear him.

"Hey! Look here. Stop acting mysterious," Long Chen let out loud as he stepped down from his sword and stood on the ground.

Chu Miao finally turned back as she faced Long Chen, but her eyes were entirely white.

"What the heck? Did a spirit enter your body as well?" Long Chen let out in an unusually loud tone that echoed in the large room.

"Xun? Is she possessed?" Long Chen decided to ask Xun as she was the only one who could answer.

"It does seem that way," Xun commented, but she looked uncertain as well.

"You're finally here, Long Chen. I waited for so many years," Chu Miao said, but instead of her original feminine voice, her voice sounded like the voice of an old man that echoed in the room and vibrated with nature.

"Who are you?" Long Chen asked with a frown.

"The Divination talked about your arrival, but it didn't give a time frame. I never realized it would take so long before I get to see you at last," Chu Miao said as she looked in Long Chen's eyes.

"Tell me who you are! Why have you taken over her body," Long Chen inquired.

"Who I am doesn't matter. I'm just someone from the time forgotten—a relic of the past that will never return. The Divination talked about your arrival, but it didn't mention the time frame. I didn't expect you would take so long," Chu Miao sighed. The sigh seemed to contain the sorrow from the time forgotten.

The voice of that man seemed to contain the sadness that carried over from the past.

"What Divination? What do you want?" Long Chen asked her with a grave look on his face.

"The Divination of the future. The Divination that talked about what's to come and how it must be," Chu Miao said.

"Are you someone from the Divine Heaven Sect?" Long Chen inquired.

"That is right, but not right at the same time. I used to be from the Divine Heaven Sect, but is there really a Divine Heaven Sect left anymore?" Chu Miao inquired.

"Can you leave Chu Miao's body first? We can talk without her as well," Long Chen suggested.

"I would if I could, but I need her. I need a medium to convey my words. Don't worry, though; I won't harm her in the least. You don't have to worry about her safety. This old man will never harm kids," Chu Miao said as she observed Long Chen.

"Alright. I would believe you, but if you even think about hurting her, just remember that I just used another spirit, that took over someone I knew about, as the ingredient to make my Sword a Spirit Sword. If you hurt her, I'll have another Spirit Sword in my collection, and one can never have too many Spirit Swords," Long Chen warned the Spirit.

"You can be assured of that. I don't want to hurt a girl who is unrelated to any of this anyway as that would only be detrimental to my cause," Chu Miao said.

"What Divination were you talking about? Did you see the future about this before your sect was destroyed?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yes. I lost most of my life trying to get the Divination about you, and even that itself was vague and only talked about how we will meet and about some other things," Chu Miao said.

"Was that Divination worth you sticking around for so long? Isn't everything destroyed already. Why let your soul be tormented," Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face. Although he didn't know much about spirits, he knew that it wouldn't be easy sticking around for so long just to meet someone

"Yes, if it saves the lives of our Younger generation then it was worth it," Chu Miao said as she smiled.

"Your Younger generation? Wasn't the sect completely Destroyed? Did you have a secret family left behind?" Long Chen Inquired.

"Our Sect Supreme Elder performed a Divination about the future of our sect, and he saw the Destruction. He didn't see how it happened or what caused it before he lost his life, but he managed to tell us about it," Chu Miao said.

"Why couldn't he see it? Was his life not enough? You saw about me, which is much farther in the timeline than the time of the enemy that ended your sect's thousands of years of rule. Shouldn't seeing what caused the destruction and preventing it be easier than seeing about me?" Long Chen asked a question that confused him. The story of the spirit didn't make sense so far.

"No, It doesn't work like that. It was impossible for us to find what caused the destruction of the sect, no matter how much life we had. Now that I look at it, even if we knew about it, there was nothing we could have done to prevent it," Chu Miao said.

Another sigh echoed around the room.

"What was it that Destroyed your sect? Was it a powerful enemy or someone from the Higher Realm?" Long Chen asked the spirit.

"I can't tell you that as the future might change if I did. I can only talk about what I saw myself telling you in my Divination," Chu Miao said.

Long Chen had a wry smile on his face as he shook his head.

"Does it matter if the future changes? The future is always changing, and there's nothing one can do about it. If we stay bound by the future, it's like giving our destiny in the hand of something we have no control over, and I don't like that. The more you tell me, the better it would be for me," Long Chen let out as he glanced at the girl.

"That's what you think, but it's impossible to change the future. All of us are bound by destiny. It was our destiny to be destroyed just like it was in my Destiny to meet you," Chu Miao said in full seriousness.

"I will never let destiny dominate me, no matter what happens. I've seen what destiny does to me. Help someone and get stabbed. Believe someone, get thrown off the cliff. I don't want to believe in destiny anymore and you shouldn't either," Long Chen let out in a somewhat disappointed tone.

"Anyway, let's leave it at that. Tell me about the Divination about me. That's the main part," Long Chen sighed as he let out.

"The Divination was about death. The death of someone related to you," the Spirit told Long Chen, silencing him.

This one sentence was enough for Long Chen to stand shocked at his position.

"Who dies! Who the heck dares to kill someone related to me!" Long Chen let out loud. His voice felt like the roar of a King, ready to wage war.

"Don't worry, it will be prevented if you follow the future and save our younger generation," Chu Miao said as she walked closer to Long Chen in small steps.

"So you are saying that I must save your younger generation by following the future you were talking about, which would save the one that is supposed to die if the future isn't followed?" Long Chen asked with an impossible to comprehend look on his face.

"Who is going to die?! Answer me!" He asked in a heavy tone as he glared at Chu Miao.

Chu Miao looked towards him as she shook her head slowly.

Chapter 415 - 415: Stupid

"I don't know who it was. It is a Divination, not a vision. I didn't even know your face, but I knew how I would meet you," Chu Miao explained to Long Chen as she smiled slightly.

"Can you at least tell me how old that someone who might die is?" Long Chen asked again.

"I don't know that either. All I know is that the person will be very close to you. From what I can gather, they might be your family or your lover. It's also possible for them to be your friend if there's a friend you're willing to give your life for," Chu Miao told Long Chen as she stood like an experienced elder with her hand behind her back.

"How much time do I have?" Long Chen asked her.

His thinking was simple. If he had time, he wouldn't need to worry about anything.

'If I have enough time, I might be able to form my inner world and keep them safe there,'

"Even though the Divination was Vague, I believe that It should be one year," The spirit told him.

Long Chen fell in deep thought as he wondered if he could become a Heaven Realm cultivator in 1 year or not. His frown only deepened the more he thought about it. It was so tough that it was almost in the realm of impossible without lucky encounters.

"Why would I believe you? Am I supposed to believe you just because you knew my name when I entered? Chu Miao knows my name; you might've found out from her. It's also possible that you heard her call me by my name before. How can I believe that what you're saying is true, and you're not just trying to make me go your way?" Long Chen asked in full seriousness.

"I don't have any benefit in doing that. I'm dead already. I'm only following heaven's mandate. That's the reason for the existence of the Divine Heaven Sect, and that's the reason for its end," Chu Miao said.

"You don't have any benefit in it? Is it not that you care about the future generation of your sect and want someone to save them?" Long Chen inquired.

His Spirit Sword stood in front of him, pointing towards Chu Miao.

"I do care about my future generations, but not enough to go against the Heavens. I'll just tell you what I know, and it's for you to decide what you will do with the information next. That's what it's about. You can save them and save someone close to you, or you can doubt me and let the person die. It would have nothing to do with me as I would disappear forever after conveying everything," the Spirit said. His voice seemed neutral, as if he was genuinely telling the truth.

"Tell me, who do I need to save? And from whom?" Long Chen asked.

The spirit raised its head slightly as if it was reminiscing about the past.

"When the sect was destroyed, there were three disciples of our Divine Heaven Sect that were not in the sect, and they managed to survive. As for the reason they were not in the Sect, it's because they were banished from the sect," it started explaining.

"It was my decision, and even though I didn't like it, I banished them from the sect using a false allegation. I followed everything exactly as I saw in the Divination,"

"They left, our calamity struck, and everything had finished. They couldn't enter the Sect; neither did they want to. They swore never to step foot in the Divine Heaven Sect again,"

"They left the continent and went to the Qianqiu Continent. There they established a new sect called the Glorious Heaven Sect. They recruited disciples and made the Sect grow to one of the more prominent sects. I want you to save their sect from another sect that will wage war on them," Chu Miao said.

"The more I hear, the more idiotic it sounds. It's like you let everything be destroyed so that you could be a puppet and walk on the script of that Divination," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

"If you knew the destruction was about to happen, you should have told all the disciples and let them all leave the sect. You made only three leave and that too, without telling them the truth. I think that you had more of a hand in the destruction of your sect than whatever caused it. Seriously, how can someone so strong be so stupid," Long Chen sighed.

"Sometimes, I think the same for you," Xun commented from the side as she looked towards Long Chen.

Long Chen ignored her comments and continued.

"You did all this for literally no reason other than to fulfill your Divination. It's like you wanted the Divination to come true more so than the Heavens themselves,"

Chu Miao was silent for a brief moment before she started speaking.

"You will never understand what it is like. Only us Diviners know the real truth that the whole story that the world is unaware of. Nothing can be changed, no matter what happens," the Spirit told Long Chen.

"Nothing can be changed? Didn't you say that you saw me saving your future generations in the Divination? Wouldn't it change the future if I don't save them? Nothing is set in stone, and you know that," Long Chen expressed strongly.

"No, I saw myself telling you what I'm telling you. I don't know what happens after this. This small portion of my spirit passes on after telling you everything. That's what I saw. It's all up to you and the destiny whether you save them or not," the Spirit said.

"You don't understand even after you die, and I'm not going to teach a spirit," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

"What else did you see yourself telling me?" Long Chen asked.

"There is one last thing that I need to tell you. I left a treasure for you on the top floor. That should help you," the Spirit said.

"Time for me to leave," the Spirit said as it left Chu Miao's body.

Long Chen saw the Spirit's original form that looked like an old bearded man.

"Hey? At Least tell me what these gloves do?" Long Chen called out as he raised his upwards that had the gloves that he had received on the Treasure Hall.

The Spirit smiled as he disappeared without answering.

"He didn't help me in the slightest. Are these gloves really useful or just a fashion accessory?" Long Chen muttered with a confused look on his face as he walked towards Chu Miao.

Long Chen walked to Chu Miao and placed his hand under her shoulders as he helped her up

"Hey, wake up," He called out.

Chu Miao didn't wake up, but Long Chen was assured that she was safe. Her breathing seemed normal, and she didn't look harmed in the slightest.

"I guess you're going to sleep for a while," he muttered as he looked at her face.

He picked her up in his arms and stood up.

He carried her in his arms and walked towards the stairs ahead of him.

He stepped on the stairs and stepped upwards towards the 12th floor that was said to consist of treasure for him.

Long Chen had reached the 12th floor and saw a silver chest lying there that reminded him of the treasure chests he saw at the King's treasury, which he had looted.

There was no Stairway to go higher than this floor, so he understood that this was supposed to be the last floor, and there was nothing higher than this.

"The treasure of the last floor. Let's see what that guy left behind for me," Long Chen muttered as he walked towards the chest. Chu Miao was still in her arms.

Chapter 416 - 416: Misunderstood

Long Chen sat before the chest.

He looked towards Chu Miao, who was still in his arms.

"I'm sorry, but I'll have to put you down for a few seconds,"

Long Chen carefully placed Chu Miao on the ground before he looked towards the chest

He opened the chest as he slid its top away.

Long Chen opened the box, exposing the object lying inside.

It seemed to be a clothing article from the initial impression.

He picked up the item and brought it out of the box.

He started unfolding it, exposing the article inside.

As it was unfolded, Long Chen finally understood what this item was. It seemed to be a robe.

The robe was crimson in color and seemed to be made from the softest of silk, but it seemed sturdy at the same time as it could be used to save one from attacks.

Long Chen could feel the flow of Qi from the robe that bore the proof of its powers.

"This should be a defensive item if I'm not wrong. It looks to be a Peak Earth Grade treasure as well. Not bad," Xun chuckled as she stood beside Long Chen.

"Yeah, it's pretty nice. The strange thing is that it was in the list of items required by the sect as well. From the information that was mentioned, it's called the Damage Warding Robe. It automatically saves you from attacks without you even knowing it. It can only break if a Sky Realm cultivator keeps attacking it constantly," Long Chen let out.

"It's nice in any case. You definitely needed something like this. If you had it on the trap floors, the arrows wouldn't have been able to hit you," Xun told Long Chen.

"That's what I thought as well," Long Chen muttered as he stood up.

He removed the robe he was wearing and wore the Damage Warding Robe instead.

"How does it look?" he asked Xun.

"The robe looks better, but the person wearing that robe looks just as bad as before," Xun said in a joking manner.

"Can't you ever praise me?" Long Chen said as he ran towards Xun to catch her, but she disappeared before he could get to her.

Xun's voice appeared in Long Chen's head instead.

"I'm not going to fall for it again,"

"Just wait till you get a real body. You'll see," Long Chen muttered as a wry smile appeared on his face.

He heard Chu Miao's voice from behind.

"umm?"

Long Chen turned back and walked towards her.

"You're back? How come we're here? wasn't I outside the barrier?" She inquired.

"You were outside the barrier, but yeah, some things happened, and now we're here," Long Chen let out.

"What happened, there's no reason to be vague about it, is there?" Chu Miao let out.

"Alright. You were possessed by the spirit of an older man and came here; I saved you from that spirit. The spirit is gone now, and you woke up," Long Chen dumped the info as briefly as he could.

Chu Miao was bewildered as she listened to Long Chen's explanation.

"Are you being honest?" she asked.

"No, I'm lying. You were hungry, and you lost your consciousness because of hunger. I came out of the barrier and saw you unconscious. You seemed pretty, so I decided to get a room for us, and here we are. I was just about to start before you woke up," Long Chen let out in a similar manner.

Chu Miao was once again stunned and confused about why he would do that.

"Why would you do that?" she asked.

"Of course, I'm kidding you, idiot. Why is the lie about me being a pervert more believable than the truth about the spirit?" Long Chen let out with an annoyed tone.

"Isn't this because you look like a pervert?" Xun chuckled as she appeared in front of him.

"Stop mocking me," Long Chen told Xun.

"I'm sorry, I was not mocking you. I was just confused when you talked about it. It's mostly because I don't believe in spirits, that's why I doubted that" Chu Miao said apologetically.

"Oh, don't worry about that. I didn't mean it like that; I was thinking about someone else when I said that," Long Chen told her.

He extended his hand towards her and helped her up.

"Where are we exactly?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen after she stood up.

"We are inside the tower. I myself don't know what to call this place. It's like a mixture of a training hall, a treasure hall, and a punishment hall," Long Chen said.

"We're done here, though. Let's go back. You'll understand," Long Chen told her.

"You don't mind me carrying you, do you? We might be able to get to the 11th floor on foot, but no stairs are connecting the 10th floor to the 11th floor. You won't be able to go down the normal way. I'll carry you. It will be faster as well," Long Chen suggested.

Chu Miao thought about it briefly before she nodded her head.

Long Chen walked towards her while she gazed at him.

He placed one of his arms around her shoulders and the other under her knees as he picked her up in his arms.

Long Chen carried Chu Miao like a princess as he stepped over his spirit sword that was flying just above the ground.

Chu Miao was so close to Long Chen, and her heart was beating faster and faster because of being carried by him.

She stopped looking towards his face to hide her embarrassment as she looked on the other side.

Long Chen carried her to the 11th floor and then to the 10th floor, but it stunned him that stairs were connecting both the floors there. The stairs that had disappeared were back.

"The stairs were not here when I climbed up," Long Chen told Chu Miao with a wry smile on his face.

Chu Miao just looked at him suspiciously.

"You'll see that it's not just a normal tower. There's a floor full of poisonous insects and a floor filled with water. That's also a floor filled with sleeping gas. It's impossible to go down on foot," Long Chen told her.

They kept getting lower, but all the floors seemed perfectly fine now. There were no insects, no water, no sleeping gas. Even the thousands of arrows that were lying on one of the floors had disappeared.

"That old man is definitely messing with me for calling out his stupidity!" Long Chen cursed under his breath as he continued going down.

They ultimately left the tower without seeing anything strange. Chu Miao just looked at him, but she didn't say anything, which made Long Chen guess that she was definitely thinking something wrong.

"There is no ground around this island. We definitely need to fly to get out of here," Long Chen told her to do some damage control.

They got to the edge of the island.

"What the fuck? Not here as well!" Long Chen let out loud as he noticed that the invisible ground was visible once again.

"The Sect is really messing with me now," Long Chen said as he grew more annoyed.

"It's alright. Flying does make our travel much faster," Chu Miao told him.

"Indeed. It is easy and much faster than walking, and we don't have many days left," Long Chen told her as he nodded his head. He decided to use that excuse to stop her from misunderstanding his intentions.

The Spirit Sword raced through the air and carried Long Chen and Chu Miao with it.

"Can I ask you one thing?" Chu Miao asked Long Chen along the way.

"Sure. What is it?" Long Chen asked.

Chapter 417 - 417: Little Snow's Strange Behaviour

"What did that spirit want from me? Why did it possess me? Did you get any answers?" Chu Miao asked.

"Oh, It was the spirit of an old pervert. It liked doing stupid pranks to kids as he did with me just a few moments ago. Ignore that guy. I don't think he wished to harm you," Long Chen replied.

"It did all that just for that? How did you remove the Spirit from me?" she asked.

"I told it that an old guy possessing a little girl is creepy. He understood and left your body, and that's when I killed it," Long Chen replied.

"Didn't you say that it messed with it a few moments ago? How could it do that if you killed it?" she asked.

"It's... He returned even after dying. He was a spirit after all," Long Chen answered her with a straight face.

Chu Miao was still in his arms, sticking closer to his chest as she heard his answer.

"Oh," she let out.

Long Chen flew for over 2 hours before he stopped near a small pond. There were two trees near that pond.

"Let's rest here. My Qi is almost depleted. I wouldn't be able to go much further," Long Chen told Chu Miao.

He hadn't rested since the moment he entered that tower, and he had been continuously using his Spirit Sword as well, which also consumed some of his strength, albeit on a much smaller level.

Chu Miao got down from his embrace and stood upon the grass that was everywhere to be seen around the pond.

"It seems like the perfect place to rest. The shade of the tree, the softness of the grass and the cold breeze coming from the pond," Chu Miao said.

Long Chen walked towards the tree that was closest to the pond and sat under it.

Chu Miao followed after him and sat on the other side of the same tree.

Long Chen tilted his head slightly upwards as he looked towards the sky.

"Are you going to stay up? I feel like sleeping for some time," he asked.

"It's alright. You can sleep. I won't be sleeping anytime soon. I already feel like I've slept for a long time," Chu Miao answered as she chuckled.

"Although there won't be any problem, if something unexpected happens, then wake me up," he told her as he closed his eyes and rested his back comfortably against the tree.

'Xun, can you keep an eye on my surroundings as well? I'll take a quick nap,' he told Xun.

"Alright," Xun's voice appeared in his head.

Xun appeared beside Long Chen as he slept. Instead of looking at the surroundings, she kept looking at him. Her gaze didn't leave the sleeping face of Long Chen. She stopped looking at him after half an hour.

As he slept, she roamed around him, visually bored. Soon, she walked closer to Chu Miao, who was also looking bored.

Chu Miao had started to sing a song casually.

It was a song that she heard in her town when she was a little girl. Her mother used to sing this song to her every night to help her sleep. It was a song about a brave warrior who helped those in need and punished the evil.

Even though she herself was part of an evil sect now, her liking for this song never left her mind.

"I think I've heard this song before, how does she know it?" Xun muttered with a frown as she stepped closer to the girl.

She placed her hand under her chin and started observing her.

"Now that I look clearly, she does remind me of that girl. Is it a coincidence? It's not like that girl would ever come to a mortal world like this. But this song..."

Xun was focusing more on Chu Miao, so much so that she had forgotten the pond behind her that was going through a change.

The pond that was previously filled with Crystal clear water had started changing color slowly. From its original color, it was becoming red, albeit at a slow pace.

Xun was more focused on staring at Chu Miao and trying to see if the whole song was precisely the same or was it different with only a similar starting.

The song lasted for over 10 minutes.

"It's the same. Everything's the same, each and every word. I can find no difference. Did she really come down and taught the song to others?" Xun asked in confusion.

Chu Miao stopped singing and once again roamed her gaze all around the place.

"What just happened?!" she exclaimed loudly as she looked back.

Xun was surprised as she saw her reaction. She also turned back to see the lake.

"What happened to the lake?" she muttered in confusion.

Chu Miao stood up and tried to wake Long Chen up.

It had only been a few hours since he slept, but still, Long Chen woke up on the first try.

He slowly opened his eyes, which were slightly red because of abruptly waking up from his deep slumber.

"What happened?" He asked in confusion.

Chu Miao was standing right before him, covering her vision

"Something big has happened. Look at the front," Chu Miao said as she stepped sideways.

Long Chen finally saw the full view of the lake.

"The pond has turned red," Xun told Long Chen.

"The pond turned red?" Long Chen frowned as he stood up.

He walked towards the pond to see it from closer.

"The water looks like blood. Do you have any idea how it happened?" Long Chen asked Xun, who was standing in front of Chu Miao.

Chu Miao thought that Long Chen was asking her.

"I don't know. It was like this when I noticed," Chu Miao answered.

"I am not sure. From what I can guess, there might be something inside that caused it to become like this. What I don't understand is why it would become like that so abruptly," Xun answered with a perplexed look on her face. "How about you try using your Divine Sense to see what's inside?"

Long Chen nodded his head and spread out his Divine Sense all around his surroundings.

His divine sense covered a vast area all around him. He put his primary focus on the pond.

After using it for around a few seconds, he stopped. He shook his head in disappointment.

"Is there nothing inside the pond?" Xun asked him.

"I don't know. I can't see anything inside the pond," Long Chen replied. "My Divine Sense can't seem to see through the water. Whatever that red thing is, it's blocking my perception."

He glanced towards the water one more time, which seemed to be getting redder over time.

He looked around and found a stone nearby.

"Let me test something," he let out.

Long Chen picked up one of the stones and threw it in the blood-red water.

The stone drowned in the water without attracting any strange reaction from the pond.

Long Chen broke off one of the tree branches and dipped it inside the red water to see if the water was acidic or not.

He only dipped a small portion of the branch in water before pulling it out.

The branch was perfectly fine as if it wasn't dipped in anything but normal water.

"The water doesn't look harmful. It just seems like its color had changed, but still, me not being able to use my Divine Sense inside does make it seem special," Long Chen muttered with a frown on his face.

He was still thinking about what he could do when Little Snow came out of his Storage Ring on her own

"What the...? You can come out even under the restriction of the sect?" Long Chen exclaimed in surprise, but his surprise turned to shock when he saw Little Snow jumping inside the water.

Chapter 418 - 418: King God Beast

Long Chen reacted fast and jumped after Little Snow in the pond without thinking anything else

The water was cold to the touch as if it was the freezing water near a glacier in the Arctic.

If an average human had jumped into the water, they would instantly die because of the cold temperature, but the freezing temperature of the water didn't have much effect on Long Chen.

He had covered his body with a thin layer of Qi to protect himself from the cold.

As Long Chen jumped down, he saw that the water was actually crystal clear. It was only the top surface that had turned red; the rest of the water inside the pond was still looking like regular water.

Chu Miao also jumped into the pond, but before she could swim much deeper, she had to swim outside. She wasn't able to bear the temperature of the water. It was affecting her much more than it was affecting Long Chen. No matter how determined she wanted, she couldn't go after Long Chen.

She got out of the water, but she was still shivering. Her hands had stopped working efficiently, but she was still more worried about Long Chen than about her condition.

Long Chen was still swimming downwards, chasing after Little Snow.

He swam down for over half an hour, but they didn't seem to be getting close to the true depth of the ponds.

The pond was much deeper than he had expected.

After ten more minutes, he finally reached the depths of the pond and saw Little Snow standing on the ground.

He saw a little fish lying in front of Little Snow.

The fish had a snow-white color, but a red tail.

It was lying on the ground, lifeless, without any movement. Long Chen tried using his divine sense once more, and it worked. The only difference was that

this time his divine sense was working inside the pond, but it didn't spread outside the pond.

'So it's that red layer that is stopping my Divine Sense. When I was outside, I couldn't see inside, and when I'm inside, I can't see outside,' he thought.

He focused on the fish in front of him.

'I can't see any life force from it, but there's still some Qi that can be felt inside its body,'

'It's most certainly dead. I can see it, but it's really strange to see a Divine Prosperity Fish in the Mortal World,' Xun told him as she appeared beside him.

'The Divine Prosperity Fish?' Long Chen inquired in surprise. He hadn't heard about that beast before Xun mentioned it.

'Yeah, it's a rare fish that's mostly found in Higher Realms. Only the Kings and their ministers have the right to capture these fishes and keep them in their ponds,' Xun replied.

'Is there anything special about this fish?' Long Chen asked, curiously.

'Yeah, as the name suggests, it's a fish that is said to bring prosperity to a person. It was said that if a king had a Divine Prosperity Fish, the chances of him losing any wars were almost negligible,' Xun explained to him.

'Could it be that the fish had died before the calamity struck on the Divine Heaven Sect?' Long Chen asked in confusion.

'From its size, it's clear that it's not even 20 thousand years old. It didn't die for natural reasons. The average life expectancy of a Divine Prosperity Fish is 100 thousand years,' Xun told him.

'So someone killed it? Could it be the ones that caused all this destruction?' Long Chen asked her.

Before he could get an answer, his mind was diverted by something else.

He saw Little Snow moving closer to the fish.

Long Chen was standing at such an angle that he couldn't see Little Snow's eyes, but if he could, he would be able to see that her eyes were shining at the moment as she closed the distance between her and the fish.

Little Snow moved her paw forward and touched the Divine Prosperity Fish.

The Divine Prosperity Fish that seemed to be dead abruptly opened its eyes. It watched Little Snow with its innocent eyes that still looked weak. The Fish only watched Little Snow but didn't move its body. It was unclear if it didn't move intentionally, or if it couldn't.

A small spark of happiness could be seen in the Divine Prosperity Fish's eyes as it started shining.

It was shining so brightly that even Long Chen was having a hard time watching it.

The fish turned into a small speck of light that started floating towards Little Snow.

Little Snow opened its mouth and let the speck of light enter her body, which got absorbed by her.

"Impossible!" Xun exclaimed as if she saw something she couldn't believe.

"Did little snow eat that fish? Well, I know she's an Ethereal Moon Cat and cats like fish, but that wasn't what I expected," Long Chen exclaimed with a weird look on his face.

"Why are you so shocked about it?" Long Chen asked Xun, who still seemed stunned.

"That's not eating. It's life absorption! Something only King God Beasts can do! She shouldn't be able to do it if she wasn't a King God Beast herself!" Xun exclaimed.

"A King God Beast?" Long Chen asked her.

"There are 9 God Beast Clans, and each of these clans has a King or a Queen. Those are the King God Beasts. Life Absorption is something only they can do," Xun said.

"I still don't understand what this Life Absorption is," Long Chen let out in confusion.

"When there's a beast that is so devoted to someone that it wants to give its life to a King God Beast, it can do that. The King God Beast that gets the sacrifice gets the memories of that beast, its life, and its skills," Xun exclaimed.

"So if an Ice Phoenix gives its life to the Flame Phoenix King, the Flame Phoenix King will get the powers of Ice Phoenixes? This thing can be problematic between the relations of the nine clans you talked about," Long Chen said.

"There's a limitation to that. If the powers aren't compatible with the powers of the King God Beast, they won't get the powers, but they will still get the memories and the life force. The ice isn't compatible with fire, so the example you gave won't work. It's mostly similar to other God Beast Clans as well," Xun said.

Long Chen looked back at Little Snow, who seemed to be standing still. He was about to walk towards her before he got a flash of memory in his mind.

He saw the Divine Prosperity Fish swimming in the water. It saw a shadow above the water, but the fish couldn't see who that shadow belonged to. Soon, the water turned poisonous, and the Fish started having difficulty breathing.

Its body stopped moving as it dropped down at the bottom of the pond. Not long after that, it lost its life.

The memory stopped.

"I received some memories. You were right. The fish was killed. The pond was poisoned by someone," Long Chen told Xun.

"I thought so. You probably got some memories as well because you're linked to her. It was clear, though. There's no way it could die at such a young age; otherwise," Xun replied.

Little Snow returned back to normal as it ignorantly looked towards Long Chen.

It swam towards Long Chen and jumped into his embrace.

'You little evil, go back to the ring for now,'

Long Chen sent Little Snow back in the Beast Region of his storage ring and started swimming upwards.

Soon, he was out of the water. His clothes were dripping wet.

"You're back. Are you fine?" Chu Miao stood up as she saw Long Chen.

Chapter 419 - 419: The Mysterious Song

As soon as Long Chen came out, he was greeted by Chu Miao.

Chu Miao was wearing a different dress now as her old clothes had gotten wet.

"You're back. Are you fine?" Chu Miao stood up as she saw Long Chen.

"Yeah, it was nothing. The water is not harmful if you can handle the cold," Long Chen replied to her.

He looked down at his clothes that were dripping wet.

"Can you turn back for a little while? I need to change clothes," he told her.

Chu Miao nodded her head as she turned her back on Long Chen.

Long Chen took off the wet clothes and sent the clothes into his storage ring.

He brought a set of dry clothes and got dressed.

"I'm done. You can turn back," He told her after he finished dressing up.

Chu Miao turned back.

"Was there anything inside the water? Why did your beast jump inside the water? Also, how can it come out of your beast bag? I tried calling my beast out, and I still wasn't able to," Chu Miao started asking the questions that were floating in her mind.

"The sect restriction might depend on the beast type and strength maybe, that might be why one of my Beast wasn't affected because of it while my other beasts were. She's still too weak,"

"Also, there was nothing inside the pond. She probably jumped in because she liked the water," he made up some excuse. She didn't need to know about the Divine Prosperity Fish and the King God Beasts.

"I jumped after you as well, but the water was so cold, my body started shutting down. It was strange seeing the water inside looking so clear when the top surface looked like blood," she said.

"I had my ways to protect myself, but you would have died if you had forced yourself. That's something that wouldn't have helped either you or me. Instead, it would have only made things worse. Leaving at the right time was the right choice," Long Chen praised her.

"Anyway, let's continue. The time is passing fast. We don't have much time left to waste. There are still so many places to see," Long Chen said as he brought his Spirit Sword out of the storage ring.

"Don't you want to sleep anymore?" She asked.

"It's fine. Don't worry about that. It doesn't seem like this place is going to let me rest. I might as well find more treasures instead of wasting time. We still have to find their skill hall and their other rewarding places," Long Chen replied.

"I just hope that the skill hall won't be like the treasure hall. I don't want to be given a useless skill just like these useless gloves," he added as he looked at the gloves that he was wearing.

The more he thought about the gloves, the angrier he got.

"They hadn't been useful in the least, and I still don't know about them. They are even worse than normal gloves; these can't even keep my hands warm. The Treasure Hall definitely didn't like my answers and threw these useless things my way. I wonder why I'm even wearing them," he complained.

"The objects can be mysterious and useful without knowing. Don't worry about it. At worst, it'll just be an accessory to look good. It does look good on you; I must say," Chu Miao complimented.

"That might be its only use, I guess," Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face.

"Anyway, we should be leaving. Come closer," Long Chen said as he glanced at Chu Miao.

Chu Miao nodded her head. She stepped closer to him with her slow steps. She was somewhat embarrassed as she stepped so close to him that the distance between them remained only half meter.

Long Chen covered the rest of the distance as he placed his arm on her shoulder and another arm behind her knees and picked her up like a princess.

The Spirit Sword was floating just a few inches above the ground. He stepped on the sword. The sword started rising higher in the air and flew ahead, carrying Long Chen and Chu Miao with it.

Xun was flying right beside them, which Long Chen found strange. She kept glancing at Chu Miao.

'Is there something wrong? Do you want me to carry you as well?' Long Chen asked Xun with a weird look on his face.

"Of course not, you idiot!" Xun reacted strongly.

'Then why are you looking at her like that. Do you see something strange in her? Is there a spirit possessing her?' he asked.

Xun shook her head as if denying him.

"Can you ask her something? Ask her how she knows that song," Xun said.

'Which song?' Long Chen inquired.

"The song that she was singing when you were sleeping. Ask her how she knows that song," Xun said.

Long Chen looked towards Chu Miao as he wondered what the song could be that shocked Xun. Was there something special about that song?

"Were you singing a song when I was sleeping?" Long Chen asked her.

Chu Miao acted surprised at his question. She started singing when she was sure that he was sleeping. She couldn't understand how he knew about the song.

"How do you know about that?" She asked in shock. "Weren't you sleeping?"

"I was sleeping, but it wasn't a deep sleep. I thought that I heard a song in my sleep. Can you sing that song once more? I want to hear it again," Long Chen told her.

He decided to hear the song that shocked Xun before asking the question about where she heard it.

"Ah, I've never sung it in front of anyone. It's embarrassing considering my position and the sect I'm in," She said with an embarrassed look on her face.

"Don't worry about that. I have a broad mind; I won't judge. Also, I seemed to like your song. That's why I'm asking to hear it again," Long Chen replied in order to comfort her.

"Ah... alright. It's not a typical song that the Evil Cultivators like us sing," she explained before she started singing.

Long Chen heard the lyrics of her words and felt as if he could see a story being told through the song. It wasn't difficult to imagine that story; it was as

if the images were automatically formed in a person's mind after they hear the song.

Chu Miao sang the song while she rested her head on his chest. The song continued as the story progressed.

After some more time, the song finished.

"How was it?" Chu Miao asked after she finished singing.

"It was great. One of the best songs I've heard yet, and your voice is good as well, making it a soothing experience," Long Chen complimented.

"Thank you," Chu Miao replied.

"If you've finished your curiosity about the song, then ask her where she heard it," Xun told Long Chen. She was still waiting for him to get to the main point.

"Where did you hear this song?" Long Chen asked Chu Miao.

"My mother used to sing this song to help me sleep when I was little. I heard it so many times that I remembered it," Chu Miao replied.

"Ask her if she knows where her mother heard it from!" Xun told Long Chen.

Long Chen looked towards Xun and saw her serious expressions, which brought a wry smile on his face.

' I heard this song, and it is indeed a good song, but it's there really a need to get so worked up about it?' He asked Xun

"You don't know the history of this song, so you can't understand. Ask her what I said," Xun told him.

"Do you know who taught this song to your mother? Did she ever talk about it?" Long Chen asked Chu Miao.

Chapter 420 - 420: Skill Hall

"I don't know. I think she made the song herself," Chu Miao told Long Chen.

"That's not true. There is no way someone else will make the same song about that story. Clearly it has something to do with that person," Xun said instantly.

Long Chen sighed as he looked towards Xun.

'Which person? Can you at least tell me what this song is about and why it's so important? It's clear that she doesn't know who taught her mother the song, and I don't understand why does it matter either,' Long Chen said to Xun.

Xun shook her head as she looked down. She disappeared.

"It's nothing. I just thought that I could find someone I knew a long time ago. Forget it. It's impossible," Xun's voice resounded in Long Chen's ears.

Long Chen thought about her words and felt as if it was something she didn't want to talk about. It wasn't something that was related to him either as he didn't know what it was about.

'Don't worry. If it's meant to be, we will meet the person that created the song,' Long Chen comforted her.

No one said anything for the next half an hour. They continued advancing ahead.

They saw a few buildings along the way, but they found them empty when they entered inside.

They left those buildings behind as they continued on their search for important places of the Divine Heaven Sect.

After a long time, someone finally said a word. It was Chu Miao who broke the silence.

"We've traveled so much of the sect; still, we didn't see the Courtyards of the Divine Heaven Sect disciples or the skill hall. I don't believe that the Divine Heaven Sect would make them so far from the treasure hall. Could it be that we're going in the wrong direction?" She asked Long Chen. She had been thinking about this for a long time.

"I don't know. We can only go in one direction, after all. The direction we are going in seems to be working so far as we found some really good things, but it might also be possible that we won't find a single useful thing ahead," Long Chen replied.

"The people from the Devil Worshipping Sect went in a different direction than us. Maybe she found the skill hall," Chu Miao muttered.

"If they found it, it would mean that they were lucky. The maps we had of the sect are incomplete and, in certain instances, wrong as well. So it mostly depends on luck to find places like those. We've been lucky enough, so it's also possible that they might find some treasures," Long Chen replied to her.

"Sigh, I truly hope that we find something. I haven't received anything. I can't even enter the towers of gravity without dying," Chu Miao sighed.

She was looking depressed.

"I can give you a few decent treasures if you want that," Long Chen told her.

He had stolen the treasury of the King of a First Grade Kingdom, which had many treasures. He had decided to give most of these treasures to his grandpa when he would go back as most of these things didn't have much use for him.

He thought that giving some of those treasures to Chu Miao wouldn't be bad either. She helped him and didn't ask for a share when they found the herbs. She had also been quite understanding about other matters.

He decided that he would give some items from the treasures to her while keeping the rest for his family if she agreed.

"It's alright. I don't need things like that. Hopefully, I'll find something for myself ahead," Chu Miao said.

"Well, we did find the herbs together, but you didn't take them. How about I give you some of the pills I make from them?" Long Chen suggested.

"Yeah, that would work. I can get on board with that. The medicines can be really useful. I've been thinking about purchasing concentration pills for a long time. Can you make the concentration pills?" she asked Long Chen.

"I can make them. Those are on the easier side. I'll make some for you when we're free of this thing," Long Chen replied to her as he looked towards her.

"Wait, I see something," Chu Miao called out as she pointed ahead. Her tone had suddenly changed and seemed somewhat excited.

Long Chen looked in the direction she was pointing at and saw a building that looked similar to the treasure hall.

"Another treasure hall?" Long Chen exclaimed with a frown on his face.

"It might be the skill hall that looks like the treasure hall. They shouldn't have two treasure halls," Chu Miao commented.

"Maybe, we will see soon," Long Chen said.

They soon got near the tower and stepped down on the ground. He didn't fly near it, as he was worried that if there were gravity increments here as well, then they would fall down to the ground because of the effect.

Walking was the best solution in the places which were affected by gravity as only then can a person use their full-body strength to resist the gravity.

"Let me check if there's gravity change or not," Long Chen told Chu Miao as he put her down to the ground.

Chu Miao nodded her head and stayed behind as Long Chen stepped forth.

Long Chen stepped closer to the tower, wondering if he would see the same gravity change as the treasure tower.

He kept walking and soon, he got to the entrance of the tower, but he didn't feel anything strange.

"You can come without worries. The gravity stays normal throughout the way," Long Chen told Chu Miao.

"Awesome," Chu Miao smiled happily as she ran toward the tower.

Long Chen pushed the doors of the tower open, exposing a large hall inside.

He entered the tower with Chu Miao.

As he entered, he observed the whole hall. The place had walls that were filled with words that he couldn't read.

There were two doors at the front of the hall. Both of these doors had some words written on them as well.

Only the words on the doors were readable to him.

The words on the right door said 'Girls' whereas the words in the left door said 'Boys'.

'Xun, what's written on the walls?' Long Chen asked Xun as she was more knowledgeable in ancient languages.

"It's nothing. There are only useless quotes written on the wall like 'Work hard to gain success' etc. It might just be for motivation," Xun replied to him.

Long Chen walked closer to the doors.

"It doesn't seem like the treasure hall that I entered. Maybe it's actually the skill hall," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the doors.

"The left door is for guys like you, and the right door should be for girls. Maybe they decide on the skills-based on that?" Chu Miao suggested.

"Maybe, but it might be dangerous as well," Long Chen let out as he frowned.

"It's alright. The Divine Heaven Sect shouldn't be that unfair. If it's a test to decide the skills we get, then they shouldn't be too ignorant of things like their disciples' safety," Chu Miao replied.

"True. But so far, I don't believe that the Divine Heaven Sect was sane," Long Chen let out.

"Don't worry. I can handle what they throw at me," Chu Miao said as she pushed the door open and entered.

"I hope so," Long Chen muttered as he opened the door on his side and entered as well.

Long Chen found himself in a small room that was even smaller than the rooms of servants. There was a formation on the ground which started shining as soon as he stepped on it.

Long Chen disappeared.

Chapter 421 - 421: Torture Chamber

Long Chen disappeared from this small room and found himself in a different room.

The new room was much larger than the last room. It seemed as if it was multiple times bigger. This room was completely empty, which made it seem even bigger than it actually was.

"This doesn't seem like an illusion; in fact, I'm sure that it was a teleportation. It's interesting. I didn't expect that they would be using a teleportation formation in the Divine Heaven Sect," Long Chen muttered with a wry smile on his face.

"They could get a Divine Prosperity Fish, getting a small teleportation formation shouldn't be difficult," Xun appeared beside him and said.

"Yeah. I guess I was really underestimating the strongest sect of the old times. They were definitely much more powerful. I don't know the strength of the current strongest sect of current times, but I did hear that they are nowhere near the level of the Divine Heaven Sect. I should keep my expectations high," Long Chen muttered as he looked around the empty room.

"I hope the skills I get would be on the same level as well and not useless like these gloves," he again complained as he caught a glimpse of his gloves in his hand.

Xun heard his complaints and started laughing.

"What happened?" Long Chen asked.

Xun tried to stop herself from laughing, but she was clearly having a hard time.

"Did I say something funny?" Long Chen asked.

"It's nothing. Your constant complaints just reminded me of someone. Ignore that. Anyway, you got what you got. There's no point in feeling bad. Didn't you say that you kept your expectations low?" Xun inquired.

"I did keep my expectations for a treasure low, but not this low," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face. "Anyway, what do you think I need to do here? This is just a big empty room. There are no formations here and no instructions." Long Chen said to her.

He started walking towards the walls to see if there was anything that he missed out.

He had only taken a single step forward when the room started shaking.

The gravity turned upside down, and Long Chen fell down on the roof, which was now the ground of that room.

He wasn't harmed by it and stood up.

He again tried walking towards the wall, but as soon as he took another step forth, the room once again started shaking.

The gravity again changed, and he fell down on the ground.

He stood up once more, but he didn't step forth this time. He waited to see if the room was actually reacting with his footsteps or not.

He moved his body, but he didn't move his feet.

He waited for 5 minutes, but nothing happened. He took a step forward, and it happened again. He fell down to the ground that was previously the roof.

"This makes it clear. The room is reacting based on my footsteps. If that's the case, then I just won't walk," Long Chen muttered as he stood up.

His expressions turned serious as he looked towards the wall on the front.

"If it wants to stop me from getting to the wall, then that's exactly what I'll do," He let out.

Long Chen's eyes changed color. They changed from their usual golden color to the starry black color that seemed to contain the boundless space.

He teleported from his position and appeared right before the wall. His eyes returned to normal.

"Did you think you can stop me from getting here if you don't let me walk? Long Chen exclaimed as he stood up.

He had just started speaking when the ground started shaking again.

"Not again," Long Chen fumed as the ground started shaking.

The gravity was reversed, and Long Chen fell down to the other ground.

Long Chen fell down, but he stood up, hoping that it was enough and that he could observe the wall carefully now, but it wasn't. Instead, the gravity reverse continued even after one time; it kept changing.

It gave enough time for Long Chen to fall before changing its direction and making him fall once again.

Long Chen was starting to get hurt, but the gravity change did not stop.

He brought his spirit sword out of his storage ring and caught its hilt.

The Spirit Sword flew at the center of the room while the gravity kept reversing.

His sword was still at the center of the room, only the direction he was hanging in, kept changing with time.

Long Chen kept holding on, hoping that the constant gravity reversal would stop, but even after 5 minutes, it didn't stop. It kept going on.

He was starting to get dizzy, but he kept holding on.

"What the fuck is wrong with this place! How is this a place to give out skills and not just a torture chamber!" Long Chen bellowed.

"Xun, You're a spirit. Go to the walls in my stead and see if you can find anything," he told Xun.

"I'll try to find something, but it can't be much effective if it needs me to touch the walls. I can only touch you," Xun said.

"Just observe carefully. There must be something about this room. If we still didn't find anything, I'll just teleport outside the temple using Spatial Travel," Long Chen told her.

"Alright." Xun agreed. She flew towards the walls and started observing every inch of the wall.

It took her a long time just to finish with the first wall as she had to look thoroughly, whereas Long Chen kept suffering the brunt of Gravity Change.

"Did you get something?" Long Chen asked her.

His dizziness was increasing. He wasn't sure how long he could hold on. His lack of sleep was also affecting him at the moment.

"There's nothing on the first wall. Everything seems normal and in perfect symmetry. I'll check the other walls," She told Long Chen.

Xun went to the second wall and started checking it.

Her checking was still as thorough as it had been for the first wall. Even though she was in a hurry, seeing what Long Chen was going through, she didn't want to miss anything because of her rush.

They kept stepping forth, checking the portion of the wall right before her. After quite some time, she was done with the second wall.

"Nothing seems strange in the second wall either. I'll check the 3rd wall. You just keep holding on," Xun told Long Chen before she moved over to the 3rd wall that was opposite to the 1st wall.

"I hate this place! It would be fine if they had planned sky realm monsters here or something else, but this is just torture. If I weren't eager to get the skill, I would've left this place immediately!" Long Chen said.

Xun ignored Long Chen's words and put all her focus on the wall before her. She checked every inch thoroughly for any clue.

After some more time, the inspection of the 3rd wall finished as well.

"Nothing on the 3rd wall either. I'm moving to the 4th wall. Just hold on for a little longer. It should be clear soon," Xun told Long Chen as she stepped towards the 4th wall, which was facing the 2nd wall.

She started her inspection and kept moving further. She checked the highs of the walls and the lows. She was only halfway through the wall when she noticed something.

"I found something. You need to come here!" She told Long Chen.

"Finally, some results!" Long Chen rejoiced.

The spirit sword changed its direction and started moving towards Xun amidst the constant changing gravity. Long Chen kept holding onto the hilt of the sword in order not to fall down.

Chapter 422 - 422: Something's Happening (I)

"What did you find?" He asked Xun as he reached near her. His mid-air acrobatics continued, though, as the gravity change hadn't stopped for even a second.

"I've checked the three walls and half of the 4th wall, but they were all perfectly plain and smooth. On the other hand, this small portion of this wall is slightly concave. It's unlike how the walls are made, so it should be the clue we are looking for.

"That does seem like it. I need to press it to see if something happens, but how can I touch it when the gravity is against me," Long Chen muttered.

He made a determination as he thought about something.

"Alright, move away, Xun. I am going to try something. I don't want to fall over you by mistake," Long Chen said to Xun.

"Alright. I'll move back. I have no interest in being tackled by you either," Xun said as she moved back.

Long Chen looked at the spot and waited for the gravity to change in such a way that the ground was closer to that spot.

His eyes changed color as he again used the Teleportation. Long Chen teleported to the ground and pressed that concave spot before gravity could reverse.

He braced himself for the impact, but the gravity didn't change this time.

"Did it work?" Long Chen muttered with a frown as he looked around, but the gravity didn't change.

Sigh

"Finally I can relax,"

Long Chen sighed as he sat down on the ground and rested his head over his knees.

His head was spinning. He just wanted to rest now that he had an opportunity to breathe.

"That was the stupidest ride I've even been in," he muttered as he closed his eyes and just calmed his breathing.

He didn't move and didn't say anything for over 10 minutes. He didn't care what happened to the room.

He knew that Xun would tell him if something significant happened. He focused more on recovering.

Xun stepped closer to him.

"How are you feeling?" she asked Long Chen.

"I feel worse. It makes me feel like I'm sick, which I haven't felt in a long time. You can guess how worse that would feel. I didn't know gravity could be so fierce. I always underestimated gravity, but I forgot that it could be brutal as well," Long Chen muttered softly without raising his head. His head was still aching.

"Of Course, it can be bad. Gravity is nothing to underestimate. You've met a few people in this mortal world who know the law of gravity, but they are only at the lowest stage of understanding. When you go to higher worlds, you'll see the real monsters who will show you how strong the elements can be," Xun replied to him.

"You are right. There are many things we are ignorant about, and the true strength of elements should be one of them. Everyone in this mortal world I've met, that has learned a law, should be at the lowest level of comprehension. Even I'm not much higher when it comes to comprehension, so I can't see the true strength. I can only imagine how strong the elements can be once a person manages to change their law seeds to a law tree," he muttered softly.

"Is the room going through a change after I did that?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"No, the place is still like that," Xun replied to him. She didn't see any change in the room.

"I know it's not the right time, but I don't think I can stay up for much longer. I'm going to sleep. Wake me up if something changes," Long Chen mumbled before he went silent.

This thing had made him extremely tired, and he didn't want to wait while struggling to stay up. He knew Xun was able to touch him, so she would be able to wake him up if there's a chance.

Long Chen fell asleep in a similar position.

Xun stood beside him as she observed him.

"I hope this desire for sleep is only because of him being tired and not because of that. No... it's too soon for that to be happening. That shouldn't be what is happening here. He must become stronger before that time comes," Xun muttered as she sighed.

She sat behind him with her back resting against his back.

' Things seem so peaceful now, completely contradicting what's to come. Sometimes I hate knowing about it. It would be so great if I could just forget about what's to come. I would have been able to enjoy these peaceful moments while they last,' she thought as she shook her head.

She observed the wall to see any changes as they happen.

Time kept passing slowly, with no change in the surroundings.

Soon, 5 hours passed away, and nothing happened.

Xun didn't say anything and didn't relax herself. She didn't want to miss out while any change occurred.

After two more hours, the room started moving. It was similar to the shaking from before, but it was so slow that it was almost unnoticeable.

"Something's happening," Xun muttered as she stood up.

"Wake up. Something's happening," She said as she started shaking Long Chen.

"hmm?" Long Chen woke up and raised his head.

His dizziness and headache were over now, and he was feeling fresh.

"The ground is shaking slowly. Something's about to happen," Xun told Long Chen.

"It's happening again? Can't they let me sleep in peace without tossing me around like a ball," he muttered as he stood up.

He brought out his Spirit Sword and caught its hilt as he got ready to use it when gravity changed, but the shaking stopped, and nothing happened.

After a few more seconds, a door shaped opening appeared in the wall in front of him.

"Fortunately, this is not the gravity thing. I'm fine with anything but that," Long Chen muttered as he stepped forth.

He walked towards the door shaped opening and left the place.

He found himself in a garden this time, but there were no herbs or plants. There was only grass in the ground.

"This place this time, I wonder what they're going to do now," Long Chen muttered as he looked around.

As he was looking around, a water fountain came out of the ground from the middle of the garden, which sprinkled water all over the place.

Even Long Chen's clothes were wet because of the water, but he didn't care about that. He walked towards the fountain to look at it carefully.

The water seemed to be normal and crystal clear.

Long Chen had just reached near the fountain when the grass all around him increased in size by multiple times.

They started moving like whip towards Long Chen and caught him like a criminal tied by the ropes.

"As I said, everything's fine except that torture chamber. This place is nothing," Long Chen said as he brought his Spirit Sword out of his storage ring.

The sword moved around like the ruler of this place as it cut off the grass and freed Long Chen.

Even though Long Chen was freed, the attack of the grass didn't stop. The more his sword cut, the more they grew.

Long Chen let his Spirit Sword keep cutting the grass whips that came towards him.

He also formed 2 Qi swords and used them with both his hands to cut off anything that managed to pass through the Spirit Sword.

The battle kept going on for 20 minutes without any result. The more Long Chen cut, the more it grew, making it even more difficult for him to solve this problem.

"There's no end to these things. How long are they going to last exactly?" he let out as he kept attacking.

Chapter 423 - 423: Impossible To Kill

Long Chen kept fighting the plantation that had come to life.

Previously, it was only grass that was attacking him, but now, branches of trees had started coming out of the ground to target him.

"This is getting annoying," Long Chen muttered as he started cutting off whatever came closer to him.

"It doesn't seem like they are going to stop. Could it be the water that's helping them?" Xun pointed out as she looked towards the fountain that was sprinkling water everywhere.

"Maybe. I need to stop the water, but how? If I break the fountain, the water coming out will only increase," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Whatever, I'll do it. At least the water will come out from one place instead of being sprinkled all over the place," He said as he cut off the branch that had managed to get near him.

Long Chen twisted his body around and swung his sword with full force cutting off the fountain from the middle. The top half of the fountain slid to the side and fell down.

As soon as the fountain was cut off, the water stopped instantly. The grass and the branches also stopped coming out of the ground.

"It looks like this worked," Xun said, smilingly.

"So far, it does seem that way, but I still don't feel at ease," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the fountain.

He waited for over 10 minutes, but nothing happened.

"You might be overthinking it. It should be like the last room; you just need to make a simple gesture to pass the room. In the last room, it was about tapping that spot, and in this place, it was cutting off the fountain," Xun said to Long Chen.

"Now, you just need to wait for some time as you waited in the last room before the path to the next room will open," she added.

"Maybe," Long Chen muttered as he turned back, but as soon as he turned back, he started feeling the tremors in the ground.

The ground started shaking. Long Chen instantly turned back to look towards the fountain. He was having a bad feeling now.

Xun also looked towards the fountain with a frown on her face.

The tremors kept getting intense until the fountain shot out a high-velocity stream of water towards the sky.

The water landed near the fountain and started getting collected.

"Looks like we made it worse," Xun muttered with an embarrassed look on her face.

"It's alright. At worst, we will just drown," Long Chen said jokingly.

He knew that there was no chance of dying here. If the situation grew so bad that he was at his last stretch, he would just teleport out of this tower. He had an advantage when it came to that as he had already tested and verified that the tower didn't stop him from using laws.

He was waiting for something to happen, but nothing significant happened, and the stream of water stopped coming out of the fountain.

The only thing that was left behind was the puddle of water near that fountain.

Long Chen could see the water seeping into the ground where the puddle was until the water disappeared entirely.

He looked at that spot intently when he saw the ground starting to split apart.

A hand came out of the ground, and soon a second hand came out of the crack. The crack in the field kept getting wider and wider until it was 3 meters wide.

Long Chen saw the head of the creature whom the hands belonged to.

It came out of the ground and stood in front of Long Chen.

"A Treeant?" Xun muttered in confusion.

It seemed like a human but with a few differences. It was entirely made of wood. The Treeant had hands and legs, but its hands were much longer in proportion to an average human. The hands of the Treeant came down to its knees.

Its head had a squarish shape.

"That's a difficult opponent. The treeants are said to be the most resilient of all species and the most difficult to kill. Although some treeants are known to stay in mortal worlds, it is not easy to find them," Xun told Long Chen.

"Is it alive? It seems like a lifeless puppet," Long Chen told her.

"It's not alive. If it were alive, it would definitely have a more vibrant color instead of looking so grim. You can also check through their head. There are no leaves above its head. The treeants that are alive always have green leaves above their heads. The leaves also show their age. If a Treeant had one leaf above its head, then it is one year old, two leaves mean a 100-year-old Treeant, and so on," Xun told him.

"What's the problem then? It doesn't seem that strong. If it's not alive, it shouldn't have the advantages that the treeants have either," Long Chen responded to her as he gripped his sword.

Without waiting for her response, he attacked the treeant. He targeted the neck of the Treeant and sliced off its neck.

The treeant hadn't even moved before its head was cut off and fell down to the ground.

Long Chen turned back to look towards the Treeant, but as soon as he turned back, he was gobsmacked to see that a new head had grown into the place of the old one that looked just like the same one as the last time.

"That's why I told you it's the toughest to kill them. They have incredible healing. No matter what you do, they will always heal," Xun told Long Chen.

'Isn't that fucked up? That basically makes them impossible to kill if they always heal. Wait a minute, they are treeants, what if I burned them to ash?" Long Chen asked Xun, but this time, it was the Treeant that had attacked before Xun could reply.

The Treeant ran towards Long Chen to attack him. The disadvantage of the treeants was that its movement speed was slow. Its legs didn't help him run fast.

Long Chen had sufficient time to dodge the attack, but he hadn't expected that thousands of spikes would come out of the treeants body and flew everywhere.

He knew that no matter where he teleported, he would be struck by the spikes.

He decided to use his Spirit Sword to handle the spikes that were coming towards him while using his King's Sword to handle the ones that managed to pass through the defense of his spirit sword.

Around 50 spikes were coming towards him at a lightning-fast speed. Even though the Spirit Sword handled the most of the spikes, approximately 10 of them still managed to pass through them and reached Long Chen.

Long Chen was still wearing the robe of defense that he had found in the tower where he met that spirit of the old man, so he was sure that he would be safe, but he still didn't want to take the risk and make his artifact lose its effect because of his underestimation. He wanted the robe to be in its best condition for when he fought Lang Jing.

On the other side, the Treeant still hadn't stopped attacking. The spikes were constantly flying out of his body towards every direction.

Some of the spikes even passed through Xun, but they couldn't touch her as she was in her spirit form.

The treeant kept shooting out the Spikes as it walked towards Long Chen.

"Tell me. Is fire the way to kill it or not! I need an answer. Tell me about its weakness!" Long Chen let out loud. He was talking to Xun, but he didn't take his eyes off the spikes that were targeting him to look towards her.

Chapter 424 - 424: Earth

"The fire doesn't work on them. They might be treeants, but they aren't affected by fire unless you have the Godly Flames," Xun told him.

Long Chen was curious about what Godly Flames was, but he decided to ask her later as there were more pressing matters at hand now.

"Don't tell me what doesn't work; tell me what does! You said that Treeants are one of the most difficult Species to kill, but you didn't say that they were impossible to kill. There must be a way!" Long Chen inquired.

"There are two ways to kill it!" Xun started speaking as she looked towards Long Chen.

Even though he had managed to keep the spikes from hitting him, the Treeant had almost reached his place.

Long Chen used teleport to appear at the farthest distance from the Treeant.

As soon as he appeared, a few spikes managed to hit him, but his Robe casted a shield to protect him.

Long Chen's Spirit Sword flew towards him and again started its work to protect him.

It all happened in a brief second.

The treeant again started moving towards Long Chen, but its speed remained slow as ever.

"One of the ways to kill them is by cutting their head a thousand times. They would die the thousandth time their head is cut off," Xun told Long Chen.

"That's possible to do, but it would take a lot of time. What's the second way? Is that faster?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Yes. The second way is indeed faster, but it's not something you will like. Not many people know about this secret, but Tian Shen and I had managed to find out," Xun replied.

"What is it? Tell me!" Long Chen told her.

"Just go with the first way. I don't think you will like the second option," Xun told him.

"Why? Is the second option difficult to do?" Long Chen inquired.

"It's actually pretty easy to do, but knowing you, I can comfortably say that you wouldn't do it," She told Long Chen.

"What are you talking about! Just tell me so that we could be done with this thing fast," Long Chen let out in an annoyed tone.

"You need to kiss him!" Xun told him.

"What the fuck? Xun, It's not the time to joke! Tell me what's the second way. You can joke all you want after I deal with it," Long Chen told her.

"I'm not joking. If a male of any other species kisses a Treeant, their healing stops as their pure natural force is corrupted. If you kill him then, then he would permanently die," Xun explained to Long Chen.

"You were right. I'm not going to do that! It's better cutting its head off a thousand times!" Long Chen let out as he sent his Spirit Sword towards the Treeant, leaving his defenses to him and his king's sword.

The Spirit Sword cut off the head of the Treeant, but the spikes didn't stop. A new head appeared on the treeant's body.

Without giving it any chance, the Spirit Sword again cut off its head.

Long Chen kept standing back as he defended against the hundreds of spikes coming towards him, whereas his Spirit Sword kept cutting off the head of the Treeant, which didn't stop moving toward Long Chen for even a second.

Just when it had managed to reach closer to Long Chen because of its slow speed, Long Chen teleported away from it once again.

The Treeant again turned back and started walking towards him.

"It's true. The dead can never be as smart as the living. His movement will always follow the same pattern. All it wants is to kill me, and he isn't going to use his brain on how to do it," Long Chen muttered as he watched the Treeant coming towards him.

"Well, the Treeants are always like that. No matter if they are alive or dead. Even though the Living Treeant can talk and do basic stuff like other intelligent species, their brain is similar to a 5-10-year-old child. This one seems to have an even lower intelligence because he's dead and only a puppet," Xun told Long Chen.

"I guess that's why they still haven't gone extinct. If they were smarter, then they might have become a threat to some people because of their incredible healing and strength. They would either be a ruling species or an extinct species if they were smarter," Long Chen muttered as he cut off one of the spikes that was coming towards him.

"The stronger species would definitely have gone against them if they tried to rule over the world, but if the treeants were smarter and content, then it wouldn't have caused them any trouble either," he added.

"The world doesn't work like that. If someone sees that you're getting strong, even if you don't have any intention of going against anyone, as long as someone is suspicious that you can affect their interests in the future, they would still harm you. They would do it without you even knowing," Xun told Long Chen as she sighed.

"That does somehow make sense, but I'm talking about treeants, not a single person. It's much more difficult to go after a race than to go after a person for suspicions," Long Chen said.

He was starting to get bored of watching the Treeant's head being cut off again and again. He decided to start a conversation with Xun to keep him busy while he protected himself against the spikes that had become predictable by now.

"That's because you don't know how many species have been wiped out. You will know after you get to the higher levels and gain more knowledge about this universe. The knowledge of a single continent of a single mortal world is nothing in comparison with the history of this universe. If you only look at all the mortal worlds, you would be surprised," Xun told him.

"All the mortal worlds? Just how many worlds like this are there?" Long Chen asked with a frown on his face.

"The number is in the thousands," Xun responded to him.

"Are the other mortal worlds like this one? Have you been there?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"I've been to a few of them, but not many. Some of them were similar to here while some were vastly different," Xun told him.

"Really? Have you seen a mortal world that has no Qi or cultivators? They have metallic objects that they use to travel from one place to another? They

even have metallic things that carry them through the air. There are no beasts in that world, but they have a different version of beasts that don't have any cultivation. They also have tall buildings everywhere. Is there a place like that you know of?" He asked Xun.

He wanted to know if the earth was in this universe or not.

"Metallic objects that people use to fly to different places? I don't think I've ever heard of that thing. Did you really dream of something this weird?" Xun asked as she smiled.

"Oh," Long Chen just nodded his head, with a disappointed look on his face.

Five hours had passed like that, and his Spirit Sword cut off the head of the Treeant once more, but this time, the new head didn't grow up.

Instead, the headless body of the Treeant fell down to the ground.

"I guess that makes it thousand," Long Chen muttered with a relieved look on his face as he sat down on the ground, tired.

"You did it. Unless something else happens here, we might be getting the doorway to another place," Xun said.

She had just spoken when a light started shining below their feet, and they found themselves in a different room.

Chapter 425 - 425: I'm Not A Skill

The room they now found themselves in was just as small as the first room where the teleportation formation was.

There was not much space in the room, but they did find a small table in front of them.

There were two bowls on the table. One of the bowls was red, whereas the second bowl was Golden. Both these bowls had a dragon carved on them.

The red bowl had a longer dragon that seemed to be big enough to wrap the bowl three times, the golden bowl had a shorter dragon who only wrapped the bowl around two times, but the golden dragon had a horn on its head which the red dragon didn't.

Long Chen stepped forth and looked inside the bowls and saw that both these bowls were filled with liquid.

Surprisingly enough, the red bowl had golden liquid inside, whereas the golden bowl had the red liquid inside, which seemed like blood.

"It looks like a choice if I'm not wrong. Most probably, you need to drink from one of the bowls," Xun told Long Chen.

"What if these bowls are poisoned?" Long Chen inquired.

"The chances of that happening are too low. As you said before, the sect wouldn't try to kill its disciples. Although I do think that one of these bowls might have harmful liquid whereas the other one should be the right one, but even the harmful one shouldn't be deadly," Xun told Long Chen.

"Well, that's reassuring," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Don't worry; I would never tell you to do something that would cause you to die. If there were even the tiniest chance of this being dangerous to you, I myself wouldn't have told you to do it," Xun explained.

"Fine, I'll do it. That ghost talked about something related to destiny. Even though I believe that he was an idiot, and I doubt some of his words, this choice shouldn't be deadly. The treasure hall was tiring, but not difficult, and the Skill Hall should be the same," he muttered as he looked at the bowls.

"Which one will you choose? Do you have a favorite color?" She asked him.

"The red bowl has a golden liquid, and the golden bowl has red liquid. Will this even matter which color I prefer? Both of these have two colors," Long Chen replied.

"I'll choose the red liquid. The golden liquid is reminding me of molten gold, which I'm not liking. It looks much denser as well. I would prefer the red one over this. That looks easier to drink," Long Chen said as he picked up the Golden bowl.

He drank the red liquid from the golden bowl. The liquid entered his body.

As soon as the liquid entered his body, Long Chen started feeling dizzy.

He disappeared from the room and found himself in a different room.

It was a big room that seemed to be as big as an arena. It was filled with water.

There was a long narrow floor in the center of the room that connected one side of the room to the other side of the room. There was only water on both sides of this narrow floor.

Long Chen was standing on one end of this narrow floor.

His head was spinning, but he could still think properly. Even though he was dizzy and the platform was narrow, he controlled himself from falling down in the water.

"Where is this place?" Long Chen muttered, but that's when a voice echoed in the room.

"Welcome, Disciple of the Divine Heaven Sect. You have chosen the test of control. Walk to the other side of the room without falling in the water. Your dizziness will keep increasing, and your health will keep deteriorating as time passes. You can't run, and you can't use any artifact or skill in this test. If you fall in the water, you will fail."

"Hmm?" Long Chen mumbled as he looked to the other side of the room.

The room was around 500 meters long, while the platform was only 300 mm wide.

Long Chen was dizzy, but it was manageable. The problem was that he could feel his dizziness and headache increasing.

"Don't waste time. Start walking," Xun told Long Chen.

Long Chen started walking first. With each step he took, his headache increased, and his control over his body weakened. He could feel his body temperature rising as if he was suffering through a fever.

He kept walking ahead, trying to control his steps. He had occasionally lost his balance as he walked, but he controlled his body and stopped himself from falling down.

After some time, he reached halfway without falling down, but that's when his vision started getting blurry.

He could see ahead, but it was blurry. Blurry Vision mixed with his dizziness and headache made it even worse for him.

He continued walking, but he also complained to Xun that he wouldn't be able to get there. His legs were shaking.

After some more time, he finished 70 percent of the way before he misstepped his foot that landed in the air instead of the platform.

Long Chen knew that it was the moment he failed the test. There was no way for him to succeed.

He had already given up, but that's when he felt a hand support his shoulder, preventing him from falling.

His vision was too blurry, so he didn't see who it was, but he was clear about the identity of the person that saved him.

"I'm not a skill or an artifact. I will always be with you, and I will never let you fall. So don't give up and continue. You can definitely do it!" Xun told Long Chen as she pushed him back towards the platform.

Long Chen heard her words and started smiling. Even though he was in pain because of the headache, he still couldn't help but smile.

He rubbed his eyes and started looking ahead as he continued walking. His vision still didn't improve, but he continued forward and put all his faith in Xun. He was sure that she would stop him from taking a wrong turn.

If Xun weren't here, Long Chen would have definitely fallen in water many times, but because of her, he managed to reach the other end of the room successfully before he dropped to his knees.

As soon as he got to the other side, a black bowl appeared on the ground beside him.

"Here, drink this bowl. It should heal your body," Xun told Long Chen.

"I can't see anything," Long Chen muttered softly.

"I'll help you," Xun said as she held his hands and brought them to the bowl.

There was black liquid in the bowl that looked quite ugly, but Long Chen couldn't see it.

The bowl was brought closer to his lips, and he started drinking it.

As soon as the liquid entered the body of Long Chen, it turned into nutrients for his body and healed him. His body was recovered, and his headache and dizziness also stopped.

His body came back to its peak condition.

"Hah, I feel so much better now. This whole experience has been worse for me. This is a definitely a torture tower, not a skill tower!" Long Chen said with an annoyed look on his face.

"It might just be the tests to see which skill would be best for you. The treasure tower asked you a question to see which treasure suited you, and this place uses tests for that," Xun said.

"You should correct your statement. The treasure tower asked me questions to select which useless accessory suited me," Long Chen muttered.

It was at that moment, he disappeared from that place and found himself in the first room. There was the same spatial teleportation formation below his feet.

Chapter 426 - 426: Desert Of Bodies

"It looks like the tests are over. See, The Skill Hall already selected a skill for you," Xun said smilingly as she pointed towards a book that was lying in front of Long Chen.

"I just pray that it would be a good skill," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the book.

He stepped forth and picked up the book.

"The Art of Thoughts?"

He was surprised as he read the title of the book. It didn't sound like a skill, but more like a self-enlightenment book from his old world.

He opened the book and read the short description of the book.

"Amazing! This is really good!" He exclaimed with a wide grin on his face.

"What happened? What's that book about?" Xun asked as she saw him happy.

"It's about mind-reading," Long Chen said as he grinned.

"After learning this skill, I should be able to read people's thoughts," Long Chen further explained.

"That does sound like a good skill, what are its limitations? There's no way a skill like that would have no limitations," Xun said to Long Chen.

Long Chen heard her words and smiled wryly, mostly because she was right. There were indeed limitations to this skill.

"The limitations are that I can't use this skill on those that have a higher cultivation than me, but other than them, I can use it on anyone at any time," Long Chen replied to her.

"I'm glad you found a decent skill. I don't think I would be able to listen to you complain about the skill as you complain about the gloves," Xun said jokingly.

"I wonder how Chu Miao will be. Would her test be just as difficult? Her test should be the same as mine from what I believe. I don't know if she would succeed," Long Chen muttered as he put the skill book in his storage ring and walked out of the room.

He was back into the main hall, where Chu Miao was sitting.

"The heck? How are you out faster than me?" Long Chen asked her in surprise.

"Uhhh, I picked a book and walked out," Chu Miao replied.

"What do you mean, you picked a book and walked out?" Long Chen inquired.

"When I entered the room, I was brought to a different room where thousands of books were floating. I picked one of the books, and I found myself back in the old room. I stepped out," she told him. "Why are you so late? Were you having a hard time selecting books?"

Long Chen just looked at her blankly for a brief moment.

"This is partiality," he muttered as he shook his head.

"What do you mean?" Chu Miao asked in confusion.

"Ah, nothing. You are right. I had such a vast number of books to choose from, it took me some time," Long Chen responded as he smiled wryly.

"Which skill did you get?" Long Chen asked her.

"I got the Queen's Gaze," Chu Miao answered him.

"The Queen's Gaze? Sounds like a powerful skill. What does that do?" Long Chen inquired.

"It decreases the strength of the person I use this skill on, for a short period of time," Chu Miao replied.

"Decrease the strength of the opponent? So it works similar to the Flute of War, but instead of increasing our strength, it decreases their strength," Long Chen muttered.

"How much strength does it decrease?" he asked.

"I don't know exactly how much it weakens them, that part was pretty vague, but the decrease in Strength should depend on my level of understanding of this skill," Chu Miao replied.

"Even though it's not clear how much it weakens the opponent, that skill is definitely good. If you kept progressing with that skill, it would only get more

and more useful," Long Chen told her as he brought out his Spirit Sword from his storage ring.

"Let's leave," Long Chen told her as he started walking towards the exit.

His Spirit Sword flew around him, and Chu Miao followed after him.

They stepped out of the Skill Tower.

"Not much time is left before the 14 days are over. Although we've found the treasure hall and the skill hall, both these have only been completely opposite our expectations, and we couldn't get many things from there, but the rewards are decent. Let's do one last stretch before it's time to leave," Long Chen said as he extended his hands towards Chu Miao.

Chu Miao held his hands. Long Chen pulled her closer and picked her in his arms like a princess before he stepped on his Spirit Sword that was flying in front of him.

His spirit sword carried him along as it started flying ahead.

Long Chen flew for the rest of the days, but he didn't find any other prominent place.

The 14 days were over, and a portal appeared before them.

Long Chen had already been explained about it. He had known that the portals would appear before them after the time is over. As soon as they stepped inside the portal, they would come out of the Divine Heaven Sect.

He was also told that the portal would only remain open for 5 minutes. If they still didn't enter the portal, they would never be able to leave the sect. They would forever be trapped in the sect and die.

"I guess that's all the time we had. Well, we did see most of the significant places, at least. It was a rewarding trip," Chu Miao muttered as she saw the portal.

"Let's go," she said to Long Chen.

"Wait a minute," Long Chen said to Chu Miao.

He put his treasure robe inside his storage ring and wore his old robe. He also put his Spirit Sword in his storage ring.

"We can leave now," he said as he held her hands and walked towards the portal.

"Oh right, don't tell the sect what we found. There is seriously something wrong with the sect. Just talk about the gravity that we faced and that we weren't able to enter any significant places," Long Chen told Chu Miao before he entered the portal with her.

He stepped out of the other side and found himself outside the sect.

Chu Miao heard his words and grew confused as to what he was saying. She wondered if he was saying that because he didn't want to give the Flute of War to the sect, but after going through all this with him, she trusted Long Chen even more. She decided to do as he said.

As soon as Long Chen stepped out of the Divine Heaven Sect, a shadow appeared some distance away from where he was standing.

"Tian... Shen... " the shadow said as it looked towards the portal before it disappeared.

Long Chen had stepped out of the Divine Heaven Sect, not knowing of the fact that he had missed something.

If he had just a little more time, If he had traveled for another half an hour in the same direction, he would have reached a place that he would never have imagined.

There was a sand desert ahead of him, which he would have reached after flying for half an hour. There were tens of thousands of bodies lying in the desert, lifeless. The sand in that desert was blood red in color.

Long Chen left the Divine Heaven Sect and saw the Elders of the other sects standing there.

"Looks like we lost the bet. 2 Members of the Dark Soul Sect survived," an Elder said with a disappointed look on his face.

"So what if they had people that survived? Only 2 of them survived. The number of survivors would be the lowest compared to other sects," the Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect said.

Chapter 427 - 427: You All Must Die As Well

Long Chen walked towards Mi Yao, who was the Elder that was assigned to escort their Team. She was standing right beside Elder Devi, who was an Elder of the Devil Worshipping Sect.

Almost everyone was looking at Long Chen at the moment while they waited for others to come out. Soon, another portal opened, and two more people came out from it. Those two people that came out were Manxiang Li and his fellow female disciple.

Elder Devi couldn't help but sigh as he saw the portal close behind them. Previously, he had hoped that more disciples from his sect would come out, but he couldn't help but feel sad as he saw that only two had come out. That meant that seven disciples were killed while only two managed to survive. If he included the girl that went missing, they lost 8 of their top disciples.

The other Elders also eagerly waited to see how their sect fared compared to others.

Long Chen reached near Mi Yao, who instantly started asking him questions.

"Are the others dead?" She asked Long Chen. She wanted to know if the rest of his team members were dead.

"Yeah, they all died and not in a pleasant way," Long Chen replied to her with no grief on his face. It seemed as if it didn't affect him in the least that people from his team died.

My Yao sighed as she looked at Long Chen.

"Shouldn't you feel bad even a little? You were their team leader," Mi Yao said.

"Why should I feel bad? Didn't you see that most of them left me right at the start? They were not my Team Members. I only had two team members, one of whom died. I'm sad about not being able to save him, but other than him, I don't care about anyone that died," Long Chen straight away replied to her.

"It's a waste trying to make you understand. Anyway, did you find any good treasures inside? Anything from the list?" She asked Long Chen.

"Nope. Whatever information you gave us was all wrong. The places we found were nothing like you described. I believe that we found their treasure hall, but we couldn't even enter it. There was a gravity field surrounding it. The

closer we came, the harder it became to manage that gravity. Let alone me. Even Yang Sen and Tang Jin weren't able to get anywhere near that. It was a wasted trip for us," Long Chen said to her. Chu Miao looked towards him briefly, but she said nothing. Only after some time did she start talking.

"Is that right?" Mi Yao asked Chu Miao as she seemed somewhat doubtful of Long Chen's words.

"He's right. I couldn't even take a single step towards the tower before I started feeling like I was suffocating," Chu Miao answered her.

"If that's what you want to claim, then fine," Mi Yao let out with a wry smile on her face.

Manxiang Li also reached near Elder Devi by now, but his reaction was completely opposite.

The first thing Manxiang Li did was that he apologized to Elder Devi. He asked for forgiveness for not being able to save his fellow disciples, which was completely opposite to what Long Chen did.

Mi Yao couldn't help but smile wryly as she saw Manxiang Li's difference. She couldn't help but praise Manxiang Li for acting like a genuine leader.

"It is all right. It was a dangerous mission, and I'm sure that you faced some unpleasant situations. I'm sure that you did your best to save them, But It is almost impossible to save everyone in places like these," Elder Devi replied to Manxiang Li as he ruffled up his hair.

"Tell me, what did you face inside? Did you find any treasures?" Elder Devi asked them.

"We found some exceptional places, and there's a possibility that those places were the treasure towers and the skill towers, but we couldn't get close to those places as there was a powerful barrier surrounding them. I don't think any disciple from any sect was able to do it. It was just too powerful," Manxiang Li replied to him.

"But we did find some good things. I'll tell you when we get back," he added.

"That's good. Now that we are done, let's leave," Elder Devi said as he brought his flying beast out of his storage space.

Manxiang Li looked towards Long Chen and nodded his head before he brought out his beast from his beast bag as well.

"I'll see you later," Manxiang Li told Long Chen.

"Wait! No one can leave!" the Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect said.

He was waiting for Tang Jin and others to come out, but after they didn't come out for a long time, he couldn't take it anymore. He realized that something was wrong here.

The other sects also started to feel the same way.

The righteous sects started walking towards Long Chen and Manxiang Li.

"Tell me what happened inside? Why isn't anyone else outside yet?" The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect said as he released his powerful aura towards Long Chen and Manxiang Li.

"That's right. Why are you the only ones that are out now? What happened, tell us right now."

" Why is no one out! What did you do to them! Tell me right now."

Slowly almost every sect started voicing out. The atmosphere had turned heated, and everyone knew that something big must have happened inside. They all wanted to know what happened inside. Did someone kill them, or was there a trap? There was no way that those four people could survive while the others died.

The situation only grew worse when the righteous sects got there.

"Where is Yang Sen? Tell me before I kill you all!" the Sect Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

Generally, the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect would have been furious at that statement, but he was more focused on finding out about Tang Jin, who was the most important thing for him at the moment.

"Why are you all asking me that question? It's not like I was their personal secretary. We went our separate way, and they went their separate way. The time to leave has long passed, if they still aren't out, maybe they are dead," Long Chen replied as he acted ignorantly.

" You expect us to believe that they all died while you lived? Is that what you are trying to say?" the Sect Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

"That is what I mean. And why does our surviving have anything to do with them not surviving? We went our different ways, found different places, and

faced different sets of trials. It's really not impossible for them to die if they found a more important place and faced some stronger test which resulted in their death," Long Chen told him. "Your logic doesn't make sense unless you believe that I killed them all."

"You killing them is impossible, but you definitely have a hand in their death! You four probably worked together and made a trap for them!" The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said. She hated Long Chen already, and she blamed him.

"That's a stupid excuse. I made a trap to kill the strongest disciples? Even if they were trash, they shouldn't be this stupid to fall in the trap at the same time, And before you say that I used some trap that was already inside, let me tell you. I'm not the owner of the Divine Heaven Sect. I have no control over what happens inside. Stop bringing your personal hate to things," Long Chen refuted.

"It doesn't matter! If all members of our sects died, then why are you still alive! You four must die as well. Give them company," The Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

Chapter 428 - 428: I Killed Them

There was anger in all the Elders' hearts. They were angry as well as grieved that their disciples were killed; moreover, they were mad that their disciples were dead, whereas these four disciples were still alive.

Not only the Righteous sects, but most of the evil sects were also thinking about the same thing.

"What nonsense are you all talking about? You want to kill those that survived because others couldn't survive? Have you all gone mad? I don't care who you are and how many of you want to do this, but if you come after my disciples? I would be forced to fight. Even if I die, I can guarantee that some of you will die with me," Elder Devi said without backing down as he hid Manxiang Li and the girl behind him.

Mi Yao, on the other hand, didn't look as determined as Elder Devi. She was instantly worried as she saw 17 elders against her. She would have been much more willing if it was a fight of Righteous against the Evil Sects, but when she was faced with 17 elders, she realized that there was no option. They would all die if the fight happened, and she knew that.

"I understand that you are all upset, but can we talk about that with a calm mind? We all understand that they are too weak to kill them all. Even if it was about setting up a trap for others, then that's a far stretch as well. Why would they try to do something so unnecessary instead of searching for the treasures? Also, even if we believe that they killed righteous sects disciple because the Evil Sects don't like righteous sects, why would they kill the disciples of us unorthodox sects," she said in order to calm her things down.

"I heard you talking. He said that he didn't get anything inside. It is clear that their intentions were never to find the treasures, but to kill others. If they were seriously looking for treasures, then they would have found at least some treasure there. Previously, amongst the ones that came out, there had never been someone who didn't find a treasure. It's clear that they weren't focused on finding treasures, but on killing people," the Elder of Dual Cultivation sect said. She had heard when Long Chen talked about his journey inside as she'd been closer to them.

All the Elders were getting more suspicious, but to most of them, it didn't really matter if they did it or not. Most of them knew that it was impossible for these four guys to kill the disciples that were stronger than them. But they still tried to kill them as they didn't want their sect to be ashamed. It was

already bad enough to lose their peak disciples, but it would be even worse to hear people say that their disciples weren't good enough. People would always shame them that disciples of weaker sects came out, but not their disciples.

That was also a subtle reasoning that played out in the heads of the elders of the True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect that had the highest reputation to lose, especially when they were called the strongest.

"Make them tell us the truth of what happened, and nothing bad would happen," the Elder of the True Dao Sect said to the Elder of the Devil Worshipping Sect. He didn't even care about what Mi Yao had to say as he didn't even put her in his eyes.

"We can talk about their experience, and I assure you that they will be honest. If you still try to hurt them, then I won't stay Silent," Elder Devi responded.

He looked towards Manxiang Li and placed his hand above his head gently.

"Li, tell them everything that happened. Don't worry about anything," Elder Devi said to Manxiang Li.

Manxiang Li glanced at Long Chen for a brief moment before he started speaking.

"When we entered the sect, the first thing we saw were stairs..."

Manxiang Li started speaking and explained everything he saw inside the sect, including the towers with powerful gravity surrounding them. He talked about everything, but he changed some incidents.

He didn't talk about the test they went through to get the Flute of War; instead, he completely skipped that part.

"After that, the teleportation portal appeared before us, and we left."

Manxiang Li finished the story on that point.

"You hear that? He didn't even see anyone after that gravity tower. They walked their different ways, and what happened to your disciples has nothing to do with the Devil Worshipping Sect," Elder Devi said.

"Not so fast," The Buddha Temple Elder said.

"What? Do you still doubt my disciples?" Elder Devi asked.

"I must say that previously I didn't believe that they killed them, but after hearing the words of your disciple, I am now sure that he is hiding something.

"Hiding what?" Elder Devi asked.

"You all know that our Buddha Temple follows the principle of the heart and walks the path of truth. We also have a skill that makes us able to see if someone is telling the truth or not. Although it cost me five years of my life to use it for 5 minutes, making it less practical for me to use, every time I use it, It never fails. I used that skill on your disciple, and I'm sure that he lied," The Elder of the Buddha Temple said.

Elder Sui Ru of the Mighty Sword Sect looked at him with a weird look on her face. She was angry at him for not using that skill on those two when they crashed the marriage of her disciple. If he had used it, they would all know that those two guys were lying about them forcing the bride, but she also understood that he didn't think that her matters were worthy for him to lose a few years of his life, which made her even angrier.

As everyone heard the words of the Buddha Temple Elder, they felt a shock. No one was sure that these guys killed them, but the new discovery made them believe that there was some truth to it.

"Tell me if you saw Tang Sen die or not?" the Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect asked.

Manxiang Li was stunned. He didn't know if the Elder of Buddha Temple was bluffing or if he could actually see his lies. He didn't answer.

"Answer!" the Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect roared.

"No" Manxiang Li answered.

"It's a lie!" the Elder of Buddha Temple said.

The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect was furious as he brought his sword out, but he didn't attack. He needed more answers.

"You saw Yang Sen die? The Elder of True Dao Sect asked at the same time.

Manxiang Li was feeling trapped. He didn't know what to do. His lies weren't working even a little.

Even Elder Devi was surprised as he saw the perplexed look on the face of Manxiang Li. Even he believed that the matter wasn't as straightforward.

"Tell me, did you see them die?" Elder Devi asked Manxiang Li.

"No, I didn't watch them die," Manxiang Li said.

"Lie," Buddha Temple Elder said.

"Were they killed by traps, or did someone kill them?" The Mighty Sect Elder asked.

"I don't know," Manxiang Li replied.

"Lie!" Buddha Temple Elder announced.

"Did you kill them?" the Profound Yin Snatching Sect Elder asked.

"No," Manxiang Li said. His head was starting to spin.

"It's the truth." Buddha Temple Elder claimed.

"Did he kill them?" the Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said as she pointed her finger towards Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't react. He was just watching Manxiang Li's reaction, without the least bit of worry. He was somewhat surprised that Manxiang Li hadn't said his name even after all that,

"Stop wasting time. I was the one that killed them," Long Chen said, shocking everyone.

Chapter 429 - 429: Most Of Them

"I was the one that killed them," Long Chen said in front of everyone.

He had long ago realized that the Elders wanted to kill them for whatever reason they could find, what he hadn't thought was that they would have a person who would be able to see through lies.

He was already prepared for the fight that was about to ensue as soon as the Heavenly Slaughter Sect's Elder said his first word to stop Manxiang Li from leaving.

He didn't react in all this time as he was waiting to see how Manxiang Li would respond, but it was good. He managed to see that even after all that, Manxiang Li didn't betray him, but even if he had betrayed him, Long Chen wouldn't have worried.

He was prepared to go through a battle with Elders as soon as he had killed the Disciples inside the Divine Heaven Sect.

"You killed them all?" The Sect Master of the True Dao Sect asked.

"Not all, but I killed the most of them. It's not like you would've let us leave even if I wasn't the one that killed them," Long Chen told her.

"He's telling the truth," The Buddha Sect Elder said.

"Long Chen! You! How could you do this! I was thinking about standing up to save you, but you really did it? You didn't even find the treasures, but killed all their disciples?" Mi Yao said to Long Chen with a disgusted look on her face.

Long Chen looked towards her and started laughing.

"You were going to help me? Do you think I couldn't read your face? You wouldn't even move if one of them had attacked me. Stop trying to act like a bigger person," Long Chen said to the woman.

Mi Yao's face turned somewhat red as she heard his response as that was precisely what she had thought when she saw the situation going south.

She had only stayed here to save her reputation. If someone had attacked and killed the Disciples, she would have simply left and claimed that she was too late to save them.

"You can die for all I care! I'm leaving," Mi Yao said as she brought her flying beast out of her beast bag and flew away.

"I expected nothing less," Long Chen muttered as he watched her leave.

Elder Devi, on the other hand, stayed behind, still protecting Manxiang Li.

"You lied to save a friend. I should've expected that. That's how you always are. Even in the sect, you take the blames of others to save them. I must say that our Sect is lucky to have you. No matter what happens, I won't leave you. I will fight till my last breath," Elder Devi said to Manxiang Li.

While the others were more focused on Long Chen, he whispered something in Manxiang Li's ears.

"Leave on my flying beast. Take your Junior Sister with you. I'll stop all of them here!" Elder Devi said.

"You're staying behind for me, how can I leave," Manxiang Li replied.

"Think about your Junior Sister. As her Senior Brother, it is your duty to save her. Take her; otherwise, she will die here with everyone for no reason," Elder Devi said to him.

"How about you leave me behind? They are more focused on me. You can escape with her," Manxiang Li said.

"No, you won't be able to stop even a single one of them. If I stay behind, I can stop them for some time. Leave!" Elder Devi said.

Manxiang Li was conflicted about it. He didn't want to leave the others behind, but the girl that was with him was also his responsibility. He didn't want her to die because of him.

He had two choices now. One was to stay behind and die with everyone else or leave Elder Devi, Long Chen, and others behind to save his Junior Sister.

This was one of the toughest decisions he had to take. He looked towards the scared face of his Junior Sister and couldn't help but decide to do it. He had agreed to leave with her. If he could save a life, then he was ready.

"I will try to stop them. While they are distracted, leave. I will stop them," Elder Devi told him, but before he could commence his plan, Long Chen had started speaking.

"Well, Is there anything else you want to ask before you all die?" Long Chen asked them.

Everyone looked as if they were looking at an idiot.

"Even your Elder has left in fear. Do you think you can still survive?" Elder Sui Ru of the Mighty Sword Sect asked in a mocking tone.

"Well, I can kill four disciples of yours in the city where you stayed, and still walk inside the marriage of your head disciple, what else is there that I shouldn't be able to do?" Long Chen asked as he smiled.

Since all bridges were already burned, he decided to make things even worse.

"You!" Sui Ru fumed in anger. She hadn't realized that it was Long Chen, who had killed her disciples in the city.

"So you had the experience of killing disciples! You especially came here to kill everyone! But we know everything now. Your time is over," the Elder of the Beast Hall said.

Almost every Elder was ready to attack Long Chen.

Long Chen had extremely sharp senses, and he had heard the plan of Elder Ku and Manxiang Li, but he didn't bother to stop them. In fact, he did the attention-grabbing himself because he had a plan of his own.

"Die!" The Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect let out as he raised his hand towards the sky.

A river of blood appeared above his head, which he shot towards Long Chen.

The Elder of True Dao Sect also attacked. He used his Golden Lotus Skill. A golden lotus appeared above his hand that was as large as his head. The Golden Lotus shot towards Long Chen.

Manxiang Li utilized this opportunity as he unwillingly took his Junior Disciple and left on his flying beast.

"Where are you running off to? Do you think you can run?" Two Elders noticed Manxiang Li leave.

They were about to attack him, but Elder Devi appeared before them.

"Vision Impairment!" He let out as he used his skill.

Using that skill, he was able to take someone's vision away from them for 20 seconds.

While the Elders couldn't see, Elder Devi attacked them. Two Giant Golden Palms appeared before Elder Devi and shot towards the Elders.

Even though both the Elders couldn't see, there were still sky realm Cultivators and could feel the flow of Qi towards them.

They changed the direction of the attacks that they were going to shoot towards Manxiang Li and attacked towards the direction in front of them.

Both of their attacks collided with the attack of Elder Devi. The attacks were stopped, and the Elders survived.

The 20 seconds were also over. They looked towards the direction Manxiang Li had left, but couldn't see him anywhere.

"So what if you helped him leave? We will still find him. Don't worry about that. We will find him, and we will kill him," they claimed as they stared at Elder Devi.

"You would have to stay alive for that," Elder Devi said as he ran towards them.

On the opposite side, most of the Elders were focused on Long Chen. They all fired their attacks towards Long Chen as they wanted to have a contribution in killing him as well, but as soon as the attack got near him, he teleported away.

The Elders looked back towards Long Chen, who was standing 100 meters away from them.

"Time for the real show to start," Long Chen muttered.

Chapter 430 - 430: Blood Rain

"None of them is stronger than Lang Jing, every sect sent Initial Sky Realm Elders," Long Chen muttered as he watched the 15 Elders looking at him. The other 2 Elders were fighting Elder Devi.

All 15 Elders were looking towards Long Chen, standing near each other.

Long Chen stared at the Elders, as his eyes started shining with a misty light.

Long Chen started using his law of illusion as he disappeared before their eyes. Even though he was still standing there, the others couldn't see him.

He was making them seem as if he wasn't there. As he was standing quite a distance away from them, and because the Elders were standing in close proximity, it made it easier for him to keep an eye on all of them. He was able to cast his illusion on all of them at the same time.

The Elders were confused, thinking about how Long Chen could disappear. They looked all around, but they didn't see him.

"Where did he go?" the Elder of Beast Hall exclaimed in confusion.

While the Elders were confused, Long Chen introduced a false place before them that looked the same as the reality; the only change was that he made the things invisible that he didn't want others to see.

Even when he brought the Snake Monarch out of his storage ring, the others couldn't see it. Long Chen also brought Orion out of his storage ring.

"What happened now?" the Snake Monarch asked Long Chen as soon as he came out.

The Snake Monarch was sleeping when Long Chen brought him outside. He still looked somewhat slow.

"It's time to kill. Everyone is our enemy, and we need to kill them. As long as I can keep my focus on them and they don't spread out too far, They won't be able to see you, so as soon as you see someone moving away, use your powers to stop them and kill them," Long Chen informed the Snake Monarch.

"Orion, kill them in one strike. Don't let anyone survive, but don't get caught either. You're still in the Earth Realm, but your speed should still be faster than them," Long Chen told Orion, without looking towards him. He had to keep his eyes on the Elders.

"He can't disappear in thin air! Did he carry a rare teleportation talisman that helped him escape?" the Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

"I didn't see any Talisman in his hand before he disappeared. He must still be hiding here; It's definitely a skill!" the elder of Profound Blood Sect exclaimed.

"He had a girl with him, right? Let's force him out using her," The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said as she looked back towards the direction where Chu Miao had been standing before. She couldn't see her either.

When Mi Yao left this place, she didn't only leave Long Chen behind, but she also left Chu Miao behind. Mi Yao had escaped alone, without caring for anyone else.

Previously everyone was so focused on Long Chen that they completely ignored Chu Miao. Long Chen had already taken precautions about it, though. He had already talked to Chu Miao about this before the fight even started. Long Chen had told Chu Miao to leave the place as soon as she saw people being unable to see him.

She was still standing behind, looking at everything in confusion. She could still see Long Chen as well as 2 of his beasts, but it seemed as if the others weren't able to see him. She realized that he must be using a skill to achieve that.

She brought her Winger Tiger out of her beast bag and climbed on it, but instead of moving away, she moved towards Long Chen.

The Winged Tiger stopped before Long Chen.

"Come with me! We should leave now," Chu Miao said to Long Chen.

"You go ahead. If I leave, everything will go to waste," Long Chen told her without even looking at her.

"I'm not leaving you behind. If you're staying, then I'm staying," Chu Miao replied before she stepped down from her beast and stood beside Long Chen.

"You will unnecessarily die if something goes wrong. As I said, things will only go wrong if you stay here. I am not leaving before killing them. It's much better if they die as I still need to go back to the sect. It would only get more troublesome with all these sects after me. Better to kill them to stop the spread of this hate," Long Chen said, smilingly.

"She's not here either," the Elders were even more confused as they noticed that Chu Miao was missing as well.

"Ahhh," a scream resounded in the surrounding suddenly as Orion bit off the head of one of the Elders.

The Snake Monarch had also become as big as it could, and flew around them, circling them.

"Spread out! Something's here," the Elder of the Buddha Sect said to the others, but as soon as the words escaped his mouth, the Snake Monarch swallowed him.

They kept hearing screams of Elders that kept dying, but when they looked back, they saw that Elders were standing there just fine. In less than 5 Minutes, ten elders had died already. Of the 17 Elders, only seven were remaining by now.

While Snake Monarch focused on the Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect, Orion attacked the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect.

When the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect was targeted, he felt the sense of danger. He closed his eyes as he felt the flow of killing intent. After focusing more on the killing intent, he recognized the direction it was coming from. He attacked to his left with his sword.

Orion had jumped towards the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect, and he was still in the air, he saw the sword coming towards him and changed his direction mid-air and attacked another Elder instead.

Another scream resounded in the surroundings.

"Enough!" the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect roared in anger as he spread his aura everywhere. He stepped on the air and kept going higher.

" This is an illusion! We can't see the reality! It's evident that the boy is still here!" The Sect Elder of the True Dao Sect also realized the things by now.

The elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect was standing 50 feet above the ground as he raised his hand high in the air.

"Blood Rain!" he bellowed. A sea of blood appeared above his head and covered the whole Sky. Suddenly the sea stopped floating in the air and fell down to the ground.

Although it was called blood rain, it seemed less like a rain and more like someone dumped a large amount of water everywhere.

The blood fell on everyone, including Long Chen and his beasts.

Although the blood didn't harm anyone, it made Long Chen's illusion ineffective.

The Blood Rain was a skill of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect that broke all the skills that were in use, and those skills couldn't be used for 5 minutes.

The Elder of True Dao Sect was also casting his skill, but that came under the blood rain's effects as well and stopped working.

Even though Long Chen knew the Law of Illusion, at the end of the day, he was still using the illusion Skill that he received because of comprehending the law of illusion. His skill also lost its effect, and his illusion broke.

Everyone saw Long Chen and the Bodies of 11 dead Elders. Elder Devi's body was also lying on the ground. He was killed by those two Elders before Long Chen had used his illusion, so only six elders were remaining there.

Chapter 431 - 431: Using Flute Of War

"So you were right before us, toying with us!" the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect bellowed as he looked towards Long Chen.

Chu Miao was behind Long Chen, worried at how the situation had changed.

"Go stay in the back," Long Chen told her as he brought his Spirit Sword out of his Storage Ring.

He also brought his King's Sword.

The Snake Monarch was also visible now, which had shocked most of the Elders.

Seeing a mid-Sky Realm Beast was shocking, especially when none of them had a Cultivation higher than the 2nd stage of Sky Realm.

"You 5 handle that beast! I'll take care of the Kid!" The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect told the others.

As the Snake Monarch was already targeting the Elder of the True Dao Sect, he didn't argue with the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect about the right to kill Long Chen.

5 Elders started attacking Snake Monarch, whereas the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect stepped in the air towards Long Chen.

"It's the first time I've seen an Earth Realm Insect go against me. It shall be the last time as well!" The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect said.

"Oh? Do you hate facing an Earth Realm kid? How about a sky realm kid?" Long Chen said with an amused smile on his face as he brought out the Flute of War.

"The Flute of War?" The Heavenly Slaughter Sect Elder was shocked to see that Item. It was one of the most well important Items of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect and one of the best War Tools. It was said to be something that could change the whole outcome of a war.

The Elder started running towards Long Chen to stop him from playing it, but it was too late.

Long Chen played the Flute of War. Even though he wasn't talented in playing flute and the sound that came out of the flute didn't sound pleasant, it still worked miracles.

Long Chen used the Flute of War on himself.

The Flute of War was a special item that could either strengthen the person using it by one major Cultivation Realm or strengthen his army a little. Long Chen didn't have an army, but he had his beasts; still, he didn't use it on them as it would have no effect.

Both his beasts were already stronger than him in cultivation so that the Flute wouldn't have worked on them.

He used the Flute on himself, and his cultivation increased instantly.

He was previously at the 6th Stage of the Earth Realm, but now he became the 6th Stage Sky Realm cultivator.

Although his cultivation was higher, he still couldn't use the full strength of this high cultivation realm. He was still restricted by his bloodline as he hadn't completed his current trial.

Most of his strength was restricted, but he still grew more powerful.

A 6th Stage Sky Realm cultivator with his strength restricted was still more powerful than a 2nd Stage Sky Realm cultivator unless the 2nd Stage Sky Realm cultivator had something up his sleeve or he had a bloodline like Long Chen, but that was impossible.

Other than the person this bloodline belonged to, only Long Chen and Tian Shen had this bloodline. That was what he was told at least.

Long Chen's cultivation increased. He could feel the power coursing through his veins. It was the power that he never felt before. He felt like he was closer to nature than he had ever been and felt the Qi more clearly than he had even been able to feel before.

He tried to do something that only Sky Realm cultivators could do. He tried walking on air, and he was able to do it.

"Amazing," he let out with a smile.

The Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect had reached near Long Chen and attacked him with his sword, but Long Chen blocked his attack with ease.

He didn't look troubled at all. He could feel that he was much stronger than the Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect. He pushed his sword forth with a jerk.

The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect was pushed back five steps just from that small push.

"Is it better now?" Long Chen asked the man as he glanced towards him.

He used his Earthly Monarch Effect as he appeared behind the man. His Earthly Monarch Effect was also more powerful because of his increase in cultivation.

Long Chen swung his sword towards the man's neck. The Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect reacted as fast as he could and brought his sword in the way of Long Chen's attack.

Both the swords clashed, and the Elder was tossed back like a broken toy. The Elder crashed on the ground 50 meters away from Long Chen.

"I must say this is fun. I now understand why old guys always bully the weaker ones," Long Chen laughed as he walked towards the man.

The others were still busy with Snake Monarch, so they didn't have the opportunity to look in this direction; otherwise, they would've been even more shocked.

The fight on their side wasn't less shocking either. Even though they knew that the beast they were facing was a mid sky realm beast, they had never thought that this fight was going to be this difficult.

Most of these guys had previously hunted or defeated mid-sky realm beasts, but the beast they were facing now was nowhere near that level.

They didn't realize that the beast they faced now was a beast that had the Ancient Bloodline. The skill of Snake Monarch also troubled them the most.

No matter what, the person Snake Monarch used his skill on could not move.

It was a skill they hadn't seen before, and they found it challenging to face.

Another thing that the snake monarch did was that it had decreased its size to the smallest it could, which made it almost impossible for them to hit him. The tiny Sky Realm Snake Monarch was as fast as lightning. No one was able to hit it.

The Snake Monarch was not alone in facing them. There was also the best Assassin Beast known as the Devil Hunter Beast.

Orion was like a stealthy assassin that stayed hidden and only attacked when the Snake Monarch used its skill to hold a cultivator in its place. At that time, Orion appeared out of nowhere and bit the head off of those Elders.

After some time, almost all the Elders were killed. Only 2 Elders were remaining.

One was the Elder of True Dao Sect, fighting against Snake Monarch, while the other was the Elder of Heavenly Slaughter Sect that was being thrashed by Long Chen all over the place as if he was a toy made to be beaten.

"Enough playing around. Might as well kill you now," Long Chen muttered as he appeared beside the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect.

The Elder was bleeding all over the place. His hands have been cut off as well, and most of his bones were broken.

The Elder just looked at Long Chen with hate-filled eyes.

Long Chen smiled one last time to give those hateful eyes something good to see before they were closed forever.

He swung his sword and separated the head of the Elder from his body in one stroke.

On the other hand, the Snake Monarch had also killed the Elder of the True Dao Sect before he flew towards Long Chen.

"Are you sick or something?" Long Chen asked the Snake Monarch.

"Why?" the Snake Monarch asked.

"It's strange seeing you so silent. You didn't even brag today, nor did you curse the enemies. You are definitely sick!" Long Chen said to the Snake Monarch.

Chapter 432 - 432: Effects?

"You're sick; your whole family is sick! I was in the middle of my sleep, and you brought me out to handle those trash! How do you expect my mood to be! Send me back before I start cursing your ancestors!" the Snake Monarch said in a cranky tone.

"Geez, calm down. You can sleep as long as you want now," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face.

He sent the Snake Monarch back to his Beast Region.

Orion also walked up to Long Chen.

Long Chen patted the head of Orion as he said, "Good work Orion."

He sent Orion back to his beast region as well. He also put the Flute of War and his weapons in his storage ring.

He walked towards the body of the Elders and took the rings from their fingers.

"The elders must have some decent resources. It would be good to collect them. The ones that aren't of use to me, I can give them to the clan. The clan will only get strong," he muttered as he took the ring of every Elder.

Long Chen kept all the rings and started walking towards Chu Miao, who was still standing in the back.

Chu Miao couldn't believe what she just saw. She thought that she was dreaming.

Long Chen was walking towards her when he suddenly started feeling pain. The pain only increased and kept increasing with each second.

The pain was so unbearable that it made him scream out loud.

"Ahhhhh," Long Chen roared in pain as he gripped his chest tightly. Soon, his body lost its strength as he fell down to the ground.

He couldn't speak, and he couldn't move his body, but the pain was still as high.

His cultivation returned back to normal. He was once again the 6th stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

Long Chen was lying on the ground, screaming in his mind. His eyes had turned red because of pain.

It was like his body had shut down, and he could only use his mind and his eyes.

The pain felt as if he was being stabbed by tens of thousands of needles every second. His heart was racing, and his body was getting cold.

"Long Chen, are you alright?" Chu Miao let out as she ran towards Long Chen.

'Xun! What the fuck is happening!' Long Chen roared in his mind as he asked Xun.

"I-i don't know. It could either be the side effect of using the Flute of War or because your body couldn't handle the sudden increase in strength out of nowhere. I think it should be the first option, as your body isn't that weak. You have the Demon Monarch Physique and the bloodline of Master. Your body definitely isn't weak. It shouldn't have such a massive reaction," Xun said.

"It must be the side effect of using that Flute," She added.

Long Chen was in so much pain that he had only experienced once before. Even when his heart demon had tortured him, he didn't feel this much pain. The only time he felt this much pain was when Mu Zheng targeted his Martial Soul in the Dark Soul Sect.

'Why didn't you tell me about such an important thing...' Long Chen asked as he laid on the ground.

Chu Miao came up to him and picked him up. She placed his head on her lap.

"Hey, are you alright? What happened suddenly? Say something," She said to him.

She didn't understand why Long Chen fell down so suddenly.

He wasn't even harmed in the fight, so she couldn't understand what was happening.

"I didn't know about this side effect either," Xun replied.

The pain slowly started decreasing, and Long Chen found some relief, but he still couldn't move his body.

'Didn't you say that someone used this against Tian Shen in a fight? If it causes such side effects just after 10 minutes of use, it should be clear!' Long Chen said to her through his thoughts.

"I seriously didn't know. Tian Shen faced a person who used this flute, but he killed him in less than 10 minutes. Maybe that's why we didn't see the side effects?" Xun replied to Long Chen.

The pain was all gone by now, but Long Chen's body was still not under his control.

'If you killed the guy with this dangerous flute, you should've taken the flute! Not leave it there without finding anything about it. Even the sect didn't mention any side effects,' Long Chen let out.

"Are you listening? You're not paralyzed, are you?" Chu Miao asked with a worried look on her face as she saw Long Chen's eyes open, but he was not moving his body or answering her questions. "I need to take you to the Sect. They will heal you."

Chu Miao carried Long Chen to her Winged Tiger and helped him up. She sat behind him, hugging him tightly to prevent him from falling.

The Winged Tiger took to the air and carried Long Chen.

"We did take the flute, but Tian Shen gifted that to a girl without ever using it. I don't know how that flute came here; neither do I know about its side effects. It's my first time seeing that myself," Xun said to him.

'Sigh, I don't even know if the effects of this thing are going to go away or not. I need that cleansing liquid again. I wish I could've collected it,' Long Chen thought.

"Even if you had collected it, would you be able to use it? You can't even use your hands or speak, let alone taking that thing out of your ring and drinking it. Don't worry though, Even though this item had this unknown side effect; it should definitely heal. Most probably before we get back to the sect," Xun said.

'It would be better if it does. It might be troublesome after we get there as Mi Yao would be there. I need to discuss some things with Chu Miao about that,' Long Chen thought.

They kept flying towards the Dark Soul Sect and even passed by the Blazing Sun Empire.

Long Chen couldn't even move his head to look in the direction of the Palace.

He had already killed everyone from the Beast Hall, and the other Sects, and no one knew about his girls that were staying in the Royal Palace of the Blazing Sun Empire.

He was determined to come back after he dealt with Lang Jing, and then they would be able to leave from here.

He also had some things that he needed to help them with, especially after he received that Dual Cultivation Technique that was useful for them all.

Long Chen sat as if he was paralyzed while they traveled most of the way.

Throughout the way, Chu Miao kept telling him that he was going to be okay. The Sect would definitely be able to heal him. Even though her words made it seem as if she was trying to calm down Long Chen, in reality, she was the one that wasn't calm.

They traveled for day and night. Twenty-four hours had passed away, and Long Chen was still not able to move.

Chu Miao didn't stop her beast for even a second or rest as she was in a hurry to take Long Chen back. The only thing that still kept her calm was that she could see the light in Long Chen's eyes. She could also feel his breathing, which was stable.

Another hour passed away.

Long Chen was still thinking if he would be able to heal in time or not when he felt a sensation in his finger.

He tried moving it, and it was moving. He tried moving his hands, but his hands didn't move yet.

"Like the side effects are slowly going away. I hope it's not too late before I am healed," he thought.

Chapter 433 - 433: Lie

After another hour passed, Long Chen was finally able to move his body.

"I can move. You can release me now," he said to Chu Miao, who was still hugging him firmly.

"Ah, right. Are you really fine?" Chu Miao asked as she loosened her hold on Long Chen.

"Yeah, I'm good now. Just some side effects of using the power I don't own," Long Chen replied to her.

He adjusted his body so that he was in a better sitting posture. He stretched his arms that he hadn't been able to move in a long time. He felt great at being able to use his body again.

"Anyway, let's get back to the Important things. We are going back to the sect, and you know that Mi Yao will be there. I need you to tell the sect exactly what I say. We can't tell them what actually happened," He said to Chu Miao.

"Oh, right. What do you want me to say?" Chu Miao asked him. She also wondered what he planned.

Long Chen told her everything he wanted her to do today. He gave her full brief about what he expected to happen when they reached the sect and how they should react.

Chu Miao was shocked about that plan and a little uncertain as well.

"Should we really do that? It might harm her," She interjected. She didn't think that it was a good idea.

Long Chen glanced at her briefly before he shook her head.

"I don't really care about her. It was more like a test, and you know how she fared in it. Not only me, she even left you behind. She deserves a little stick to bring her to her place," Long Chen answered her.

"That... does make sense. Alright. I'll follow your lead," Chu Miao agreed as she nodded her head.

Their flying beast continued flying towards the Dark Soul Sect.

"Can I ask you something? Where did you find that talking snake? It was so powerful. I can't even imagine how you could tame something like that," Chu Miao asked Long Chen after some time.

"I found him long ago. He wasn't as strong at that time," Long Chen answered her, but he didn't tell her that he found her in the Dark Soul Sect when she took him to the place that held beasts caught by the sect.

If she hadn't taken him there, he might not have met the snake monarch either.

"Oh, you were lucky to find a beast like that when it was weak. I haven't even heard of a beast that could talk like us, but I understand that there are too many strange things in this world. Anything is possible," Chu Miao said.

"That's true. Anyway, I hope you understand the plan. The key point will be not bulging from your points no matter what happens," Long Chen told her.

"I understand what I have to do. I'll try my best not to get caught," Chu Miao answered him.

"Good," Long Chen nodded his head.

They continued flying back. Time kept passing. Day turned into the night, and the night turned into the day again.

They even rested midway for some time. Long Chen wanted to be in his best condition when he entered the sect.

After traveling for some more time, they finally saw a glimpse of their sect at some distance.

The Dark Soul Sect looked as majestic as ever, standing in the middle of nowhere, surrounded by the natural barriers.

They entered the premises of the sect. They were stopped by the guards of the Sect, who allowed them after seeing their badges.

The disciple badges also had another specialty as it could help in determining if the person was a real Disciple or an impersonator.

The Disciple badges had a slight shine when they were held by the cultivator they belonged to. Even if someone stole those badges, impersonating them was almost impossible as the shine would be lost whenever someone else held the badges.

After getting their badges checked, they were allowed entry into the sect.

They were half a day late compared to Mi Yao, who had come back to the sect before them.

She had already given her set of the explanation to the Sect Master about the events that occurred. Lang Jing couldn't believe it at first that Long Chen was dead. He didn't think that Long Chen would go out of his way to kill others when he had the special mission that was given to him by Lang Jing, his life depended on that.

Mi Yao had told him everything that happened but changed the events of the end.

She said that she tried to save Long Chen and Chu Miao. She stood up for them even when the other elders were against them, but she couldn't do anything. She couldn't save them. She could only leave after they were killed.

Lang Jing was furious at her for not saving Long Chen and the others. He was so mad that he had almost attacked Mi Yao. He was stopped and pulled back by the Grand Elders of the sect. The truth was that he was even angrier that he couldn't see Long Chen now. His whole plan was trashed, and he blamed Mi Yao for it.

The Grand Elders held him back and took him away to calm him down.

Lang Jing was just taken out of the Discussion Hall when Long Chen and Chu Miao reached there on the flying beast.

"W-what?"

No one could believe what they were seeing. Let alone, Lang Jing, even the other Grand Elders, couldn't believe what they were seeing. They had just heard Mi Yao's claim that she watched them die, and she was unable to save them, but they were right before their eyes.

Long Chen landed before them with Chu Miao.

"You're alive?" one of the Grand Elders asked.

"Why? Did Mi Yao, that traitor, tell you otherwise?" Long Chen asked her.

"Traitor? What do you mean?" Lang Jing asked.

"That bit*h killed us and left us behind. She even took all the treasures! If Manxiang Li hadn't found us and used his 'Life-Giving Pills' on us at the right

time, we would both be dead!" Long Chen claimed with a hate-filled look in his face.

"Manxiang Li? Are you talking about the head Disciple of the Devil Worshipping Sect? Why would he use his life-giving pills on you?" One of the Grand Elders asked with a suspicious look in his face.

Instead of Long Chen, Chu Miao answered this question. Long Chen had already planned this and knew that he would definitely be asked this question. He had told Chu Miao to answer this question to make their story seem more authentic.

"That's because Senior Brother Chen had saved his life inside the Divine Heaven Sect, and they had formed a friendship," Chu Miao replied.

"Well, I heard that Manxiang Li does have an unorthodox personality. It's not strange for him to use precious resources for unconventional reasons," one of the Grand Elder nodded his head as he looked towards them.

"So Mi Yao lied to us? I did find her words suspicious. Why would she be able to leave unharmed if she tried to save them from 17 elders and failed? It makes sense now."

"I can't believe she would do this. Such a grave mistake. The greed had made her lose her path."

The Grand Elders sighed as they shook their heads.

"You shouldn't have stopped me. That woman deserved to die," Lang Jing said as he freed himself from their hands.

"Calm Down, Jing. She will be punished. Let's just go confront her," the Grand Elder told Lang Jing before he looked in the direction of Long Chen. "Follow me."

Chapter 434 - 434: Give Up

Mi Yao, the Sect Master, and a few other people were still inside the Discussion Hall talking amongst themselves.

The Sect Master was quite sad that Mu Zhen hadn't survived inside the Divine Heaven Sect. Even though she knew that it was risky to send him there and that it was dangerous, she hadn't expected that he would die. The chances of him surviving should have been much higher, especially after he had so many resources being used on them.

In Fact, even his martial soul was strengthened by using something that was being saved by the previous generations of the sect masters for the future. She used up such a precious resource, and for what? To give Mu Zhen some extra months to live? Now she was starting to regret her decisions.

If she knew that he would die in the Divine Heaven Sect, she wouldn't have sent him there in the first place, or at least she wouldn't have used their Sect's greatest treasure on them. Now she had lost her disciple as well as lost the most precious treasure of the sect.

"Don't worry about that. I'm sure that you did your best. I know that if there was anything else you could've done, then you would have done it. Also, it's Long Chen's fault for killing everyone. It would've been fine if he had just killed the Righteous Sect disciples, but killing the disciples of the sects of Evil Sects was just looking for death," the Sect Master said.

"Yeah, he didn't even find any treasures in there. Instead, he just went ahead and created such trouble. It's a pity that we lost a talented individual, but if that was his personality, then I don't mind our sect losing him," Grand Elder Chu said to Mi Yao. He was quite angry at Long Chen after hearing what he did in the divine heaven sect.

Grand Elder Chu hadn't liked Long Chen before either after he found out that Long Chen had destroyed Mu Zheng's martial soul. He was also loyal to the Sect Master. Even when she used the Sect's most important treasure on her disciple, he was there.

"I know, but I still regret it. If my life had saved their lives, I would have given my life without thinking for even a second. At least, Chu Miao would have been saved," Mi Yao sighed as she looked down.

She was about to speak more when someone started clapping.

"I never knew you could act so good, but the words somehow don't suit you. Saving our lives by sacrificing yours? Don't you mean taking our lives for yourself?"

She heard someone's mocking tone. She recognized that voice, which made her face lose its color.

She looked to the back and saw Long Chen. Her eyes opened wide in shock.

"H-how are you still alive! You shouldn't have survived!" Mi Yao exclaimed in shock as she saw Long Chen.

"Long Chen was right. I don't see any happiness on your face at seeing them alive. Instead, I see your fear. Mi Yao, you really did something wrong. I never thought that you would do something like this," The Prime Grand Elder said to Mi Yao.

Mi Yao misunderstood the Prime Elder's words and thought that he was calling her out on leaving disciples behind to die.

"I-i had no choice. There was no way I could bring them back safe!" She said.

What she meant was that there was no way she could bring them back safely when she was faced by all the opposing elders, and that's why she left them behind, but to the Elders that had heard Long Chen's words, it sounded like a confession.

"Of course you couldn't bring them back safe. How would you be able to take all the treasures for yourself if you had brought them back," A Grand Elder said.

"Mi Yao, you've committed the biggest taboo of our sect. You were killing the disciples to steal their property. In Fact, this time, you killed the disciples to steal the treasures that should have belonged to the sect, which is even more grave. You even lied about it."

"What are you talking about? Are you saying that I made up a story to steal their treasures? Are you saying that I took their treasures and left them behind to be killed by those Elders? They hadn't even found a single treasure!" Mi Yao refuted furiously.

"Really? So you didn't attack them when they told you that they found the Flute of War?" The Prime Elder asked.

Long Chen had told them that Mi Yao attacked them after he told her about the treasures they found. He also named some of the treasures.

"What? Flute of War? They are lying. They never told me about the Flute of War!" Mi Yao exclaimed.

The Prime Elder sighed at her response, not believing her in the least.

The Sect Master and Grand Elder Chu were standing in the side, confused.

"What are you talking about? What happened? Tell me in detail," the Sect Master asked the Prime Elder.

"What happened was that she lied to us about what actually happened! There was no such thing as the other Elders attacking them. In fact, the whole thing about the argument and Long Chen killing them was a lie. They left that place safely without any altercation but when they were midway, Long Chen told her about their trip and the amazing treasures they found. That was when she attacked them. She killed them and left them behind," the Prime Elder explained.

"That's a lie! How could they be alive if I killed them? This is his plan to blame me!" Mi Yao said as she pointed toward Long Chen.

"If it's their plan, then it's a good plan. Because no matter which angle I look from, you seem like a liar. None of your stories make sense. You claimed that they were dead, but they are standing right before us. You claimed that they killed every other disciple. If that is true, would the other sects let them live? They wouldn't even leave his body behind! Or are you saying that he was strong enough to escape from the Elders of those sects?" the Prime Elder asked Mi Yao.

He also told them about the incident of Manxiang Li helping Long Chen after she killed him and left them behind.

"I... This... I don't understand what happened and how he escaped them. I'm being honest. I didn't lie about the 17 Elders wanting to kill him for killing their disciples. I did make a mistake as I left them behind to die, to save my life. But I didn't kill them, nor did I take any treasure!" Mi Yao said.

"Give up, Mi Yao. No matter how many times you change your story, the truth isn't going to change," the Grand Elders said.

The Prime Elder looked towards the Sect Master.

"If you still don't punish her and see the truth, then I would really be disappointed in what our sect had become," he said to the Sect Master.

"Yes! She needs to be Punished! And we need to get the location of the Flute of War out of her! Sect Master should be just and not partial because she's close to Mi Yao!"

The other Grand Elders started chiming in. They all believed that she did it as her stories were filled with the most plot holes. Even if she didn't kill him, she herself agreed that she left them behind to die, which was a crime on its own. They all thought that she wouldn't have accepted that crime unless the real crime that she committed was much worse, which made sense since she killed the disciples.

Slowly, most of the Elders were asking for her to be punished.

Chapter 435 - 435: Verdict

Mi Yao couldn't understand what was happening. No one was ready to believe her side of the story. Everyone was asking for her to be punished for something she didn't even do, and she was finding it hard to prove her innocence.

She could see that most of the Grand Elders were against us. She thought that the only one that could still believe her was the Sect Master. Only she could save her in this situation.

"I swear I didn't do anything," Mi Yao looked towards the Sect Master and said to her in a pleading tone.

The Sect Master found herself stuck between a rock and a hard place. She hated Long Chen, and thus she didn't want to Punish Mi Yao, but almost everyone was asking for her to be punished. Even the Grand Elders that were on her side were asking for her punishment.

"I've heard enough. After hearing about both sides, I think that this matter needs more consideration. Mi Yao will not be Punished yet, but she will be put under house arrest until everything becomes clear," The Sect Master said.

"Are you really not even going to put her in the prison? Is it not you abusing your powers? I didn't say anything when you decided to have Long Chen go against Mu Zheng to get the position of the captain despite him being the 1st ranked in the demon ranking. I knew you did it because you are partial towards your Disciple, but I let it pass. Still, you're going to abuse your powers again? That too so brazenly in front of all of us?" Lang Jing furiously said.

He was faking his anger for the most part, though. He realized that it was the right opportunity to make everyone against her.

"Lang Jing! How dare you talk to the Sect Master like that? Do you think that you're your father?" Grand Elder Chu responded. "You should be the one who's punished instead."

"Even though I agree that Lang Jing's words were somewhat strong, but I do understand where he's coming from, and I agree with his point. Someone tried to kill his disciple. Which one of us wouldn't react like that if it had happened to our disciples? Seeing the sect master siding with her even after all that is wrong," the Prime Elder said.

"Yeah, she should be imprisoned for life! We can get more information after that about the whereabouts of the treasures."

"She deserves to be Punished. Her stories are filled with plot holes. It's clear that she lied."

"She wouldn't have lied if she wasn't hiding anything. She must have done it for the treasures. The Flute of War is one of the most important treasures of the Divine Heaven Sect after all."

The Grand Elders got even more active in this discussion. They didn't let this topic go.

The Sect Master was under the pressure now. Over 90% of the elders were asking for her to be punished severely.

"Alright. After reconsidering the matter..."

The Sect Master was about to change her verdict before Mi Yao stopped her.

"Wait! I can prove that he's lying!" Mi Yao said.

Everyone looks at her with curiosity. Even Long Chen was somewhat surprised about what she could say in this situation that wouldn't make it seem like she was trying to delay things. If she said to go ask the other sects, that would just be seen as delaying tactics, and the Sect wouldn't bother with that

"Alright. We'll listen to you. What do you have to say for yourself," The Sect Master asked her.

Everyone was looking at her, waiting to hear what she had to say.

"The Flute of War! I can prove that he didn't get the Flute of War. We only gave him the list of desired items, and the Flute of War was one of the top items on the list, but we didn't mention about the looks of the Flute. Ask him what it looks like. The sect master and the Grand Elders must have read about the description of the flute. You guys can clearly see if he lies about it," Mi Yao said.

Long Chen sighed as he looked towards her. He couldn't help but think that she brought out the worst point that would only make her fall deeper. Who could know about the flute, if not him? He had the flute in his storage ring, after all.

"What do you want to know about the flute? The fact that it's exactly 30 cm long or that fact that its width was 2 cm? Or do you want to know about the

three red lines that intertwine on the flute, making it seem like they are forming some strangely charming words," Long Chen answered.

"That's right. I've read about the red lines in the book that are only available at the highest level of our library. Other than the Sect Master and me, no one could have read that," the Prime Elder said.

"That makes it clear. Long Chen held the flute, and that's why she stole it from him and left him dead. We wouldn't even know what had happened if Long Chen hadn't survived. Such a pity,"

The Grand Elders' trust in Long Chen only deepened after this.

The Sect Master sighed. She had no way but to listen to the Elders now as all the proof was against Mi Yao. If she still didn't listen, then she would lose her reputation and the support of the Grand Elders that were still on her side.

"He's right with what he said. That's exactly how the Flute of War is supposed to look like, Mi Yao, I've come to a verdict. You will be imprisoned with other prisoners. You won't be allowed to come out. If you don't tell us about the location of the Flute of War even after three days, then you will be crippled," the Sect Master declared.

"Grand Elder Ki, you can take her to her destination," The Sect Master told one of the Grand Elders.

Grand Elder Ki took Mi Yao and left.

"You managed to survive her again. I don't know if it is luck or something else," the Sect Master said as she looked towards Long Chen.

Long Chen simply smiled and didn't answer her. He could see that the Sect Master and the Prime Elder were both ways too high in cultivation. They were definitely higher than the Sky Realm. He was sure that they were Heaven Realm cultivators.

He stood no chance against them even if he used his Flute of War. At least not until he finished the Bloodline Trial and removed the restriction on his strength.

"It's late today. You can go back and rest. There are still some questions that you need to answer. I'll send Grand Elder Chu with the list of those questions tomorrow," the Sect Master told him before she left.

"Good work, kid. You did great finding the Flute of War. As soon as we get the Flute of War back from Mi Yao, you will get your rewards," Prime Elder praised Long Chen before he left as well.

Slowly, all Grand Elders left the place.

Chu Miao's master was there as well. He took Chu Miao with her.

Only Long Chen and Lang Jing remained.

"Come with me," Lang Jing said.

Lang Jing left the discussion hall as well, and Long Chen followed after him.

They walked back to his courtyard.

"Give me that thing," Lang Jing told Long Chen.

"What thing?" Long Chen asked back.

"The thing that you were assigned to get. Give me the necklace," Lang Jing said.

"I don't have the necklace. I didn't find it. There was no place with that tombstone you talked about," Long Chen replied.

Chapter 436 - 436: Another Plan

"I didn't get the necklace," Long Chen told Lang Jing.

"You are lying. Give me the necklace right now unless you don't want the cure of that poison," Lang Jing said as he looked at the man in full seriousness.

"You can't do that. You told me that you would give me the cure. I did all I could to follow the directions that you gave, but I didn't find the thing you mentioned. Someone clearly gave you the wrong information," Long Chen replied.

"It's not possible for the information to be wrong," Lang Jing shook his head as he refused to believe it.

"How can you be so sure? Of course, the information can be wrong. It's not like the disciple of the Divine Heaven Sect gave you the information," Long Chen said as he raised his head.

He had already told the Snake Monarch that he would need to paralyze Lang Jing as soon as he was called out, but Long Chen was still waiting for something.

He could feel that Lang Jing wasn't alone in this room. There was someone else as well, hiding in the shadows.

He didn't bring out the snake monarch and simply waited for more information.

"It doesn't matter who gave me the information. What I can say is that the information can't be a lie! There is no way that the tombstone wouldn't be there," Lang Jing said.

"The sect had been going through so many changes. The map was entirely wrong. It was like the sect had shifted all its locations. Maybe the place you mentioned got shifted to some faraway place. All I know is that I didn't find it," Long Chen maintained his innocence.

Lang Jing looked in the direction of the shadow.

"Didn't you say that there was no chance the boy would fail? We had one opportunity to find that, and he blew it up. How am I going to answer my master?" An old man stepped out of the shadows.

Long Chen pretended to be shocked as if he didn't know that there was a person there.

"Long Chen, I must say that you disappointed me. I thought that you would be able to do it with what you had. I don't even know if I want to see you die from the poison or kill you myself," Lang Jing said to Long Chen. He looked visibly upset.

"I don't care how you kill him! The thing that I want is not in my hands. How can I answer my masters back in that place?" The Old Man told Lang Jing.

"I..." Lang Jing couldn't find words to reply.

"Sigh, I can already see the wrath I'm going to face."

Long Chen looked at the old man. He could see that the man was slightly weaker than the sect master and the Prime Elder, but he was still stronger than the Grand Elders.

"I'm sorry, father. I disappointed you, but I still don't believe that he didn't get that necklace. He is definitely lying. Let me just check one more thing just to be sure," Lang Jing replied.

He pulled out a small formation disk. Long Chen recognized the disk. It was the same disk that he had seen previously. Lang Jing had told Long Chen about this disk.

It was an item that he found inside some ruins. If a person held the disk in their hands and promised something, then that would be a binding promise. If the person that promised, didn't fulfill his promise, then he would die. At Least that's what Lang Jing had told him.

"Hold it."

Lang Jing tossed the disk towards Long Chen.

Long Chen held the disk.

"If you aren't lying, then do what I say," Lang Jing said. "Take an oath that you wouldn't lie to us ever."

Long Chen looked towards the disk, but didn't say anything.

"Don't worry about anything. Take the oath," Xun said to Long Chen.

'What do you mean? Wouldn't I be in trouble if I tell the truth?' Long Chen asked her.

"The disk is not active. From what I can see, it has run out of energy. Last time he used the disk on you, there were still a few energy lines in it that were working, but right now, there's nothing. Normal people can't look at that, but I can. This thing is not working," Xun told Long Chen.

"What happened? Scared? You're definitely hiding something," Lang Jing said, smilingly.

Even the old man was somewhat suspicious by now.

"I, Long Chen, takes an oath that I will never lie to the two people in front of me," Long Chen took an oath.

Lang Jing was shocked that Long Chen took the oath so suddenly. He hadn't expected that he would do it, but he still believed in his heart that Long Chen had the necklace. When he talked about an oath, he could see the hesitation on Long Chen's face. He believed that he was worried about it.

Lang Jing looked at Long Chen with a stern look on his face.

"Tell me, do you have the necklace that I asked you to find?" Lang Jing asked.

"No," Long Chen replied without any worries on his face.

"Did you find that necklace inside the Divine Heaven Sect?" Lang Jing asked.

"I didn't," Long Chen answered.

Lang Jing just looked blankly at Long Chen. How was he telling a lie without dying? Unless this was not really a lie.

The old man looked furiously at Lang Jing. He was now sure that the plan of Lang Jing had failed.

"Lang Jing, you really disappointed me. Despite me telling you to put more people on the mission, you only found this single boy. You told me that he would be able to do it, but he failed! If all ten disciples were on this mission, they could have spread out. We can't have more chances of getting that necklace. I don't even know if you should be angry anymore. I am disappointed," The old man said to Lang Jing as he sighed.

Lang Jing didn't know how to respond. He had put too much faith in Long Chen. He didn't take the risk of trying to tell anyone else about this except

Long Chen, whom he had found on the day he went to destroy the branch of the beast hall. He thought that Long Chen was strong and fast. He would definitely be able to reach the farthest in the sect and bring the necklace as his life depended on it, but he failed.

"Father, I know that I failed you. Now the whole plan is ruined. But we can still achieve our second goal. Even though it can't compare to getting that necklace, it would still be something to give him," Lang Jing said.

"You mean..."

"Yeah. We will steal that Lotus. We will take that from the sect. Our major plan might have failed, but I won't let our other plan fail."

Lang Jing looked determined as he talked about it.

"Sigh, That Lotus won't make up for the necklace, but it might appease his anger," the Old Man nodded his head.

"I'll use him for our second plan. He didn't work as our ace, so just let's use him as a bait," Lang Jing told the old man.

He looked towards Long Chen.

"You failed the mission, but I can still give you a chance to live. You just have to do one thing for us," Lang Jing told Long Chen.

"What?" Long Chen asked.

"You need to bring the Sect Master to her death," Lang Jing replied.

Long Chen didn't know what lotus they wanted, but he knew that it must be a treasure if they were so eager to get it.

"How?" he asked Lang Jing.

Chapter 437 - 437: Trying Again

"Don't worry about that. I'll think of a perfect plan for you. You just have to play your part, and everything will be done," Lang Jing told Long Chen.

Long Chen looked at him in confusion. At the moment, he just wanted the old man to leave so that he could kill Lang Jing and pass the trial, but with that old man around, he wasn't able to.

"You have that illusion thing, right?" Lang Jing asked.

He had already seen that on the first time he had fought Long Chen. He would've been killed if he wasn't alert. Even he wasn't able to see through Long Chen's illusion.

"Yes," Long Chen answered.

"I want you to use that on the Sect Master. As long as it works on her, everything else would be a child's play," Lang Jing said.

"He knows Illusions? Will it work?" The old man asked in surprise. He hadn't known about that.

"It should. His illusions are really good," Lang Jing told the Old Man.

"I want to see if it works or not. Test it on me," The Old Man said.

'This would be such a good opportunity to kill them both, but that old guy is just too strong. He's even stronger than the Snake Monarch. I'm not even sure if his skill would work on the old man. I'll just go with their plan for now until I get an opportunity. Then it's bye-bye to this sect,' Long Chen thought.

He looked towards the Man and used his law of illusion to make the old man see a flying bunny.

Long Chen could feel more strain on his mind as he casted his illusion on the old man.

Even though the illusion worked, the strain was too much. The difference in their cultivation wasn't minor either, so that was a given.

The illusion worked on the old man who couldn't help but laugh.

"Hahaha, It's surprising to see someone who could use something like this on this continent. If the Myriad Mirage Sect knew about the boy, they would have taken him as their disciple in a heartbeat. Being able to cast an illusion so

successfully on a Half Step Heaven Realm cultivator despite being an Earth Realm cultivator is not an easy feat," the Old man let out.

"Did you comprehend the Law of Illusion? I've met someone from the Myriad Mirage Sect. That's what they study as well. Surprisingly, you attained such profound comprehension despite being so young. If I take you to Master, he might be happy," the Old Man said to Long Chen.

"Kid, If you do this thing right, then I promise you that your future would be brighter than what you can imagine. I would take you with me to a much bigger place. Your life will be set. You would be destined for greatness," the Old Man said.

"Take me where?" Long Chen asked.

He wanted to get more information out of the man while he had the chance.

"It's a place that is not linked to this backward continent. You will see how big the world is. But that is only if you succeed. If you can't even help us, then I don't see a reason to help you," the old man said. "I'll tell you more after you do it."

"Alright," Long Chen nodded his head.

"Here, Take this suppression pill. It would take care of the poison for a week. If you help us, you will survive and reach greater heights, and if you fail, you'll die. You can go back now. I'll tell you what to do and how to do after everything's ready on our side," Lang Jing told Long Chen.

Long Chen looked at them briefly before he stood up and left the place.

"Father? Are you really going to take him with us to that place?" Lang Jing asked the old man.

"Yes. You don't know how great he can be with that law of illusion. You would know when you get there. The Myriad Mirage Sect is not a small place. It's one of the overlords there. That boy is more talented in illusions than most of their disciples his age. If we can take him with us, Master would definitely be happy with us," The Old Man said as he looked towards the door with a slight smile on his face.

Long Chen walked back to his courtyard. His frown never left his face on the way.

He got back to his courtyard and entered his bedroom.

"Just my luck. That old man just had to appear out of nowhere to create trouble for me. It would've been so easy to kill Lang Jing if he wasn't there. I just had to bring him out, he would've trapped Lang Jing in his position, and I could've killed him. Everything is spoiled now," Long Chen muttered as he laid down on his bed.

"If I'm not wrong, that man had been staying in the sect. He definitely wasn't there when I went to Lang Jing's courtyard last few times. That can mean that he can leave and come to the sect without anyone finding out, which isn't strange seeing his cultivation—a half step Heaven Realm cultivator. The Sect Master and the Prime Elder should be 1st stage Heaven Realm cultivators then," he let out as he looked at the roof.

"I can't take too much time. The news of what happened near Divine Heaven Sect might reach the sect. The only thing that's good is that no one knows the location of the Dark Soul Sect. The news would definitely take a long time, but I can't delay too much. Should I try going to Lang Jing's house tonight? That old man isn't there every time. He might not be there at night. If it's like that, I can solve most of my problems. I can kill him and then get the restriction on my strength removed."

Long Chen closed his eyes and fell asleep.

He slept for only 5 hours before his eyes opened. It was around 1 am.

Long Chen got off the bed and stepped out of the courtyard.

The night was silent. Only the sound of leaves hitting against leaves could be heard, coming from nearby trees. The cold wind was flowing, making the leaves move.

The moon was high in the sky, but the moon wasn't shining. It seemed to be much darker today. The moon also seemed to be much bigger. The sky looked somewhat grim tonight.

Long Chen pulled out his spirit sword and stepped over it.

The sword flew high in the sky, carrying Long Chen with it.

As he flew high in the sky, he could see the guards on the ground, patrolling. The guards weren't keeping an eye on the sky, though.

The guards that kept an eye on the sky were assigned on the borders of the sect to prevent anyone unauthorized from entering the sect using the air, but

inside the sect, the air wasn't protected so strictly. The guards occasionally looked up, but they focused more on the ground.

Long Chen flew without any worries. It was also a good thing that he had this sword. Now he didn't have to use the Sun Destroying Condor to fly as the wind moved because of its wings, which might have alerted some guards in the ground.

His Heavenly Demon wings, on the other hand, shone brightly, so that might have been a problem as well. Now Long Chen had three choices for movement, and he chose his sword.

Even though the speed of his Sword was slowest when compared to his Heavenly Demon Wings or the speed of his Sun Destroying Condor, it was the best solution in a situation like this.

It didn't take him long to get to Lang Jing's place.

Chapter 438 - 438: Mission Successful

Long Chen had activated his shadow transformation martial skill to hide himself in the darkness as he got near Lang Jing's house. He didn't want to be caught by the old man if he was here. Although he hoped that he wouldn't be here, he didn't take the risk of going in without precautions.

As Long Chen reached near his destination, he landed on the ground and put the sword back.

He spread out his Divine Sense all around him to see if the old man was here or not.

Long Chen could see Lang Jing inside his room. He seemed to be cultivating.

Other than Lang Jing, Long Chen couldn't see anyone else.

'Looks like I was right. That man isn't here,' Long Chen thought.

He sent a message to the Snake Monarch and told him to be ready. He also told the Snake Monarch not to make any noise or sound when he was called out.

He just wanted the Snake Monarch to hold Lang Jing in his place so that nothing could go wrong, without alerting him beforehand.

Long Chen walked towards the courtyard of Lang Jing slowly.

He stood on the other side of the door and used his Space Law to teleport inside Lang Jing's courtyard. He had already been inside his place and seen his room, so he had no trouble teleporting inside.

Long Chen still had his Shadow Transformation activated.

Although he knew that Lang Jing was cultivating, he couldn't be sure if he was completely unaware of his surroundings. A person like him wouldn't be completely oblivious.

Long Chen also did his best so that no killing intent would leak out from him. He didn't want his killing intent to alert Lang Jing.

He knew that the killing intent would come out when he attacked him with the intent to kill, but he didn't want it to leak before that. That's why he kept his mind as calm as he could.

Long Chen reached near his room without making a single sound.

Lang Jing was cultivating facing the wall.

Long Chen stood behind him, ready to strike.

He brought out the Snake Monarch. The Snake Monarch came out of the Storage Ring and instantly found his target.

Snake Monarch used his skill to hold Lang Jing in place, making him incapable of moving.

Lang Jing opened his eyes as he felt the restriction. No matter how much he tried, he couldn't move. He was about to speak when a Sword was thrust into his neck.

Long Chen brought his face closer to Lang Jing's ears and whispered into his ears.

"That makes us equal."

Lang Jing coughed out a mouthful of blood. He recognized the voice and knew who attacked him.

Long Chen swung his sword and separated Lang Jing's head from his body. He made sure that no blood drip was left on the ground.

He didn't want anyone to know that he killed Lang Jing. He sent the Snake Monarch back into his storage ring.

Long Chen kept the body in his storage ring and left the place.

He hurriedly left the courtyard and flew back towards his house.

After some time, Long Chen reached near his courtyard. He put the sword in his storage ring and teleported inside his bedroom.

"That went well," Long Chen muttered as he fell down to his bed.

He was lying in his bed, but he felt his surroundings change.

The room turned dark, and he found himself in front of a large temple-like place.

He also saw a pink-haired girl floating in front of him.

Xun was wearing the same clothes that she had always worn, but she looked more cheerful today.

Long Chen could see that she was happy, most probably because he completed his trial.

"You did it. Congratulations on completing the Second Bloodline Trial. The restriction on your strength has been removed. Now you can use 100 percent of your strength."

Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he saw her excitement.

"You seem happier than me. Is there a reason for that?" Long Chen asked her.

"Not really. It's just that now you can use your full strength again. I don't have to worry about you dying," Xun said.

"It's not like I would have died if I had stayed weak. You know that I do have my ways to save my life," Long Chen replied to her.

"I've seen all your ways, and I've seen them fail as well. Isn't that how you ended up in the Dark Soul Sect?"

Xun started laughing.

"That was a one-time thing! I've learned from that, and now I know how important it is not to use Spatial Travel unless absolutely necessary. I don't use that unnecessarily anymore. I also know how to read a situation better. On the last note, this whole situation wasn't so bad. I wouldn't have gotten to enter the Divine Heaven Sect otherwise, so I take it as a good event," Long Chen told her.

"It's good that you learned from the mistakes. You can't lose your life. Not because of your own mistakes, at least," Xun said to him.

"Anyway, You've finished the trial. Enter the bloodline temple. Your rewards are waiting for you," Xun said as a light smirk crept on her lips.

Long Chen walked towards the temple. He opened the door and entered the bloodline temple.

He was somewhat surprised to see the interior of the temple even though it was his second time.

The interior of the bloodline temple looked entirely different. There was no similarity that could be found between what he saw last time and what he was seeing now.

The only thing that was still similar was that the area of this place seemed to be the same. It was just as big as it was last time.

Unlike the last time, the floor this time was black. It was pitch black, and not a single smudge could be seen on it.

The walls were empty now. Unlike the last time, they were plain white, contrasting the dark floors. There was nothing written on the walls this time.

Long Chen looked towards Xun in confusion.

"Did you do some painting here? It looks nothing like last time."

"I did nothing like that. Anyway, don't focus on that. There are more important things for you to focus on here. Come with me."

Xun didn't explain anything about why the bloodline temple looked different. She simply told him to follow her as she started flying towards the golden door right in front of them.

The golden door looked the same as the main door in size. It was just as big. The door had no design on it, but it did have what seemed like two planets carved on it.

As the whole door was golden, the planets also seemed to be golden.

"Are they the depiction of some real planets?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"No. I don't know what these planets are supposed to represent, but they definitely shouldn't represent planets. It might also be that I'm unaware of this. I myself don't know everything about the bloodline temple," Xun answered him.

"I thought these were some higher realm planets. It might also be that these are the planets where your master was born," Long Chen said, jokingly.

"He can't be born on two planets simultaneously," Xun replied to him.

"The second planet might be where his wife was born. I'm just taking a blind guess here," Long Chen said.

"He didn't have a wife. He didn't even have a lover from what I know. I don't know why, but he was lonely," Xun replied as she sighed.

"Enter. There's no need to talk about such matters," Xun told Long Chen.

Long Chen pushed the heavy looking door open with ease and stepped inside the place that seemed like a room.

Chapter 439 - 439: Slaughter Aura

Long Chen found himself inside another room that was just as big as the main hall of the bloodline temple.

This room had the white floor and black walls, quite contrary to what the main hall had.

On the other end of the room, there was another golden door, just like the one he had entered from.

There was a table in front of him that had a small vial of glass on it.

There were some pills inside the vial.

Long Chen walked towards the table and started looking at it.

He got near the table and picked up the vial in his hand.

He could see clearly now. There were three pills inside the vial.

"What are these pills?" he asked Xun.

Despite his Peak Spirit Grade Alchemist knowledge, he wasn't able to recognize the pills. It was unlike any other pill he had ever seen before.

The pills were also semi-transparent, just like the vial.

"You remember that I told you about not having to worry about the poison you had in your body, right?" Xun asked Long Chen.

"Yeah. You said that if I killed Lang Jing and completed the bloodline trial, I would be healed by the bloodline temple," Long Chen responded.

"Exactly. I said that because I knew about one of the rewards. The thing that you're holding in your hand contains 3 Heaven Rejuvenating Pills. These pills are really special. No matter what ailment you have, these pills can heal you. They would have healed your poison with ease," Xun explained to Long Chen.

"Oh, so these work like those Cleansing Liquid that I drank inside the Divine Heaven Sect. It's good. Although I won't let a situation like that occur again, but if I'm ever poisoned again, I would be able to heal myself," Long Chen muttered.

He placed the vial in his storage ring.

"The beginning is nice. Although I hate going through trials, the rewards are always nice."

"Just continue ahead. That's not the only reward," Xun told Long Chen with a slight smile on her face.

Long Chen started walking towards the door on the other side of the room and pushed it open as he stepped out of this room.

He entered the next room, which again seemed to be just as big as the last room.

This time there, the whole room was white.

There were spheres of light floating everywhere in the room. There was no difference in any of these spheres. All these spheres of light were a similar shade of blue in color. Their size was also the same. They were only 30 centimeters in diameter.

"What's this?" Long Chen asked Xun. "It reminds me of the Skill Space of the Dark Soul Sect. Is this the same?"

"It's something similar. Each of these spheres contains a skill. Some skills are better, while some are comparatively worse. The thing that you should know is that even the worst skills present here are better than most of the skills you've seen till now," Xun gave a vague explanation.

"How many skills can I choose from here?" Long Chen asked again.

"You can choose two skills. As soon as you've chosen the two skills, all the other spheres will disappear. You just need to touch a sphere and the skill inside that will be selected," Xun informed him.

"Alright."

Long Chen walked through the room, looking at the spheres of light.

No matter how much he tried, he couldn't find a distinction between any of these orbs of light.

"Looks like it's all about luck this time. I can only go in blindly and choose any orb that I feel like choosing."

Long Chen reached out his hand and touched one of the orbs.

It didn't change into the skill book, but he did find the knowledge about a skill in his mind. It was as if the skill book was imprinted in his mind.

"The Slaughter Aura?"

Long Chen muttered in surprise as he went through the description of the skill.

"A skill that can weaken the opponent, just from one's aura?"

"Oh, You got the Slaughter Aura on your first try? That's lucky, I guess, or should I call unlucky. The Slaughter Aura is a skill that is very powerful, but it can't be cultivated normally. To cultivate it, you need to kill people and absorb the energy of slaughter that is released whenever you kill someone. The more you kill, the more Slaughter Energy you could absorb,"

"That's the only way to strengthen your Slaughter Aura. It's a very useful skill. If you comprehend even 10 percent of Slaughter Aura, you would be able to decrease the opponent's strength by 5 percent," Xun explained to Long Chen.

"5 percent didn't seem like much," Long Chen responded.

"It might seem like small when you look at the 5 percent, but don't forget that the higher you go, the wider the difference between each realm will become. The 5 percent is much more helpful than you can think. Also, don't just look at 5 percent. Look at the end potential of the skill. If you could get that skill to perfection, you would be able to weaken your opponents by 50 percent, just from your Slaughter Aura alone." Xun explained to him.

"That's not bad, but the whole thing comes down to one thing. This skill can't be comprehended normally. One can only reach higher levels of this skill by killing. How many people do I need to kill to get this skill to perfection?" he asked Xun.

"Ah, let's not talk about that. Just focus on increasing the level of your mastery of this skill, and one day you'll reach its peak," Xun said.

She didn't answer his question about how many people he would have to kill to get it to perfection as that number was slightly too large. She didn't feel like explaining.

"I can try to learn it. I already kill people. It's just that now I can use those killings to boost my growth," Long Chen muttered. "It would have been so nice if I had this skill in the Divine Heaven Sect. I killed so many people there

and even after leaving. I could've utilized that. Now I feel like it all went to waste."

"You definitely don't have to worry about that. Those few kills are nothing compared to his many people you might need to kill in the future," Xun muttered.

Long Chen looked towards her. Without giving him a chance to say anything, Xun started talking.

"Anyway, Choose the second skill. We have more places to go," Xun told him.

"Alright."

Long Chen started going through the room. Even though all orbs looked the same, he wanted to try choosing the orb that was on the corner of the room, farthest from him.

Even though he knew that all these orbs were random and that choosing the farthest one might not mean that he would get a better skill, he still decided to go with his heart. It was all based on luck at the moment, after all. He wanted to stretch his luck even further by selecting the skill that was the farthest from him.

He reached the corner of the room and glanced at the orb that was floating there in silence.

"Let's just hope that it's something good as well. It's my last opportunity of selecting a skill from this room. Please don't be a useless skill," Long Chen muttered as he reached out his hand.

His fingers touched the blue orb of light, making it disappear directly.

As soon as the orb disappeared from before his eyes, a skill appeared in his mind.

The Skill that was in the orb that he had just touched was imprinted on his mind.

"Amazing. This skill is definitely not useless," Long Chen muttered with wonder on his face.

Chapter 440 - 440: Soul

Long Chen had chosen a second skill as well. The second skill was imprinted into his mind, making him understand what the skill was all about.

Still, he couldn't comprehend the skill just by reading its content. The skill had to be comprehended like normal skills. He only received the content of the skill, but not the comprehension.

"Which skill did you get?" Xun asked Long Chen.

"It would be a little wrong to call it a martial skill; it's a cultivation manual," Long Chen informed her.

"A cultivation manual? Tell me its name; I might know about it," Xun let out with a curious look on her face.

Long Chen opened her lips and muttered the name of the Cultivation Method that he had received from the skill orb.

"The Soul Cultivation Manual."

"Soul Cultivation? That..."

Xun looked shocked, and she couldn't find a word to respond. Long Chen found it strange to see such a reaction from her.

"What happened? Is this a cursed skill or something?" Long Chen asked her. He seriously thought that there was something wrong with the skill for her to give a reaction like that.

"Not exactly. It's not a cursed skill. It's just that it's the same skill that Tian Shen had received when he completed his second trial. It's the first time you received a skill that he had cultivated," Xun told him.

"It is a good skill from what I understood. I didn't know that cultivating the soul was also possible," Long Chen muttered.

"Of Course, cultivation of the soul is also possible. The soul is just as important as the body. You cultivate the body using the Demon Monarch Physique, and now you can cultivate the Soul using this. The only thing you need to remember is that the soul it talks about is your real soul, not your Martial Spirit," Xun started explaining.

"Although your Martial Spirit is strong, and your body is strong, your real soul is still as weak as a child's soul. That's why you were in so much pain when Mu Zheng had attacked your Martial Spirit. Even though your Martial Spirit wasn't hurt by it, your real soul was hurt, and that's why you were feeling the pain," Xun told Long Chen.

"I know that my real soul is not my Martial Spirit. They are both different elements. My real soul had been with me since my birth, whereas the Martial Spirit only joined the team when I broke through to the Spirit Established Ram. But still, from what I see, this skill is not just about strengthening the Soul of a person," Long Chen responded.

"That's why I said that this skill is not that simple. You can strengthen your soul that will make your soul more resistant against soul-based attacks, and you can protect yourself against situations like those. Also, you can use the soul attacks yourself. That's not even the main part, the main part is that if you cultivate it to its peak, your soul would be able to live even after your body died," Xun exclaimed.

"Isn't that the same as the spirits? They were also real. I thought that the stronger cultivators had souls that could make them live even after death," Long Chen told her.

"That's not true. At Least not for mortals. The gods from Heaven can live even after their body is destroyed. That's why they are called true Immortals, unlike the humans that cultivate to reach the mortal realm. The gods have souls that can live even after their body is killed as long as they want to unless someone uses a method that destroys their soul as well, or they sacrifice their souls along with their bodies," Xun replied.

"Other than them, the humans can't achieve that. Once you die, your soul would step into the cycle of reincarnation. The humans have no choice, unlike gods," She added.

"What about the spirits that I saw? They were real, and I'm sure they were not gods," Long Chen replied to her.

He didn't honestly believe her words that human souls couldn't survive after they die since he had already come in contact with two such spirits inside the Divine Heaven Sect.

If he hadn't gone to the Divine Heaven Sect, he would have believed her, but after going there and meeting the spirits, he found it impossible to believe her

on that. It was impossible for that old man that was from the Divine Heaven Sect to be a spirit of a god from the Heaven.

"That's not the thing that I'm talking about. The ones that became spirit used some unorthodox method to achieve it, which destroyed half or more of their soul."

"There is also another way to become a spirit after death. It is by using a dark artifact, but then you would either become a mindless soul or lose most of your memories and wander around for eternity until you achieve the subconscious goal because of which you decided to become the Soul," Xun finished explaining.

"So the only real way to achieve soul immortality is by becoming a god or by Cultivating this skill to its peak. I think I know which option is easier," Long Chen chuckled.

"Tian Shen also comprehended this skill, right? How long did it take for him to comprehend it to its peak?" He asked Xun.

"You got the skill, right? Why are you wasting time here? Let's go. You have more rewards to receive. There is no reason to waste time here," Xun told him as she started flying towards the door.

"Sigh, alright. Don't answer me," Long Chen smiled wryly as he started walking towards the door.

He pushed the door open and saw something on the other side of the door that made his mouth open wide in shock.

There was nothing but empty space outside that room.

"Am I supposed to go there?" Long Chen asked Xun in surprise.

"Yeah, You are supposed to go there. Don't worry, and just jump. It's space; you won't fall. You will just float in the void," Xun answered him.

"Alright."

Long Chen took a step forward and stepped out of the room.

He stepped into the space and started floating in it. The door behind him disappeared.

"What am I supposed to do now? There is no door to leave this place, and I see no rewards," Long Chen asked Xun.

"The rewards are right before your eyes. You just need to choose," Xun told Long Chen.

"Choose what? There is nothing to choose from," Long Chen retorted.

He looked all around, but there was nothing here. Not even stars were visible in this space. This whole place was nothing but a void.

"You can't see it yet. Just do as I say and you will get your reward," Xun informed Long Chen.

Long Chen nodded his head and waited for her to tell him what he needed to do.

"First, close your eyes."

Long Chen heard her words and closed his eyes, wondering what was about to happen.

"Choose a random direction and extend your right hand in that direction. Remember, the direction you select is the most important part of this thing. Choose one direction carefully," Xun insisted on that portion.

Long Chen nodded. He chose the direction that was right in front of him and reached out his hand.

"Alright. Now, close your fist," Xun told him.

Long Chen closed his fist as per her instruction. He still had no idea what he was doing or what was happening.

He kept waiting for her next words, but he didn't hear her voice for quite some time.

"What next?" he asked her.

"Shhhh. Just stay still and don't move. I'll tell you when you need to do anything," Xun told him.

Long Chen listened to her and didn't move his body unnecessarily.

Chapter 441 - 441: Future (V.I)

"Good. Now open your fist and make your palm face towards the top," Xun gave him the next instruction.

Long Chen opened his palm and rotated his wrist. His palm was now facing the top.

"Done. Your treasure is selected. You can open your eyes," Xun told him.

Long Chen opened his eyes and looked towards his hand. There was a small blue sphere of light floating above his hand.

"The treasure that you received is inside that orb. Touch it with your left hand, without moving your right hand," Xun told him

Long Chen moved his left hand towards the sphere of light that was floating above his hand.

He touched the sphere of blue light, which started shining even brighter as soon as his fingers touched it.

The sphere of light started changing shape.

It soon transformed into a treasure. It seemed like a scabbard that was used to keep swords inside.

"What is it?" he asked Xun.

"That is a Demon Scabbard. You can keep any sword or knife inside it, and it would adjust to its size," Xun told Long Chen.

"That's all?" Long Chen asked her. He looked somewhat disappointed.

"Nope. The treasure of the bloodline temple can't be that simple. There is more to it than just that," Xun said to him.

"When you keep a prized weapon in it, no one could see the weapon's true grade or its strength. For example, if you keep the King's sword inside, no one would be able to feel its sword intent. They will just see it as a mortal grade sword," Xun explained.

"That doesn't make it any better. Why would I carry my sword in the scabbard instead of keeping it in my storage ring? I can always use my sword when I need it, and no one can see my sword if it's in my storage ring. I don't see any use for this scabbard," he told Xun.

"I think you'll soon change your mind when I tell you more powers of this Demon Scabbard. The scabbard also has a special hidden ability," she told Long Chen. "It can increase the grade of your weapon."

"Increase the grade of the weapon?"

That statement had finally made Long Chen surprised and in a good way. If it could increase the grade of his weapons, then it was definitely one of the most useful passive treasures that he possessed.

"Yeah, If you keep a mortal grade sword inside the Demon Scabbard, it will become a Spirit Grade Sword in 2 months," Xun told him.

Before Long Chen could even open his mouth, she started speaking further.

"I know what you wanted to ask, and no, it wouldn't make your Gold Grade Spirit Sword into an Earth Grade Spirit Sword in 2 months. The process of an upgrade takes longer for higher realms as the weapons need more strength to be considered a higher grade treasure,"

"Seeing that the Gold Grade Sword is two grades higher than the Mortal Grade Sword, it would take six months. I'm only talking about the maximum time it would take. It might even get upgraded in 3 months or two months. Honestly, the whole process is somewhat complicated," Xun explained as much as she could.

"Oh, right. The effects only work if the scabbard is outside. You can't just keep your sword in the scabbard and keep it inside the ring. It needs to be outside to work," she added.

"Really? I always thought that swordsmen were just a show-off to carry their sword on their back instead of keeping it in their storage rings, I guess I'll have to do the same thing now," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

He caught the scabbard and brought out his King's Sword. He inserted the blade of his King's Sword inside the scabbard and adjusted the scabbard on his back.

"How do I look now?"

Long Chen looked towards Xun and asked her how he looked as he couldn't see a mirror.

Xun looked at him and burst into laughter.

"You look like a Swordsman that wants to show off that he's a swordsman,"

"Of Course I'm a swordsman. I'm the legendary swordsman who will never be forgotten by the future generation," Long Chen declared jokingly.

"That's almost impossible, I think. No matter what you do, there will be people that will forget you," Xun responded.

"What if I did something that is impossible? Isn't that how legends are remembered?" Long Chen asked with an interested smile on his face.

"That is one way, but the world is much vast. There will always be people that won't know about the legends. Even if you did something atrocious like destroying the Immortal World or destroying the God Beast Clans, there will always be people that would forget. That's how people are," Xun told him.

"When someone like him could be forgotten, then anyone could be forgotten," She added.

Long Chen wondered if she was talking about the person this bloodline belonged to. He must be a bigshot to achieve all this, yet Long Chen was sure that there would be no one in this small mortal world who will know about him. She was right. Not all legends reach every small or big place.

There had never been someone who was remembered in almost every world by at least a single person.

Long Chen didn't know if he would be able to leave his mark behind on history or not, but the chances of him becoming an unforgettable legend were too slim. Even he himself didn't believe that it was possible, but the thing is that he didn't know that the future had something entirely unexpected for him in stores.

All his expectations would've turned upside down if he could see the future or the end of his journey.

The world had seen many Demons in its long history, but there was a demon that was about to appear in the world that was something that this world had yet to experience.

Someone that was about to leave the most profound impression on the world. Someone that was about to become a name that terrified the biggest of gods and demons for generations to come.

Someone that was human, but he was more demonic than the real demons. Even the actual demons were about to be shocked when they saw that person.

The arrogant gods and the Willful demons were not the only ones that were about to get the shock of their lives in the form of a mortal, but even the God Beasts were about to suffer the wrath of the one that would terrify the gods for generations to come.

Long Chen was still unaware of the future and ignorant of how things were about to change. The world would never know the reason for this terrifying tsunami that this world was going to suffer. There were going to be only two people that saw the full extent of what caused all this. One was Long Chen, and the other was the Treasure Spirit that was floating beside him.

The cruel destiny had something in store for them that was about to bring a change that would destroy all boundaries of destiny itself, making it completely helpless.

While Long Chen was looking at Xun, unaware of his future, there was another person in this world. A person that was someone that started everything.

In a faraway corner of the world, inside a dark ruin that looked more like a prison, there was a small child sitting.

He was sitting alone in the darkness that was darker than the darkest of nights.

His eyes were blankly looking ahead. It didn't seem like there was any light in those eyes, but there was something special in those eyes that made them seem like the eyes of someone that had seen everything in this world, only to forget.

There was a small plant near that boy that only had a single fruit on it.

Chapter 442 - 442: Choice

Long Chen was still floating in that space.

"You can keep that sheath in your storage ring now. It won't work if you keep it in the open in the bloodline temple. Just bring it out after you leave this place," Xun informed Long Chen.

Long Chen agreed with her suggestion and kept the sheath and his king's sword back in his storage ring.

He looked around the space and still didn't see any opening to leave this place.

"Am I going to get another reward here?" he asked her.

Xun heard his question and shook her head.

"No, you were only going to get one treasure here, depending on the direction you chose," Xun informed him.

"Oh, so it was like the other room as well. I feel like the 1st trial rewards were good. At Least I could select the skills from the choices. This time, it's all based on luck," Long Chen muttered as he sighed.

"Can you tell me how the treasure I received is compared to the other treasures that I would have received if I had chosen another direction?" he asked Xun.

"I'd say that you chose one of the best treasures. Right now, it might not seem that special, but it's a really high-grade treasure. Imagine upgrading your weapon until it becomes a God Grade Weapon. That's what you can achieve with the treasure that you received,"

"Although I agree that the other treasures might've helped you actively in attacks or defense, but it's one of the peak treasures in its own field. One of the most useful passive treasures that you could have received in this place," Xun informed him.

"Also, don't worry about that choice. You're going to get a few choices next, and it will be on you to choose," she added.

"That's good to hear. Anyway, how do I get out of here if I'm not going to get any treasures here? I need to go to the next place to get other rewards, right?" Long Chen inquired.

"Just touch the white sphere of light in front of you, and you'll be taken to the next place," Xun informed him.

"What white sphere of light? There is nothing like the—" Long Chen was in the middle of his sentence, but he stopped as he saw a small white sphere of light appear before him.

Long Chen reached out his hand and touched the sphere. He was teleported to a different place.

He was teleported to what seemed like natural grasslands. There was a sky above his head that was bright, but he couldn't see the sun. The wind was flowing like normal.

Even though it looked like grasslands, he could see walls surrounding the place.

"This must be one of the rooms," he muttered.

"How do I get the rewards from this place?" Long Chen asked her.

"Simple. Just walk towards the other side of this place. There will be a door that will lead you to the next place. Right before that door, you will get your rewards," Xun informed him.

Long Chen heard her and started walking towards the other side of the place. As he walked, he realised that the soft grass below his feet was somewhat strange. Every time his foot landed on the grass, a greenish liquid came out of the grass.

Long Chen looked back and noticed that soft liquid on his shoes and on the places he stepped foot on.

"What's that?" he asked Xun.

"That is nothing useful to you. Ignore that," Xun replied.

"Is this really grass? I somehow doubt that now," Long Chen muttered as he continued walking ahead.

"It is grass; it is just that it's not the normal grass that you're used to seeing. You'll see more of it in some certain places in some of the higher realms or some other mortal worlds," she told him.

"It's weird walking on it," he added with a wry smile on his face.

He tried to ignore that as he continued walking forward. After some time, he got to the other side of the strange room.

There, he saw something. He could see four people standing there. One was an old man who had a white beard. He was wearing white clothes that looked spotless. Right beside him, a young man was standing who seemed to be in his mid-twenties. The man was wearing white clothes as well, but he had a crimson robe on his back. His hair was long and red.

The third person standing there was a girl who looked like she was in her early twenties. The girl had beautiful blue hair. She wore a black dress that perfectly highlighted her curves that were in all the right places. She had thin lips and arched eyebrows on her perfectly oval face.

The last person standing there was a young kid.

The kid only seemed to be 10-12 years old. He was wearing the clothes that contrasted the clothes of the old man. Her clothes were all black that matched with his black hair quite well.

Long Chen walked closer to them with curiosity on his face.

He was quite far, so he couldn't see the minor details about them.

"Who are they?" he asked Xun.

"You'll know when you get to them. That's your reward standing right before you," Xun said smilingly.

Long Chen glanced at her with a suspicious look on his face as he continued walking further.

After a few more minutes, he got near the four people.

As he got there, he finally noticed something that made him realize what was happening.

"They aren't breathing. Are they puppets?" Long Chen asked her.

He could see that the four people that were standing before him weren't breathing. They were just standing there, blankly as if they didn't know what to do.

"Yes. These are the puppets. You can choose any one of them. They all have equal strength," Xun told Long Chen. "That's the choice you wanted."

"Wow, they look more lifelike than any puppet that I have ever seen. If I hadn't noticed that they weren't breathing, I wouldn't be able to guess that they were puppets," Long Chen muttered as he started observing the puppets.

Generally, it was clear to recognize puppets as they all looked dead. Their faces were slightly lifeless looking. There were many more things that could help one notice a puppet, but the ones standing before him looked nothing like them. If he hadn't seen they were not breathing, he would have thought that they were alive.

"Choose one of them, and then I'll tell you more about them. They are quite good. I'm sure that you will like them," Xun said smilingly.

Long Chen started from the old man that was standing on the right.

"I would've chosen the old man thinking that he was stronger, but since you said that they all have equal strength, I know that it's not true. I don't think I'll go with the old man," Long Chen shook his head as he walked over to the next person.

"This guy looks powerful, as well. He looks quite good looking as well, and I like his dressing sense," He muttered as he walked over to the 3rd person that was the girl.

"The girl... She is so young. I wonder if the puppets were made from real bodies or by some other method. She looks like a good person and intelligent. Too bad that puppets can't use their brain," He sighed as he walked over to the kid.

"I'm not choosing the kid. It would look quite bad if I send a kid to fight for me. It doesn't help that he looks so lifelike. The ones that watch my fights will not even know that he's a puppet. They'll just think that I'm an evil cultivator who controlled a kid to fight for him," Long Chen shook his head.

Chapter 443 - 443: Xia

He walked back to Xun after observing all of them.

"Looks like the old man and the kid is out of the race. Have you made up your mind about who to get? Which one are you choosing? Is it the boy or the girl?" Xun asked Long Chen. "It's the girl, isn't it?"

" Ah, yeah. I'm choosing the girl," Long Chen replied.

As soon as Long Chen said that, the other puppets disappeared. Only the female puppet was left behind.

"What happened to your reputation that you talked about? What will people think about you if you send a girl to fight for you?" Xun couldn't help but laugh as she remembered what Long Chen claimed when rejecting the boy.

"Ah, Who cares about what others think. Listen Xun; one should never care about what others think when doing something if it's based on their principle. I've always been a supporter of gender equality. Why would I differentiate between a boy and a girl based on what that world will think? That's why I chose the girl," Long Chen declared as he pumped up his chest.

Xun's laughter only increased as she heard his reply.

"Sure, I believe you," She said as she tried to control her laughter, and after some time, she succeeded.

Long Chen looked at her with a weird look on his face.

"I can sense that you don't believe me. Whatever, tell me about the puppet now that I have chosen one of them," he told her.

"This puppet is really special as you can use it as a servant. It doesn't need to sleep, and it doesn't need food. It also has the strength of a peak Earth Realm cultivator," Xun said to him.

"Peak Earth Realm cultivator isn't much, but I guess it's not bad either. It can come in handy sometimes. I don't expect it helping out against people like the sect master though," Long Chen muttered.

"There's more to it than just that. The one you're looking at right now is in the Servant Form. Even though it can fight in this form to protect you, there's also another form of it. Its second form is called the Battle Form. When it is in

battle form, its fighting prowess increases by a lot," Xun said to Long Chen, but she didn't stop here and continued explaining more about it.

"This puppet is indestructible unless the person it's facing is someone who has a cultivation higher than the Peak Heavenly Realm."

Long Chen was amazed as he heard the features of this puppet. He knew that it was a pretty useful thing, especially at night. The night was when he could fully utilize this puppet. There were often times when they camped outside in a forest or a place like that. He could put her on the guard duty to protect them when they slept or to inform them when someone came near them. It was pretty useful since the puppet didn't need to sleep.

"That sounds amazing, but you didn't explain how much its strength could increase. How strong can it become when it's in battle mode?" Long Chen asked her.

"That depends. You need origin crystals to activate her battle form," Xun told him. "If you use 1 Origin Crystal, it would be equal to a 1st stage Sky Realm cultivator for half an hour. If you just 5 Origin Crystals, it would be equal to the 5th stage Sky Realm cultivator. Similarly, if you used 11 origin energy crystals, it would be a half step Heaven Realm cultivator for half an hour."

"What's its maximum limit?" Long Chen asked her.

"It can go up to a 5th stage Heaven Realm cultivator in a battle mode if you have 16 Origin Crystals," Xun replied.

"Origin Crystal? What's that? And how can I get that?" Long Chen inquired. He hadn't heard of the Origin Crystals, and he was unclear where to get that.

"You will receive 11 Origin Crystals as a reward with the puppet. As for the others, you can either find them or get them from the Bloodline Temple when you complete your next Bloodline Trial," Xun told him.

"What are Origin Energy Crystals?" Long Chen asked again as Xun didn't explain.

"Well, it is a vast topic, but I'll try to explain it briefly to the best of my abilities," she let out.

"You use Qi to cultivate, right?" She asked Long Chen.

"Yeah."

"Well, Qi is the energy of nature that people use to cultivate and increase their Cultivation, but there are other forms of energy in this world as well. Origin Energy is one of those. It's the form of energy that is considered much superior to Qi Energy."

"The gods of the Heavens and the Demons of the Demon Realm use Origin Energy to cultivate whereas Humans use Qi Energy to cultivate. Humans can't cultivate using Origin Energy, and Gods and Demons can't cultivate using Qi Energy. As for the Origin Crystals, those are the crystalized essence of the Origin Energy. They are similar to the Qi crystals that humans can use to cultivate as cultivation resources."

"You need those Origin Crystals to activate the battle mode of the Puppets."

Xun finished explaining to Long Chen.

"So I need the Origin Crystals? I can't even find Qi crystals that are rare here, how am I supposed to find Origin Crystals?" Long Chen asked her.

"You can find some. It's not impossible. People of the Mortal Worlds don't know about the Origin Energy, and they can't sense the Origin Energy in the Origin Crystals. Although the chances of Origin Energy Crystals being here are low because of the lack of Origin Energy on this planet, there would definitely be a few that would have been formed here,"

"The biggest advantage you have is that people don't know about that so no one would keep the Origin Crystals in their safe. Most probably, they will be used as accessories for people. Just keep an eye out in your surroundings, and you might find them with ease," Xun said, smilingly.

"Anyway, you should bind the puppet to yourself so that you can get the Origin Crystals," She told Long Chen.

"How to bind her?" Long Chen asked her.

"The same method as taming the beasts," Xun told Long Chen.

Long Chen nodded as he walked towards the puppet. He bit his finger, making it bleed and let his blood drop fall over the head of the female puppet.

As soon as the blood drip touched the female puppet, she opened her eyes.

"Master," The puppet greeted Long Chen as she dropped down to one knee.

"She can speak?" Long Chen asked Xun in surprise.

"She can not only speak but do much more. She will be like a normal girl who can do anything. She even has smartness, and she will sometimes make decisions on her own to safeguard you even if you don't give her command. The only thing that it can't do is that it can never disobey your command, and it can never even think about harming you. Its loyalty is unbreakable," Xun replied.

'Interesting. So it's like a real girl, with the only difference being that it's not real and it's not alive. Reminds me of robots from our world,' Long Chen thought.

"Stand up," he told the girl.

The girl stood up, responding to his command.

"What is your name?" Long Chen asked the girl.

"I don't have a name master. Can you please give me a name?" the Girl asked Long Chen.

"Ahm., Alright. You asked the right person. Your master is an expert when it comes to naming," Long Chen laughed proudly.

Xun couldn't help but roll her eyes.

"From now on, Your name will be Xia," Long Chen said to the girl.

"Thank you for the name master. Xia greets her master," Xia slightly bent her head down.

Chapter 444 - 444: Settling Scores

"Xia? Isn't that the name of that girl?" Xun asked Long Chen. She remembered the name of the girl that Long Chen had met before.

"Yeah, it's the name I still remember from my first trial. It is her name," Long Chen said as he reminisced about a girl that he had left behind. The girl from the world that he still considered a dream world, unaware of the reality and the mystery surrounding it.

"So you still haven't forgotten her," Xun muttered.

"I haven't forgotten anyone from that dream world; why would I forget her? I remember every moment I spent in that dream world," Long Chen responded.

"Dream World..." Xun muttered as she shook her head, but she didn't bother explaining.

"Oh, Right. Can I keep her in my storage ring since she isn't alive? I should be able to, right?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Yeah, you can keep her in your storage ring. She will just be frozen in time inside your storage ring until you bring her out," Xun answered him as she nodded.

"Good."

Long Chen looked towards Xia, who was still waiting for her orders.

"Xia, I'm going to be putting you in a place that you won't even remember. We are not in the real world, so I can only take you out of this place by keeping you in a different space. Alright?" Long Chen asked Xia.

"Xia understands master," Xia replied like a real girl. Her expressions were also like a real person. One could seriously not guess that she was not a real girl unless they were observing her exceptionally carefully.

Long Chen sent Xia in his storage ring. He looked towards Xun.

"You know, I must say, Xia, is the best reward that I've gotten this time. She is like a real person that can protect me when needed, and I can also talk to her when I'm getting bored. I like the rewards of this time more than the last time," He said to Xun.

"Of course you would like the girl more. I'm sure you wouldn't like it as much if it was an old man's puppet that you would have received," Xun said as she chuckled. "Then you would be complaining about not getting a choice."

"You can think that if you want. I don't think anything I say will make you think otherwise," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

He walked towards the door and stopped near it.

"Anyway, There's no other treasure here, right? Can I leave this place?" He asked Xun before opening the door.

Xun shook her head as she denied that there was another treasure here.

"You can open the door and move over to the next room through this door," Xun answered him.

Long Chen pushed the door open and stepped out of the room and into the new room.

The new room was something that Long Chen had been to before. He recognized the room as the same room where he received the Alchemist Knowledge after he finished his first trial.

"I remember this place," Long Chen muttered.

The entire room was empty, but there were various patterns carved on the walls. There was a carving that seemed like a plant. One that seemed like a sword. There was a carving that somewhat looked like the sun. There was a horse, a throne, a hammer, a flute, and many more.

There were hundreds of patterns that seemed like random strokes and felt like words, but he didn't recognize any of them.

"I need to choose one of them like last time to gain the knowledge of a profession?" he asked Xun.

"Yes, it's similar to last time. Choose a pattern and touch it. You will gain the knowledge of it," Xun told him.

"Can you help me choose? I don't know what most of them mean," Long Chen asked her.

"I can't help you with anything. I can't tell you more than what I am allowed to," Xun replied.

"The only other thing I can tell you is that it's slightly different than last time. Even if you knew what the symbols meant, you wouldn't achieve what you want. Last time the symbols were related to the knowledge they gave, but this time, the knowledge behind them is different. Some of the symbols have the same professional knowledge as last time, while others have switched the knowledge they give with another pattern," She further explained.

Long Chen looked around the room at all the symbols with a wry smile on his face.

"So, the plant symbol that had the knowledge of alchemy might not have that this time? What if I touched the symbol that has knowledge of alchemy? Won't I receive the Knowledge that I already have, wasting this opportunity? At Least tell me which one has Alchemy?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Don't worry about choosing alchemy; in fact, it wouldn't be bad if you choose alchemy. You would only get the second level of a Great Way of Alchemy," Xun replied.

"Alright. I'll choose one then," Long Chen said to her.

He walked towards the symbol of the plant.

He reached out his hand and touched the plant symbol on the wall. Since the symbols didn't matter anymore, he decided to choose the one he chose last time.

The symbol started shining brightly. Long Chen could feel the flow of information to his mind. He let the information be imprinted entirely to his mind without taking his hand off of the symbol.

The transfer of the information was completed. Last time, Long Chen had lost his consciousness after he received the knowledge, but this time, he was completely fine.

He was only suffering through a headache, but he was still conscious.

"What did you get?" Xun asked Long Chen.

"Formation Master," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"I guess it's not the worse I would have received," he let out as he glanced back at her.

"True, there was also the knowledge of cleaning in one of these symbols. I'm really glad that you didn't receive that, or I would have to suffer through

your cursing for years to come," Xun chuckled as she pointed towards the symbol of the sword that was right beside the symbol of the plant.

"The sword symbol had the knowledge of cleaning? Are you serious, or are you calling killing as cleaning?" he asked her.

"No, I literally mean cleaning. If you had touched the sword symbol, you would've received the knowledge of the world's best cleaner," Xun said as she chuckled.

"I escaped the biggest opportunity waste ever," he told her.

Long Chen could feel the tension as he watched the sword symbol. He breathed in relief at not choosing the sword symbol. He had seriously considered choosing the sword symbol at first before Xun had told him about the exchanged symbols.

"Let's leave this place since I received my reward. What's next?" Long Chen asked her.

"What's next? You've already received so many things, and you still want a next? Leave some for the next trial," Xun said as she smiled.

The room started twisting and turning as if it was an illusion that was being distorted.

"Those are all the rewards from the trial this time. It's time to leave," Xun said.

Long Chen woke up in the real world, in his bed.

He looked in his storage ring and saw the Scabbard, 11 Origin Crystals, and Xia.

He also felt like a restriction had been lifted. He could feel his body coursing with power without any limitation.

Previously close to 70 percent of his strength was restricted, but now that it was released after he increased his cultivation by leaps and bounds, he felt as if his blood was a beast filled with incredible power that he hadn't felt before.

He was the strongest he had ever been.

"This feels good. I guess I can leave this place now. But before that, there is one thing that I need to do. If I leave like this, people would definitely be suspicious of me. Chu Miao might also suffer the blame.

He didn't want to leave Chu Miao behind like that as he didn't want her to suffer for lying because of him.

He stepped out of the courtyard. It was still the night. It seemed as if not a single minute had passed in the real world even though he spent so much time in the Bloodline Temple.

"Are we leaving this place?" Xun asked him.

"Now, right now. There is still one more thing that I need to do before I leave," Long Chen muttered.

He brought out his spirit sword and stood on it.

The sword started flying in a particular direction.

Long Chen looked really determined at what he wanted to do now. All to safeguard a girl and settle some of his scores, so that he could bury this chapter of his story the best he could.

Chapter 445 - 445: Murder

The Spirit Sword flew towards the prison of the Dark Soul Sect in the darkness of the night.

When Long Chen had first woken up in the Dark Soul Sect, he was in prison. Lang Jing was the one who brought him out of the prison.

As Long Chen had already been to that place, he knew how to get there.

Long Chen realized that Mi Yao would be in this prison as well. He wanted to finish the job before leaving.

He still remembered the time when Mi Yao tried to kill him when he was weak. If he wasn't able to use Spatial Travel, he might have been killed by her. Even though he hadn't killed her yet, it had always been on his mind, and Mi Yao's conduct outside the Divine Heaven Sect made him sure of his decision.

The Spirit Sword flew towards the Prison on the other edge of the sect.

The number of guards that he noticed had only been decreasing the closer he got to the Dark Soul Sect Prison.

Not many guards were assigned to places like the prison. The Prison didn't need many guards, after all. The Prison of the Dark Soul Sect had a specialty. The Martial Skills didn't work inside the Cell as long as the prison door was closed. The people outside cells could use their skills, but no one could use it inside the closed-cell unless they were Heaven Realm Cultivators.

There was no way for the cultivators that were already inside to escape. That's why only two guards were assigned to the prison. The only unique thing was that both the 2 guards that were assigned here were red-robed elders.

Both the Elders were Peak Earth Realm cultivators.

They were sitting on a chair right outside the entrance of the prison.

Long Chen got near them, Still using the Shadow Transformation Skill that he had received from the Law of Darkness.

Long Chen had the Demon Scabbard on his back and his King's Sword inside the scabbard.

"It's so boring here. Is there even a need for us to guard this place? No one's going to be stupid enough to come here, and the prisoners can't leave," One of the Red Robed Elders said as he sighed.

He was sitting on the chair pretty cozily with his hands behind his back.

"What can we do? It's our turn this month. Don't worry. We will be free from it next month, and another team will take our place," The Second Red Robed Elder said.

He was also sitting just as casually with one of his legs resting about his other leg.

None of these Elders had their weapons near them as they never expected that someone would come to attack them.

"Seriously. The Normal Elders could've done this duty as well. We're just wasting our precious cultivation time here. The Sect needs to reconsider this thing. It just wastes the potential of us Red Robed Cultivators and our precious time that we could've used to achieve a breakthrough to the Sky Realm. Geez, I want to be free of this duty so badly," the First Elder said, but right then, a sword came out of nowhere and sliced his head off of his body.

The Second Elder was so shocked that he fell down his chair. He stumbled to stand up and pick up his sword, but before he could do anything, a sword was already resting on his neck, waiting for him to move so that it could cut off his throat.

The strange thing was that no one was holding that sword. It was flying in the air like it was possessed by a ghost.

"Don't move. I don't want you to lose your head as well," Long Chen said as he walked out of the shadows.

"M-master Chen? What are you doing?"

The Red Robed Elder recognized the face of Long Chen.

He was surprised that the 1st Ranked Demon Disciple was the one that attacked them.

He couldn't understand why he was attacking them. His rank was almost equal to the Black Robed Elders. If he needed anything from them, he just had to ask.

Long Chen didn't have a change in expressions.

"Take me to Mi Yao's cell, and I'll free you," Long Chen said to the man.

"M-Miss Mi Yao? Why?" The Man asked.

"As I said, you don't need to ask. Do as I say, or your head will be lying near that guy's head," Long Chen said grimly as he pointed towards the head of the other guy.

"Y-yes. I'll take you to her," the man said.

"Good. Slowly stand up and start moving. My sword will be on your neck. If you even make a single effort to do something unwanted, you will die faster than I would blink," Long Chen told the man.

The man had a cry like face. His eyes were almost at the edge of getting wet. He cursed his luck for being here at this moment in time.

The man stood up and slowly walked inside the building behind him.

Long Chen followed closely behind. His spirit sword was still on the man's neck.

The Prison still looked just as dark and grim as it did when Long Chen walked out of that place.

There were many metallic-looking doors behind which prisoners resided.

The Man walked to the end of the place and pointed towards the cell on his right.

"That's Miss Mi Yao's cell," the man said.

"Good. Give me the keys of this room," Long Chen commanded the man.

The man gave the keys to Long Chen.

"This is the key that opens this room. You can check it," the man said.

"There's no need to check," Long Chen said. "I believe you."

"A-alright. Can I leave now?" The man asked.

"I'll free you now," Long Chen muttered. His Spirit Sword moved, cutting the head off of the man's body.

"You're free now," Long Chen muttered.

He called out Xia from her storage ring.

"Xia, can you clean the floor here and outside? Make sure that no blood drop is left behind on the floor," Long Chen told Xia as he put the body of the man in his storage ring.

"Start from the outside. Come with me," he said to her as he walked towards the outside.

He kept the body of the other man in his storage ring as well, along with the chairs.

He walked back inside, leaving Xia on the cleaning duty.

Long Chen opened the door of the prison cell of Mi Yao.

Mi Yao was sitting at the corner of the room, sleeping.

The sound made by the opening of the door managed to wake her up.

"You!" She let out as she stood up at the first sight of Long Chen.

She was like a crazy person that had lost her mind in anger as she jumped towards Long Chen.

As soon as she came out of the cell, a sword stabbed her ribs, making her cough out a mouthful of blood.

"I'm sorry that I had to leave the fight in the palace midway. I should've stayed and played with you for longer. I wanted to take this chance to continue that fight, but I can't. I'm in a hurry," Long Chen muttered as he pulled his King's Sword out of his storage ring.

"You... will die a beast's death!" Mi Yao cursed Long Chen.

"I don't know how I'll die, but I do know that you will die much faster than me. GoodBye Mi Yao," Long Chen muttered as he walked closer to her.

He raised his King's Sword.

"It would have been so good if you had been the receptionist in reality. It wouldn't come to this," Long Chen muttered as he swung his sword.

Chapter 446 - 446: Come With Me

Long Chen struck with his sword, not hesitating in the least. His single strike managed to cut Mi Yao's head clean off.

Long Chen could see the hate in her eyes until the moment she died.

Long Chen breathed out as he sighed.

"I did wish things could be different," Long Chen muttered as he watched her lying on the floor lifelessly.

Long Chen kept her body back in the storage ring as well.

He waited for Xia to finish the cleaning. After some time, the floor was spotless.

No one could have ever imagined that the bloodshed happened here. Even Long Chen was amazed at how efficient Xia was.

"Good work," Long Chen praised Xia as he patted her head.

He sent her back in her storage ring as he left the place. He took the lock with him, not letting anyone find out if the lock was broken or opened from the outside.

He was leaving the prison hall when someone started knocking on the door heavily.

Long Chen couldn't hear the voice of the person behind the door, and he ignored the knocking as he walked out of the place. He didn't care for the prisoners in this place.

Long Chen left the Prison Hall and got back on his sword as he flew towards Chu Miao's courtyard.

He had seen Chu Miao's courtyard and knew where she lived.

Her courtyard was neither too close to his courtyard nor far away.

It didn't take him much time to reach there.

Long Chen landed before her courtyard and walked closer to her window. He looked inside her courtyard through her window to get a view of her place so that he could use his teleportation.

Long Chen used his teleportation and teleported inside her courtyard.

He walked towards her bedroom. Her bedroom door was open, and she didn't have a servant.

Long Chen opened the door of her bedroom and stepped inside.

Chu Miao was sleeping on her bed like a child. There was only calm on her face that reminded him of the face of his women when they slept.

Long Chen walked closer to her.

He reached out his hand towards her shoulders and tried to move her.

"Chu Miao, hey. Wake up," Long Chen told her.

"Uhhh, I can't marry you," Chu Miao muttered in sleep.

"No one is talking about marriage here,"

Long Chen continued his effort to wake her up.

Chu Miao opened her eyes and looked to her left. She sat up in shock as she saw Long Chen there.

"W-what are you doing here?" Chu Miao asked.

"I am here to tell you something. I'm leaving this place tonight," Long Chen told her.

"You're leaving? Why? Where are you going?" Chu Miao asked, shocked.

"I'm leaving this Sect forever, and I will never come back. I just came here to inform you of that. I'm doing something to make sure that you don't get adversely affected because of my leaving, but I would still suggest that it would be better if you leave too. What do you say?" Long Chen asked her.

"Leaving?" Chu Miao muttered hesitantly.

She thought for a while before shaking her head.

"I can't leave. This place is my home. My master is like my father, who saved me and helped me get everything I have today. I-i'm not leaving this place behind. I won't betray his emotion and expectation. I'll stay here and become a great cultivator so that I could make him proud," She said as she looked down. She didn't even dare to look into Long Chen's eyes as she said it.

Long Chen didn't know what he felt about that, but he realized that his feeling seemed somewhat similar to disappointment.

"Alright. I'll take my leave then. Oh right, don't tell anyone that I met you. There's going to be a fun show to watch tomorrow. Someone helped Mi Yao escape, and she killed me before escaping. That's the story, Alright?" Long Chen muttered.

"Oh, right. Here are the concentration pills that you wanted. I prepared them for you," Long Chen said as he put ten vials of pills on the bed.

He turned back and left her place.

Chu Miao reached out her hand to say something, but no words came out of her mouth as Long Chen disappeared from her view.

She just sat there in silence, shaking her head.

Long Chen left her place and flew back to his courtyard.

He closed his door and then made it seem like someone broke it to enter his courtyard.

He walked back to his room. He placed the body of the red-robed elder on his floor and watched as the blood flowed out, making it seem as if a person was killed here.

He kept the body back in his storage ring after some time and used that blood to write something nearby.

He wrote—

"I killed this bastard once, but he came back alive and destroyed everything for me. Today, I will make sure that he dies once and for all. I will throw his body for wild beasts to eat for getting me caught!"

Long Chen looked at the words and smiled.

"That makes it clear. My Yao killed me. Lang Jing also had an enmity with her. She had something to do with his disappearance as well. The person that helped her out of prison helped her take care of Lang Jing, possibly Grand Elder Chu, who scolded Lang Jing for disrespecting the sect master. Enjoy the blame game guys," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards the window.

He started using his Second Skill from the space law.

His eyes turned starry black as a teleportation portal appeared in front of him.

"Goodbye, Dark Soul Sect. I hope we never meet again," Long Chen muttered as he stepped inside the teleportation portal.

Long Chen stepped out of the portal. He had traveled as far away from the sect as he could. He was far away from the sect.

Long Chen brought his Sun Destroying Condor out of his storage ring and got on top of it. The Sun Destroying Condor started flying towards the Blazing Sun Empire.

"Finally, it's over," Long Chen muttered as he glanced back in the direction of the sect.

"Oh, Right. I told her I'd bring her out," he let out as he suddenly remembered about someone.

Long Chen brought Xia out of his storage ring.

Xia sat in front of Long Chen, facing him.

"You won't need to be in the storage space now. Everything's done," Long Chen told her.

"Xia understands master," Xia nodded his head.

"Xia, do you remember anything from before you met me?" Long Chen inquired.

"Xia only remembers the master," Xia shook her hand.

"Oh, So you don't remember anything. Can you cook?" He asked again.

"Xia can cook anything, Master. Do you want me to cook for you? Is this bird what you want me to cook?" she asked him.

Long Chen was gobsmacked as he heard her reply.

"What the heck, no! Xia, you just remember, he's a member of our family. You can't even think about harming family, understand?" he responded to her

"Xia understands. Xia would like to request something related to master's orders," Xia said as she nodded her head.

"What request?" Long Chen asked her

"Xia wants to meet the family. I want to know who is family so that Xia can process the situation better," Xia answered him.

"Oh, it's about that. Don't worry; I'll introduce you to everyone. My family will be like your family, and that's how you should treat them," Long Chen told her.

"Master's family will be like my family? Xia is not worthy of claiming that master. Xia is just the servant of Master," Xia told him.

Chapter 447 - 447: Blame

"That's not true. You're a part of the family now, so of course, they are your family as well," Long Chen said, smilingly. He didn't feel like he was talking to a puppet, but as if he was talking to a real girl.

There was a small flicker of emotion in Xia's eyes that went unnoticed by Long Chen.

"Xia understands Master," Xia said as she gently smiled.

Long Chen quite liked her attitude.

"Anyway, can you use martial skills when you fight, or you only use physical attacks?" Long Chen asked her.

He wasn't sure about how she fought. All he knew was that she could handle Earth Realm cultivators in her servant form.

"Xia can use any weapon, whether it be a sword, spear, knife, or anything else. Xia can use some martial skills as well," Xia replied.

Long Chen nodded his head in praise.

"Good. So, which Weapon is your favorite? Where do you keep your weapon?" Long Chen asked her. He couldn't see any weapons on her.

"Xia likes swords the most, but there is no problem using anything else either. Xia doesn't have a weapon yet," Xia replied to Long Chen as she shook her head.

"I do have some extra swords. You can choose which one you like," Long Chen said to her as he brought 5 Peak Gold Grade swords out of his storage ring that was in the treasury of the King that he had robbed.

"Xia likes them all. Master should choose one for Xia," Xia said without even observing the swords carefully.

Long Chen smiled wryly. She was just too polite even though Xun claimed that she would be like an average person.

"Alright. I'll choose one for you. All of these have similar strengths, but I think you will look good when using this sword. It suits you."

Long Chen selected one sword and kept the other swords back in his storage ring.

The sword he had chosen was a longsword, with a sharp blade. He had a blur hilt that seemed like water. The blade of the sword was a mix of silver and sky blue, giving it a lighter color.

Xia took the sword and waved it lightly.

"This is a good Sword. Xia will cherish this gift from the master," Xia thanked Long Chen.

Long Chen also took out a sheath from his storage ring. It was also in the treasury that he had robbed, but he never used it as he didn't like carrying his swords. He didn't bother with the sheaths previously and just kept his swords in his storage ring.

The only reason he was carrying a sword on his back now was that the Demon Sheath was capable of boosting the growth of his sword. If that weren't the case, he wouldn't have used that either.

Xia happily inserted her sword in the sheath that was given to her by Long Chen and set it up on her back.

Long Chen continued his casual conversation throughout the way. He talked to Xun as well as to Xia.

"Back in the Dark Soul Sect, there was a prison hall. It was the same hall that Long Chen had infiltrated to kill Mi Yao.

There was a particular cell in the Prison Hall. It was the same cell that was making noise when Long Chen left the prison.

Inside that Cell was a person. If Long Chen had seen that person, he would have found him familiar.

He looked like a human; at the same time,

he didn't. This person had a humanoid body and a human-like skin, but what made him different was that he had a third eye at the center of his forehead. While His height was over 3 meters tall, his build was actually thin.

The person looked similar to Terra, whom Long Chen had met in the world where he was taken for his trial. The person looked like he was from the Elphia tribe— the tribe of Terra and Xia.

The man grew tired from hitting on the door and sat down with his back resting against the door.

The next morning arrived. While Long Chen was still on his way towards the Blazing Sun Empire, something was happening in the Dark Soul Sect.

A black-robed elder was sent to Long Chen's courtyard with the list of routine questions about their mission to the Divine Heaven Sect.

When the Black Robed Elder reached Long Chen's place, he noticed the broken door.

A deep frown covered his face. He stopped thinking about anything and hurriedly entered Long Chen's courtyard.

"Long Chen?" He called out as he tried to find him, but that's when he got the smell of blood.

He walked towards Long Chen's bedroom and saw the blood on the floor. There were some words written on the floor with blood as well.

The man read the words, and his face lost his color.

"This can't be happening!" he exclaimed as he searched every corner of the house.

He left the courtyard and informed everyone.

Every Elder came and checked Long Chen's courtyard.

Most of them understood the meaning of the words written in his rooms.

They all went to the Prison Hall and noticed that Mi Yao was missing as well.

Almost all the black-robed elders and grand Elders were there. Even the Sect Master and the Prime Elder were there, looking at the empty cell of Mi Yao.

After some time, another black-robed elder entered the Courtyard.

"Did you inform Lang Jing about this? Why did you take so long?" The Sect Master asked.

"Lang Jing is missing Sect Master. He wasn't there," the Black Robed Elder replied.

"He wasn't there? Where could he have gone?" The Sect Master muttered.

"There's no doubt about it. Someone helped Mi Yao escape last night. There was no chance for her to escape on her own," the Prime Elder muttered as he noticed that there was no damage in the door of the cell.

"Whoever did it was most probably an insider. Someone from our sect did it. The chances of it being an outsider are really low," another Grand Elder said.

"Mi Yao had definitely gone down the wrong path. She killed our Prime Disciple for revenge. We can't let her escape," another Grand Elder chimed in.

"How can you be so sure? Maybe Lang Jing did it! He wanted to kill Mi Yao, and we all saw it. He killed her and escaped with his disciple, making this clever ploy!" Grand Elder Chu said.

"Grand Elder Chu, Previously, I was only suspicious that you were the one who helped Mi Yao, and your statement only makes my doubts more concrete. Mi Yao was your favorite black-robed elder. You also hated Lang Jing for disrespecting the Sect Master! Mi Yao wouldn't dare to attack Lang Jing as her enmity was with Long Chen, and she wasn't as strong as Lang Jing," A Grand Elder said as he glared at Grand Elder Chu.

"True. Lang Jing being missing can only mean that whoever helped her was stronger than Lang Jing. Lang Jing was one of our Strongest Black Robed Elders. Only a Grand Elder can take him out. Only you had it out for him!" another person said as he pointed towards Grand Elder Chu.

"What nonsense are you talking about! You have gone mad! I wouldn't go that far to do that! I love my sect, and I would never do anything to harm it!" Grand Elder Chu refuted.

"Mi Yao also claimed that when she told us about Long Chen's death, but we all know how truthful her words were. Your words sound similar in intent," Another Grand Elder said.

Most of the Grand Elders seemed to be blaming Grand Elder Chu.

Chapter 448 - 448: Leaked?

"Silence! Don't let your assumptions cloud your judgment. Grand Elder Chu has always been loyal to the sect, and we all know that. Let the investigation proceed. We need to find out what actually happened before we come to a conclusion. Don't act like mindless sheep," The Sect Master said.

Prime Elder didn't like her words in the least.

"Is that what you call the members of our sect? We all know that he is more loyal to you than to the sect, and he did many things that proved it to me. Still, I didn't care as these matters didn't adversely affect the sect too much, but you blindly supporting him is clearly because of that and not because of justice as you claim," the Prime Elder finally said something.

"But I do agree with one thing. We can't come to a conclusion yet without investigating things clearly. I agree that we need to see every aspect of the story. Whatever happens, we need to get the answers. Although I don't insist on putting him in prison, I do suggest keeping 3 Grand Elders with him every time to keep an eye on him," The Prime Elder said.

He wanted to get the answers, and blaming Grand Elder Chu without looking through things properly was counterproductive. The only thing that he was sure of was that Mi Yao escaped and killed Long Chen. As for who helped her and why Lang Jing was missing, there wasn't anything concrete about that.

The other elders also calmed down after listening to the Prime Elder. The Prime Elder was the neutral party in this case, and his opinion influenced everyone. None of them would have believed the Sect Master because Grand Elder Chu was close to her, but they believed the Prime Elder as he didn't need to be afraid of the sect master. He could support justice without getting influenced.

Chu Miao was still in her house. No one informed her about what happened, but she knew what it was as she watched the Elders running in the same direction.

Long Chen was still flying towards the Blazing Sun Empire.

After traveling for over a day, he decided to take a rest and give some rest to the Sun Destroying Condor as well.

He was just about to order the Sun Destroying Condor to go down when he noticed a flying beast coming in his direction.

It was a Dark Winged Swan. A person was sitting on the Dark Winged Swan.

As the person got near, Long Chen noticed their clothes.

It was an Old man who was wearing the clothes of the Beast Hall.

That person was coming from the direction of the Blazing Sun Empire.

'The Elder from the Beast Hall? I guess those guys came to see why their teams didn't return. This guy is already going back, which means that he already searched the place. He must be going back to inform them about their missing. It's a good thing that I kept the bodies in my storage ring. They can only think that they are missing,' Long Chen muttered.

'Still, they were pretty fast. It hadn't been long since I killed them. I wonder how they did it,' Long Chen thought.

The Elder of the Beast Hall glanced at Long Chen. He was shocked as he stopped his beast. Without wasting a single moment, he brought his sword out of his storage ring.

Before he could attack, Long Chen teleported behind the man.

Long Chen's King's sword was touching the man's back while his spirit sword was resting on his neck.

"You reacted so violently. There could only be three reasons for that. One is that you are a bastard who kills everyone that comes across him. I don't think that should be the case even though you look like a bastard. That leaves only two options. You either know that I'm from the Dark Soul Sect or you know about what happened," Long Chen muttered.

"Which one is it?" Long Chen asked.

The Elder didn't reply; instead, a dagger appeared in his other hand. He wanted to stab the dagger in Long Chen's chest as he had guessed Long Chen's location from his voice.

He was about to attack, but Long Chen reacted fast and stabbed his Sword in the Elder's chest.

Surprisingly, Xia had also jumped over to the Dark Winged Swan. While Long Chen stabbed his sword in a non-vital area of the Elder, Xia sliced his neck clean off.

Long Chen was surprised how fast Xia was. She was a Peak Earth Realm cultivator equivalent, but her speed was much faster. Even quicker than him.

The Elder's body fell down as Long Chen pulled his sword out.

"You didn't have to cut his head off, Xia. I wanted to keep him alive to get some answers from him," Long Chen sighed.

"He tried to harm, Master. Everyone who tries to harm Master deserves to die," Xia said, without any regret.

Long Chen didn't know how to react. This was a good thing for Xia to do generally, and he didn't want to tell her not to do it; otherwise, things might backfire if she misunderstood his orders. He needed her to follow this same resolve as she protected him.

"Whatever happened has already happened. I can't change it," Long Chen muttered as he sat down and took the storage ring of the man.

He threw the man's body down to the ground and went back to his Sun Destroying Condor. Xia also jumped back.

"I wonder if that Elder recognized me as the Head Disciple of the Dark Soul Sect? It's possible that someone leaked how I look to them. The chances are low, though. But nothing else makes sense either. He shouldn't know that I killed his team. I left no proof behind. Whatever he's already dead. Whatever information he discovered about me is dead with him," Long Chen muttered as he sat on his Sun Destroying Condor.

He started looking inside the ring that he took from the man.

There were some decent treasures inside the ring, but nothing major that could attract his attention. There was nothing in that ring, which was more precious than the artifacts that he had.

"What the heck?" Long Chen exclaimed in shock as he noticed something.

There was a portrait of him inside the man's storage ring.

"How did he get that? Did someone really leak my portrait? Someone from the Dark Soul Sect?" Long Chen thought as his frown deepened.

He couldn't understand what was happening. Now he was genuinely starting to regret that the Elder was killed before he could get his answers, but there was nothing he could do now. All he had were suspicions.

He put the portrait back in the storage ring and put the thought to the back of his mind. He realized that no matter how much he thought about it, he would never come to a conclusion about the truth. The only person who had the answers was dead now.

Long Chen continued on his journey towards the Blazing Sun Empire.

He was excited that he would get to meet her woman. He could finally be with them.

He had already planned the next part of their journey after he met them. He had many things to do. He needed to go to the Ghost Temple, leave the continent, and many more. He also had to go back to his family home to give them the treasures.

Long Chen was about to go down to give rest to the Sun Destroying Condor, but after what happened, he decided to continue on his journey, even though it would be tiring for the Sun Destroying Condor. He wanted to be with his girls before anything unexpected happened.

Another day passed away, and Long Chen finally reached the blazing sun empire.

He went straight to the Royal Palace.

He stopped before the palace.

Chapter 449 - 449: Your Family Will Die

Long Chen stopped before the Royal Palace of the Blazing Sun Empire.

He told the guards to inform Second Prince Ji Shan that Long Chen was here.

"Sorry, but the second prince is not in the Palace," The Guard replied.

"Where did he go?" Long Chen inquired.

He left the palace with two girls yesterday.

"Left with two girls?" Long Chen muttered.

He spread out his Divine Sense to scan the whole palace, and he truly didn't find Ji Shan and his girls inside.

"I need answers. Where did he go!" Long Chen repeated his question with a grave look on his face.

Before he left the palace last time, he had told Mingyu and Zhiqing that he would be back after 2-3 weeks. It had only been two weeks. They shouldn't have gone to look for him. Even if they went to the North Moon Empire, they should've been back by now.

Long Chen couldn't help but have a bad feeling. Something was definitely wrong here. Why did that Elder have his portrait? Why did the girls leave the palace? He felt that these two things were somehow related.

"We are just some guards. We don't know where Prince went. Please leave," The guard said.

Long Chen was losing his patience. His patience was really lacking when it came to people close to him.

Without thinking anything, he caught the guard by his neck and raised him in the air.

"Tell me the direction they went in!" Long Chen commanded.

The other guards were also surprised as they watched Long Chen suddenly attack their fellow guard.

They brought their weapons out to attack Long Chen, but before their swords could even reach Long Chen, Xia got into the action.

In a few seconds, she killed all the Royal Guards that tried to attack Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't care about the deaths of those guards. He was only focused on the man that was in his hand.

"Tell me the direction!" Long Chen repeated his words.

The guard lost all his courage after seeing the situation change.

He pointed towards a particular direction.

"T-they went in that direction," he said.

Long Chen looked in the direction the guard was pointing at.

He grew even more worried as he noticed that the direction was not the direction of the North Moon Empire, which meant that they didn't go to search for him there. Something was really wrong here. Long Chen didn't realize that while he was stressed, he crushed the neck of the guard.

He noticed after some time that the man was dead. He threw the man's body away.

"The King is still inside. He must know the answer," Long Chen muttered.

He walked towards the door of the Palace. Xia followed behind closely.

Long Chen pushed the door open and openly walked inside the palace.

"Xia, Kill anyone that tries to block me!" Long Chen commanded Xia.

There were guards inside the palace in almost every hallway.

"Stop! Who are you?" The guards said as they noticed the sword in Long Chen's hand, and no guard was escorting him.

Whenever a guest came, a guard escorted him inside. Long Chen had no escort, which meant that he hadn't entered normally. His bloodied sword was also a proof of that.

They brought their sword out of its sheath, but before they could even take a step forth, Xia appeared before them.

The last thing they saw was Xia's beautiful face before they were beheaded.

Long Chen didn't stop and continued walking towards the king's bedroom.

He had already seen where the king was when he used his Divine Sense.

The corridors of the palace had maids and guards. While the maids stepped aside in fear as they saw Long Chen and Xia coming towards them with their swords, the guards tried to stop them only to die.

After some time, Long Chen reached near the room of the King.

He used his Demon Monarch Physique to its fullest as he kicked the door and broke it open.

The King was in his bed, resting.

"You! What are you doing here!" the King sat up, shocked as he saw Long Chen.

He brought out his Sword from his storage ring, ready to attack.

"You look like you know about me, and not the good things. I guess something did happen here," Long Chen muttered.

"Where is your son, Ji Shan?" Long Chen asked.

"You bastard! Do you think you can escape after killing the Elder of the Beast Hall? You will suffer for your sins, and your family in the Shui Kingdom will pay for it as well!" the King said.

Long Chen's face lost all its color as he heard the King's words. The name of his home kingdom, he didn't understand how he knew it.

He lost control of his anger and teleported behind the man, shocking him.

Long Chen thrust his sword forth, which penetrated the chest of the King but missed his vitals. Long Chen didn't kill him intentionally.

"Xia, stop!" Long Chen roared as he saw Xia attack as well.

He didn't want to see the repeat of what happened with the Elder of the Beast Hall. He needed his answers.

Xia stopped her sword just a few inches away from the King's neck.

The King was heavily injured in an instant. He didn't know that Long Chen would be so fast.

His lips were covered in the blood that he had coughed out. His feet were shaking.

The sword dropped from his hand as he dropped down to his knees after Long Chen pulled his sword out.

Long Chen walked to the front of the man and gripped his neck as he raised him up in the air.

"It doesn't matter who it is; anyone who messes with my family dies! Tell me everything that happened! How do you know about me and what about my family! Was that Elder of the Beast Hall going to his sect to tell them about my family so that they could attack my kingdom?" Long Chen roared in anger.

"Huh, You can kill these old bones, but I will never tell you. You are a monster who killed everyone. You deserve to die, and the sects will kill you!" the King said.

"Your Eldest Son, Ji Shen, is still in his room, right? Would you like to watch him die before your eyes? That would make for a good scene," Long Chen said, with a malicious look on his face. "This monster wouldn't mind destroying your whole kingdom today!"

The King watched Long Chen's expression, and he could see the madness in Long Chen's eyes.

Long Chen looked towards Xia and told her the Direction of Ji Shen's room.

"Xia, Go bring his son here. Remember to cut off his hands and feet as you bring him here. Don't kill him, though. I need him alive so that I could kill him personally before the King that wants my family to be destroyed," He said to her.

"You dare!" the King roared in anger as he started using his full force. He was injured, and that's why he hadn't used his full Cultivation in a while, but now he didn't care for anything.

He punched towards Long Chen, not caring even a little bit of his old injuries and the new one.

Long Chen again teleported behind the man.

He brought out his spirit sword, which penetrated the right hand of the King.

The King still didn't care as he turned back and used his left hand to attack.

Long Chen again dodged the attack as he teleported behind the king and stabbed his King's sword in the left hand of the King, making it useless as well.

His Spirit Sword stabbed the right thigh of the King, whereas Long Chen used his King's sword to pierce the left leg of the King.

Chapter 450 - 450: Discovered (I)

The king had become somewhat disabled as he wasn't able to move his feet or his hand.

He couldn't even sit straight.

"Xia, you're still here. Get me that guy I told you about," Long Chen said to Xia, who was standing behind.

"Wait! Don't harm my son," The King said to Long Chen. "I'll tell you what you want to know."

"There's no need to bring him here anymore. You can stop," Long Chen told Xia, who was about to leave. Xia stopped as per his orders.

"Tell me what happened," Long Chen said to the man.

"Yesterday, an Elder from the Beast Hall came here."

The King started describing what happened. He talked about that Elder and what he told him.

What actually happened was that as soon as Long Chen killed the Elder of the Beast Hall, they found out about the deaths somehow.

The Beast Hall and the other sects had received a letter claiming that someone completely wiped out their teams, including their elders. Even though the sects were suspicious, they sent a team of 4-5 Elders to verify the news.

The letter didn't claim anything else other than the fact that their teams were wiped out. It didn't claim who did it and why.

The strange thing was that they received the letter even before Long Chen had killed the Elders.

Except for the Devil Worshipping Sect and the Dark Soul Sect, everyone received that letter.

Just after 4 hours, Long Chen and Chu Miao left that place, the other sects arrived.

It was such a weird thing for all the sects to arrive at the same time, considering the fact that some sects were near while some are far away.

They didn't know, but each of them got the letter at a different time. With a little bit of scary luck, it all ended up with them getting there at the same time.

Almost all of the 17 Sects had 5 Elders present.

As they reached there, they noticed the ground covered with blood, but there were no bodies there.

Just when everyone was trying to understand the whole situation, the leading Elder of the Buddha Temple brought an artifact out of his storage ring.

It was a special Gold Plated Mirror.

The Buddha Temple Elder told everyone that it was a special artifact of their Buddha Temple that he brought here after finding out about the possibility of their people dying.

It was a special mirror that could be used to see what happened in a place in the past. The only limitations were that one could only see back in time by a few hours, and it could only be used once every year.

Even he wasn't sure if he would find anything significant from this as the chances of the murders happening in the last few hours were quite low seeing how they got the messages long ago.

The Buddha Temple Elder explained about the mirror to others and said that he was going to try finding out who killed their people, but he also told the limitations and that the chances of finding the truth were really low.

The Buddha Temple Elder used the mirror to see what happened here in the last few hours.

They all looked in the mirror carefully, and after some time, the mirror started showing images.

The scene they saw showed them a small snake-like beast flying in the air and the Devil Hunter Beast killing the Elder of the True Dao Sect while a boy killed the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect.

The bodies of all the elders were lying on the floor.

They saw the fight ending with everyone except a boy and a girl dying. They didn't know which sect the boy and the girl belonged to. They even doubted if they belonged to any. There was also a possibility that they were independent

cultivators because they didn't see any Elder with them. They didn't know how the fight started, but only the end of it.

Even though they didn't know who these people were, they did see that it was the boy who killed them all as they saw the girl standing in the back, looking scared.

Everyone was angry, especially the Elders of the True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect, who actually saw their elders die.

They saw how Long Chen killed them. Their blood boiled as they watched their fellow elders die. They couldn't hear any words from the mirror, but the visuals made everything clear.

All the elders decided that they needed to find Long Chen and get answers about his identity. A normal disciple shouldn't be this strong. Some of them even guessed that the boy might have a special identity or some treasure that made him this strong in addition to the Flute of War.

One of the Elders brought out paper and started drawing the portrait of Long Chen.

They decided to go to the city and ask around to see if that boy was in the city. If the murder happened a few hours ago, then the chances of that boy being in the city to recover were really high.

The Elders began their quest to get information.

They started asking around in hotels, and the shops of physicians as the chances of them being there were really high.

They were just a short distance away from the hotel where Long Chen had stayed at, when they stopped.

They noticed a person carefully looking at the portrait in their hands.

The Elder of the True Dao Sect noticed it. He told everyone to stop.

He walked to the person and showed that person the portrait.

"Do you know him?" the Elder asked.

"H-he looks exactly like someone I know," the person replied.

That person was someone that Long Chen had met before and knew from his hometown.

"Who is he?" the Elder asked.

"He is Long Tian, the grandson of the Long Clan patriarch. Their Clan is situated in the Dragon City of the Shui Kingdom," the person said.

"Long Tian..." the Elder muttered with a frown on his face.

"So he's not from those continents. I was worried for nothing. He's just a guy from a small second-ranked kingdom. For him to become this strong, he must have received a few great treasures," The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect let out as he walked towards them.

"It doesn't matter what he did. He will die. Now that we know about him, it only makes it more clear that he doesn't have a backing from the outside," the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect said.

They all decided to send one person from their teams back to the sect to inform them of what happened with the portrait of the boy while they all went to the Shui Kingdom to get their revenge from his family.

The Sect could deal with finding the boy while they dealt with the revenge. Their reputation was on the line.

They also took the person that informed them.

One Elder from each team went back to their Sects.

It was only the Elder of the Beast Hall who decided to rest at the Royal Palace of the Blazing Sun Empire since the King was related to their Beast Hall.

He also informed the king about what happened. Zhiqing, Mingyu, Ji Shan, and Ji Shen were there as well.

Mingyu, Zhiqing, and Ji Shan were shocked when they saw the portrait. Mingyu was especially shocked to find out that they found out about Long Chen's home town.

After the Elder Left, she also persuaded Ji Shan and Zhiqing to come with her to save Long Chen's family.

Zhiqing and Ji Shan were Shocked once again. They didn't know that Long Chen was from such a small family.

They didn't take long before they left the Royal Palace and went towards the Kingdom of Shui.

Everything happened as if someone was controlling things from behind the shadows to make it happen. Someone was wasn't simple to say the least.

Chapter 451 - 451: Race Against Time (I)

"That Elder told me about this and about you. That's how I know that you are the killer and that they are going to kill your family," The King said. "As for my son, I don't know where he went. He didn't tell me anything before leaving."

Long Chen heard about everything, and he could feel anger and worry at the same time.

He threw the king back and left his room.

He ran towards the exit.

As soon as he left the place, he called out the Sun Destroying Condor and sat on top of it, before commanding it to fly towards a particular direction.

He was in a race against the time now. A race that had everything important to him on the line. He couldn't even imagine what he would do if he were even a second late.

"I will kill them all! I will destroy every piece of their soul if they even touched my family!" Long Chen thundered in anger.

The Sun Destroying Condor flew at its full speed. It could sense Long Chen's emotion and how worried he was. Even though the Sun Destroying Condor was tired after flying for a few days, it still flew as fast as it could.

Somewhere far away from Long Chen, there was a beautiful garden. The garden was filled with beautiful greenery highlighting the beauty of nature.

There was a small table in that garden and only a single chair near that table.

A person was sitting on the chair. It was a man who looked to be 24-25 years old, but his actual age was unknown.

There was a cup in the man's hand, which was filled with a tea-like liquid.

The man comfortably took a sip of his drink.

"The race has started, my dear friend. I hope you like this gift from me," the man smiled as he glanced towards the sky.

The man finished his tea and stood up.

He looked towards the south.

"I wonder what that guy is doing right now. He's still out of my reach. Is he still roaming around in that broken mask?" the man muttered.

The man turned back and started walking away from the table.

There was a necklace on his neck. There was a small coin-shaped item tied to the necklace. If Long Chen were here, he would've recognized that little item. It was the Token of Appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect. It was the last token of appreciation that wasn't found.

It was the 20th Token Of Appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect.

Long Chen was flying back towards the Shui Kingdom, but he was quite far away from it.

After some time, he noticed that the speed of the Sun Destroying Condor was slowing down. He was too stressed to notice it previously, but now he could see that the Sun Destroying Condor was just too tired. Even after trying its best, it wasn't able to maintain its speed.

Xun appeared beside Long Chen.

"You should give it rest. I don't think you can finish the journey on him," Xun said to Long Chen.

"I... Alright. I'll fly myself," Long Chen muttered as he stood up. "The Spirit Sword will be too slow in this case."

For the first time in his life, he was so stressed that he wasn't thinking clearly.

"Long Chen, I know that you are stressed about your family, but you need to calm down and think clearly. It's clear that the decisions taken in haste aren't your best decisions. You don't need to use your Heavenly Demon Wings. There is another option now. How about another flying beast. You have one, don't you?" Xun suggested.

Long Chen's mind finally clicked as he heard her response.

Long Chen ignored her words about calming down and focused on the rest of her sentence.

He brought the Snake Monarch out of the Beast Region of his ring.

"You called this king? Tell me who needs to be beaten today? This king is in a good mood. You don't need to hesitate," the Snake Monarch said proudly.

"You don't need to fight. You need to become my flying Mount. I need to get home fast," Long Chen said to the Snake Monarch.

"What? You want this Lord to become a Mount? Preposterous!" The Snake Monarch instantly refused.

"Stop talking nonsense! My family's life depends on me getting back in time! Do as I say!" Long Chen lost his self-control and scolded the snake monarch.

"Your family's life? Alright, This King is compassionate, so I will help you, but it will only be this one time!" the Snake Monarch said as he stopped looking at Long Chen.

He started increasing in size until he was big enough to carry everyone.

"Xia, follow me," Long Chen told Xia as he jumped over to the Snake Monarch.

Xia also jumped after him.

Long Chen put the Sun Destroying Condor back in the Beast Region of his storage ring.

Long Chen told the direction to the Snake Monarch.

The Snake Monarch increased his speed, and surprisingly he was much faster than the Sun Destroying Condor.

Even though he wasn't a Specific Flying Type beast like the Sun Destroying Condor, after his evolution, he gained the ability to fly, and he was a mid-Sky Realm Beast. His Cultivation was much higher than the Sun Destroying Condor, which also helped his speed.

Somewhere between Long Chen's current destination and the Shui Kingdom, a big group of flying beasts was flying in the Direction of Shui Kingdom.

There were 68 Flying Beasts of different species, to be exact.

People were sitting on top of these flying beasts.

There were 69 people on the beasts. Amongst them, 68 people were the Elders of the Overlord Sects of this Continent.

Most people didn't even know about them, let alone imagine how powerful they could be. They were like Gods in the eyes of Normal People.

The Kingdom of Shui had no cultivator in the Sky Realm. In Fact, it only had a few Minor Earth Realm Cultivators. They hadn't seen a Sky Realm Cultivator in their kingdom, let alone seeing the Sky Realm Cultivators from the most powerful of the Sects.

There was also a person on one of the beasts that didn't seem like they belonged here.

That person was the one that told them about Long Chen's real identity and about his family.

That person was a young boy. He looked like he wasn't even 20 yet.

If Long Chen were here, he would've recognized that person as the Third Prince of the Shui Kingdom.

Long Chen fought with the 3rd Prince, which he had won. It was a casual fight, just to showcase their powers; that's why Long Chen didn't harm the 3rd Prince of the Shui Kingdom.

The 3rd Prince of the Shui Kingdom was sitting in front of the Elder from the True Dao Sect.

"Considering the fact that you knew about him, You must be from the Shui Kingdom as well, right?" the Elder asked the Third Prince.

"Yes, I am from the Shui Kingdom. I am the 3rd Prince of the Shui Kingdom, Yue Ding," that boy said.

"You don't look particularly talented. How did you get to the North Moon Empire from the backwater Kingdom of Shui?" the Elder asked.

He could see that Yue Ding didn't have a talent for cultivation when compared to people of Empires, so the chances of him being selected by a master from the North Moon Empire were really low. He couldn't understand how he got there. It was also pretty suspicious about the timing of everything.

Yue Ding looked somewhat hesitant to answer.

"Answer me. I don't want to hear any lies," the Elder asked Yue Ding with a stern look on his face. He was even more suspicious as he noticed the expressions of Yue Ding.

Chapter 452 - 452: Out Of Control

"It's something really weird. I don't think you will believe me even if I tell you," Yue Ding said hesitantly.

"Don't worry about that. Just tell me what happened. I'll decide if I'll believe you or not," the Elder muttered.

Yue Ding still looked hesitant as if he was unwilling to answer.

"If you still don't tell me, then I wouldn't mind throwing you down from here," The Elder responded with a stern look on his face.

"I... What happened was that I was walking in the hallway of my palace when I saw something lying on the ground. It seemed like a talisman. I picked it up out of curiosity," Yue Ding said.

"As soon as I touched the talisman, I was brought to that place. I was roaming through the city to find out where I was when I saw you guys and the portrait in your hands," He added.

"You were right. It is unbelievable. A talisman that brought you here? Even the longest range transmission talisman can't bring someone so far. What did that talisman look like?" the man asked.

"It was a piece of white paper which had thousands of strange lines on it. I don't remember the exact pattern it formed, but it looked very complex," Yue Ding said.

The Elder looked at Yue Ding suspiciously.

'If what he's saying is true, then something really big is going on here. Someone really wanted us to know about the murders and the identity of the murderer. Is this a ploy against us, or is someone trying to use us against that boy for some reason? Or is this really a big coincidence?' the Elder of the True Dao Sect thought.

Somewhere between the entourage of the Various Sects and Long Chen, there were 3 Flying Beasts.

There was a boy and two girls sitting on the beasts.

"We are going after them, but I don't think we can catch up to them. We might be too slow," Ji Shan muttered.

"Don't say that. We must get there in time; otherwise, Long Chen will lose his family," Mingyu let out as she kept her focus straight ahead.

"I wish Long Chen was back. He doesn't even know that his family is in trouble," Zhiqing muttered as she looked down.

"I want to get there to save his family, but we can only do that if we get there before them. If they get to his home before us, I don't think we would be able to do anything. We can't defeat the top elders of the strongest sects," Ji Shan said as he sighed.

Their beasts were flying as fast as they could to get them to their destination.

Even Mingyu looked grave. She also had no idea about how she could save his family if she were late.

Long Chen had shown his grandpa and other clan members to her previously. She had seen how much he cared for them. She could imagine how heartbroken he would be after seeing his family harmed.

She didn't want to see Long Chen losing his family. She didn't want to see him broken.

"I don't care what I have to do, I will help his family escape," Mingyu clenched her fist as she decided.

The Shui Kingdom was a small Third rank kingdom. It was a peaceful kingdom that hadn't seen many wars. There were three major clans in the Shui Kingdom and a Royal Clan that was said to be the strongest in the Kingdom.

Even the King of Shui Himself was just an Earth Realm Cultivator. Shui did not have many resources; that's why no high Ranked Cultivator came to Shui to cause trouble.

Long Clan was said to be the second most influential clan in the Kingdom of Shui.

The Clan had many properties and businesses spread throughout the kingdom, but the Main Clan Residence was situated in the Dragon City.

Inside the Long Clan, everything was normal. People were going by their usual routine, unaware of the dangers that loomed over their heads.

Long Chen's grandpa, Long Ren, was the Clan Master.

He was in his room, cultivating. He could feel that he was closer to a breakthrough to the next realm.

Long Ren was a Second Stage Earth Realm Cultivator, but he was close to a breakthrough to the 3rd stage of the Earth Realm.

If he achieved Breakthrough, then he would be in the same Cultivation stage as the King of Shui. The King of Shui was a Peak 3rd stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

Long Ren felt that he would achieve the breakthrough really soon.

In a different part of the Long Clan mansion, a middle-aged woman was sitting on a chair. Even though the woman was over 40, She looked like she was younger than 30. She was Long Chen's mother, Sima Ziyi.

There was a table in front of her, and the food was placed on the table, but she wasn't eating it.

Two girls stood behind her. They were Xue and Mei.

"It has been so long. He's still not back," The Woman muttered as she looked blankly at the food. "I want to know how he is. Is it safe? Is he eating on time or not? What was it that made him go away?"

"Young Master will come back, Madam. When we last saw him, he looked like he was in good condition. He was also very strong. He will definitely come back soon," Xue said.

"Yes, Please eat, Madam. You need to be healthy," Mei also said.

"That boy will definitely get the beating of his life when he comes back. He dared to leave again without telling his mother," the woman sighed.

In the Royal Palace of the Dragon City, the Royal guards were on the search for the 3rd Prince, Yue Ding, who had gone missing.

The King was worried about his son, and he commanded every guard to search for his missing son.

Even after searching in the whole palace, the 3rd Prince wasn't found.

The king grew even more worried as he commanded his men to search for the Prince in the City.

"I want the Third Prince found, no matter what it takes," he commanded the men.

A Gold Grade Flying Beast entered the city of Shui.

Two people were sitting on the beast. One of them looked like a 17-18-year-old girl, whereas the other person was a middle-aged man.

The girl was Ling, who had broken the engagement to Long Chen, and the man was her father, who was also the best friend of Long Chen's father from his younger days.

They were going in the direction of the Long Clan.

All of the 17 Sects had sent an elder to their respective sect to inform the sect about the death of their Elders with the portrait of the culprit.

16 of the 17 Elders reached their Sects safely and gave the information to their sects. There was only one sect that didn't receive any information.

It was the Beast Hall. Long Chen had already killed the Elder of the Beast Hall that was in charge of taking the information to the sect.

All the Sect Masters were furious when they found out what happened.

They were all enraged and commanded their people to find this boy.

They ordered for Long Chen's portraits to be distributed in every corner of the continent, and whoever gave them information about the boy's current whereabouts was to be rewarded with various treasures.

Long Chen didn't know how bad things were getting. Everything was getting out of control, but even if he knew, he wouldn't have cared. His mind was focused entirely on his family, which was in danger at the moment. He had no time to think about anything that was happening in the world.

Chapter 453 - 453: Toying

Long Chen was still flying towards the Shui Kingdom. He was on the back of the Snake Monarch, looking restless.

The Snake Monarch's speed was the fastest that Long Chen had ever seen since he started his journey, but it was also a fact that he hadn't seen a Sky Realm flying beast before, let alone traveling on one. He didn't know how the Snake Monarch compared to other flying specific beasts that had the same Cultivation as him.

"Master's family is in danger?" Xia asked Long Chen after some time. She had been wondering about it.

She had heard Long Chen talk about it when he was talking to the Snake Monarch. She wanted to ask right then, but she waited.

"Yes, Some bastards are targeting my family. They are looking to die," Long Chen said as he clenched his fist. "I will fulfill their wish and give them death before they can even touch my family."

"Xia will help Master. Master's family is Xia's family. Xia will help Master kill anyone who wants to harm the family," Xia said with determination.

"You'll get the opportunity. The land shall be covered with their blood for even thinking about harming my family. None of them will be left intact. Their bodies will be left to rot without any burial," Long Chen declared.

Xia heard his words, and she also got ready to fulfill Long Chen's wishes as she glanced at her sword.

Xun was sitting nearby, silently. She didn't know what to say about all this. She could see that Long Chen wasn't thinking calmly, but he still hadn't lost himself in anger completely.

'He needs to address his family and remove the mortal emotional bindings if he wants to become someone great. If he can save his family, it would be a good opportunity to deal with the issues as he would have time to deal with it without losing himself in anger and regret,' Xun thought.

The Snake Monarch kept advancing at rapid speed, decreasing the distance between them and the people they were chasing after.

Long Chen didn't know how far away the others were, but he really hoped that he would get back home before them.

"At this speed, it would take us two more days to get to the Shui Kingdom," Long Chen muttered as he looked down to the ground.

He could've used his Spatial Travel skill that he was only allowed to use once a day to cover a long distance in an instant, but he didn't as he could only go to places that he had been to before.

He could use Spatial Travel to go to the town that he had been to on his journey, but that wasn't on the shortest route.

If he did that, it would only make things worse and make their journey even longer compared to moving with the Snake Monarch as not he didn't need to take the roundabout way like he had to take with the carriage.

He had decided that he would use Spatial Travel when he was actually within the range of his Long Clan so that he could get there in an instant if he wasn't able to catch up to the other elders by then.

They continued advancing ahead, and another day passed away.

Long Chen still hasn't slept. He was always on the lookout. He was hoping to find the Elders of the other sects.

It was at that time; he saw someone ahead.

He could see three people ahead. All three of them were on their flying beasts.

Even though their backs were facing him, Long Chen recognized them.

"Mingyu, Zhiqing, and Ji Shan?" Long Chen muttered.

After all this time, he had managed to catch up to the girls, but he knew that he was still far away from the Elders.

Mingyu and the others only left the palace after the Beast Hall Elder disclosed the information to the King, but the other elders had departed towards the Shui Kingdom when the Beast Hall Elder left the North Moon Empire.

They were probably 6-12 hours behind the Elders of the Various Sects at the minimum.

"Mingyu! Zhiqing!" Long Chen called out.

The distance between them was continually decreasing at a rapid speed as the Snake Monarch was much faster than their beast.

Mingyu, Zhiqing, and Ji Shan heard Long Chen's voice. Initially, they thought that they heard wrong, but they still looked back.

All 3 of them were surprised to see Long Chen behind them.

"Jump over when we get there!" Long Chen told them.

He also told Snake Monarch to stop before them for a brief second.

The Snake Monarch grumbled. He felt like he was made a free ride out of nowhere, but he couldn't do anything. He had agreed to do this one time, but he swore to himself that he wouldn't do something like this again. It was embarrassing.

Fortunately, none of the beasts from the Beast Region saw him carrying these random people from their eyes. Carrying Long Chen was excusable, but carrying others was much worse when it came to explanation.

The Snake Monarch slowed down near their beasts.

Ji Shan, Mingyu, and Zhiqing jumped over to the Snake Monarch. Ji Shan kept all 3 of the Flying Beasts in his storage ring.

The Snake Monarch again increased his speed as it resumed flying towards the Shui Kingdom.

Mingyu and Zhiqing were happy to see Long Chen and even wanted to hug him firmly, but the situation right now didn't allow that. These were some seriously bad times.

"Your Family is in danger. The Sect..." Mingyu started explaining to Long Chen, but he stopped her.

"I know everything. They found my home and are going to destroy it," Long Chen let out. "I won't let them touch anyone from my family."

"I'm so glad that you're here, now you can lead things," Ji Shan said to Long Chen.

Zhiqing was still silent, not knowing what to say.

"I didn't know that you were from Such a small kingdom. Seeing your worried look, I am sure that it is true. It's really amazing how much you grew to reach such a high level," Ji Shan muttered as he looked ahead. "I remember thinking that you were from some Empire."

"I was not from an Empire, and I never claimed it. Still, I did hide where I was really from to protect the privacy and safety of my family," Long Chen replied.

"It was really unlucky that they found a person who knew you from your hometown. The chances of that happening should have been almost impossible. That bastard who exposed your location put your entire family in danger," Ji Shan said with an angry look on his face.

According to him, it all happened because of that boy. If that boy weren't there at that time, then Long Chen's family would not be in danger.

"Everything that happened should've been impossible. The Buddha Temple Elder having such a rare artifact, then meeting the person who knows me, targeting my weak family for revenge instead of looking for me. It all feels like someone toying with me," Long Chen said.

"Do you have a plan to handle them? I will tell you right away that we left without a plan. I still don't understand how we will stop all these Sky Realm Elders. We can only escape this confrontation if we don't meet them and get to your home before them. Escaping with your family before they reach, there seems to be the only option. You have a great Mount; we can possibly achieve that," Ji Shan told Long Chen.

"Your father is the Mount! If you disrespect this King once again, This King will eat you!" Snake Monarch said, angrily.

Chapter 454 - 454: False Accusations

"The hell? It can speak?" Ji Shan received the shock of his life as he saw Snake Monarch speak.

"Who the hell are you calling It? This King is the Lord of the Universe!" The Snake Monarch said.

Ji Shan closed his mouth abruptly as he got scolded by the Snake Monarch. He just looked at Long Chen in confusion.

"He's helping me today by carrying me. Generally, he doesn't do it," Long Chen explained to Ji Shan.

"I, ah, Understand," Ji Shan responded.

The Snake Monarch kept flying ahead without getting tired. His energy reserves were much vast when compared to the Earth Realm Sun Destroying Condor.

"At this speed, we should be able to catch up. I think we were informed about them 12 hours after they left. If their beasts are not Sky Realm beasts, then we shouldn't have trouble catching them before they reach the Shui Kingdom," Ji Shan said as he looked at the map.

Long Chen also clenched his fist. He was hoping to catch them as well before they reached his home.

Back in the Shui Kingdom, the Long Clan was not silent anymore.

Almost the whole clan was noisy today as a guest entered their clan.

Most of the Elders of the clan knew about the guest.

They had all found out about Long Chen's broken engagement. Most of them hadn't thought much about it, other than feeling that it was insulting for their clan to have an engagement being broken, but no one outside the clan knew it, so the damage was contained.

Today, however, the girl that broke the engagement came back to the Long Clan, and this time, she also brought her father.

Almost everyone was confused about their purpose.

An Elder went to talk to them. After talking for some time, they sent someone to inform the Clan Master.

Long Chen's mother, Sima Ziyi, had also found out about this. She came out with Xue and Mei as well.

Yu Tianhao was the name of Ling's father. He was Long Chen's Father's best friend. They had both decided on the engagement of their kids once upon a time, which was broken by his daughter without telling him.

His daughter only told him after she had broken the engagement. Yu Tianhao had no choice but to give in to her demand and not pursue the matter.

Long Chen had once used the Law of Illusion on Yu Tianhao to make himself seem like his father to get some information out of Yu Tianhao.

Yu Tianhao didn't know that it was Long Chen, who used an illusion on him. All this time, he had only been thinking that it was a dream of his. That moment had reminded him of everything he and Long Jun went through when they studied in the sect together.

Long Chen didn't know how deep of an impact his illusion had caused on Yu Tianhao.

Since that moment, Yu Tianhao had been regretting the fact that his family was the one that broke his promise to his dead friend.

He also regretted that he didn't even apologize to the Long Family for what his daughter did.

His guilt only kept increasing day by day until he couldn't take it anymore.

He called his daughter home from the North Moon Empire.

Despite her resistance, he convinced her to come with him to the Long Clan to apologize to everyone for what they did.

He also hoped that he could follow the promise of marriage to the end, but he didn't force his daughter on that. For now, he only wanted to apologize for everything, including his daughter's rude behavior, while subtly trying to fix the engagement.

"You?" Sima Ziyi let out as soon as she saw Yu Tianhao and his Daughter Yu Ling.

"Sister-In-law," Yu Tianhao greeted Sima Ziyi politely.

"I'm sorry for barging in without informing. I had something important to talk about. Where is Uncle Ren?" Yu Tianhao asked.

"Father in Law is in secluded Cultivation," Sima Ziyi said.

"Oh, It's regretful that I won't be able to talk to him, but I can still talk to you. Can we go to a private place?" Yu Tianhao said to Sima Ziyi.

"The Meeting Hall is open," Grand Elder Long Mu said.

He was the one that was handling the matters, and both the Clan Master and the Supreme Elder were busy in Secluded Cultivation.

"That will work," Yu Tianhao responded.

In all this while, Yu Ling hadn't looked up.

The Grand Elder took everyone to the Meeting Hall. Inside the meeting hall, there were only six people. Yu Tianhao, Yu Ling, Grand Elder Mu, Sima Ziyi, Xue, and Mei.

"Ahmm, do they need to be here?" Yu Tianhao asked as he looked towards Xue and Mei.

He knew that Grand Elder Mu wouldn't leave as he was probably here to keep Sima Ziyi safe in the presence of someone who was not from the clan, but the girls shouldn't belong here.

"They are like my daughters. You don't have to worry about them," Sima Ziyi explained. "Please speak your mind. Your words won't leave this room."

Yu Tianhao nodded his head. He took a deep breath as he prepared to speak.

"I, ah, I am here to apologize to you. I know that I should've done this before, but I only came now. I want to apologize for my daughter, who came here to cancel the engagement and put you in the spot. It was wrong. Even if she wanted to cancel it, that was not the right way," Yu Tianhao said as he sighed.

"Long Jun and I were friends, and I really believe that whatever happened was wrong for how it happened. I feel like I betrayed his trust in me and created a crack in our pure friendship," he continued.

Yu Tianhao looked towards his daughter.

"Ling, don't you have something to say?" he asked her.

Ling stood up.

"I am sorry for how I behaved last time. Even though I wanted to break off the engagement, there were better ways to do it, and I should've been more sensible," Ling apologized to Sima Ziyi as she bowed down.

"Even though I won't marry your son, I do need to apologize for doing what I did. I should've come with my father to do it, and I should've been more respectful," She added.

"You don't need to feel bad. Marriage is something that shouldn't happen if a person doesn't like another. If she didn't like him, then she did the right thing by speaking against it. Even Tian'er said that arranged marriage was wrong and that we shouldn't have done it," Sima Ziyi said, smilingly. "So, it all turned out for the good."

"Oh, Where is Tian? I do want to meet him. I haven't seen him even once," Yu Tianhao said to Sima Ziyi.

"He went outside to gain experience and cultivate. He's not home," Sima Ziyi said.

"Oh? He went outside to gain experience? That's interesting. Not many people from rich families leave home to go adventuring in the wild to increase their strength. It does seem like he has the same mindset as his father," Yu Tianhao laughed out loud.

"He probably went outside to have fun with girls. It's not like he hadn't slept with every girl in this city," Yu Ling muttered.

Even though she kept her voice low, everyone heard her.

"What nonsense are you talking about. Young Master is nothing like that!" Both, Xue and Mei, let out at the same time.

Sima Ziyi glanced at them and gestured to them to be silent.

"Ling! What nonsense are you spouting!" Yu Tianhao scolded Ling.

"I am sorry, Father," Ling apologized but it didn't seem like she meant it.

Chapter 455 - 455: Wrong

"Have you ever met my son?" Sima Ziyi asked her. Even though she was angry, she didn't show it.

"Forgive her, Sister-In-Law. This girl doesn't know what she is saying," Yu Tianhao apologized with an embarrassed look on his face. He came here to apologise for one thing, but things were only getting worse now.

"I'm not angry at her. I just want to hear her answers," Sima Ziyi said. "Tell me, Ling. Have you ever met my son?"

"No, I haven't met your son," Ling answered Sima Ziyi.

"Then why do you accuse my son's character like that? As far as I know, he hadn't even talked to a girl from this kingdom, let alone having relations with them," Sima Ziyi said.

"You should ask outside. Everyone in the kingdom knows about the reputation of your son. Before the age of 12, he had already slept with most of the girls from this kingdom," Ling said confidently.

"Who told you this nonsense? Don't you know that he had suffered an Assassination Attempt when he was 8? Since then, he didn't leave the house as his head suffered an injury, making him lose his intelligence and become like a kid. He only recovered when he was 12! Before the age of 15, he was only out of the mansion two times. One was when he was kidnapped, and the second time was when he went hunting for a few days after recovering. Are you saying that in a few days, he made relations with every girl in the kingdom?"

It was Grand Elder Mu that replied to this baseless accusation.

"What? Head injury? You're lying," Ling said as she stood up.

"I talked to the people of this kingdom. They said that he was the biggest playboy of this kingdom!" She added.

"This is so stupid that I don't even know how to reply," the Grand Elder sighed as he looked at her.

"I-i can prove it to you! Let's go outside! You can lie, but the citizens won't lie! Cover your faces so that you don't intimidate them with your status and come with me! I'll expose all your lies!" Ling said.

"Ling! Stop being stupid! You should believe them more than random strangers!" Yu Tianhao furiously smashed the table before him as he stood up.

"There's no need to be angry. I would love to hear who spreads such lies. Xue, Mei, can you bring a few masks for us?" Sima Ziyi said.

Xue and Mei both left the hall.

"Sister in Law, there's no need for that. I understand that she has been misguided. She is naive and stupid. Please don't take her seriously," Yu Tianhao said to Sima Ziyi.

"Don't worry. It's nothing serious. I also want to see what citizens think about my son," Sima Ziyi muttered as she stood up.

After some time, Xue and Mei came back with a few masks that they distributed to everyone.

Almost everyone covered their faces with masks, except Ling.

They left the mansion and walked to the center of the Dragon City that was under the influence of the Royal clan.

They let Ling go talk to everyone while they kept their distance

Ling walked to a random person walking on the street. It was a young man who was stunned as he saw a beautiful girl talking to him.

"Can you tell me something about a person?" Ling asked.

"Of Course. I'll tell you everything I know," The man said as he smiled. He wanted to charm Ling with his smile, but his smile only made him look worse.

"Ah, I want to ask about Long Tian," Ling said.

"Long Tian? The grandson of the Long Clan patriarch?" The man exclaimed in surprise.

"Yeah, I heard that he is the most infamous playboy in the city. I wanted to ask if that was right," Ling let out as she asked with an innocent look on her face.

"Who told you that? That boy and the playboy? Hahaha," the man couldn't help but laugh.

"That boy was the heartthrob of countless girls in the kingdom when he was 8, but he never even talked to a girl. He was such a book nerd from what I

heard. It only got worse after the Assassination Attempt on him. I heard that he lost his intelligence and became a retard who never left his house. From what I know, he did recover when he was 12, but he hasn't been seen in the city since then," The Man said. "Calling him a playboy? that's funny."

Ling's expressions changed as she heard his words. She started sweating. She was finally starting to doubt herself.

"Thank you," She thanked the man.

After some time, she walked to a girl.

She asked the girl the same question, and she received a similar answer. The girl talked about how she had a crush on Long Chen when he was young, but her feelings changed after she found out that he became a retard. She also said that there was no news about him being involved with any girl in his life.

Ling's frown deepened. She hurriedly walked to another person.

One after another, she kept talking to different people. She asked young and old, but the answer was always the same.

Yu Tianhao was also nearby, hearing all the answers, his face was only turning red in shame.

"Sister in Law, Please don't be angry at her. This daughter of mine is stupid, but she doesn't lie. Maybe someone fooled her when she came here last time. This idiot probably believed that person instead of asking anyone else," Yu Tianhao once again apologized to Sima Ziyi.

"It's alright. Call your daughter back. It's enough," Sima Ziyi said as she started walking back toward the Long Clan.

Yu Tianhao walked to Ling and took her back.

They all walked back to the Long Clan and entered the Meeting Hall.

Sima Ziyi was sitting silently, waiting for Ling to respond.

"I am sorry. I was wrong. I was fooled," Ling replied. Her eyes were filled with tears already.

"Do you remember the people that lied to you?" Sima Ziyi asked.

"It was a 13-14-year-old boy who told me this," Ling replied.

"Only a single person? You believed a single person instead of asking anyone else?" Sima Ziyi said as she sighed.

"Yes. That boy claimed to be Long Tian's cousin. I believed him after knowing that," Ling said as she wiped the tears off her face.

"What was he wearing?" Sima Ziyi asked.

"He was wearing a green robe and white clothes," Ling replied after taking some time to remember.

"It might be someone who was jealous of our clan and lied about being from our clan to spoil our reputation. The kids of Gu Clan are the most likely culprit. They used to wear Green Robes at that time. I don't think anyone from our clan would destroy Tian's reputation like that after knowing what he went through. Our Clan Members also wear golden robes," Grand Elder Mu analyzed the situation and recognized the culprit.

"That should be the case. Opposition clans can be quite petty. We have some clans like that back home as well," Yu Tianhao said.

"Was that rumor the reason for you breaking the Engagement?" Sima Ziyi asked Ling.

"That was one of the reasons, but my main reason was that I didn't want to marry a stranger and a weaker guy. I want my husband to be someone stronger than me. Someone from this small kingdom can never be my match. I'm the disciple of the Supreme Elder of an Empire. My husband can only be someone who is superior to me. Someone from this small kingdom can never be my prince," Ling replied.

Chapter 456 - 456: Caught

"It's good then. The engagement is canceled already, and neither you nor my son regrets it. There's no need to beat the dead horse. Let's just forget that it ever happened. There's no reason to spoil the relationship between our two clans," Sima Ziyi said.

"Ye..."

Yu Tianhao was about to reply when the gate of the Meeting Hall opened, and an old white-bearded man entered the place.

The man looked visibly happy. He was releasing the aura of a 3rd Stage Earth Realm Cultivator.

The Old man was Long Chen's grandfather and the Patriarch of the Long Clan, Long Ren. He has just achieved the breakthrough. After breaking through to the 3rd stage of the Earth Realm, he came out, only to get the news of the arrivals of guests.

He immediately came to the meeting hall.

"Patriarch."

"Father-In-Law."

"Uncle Ren."

Everyone stood up to greet Long Ren.

"Tianhao, You're here. What brings you here?" Long Ren said as he smiled. "Even your daughter is here."

"We came to apologize for the way my daughter behaved when she came to break off the engagement," Yu Tianhao said.

"It's fine. The young are always reckless. I remember that you were pretty reckless as well when Jun'er brought you home for the first time," Long Ren chuckled.

"Ah, please don't remind me of that time. I'm still embarrassed about how I behaved back then," Yu Tianhao said with an apologetic look on his face.

"Forget that everything that happened is already in the past. There's no need to apologize for anything, including the broken engagement. Things are

already over, and no one was hurt with the engagement being broken," Long Ren let out as he walked forth and sat on a chair.

"Thank you, Uncle Ren. I can finally put my mind at ease," Yu Tianhao said as he sighed. It was like a big burden was removed from his heart.

"Were you worried about tha..." Long Ren was about to continue when he felt a powerful aura.

Even Yu Tianhao was surprised to see it. This strength, whoever that aura belonged to, was definitely stronger than his sect master.

"Is someone strong passing through?" Yu Tianhao muttered as he stood up and walked towards the exit.

Long Ren and the others also walked out of their clan.

Almost everyone from the clan was on the street, looking outside.

In the distant horizon, they all saw tens of flying beasts coming towards them.

"So many powerful cultivators? What's going on?!" Yu Tianhao exclaimed as he saw the cultivators sitting on the beasts. "They are all stronger than Sect Master! Are they from an Empire?"

"Even an Empire shouldn't have so many powerful cultivators, let alone sending them all out at once," he added.

Soon, they noticed the Third Prince sitting is one of those cultivators.

"Yue Ding? What is he doing on the beast? Are these people His Majesty's guests?!" Long Ren exclaimed. He wondered if the king invited them. Yue Ding might be escorting them to the Palace.

"That's the long clan!" Third Prince Yue Ding said as he pointed towards the Long Mansion.

Long Ren watched Yue Ding pointing towards them, and his frown deepened.

"He's pointing in this direction. Something isn't right," Yu Tianhao let out as he watched that.

"Uncle Ren, you should leave with Sister-in-law. Their intentions towards the Long Clan doesn't seem right," Yu Tianhao said.

"No, I'm not leaving my clan. You leave with Ziyi and others, I'll stay behind," Long Ren said with a fierce look on his face.

"No, How can I leave you behind!" Yu Tianhao said.

Sima Ziyi also resisted.

"I won't leave you, Father," she said to Long Ren.

"Think about your family! Tianhao, You need to protect Ling! Ziyi, you need to stay alive for your kid! I don't want him to see you hurt. Also, think about Xue and Mei. They are just like your daughter. Leave right now; otherwise, it will be too late. If they're here to harm us, then you need to stay alive and escape. If they aren't here to harm us, then you can just come back after some time!" Long Ren said.

"That's my command as the Clan Patriarch! You must listen if you still have some respect for this old man's authority," Long Ren commanded her before Sima Ziyi could react.

"Tianhao, Keep Ziyi safe. She's the only family Tian'er has left after Jun's death," Long Ren said as he placed his hand on Yu Tianhao's shoulders."Now leave!"

Yu Tianhao listened to him and agreed after a slight hesitation.

Sima Ziyi still didn't seem like she wanted to leave.

Yu Tianhao brought his Gold Realm Flying beast out of his beast bag.

He sat on his flying beast with Yu Ling.

"Come, Sister-in-Law!" He told Sima Ziyi.

Sima Ziyi's legs weren't moving.

"Ziyi, Leave this instant; otherwise, I swear to God that I would kill myself right before you!" Long Ren furiously said.

Sima Ziyi's face turned white as she heard Long Ren's words.

She firmly held Xue and Mei's hands and started walking towards the flying beast of Yu Tianhao.

She stepped over the flying beast with Xue and Mei. Just as the beast had started rising in the air, an arrow made of fire came flying towards them and struck the flying beast.

Screech

The beast screeched in pain as the arrow hit him. Soon, he fell down to the ground and died.

Yu Tianhao and the others also fell down to the ground

Yu Tianhao looked back and saw that one of the men on the beasts was pointing his finger towards him. It was the same person that had attacked just now. He was the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect.

The flying beasts soon reached them and landed on the ground before them.

All 68 Elders and Yue Ding came down from the beasts. The beasts were kept back in the beast bags.

"You think that you can run away?" One of the Elders said.

"Who are you? Why did you attack him?" Long Ren asked the Elder.

"No one will be leaving today. That boy committed a slaughter, and today we will commit a slaughter," the Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said.

"What are you talking about? We are all small weak people from a small kingdom. We can't even think about meeting such a mighty existence like you. I don't think ants like us can even affect mighty lords," Long Ren said politely.

"You sound sensible. If only that boy were also this sensible. Today, you will all die for his sins," the Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

"Today, not only the Long Clan, but this whole area will be slaughtered. The upcoming generations of this kingdom will remember today as the day when sinners were wiped off the face of this planet!" The Heavenly Slaughter Sect Elder announced.

"Amitabha! Even our lord says that sinners must get punished. The sin of the son is the sin of the father!" the Elder of the Buddha sect said.

"What Sins! It might all be just a misunderstanding," Yu Tianhao said as he stood up.

"Silence! Introduce Yourself! Who are you to this boy?" the Elder of the Blood Swallowing Sect did as he showed them the portrait of Long Chen.

"Tian'er? Who do you have his portrait? What did you do to him!" Long Ren roared furiously as he brought his sword out. Seeing the portrait, he thought that these guys had hurt his grandson.

"So, he was right. That boy is indeed from the Long Clan," Heavenly Slaughter Sect Elder nodded his head.

"Of Course, I was right. That old man is his Grandfather, and that woman over there is his mother. These two people are the direct bloodline members that are the closest to him.

Chapter 457 - 457: Arrival

The Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect looked at Sima Ziyi and couldn't help but smile. He licked his lips as he observed Sima Ziyi from top to bottom.

"His mother? Is that beauty the mother of that Demon? Hehehe, I was thinking of wiping everyone related to that boy from the face of this planet, but after seeing his mother, I wouldn't mind leaving her alive. The two girls around her are also good. The three of them can warm my bed tonight."

Most of the other Elders were disgusted at that statement, but they didn't care as it was about an enemy who was soon about to die. They thought that it might just be the appropriate punishment for the mother of the killer before killing her.

"Go ahead. No need to wait till night. Just do that right now. Let's all watch the scene with the boy's grandfather as his mother goes through the lovemaking ceremony," The Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect said with a creepy laugh.

"You bastard!" Long Ren furiously roared as he ran towards the Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect with his sword to cut him in half, but before he could even know what happened, he realized that his neck was in the hand of the Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect.

His body was hanging in mid-air, and he couldn't free himself.

"Go ahead. Perform the ceremony," Profound Yin Snatching Sect Elder told the Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect.

"Hehehe, Enjoy guys!" The Elder walked towards Sima Ziyi.

"Stop you bastard! Don't you dare touch her," Grand Elder Mu also moved to attack the man, but the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder disappeared from his position and appeared behind Grand Elder Mu.

He moved his hand gently.

A gentle wave of his hand was enough to cut off the head of Grand Elder Mu.

The head of Grand Elder Mu fell down to the ground before his body.

The Elder of the Dual Cultivation Sect again started walking towards Sima Ziyi, but this time, no one moved to stop him.

Even Yu Tianhao was standing silently, hiding his daughter behind him.

His hand was shaking. He clenched his fist but didn't move to save Sima Ziyi.

Soon, the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder reached near Sima Ziyi.

He reached out his hand to touch the face of Ziyi.

Before the hand of the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder could even touch Ziyi, a blinding flash of light appeared out of nowhere.

The hand of the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder was cut off in half, making him scream like a pig being slaughtered.

Before the Elder could even move, another flash of light appeared, cutting his head off.

Soon, everyone saw someone standing near Sima Ziyi.

It was a dark-haired young boy. The boy had beautiful golden eyes. He was dressed in luxurious black clothes and wore a crimson robe on his back that was moving with the air. There was also a sheath on his back.

There was a terrifying killing aura surrounding the boy, making him seem like the reincarnation of death itself. There was a mighty looking sword in the boy's hand that was covered in blood.

Sima Ziyi saw the face of the boy. Tears appeared in her eyes as a single word escaped her mouth.

"Tian'er."

"YOU ACTUALLY DARED TO TOUCH MY MOTHER!" The boy said heavily as he stomped on the head of the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder, crashing his skull. The remains of his brain and the blood spilled over, making everyone witness the gruesome innards of someone's head.

The boy was none other than Long Chen, who had used Spatial Travel to get here when he was within the range of Shui Kingdom. When he came here, the first thing he saw was the hand of the Dual Cultivation Sect Elder moving towards his mother, which made him lose his mind.

His Heart Demon was lusting for blood. A lust that wasn't going to satiate before Long Chen's sword drank the blood of every enemy that wanted to harm his family.

"So, you are finally here! I was wondering how we would find you. I didn't know that you would come to us yourself. Poor guy, he fell for your sneak attack," the Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect said.

He still had Long Chen's grandfather in his hand.

Long Ren was having a hard time breathing as his neck was firmly held by the Elder of Profound Yin Snatching Sect.

The Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect was about to speak some more when his expressions turned serious as he saw Long Chen disappear from his position.

Before he could even react, another blinding arc of light appeared that cut off his hand that was holding Long Ren, but it didn't stop there.

One after another, four similar arcs of light appeared that cut off the Elder's body in 4 pieces.

Long Chen held Long Ren, preventing him from falling to the ground.

He jumped back with Long Ren and placed him near Sima Ziyi.

Almost Every Elder of the supreme sect was stunned as they saw Long Chen's speed and ruthlessness. He was even faster than they saw him on the video somehow.

It wasn't only the Elders that were stunned. The Members of the Long Clan and their Elders were all just as stunned.

There was one person that was the most shocked, though. It was Ling that had met Long Chen before. She had just realized that Long Chen had lied to her. He wasn't Long Chen, but Long Tian, the person she was supposed to marry.

Long Chen brought Xia out of his storage ring.

"Protect my mother, Grandfather, and the girls with them," He told Xia as he glanced at his family before he turned back to look towards the Elders.

"I guess we underestimated you. Whatever treasure that you received is even more powerful than we thought, also, it looks like you've used the Flute of War on yourself to increase your strength. Too bad, even though others don't know about it, we do know some things. We have some old text that talks about how its effects only last for a few minutes before the user is paralyzed. We just have to face you for a few moments before you lose your body's

control. Then you can watch your family die," The Elder of the True Dao Sect said with a wide grin on his face.

He pulled out his sword. The other 66 Elders also brought their swords out of their storage ring.

Long Chen also brought his Spirit Sword out of his storage ring, which orbited around him.

What they didn't know was that Long Chen had still not used his Flute of War. It was just that he had completed the second trial of bloodline temple, and his full Cultivation Strength was unlocked.

Also, something strange had happened to his body.

He could feel that there was something mysterious in his blood. He hadn't felt this before, but after finishing the second trial, he could feel it.

There was something magical in his blood that was giving his body more power, especially when he was filled with emotions related to slaughter.

Long Chen didn't say anything and just stood there as if he was waiting for something. He was gripping his sword so firmly that if it was a standard sword, its hilt would've been crushed.

"You shouldn't have come to my family. I can forgive anything and anyone, but not the ones that think about harming my family," Long Chen said.

This was all he said before he disappeared from his position and appeared in the middle of the ground as he swung his sword, instantly cutting off the heads of the 4 Elders.

Chapter 458 - 458: Battle

He had also cast a thunderblade in the sky.

The sky was covered in dark clouds that were roaring like mad.

Most of the Elders that were nearby attacked Long Chen.

It was at that time, he disappeared from his position and appeared far away from them.

A big thunderbolt fell down to the ground, which struck one of the Elders, paralyzing his body.

Long Chen's Spirit Sword cut off the neck of the Elder that couldn't move.

"Spread out! He can use something like teleportation! Don't stand close!" The Elder of the Buddha Sect said as he started running on the air away from the other elders.

The other Elders also spread out.

Another thunderbolt fell down, targeting another Elder, resulting in another death with his Spirit Sword.

Long Chen was massacring the Elders utilizing his teleportation abilities.

Not a single attack of theirs had managed to harm him so far, and even if one of the attacks had landed on him, he would've been protected because of the robe that he had received from the Divine Heaven Sect.

4 Elders of the Buddha sect surrounded Long Chen and pointed their palms towards him.

Various spirit lines appeared below his feet. It felt like he was stuck in his place, unable to move.

"Everyone, he can't move! Kill the demon! We'll hold him in place," the Elder of the Buddha Sect said.

Elders surrounded Long Chen. All of them prepared for their strongest attack to finish Long Chen.

Tens of different kinds of attacks moved towards Long Chen at the same time. All of them landed on Long Chen.

The Elders smiled as they watched everything. Most of them thought that Long Chen was dead. Not even the remains of his body were left behind.

The Elders of the Buddha Sect had just relaxed, when a sword sliced off the head of one of the Elders. It was Long Chen's Spirit Sword.

Long Chen also appeared behind another Buddha Sect Elder and cut him in half.

Long Clan members watched everything happening before them with their mouth wide open.

They couldn't believe what they were seeing.

"Is that actually my grandson?" Long Ren stuttered as he saw Long Chen cutting off the Sky Realm cultivators like he was cutting vegetables.

Fortunately, the Elders that the sect sent were on the same level as the Black Robed Elders of the Dark Soul Sect. They were just sent to investigate if the content of that letter was right or not. The real peak cultivators of these sects were still in the sects.

That's why Long Chen didn't even need to use his Flute of War, but still, they weren't weak in no manner. Their number only increased their strength.

"W-what is that?"

"A dragon?"

"That can't be!"

Everyone saw a big dragon-like beast coming towards them.

It was Snake Monarch that was left behind when Long Chen used Spatial Travel. He had just reached here now. If Long Chen hadn't used the Spatial Travel, his family would've been dead by the time he had arrived here, which made him even more furious.

The Snake Monarch dropped Ji Shan and the others near Xia as it got smaller in size.

The new arrivals were stunned as they saw what was happening here.

'Is that guy really fighting so many Elders of Supreme Sects? Just how strong has he become?' Ji Shan thought

"Why aren't you helping him?" Snake Monarch asked Xia.

"Master told me to protect his family," Xia replied.

"Alright. I'm going to help him then," The Snake Monarch said as he started getting bigger.

"What the heck are you doing?" he asked Mingyu, who had taken her sword out.

"Going to help him," Mingyu replied.

"Sometimes, this king wonders if he is the only intelligent being in this world. People like you prove this king right. Do you think you will help him if you get there? You're only a burden on him!" Snake Monarch said to Mingyu.
"Stay back, and don't disturb us!"

The Snake Monarch started flying in the air. It became 300 meters long and 30 meters thick. It looked just like a dragon that came down from the heavens to punish the sinners.

"Bring out that dog! He can help this king!" Snake Monarch said to Long Chen.

Long Chen brought out Orion from his storage ring while he kept dodging the tens of attacks that were coming towards him and appearing in different places as he kept cutting the Elders like weaklings.

Nearby buildings were being destroyed in their fight, but none of them cared. Today, Long Chen had decided that he would kill every single one of them even if it destroys the whole Kingdom.

He also had the second skill of Law of Darkness, but he didn't use it as the times were not bad enough to use it.

As soon as Orion came out of his storage ring, he merged into the shadows and disappeared.

"Yo, Puppy. Let's do it like last time!" Snake Monarch told Orion.

"Some of you focus on that beast! He's dangerous as well!"

The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect reminded everyone about the dangers of the Snake Monarch.

More than ten elders separated themselves from the right with Long Chen as they focused on the Snake Monarch that was flying above their heads.

They had seen in the mirror how the beast killed the Elder of the True Dao Sect. They knew that the beast they were about to face wasn't an easy opponent.

"Rain of Fire!"

"Buddha Palm"

"Earth-Shattering Finger!"

One after another, Every Elder fired their attack on the Snake Monarch, but just as they had attacked, Orion appeared out of nowhere and bit the neck of one of the Elders.

A barrage of attacks was flying towards the Snake Monarch, which should've been difficult for him to dodge considering how huge size, but they all saw him decreasing in size until he was as small as an ant. Even though his size was small, his speed was just as fast.

Without any difficulty, he dodged all the attacks.

"Die!" the Snake Monarch said as he used his special skill and bound one of the Elders in space and time, making him unable to move.

Orion appeared once again, taking another life.

While Orion and the Snake Monarch were showing incredible teamwork, Long Chen was involved in a one against many fights.

He was fighting against 30 Elders that were still alive. Attacks were coming at him from every site. His Qi was also getting depleted in this fight, and his teleportation abilities were also reaching their limits for the day.

Many attacks had already hit him, but his robe protected him from getting harmed.

"H-he won't be able to hold on if this goes on like this," Yu Tianhao said.

Sima Ziyi was horrified as she heard his words.

"I'll go help him! Even if I can't do anything big, I can still act as a distraction for him!" Long Ren said as he tried to move forward to join the fight, but Xia stopped him.

"You can't go there. Master wants you protected. Master's orders are to be followed!" Xia said as she caught the hand of Long Ren.

Long Ren tried to free his hand, but he was stunned to see how powerful Xia was. It was like he was a tiny ant before her.

Today, for the first time, he realized how weak he truly was. Let alone being able to help his grandson fight against sky realm cultivators, he couldn't even free himself from a girl.

"What Master! He's my grandson! Move aside and let me help him!" Long Ren said

"No, You can't leave!" Xia said as she refused to let him leave. She was stubborn and wanted to follow her orders.

Chapter 459 - 459: Dark Sacrifice (Part 1)

"Grandpa, You shouldn't join. If things come to worse, I will act as a distraction to help him out. You can leave with him!" Mingyu said to Long Ren.

Long Ren was surprised to be called grandpa by a stranger. He wondered who this girl was? Was she Long Chen's lover?

"You don't need to do that. You are still young. I'm already old, and I will probably die soon. I should do it," Long Ren said.

Snake Monarch had already killed the small team that was engaged in a fight with him.

"Take my family and leave!" Long Chen told the Snake Monarch through his mind link.

He could see that things weren't looking good. The opponents were just too many. So far, things have not become worse, but if a few elders from the opponents decide to attack his family instead of focusing all their strength on him, then things would become bad.

He didn't want his family to come to any harm.

The Snake Monarch looked at Long Chen in shock.

'This King can handle them!' Snake Monarch said to Long Chen.

'I told you to leave! I know I can kill them, but I don't want them to be caught in the crossfire! Take my family and leave this kingdom, right this instant! This is my command!'

For the first time in a long time, Long Chen used the BeastMaster Command as the tamer of the Snake Monarch.

It was like an unbreakable order that the tamed beast couldn't disobey.

"This..." The Snake Monarch just looked at Long Chen blankly before he nodded his head.

He got down near Xia and started increasing in Size.

Long Chen had also sent Xia a message to take his family and leave via his thoughts.

Although Xia's primary purpose was to protect Long Chen, she also couldn't disobey his command. She listened to him.

"Young Master has ordered me to tell you to get on that big snake. You are distracting him from fighting to his full extent! Everyone close to the Master and everyone from the Long Clan is to get on the Snake Monarch," Xia said to them.

Most of the Long Clan members did that happily. Even Yue Tianhao and Yue Ling got on the Snake Monarch. They were happy to leave this dangerous place, but there were a few that weren't listening.

Mingyu, Zhiqing, Ji Shan, Xue, Mei, Sima Ziyi, and Long Ren refused to do it.

"Young Master says that he won't use his full power if you stay here, and if he doesn't use his full power, he will die. Do you want him to die?" Xia repeated the words that Long Chen had told her to use.

They were all conflicted as they heard those words. They didn't want to leave, but they had to go if they wanted to help Long Chen.

"We will only go around 500 meters away from this place. We can come back easily after everything is finished," Xia said. This was also a lie that Long Chen had told her to say.

He wanted them to go as far away as they could.

After hearing Xia's excuse, most of them believed her words. They also got on top of the Snake Monarch.

One of the Elders noticed that, but before he could say anything, Long Chen teleported near him and cut his neck off.

With this, he had used his last teleport for the day. He couldn't use short-range teleport now, and he had also used Spatial Travel to get here.

The Snake Monarch flew away with everyone on its back.

They reached 500 meters away from Long Chen, but the Snake Monarch didn't stop.

The ones that Xia had lied to realized that something was wrong.

"Stop. We are already far away!" Mingyu said to the Snake Monarch, but he didn't stop.

Even Xia didn't say anything.

"You lied to us, didn't you?!" Mingyu said.

"I follow Master's orders," Xia replied.

"Ji Shan, bring the beasts out. I am leaving this place!" Mingyu said to Ji Shan.

The 3 Flying beasts belonged to Ji Shan, and they were in his beast bag.

Ji Shan nodded his head, but before he could even do anything, he realized that the beast bag was missing.

"It's not here!" Ji Shan said, but he soon saw the beast bag in Xia's hands.

"No one is going to disobey Master's orders," Xia declared.

Back near the Long Clan, 28 Elders were still remaining.

It was a fight of one against twenty-eight.

"You helped them escape, but so what? Our main target was you. We can find them anytime," the Elder of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect said.

"You won't be alive to find them," Long Chen said in a grim tone.

His Spirit Sword orbited around him while his King's Sword was emitting fierce Sword Aura.

"Hahaha, I like your enthusiasm. I can see that you are at your wit's end. You won't last long!" one of the Elders said.

He moved towards Long Chen with the blade in his hand.

Long Chen also moved, but before his swords could clash with the Man's sword, more attacks came towards him from different sides.

He used his Spirit Sword to block the blade of the Elder while he used his King's Sword to cut through the various attacks.

The scene looked so beautiful. It seemed as if Long Chen was spinning. His feet danced with the wind, but each of his movements was planned.

Sparks flew everywhere as various attacks were destroyed. Even though the attacks were strong, the King's Sword was also a special weapon; it wasn't harmed.

Long Chen continued this momentum as he cut off the neck of the Elder, whose blade was blocked by his Spirit Sword.

"I will finish it fast!"

Long Chen muttered as he watched him being surrounded by 27 Elders. He could see that there was only one option now.

Orion was already waiting in the shadows to take him away after he was paralyzed. His family that escaped safely, there was only one more thing to do now.

Long Chen brought out the Flute of War from his storage ring.

The others were stunned as they saw the flute of war in his hand, but they had already thought that Long Chen had used the Flute of War. They felt that he was strong because of its effects, but they were shocked as they saw Long Chen play the flute of war.

The air started getting restless while the Qi in the surrounding area rushed towards Long Chen.

His Cultivation increased rapidly until he was the 6th Stage Sky Realm Cultivator.

"H-he hadn't used that before?" the Elder of the True Dao Sect said with his mouth opened wide.

With Long Chen's Cultivation, his speed was also increased. In the blink of an eye, he appeared in front of an Elder and swung his sword to cut him in half.

The Elder reacted in time as he used his sword to block the attack, but Long Chen's strength was monstrous now. The Elder was tossed back like a broken kite, crashing in one of the nearby houses.

Long Chen flew after the Elder to the house and only came out after killing him.

He looked like a slaughterer as he looked at every Elder as if he was looking at dead meat.

"If he was that strong before, I can't even imagine how strong he is now. We are not his opponents anymore! We should run!" The Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said as he stepped back.

The Elder of the True Dao Sect sighed.

"Looks like I have no choice but to use that item. Father gave me this item secretly to protect me against unknown threats, but I didn't know that I would have to use this on a kid to save my life," the Elder of the True Dao Sect said as he stepped forth.

Chapter 460 - 460: Dark Sacrifice (Part 2)

He brought out something from his storage ring. It seemed like a small cube.

He threw the cube towards Long Chen.

Long Chen had just killed an Elder when he saw the cube coming towards him. He swung his sword to prevent the cube from hitting him, but as soon as the sword touched the cube, the cube started shining.

Everything changed around him, and Long Chen found himself in what seemed like a metallic container.

"That? How do you have that? Isn't that one of the most precious treasures of the True Dao Sect, the Heaven Sealing Box?" the Elder of the Buddha Temple said in shock.

The man didn't reply to them.

'My father is the Sect Master of the True Dao Sect, but I can't tell you that. I don't want it to spread that my father gave me this item,' he thought.

"You're right. It is the Heaven Sealing Box! Such a precious item. Once someone is sealed inside it, they can't come out. Unless that person is as strong as the Sect Masters of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect or the True Dao Sect, they can't come out of it. They will die inside it as there is no air to breathe," an Elder of the Mighty Sword Sect said.

"That boy is definitely dead. We can collect his body after the box opens," the Elder of the True Dao Sect said.

'I hate it so much. This item only had two uses left, and now I used one of them. After the next time it is used, it will be destroyed. At Least I can tell my father that my life was in danger. Also, it's not like it's something that important. It can't hold the Sect Master of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect, and the others are just child's play. It should be its right use,' he thought.

"Half of you should go after the family. We might as well finish everything at once," one of the Elders said, but that's when they heard a metallic sound from the container.

"Heh, he thinks that he can break it if he attacks? It's impossible even if he is as strong as an initial Heaven Realm Cultivator," the True Dao Sect Elder laughed.

Inside the closed container, Long Chen was trying to break open the box.

He used his strongest attacks. Even after his attacks were aided with the help of the King's Sword, he couldn't break it.

He could also feel that there was no oxygen inside.

Xun appeared behind Long Chen as she sighed.

"You won't be able to break it. I think we both know that there is only one option left now," she said.

'It might be a good opportunity. As long as everything goes as planned, ' she thought.

It had been a minute since Long Chen had used the Flute of War. Time was already running out.

He stopped attacking the container and lowered his sword.

"It might be bad, but there's not much choice left," Xun said to Long Chen.

Long Chen gripped his sword firmly. If the sword wasn't the King's Sword, it's hilt would've been crushed under the grip of Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't say anything and simply looked down.

"Dark Sacrifice," he muttered.

The container that was already dark got even darker. It was like the darkness from the depths of hell was filling the container.

Long Chen's golden looking eyes also turned pitch black.

A dark aura was coming out of his body.

Dark lines also started to appear on his body.

The black lines seemed to be making a unique pattern over his body.

Two wings appeared behind his back out of nowhere.

Those wings looked like the Heavenly Demon Wings, but there was a difference this time.

Previously, only one of the wings was dark, but now both of these wings are dark.

The Wings were even darker than they had ever been. It was impossible to see if there was actually anything there, or just dark empty space that looked like wings from a distance.

Long Chen's body shape and size didn't change, but there was something that made him look older and more mature.

The dark aura around him only increased in strength.

There was no expression on Long Chen's face except anger. It was as if he had lost all his emotions but anger.

Long Chen raised his sword and swung it lightly.

For a moment, it seemed as if his attack had managed to cut through space and time as spatial cracks appeared in the places his sword passed through.

The Elders outside were still deciding about who will go chase the family and who will stay back near the container when the container blasted open.

Its small broken pieces spread everywhere. Some of them even entered the bodies of the citizens that were hiding nearby, while other shards stabbed the bodies of the Elders.

One of those pieces even penetrated the forehead of an Elder, killing him in an instant.

Another piece passed through the neck of another Elder, killing him as well.

"T-this can't be!" True Dao Sect Elder exclaimed in shock.

He couldn't believe that a kid broke his Sect's treasure that only someone as strong as the top Sect Masters could break.

Before the Elders could even say anything, Long Chen again swung his sword.

His attack this time was filled with darkness. It seemed as if an arc of shadow moved towards them. Its range was big as well. Instead of going straight ahead, it spread, increasing its range.

Amongst the 26 remaining elders, 25 were killed instantly. Not even a single part of their bodies was left behind.

The only Elder that had survived was the one from the Heavenly Slaughter Sect, who was standing near the entrance of the Long Clan.

He was about to enter the Long Clan to kill anyone he could find when he heard a blast. After that, what he saw left him stunned. His feet refused to move as he saw the others being killed in a single attack.

Long Chen looked towards him as he swung his sword. The direction of the wind changed with the move of his sword. It was as if everything was under his control now. Nothing could stand against him, not even the gods.

A dark and powerful arc of light escaped his sword that was burning in dark flames now.

The dark arc of light destroyed everything in its path as it moved towards the Elder. It destroyed the Elder's body completely, but it didn't stop there.

The attack was so powerful that it even destroyed the Long Clan mansion.

The ones that were still inside the mansion were dead. The attack was just too wide-ranged and powerful.

Long Chen looked towards the sky and roared loudly. He had lost complete control. His whole being was shrouded in darkness.

The Dark Wings behind him were looking even more distinct, matching with the sword that was burning in dark flames.

Long Chen flew high in the air and started attacking the city randomly.

Xia and the others had long since left the city. Long Chen had already expected that the situation might turn out like this if things didn't go as planned; that's why he sent his family away first.

He knew that anything could happen as he wasn't able to use Spatial Travel to escape, so there might be a chance that he would need to use the Second Skill of his Darkness Law. That's made him decide to send his family away and only keep Orion behind who could hide in the shadows.

Xun was floating near Long Chen, watching everyone.

"Let it out. Let it all out," she muttered as she looked at him.

Chapter 461 - 461: Carnage

Long Chen kept attacking various parts of the city. Each of his attacks killed thousands of people and destroyed a large chunk of the city.

Even Third Prince Yue Ding was killed by now.

Long Chen kept flying through the city like a monster, destroying everything he saw.

Even the Royal Palace wasn't left alone.

Long Chen destroyed the Royal Palace. Even the King of Shui was killed. The king was too weak when compared to the normal Long Chen, let alone the Long Chen, who had used the Flute of War and the Dark Sacrifice.

Long Chen continued his destruction spree. In less than 4 minutes, 80 percent of the city was destroyed, and millions of people were killed. Before, screams could be heard, but now, only blood and carnage could be seen. The Royal Clan and the Gu Clan were also wiped out.

The only place that wasn't destroyed yet was the place that was governed by the Qin Clan, but that was where Long Chen was advancing towards now.

Long Chen continued destroying everything he came across, whether it be a mansion or a small hut without thinking.

Soon, he reached the Qin Clan.

The Qin Clan was the Clan that had a decent relationship with the Long Clan. Qin Ruo was also from the Clan.

The Patriarch of the Qin Clan was standing outside, along with his son. His granddaughter was not in the city. She had become the student of the Glorious Blossom Sect, along with Princess Yue Fei from the Royal Clan. None of them were in the city.

"Such Destruction. It's like the gods want Shui to be destroyed," the Patriarch sighed as he watched Long Chen coming towards them. He saw the person that was destroying everything come towards them, but he couldn't see their face clearly.

He wanted to help others escape, but he knew that there was no chance with the way things were going.

In a few seconds, Long Chen was flying before them. Long Chen's dark wings were giving a terrifying aura. There were spatial cracks everywhere around him.

"How can this be?! It's the grandson of the Long Clan patriarch?! He is the one that's causing all this?" The Patriarch of the Qin Clan said with a look of disbelief on his face, but a dark wave came towards him out of nowhere, destroying even the last speck of his body.

Only screams were echoing in the atmosphere for the next few seconds. The whole Qin Clan was destroyed in less than 30 seconds. None of them were left alive.

Long Chen kept roaring like mad every time he attacked. Some red liquid was coming out of his pitch-black eyes that made a red mark on his face, making him look even more demonic.

After just a few more minutes, the whole city was destroyed. The Dragon City that was filled with people till some hours ago looked like a barren City now, where no building was intact. There was only rubble and blood everywhere.

Long Chen looked everywhere, but he found no sign of life. He started flying away from the city in search of life, to quench his bloodlust.

He had only flown for a short time before he lost the control of his body. It was as if his body was paralyzed.

The side effects of the Flute of War were taking effect now.

Long Chen couldn't even move his finger, let alone fly.

"As I expected, his understanding of the Law of Darkness is still weak. He can't use the full potential of Dark Sacrifice; otherwise, even the side effects of the Flute of War would not be able to stop him," Xun muttered as she observed everything.

Long Chen started falling down from the sky.

He was about to crash on the ground, but soon, a Shadow appeared out of nowhere.

It was Orion that had been waiting for an opportunity. As soon as Long Chen started falling, he jumped toward him. Long Chen was lying on Orion's back when Orion safely landed on the ground.

"So far, everything went as I expected when I suggested him to use the Dark Sacrifice. He survived, killed his enemies, and killed so many people to increase his slaughter aura. It was lucky that he had comprehended the skill. As the skill is passive, he didn't need to do anything. Everyone he killed today, benefitted him in the form of his slaughter aura," Xun muttered.

"Even though he lost something after what happened, it was all for his good. Just an additional advantage to saving his life," she added.

Long Chen had lost his consciousness as well this time. His eyes were close. The Black marks on his body disappeared as if they were never there. Even though others couldn't see, his eyes had also returned to their original golden color. The only mark that was still left on his body was the red blood that made it seem like he was crying tears of blood.

Orion carried Long Chen on his back, but he didn't walk towards the next city; instead, he walked towards the opposite side. He wanted to take Long Chen away from civilization to protect him from harm.

Back on the Snake Monarch, things were quite hectic.

Basically, everyone that was close to Long Chen was arguing with Xia to take them back, but Xia wasn't budging from her position. After the Snake Monarch, she was the strongest here. No one was able to force her to do anything.

"Take us back this instant! My grandson is in danger!" Long Ren bellowed as he glared at Xia.

There were a few people there that didn't want to go back to the dangerous place. Most of them were from the Long Clan.

'Does the Sect Master want us to die? We escaped the calamity with so much trouble, and he wants us to go back?! Is his family more important to him than his clan?' Almost everyone amongst them was thinking wrong about the clan master at the moment.

"Master's orders can't be disobeyed," Xia said sternly.

"I'm your master's grandfather! My words should be more important than his! Even he can't refuse my orders!" Long Ren said.

"There is nothing bigger to Xia than Master's orders," Xia replied.

"Give it up, old man, that girl is even more stubborn than this King. She won't listen. We are both bound by orders," Snake Monarch chimed in.

"You can speak?" Most of them exclaimed in surprise.

"I can do much more than just speak. Prey to god that I don't show you," the Snake Monarch said sarcastically.

"Please take us back! She won't listen to us; only you can do it!" Mingyu said to the Snake Monarch.

"This king wishes that he could, girl. But that bastard used the command on this King. This king can't refuse the command. I'll take you to another Kingdom. Only then will I be free of that command," the Snake Monarch said. His words disappointed everyone that wanted to go back but made the ones that didn't want to go back, happy.

"Of Course, This King will be free of that command after this King gets to another Kingdom. Then this King can go back," The Snake Monarch said as he laughed. "No matter how stupid that kid is, this King won't leave him to die alone. Still, this King must say that he shouldn't need my help. He's much stronger than you all insects think."

He kept flying towards the next kingdom and passed through many cities along the way. Many people in the cities saw a large dragon-like creature flying from above their City. This was something that was going to be talked about for a long time.

The Snake Monarch reached the next kingdom and landed on the ground.

"We can go back now, right?" Mingyu asked Xia, who didn't seem like she was going to oppose them.

"Master's order has been fulfilled," Xia said.

"Please take us back!" Sima Ziyi begged the Snake Monarch.

"Yes! Take us back with you!" Long Ren said.

"Patriarch, We don't want to go back! We will all die if we go there. Please reconsider!" The Members of the Clan pleaded to Long Ren.

"You guys can get down here. You don't need to come. I will go to help my grandson alone," Long Ren said with disappointment.

"As patriarch orders," The Long Clan members got off the snake monarch as if they were in a hurry to leave. Long Ren couldn't help but sigh as he saw this.

What stunned him the most was that Yu Tianhao also got down with his daughter. Long Ren didn't say anything.

"I'm sorry, Uncle Ren, but I can't risk everything. He must already be dead. Those guys should be looking for us," Yu Tianhao said.

"It's alright. You don't need to explain," Long Ren said.

The ones that were still left there were Xue, Mei, Mingyu, Zhiqing, Ji Shan, Sima Ziyi, Long Ren, and Xia.

The Snake Monarch started flying back towards the Dragon City.

Chapter 462 - 462: Slaughter Aura

Orion carried Long Chen on his back as he walked back to the ruins of the Dragon City.

He took Long Chen to the northern black forest that was dense and filled with trees.

Orion stopped inside the forest and sat down under the shade of a tree. He didn't put Long Chen down to the ground.

"This might take some toll on him, but he gained something from it as well. The only thing that I wonder is if the cost was worth it or not."

Xun was also sitting nearby, watching Long Chen. Orion couldn't see Xun.

"His Slaughter Aura reached 20 percent in just a single day. It was not an easy feat, but the lives of many were lost as well. Fortunately, he had thought about it and sent his family away. I don't think he would've used that otherwise,"

"The downside of using Dark Sacrifice is quite fierce as well. Losing some of his emotions in exchange for a great power isn't an easy decision. Fortunately, it was his first time, so the damage should be quite negligible, so I should say that it was beneficial in the long run. He might toughen up after this experience as well," she muttered.

She watched Long Chen's face that looked like he was sleeping.

She stood up and walked closer to him.

She extended her hand towards Long Chen's face and wiped off the red mark that was left behind by the liquid that came out of his eyes.

"Sleep well," she said as she lightly kissed him on his lips before walking back. She sat near him.

The Snake Monarch was flying back towards the Dragon City with Xia and the others.

The Snake Monarch attracted a lot of attention from the citizens of various cities that he passed through.

After some time, he reached the Dragon City, only to be stunned by what he saw.

"What... the fuck... happened here?" he exclaimed as he saw ruins everywhere.

Above the Snake Monarch, the others were just as shocked.

They reached near the Long Clan, but there was nothing there anymore. Blood could be found on the ground, but no signs of anyone living could be seen.

Sima Ziyi fell down to her knees as tears started falling from her eyes.

"D-don't cry. Nothing could happen to him! He must've escaped!" Long Ren comforted Sima Ziyi, but even he was feeling scared for Long Chen. Even though he didn't want to believe it, looking at everything, there was a good chance that Long Chen was dead.

Only after killing him, could the others have the chance to destroy the city according to him.

There was nothing left here anymore.

Snake Monarch landed on the ground, giving others the chance to get off.

"Calm down, you crybabies. He's not dead. This king would be able to feel it if he was dead. Also, from what this King knows, those guys can't destroy this city so fast. This was not their work," Snake Monarch let out with an annoyed look on his face as he watched everyone's cry-like face.

Snake Monarch closed his eyes as he tried to find Long Chen's location through the link that was between them.

"Master is alive!" Xia said as well.

"Can you feel him as well?" Snake Monarch asked Xia.

"Xia can feel that the master is nearby. Let's go," she told the Snake Monarch.

"You don't need to tell this King. This King's knowledge is much vast than you can imagine. He seems to be in the North. The connection is weak, though. That's why it took this Master some time to find him," Snake Monarch said.

"He's nearby?" Everyone was suddenly more excited to get the news, but they were worried as well. The situation of the city was so bad; they didn't know what condition Long Chen should be in.

They all got on top of the Snake Monarch that began flying towards the North.

"It's so good that we have you to carry us. Thank you so much," Ji Shan thanked the Snake Monarch.

"Only for today, this King will act as a carrier. If the Times were not serious, you would all be lying on the ground with your head buried," Snake Monarch muttered.

Far away from the Shui Kingdom existed the Dark Soul Sect.

The Dark Soul Sect had spent too much effort and resources to find what had happened with Lang Jing. They also tried to find how Mi Yao escaped and who helped her, but there was just no evidence.

The investigation didn't bore any fruit, but they did find out something.

One of their disciples came back from a mission and showed them a poster.

It was a poster that had Long Chen's portrait. It talked about how Long Chen was a vicious criminal that had killed tens of cultivators from the Supreme Sects. It also talked about how the person that gave Long Chen's information would be rewarded heavily.

The wanted poster didn't say when Long Chen had killed their cultivators, and it also didn't mention that the cultivators that Long Chen had killed were their Elders, so the Sect Master and the Prime Elder assumed that it might be from the time he went to complete a mission.

They decided to send an Envoy to other sects to ask about the matters in-depth since they didn't have any other clue. It was agreed that they would go to the Devil Worshipping Sect to get the information.

The Devil Worshipping Sect was also not peaceful.

The Devil Worshipping Sect was waiting for their people to return from the Divine Heaven Sect mission, but only Manxiang Li returned.

He returned with a fellow disciple and no one else.

Manxiang Li informed the Sect Master of what happened and asked him to help the Elder.

The Sect Master sent their Supreme Elder to handle the matter, but as the Supreme Elder got near that place, he met up with the Elder of the Profound Yin Snatching Sect that was going back to the sect to inform them about the murder of their Elders that were committed by Long Chen.

He captured him to find out what happened to their Elder only to discover that Long Chen had killed all their Elders in front of the Divine Heaven Sect and how the teams of various sects found it out with the help of the Mirror from the Buddha Temple.

He also showed him the portrait of the culprit that they had discovered.

The Supreme Elder killed the Elder before he continued towards the location where it all happened. It was just as he had heard. There was only blood and nothing else.

"Could it be true that this boy killed everyone? Who could he be?" The Supreme Elder muttered as he looked at Long Chen's portrait.

He flew back to the Sect to inform the Sect Master.

Manxiang Li recognized that boy when he was asked by the Sect Master. He told them that the boy was Long Chen from the Dark Soul Sect and how those 17 Elders also targeted him.

"Looks like this boy was quite strong. He used the Flute of War to kill everyone there," the Sect Master muttered.

"He wouldn't kill our Elder, Master. I'm sure that the others must've killed him. Long Chen wouldn't harm the one that stood with him," Manxiang Li told the Sect Master.

"I believe that. There shouldn't be a reason for him to kill anyone other than the 17 Elders that wanted to kill him. But things are pretty grim. If those sects find out that this boy is from the Dark Soul Sect, then they would do anything in their power to find the location of the Dark Soul Sect to destroy them with the boy. Unfortunately, even we don't know the location of the Dark Soul Sect to warn them," the Sect Master sighed.

Chapter 463 - 463: Another Wife

The Snake Monarch brought everyone to the northern black forest. After looking around for a short time, they found Long Chen, lying on the back of Orion.

"Is he alright?" the Snake Monarch asked Orion as he started getting smaller. The others got down to the ground and ran towards Long Chen.

Sima Ziyi was the first one to get to him.

"Rrrrr," Orion growled in anger, stopping Sima Ziyi.

"Calm down, pup. Even this King wants to protect him, but you don't have to be so angry. She's his mother. She won't harm him," Snake Monarch told Orion.

"Yes. Master said that she's family. One can't harm family," Xia also said the same thing.

Sima Ziyi again tried, and this time, Orion didn't do anything and let her take him in her embrace.

Sima Ziyi sat down on the ground with Long Chen's head resting on her lap.

"He is unconscious, but he looks to be fine," Long Ren said as he breathed in relief.

Mingyu and the others also calmed down, seeing that Long Chen was fine.

"Master is weak, and he can't move. He needs this rest," Xia told them.

"Hmph, this king knew that his advisor wouldn't die. We have the world to rule. It would be insulting if he were defeated by those insects. Cheh, those idiots thought they could defeat this King's people just because they were more in number," the Snake Monarch let out proudly.

"He is safe. It's all that matters, but I still can't understand who destroyed the city? I didn't see anyone alive there. I don't think the city could be emptied this fast. The chances are that everyone was killed in this carnage. Who could have done it?" Ji Shan asked in confusion. He didn't even think that it was Long Chen who had done this.

Snake Monarch had his doubts, but he didn't comment on what he actually thought; instead, he said the opposite.

"Maybe someone stronger came to this city, killed the others, destroyed this city, and left. You don't have to trouble your tiny little mind about this matter. What happened has already happened. Just focus on what to do next," the Snake Monarch said.

"The other sects should already be informed about Long Chen by now. He might be the most wanted man on the continent soon. When the sects realize that their teams that came to Long Chen's city haven't returned, they will send more people. This time the numbers will be bigger and their strength as well. The best we can do is find a place to hide him and the family," Ji Shan said as he rubbed his chin.

"Can't we go back to your kingdom? We should be able to hide him there," Zhiqing suggested.

"No. Father has already seen his portrait. He's a disciple of the Beast Hall. He will definitely not let Long Chen hide there. He would either capture him or inform the Beast Hall," Ji Shan said, shaking his head.

"How about we leave the continent?" Zhiqing asked again.

"No, we can't do that either. All the ports that are used for intercontinental travel are controlled by the Supreme Clans of the continent. It would only mean that we would be entering the lion's den to hide, which would be more dangerous."

It was Mingyu that answered this time. She had done some research about leaving this continent when she was in the Royal Palace and knew that going through the specialized ships was the only option to leave this continent, but those places were controlled by the Supreme Sects.

"Is there nothing we can do?" Zhiqing asked. "How about we go to my kingdom, but my brother might also take the same decision and sold us out to protect the kingdom."

"We should just wait for some time. Let him wake up before we decide what to do. Long Chen might have a better understanding of the situation since he was in the Dark Soul Sect," Ji Shan said.

"Why are you calling him Long Chen? His name is Long Tian," Long Ren told them. He was getting quite confused as they kept calling his grandson Long Chen.

"That's the name he goes by in the outside world," Mingyu replied to Long Ren.

"I don't know what his name at home is, but I know him as Long Chen. We are more familiar with that name," Ji Shan replied.

"May I ask who all of you are to him? Are you, his friends?" Long Ren asked.

"Oh? Don't you recognize them? I guess your grandson didn't come back to inform you after he married them. These two are his wives. She's Mingyu, and that's Zhiqing. I am Ji Shan, the Second Prince of the Blazing Sun Empire," Ji Shan introduced themselves before Mingyu could answer.

His words made Mingyu embarrassed as they were not actually married to Long Chen, but she didn't mind being addressed as his wife as it was already decided by them.

"W-wives? Both of you?" Sima Ziyi and Long Ren both exclaimed out loud. He was also shocked to see that he was talking to the Prince of an Empire.

Xue and Mei didn't say anything and just looked down as they clenched the corner of their dress. Their eyes were somewhat wet.

"Yes. We are his wives," Mingyu said in a voice that was neither loud nor low.

Both of them greeted Sima Ziyi and Long Ren as they bowed their heads in respect.

"He got married. H-he didn't even tell us. Let him wake up. I'll get my answers as to why he didn't come home for marriage!" Long Ren said as he looked at Long Chen.

"You girls are so pretty. My son is definitely lucky to have you both," Sima Ziyi told them. "I'm sorry that I can't give you any gift even though I should give one to my daughter in law, but as you can see, we left everything behind."

Sima Ziyi wasn't wearing any accessories; otherwise, she would've given them as gifts.

"It's alright, Aunty. Your blessing is enough for us," Zhiqing replied.

"What aunty, You're already married to my son. You can call me mother," Sima Ziyi said as she smiled.

"M-mother," Zhiqing said with a red face.

"And you guys can call me grandpa," Long Ren said, smilingly.

"Grandpa, Thank you for accepting us," Mingyu thanked Long Ren. She wasn't sure how this was going to go, but her first meeting with Long Chen's family was really good. She was accepted into the family.

"You're family from now on. Don't thank us," Long Ren replied.

He looked towards Xia in curiosity. She was the only one he didn't know about.

"Who are you to my grandson?" he asked.

"Xia is master's family as well," Xia replied to Long Ren. She was told by Long Chen that she was a part of his family, and that's what she was repeating.

"F-family? Another wife?" Long Ren stuttered as he misunderstood her words. Even Mingyu and the others Misunderstood her. They still hadn't realized that Xia wasn't a puppet.

'I know I jokingly said that I want you to have a harem when you weren't healthy, but I didn't know that you would take that seriously and fulfill my words so soon,' Sima Ziyi thought as she looked towards Long Chen.

Far away from Long Chen and his family, there was a small pond. A person was sitting near that pond.

The pond had crystal clear water in it, that was like the purest water in existence.

The boy was wearing the 20th token of Divine Heaven Sect as a necklace as he sat on the ground with his back resting against the tree.

He looked towards the pond.

Chapter 464 - 464: Joining Others

"Well, the first part did not go as planned. Although you did become stronger, but not as strong as you could've been. Sigh, I hate that I can see other people's destiny, but not your actions. Still, it was not a total failure. It should be fun to see what happens next. Grow fast, little brother. The time is not going to wait for anyone," the person muttered as he shook his head.

It was early morning when an envoy of the Dark Soul Sect reached the Devil Worshipping Sect to get the information.

The Envoy that was sent here was Grand Elder Chu. He had also put on a disguise.

As he reached the Devil Worshipping Sect, he showed the guards the badge that signified that he was an important friend of the Sect Master of the Devil Worshipping Sect.

This was the badge that was given to the Dark Soul Sect Master by the Devil Worshipping Sect Master. This allowed the Dark Soul Envoy to meet the sect master, but it could only be used when it was really important; otherwise, it would be seen as an insult to the Devil Worshipping Sect Master to waste his time.

The Guards brought Grand Elder Chu to the Sect Master.

"I was wondering when you guys would get wind of this. Did you find out what's happening outside?" The Sect Master asked Grand Elder Chu.

Manxiang Li was standing behind him.

"I am here to ask the Sect Master about the things that are going on outside. One of our disciples saw this wanted poster when he was coming back. This poster doesn't convey the information that we need, so we decided to ask your sect as our sects had been close for generations," Grand Elder Chu said as he showed the wanted poster of Long Chen to the Devil Worshipping Sect Master.

"What's there to not understand about it? From what I understand, this boy is the Head Disciple of your sect. Did he not tell you what happened after they left the Divine Heaven Sect? It should be easy to guess from there," the Sect Master said.

"What happened? He did tell us some things, but I don't understand how those could influence things in such a big manner," Grand Elder Chu responded before he started telling the Sect Master what happened since Long Chen returned and his death.

Manxiang Li couldn't help but be shocked to hear the news of Long Chen's death.

"Oh? So he l..." the Sect Master was about to say something, but Manxiang Li stopped him.

"Master, I think he didn't tell them because he didn't want his junior sister to get punished with him. If you tell them that both of them lied, the girl would definitely be punished by the Sect. Please, Master, don't tell them that he killed the Elders. Consider this a request from your disciple," Manxiang Li whispered in the Sect Master's ears.

The Sect Master looked at Manxiang Li and just sighed.

"Whatever happened has already happened. What I can suggest to you is that don't let anyone know that this boy was your disciple, or you will invite a calamity to your sect. He offended a lot of sects, but they don't know yet that he's the Disciple of the Dark Soul Sect. As long as you can keep this information contained, things will be fine," the Sect Master said.

"He offended the sects? Sigh, even though he died, he still left so many troubles behind for us. I will heed the Sect Master's advice and convey the words back to the sect," Grand Elder Chu said.

They talked some more after that, but the Sect Master didn't speak about Long Chen. Their topic revolved around the sects that were in on it and how they could protect themselves. The Sect Master told him to pretend that they were offended as well and put Long Chen's poster all around as well while declaring the rewards.

"Good. We will do that," Grand Elder Chu agreed.

After some time, he left the Sect.

As both of these sects had decided, they also distributed the wanted poster of Long Chen and used the same message as the other sects had used.

The Dark Soul Sect also advised their disciples that none of them was ever to mention the name of Long Chen or the fact that they knew him.

The Sect Master of the Dark Soul Sect was sitting in the discussion hall with the Elders of the Sect.

"We have warned everyone and made them take oaths. The information about Long Chen's link to the Dark Soul Sect will never come out," Grand Elder Chu said.

"Good, but there's another problem as well. Mi Yao should be out in the open. If she decides to tell the other sects about Long Chen being our disciple, then we would be in trouble, " One of the Elders said.

"We need to continue the search for her as well and hope that she doesn't hate our sect enough to do this. We need to put all our resources into this. We can use the excuse that we are searching for Long Chen while we search for her. Also, if worse comes to worst, then we would just use the excuse that she's an escaped criminal of the Sect who is lying to the other sects to use them against us," the Prime Elder suggested.

"There doesn't seem to be any other option. We will go with that," the Sect Master said.

There was another person that was looking for Long Chen now. It was the father of Lang Jing. He didn't believe that Long Chen was dead. He was suspicious that he had killed Lang Jing instead.

Another Twenty-Four hours had already passed away. Long Chen's side effects of using the flute were already over, but he was still sleeping.

"It has been so long. When will he wake up?" Ji Shan commented as he looked at Long Chen. "He sure does like his sleep."

"Let him rest. He worked really hard. It wasn't easy to fight so many strong people. If it were any of us, we wouldn't be sleeping; we would have been dead," Mingyu replied to Ji Shan.

"He does look more comfortable. Also, he looks so cute," Zhiqing muttered as she looked at Long Chen's sleeping face with a slight smile on her face.

"Hmph, You should see this Emperor when he sleeps. When this Emperor sleeps, even the heavenly goddesses fall in love with this Emperor. What can I

say, this Master is just so charming. Sigh, why am I so superior. It's so lonely being at the top," the Snake Monarch let out proudly.

"Sigh, do you always brag this much?" Ji Shan replied.

"Do you want to get your ass beaten? This king can promise you that you would lose all your teeth if you keep being jealous of this king's handsome looks," the Snake Monarch said with an annoyed look on his face.

"You never stay silent, do you?"

The Snake Monarch was about to curse again when he heard a voice.

It was Long Chen's voice. They all looked towards him. He still had his eyes closed, but they were clear that he had woken up.

"You finally decided to wake up. You kept this king waiting for so long. Also, why would this king stay silent? It's the citizen's job to stay silent before the Ruler, not the Ruler's job to stay silent before the citizen," the Snake Monarch said.

"Mother, are you fine?" Long Chen asked as he opened his eyes and saw the face of his mother.

"I am fine. It was you who was hurt," Sima Ziyi did as she gently placed her hand on Long Chen's face.

Chapter 465 - 465: Four Women?

"I am fine as well. It was nothing serious," Long Chen replied to her.

"Grandfather," Long Chen greeted Long Ren.

"Young man, your grandfather is not happy at you. I don't even want to talk to you," Long Ren pretended to be angry as he turned back.

"What did I do?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

He tried to sit up. There was some pain in his body as he tried to sit, but he didn't let it show on his face.

He sat straight beside his mother, resting his back on the tree.

"You left the clan without telling us and didn't return even after we found you before. That was still fine, but you didn't even tell us about your marriage? You found girls and got married and still didn't think that we needed to know. Do you even consider us your family anymore?" Long Ren let out in an upset tone.

"Marriage?" Long Chen muttered in confusion as he roamed his gaze over others and saw Mingyu and Zhiqing.

'Did they tell him that we are married? I guess it's not entirely a lie,' Long Chen thought.

"I apologize grandfather. I wanted to tell you when I returned, but you already know what happened when I came back. I just didn't get the time to tell you," Long Chen gave an excuse.

"Hmph, Is there anything else that you didn't get the time to tell us?" Long Ren asked.

"There is one more thing. Please wait a minute," Long Chen muttered as he stood up. His feet were feeling weak, just like his whole body. It was as if he had used too much energy.

He walked towards Mingyu and Zhiqing and held their hands before he walked away from others.

"Where is he going?" Long Ren muttered in confusion.

Xue and Mei looked down as they saw Long Chen move away. They were sad that he didn't even look towards them for more than a few seconds.

"There is something that I need to tell you guys," Long Chen told the girls after he was far away from the others.

"Alright. What is it?" Mingyu asked him.

"You remember the time we were in the hotel near the Glorious Blossom Sect, and I told you about my family while they were walking outside?" Long Chen asked Mingyu.

"Yeah. I remember," Mingyu answered.

"You know how I introduced those two girls to you?" Long Chen inquired again.

"Yeah, you joked that they were your lovers," Mingyu replied to him. She still remembered what Long Chen had said when she asked him about Xue and Mei when she saw them.

"I wasn't joking. They really are my women," Long Chen said to them.

"Zhiqing, Mingyu, I have two more girls. Xue and Mei. And I won't be leaving them behind. I had already promised them before I left them last time," Long Chen explained.

Zhiqing looked more shocked than Mingyu, who seemed as if she was expecting that.

"Let me tell you about myself honestly," Long Chen muttered before he started introducing himself honestly as the Grandson of the Long Clan patriarch.

He also talked about Xue and Mei and about many other things. He also spoke about his broken engagement, which he said he was happy to get rid of.

Other than the things about his ring, his real strength, and his transmigration, he told them everything.

He even talked about his problems related to his heart demon, which he said was somewhat under his control now.

After telling them everything, he waited for them to react.

"I don't know what to say. I am not happy that you have more women, but then again, I myself jumped into the wagon, knowing that you have Mingyu. I don't want to lose you because of things that I already expected from you," Zhiqing responded after some time.

She had known that Long Chen was in a relationship, but still, she had fallen for him. What started as something to gain a strong ally for her kingdom initially, had changed into love before she even knew it. She didn't want to leave him because he had more girls than she had expected.

"Thank you," Long Chen thanked her.

He looked towards Mingyu and waited for her response.

Mingyu didn't speak any words, but she nodded her head as if giving her ultimate approval.

"Thank you both," Long Chen said happily as he stepped forth and took them into his embrace.

The others were far away from them, but they could still see them.

"Hah, young love," Long Ren smiled as he saw them.

"I'm so happy for him," Sima Ziyi let out as she glanced at him. "He established a family of his own."

After some time, Long Chen walked back to the others with Mingyu and Zhiqing.

"Alright. Grandfather, Mother. There is one more thing that I need to tell you," Long Chen said as he walked towards Xue and Mei.

He held their hands and looked towards Long Ren.

"Xue and Mei are also my women," Long Chen declared.

"They as well? You have four girls? Wow, even the King didn't have so many women," Long Ren let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Is this true?" Sima Ziyi asked as she looked towards Xue and Mei.

"Young Master, This..."

Xue and Mei couldn't understand how to react anymore. They had thought that Long Chen didn't care about them, but what happened before then was unbelievable to them.

"Don't worry about anything. As I said before, You are a part of my family. Just letting everyone know about that," Long Chen said with a slight smile on his face.

"Well, it doesn't change anything. You were already like my daughters before. It will be the same now," Sima Ziyi said as she gave her approval.

'Well, I have another wife. Her name is Xun,' Long Chen thought. He intentionally made Xun hear his thoughts. He glanced towards Xun, who was standing near.

"Cheh, who would want to be your wife. Don't blemish the reputation of your master, or you'll be beaten badly," Xun snorted as she looked away.

"Long Chen, I'm sorry to disturb your family moment, but I'm really curious about something. Who was the one that destroyed the city and killed so many people? Did those Elders do it?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen.

His words reminded Long Chen about what had happened when he used his Dark Sacrifice.

He remembered everyone he killed after that and everything he destroyed, but strangely he didn't feel bad about any of that.

It was as if he wasn't sad that he killed so many people. The emotions he felt about the deaths were almost negligible to him.

He realized what was happening to him.

'Is this the success effect of Dark Sacrifice? I lost empathy for others?' Long Chen asked Xun. "I can still feel bad about what my family had to go through. I guess it's only related to the ones I didn't know or care about deeply."

"Yes. I think that you lost empathy for strangers and for the ones that you don't care deeply about. It is a good thing in a way as now you can think more clearly when dealing with people. Also, your slaughter aura reached twenty percent in just one day," Xun informed Long Chen.

'The lives of a city to get it to 20 percent. It is hard. I guess I understand why you didn't say how many lives it would take to get it to full,' Long Chen replied to her.

"Yeah, it would be difficult, but not impossible. In fact, now that you lost your empathy towards others, it'll be even easier," Xun said to him.

"Ahmm, Long Chen? Why are you in a daze? Who destroyed the city?" Ji Shan asked again.

Chapter 466 - 466: Fake World

"I don't know who destroyed what. I escaped from them when I was injured, and I was brought here. I don't know what happened after that. When I woke up, I found you all near me," Long Chen replied to them.

Even though he didn't feel sad for what he did, he knew that his family would feel bad if he told them that he killed millions of people.

He hid that information from his family and decided to go with an excuse.

"See, It's as this King said. Someone else came to the city, and the other guys probably annoyed him when they were looking for this guy, which resulted in that being destroying everything," The Snake Monarch came to Long Chen's rescue and supported that theory even though he was mostly sure that Long Chen did it.

"Sigh, everything was destroyed, whoever it was destroyed millions of lives. No one was left alive. Not only our home, but even our city and its millions of residents are no more. Who could be so cruel?" Long Ren sighed.

"The Shui Kingdom will most likely become part of history. The main strength of the kingdom resided in the Royal Capital, which was wiped out. The surrounding kingdoms will take control of Shui as soon as they find out," he added.

"You don't have to worry about Shui, Grandfather. We can't live here, after all. I'll take you to a different place. The Clan will be established there. I have the resources to help you," Long Chen said.

"Yeah, The ones that have seen your grandfather and mother are mostly dead. No one knows what happened to the city. I don't think they will be able to find your family. You are the wanted person, not them. They can establish themselves anywhere as long as it's sufficiently far away from Shui," Ji Shan told Long Chen.

"Let's leave this place before the sects send someone else to this place," Mingyu suggested.

"We need to leave, but I don't think we have that many flying beasts. We can use the Snake Monarch, but he would have to be big enough, which would attract more attention. We would just be leaving a trail being for the others to follow if we fly," Long Chen said with a thoughtful look on his face.

Xun glanced at Long Chen and opened her mouth as if she wanted to say something, but she stopped herself. After some more time, she again opened her mouth again.

"There is something that you can use, but that would make you lose a really big opportunity," Xun told Long Chen.

"Use what?" Long Chen asked her.

"I didn't tell you before as I didn't think that it was important since you already received the best treasure as the reward for passing the Second Bloodline Trial, but you can exchange the treasure you received with another treasure that was present there,"

"There is another treasure there that I think is not worth exchanging, as you would lose your Demon Scabbard in exchange, which helps your Weapon Grade in grade. Think about it; If you decide to exchange the Demon Scabbard, you will lose it forever. Something that could give you a God Grade Weapon in the future would be gone," she said.

"If the other item can help me, then I don't mind losing this scabbard. It would only be the loss of an item. I can always get stronger weapons as long as I get sufficient strength. What is the treasure that you are talking about?" He asked her.

"A fake planet," Xun answered.

"A fake planet?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

"It is a special artifact which is in the form of a ring. There is a red diamond engraved in the ring, which is the fake planet. It's like the beast region where you can keep living beings. Humans can be kept there. The Qi inside that place is not much superior to this place, though, but it's not worse than here either. Your family can build a house there and live in peace. They won't come to harm either," Xun explained.

"There are some limitations, as well. As soon as you chose the ring to exchange for your sheath, it would be bound to you. You can only send the people that you consider deeply close to you inside. That's an important thing to remember. If you think that a person is close to you, but you don't have a deep enough place in your heart for them or connection with them, then they will die as soon as they enter the fake world. Since we are talking about your family and the girls you love, then it should be fine. But think carefully. I still

think that Demon Scabbard is worth more value in the Higher Realm," She added.

"I've already thought about it. I will take the fake world instead of the Demon Scabbard. Can you help me with the exchange?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"Alright. If you have already decided," Xun muttered as she shook her head before she disappeared.

All their conversation happened through their thoughts, which others didn't hear.

After some time, Long Chen noticed that his Demon Scabbard had disappeared. Only his King's Sword was lying near the tree now

He also felt something appear in his finger.

There was now a silver ring on his finger that had a red diamond-like crystal engraved on it.

"It's done," Xun said to Long Chen as she again appeared near him.

"The ring in your hand is called the fake world ring. You can now send your family there. The thing is that there are fruits, plants, and trees inside the fake planet. There are even lakes and rivers that have pure water, but they would still have to build a house there, themselves," Xun told him.

"Can't I enter?" Long Chen asked Xun.

"No, You can't enter the fake world. You can send them in and bring them out, but you can't enter. You can send your consciousness inside to see what's happening inside though," she said.

"Sigh, so it's just like the Beast Region, just with fewer advantages," Long Chen replied.

"Yeah, there is no superior Qi or Heavenly Herbs in the fake world, unlike the Beast Region. That's why it's not a treasure that is worth as much as the Demon Sheath," Xun said.

"Alright. I understand," Long Chen responded.

While Long Chen was talking with Xun through his mind, everyone else was looking at him, just standing there, not doing anything.

"Grandfather," Long Chen abruptly said as he looked towards Long Ren.

"Ah, Yes," Long Ren was stunned at suddenly being called out.

"I have a place where you guys can live comfortably without worrying. There is only one problem, though. That place does not have a house. You will have to build a house there," Long Chen said to Long Ren.

"That's no trouble. Your grandfather is an experienced man," Long Ren said, smilingly.

"Where is this place?" he asked.

"It's nearby. Are you guys ready to go there?" Long Chen inquired.

"Yes," Long Ren nodded his head. The others also agreed.

"Good."

Long Chen stepped closer to Long Ren and held his hand.

"It might feel weird, and your head might spin at first. That's just the side effects of traveling like that for the first time. It won't last long," Long Chen said.

"What are you talking about?" Long Ren asked in confusion, but before Long Chen could reply, everything turned dark for him. It lasted for an instant before he found himself in a different place.

He was near a crystal clear lake.

"Is this the place he was talking about? How did he send me here?" Long Ren muttered in confusion as he looked around.

Soon, he noticed that Sima Ziyi also appeared there.

"This is our new place?" Sima Ziyi asked.

Chapter 467 - 467: Request Of The Snake Monarch

"Is this the place where we will stay?" Sima Ziyi said as she looked around.

"It looks like the place he talked about. I wonder how he sent us here," Long Ren muttered.

"This seems like a nice place to stay with the lake nearby. Wait here, I'll get the wood to make the place to stay for us," Long Ren said as he started walking towards the forest.

In the outside world, Ji Shan and the others were looking at Long Chen in confusion. They saw Long Chen touch people before they disappeared.

"What the heck is happening here?" Ji Shan exclaimed.

Long Chen walked towards Xue and Mei.

"It's your turn to go there. It's not a separation, though. You'll be just at a thought's distance for me. We can meet without any problem now. Oh, I also have some things for you. We'll be spending quite a lot of time together to make you girls stronger," Long Chen told them as he placed his hands on their cheeks.

"We understand, Young Master," Xue and Mei replied.

"Didn't I tell you before not to call me young master. You're my woman, not my servants. I'll seriously be angry if you don't stop calling me young master," Long Chen said with a stern look on his face.

Xue and Mei nodded their head like the girls that had realized their mistakes.

"Good girls," Long Chen muttered as he looked at them.

He moved his face forward and gently kissed on the lips of Xue. After a short kiss, he separated and kissed Mei.

He held their hands.

"I'll see you really soon. Take care of mother inside," Long Chen let out as he sent them into the fake world as well.

After finishing with them, he turned back to look at the shocked Ji Shan.

"What happened? Did you see a ghost?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

"You're impossible to understand. Just how can you be so miraculous. You can fight over fifty elders from the supreme sects at once, and you can even do this? Are you really a human or what?" Ji Shan asked.

"I am a demon disguised as a human," Long Chen said as he chuckled.

"Anyway, Do you girls also want to go there?" Long Chen asked them.

"No need. No one knows about us being related to you. Also, your Sun Destroying Condor can carry three people with ease," Mingyu replied to me.

"Hey, what about me?" Ji Shan let out as he rolled his eyes. "I'm here as well."

"I'm sorry, but I can't send you to that place. I'm just not confident if it will work for you, and I don't want to take the risk. It would be really bad if the transfer failed for you," Long Chen said.

Xun had told him that he could send people that were closest and the people he had the deepest bond with. Even though Long Chen considered Ji Shan his best friend and like a sworn brother, he was still doubtful if it would work for him. He was clearly conflicted about it as he clearly didn't put Ji Shan at the same position as his mother, grandfather, and wife yet.

"It's alright. I'm sure that there must be some trouble for you regarding that, but I was talking about the travel arrangements. You guys were talking about the 3 of you, ignoring me," Ji Shan said.

"We would never forget you," Long Chen said as he tapped on Ji Shan's orders.

"Anyway, Let's leave this place. The information about the destruction of the city will spread, but the main problem would be when the Supreme Sects send someone to search for their Elders," Long Chen let out as he brought the Sun Destroying Condor out of his Storage Ring.

"Orion, Come here, boy," he said to Orion, who was waiting on the side.

Orion came closer to Long Chen and stopped closer to his legs.

"Thank you for everything. You helped me a lot," Long Chen said as he gently patted Orion's head.

"Go back and rest now," he added as he sent Orion back into the Beast Region.

"Hey, this king also struggled a lot for this. You dared to make this king a carrier beast. You owe this King now!" The Snake Monarch declared as he flew closer to them.

"Thank you for that as well. Also, I'm sorry for using the BeastMaster Command on you. It was a serious time," Long Chen said, apologetically.

He was still the same for his close ones, even though he had lost some of his empathy towards strangers and the ones that were not close to him.

The Snake Monarch didn't say anything and flew even closer to Long Chen's face. He whispered something into Long Chen's ears.

"Your apology won't make it. This King needs you to do something for me," The Snake Monarch whispered.

"Why are you being so sneaky? What do you want?" Long Chen asked in confusion.

"This King wants something that you can easily make happen. I want you to tell that fluffy to vacate the throne for me," the Snake Monarch said with a sneaky look on his face.

Long Chen just looked at him weirdly.

"Don't take it the wrong way. It's not like this king can't take the throne with strength. This king just doesn't want to bully fluffy. It would be better if you make her acknowledge this King as the Ruler of your beasts," The Snake Monarch replied instantly.

"Is this the imaginary kingship of the Beast Region you keep talking about? You're blowing it out of proportions. Little Snow is like a child. She shouldn't even have these things in her mind, but since you helped me, I'll tell her not to bully you too much," Long Chen said jokingly.

"She? and bully this King? You're dreaming. Was your head hit hard during that fight?" the Snake Monarch said annoyingly.

"I'm joking. Go back; I'll tell her what you want me to tell her," Long Chen said with a wry smile on his face as he sent the Snake Monarch back.

"Why are you sending him back? He should be faster than the Sun Destroying Condor from what I've seen," Ji Shan told Long Chen after he sent the Snake Monarch back.

"He is faster, but he has a bad personality. I don't want to annoy him anymore unless necessary," Long Chen replied.

"You have another flying beast, right? The speed difference between the Sun Destroying Condor and it shouldn't be too big. We can still travel together although separately," he suggested.

"Alright. Where are we going, though? Do you have a plan?" Ji Shan asked.

"There is nothing that this continent has for me anymore. I'll be leaving this continent, and I can only do that by going through the ports. I need to go to the Ghost Temple, which is on an island between our continent and the next continent. It can only be done by going to the ports even though they are controlled by the Supreme Sects," Long Chen answered them.

"Are we finally leaving this continent? You'd love our continent when we get there. It's a beautiful place," Mingyu chimed in.

"Yeah, we will go to your Empire as well. It hasn't been long, so the war between Esteria and Qiandi shouldn't have started yet. We will definitely stop it by exposing the Tricion Empire," Long Chen told Mingyu.

"Umm-hmm," Mingyu nodded her head as a beautiful smile covered her face.

"Wait? You are from another continent? What the heck? Your identity is even more powerful than I thought!" Ji Shan exclaimed in shock.

"Yeah," Mingyu answered.

"Will you come with us or stay behind?" Long Chen asked Ji Shan, ignoring the shock on his face. He wasn't sure if Ji Shan would come with him as his identity here was really high.

Chapter 468 - 468: Found Them?

Ji Shan was the prince of an Empire who could have any resources he needed for Cultivation.

"A chance to go to the Higher Continents? I heard that those places are like heaven for Cultivators with their Qi and resources. Of Course, I would come with you! I also wanted to explore the world," Ji Shan chuckled as he replied.

"What about you, Zhiqing? I know that you have a family here. I need to know your wish as well," Long Chen asked Zhiqing.

"Can I meet my brother once before we leave? Wait, ignore that. It's better if I leave like this. I don't want to bring trouble to his Kingdom," Zhiqing told Long Chen.

"It would not bring him trouble if we take proper precautions, but it would be better if we don't go there," Ji Shan said.

"Well, the Kingdom is on our way to the ports. We can stop by if you need to talk to him. I can disguise myself," Long Chen suggested. "But yeah, if things go wrong, then your kingdom would be in trouble."

"Let's not stop there then. We can be on our way," Zhiqing shook her head as she rejected the suggestion.

"Alright," Long Chen muttered.

Long Chen glanced inside the Fake world to see what others were doing. He saw his grandfather bringing wood to make a house inside.

He didn't like the fact that he was making the old man work.

'Xun, can I at least send Xia inside? She's not alive, but she is linked to me. Our connection should be enough to send her in,' Long Chen asked Xun.

"You can send her inside, but not your beasts even though they are linked to you," Xun answered him.

"Good," Long Chen muttered. He walked towards Xia.

"Xia, I should also thank you for helping me with everything. I also need one more help from you now," Long Chen told her.

"Xia is ready to help Master with anything," Xia said, smilingly

"Good. I will send you to my grandfather. You need to help him make an amazing house for them to live. Don't let him do any work if possible," he told her.

"Xia understands," Xia nodded her head as she gave him affirmation.

Long Chen reached out his hand and held her hand.

As soon as his hands touched her, Xia disappeared from this place and appeared in a different location, which was inside Long Chen's fake world.

She took the wood from Long Ren's hand and explained the order she had received from Long Chen.

"Let's Leave," Long Chen told the others.

He walked towards the tree and picked up his king's sword and put that in his storage ring before he got on top of his Sun Destroying Condor.

Ji Shan also brought his flying beast out of his beast bag.

Mingyu and Zhiqing sat behind Long Chen as the Sun Destroying started flying. Ji Shan followed right beside them.

Long Chen brought out his mask of mischief and covered his face with it. He didn't activate the mask's effects, though, which made it work like a normal mask that helped him hide his face and not something that could disguise his face with a different person's face.

"Why are you hiding your face now?" Zhiqing asked him.

"Just to escape some unnecessary trouble. Need to get in the habit of wearing it again," Long Chen claimed.

"Oh, That mask looks good on you, though," Zhiqing complimented him.

"So I look good with my face hidden? That's hurtful," Long Chen responded.

"Oh, right. I have something else to tell you. I have a Dual Cultivation technique that I got from the Divine Heaven Sect. It is not harmful in the least, and it can increase your Cultivation as well," Long Chen said as he brought a small booklet out of his storage ring.

"Mingyu, You can read it first. You'll learn it faster as you have experience with higher grade techniques. After learning, share the book with Zhiqing. I only have this single copy," he said to Mingyu as he gave her the booklet.

Mingyu curiously went through the contents of the book. Her expressions didn't change much as she read it.

While Mingyu read, Zhiqing just looked at her with interest.

Soon, the Sun Destroying Condor reached the part of the city, which allowed Long Chen to watch the destruction that he had caused.

'I feel nothing at all. I guess it can be a good thing. I won't live with the guilt,' Long Chen thought as he shook his head.

"The consequences were small because it was your first time using Dark Sacrifice, and you can say that it worked in your favor by eliminating your biggest weakness. But the next time isn't going to be the same. You need to use the skill carefully the next time," Xun told Long Chen as she appeared beside him.

She also glanced at the destroyed City, but she didn't care for the ones that were dead. She didn't have attachments to anyone other than Long Chen here.

'Don't worry. I won't let a situation like this appear again. Everything is in control now. My family is in the safest place it could be, and that's all that matters. They were my weakness, and now I have my weakness hidden away, and no one can reach my weakness,"

" As for Zhiqing and Mingyu, I can send them to the fake world any time I want. It might work for Ji Shan as well if things come to worse, and then I'll be free to use Spatial Travel. This Fake world ring solved half my problems already. No one can stop me with this ring and my Space Law now," Long Chen muttered.

They left the airspace of the Dragon City and continued going farther from this place, and towards their destination.

"Oh right, Although I don't care for them, where are other people? I noticed that other clan members also left with grandfather. What happened to them?" Long Chen asked as he suddenly thought of the Long Clan members that had left on the Snake Monarch.

"They decide to stay behind and not come with us to help you. They are in the next kingdom," Mingyu said.

"Did grandfather not tell them to stay behind?" Long Chen asked Mingyu.

"Nope. They said that they don't want to come back, and we left them behind. Those that we were standing before you when you woke up were the only ones that came back for you," Mingyu told him.

"Huh, Alright. If they wanted to go their separate ways, then fine," Long Chen muttered.

He couldn't help but imagine how strong Long Clan would've become if this thing hadn't happened and he was able to give them the extra treasures that he had, but now, it didn't matter. The Long Clan was technically over. He didn't have anything to do with them, and clearly, they wanted nothing to do with him.

"It's alright. I can at least give grandfather the high-grade Cultivation techniques that I had collected from other places. It's a pity that my Cultivation technique won't work on them. The other skills are not bad. His Cultivation speed would definitely increase," Long Chen muttered as he looked towards his ring.

"I'll give them after the house is ready. Something that would suit him," Long Chen muttered.

Soon, they left the kingdom of Shui as well.

Long Chen was looking down when he noticed someone.

He noticed a group of people moving ahead on their horses.

The two people on the lead were the ones that he quickly recognized. They were Yu Tianhao and Yu Ling.

He also knew the people that were following them

They were the Long Clan members that had left with his family.

Chapter 469 - 469: Xue Ying

"Looks like they found another person to stick close to," Long Chen muttered. "They will probably join the Yu Clan."

"Whatever works for them. They are not part of the Long Clan anymore," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

"Wait a minute; There should be another person in the Long Clan. How can I forget about that."

Long Chen suddenly thought of another person that he had completely forgotten about.

"The daughter of Grand Elder Mu!" he exclaimed as he remembered seeing the dead body of Grand Elder Mu when he had gotten there. "His daughter should be in the Glorious Blossom Sect, unaware of her father's death."

Long Chen was somewhat close to Grand Elder Mu. Grand Elder Mu was the one that helped him often and also the one that gave him the initial money which Long Chen had used for his travel.

He was also somewhat close to his daughter Long Xue Ying. He at least wanted to tell her about the death of her father.

Long Chen ignored the entourage of Ling and continued towards the Glorious Blossom Sect.

"What is happening?" Mingyu asked Long Chen. He didn't look as casual as before.

"I forgot another person. I need to ask that person if they will come with me. I will send them to the place I sent Grandfather and mother," Long Chen answered her.

Even though it took him some time, he still reached the Glorious Blossom Sect before Yu Tianhao, and the others could also get to the Kingdom.

He was still wearing the mask. The Sun Destroying Condor got down to the ground in a somewhat empty place.

"You guys wait outside, I'll be right back," Long Chen told the others before he walked towards the entrance of the Glorious Blossom Sect.

Guards were waiting at the entrance of the Glorious Blossom Sect. Instead of entering through the main door, Long Chen jumped the wall. He easily entered the Glorious Blossom Sect.

He spread out his divine sense as he tried to find Long Xue Ying.

He walked to the center of the Sect after some time and soon caught a glimpse of Long Xue Ying through his Divine Sense.

Long Xue Ying was inside her courtyard, cultivating.

Long Chen stopped his Divine Sense as he already knew about her location now. He walked towards her courtyard as fast as he could. He had used his Mask of Mischief to make himself look like one of the disciples he had seen along the way.

Soon, he reached her courtyard. The surroundings were empty. He canceled the effect of his Mask of Mischief.

He walked towards the door. He was about to knock on it, but he stopped himself as he noticed that the door wasn't locked.

He pushed the door open and entered inside.

'Such a naive girl. Is this sect really so safe that people don't even lock their doors?' he wondered.

Long Chen walked towards the room that he had found her cultivating when he last used his divine sense, but as soon as he entered the room, his eyes opened wide in shock as he saw Long Xue Ying in her innerwear. Her clothes were lying on the bed.

It seemed as if she had just stopped her Cultivation. She was probably about to go for a shower when he arrived.

Long Xue Ying saw Long Chen. She didn't scream; instead, she decided to deal with the infiltrators as a Cultivator. She attacked the person that had just entered.

Unfortunately, Long Chen was much faster than she could have imagined. Long Chen easily caught her hand as he turned her body around. Her hand was twisted in such a way that wouldn't harm her. Long Chen used his other hand to close her mouth to prevent her from screaming.

Long Xue Ying was so close to Long Chen that her butt was sticking closely to Long Chen's lower body. As she resisted to free herself from his grip, her ass rubbed against his sword, which moved a little because of the stimulation.

"Calm down. I'm not here to harm you. I'm Long Chen!" Long Chen said close to her ears.

"Mmm?" Long Xue Ying tried saying something, but because her mouth was closed by Long Chen's hands, he couldn't hear her.

"I'm going to free you. Just listen to me after that," Long Chen said as he freed her before his little guy could get in form.

Long Chen removed the mask and showed Long Xue Ying his face.

"Long Chen? How did you enter the sect?" Long Xue Ying asked in surprise.

"I snuck inside. There is something that you need to know. This was surprisingly not difficult for someone as experienced as me. Anyway, there is bad news," Long Chen said in full seriousness.

Long Xue Ying was stunned as she saw his seriousness when he talked about the bad news. She even forgot that she was only in her underwear now.

"What bad news?" She asked him.

Long Chen looked into her eyes as he took a deep breath.

"Your father is no more. He died to protect the clan from the enemy. The Clan was also destroyed. Some clan members escaped, but your father wasn't one of them. He gave his life for others."

Even though Long Chen didn't know what had actually happened, he made up something that was close to reality while still explaining that her father died fighting bravely for his clan.

"This can't be. You're clearly messing with me. Are you getting revenge for how I behaved to you when we first met? This is not something you joke about!" Long Xue Ying refused to believe him. In Fact, she didn't want to believe him as believing Long Chen would mean that her father was dead.

There was no way her father could die, that's what she was thinking, but she still kept taking step backs slowly as if moving away from Long Chen would make something better.

"I am not lying. He is dead, along with many others from our clan. I couldn't even save his body from being destroyed. I just came here to inform you of that and to tell you that we are leaving. The Long Clan is no more, and our enemies are still around. They will probably look for the Long Clan members in the future, and they will get to you. Leave with me. My grandfather and my mother are with us as well," Long Chen informed her.

"Impossible! He can't die! He can't die!" Long Xue Ying dropped down to her knees as tears started falling out of her eyes.

Long Chen walked closer to her and placed his hand over her shoulder to comfort her.

"Believe me, I wish it was all just a lie, but it's not. Everything's lost, and we have no choice but to leave. Please come with us," he told her.

"No! I will stay here! Let them come! I will ask my master's help to kill them all!" Long Xue Ying said furiously.

"You don't understand. The one I'm talking about is much stronger than you can imagine. They can even destroy empires if they wish, let alone a small sect in a 2nd ranked kingdom. I don't wish for Grand Elder Mu's bloodline to end with you. Come with us. There is already a place where you can stay and cultivate. I'll also give you cultivation skills and resources that will be much better than what the sect can provide you," Long Chen let out, shaking his head.

"I won't leave," Long Xue Ying repeated her words.

"You're being stubborn, and you will die for that. Is that how you want Grand Elder Mu's legacy to end? Because her daughter was too stubborn?" Long Chen said with an annoyed look on his face.

Chapter 470 - 470: Meeting The Holder Of 20th Token

"You can call me stubborn, but I don't care. I will not leave," Long Xue Ying said.

"Fine, die then," Long Chen said as he covered his face with his mask and started to leave.

"Wait!"

Long Chen was about to step out of the room when Long Xue Ying stopped him.

Long Chen stopped in his tracks and turned back to glance at her.

"It's good that you changed your mind. Come with me," Long Chen said.

"That's not it. I will not leave with you. Instead, I will go back to the Kingdom," Long Xue Ying said.

Long Chen was getting frustrated at the lack of understanding from the girl.

"You clearly don't understand that it's not a game. You and your sect are nothing in the bigger scale of things. Only one of the enemies can destroy your sect in a single night, and you won't be able to do anything but watch. Come with me, it's the last chance," Long Chen said to her again.

"I just want to know the names of the people that destroyed my home. You can leave after that. I'm not coming with you!" Long Xue Ying said stubbornly.

"If you weren't the last of Grand Elder Mu's bloodline, I would really have left you behind to die, but I guess he does deserve something from me for what he did for me. I'll save you," Long Chen muttered as he teleported behind her and hit the back of her neck to make her lose consciousness.

As she lost her consciousness, Long Chen caught her, preventing her from falling down.

"If you don't want to come, then I'll take you forcefully."

He was about to send her to the fake world when he noticed that she was still in her underwear. If he sent her there in such a condition, things wouldn't be right.

With a wry smile on his face, he made her lie down on the bed and helped her dress.

After dressing her up appropriately, he held her hands.

"You might not like what I'm about to do, but that's good for you in the long run and for me, as no one knows that I'm alive or what happened back home after everyone left," Long Chen muttered as he used the Fake World Ring and sent her into the Fake World.

Long Xue Ying was still unconscious when she was sent inside the Fake World. She appeared right beside Sima Ziyi, which Long Chen had done intentionally.

After dealing with her, Long Chen stepped out of the room. He had again activated the mask, but this time he disguised as another person. Leaving the Sect was much more hassle-free than getting entry as there was no checking for the one leaving the sect.

Long Chen was walking towards the Sect exit when he noticed the Sect Master of the Glorious Blossom Sect, which he had some dealing with before. He ignored the Sect Master that was like an ant before him, but he did remember that the secret cave which had the inheritance of the Saint King Xianwu was still hidden in the Glorious Blossom Sect. Unfortunately, he hadn't found the medallion of the Saint King.

The stone guardian of that place told him that he needed two things to gain entry into that place. One of which was Saint King Xianwu's sword, which was called the King's Sword. It was something that Long Chen already had. It was his strongest weapon as well, but the second thing was still missing. It was the medallion of the Saint King.

'I wonder if I will ever find the medallion,' Long Chen wondered as he continued walking towards the exit.

He stepped out of the sect without any difficulty.

He was walking towards the destination he had left the others at. The streets were crowded, and many people were walking in opposite directions to him.

One of the people on the street was wearing a dark green hood. His face was half-covered because of the hood. As he walked past Long Chen, their Shoulders collided, but the impact was small.

"Sorry," the person said to Long Chen before he continued walking away. The voice sounded like it belonged to a teenager. Long Chen glanced back at the person before ignoring him as he continued to leave.

What he didn't know was that the hooded person was wearing the 20th token of appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect that was hidden under his clothes and not clearly visible to others.

When Long Chen was given the token of Appreciation in the Dark Soul Sect, he was told that these tokens were special, and there were only 20 in the world, but they were the only things that allowed someone to enter the Divine Heaven Sect. He was also told that these tokens would disappear before 14 days after someone entered the sect and appear in various unknown corners of the continent.

The other sects worked hard to find them after every Divine Heaven Sect exploration.

The hooded person still had the token, which meant that he hadn't used it to enter the Divine Heaven Sect.

While Long Chen was walking away, the hooded person also looked back towards Long Chen's back.

There was a knowing smile on his face that seemed somewhat gentle and less malicious, but there was something mysterious about it as well.

The hooded person continued walking away. Soon, he disappeared in the crowd of people.

Far away from the continent in which Long Chen was currently in, there existed another continent. It was a continent where Mingyu was born.

In that continent, there were many Empires and Kingdoms. The strength of that continent was also much higher than the overall power of Long Chen's continent.

Mingyu's continent was also called as the Heaven for Cultivators amongst the people of knowledge and power.

Amongst these hundreds of Empires, there were the 2 Empires, Esteria and Qiandi, that were involved in a turmoil all because of the scheme of the Tricion Empire that killed Mingyu's brother and made it seem like he had run

away with a commoner right before his marriage to the Qiandi Empire's princess.

This had broken the last thread of the already tense relationship between the Esteria Empire and the Qiandi Empire.

The situation was getting worse day by day. The Qiandi and the Esteria were on each other's throat. While the Qiandi Emperor blamed Esteria for insulting them and his daughter by doing this, the Esteria Emperor blamed Qiandi for kidnapping his son. The Esteria Emperor didn't believe that his son would run away.

He claimed that it was Qiandi that kidnapped his son because they didn't want peace.

The situation had gotten so bad that both the Empires had started a war.

The Tricion Empire, on the other hand, watched everything with great interest, enjoying both of its neighbors destroying each other. Their plan had worked perfectly.

The only problem in their plan was the missing Esteria Princesses, Mingyu that had found out that it was Tricion that killed the Prince of Esteria and her brother. She still wasn't caught, and she was still missing. The Tricion Emperor knew that if she returned to the Palace someday, then their whole plan would backfire.

Even though there was a war going on at the borders of the Esteria Empire and the Qiandi Empire, everyone knew that it was going to be a long war that will probably last for years before any victor would appear.

The Tricion Empire was relatively peaceful at that moment.

Inside one of the bars of the Tricion Empire, two people were sitting on a table.

One of the guys looked like a 20-year-old boy who didn't have many expressions on his face. He was wearing a full face mask to cover his face.

Chapter 471 - 471: A Name I Will Never Forget

The other person was someone that Mingyu had met before. It was the person that had given her the destiny crystal that brought her to Long Chen.

A mask covered half of the man's face. It seemed like the other half of his Mask was broken.

If Long Chen was here and he had seen that mask, he would be able to realize that this mask was similar to the broken mask piece that he found in the Divine Heaven Sect. If he had tried, both the pieces would have fit perfectly as if the piece that he had was the broken piece of this mask.

Long Chen reached his friends, and they again continued on their journey.

The Sun Destroying Condor flew throughout the rest of the day, towards the destination of Long Chen, which was the Ports of the Supreme Sects.

Along the way, Mingyu had finished reading the Dual Cultivation Technique, and she had understood it entirely as it was an easy to learn skill.

After learning it, she passed the book to Zhiqing for her to learn.

The afternoon turned to the evening, which soon turned to the night before Long Chen decided that it was time for everyone to rest. Zhiqing had also learned the Dual Cultivation technique by now.

The Sun Destroying Condor landed inside the dense forest, according to Long Chen's wishes.

Ji Shan also landed behind them.

"Go and have some rest. You worked hard," Long Chen patted the head of the Sun Destroying Condor before he sent him into the Beast Region.

Long Chen glanced inside the Fake World to see if the construction of the house was completed, and he was amazed to see that it was done. The house was made entirely of wood, but it was much bigger than he had expected and looked beautiful.

Long Xue Ying had also woken up. She was talking to Sima Ziyi while looking upset. His grandfather was resting inside the house while Xue and Mei were cutting some fruits for them.

Xia was just standing there. Her work was completed, and she didn't know what to do anymore.

Long Chen brought Xia out of the Fake World.

"Thank you for the work, Xia. You're really incredible," Long Chen praised her.

"Thank you, Master," Xia replied with a smile on her face that looked just as real as the smile of a living person.

Long Chen brought the tents out of his storage ring and started arranging them.

He only brought two tents today.

Both of the tents were set up by them. Long Chen assigned one of them to Ji Shan while the other one was for Mingyu, Zhiqing, and him.

"Xia, Keep an eye out on the surroundings. If there are any enemies, kill them. You don't need my permission for that, but if the enemies are strong, you need to wake me up," Long Chen told Xia.

"Understood Master," Xia responded.

"You guys can go inside the tents and rest. I'll be right inside," Long Chen told Mingyu and Zhiqing. Both of them entered the tents.

"Good night," Ji Shan also wished Long Chen before he entered his tent.

Only Xia and Long Chen were standing outside now.

Long Chen brought his grandfather out of his Fake World Ring.

Long Ren was surprised to find himself back.

"So you can send us there and bring us back anytime? That's good. Why didn't you come there, though?" Long Ren asked? He was waiting for Long Chen to come there after they were sent inside.

"I can't enter that place, Grandfather. Anyway, I called you out to give you something," Long Chen said to Long Ren.

He brought out an item from inside his storage ring.

It was a small, blood-red booklet.

"This is the Nine Sun Cultivation Manual. I think you can use this Cultivation Skill. It's one of the best Cultivation Skills of this continent, and you can progress a lot if you cultivate using it," Long Chen told Long Ren as he gave him the booklet.

The small booklet was something that he had found inside the ring that he had collected from the True Dao Sect Elder he killed.

He had heard that it was the Cultivation Skill of the True Dao Sect. The True Dao Sect was the strongest righteous sect that also made this the strongest righteous Cultivation skill in a way.

"The Nine Sun Cultivation? I haven't heard of it before, but if you say that, then it must be good," Long Ren let out as he glanced at the book.

Long Chen looked at Long Ren as he thought of something that he had wanted to know for quite some time.

"Grandfather, there is one more thing that I need to ask. Do you know about the Ghost Temple?" He asked, straight away.

Long Chen already wondered why the Ghost Temple targeted his Father. He knew that it was because of the special mark on his body, but still, he didn't know the exact reason other than that. He wondered if his grandfather had heard about the people that kidnapped his father.

"The Ghost Temple?! How did you hear of that name!"

Long Ren's face turned white as soon as he heard of that name. It was clear that he knew something about it. Something which made him tense.

"Tell me about them, grandfather. I need to know about them as much as I can," Long Chen said in full seriousness. He wanted to know what Long Ren was hiding.

"It... It's something that I don't wish to talk about," Long Ren let out as he turned his back on Long Chen. He refused to talk about it.

"Grandfather, if you don't tell me everything, then I might die," Long Chen said with a grave look on his face.

"Are you dealing with the Ghost Temple?" Long Ren asked without looking back.

"I plan to do that," Long Chen replied.

"Y-you can't do that! I forbid you to have anything to do with the Ghost Temple!" Long Ren said fiercely.

"I'm sorry, Grandfather, but I can't do that. Even if I have to go against you, it's something that I must do," Long Chen said, refusing to budge from his position.

"You stubborn fool! You don't know who they are! You will die!" Long Ren bellowed in anger.

"If that's how it ends, then I'm willing to face that end. But I don't want it to end like that, and that's why I'm asking you to tell me what you know!" Long Chen replied.

"I-i will tell you, but you must promise that you won't even get near anyone from the Ghost Temple!" Long Ren finally let out, with a defeated look on his face.

He couldn't use force on his grandson, and he was way too weak in comparison to hold him forcibly. He could only use his words to convince his stubborn grandson.

Long Chen didn't respond right away as he didn't want to make it seem like he was lying.

After thinking for a few minutes, he nodded his head and agreed to that condition.

"I promise that I won't get near them as long as you tell me the truth," Long Chen said. He was lying, though.

Long Ren sighed as he looked towards the sky.

"The Ghost Temple is the name that I will never forget. It has been carved into the depths of my soul as the name of the monsters," Long Ren told Long Chen before he began telling him the story.

"I was 30 years old at that time. I was not particularly talented when it came to Cultivation, but I had still managed to reach the 3rd stage of Gold Core Realm. That was when I met her..." Long Ren said.

Chapter 472 - 472: The Real Truth (I)

'Her?' Long Chen thought in curiosity.

"My master. She was like a fairy that appeared out of nowhere and decided to take pity on this weak trash of a cultivator. I met her when I left the kingdom to gain experience. Somehow, we found each other, and she decided to teach me some things. Even though she didn't take me in as a disciple, I will always consider her my master. I still don't know why she did that, but she claimed that it was because she liked that I had helped an old woman along the way, and she saw that."

"I only had the honor to study under her for a single day where she only taught me the basics, but even the basics that she explained were like the words of heavenly wisdom that made me instantly achieve a breakthrough. She left after that, and I never saw her again, until five months later, when I saw her easily defeating the Sect Master of the strongest sect I knew. The Sect Master was the Peak Earth Realm Cultivator, but she defeated him without even moving. It was like she was a god, and the sect master was a child. She again left before I could get a chance to talk to her, " Long Ren said.

Long Chen heard the story carefully. The woman sounded like a strong cultivator. He didn't know how strong she was, but she was definitely stronger than Earth Realm Cultivators. She could even be a Heaven Realm Cultivator, which was above the Sky Realm, or even stronger. It was just too difficult to judge the Cultivation of someone from the enemy they defeated unless Long Chen was there to see her with his own eyes.

"I came back to the clan after a few more months. I saw her again, after a year from when I saw her for the first time. This was not how I wanted to see her, though. I was standing on the roof of our clan, watching the stars when I saw someone flying towards me. It was master. She crashed on my roof.x

"She was covered in blood, and there was a child in her hand. The Child was safe, but her own condition was very bad."

"Master! Master! I ran to her, crying. I think she recognized me as I saw a sad smile on her face. I asked her who could be so strong to harm her. That was when I heard the name of the Ghost Temple. These two words were what she said to me before she said three more words. She told me to save her child before her eyes closed forever,"

"The goddess died right before my eyes. I didn't see anyone following behind her. She had probably killed them at the cost of her life or lost their trail. I took her body inside the house to hide it from the others that might come here following her. No one came, and I buried her body. That was the story of how I heard the name of the Ghost Temple. The ones that could kill her are definitely too fierce. You really can't go against them," Long Ren said. His eyes were already wet as he remembered that sad moment.

'She could fly. She was definitely a Cultivator that was at Heaven Realm or Higher,' Long Chen thought as he analyzed the story.

"What happened to the child?" Long Chen asked Long Ren.

"That child..." Long Ren sighed.

"I guess it's time you know that as well. I took that child as my son. He was your father, Long Jun. You are not my grandson. You are the Grandson of my Master," Long Ren declared, with tears falling out of his eyes.

That came as the biggest shock to Long Chen.

The original owner of this body was the grandson of that woman and not of Long Ren?

"Thank you for telling me the truth," Long Chen thanked Long Ren. He wasn't too emotional about this, but he still felt something in his heart. He couldn't describe that feeling. It was as if something was suddenly missing. As if he had lost something which gave him a sense of emptiness.

"Even if you aren't my blood Grandfather, You will always be my grandfather, and I will always be your grandson," Long Chen said to Long Ren, to comfort him.

Long Ren was still looking away from Long Chen. He wiped his tears.

"You will stay away from the Ghost Temple, right?" Long Ren asked.

"I will. I won't have anything to do with them. What happened has happened in the past. I won't go there to die," Long Chen told Long Ren, but he was obviously lying about some things.

"Good," Long Ren nodded his head.

"Alright, Grandpa. Go and have rest," Long Chen walked closer to him and held his hand. He sent him back to the Fake World. He realized that Long Ren

needed some time away from him at this moment. It didn't look like he wanted to let Long Chen see his tears.

After sending Long Ren back, Long Chen sighed. He wanted to call others and give them skills as well, but now he wasn't in the mood. He decided to provide them with the skills tomorrow.

"It looks like this wasn't random. That mark, that woman, and the Ghost Temple. They are all related... but how and why is the main question. As long as it's something they need from father, then the chances are that he would be alive, and if it were all about taking revenge or anything like that, then they would have already killed him. It would be a failed endeavor in that case."

"I guess I underestimated them a lot. If they could kill the Heaven Realm Cultivators, then their strength is much more than I expected. I can't use force to deal with them, so deception seems to be the only way," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the moon. The shine of the moon fell on his face, highlighting his handsome features even more.

He shook his head before he walked back into his tent.

The girls were sitting on the bed, talking about the Dual Cultivation Skills when Long Chen entered. Initially, he was in the mood to make love to them, but at the moment, his mood was down. Still, he didn't give up on dual cultivating with the girls as each day wasted was like an opportunity lost to make them stronger.

He had thought about using Dual Cultivation with Xue and Mei as well in the future and ultimately to have all 4 of them together so that they could all grow.

Throughout the night, Mingyu and Zhiqing's moans echoed in the tent, giving evidence of how eventful their night was.

The voices only stopped a few hours before the dawn. They slept for a few hours for the rest of the night.

It was early morning as they woke up and left the tent. Ji Shan already seemed to be prepared.

"Good Morning," Ji Shan greeted Long Chen with a cheeky smile on his face.

"Good Morning," Long Chen replied.

"I must say you guys are really loud. I should set up my tent farther next time," Ji Shan whispered in Long Chen's ears with a wry smile on his face when the girls were away from them. "It was so disturbing."

"Find a girl for yourself. You won't be disturbed by what other people do," Long Chen said as he laughed.

"Sigh, What can I do. I want to find a suitable girl, but I haven't met someone that could catch my eye. Maybe the girl I'm destined to be with is not on this continent. Hopefully, I'll find someone where we are going," Ji Shan replied.

"The Ghost Temple might have a few female disciples. You can probably find one and hope that you aren't eaten instead," Long Chen chuckled as he patted the shoulders of Ji Shan.

"Hey, don't joke about that. I don't want to die, but maybe there will be a kind girl there. There are bad people in good organizations, so there might be good people in bad organizations as well," Ji Shan said with a wry smile on his face.

"All I can say is, best of luck. You might need it," Long Chen said to him. "Anyway, since we're ready, let's leave."

Long Chen brought Sun Destroying Condor out of his storage ring.

He got on the Sun Destroying Condor with the others while Ji Shan went on his beast before they began their journey again.

The Sun Destroying Condor began flying towards the far south where the ports were constructed. They wanted to leave this continent and that was the only way to achieve that.

"This Dual Cultivation is definitely incredible. I can't believe that I achieved a breakthrough just by having that. Incredible," Zhiqing said to Long Chen.

Chapter 473 - 473: Envoy

Zhuqing was quite surprised by the effects of the Dual Cultivation Technique, especially the effects she had felt. When she had the intense lovemaking session with Long Chen last night, she felt an increased amount of the Natural Qi being absorbed by her body from the surroundings. Long Chen also felt the same, but the increase in his Cultivation was small as the same amount of natural Qi worked differently for both of them.

Long Chen had a higher Cultivation, so he needed much more Qi to break through to the seventh stage of the Earth Realm while she needed less Qi to breakthrough.

"That's because your Cultivation is still low at the moment. You will feel like the effects are massive, and they really are for you, but with time, it'll even out," Long Chen replied to her. "You will see what I mean in the future."

He was sitting on the Sun Destroying Condor, looking down at the places that he had previously passed through. The roads that seemed so long when he had first passed through here seemed so short now that he had a flying beast.

His whole perspective on the world was different compared to what it had ever been before when he departed on the journey to increase his Cultivation. He had seen much more of the world and experienced first hand how the world really was.

He still remembered when he first entered the surrounding city, how he had slaughtered the guards because of his Heart Demon. He had felt so bad when he watched the families of those guards cry. He was angry at himself for losing his temper, but now his mentality was much more stern. He also became more battle oriented.

He felt like he didn't need to feel bad about killing people when they were standing in his way, to obstruct his path. The conflict, the deaths, the killing were all a part of a Cultivator's journey. As long as one was worried about killing, it was difficult to ascend.

He realized that as long as one had the power, killing was justifiable. This was the world he was living in. If he were weak, he would've been killed tens of times already and no one would even feel bad about his death. His killers would go about their day, forgetting that he ever existed. To him, excessive empathy only meant weakness in this world.

If he had killed the 3rd Prince when he first offended him, his family would not have come in harm's way. If he had hidden his face when killing people, he would also be fine. But more importantly, if he had the strength of the Heavenly Slaughter Sect's Sect Master, no one would have even thought of targeting his family.

If the righteous could target one's family without having the second thought, then why would he care about the people? His family, friends, and beasts were the only things that were important to him, and other items were disposable. The treasures didn't matter to him nor did the weapons. He still had a thirst for strength, though. His mentality had changed massively, especially after using the Dark Sacrifice.

He wondered if Tian Shen also had the same mentality. Xun often said that he was the king of slaughter. He comprehended the law of sacrifice and took millions of lives. Long Chen also saw in his dreams how his predecessor had killed his bullies and the girl he used to love after being betrayed. Long Chen was sure that Tian Shen didn't feel bad about it, and that's why he was able to achieve such great heights.

Even though he wasn't sure how long ago he lived, or how he died, or if he was still living, what he was sure of was that he lived a king's life. No one would have dared to harm his family before dealing with him. This was what Long Chen wanted to achieve.

He wanted to be a shield that prevented any harm to his family, and he wanted to be a king that people were scared to offend. He wanted to reach such great heights that he wouldn't need to worry about anything ever again. A place where his enemies would just be like ants to him. He knew that the journey was going to be arduous, but he was even more motivated now.

"It's my kingdom. We are here," Zhiqing pointed ahead as she saw her Kingdom from some distance.

She had a longing expression on her face.

"Do you want to drop by and say bye to your family? I know how important family can be. It doesn't seem like the Supreme Sects had reached here by now. They still might be thinking that I'm hiding in their area, not knowing that I killed their Elders that came to destroy my family. We can take an hour out of our schedule to let you meet your family," Long Chen asked Zhiqing. He was still somewhat soft for the people he cared about.

"I..." Zhiqing seemed to be stumped for words. It was as if she didn't want to say what she actually wanted to say. She knew how dangerous this situation was for them, and she didn't want to tell Long Chen that she actually wanted to meet her brother one last time.

"Alright. You don't need to say anything. I understand," Long Chen smiled as he patted her head.

"Ji Shan, We'll be landing soon," Long Chen reminded Ji Shan.

"Alright," Ji Shan answered instantly.

They soon reached the Royal capital of Zhiqing's Kingdom, which was a second-rank kingdom.

Her brother was the King and an Earth Realm Cultivator but way weaker than Long Chen when it came to strength.

It wasn't strange as Long Chen was someone who defied the general strength hierarchy of cultivators.

Despite being a Mid Earth Realm Cultivator, he was able to fight sky realm Cultivators; he had the Flute of War; he had the Dark Sacrifice, which he wished not to use again. He was literally like a War God who had many war tools under his belt that the enemies couldn't predict. His knowledge of two Supreme Laws and a High-Grade Law only made him trickier to fight.

No one could even keep him behind as long as he hadn't used his Spatial Travel once during the day, which he didn't need to use anymore as he wasn't in a hurry to get anywhere. His family was already with him now.

If the worst situation arrives, he could just keep Mingyu, Zhiqing, and Ji Shan inside his Fake world before using the Spatial Travel to escape, which gave him more confidence now. It is the only reason why he found the Fake World Ring to be more useful than the Demon Sheath.

"I think we should drop by. We are going too far away, and we can't be sure when we will come back. I understand how tough missing family can be. At Least, say your goodbyes so that you don't regret," Mingyu also said to Zhiqing when she saw that Zhiqing was still somewhat hesitating.

"Alright." Mingyu nodded her head.

After some time, they reached the Royal Capital. Long Chen lowered the beast some distance away from the Royal Palace.

They walked through the crowded city marketplace, but Long Chen soon realized that he had underestimated the enemy.

The Marketplace was covered in wanted posters of him, which talked about how he killed essential people, and the one who gave his information would be heavily rewarded.

Some people were still posting the posters, but Long Chen realized that they weren't the Elders or the disciples. They would never do this work themselves. The chances were that one of the Envoys from the sect was in this kingdom.

Chapter 474 - 474: Ling's Condition

Long Chen had an assumption about it as well. From his basic understanding of the sects, he was sure that the sects didn't know where he was in this Vast continent. They definitely couldn't send an Elder to every corner of the world.

They probably assigned the missions to their disciples to go to various kingdoms and Empires. Even though they were just disciples, their position was much higher in the eyes of the Rulers, who would definitely provide help to them to post the posters.

Long Chen understood that there was a good chance that an envoy was in the royal palace, which was most probably a disciple or a group of disciples.

"Looks like they are already here," Ji Shan commented as he looked at the posters.

"Yeah, they are most probably in the Royal Palace," Long Chen replied.

"Let's just leave then. I don't want to meet my brother," Zhiqing held Long Chen's hand to prevent him from moving forward.

"Yeah, let's leave. I would probably kill that envoy who will make things worse for your brother," Long Chen shook his head as he turned back, but he felt as if he saw a familiar person. He instantly looked back, but that person was not there.

"What happened?" Mingyu asked him.

"Nothing. I just felt like I saw someone," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

For a brief second, he felt like he saw the same person he had collided with near the Glorious Blossom Sect.

He left with Mingyu and the others.

They again started flying on their beasts and left the city.

Back inside the Royal Palace, Mingyu's brother and a young 18-19-year-old girl were sitting. The strange thing was that the girl was sitting on the throne while the King was sitting on a lower seat.

"How long will it be before the posters are placed everywhere?" the girl asked the King.

"It will be done soon, Envoy," the King replied.

Yu Tianhao had finally reached the Yu Clan with his daughter and the remnants of the Long Clan.

The Long Clan members had begged Yu Tianhao to take them in as they had no place to go. Yu Tianhao allowed them to become the branch clan member by changing their last names from Long to Yu. All of them instantly agreed.

Yu Tianhao sent them to the head servant of the Clan, who was assigned to deal with them.

Yu Tianhao's father was the clan master of the Yu Clan, but Yu Tianhao had plenty of authority, and he was allowed to make decisions like this in the absence of the clan master.

Yu Tianhao was sitting in the hall, with his daughter. He didn't tell anyone else in the clan about what happened.

"Ling, Such a pity that they were all killed," Yu Tianhao sighed as he shook his head.

He had already considered Long Ren and the others dead. In his eyes, there was no way for them to stay alive after that.

"You can go rest in your room," He told his daughter.

Yu Ling silently nodded as she left the place and walked back to her room.

As soon as she entered her room, she fell down on his bed and covered her face with her pillow.

Her emotions were in a turmoil. She couldn't help but remember the time she spent on the flying beast with Long Chen when they went to explore the dungeon. She also remembered how kind he was. She remembered telling him about how she broke the engagement, but he didn't look angry in the least.

At that time, she didn't consider that as strange, but now that she knew that he was the person she was engaged to, she clearly felt terrible. She thought that he was a playboy who played with girls' feelings, but she found out how wrong she was. She comforted herself, saying that his fiance was weak, but

Long Chen's appearance shattered that Illusion as well. Now she had no excuse for her stupidity.

Now that she thought about it, he was like her idol type. The kind of guy she wanted to be her husband. He was strong, he was handsome, and he was kind, but she didn't take a moment to think about that previously.

In her arrogance, she didn't even think about meeting him before breaking the engagement.

What hurt the most wasn't that, though. There was something else entirely in her mind.

"I didn't know that you were Long Tian, but you clearly knew that I was Ling when we talked. Why wasn't there anger on your face?! Why wasn't there sadness on your face?! Why didn't you clarify things?! Why did you look relieved as if you didn't care about the engagement?! Was I that bad?!" she muttered. Her voice was muffled up by the pillow.

For a long time, she had lived in the illusion of perfection. In a realm of superiority, but finding out that a guy was glad after knowing that she wasn't going to marry him came as the biggest wound on her ego. She was more hurt by that than she was by losing the chance to marry a genius.

It was something that entirely shattered her self confidence. She couldn't overcome this.

What she didn't know was that this was about to become the devil of her heart that would prevent her from breaking through on her Cultivation forever. This was the moment where her Cultivation journey was halted. A genius that was selected by the Thunder Giant Sect Supreme Elder was about to become an average person that couldn't break through their bottleneck.

It was unknown if it was possible for her to break through this bottleneck in her lifetime.

Long Chen and his team left the kingdom and continued on their journey.

Zhiqing looked perfectly calm, not showing that she was sad at not being able to meet her brother.

They flew for the rest of the day before landing on the night. Even though the city was nearby, they decided to camp in the forest.

They cooked some beast that they hunted while they sat around the bonfire.

Everyone was happy while they talked about how their life had changed so much in a short time.

They also described how their life was before all that, how they grew up, and how they found Long Chen.

Zhiqing talked about meeting him for the first time and how he had bullied her niece when he first came to her city. She also spoke about what her initial motivation was when she approached Long Chen and how it changed.

Ji Shan talked about how he grew up in the palace, which was relatively peaceful until his third brother was killed by the assassins. Things started getting serious after that. He also talked about his first meeting with Long Chen and how Long Chen saved him. Their journey after that was already known by everyone.

Mingyu was the only one that didn't talk about many things. She only spoke about how she grew up in the palace in a loving environment. She also spoke about her brother being killed, but she didn't talk about how she came to this continent or about the mysterious man that gave her the Destiny Crystal. Those things were already known by Long Chen, but she didn't wish to tell anyone else about this.

Long Chen had already told about his life to Zhiqing and Mingyu about this, but he gave a brief summary to Ji Shan about the Assassination Attempt on him. His mental condition after that and some of his journey after recovering.

All of them got closer to each other after finding out about the past of each other. Now they knew each other better and what the other person went through. Their friendship got better than it had already been.

Chapter 475 - 475: Xia's Question

After talking for quite some time, they finished eating and walked back to their tents.

Long Chen again stayed outside while he sent other girls inside.

Long Chen brought his mother out of his storage ring this time.

After she came out, he gave her a Cultivation skill that suited females. It was also a Cultivation Skill that he had found from the storage ring of one of the Elders that he had killed. He decided that it was the most suitable one for his mother.

The skill was called the Fleeting Cloud Cultivation. It was a skill of the Mighty Sword Sect, which he had received from the storage ring of Elder Sui Ru.

The Skill was made for females, and he was quite sure that Elder Sui Ru used the Skill as well.

After giving her the skill book and talking to her for some time about the matters related to Long Xue Ying, who had woken up and had already told his mother that Long Chen forcefully brought her here.

Long Chen had explained to his mother about what had actually happened and how he did this to save her life as she was stubborn.

Sima Ziyi understood his intent and even agreed with what he did. She praised him for doing the right thing.

After some more casual talking, he sent her back.

Next, he brought Xue and Mei out of his fake world.

"Young Ma..."

They were about to greet him as young master, but they stopped themselves as they saw him glaring at her. They realized that they had misspoken. They promised him that they wouldn't call him a Young Master.

"H-husband," they let out with a red face.

"That's better," Long Chen smiled.

"I have a few things for you. First, it's this."

Long Chen gave a book to Xue while he gave another one to Mei.

Both of them were Cultivation Skills, which he thought suited them more. He had received 5 Cultivation Skills that could be used by females, and he found 3 of them to suit the three women he had with him.

He also had another Cultivation Manual, which he thought would suit Long Xue Ying more because of her nature, but he decided to wait for some time before giving her this skill.

He didn't want to bring her out at this moment to face her wrath.

"These are the Cultivation Skills that are hundreds of times better than the Long Clan Cultivation Manual. You can increase your Cultivation and get a much more solid foundation with these skills. I want you to cultivate with these," Long Chen told them.

"We understand," They replied as they glanced at the books in their hand.

"You can call me if there is anything you don't understand. I'll bring you out and explain to you about the tough parts if you face any difficulty. On a second note, we will often be meeting from now on, so you can also talk to me about those then," Long Chen told them. Xue and Mei nodded their heads.

Long Chen brought another booklet out of his storage ring.

"This is also something important. Unfortunately, I only have one copy of it, so you would have to share it. This is a Dual Cultivation Skill, which can be used to Dual Cultivate to increase Cultivation much faster. It would work more effectively with you as you have lower Cultivation. You are still in the Spirit Establishment Realm so you would grow by leaps and bounds without much effort," Long Chen said as he gave the book to Xue first.

"After you learn it, we can begin Dual Cultivation and put that to practice. This is a comparatively easier skill and doesn't require much effort to learn. You should be able to learn it by tomorrow night. Anyway, we can see what happens," Long Chen explained.

He explained some more things related to the Dual Cultivation, which made their faces turn red. He also talked about Cultivation and general and the things they needed to keep their focus on.

After some time, he finished with everything he wanted to tell them.

"You understand, right?" He asked them at the end.

"We understand," Xue and Mei said as they nodded their heads.

"Good," Long Chen smilingly replied. "Now, before I send you back, there is one more thing that I need to do."

Long Chen held the hand of Xue and pulled her closer to him. He took her in his embrace as he kissed her sweet lips. He enjoyed the taste of Xue's lips. One of his hands roamed around her back and found their way to her butt while his other hand caressed the perky breasts of Xue.

After a long kiss, their lips separated.

"Learn the skill fast. Every day is of the essence," Long Chen whispered in her ears.

Hee separated from her before catching Mei's hand.

"Come here, demoness," Long Chen joked as he pulled Mei closer and kissed her red lips.

After enjoying the sensation of kissing Mei for quite some time, he separated from her as well.

"After your sister learns the skill, take the book from her and learn it. We will meet again soon," Long Chen whispered to her ears before he gently bit the tip of her ear. Even that itself was enough to send shivers down her spine.

He freed her as he smiled.

He held both of their hands and sent them back to the Fake World.

"Xia, Watch the surroundings for us. You know what to do if you see anyone. Just follow the instructions," Long Chen told Xia before he turned back to leave, but Xia stopped him.

"Master, can Xia ask you something?" Xia asked him.

Long Chen stopped and turned back.

"Yeah, what is it?" he asked her.

"Why did you touch your lips to their lips?" Xia asked.

"Ahh... You seem to be pretty knowledgeable in most of the things. Do you really not know about that?" Long Chen asked with a wry smile on his face.

"Xia doesn't understand," Xia shook her head.

"That's called a kiss. A person kisses another person to show their affection. It's like showing that you really like someone," Long Chen said.

"Master doesn't like Xia?" Xia asked him.

"Ah, of course, I like you. You are the best," Long Chen replied instantly. His life had become a lot easier because of Xia's presence.

"Why didn't master kiss, Xia?" Xia inquired in confusion.

Long Chen was stumped for words. He found this whole thing to be awkward.

"It's not that. A kiss is something that is done when the time is right. It is done when the right time comes. You can't kiss someone unless certain conditions are met, even if you like them. You saw that I didn't kiss Mingyu and Zhiqing today even though I kissed them before. It's complicated. I will explain to you better some other day," Long Chen told her before he hurriedly left and entered his tent.

Long Chen spent another night filled with pleasure as he Dual Cultivated with Zhiqing and Mingyu. By this time, Mingyu and Zhiqing were pretty comfortable at being in bed with Long Chen together. They didn't find things awkward like they used to feel at first, which made things a lot easier for Long Chen.

He was able to make love to both of them at once.

Their Dual Cultivation only progressed more and more because of their closeness and their feelings for each other.

Morning arrived as the sun started rising in the sky.

Long Chen and the others left the place after putting everything back into the storage ring.

They again continued on their journey.

Their travel continued. They traveled during the day and rested during the night.

After some time, Xue and Mei also learned Dual Cultivation.

.

Chapter 476 - 476: The Port City

It was awkward for Long Chen to tell Mingyu and Zhiqing that he was adding Xue and Mei to their Dual Cultivation Sessions as well, but it worked out. They were pretty understanding as they had already accepted that Long Chen had two more women, which they couldn't do anything about.

Thus, Long Chen's nights had an additional of 2 more girls. Since then, every night, he Dual Cultivated with four girls in the same tent where all of the girls could see the embarrassed expressions of the girl that was being pleased by Long Chen at the moment

After traveling for weeks, they reached their one step closer to their destination.

The destination of Long Chen was the Light Heaven Continent, whereas he was currently in the Donxia Continent.

The Donxia Continent had 19 sects that ruled this place. The Heavenly Slaughter Sect and the True Dao Sect were the real peak powers of this continent, but there were other influential Sects as well in the Donxia Continent even though they were weaker than these two Sects.

Amongst these 19 Supreme Sects, only 5 controlled a part of the sea adjacent to the continent where they had formed ports.

These ports were controlled entirely by them, and they decided who got to go and who didn't.

Only the ones that we're able to pay hefty fees were allowed to go on their ships to the Light Heaven Continent, but it was not that simple.

The journey was full of hardships and often resulted in disasters as there were pirates in the sea, and there were giant beasts that were so powerful that they could destroy the ships.

Even though the sects took all measures to protect their ships against them, there were still instances where the ships were destroyed or went missing before reaching the Light Heaven Continent.

The Vessels of the True Dao Sect and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect were considered to be the safest ships amongst the ships of the five sects that provided the Inter Continent travel facilities.

It was the reason why Long Chen had gone to the Port controlled by the True Dao Sect.

That place was nearest to him while the Port controlled by the Heavenly Slaughter Sect was farther.

Long Chen flew towards the Port City of the True Dao Sect, which was unironically called the Port City.

As soon as he got to near the place, he used his Mask of Mischief to change his face to a different one as he saw some guards coming towards them on their flying beast.

The guards looked at all of them before looking at the various portraits in their hands. They shook their heads as they realized that their faces didn't match to any of the people that were either wanted by the sect or banned by the Port City.

"Is this your first time here?" The Guards asked Long Chen.

"Yes. We wish to travel to another continent, and it's our first time. Did we make a mistake, sir?" Long Chen asked them.

"We stopped you from making a mistake, so you haven't done it yet. We have a rule here. You can't fly in the city. You need to get down to the ground and enter using the main entrance," The guard informed Long Chen and his team.

"Oh, We didn't know that. We will go down," Long Chen said to the guards before he lowered his beast in order to land on the ground. Ji Shan also did the same.

After they got down to the ground, they saw the guards turn their flying beasts back as they flew away.

"That mask is amazing. It didn't look like you were in disguise at all. It felt as if you were really a different person," Ji Shan praised the mask of Long Chen that had stopped the disguise and had returned to the form of the usual mask.

"It is good. The only downside I can think of is that it can't change my body shape. I can't disguise as the person that has a different body shape than mine. I can only change my face to look like their face. It's time limitations are also not great," Long Chen replied as he sighed.

"It's still a great treasure. I wonder who made it. It's the first time I'm seeing something that could do this," Ji Shan let out as he glanced at the mask.

"I have no idea about that. I do have an idea on how to improve it, though. From what I can see, it works on formations. If I can master the high-level formations, I can probably modify it to remove its limitations as well," Long Chen muttered.

Previously he couldn't see it, but after he had received the knowledge of a formation Master as a reward, he was able to see the formations that were inside this mask. He realized that the mask worked the way it did because of the formations. The one that made this mask special was probably a formation Master.

They talked more about the mask as they walked towards the Port City on foot.

They could see the long line to get entry into the port city. There were carriages in line, and there were people that were on foot. They probably came here on their flying beasts as well.

As they were about to get near the entrance, they heard a loud roar from behind.

"Don't block the road!" Someone let out.

Long Chen and the others turned back only to see a carriage racing towards them.

Ji Shan and the others stepped aside as they didn't want to get into any trouble in this territory, but Long Chen was still there. He was pretty annoyed.

It was not the first time either. He always hated it when people acted as if the road belonged to their father, and everyone else walking on the road was trash.

"Long Chen, come here. We don't need to attract the attention," Ji Shan said to Long Chen.

Long Chen sighed as he walked to the side. As far away from the road as he could with the others.

"Hmph," the driver snorted as he passed by.

"Why is that driver so smug. I want to break his face," Ji Shan muttered as he shook his head.

Long Chen's mind was on someone else, though. He saw a boy sitting inside the carriage, looking out the window.

The boy looked to be just as old as Long Chen. He had light blue eyes and long black hair. He seemed to be bored.

"What the heck? How did they get entry while the others are still waiting?" Ji Shan cursed out loud as he saw a different entrance being opened for that specific carriage to enter.

"Ignore that. It must be an important person. Probably the carriage of the True Dao Sect or the ones that handle the matters in the Port City. Of Course, you will get more privilege in your kingdom, but the others won't," Long Chen shook his head as he again started walking towards the Port City.

After some time, he was standing on the line, but he hadn't activated his Mask of Mischief as he didn't want to waste his limited time on the mask.

Instead, he had covered the mask of mischief with another mask. If someone asked him to take off the Mask, he could just activate the mask of mischief and take off the other mask without arousing any suspicion.

The line was pretty big. There were like 50 carriages in the line and 40 people that were on foot. The line was moving at the snail's pace.

"Looks like we are going to be here for hours," Zhiqing let out as she saw how slow people were moving.

Chapter 477 - 477: Xu Shen

"It's still good that the line is not big. It could've been worse," Mingyu replied to Zhiqing.

They waited in line, which seemed to be crawling at a snail's pace, but after some hours, they did reach the entrance where guards were checking people.

Long Chen was in the lead, talking to the guards.

Just as he had expected, the guard asked him to remove his mask so that he could see his face and see if he was anyone that was wanted or not.

Long Chen activated his Mask of Mischief as planned before he took off his other mask.

The face that appeared before everyone was vastly different from his actual face.

The guards checked the face against the various portraits they were assigned but didn't find any matches.

"What purpose are you here for?" the Guard asked him.

"My friends and I are here because we wish to leave this continent and go to the Light Heaven Continent. We want to go to the land of opportunities," Long Chen replied with an innocent smile on his face.

"Alright. The entrance fee is 20 Black Gold Coins for a person," the guard replied.

Long Chen nodded his head as he gave the guard 80 Black Gold Coins for him and the others.

He didn't lack the money at all since he had collected a lot of resources, and he has a whole treasury of a Second Rank Kingdom in his storage ring.

The guards gave him four passes, which marked the date of their entry.

"You can enter, but you must never lose these passes. These passes act like a permit for you to stay in the Port City. The permits are only valid for seven days. If you are caught overstaying after those seven days, you will be arrested and most probably killed. You must also remember that if you are caught committing a crime in the city, you will face the same punishment," the guard explained to Long Chen.

"We understand," Long Chen nodded his head.

He gave the other three passes to Mingyu and the others. They all entered the Port City together.

As they entered, they saw a city that was not as crowded as they had expected. The buildings were nice; the road was wide. The surroundings were cleaner.

"This somehow looks comparable to our Royal City. I didn't expect that," Ji Shan commented as he grew amazed with what he saw.

"This is a city that is under the True Dao Sect. It's a righteous sect, so it's not unexpected for them to show off a little. They also earn quite a lot from here," Zhiqing muttered as she followed Long Chen.

"Guide for hire— only one gold coin."

"Guide for hire— only one gold coin."

After some time, they noticed a few people standing on the side, chanting to the ones that had just entered the city.

Long Chen has worn the other mask again and canceled the effect of his Mask of Mischief.

"Let's get a guide. We did read about the port, but the books can not give the ground reality like how we didn't know about the flying restriction. It would be good if we know more about it so that we could blend in better," Mingyu told Long Chen.

Long Chen was also thinking about the same thing, and he was about to go there to ask for a guide as well.

He looked at all the guides and chose a middle-aged man that had purple hair and black eyes.

The man looked to be more mature than others at the same time; he seemed weaker than the others. His clothes were also not in good condition, like the clothes of the others.

Long Chen walked up to that man.

"Will you be our guide? I'll pay you a gold coin," he asked the man.

"Ah, Of Course. You won't regret taking my services," The Man hurriedly nodded his head as he walked closer to Long Chen.

"May I ask what purpose you are here for? So that I could better assist you?" The man asked Long Chen.

"Why does everyone ask the same question? Do people come here for anything other than to leave this continent?" Ji Shan asked the guide.

"Of course. There are people that come here for many things. Although most of the people come here to leave this continent, there are also a few people that come to tour this city. Some come here to sell items to the guests. Some come here to purchase items that are the specialty of the Port City. The Port City has various attractions that can attract many people," the Guide replied with a friendly smile on his face.

"We came here to get on a ship to leave this continent. Here is your gold coin," Long Chen said as he threw a gold coin towards the man.

The man caught it and kept it in his pocket.

"Oh, nice. Let me show you the places related to that while I tell you the rules and the processes that you might need to go through. Please follow me," the man said as he turned back and started walking towards the core of the city.

"Aren't you going to tell me your name?" Long Chen asked him as he continued following after the man.

"Oh, right. I completely forgot about that. I'm Xiang Limu. I am a guide here," The man replied.

"Nice to meet you, Xiang Limu. I'm Xu Shen. This is my brother, Xu Shan. They are Wu Ling and Wu Yue," Long Chen introduced himself and the girls with a fake name that they had already decided on using.

Xiang Limu brought them around the city before he stopped before a tall building which had a board hung above the entrance, which read 'Grand Mu Hotel'.

"This is the Grand Mu Hotel. This is the main hotel in the Port City which is run by the Mu Clan. You should get some rooms here before you do anything. The next ship won't be for the next five days. You can't stay on the streets, and if you delay too much, they might not even have the rooms for you," Xiang Limu explained to Long Chen.

"Alright. Let me get the rooms for a week then. Come with us," Long Chen told Xiang Limu. He decided to listen to the advice.

He activated his Mask of Mischief and took the fake mask off before he entered the Grand Mu Hotel.

He talked to the receptionist and booked two rooms for themselves. It cost him 1 Black Gold Coin for seven days per person. He paid two black gold coins to book the two rooms. He was assigned the rooms on the 4th floor and given the keys.

He walked out of the hotel with the others, instead of going to the room, after getting the keys of the rooms

Since he had already received the keys and gotten the rooms, he didn't need to worry about a place to stay, and more importantly, he wanted to see the city first.

They left the Grand Mu hotel, following behind Xiang Limu.

"Can you tell me more about this, Mu Clan?" Long Chen asked Xiang Limu.

"The Mu Clan is like the overlord of this place. Their clan handles the matters of the Port City as they are assigned to this place by the True Dao Sect," Xiang Limu explained to Long Chen.

"Since they were given this important responsibility, they must have a lot of reach in the True Dao Sect, right?" Long Chen asked Xiang Limu.

"Of Course. From what I heard, a lot of the Mu Clan members are in a really high position in the True Dao Sect," Xiang Limu answered Long Chen.

Chapter 478 - 478: Betting

"Do you know how High?" Long Chen asked in curiosity.

"I personally don't know, but I have heard that the Grand Elder of the True Dao Sect is from the Mu Clan. I can't say if the rumor is true or not, but it does sound true," Xiang Limu replied to Long Chen.

"That sounds quite high. If I'm not wrong, that's like the highest position one can get after the Sect Master and the Supreme Elder. No wonder they were assigned to handle this place," Long Chen nodded his head.

"Exactly. They are like gods here. Offending them is the worst crime one can commit," Xiang Limu told Long Chen.

"Anyway, we are about to reach the marketplace of the Port City. You can buy and sell things there. You would need a permit from the city authorities to sell it though. You can find quite a lot of rare things in the marketplace," Xiang Limu explained to them.

"We might shop for some things, but at the moment, I'm more concerned about buying tickets for our journey. We can go to the marketplace later," Long Chen reminded Xiang Limu that he didn't have the time to waste.

"You can't buy tickets for the ship. The tickets are only going for sale two days before the departure date. You are like three days early, but I will show you the one where you can get the tickets when they become available. It just so happens that we need to go through the marketplace to get there. Since there was no hurry to go to the place, I thought that it would be better to show you around the marketplace first," Xiang Limu responded.

"Alright. I understand. Since the tickets won't be sold today, we can take our time to see the city," Long Chen agreed.

After walking for some time, they reached the marketplace of the Port City.

Long Chen was standing at the center of a wide road. There were shops as far as his eyes could see on both sides of the streets. There were also people that were sitting on the ground, selling things on the corners of the roads or the ones that had a stall.

"The Shops are mostly controlled by the Mu Clan. As for the ones that don't have a shop, most of them are the ones that came here to sell things but couldn't afford the shops. You can find some good and rare things with them,

but most of the important things are sold in the shops as the shop owner tends to buy the things from those guys," Xiang Limu explained to Long Chen about the arrangement of this marketplace.

"This seems quite normal, I guess. It's not rare for the Mu Clan to think about profiting themselves through this business practice. Also, People would have a certain kind of trust in their name, and they would much prefer to buy things from them instead of buying things from unknown sellers," Ji Shan gave his opinion.

"Exactly. The individual sellers often don't sell that many things. That's why most of them prefer selling things to the shop owners instead of wasting their time sitting through a day and still getting nothing," Xiang Limu replied.

"You guys can check things out for as long as you like. After you are done here, we can continue our tour," he added.

Long Chen and the others walked through the marketplace, looking at various things that the individual sellers were selling, but they didn't go inside the shops.

Instead, they just asked Xiang Limu about the things that the shops sold.

They walked through the marketplace but didn't find anything that they really felt like they needed. There were some excellent skill books and some good treasures. There are also various artifacts that they saw along the way, but none of them were interesting for Long Chen.

After some time, Long Chen noticed that Mingyu was interested in something. She was looking at a sword that seemed like it was carved from snow.

"You want it?" Long Chen asked her as he held her hand.

"The sword seems special. I think I have an affinity with this sword," Mingyu nodded her head.

"Alright. Let's get it for you then," Long Chen said to the seller, who had the sword in a stall. He was an individual seller that didn't own a shop. He also tried selling the sword in the shops around the marketplace, but no one found it interesting enough to buy. He had no choice but to stay here, waiting for someone to buy it.

The Sword was sold for 10 Black Gold Coins, which was something that a person could spend to stay in the Grand Mu Hotel for ten weeks.

Long Chen gifted the sword to Mingyu with his own hands.

Mingyu thanked Long Chen as she kept the sword in her storage ring.

They again continued their exploration, and this time, it was Zhiqing who found something interesting for herself.

It was a long red ribbon, which was actually an artifact that could be used to attack as well as to defend.

It was an Earth Grade Artifact that was the same grade as the Ice Sword of Mingyu.

It looked like a toy compared to the sword, though.

"Can you use a ribbon to fight? The normal weapons might be more suitable for the ones that do not have experience with these unorthodox weapons," Long Chen suggested Zhiqing.

"I have trained with many Weapons before. A ribbon is one of them. I think I can fight with that, and it seems useful in defense as well," Zhiqing told Long Chen.

"Alright."

Long Chen bought the ribbon for Mingyu and gifted her. He also got two beautiful matching swords for Xue and Mei, both of which were Earth Grade Weapons. He didn't buy a weapon for his mother and his grandfather, as he already had better weapons for them.

He had decided to give his mother the Sword of The Mighty Sword Sect Elder, whom he had killed. The Elder was a female as well. He also selected one sword for his grandfather from the loot that he had received outside the Divine Heaven Sect by killing the Elders.

He had also given one of those weapons to Ji Shan and told him not to use it before they left the continent.

They were just about to reach the end of the marketplace when Long Chen saw a shop that seemed to be crowded. Many people were standing inside.

"What is happening there?" Long Chen asked Xiang Limu.

"That place is always crowded. It's the most famous shop in this marketplace. It's like a Crystal betting place. If people win, they can get many rewards from

the shop from the top Earth Gade Weapons to the tickets of the ship in advance," Xiang Limu told Long Chen.

"Tickets for the ship in advance?" Long Chen asked with a confused look on his face.

"Yeah, they give out ten tickets every day in the shop to the winners before the sale could officially begin two days before the departure of the ship. As the ship tickets are somewhat expensive, people come here to try their luck to get them for cheap," Xiang Limu explained.

"Can you explain to me how it works?" Long Chen asked him. "I might try this out as well if it's something possible for me. It's much better than waiting."

"The process is quite simple. They would place ten Crystals before you. One of those Crystal will be Red Spica Crystal, while others will be Red Din Crystal. Both of them look similar from outside, but the real difference starts when one breaks the Crystal as the inside of the Red Spica Crystal is actually green, whereas the inside of the Red Din Crystal is red."

Chapter 479 - 479: Lucky

"If you successfully selected the Red Spica Crystal, then you would win, and the money that you bet will be multiplied by ten. If you fail, you will lose your money," Xiang Limu said.

"I don't want to see my money multiplied. I want to see how I can get the tickets," Long Chen responded.

"As long as you get a five winning streak, you can get the ticket as a reward," Xiang Limu explained to him.

"So I need to get the Red Spica Crystal 5 times to get a ticket? That's 20 times to get 4," Long Chen reacted as he thought about it.

"Yeah, As long as you get 5 in a row, you will win a ticket. Each try cost a black gold coin, though," Xiang Limu explained.

"So I need to pay 25 black gold coins. A ticket for the ship is around Three Hundred Thousand Black Gold Coins from what you told me. That does make sense why this place would be so popular. The chances of someone winning are so low," Long Chen muttered as he glanced towards the shop.

"Do ten people really win every day? Sounds hard to believe," Ji Shan asked Xiang Limu.

"No, rarely people succeed. Although the shop has a quota of distributing ten tickets in a day, they don't reach that threshold as people don't win that often. The best I remembered was a day when three people won a ticket," Xiang Limu answered Ji Shan.

"Do you want to try?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen as he saw him looking towards the shop.

"Yeah, I want to win," Long Chen replied as he nodded his head.

Ji Shan walked closer to him.

"I won't say if we can win or not, but it wouldn't be good to attract attention to us," Ji Shan whispered in his ears.

"Don't worry, I've thought about everything. Nothing will happen," Long Chen comforted Ji Shan.

Even though Ji Shan couldn't see Long Chen's expression because of Long Chen's mask, he sounded confident.

"Alright. If you think that it's time, then it might be," Ji Shan agreed.

"It's so crowded, though. Will I even get the opportunity?" Long Chen asked Xiang Limu.

"You will. Most of those people are here to watch. The number of staff inside isn't low. You can ask the staff, and they will arrange for you," Xiang Limu replied.

"Alright," Long Chen walked towards the store and entered it.

The people that handled the store were wearing clean white clothes with the symbol of the shop, which made it easy to identify them.

Long Chen found a lady in the white clothes standing free on the side. He was about to go to the lady, but he was stopped by Xiang Limu.

"You need to get the permission token first. You see that guy sitting behind the counter there? He is the person that gives the tokens. You need to pay 10 Black Gold Coin to get one token, which you can give the store helpers. One token means one try. You can buy five tokens if you want to try five times," Xiang Limu explained to Long Chen.

"Alright."

Long Chen walked to the man that was standing behind the counter.

"I need to buy the tokens," he told the man.

"10 Black Gold Coin for one token. How many do you want?" the Man asked Long Chen.

"Give me 50," Long Chen replied as he placed 500 Black Gold Coins on the table.

"Hehehe, Another rich guy is trying his luck. Here are your 50 Tokens," The Man smiled as he took the 500 Black Gold Coins and gave Long Chen 50 Tokens in return.

Long Chen took those 50 Tokens and placed them in his pocket while he walked towards the girl.

"Huh, looks like he is too confident in himself. Too bad he doesn't know how difficult it is. Whatever at least the shop earned some money," the man behind the counter muttered

Long Chen walked to the woman and told her that he wanted to bet.

"Can you give me a token first so that I could bring the goods to you?" the girl asked him.

Long Chen gave her one of the tokens.

The girl walked behind a shelf and brought a basket that had ten crystals in it.

All of these ten crystals did look the same. Even Long Chen couldn't find the difference.

"You can take your time selecting. You only have one try, if you choose the wrong crystal, you'll fail. In that case, you would need to get another token to have another go for the ticket," the Girl explained to him.

Long Chen had already heard that. He nodded his head.

"Can I touch these?" he asked the girl.

"No, Sir, you aren't allowed to touch these. You can only use your observation skill to recognize the Red Spica Crystal," she said.

"Alright," Long Chen replied.

He started looking at the Crystals carefully.

He had heard about the Red Spica Crystals before. These crystals had a green color inside them, which wasn't visible unless someone broke them.

Long Chen had also heard that it was impossible to see through the crystals with Spiritual Sense, but he was more confident in his Divine Sense, which he had found to be much more effective than the normal Spiritual Sense of the Cultivators.

He pretended to observe the crystals while he subtly spread out his Divine Sense, which worked.

He was able to see that one of these 10 Crystals was indeed a Red Spica Crystal.

He didn't let any strange emotions show on his face and maintained his expressions.

He took 5 minutes as he pretended to look uncertain.

"Can I ask my friends for opinions?" he asked the woman.

"No, Sir, you can't talk to anyone unless you want to be disqualified," the girl replied.

"Alright. I'll test my luck then. This one," Long Chen pointed towards one of the crystals.

"Very well," the girl picked up that crystal and placed that on the table before him. She placed the basket back and gave him a small hammer.

"You can break the crystal. If it's a red Spica Crystal, we will know. But you can also bet money on it if you want to do that before you break the crystal. Our establishment will double your money if you win," The girl said.

"Ah,"

Long Chen again looked uncertain, but he placed 1 Black Gold Coin on the table.

"Since I'm trying my luck, then let me go all out," Long Chen let out.

"You can go ahead," the girl told Long Chen.

Long Chen raised the hammer and smacked it on the crystal.

The crystal was shattered, revealing a speck of green inside.

"Huh, You succeeded?" the girl let out in shock as she realized that it was a Red Spica Crystal.

Ji Shan couldn't help but smile wryly. He had seen so many impossible feats being performed by Long Chen that he had become numb, but Xiang Limu was stunned at Long Chen's luck.

"Hahhaa, looks like I am indeed lucky," Long Chen said as he proudly laughed like an arrogant young master.

"My bet doubled, so I should have 2 Black Gold Coins, right? Long Chen asked the girl.

"Yes. Your coins will be paid when you decide that you don't want to play anymore. Do you want to continue or leave with your winnings?" The woman asked Long Chen.

"This Young Master is lucky today. Let me win the tickets then. Bring me four more baskets," Long Chen told her as he gave her four more tokens.

The girl walked back to the main counter and came back with four baskets, each having ten crystals.

Chapter 480 - 480: Victory?

Long Chen looked at the first basket, and after thinking for some time, he chose one of the crystals.

He again betted the 2 Black Gold Coins that he had with the woman.

He crushed the crystal again, revealing the green inside it.

He was successful once again. He had started attracting people's attention now because of his two-win streak.

"Awesome! I won again! Looks like the gods are on my side today,"

Without wasting time, he selected the crystal from the 3rd basket.

The Woman looked at him suspiciously now. She wondered if he was cheating somehow or if he had a way to see the Red Spica Crystals.

Long Chen smiled at her as he chose the crystal from the 4th basket.

"Bet everything I made on this as well. I'm going to break the crystal," Long Chen said before he smacked the hammer on the crystal.

The crystal was broken, but there was no green inside the crystal this time.

"Sigh, I thought he could do it."

"This man failed as well."

"Of course he can't do it. There comes a time when even the greatest of luck can't support you. It's not that easy to get a five-win streak."

The watchers started commenting as they saw Long Chen lost on his 4th try. Some even started laughing before they went back to what they were doing.

"I lost? This can't be possible!"

Long Chen let out in shock as he picked up the pieces of the crystals. He looked at each broken piece carefully, but he didn't find the green inside.

"That's not a Red Spica Jade, Sir. You have lost," the Woman said with an apologetic smile on her face, but inside her heart, she was relieved.

"Hmph, I will not be a sour loser, but I can't accept this! Bring me ten more baskets! I will keep trying until I win!" Long Chen said as he gave her ten tokens.

The woman smiled as he brought ten more baskets. Now there were ten baskets before him.

Even though Long Chen pretended to be upset, behind the mask, he was quite calm. He has done all this intentionally, not to seem too suspicious and just occasionally lucky.

He chose a crystal from one of the baskets and again bet one coin before breaking the crystal.

The crystal was broken, but he had failed again. It was not the Spica Crystal.

The woman kept the basket back again. Long Chen had ten baskets before him.

He won 2 and lost two before he seriously started playing.

He succeeded the next four times at picking the Red Spica Jade.

He had one basket before him, and if he successfully selected the Red Spica Jade, he would win.

There were again some people watching him now.

"That young man spent so much, but he is so close to finally winning. If he can be lucky once more, then he will win," One of the men watching him commented. That person was here to bet as well, but he had lost every time. Now he was watching Long Chen's play.

"You can pick the crystal. If you win, your money will be doubled, and you still win a ticket to the Light Heaven Continent," the woman informed him.

Long Chen nodded his head and picked up one of the crystals.

Everyone observed as Long Chen smacked the hammer on the Crystal. The crystal was shattered, revealing the green inside.

"A Red Spica Crystal! This person won! Incredible!"

"He did it. It gives me hope, as well. I would like to try it again."

"Give me a token!"

The ones that were defeated and had given up were once again motivated by Long Chen's success.

Most of them went to buy tokens while the others congratulated Long Chen for achieving success.

"Can I get my ticket now?" Long Chen asked the woman.

"Ah, wait here. I will inform the Manager," the woman said to Long Chen.

She left Long Chen behind and walked to the upper floor. After some time, she came back again.

"He invited you above," the woman informed Long Chen.

"Can I bring my family and friends up as well?" Long Chen asked her.

"You can only bring your family," the woman nodded her head.

Long Chen brought Mingyu, Zhiqing, Ji Shan with him as they didn't know them, but people probably knew Xiang Limu. He would be seen as lying if he brought Xiang Limu with him.

He told Xiang Limu to wait for his return.

Long Chen followed behind the girl with others.

He was brought to the higher floor, which had many Treasures kept behind the glass and used as decoration. The floor looked pretty luxurious.

The floor and the walls were spotlessly white; even the furniture was white, which gave him an official vibe.

There was a table in the center of the room, and a man was sitting behind that table.

The man had blonde hair that came down to his waist, but they were properly tied. His pitch-black eyes were the only black thing he could see in the room.

"Yes, Sir. He is the gentleman that won the ticket," the woman replied to the man.

"Come, sit."

The man gestured for Long Chen to sit on a chair before him.

"I'm sorry. I only have one extra chair. Your friends would need to stand." he added.

"You guys stay here," Long Chen told the others before he stepped forth and sat on the chair in front of him.

"My name is Nanli Gu. I am the manager here. Now, you might be wondering as to why I called you above instead of directly sending the ticket to you, am I right?" Nanli Gu asked Long Chen.

"Yes," Long Chen nodded his head.

"It's because we need to do some registration process. Every person that gets a ticket or even the ones that buy them had to go through a registration process. I called you here just for that. It's nothing much. We would just ask for some general information about you and record that with the ticket number that we are giving you. That's all," Nanli Gu explained to Long Chen.

Long Chen had already known about the registration thing as Xiang Limu had already told him about it. So he wasn't surprised.

"Alright. I understand," Long Chen nodded his head.

"It's good that you understand. So the first thing I need to do is to see your face. You need to take that mask off," Nanli Gu told Long Chen as he picked up a book from the table.

Long Chen activated the Mask of Mischief and removed the fake mask, revealing his face.

"Alright. You don't look like anyone that's wanted by the sect. That's good."

Nanli Gu noted something in the book.

"Can I ask the reason you wear the mask? You don't look half bad," he asked Long Chen.

"It's something personal. You can say that I don't like people seeing my face as I get embarrassed," Long Chen let out with a wry smile on his face.

"Alright. You can wear the mask again," Nanli Gu told Long Chen.

"Next, what is your name?" He asked.

"I'm Xu Shen," Long Chen gave him the same fake name that he had given to Xiang Limu.

"Where are you from?" Nanli Gu inquired.

"I'm from the Tianshan Empire," Long Chen answered.

"Reason for coming here?"

"I want to go and explore the Light Heaven Continent."

The man kept asking Long Chen similar questions related to his life, and Long Chen kept answering without taking much time. The whole process was more natural.

"Alright. I'm done. Here is your ticket. Enjoy. You can go back," The man said as he handed Long Chen a golden ticket that had the Name of the True Dao Sect and a number.

Chapter 481 - 481: Unorthodox Master Mu

"Thank You," Long Chen thanked the man before he stood up and left the floor with the woman. He got to the lowest floor.

"I'll get the money that you made," the woman said.

"Didn't you say that I would get that after I decide to stop playing?" Long Chen asked her.

"Yes, exactly... wait a minute. Do you mean that you want to play again?" the woman asked in surprise.

"Well, the thing is that I didn't expect to win at all. I was doubtful of my luck, so I bought 50 Tokens. I still have 35 of them left," Long Chen told her, shocking her again.

"Y-you want to get 35 baskets and try again?" She asked.

"Yes," Long Chen answered her.

"If you say so. Give me the tokens. I'll bring the baskets," the woman said.

Long Chen gave her the 35 tokens that he had.

"Wait right there. I will be back soon," the woman told him before she walked back.

"This was pretty good so far, but I hope we won't attract too much attention when you win three more tickets, which I know that you're going to win," Ji Shan let out in Long Chen's ears.

"Don't worry about that. There will be suspicions, but not something that could prove anything. They certainly wouldn't destroy their reputation for a few tickets as they are technically run by the True Dao Sect, who handle the city and the Ships. With the availability of other Sects that handle these things as well, reputation would be more important. Also, they have to maintain their righteous reputation. I wouldn't do the same if we were in the place controlled by Heavenly Slaughter Sect," Long Chen replied to him.

"I sure do hope so," Ji Shan let out.

"Hey, kid. Did you get the ticket?" one of the people present in the room walked closer to Long Chen.

"Yeah. They registered my details as well before giving me the ticket," Long Chen replied.

He could already see that the man didn't look like a good guy. He probably wanted to take his ticket if he received the opportunity.

"Oh, so they took your information. Good. This way, no one that steals from you would benefit from it," the man let out with a smile on his face, but Long Chen could hear the bitterness in his voice.

Long Chen simply smiled and didn't say anything else as he walked towards the empty place where he had been standing before he won the ticket.

Mingyu, Zhiqing, and Ji Shan were still with him.

"This place is really decent. The sects have the power to send people to the Light Heaven Continent. I don't understand why they themselves don't go to the Light Heaven Continent when the Dongxia continent is nothing when it comes to resources," Zhiqing asked Long Chen as she thought of something.

She was also curious about it. The sect sent others to higher places, why didn't they themselves transfer to the higher continent?

"Have you heard the phrase that it's better to be the rich leader of a poor kingdom than to be a poor soldier of a Rich Empire? It's the same principle here from what I understand," Ji Shan was the one that answered her instead.

"What do you mean?" Zhiqing inquired.

Ji Shan was about to answer, but another voice came from behind. It was a male voice, but it didn't belong to Long Chen either.

"He means that the Sects that rule this place will be weak in Light Heaven Sect. They prefer to remain the winner here instead of becoming the loser there."

All of them looked back only to see a young boy standing there.

The boy looked like he was 19-20 years old. He had light blue eyes and long black hair. His casual expression gave them a feeling like he was somewhat bored.

The others didn't recognize the boy, but Long Chen recognized him.

Long Chen was frowning behind his mask as he recognized this boy as the person who was sitting inside the carriage when they were walking towards the Port City.

Their carriage was given special entry which signified that this was the carriage that belonged to someone of high authority in the Port City.

"This Young Master is right. Big organizations probably don't have it as easy as us independent Cultivators. We just look at the Light Heaven Continent as the land of opportunity as we are young, and we hope to achieve more. The sects, on the other hand, need to take into consideration many things as most of their leadership is probably old," Long Chen chimed in a casual tone.

"Right," the boy replied as he looked around.

"Are you here to try your luck as well? It's fun," Long Chen asked the boy as he saw him looking around.

"Probably. I was getting bored, so I guess I can do it to pass some time," The boy muttered. "All the attendants seem busy, though."

The boy had just said that when the man that had given Long Chen the ticket came out.

"Young Master. You are here," Nanli Gu said to the young boy.

"Hah, Looks like you were jesting with me. The manager of this place personally came for you," Long Chen let out as he glanced at the boy.

"Sorry that we weren't able to give you proper reception," Nanli Gu apologized to the boy.

"Don't worry about that. I don't care about these things. I am happy to see that your staff is following my father's orders. Everything should be done professionally. It doesn't matter if a high person comes or low. You can't stop servicing someone to serve others," The boy let out as he nodded his head.

"Of Course. Clan Master's orders are absolute. That's why I personally came down to take care of you. I wasn't helping anyone, and I was free," Nanli Gu let out as he smiled.

"Can you bring me some baskets? Since this friend here says that it's fun, I might as well try it," the boy said to Nanli Gu.

He had just said that when the Woman returned with Long Chen's 35 baskets.

The boy was surprised to see so many baskets.

"These are for?" he asked the woman.

"Ah, These are for this, Sir, Young Master," the woman said to the boy as she glanced towards Long Chen.

"You are playing again? Didn't you just win a ticket?" Nanli Gu asked in surprise. He didn't know that Long Chen wanted to play again.

"Oh, You won? That would definitely give someone the courage to try again," The boy let out as he nodded his head.

"As I said, these things are fun. That's why I'm doing it. It's also a good indicator to see one's luck and skills," Long Chen let out casually.

"Well said. Bring me 35 baskets as well. I want to have some fun with this friend as well. We can have a competition of sorts," the boy let out as he finally smiled.

"Think again, Brother. My luck is awfully good today. I don't want to be in trouble for defeating someone who's so well respected by everyone here," Long Chen told the boy.

Nanli Gu was shocked to see someone talking to the boy like that.

"It doesn't matter. Victory and defeat are a part of life. Also, there's a certain kind of fun in defeat as well. I would love to taste defeat if you can defeat me. Also, You have my promise. No one will trouble you for anything. In fact, I would be happy to be friends with someone who defeats me instead. I don't even remember the last time someone had defeated me," the boy let out as he sighed.

"It will be more fun then," Long Chen chuckled. He had decided to act more confident in this place as he knew that no one would even suspect a criminal or wanted person to be acting so openly. Also, if he could get close to this boy, it would make things a whole lot easier.

"I'm Mu Fan. What is your name?" the boy asked Long Chen.

"I am Xu Shen," Long Chen replied.

"Well, Xu Shen, it's good that we are having a competition, but how about we have a bet as well?" Mu Fan asked Long Chen.

"What bet?" Long Chen asked in curiosity.

"The one that selects the most Red Spica Crystals in the 35 tries wins. The winner gets to make a demand from the loser," Mu Fan told Long Chen.

Mu Fan was known as one of the most unorthodox people in the Mu Clan. No one knew what he was thinking and what he would do the next moment. He was seen as a nice person, though, but his actions were difficult to comprehend most of the time. It was said that there were only a few things that could impress him.

Chapter 482 - 482: Cheating?

Some people even claimed that he was bored with life and that he had tried ending his life a few times before.

It was also said that in the last few years, he had smiled a lot of times, but he had never laughed.

"Get the baskets for the young master," Nanli Gu told the attendant who hurriedly went back to the place with the women that had helped her carry 35 baskets.

"Don't wait for me. You can start already," Mu Fan told Long Chen as he pointed his hands towards Long Chen's basket.

"Since you're doing this for fun, let me do it that way as well. We'll break the crystal when we're both ready," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

Since he was trying to close in on Mu Fan, he couldn't be the first person to do it while leaving Mu Fan behind.

Ji Shan understood what Long Chen was trying to do, but he didn't interfere.

"On the other hand, can we talk about our bet? I don't want to go in blindly. State beforehand what you will get if you won, and then I will state what I want from you if I win," Long Chen told Mu Fan.

"Where is the fun in that? Let it be suspense till the end. It is more fun that way," Mu Fan said, shaking his head.

Even though Long Chen was sure that he wouldn't be defeated, he still wanted to know the bet to know if it would be worth it for him to go all out on it.

"If you say so. We'll keep it a suspense. Whoever wins will do one thing the other person says. How about we both write our wishes for the other person and give the papers to a neutral party? The wishes will be opened after the results are clear," Long Chen let out.

Since he was going to go all out, he wanted to know what Mu Fan wanted him to do even if he won just to understand what he had in his mind.

"Sure. I don't mind that."

Mu Fan looked towards Nanli Gu and asked him, "Can you bring us two papers and a pen?"

Nanli Gu nodded his head as he walked back.

Ji Shan couldn't help but laugh on the inside to see the person that acted so haughty before them to run errands like a servant. He was somewhat pleased.

Nanli Gu came back immediately with two papers. He also brought two pens. He gave the pen and paper to both of them.

Long Chen wrote something on the paper and folded it. Mu Fan also did the same.

"Who should we give these to? Who do you want to be our neutral party?" Mu Fan asked Long Chen.

"It doesn't matter. Let the attendant hold them when she returns. I don't mind. I don't think they will change it," Long Chen replied to Mu Fan's query.

"Nah, Let your friends hold them. They are already here. Since you trust us, it's only fair that I trust you," Mu Fan said as he stepped forth and gave the paper to Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't open the paper and gave them to Ji Shan to hold.

The attendant returned after some time with her helpers. They brought 35 baskets. Each of them having 10 Red Spica Crystals.

Slowly, everyone in the room had found out about the contest that was going to happen here, which excited more and more people that stood behind them to watch the event unfold.

One of the participants was the one who had already shown his massive luck by getting a 5-win streak while the other person was the famous yet mysterious Young Master of the Mu Clan. They were excited to see how the Young Master of the Overlord Mu Clan performed.

"Alright. Your baskets are here as well. Let's begin now," Long Chen let out as he walked towards the first basket on his side. Mu Fan also walked towards the first basket on his side. His face was still expressionless.

The attendant gave a hammer to Mu Fan as well.

Mu Fan picked one of the crystals from the first basket after 30 seconds and placed it on the table before him. He looked towards Long Chen, who was still looking at his basket.

After a few more seconds, Long Chen also picked a crystal from his basket.

"You already selected one. Nice, You should go first as well," Long Chen said as he saw that Mu Fan already had a crystal before him.

Mu Fan didn't refute Long Chen as he picked his hammer and smashed it on the crystal.

The red crystal shattered to pieces exposing the tint of green inside.

"Amazing! He got the Red Spica Crystal on his first try. It's going to be interesting."

"Clearly, Young Master Mu is superior in luck and talent. I can't even comprehend why someone would challenge him."

Everyone started praising Mu Fan.

"Master Nanli, this seems like a good opportunity for your store. How about you start the betting on who will win? People seem more confident in him," Long Chen told Nanli Gu.

"Why would I do that? Everyone would bet on him, and I would lose," Nanli Gu rolled his eyes as he refused.

Long Chen chuckled as he smashed the crystal before him.

Another uproar ensued as people saw the green color inside the crystal of Long Chen.

"Another Red Spica Crystal! They're both tied!"

"This boy is really lucky,"

"I wonder if he can actually do the impossible here,"

People's discussion changed as soon as they saw the result of Long Chen.

"Nice. This really is fun. I look forward to the result," Mu Fan smiled as he glanced at Long Chen. Long Chen nodded his head in return.

They both moved to the second basket and picked a crystal each from their baskets.

"You go first this time," Mu Fan told Long Chen. He had made it to be a turn by turn game.

Long Chen didn't reply and just smashed the hammer on his crystal. Once again, it was Red Spica Crystal.

"Another success. You weren't bragging," Mu Fan let out as he smashed his crystal as well, revealing a beautiful tinge of green inside his crystal.

"How can they make it look so easy? Wasn't this supposed to be as difficult as treading the heavens? Are these the real baskets? They haven't filled them with Red Spica Jade, have they? Could it be that they are cheating?" One of the people that was watching exclaimed unintentionally.

Nanli Gu frowned as he heard people doubting him.

He picked the second basket of Mu Fan and Long Chen and placed them before the person that had said it. He also put a hammer there.

"Break the rest of the crystals. If you find a single Red Spica Crystal, I will give you a Three Hundred Thousand Black Gold Coins!" he exclaimed as he glared at the man.

Even though the man was somewhat afraid, the greed of Three Hundred Thousand Black Gold Coins made him pick up the hammer. He picked up each of the crystals and started breaking them.

Soon, he had broken all of the eighteen crystals, but he didn't find a single Red Spica Crystal.

"This idiot. Did he really think that this place would cheat? It is run by the Mu Clan! They are the most honest clan in this world."

"You embarrassed yourself! Now scam out of this place!"

"This idiot!"

Even though there were other people that were suspicious previously, they had all started trusting it again, and they all placed the blame on the man and forced him to leave this place.

"You need to control your anger. Don't let someone's words affect you," Mu Fan told Nanli Gu, who had walked back to him.

Chapter 483 - 483: Tricking Mu Fan

"I will reflect on it, Young Master," Nanli Gu replied.

"Sorry for the delay. Let's continue," Mu Fan apologized to Long Chen for the delay Nanli Gu's action had caused.

They again got back to selecting a crystal from the 3rd basket.

The third crystal was a Red Spica Jade as well. Both of them had succeeded once again.

The 4th try was a success for both of them as well, which stunned Nanli Gu and the attendants. The other people present in the room weren't able to believe their own eyes either. The two of them made it seem so simple like they could see the Red Spica Crystal.

"I thought my luck was good. Clearly, yours is just as good if not better," Long Chen said as he glanced at Mu Fan.

"You can call it luck, but it can be something else either," Mu Fan muttered as he shook his head.

"Some people are special. Some people can see more than other people. This world is filled with people. Some have useful talent, while others have waste talents. Some people can use various powers because they are born that way. Everything can't be explained with luck," he added.

"Are you one of those special people?" Long Chen inquired.

"I might be, just like how you can be. It's not about what a person is, but how a person is. What makes one special is a combination of many things," Mu Fan said as he picked a crystal from the 5th basket.

Long Chen also picked up his next crystal.

It was again a tie.

"Looks like I won another ticket, right?" Long Chen asked Nanli Gu.

"Yes. Every five-win streak ensured that you got a ticket. That's valid until we run out of our ten tickets quota," Nanli Gu answered.

"Good. I wanted to buy tickets for my friends as well. But using my luck to get the tickets is much better," Long Chen said as he picked the 6th crystal.

They kept picking up crystals and succeeding. Each of their successes shocked the crowd even more.

Soon, both of them had a winning streak of 25.

Both of them were so engrossed in this competition that they weren't thinking of anything else, but their attention was attracted by someone's comments, which raised a valid question.

"9 tickets have already been issued to them. Both of them won at the same time. Only ten tickets are allowed. Who will get the 10th ticket?"

Long Chen looked towards Nanli Gu as he also got curious about it.

"This..." Nanli Gu didn't know what to do in this situation. Both of them had Broken the crystal at the same time.

"Of Course Master Xu Shen will get the ticket. He is our guest. I don't have interest in the tickets either," Mu Fan let out with a professional smile on his face. He was doing two things at once. Maintaining the reputation of this shop and subtly helping Nanli Gu out so that he doesn't make a mistake with his decision.

"I already have enough tickets. I only needed 4. Any extra will just be a waste," Long Chen rejected the offer.

"I understand that. We can't give you that many tickets either as we need to have the record of every person that is going to use our tickets. We can give you the value of the tickets in currency. Three Hundred Thousand Black Gold Coins for every extra ticket that you have received," Mu Fan explained to Long Chen about the specifics and the technicalities behind the rewards.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile behind his mask. He was expecting to lose all his coins for tickets, but instead of losing money, he had made money instead. All while getting the tickets for free.

"I'm now starting to doubt if we would even have a winner. Your abilities have long ago crossed the scope of luck unless you are carrying the goddess of luck in your pocket," Mu Fan let out as he glanced at Long Chen.

"That is the strange thing about luck. No one can know when it's too little, and no one can know how far it can go. It's kinda like destiny," Long Chen replied just as vaguely.

"That's true. Both of them are unexplainable forces that I don't believe in," Mu Fan said as he picked up a crystal from the 26th basket.

"Not believing in something doesn't make it go away. That's the sad reality. Just like we can't make bad things go away by not believing in them, we can't make good things go away either," Long Chen responded.

Their exchange continued, which sounded like two intellectual humans talking about profound theories to the normal people that were watching them.

They continued to select crystals, and soon, they were in the last basket. It was the 35th basket.

Both of them had already set a record of most win streaks in this shop. At this point, almost everyone was sure that it would be a tie again.

Everyone had taken them for granted by now. They were like Red Spica Crystal experts in the eyes of everyone present here.

They crushed the last crystal together. The result was outside the expectation for no one. It was again a tie.

Mu Fan couldn't help but sigh.

"And here I was hoping to get my first defeat. Whatever, it was fun while it lasted even though there was no victor or loser," Mu Fan let out with his usual expressionless face.

"Don't give up. Let me try one more time. One more basket each. I believe that we would definitely have a winner now. Master Nanli, can you bring two baskets for us?" Long Chen asked Nanli Gu. Long Chen's face behind his mask had a subtle smile on his face.

"Alright. If you say so, let's do it one last time," Mu Fan nodded his head.

This time, Nanli Gu personally went to bring a basket.

He came back and placed the baskets before both of them.

"Please go ahead. I hope there is a winner this time," Nanli Gu let out before he stepped back.

Long Chen looked at the basket in front of him. His smile only deepened.

'Right where I wanted you to be,' Long Chen thought as he subtly glanced back at Nanli Gu.

"Shall we begin?" Mu Fan asked Long Chen.

"Wait a minute. I'm not picking a crystal from this basket," Long Chen let out sternly.

"Why?" Mu Fan asked with a frown.

Nanli Gu also started getting somewhat worried.

"I just thought of something. It's about destiny and luck. It was my destiny that those 35 baskets were placed before me, and it was my luck that made me select the right crystal. I think it was the same for you, but now I want to shake things up a little. Let's exchange the baskets. Let's see if my destiny basket and your luck wins or Your Destiny Basket with my luck," Long Chen said to Mu Fan.

"Interesting analysis. Fine," Mu Fan let out as he smiled.

"Let's change places then," he let out as he walked towards Long Chen.

Long Chen nodded his head as he walked towards Mu Fan's place.

Nanli Gu had suddenly started sweating. He wanted to stop them, but he knew that it was too late now.

Long Chen picked a crystal from Mu Fan's basket. Mu Fan, on the other hand, just stood before Long Chen's basket blankly. Soon, a frown appeared on his face.

He glanced at Nanli Gu with furrowed eyebrows.

He picked one crystal from the basket as well.

"You started this competition with you going first. Let me end this by me going first," Long Chen chuckled as he smashed the crystal revealing the green inside it.

Chapter 484 - 484: Special Physique

"As expected, he chose a Red Spica Crystal. Is this even shocking at this point? Young Master Mu's crystal will be the same. It's another draw."

"Sigh, both of them will forever be undefeated. They are just too excellent. I can't believe there is someone in this world who can draw with Young Master Mu.

Mu Fan picked up his hammer and crushed the red crystal before him.

As soon as the crystal was broken, gasps could be heard in the hall.

Everyone was shocked to see that Mu Fan had failed. The crystal was not a Red Spica Crystal. There was not even a speck of green inside the crystal.

"He failed?"

"This boy defeated Young Master Mu?"

"Impossible!"

"How could this be?"

"Am I dreaming?"

There was a wide variety of reactions from the people, most of whom were shocked to see the result.

After seeing both of them successfully choosing Red Spica Crystal, again and again, they had thought that their success was a given, but their expectations were turned upside down after seeing Mu Fan fail.

Soon, the commotion calmed down as people saw Mu Fan glaring at Long Chen.

The atmosphere had turned heavy. It seemed as if something big was about to happen. People wondered if Long Chen was going to be in trouble for defeating Mu Fan.

While they were wondering, laughter echoed in the room. The crowd was once again shocked as they saw that it was Mu Fan laughing. The person that was known never to laugh was laughing so openly and freely.

After freely laughing for a few minutes, Mu Fan controlled himself.

"Good. That was a new experience. You won in the game and in wit. I quite like it," Mu Fan said with a smile on his face.

"Give me your slip. Let me see what I need to give you," He asked as he extended his hand towards Ji Shan.

Ji Shan looked towards Long Chen to see what he should do. Long Chen simply nodded his head.

"Give him my slip. It would be insulting for Young Master Mu if I win and not let him do what he bet. I'm sure he wouldn't accept that either," Long Chen said.

Ji Shan gave Long Chen's slip to Mu Fan and gave Mu Fan's slip to Long Chen. Mu Fan took the paper from Ji Shan and unfolded it.

He read what was written on the paper.

As he read, he started laughing once again.

The person that had never laughed before had laughed twice before everyone. This whole day felt extraordinary to the crowd. They had seen impossible feats being continuously performed and now they were seeing something that was considered on the same level as being impossible.

"Will Young Master Mu give me what I asked for?" Long Chen asked Mu Fan.

"Are you sure you want this? You could ask for anything that I possess, you could ask for money, you could ask for fame, you could ask for treasures as well. Think again. If you want something else, I'll let you change this request," Mu Fan asked Long Chen with a curious smile on his face.

"I don't care about fame, nor do I care about riches. I wrote what I want. It depends on Young Master Mu if I receive what I asked for," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

"Good," Mu Fan smiled as he stepped towards Long Chen. He threw the paper on the ground.

He stood just before Long Chen as he reached out his hand.

Long Chen also extended his hand. They shook each other's hands.

"I, Mu Fan, promise you my undying friendship for as long as I live. Even though I don't know you that well, I promise to help you with whatever you

need as long as it's not against my principles," Mu Fan said, shocking Nanli Gu.

Nanli Gu stepped forth and picked up the paper that had the bet written. He silently read it.

"Friendship of the person that hadn't tasted defeat before I defeated him today."

Nanli Gu looked at Long Chen in confusion. He didn't know why, but it seemed like everything was planned by Long Chen. Even his own actions seemed to be according to Long Chen's wishes.

"I promise the same," Long Chen replied.

The crowd was amazed and started clapping for the both of them.

"Let's go to the higher floor," Mu Fan told Long Chen before he released his hand.

Mu Fan picked up the 36th basket from which he had chosen a crystal.

Long Chen, his friends, and Nanli Gu went to the higher floor.

"Arrange for seats for everyone," Mu Fan told Nanli Gu.

Nanli Gu instantly called a few servants to arrange more seats here.

Soon, chairs were arranged for everyone.

Mu Fan sat on one of the chairs and placed the basket in front of him.

"Please break these crystals. I want to see which of these is a Red Spica Crystal," he told Nanli Gu.

Nanli Gu kept looking back and forth between the basket and Mu Fan.

"Are you going to do it, or should I do it personally?" Mu Fan asked again.

Nanli Gu didn't step forward; instead, he dropped down to his knees.

"Please forgive me, Young Master. I made a mistake," Nanli Gu started apologizing.

"Why should I forgive you? Can you explain it? Just say it, so that others can hear you," Mu Fan said.

Other than Long Chen, Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing, there was no other outsider here.

"The basket that I gave him had no Red Spica Crystal. I cheated to have you win. Please forgive me, young master," Nanli Gu apologized as he hit his head on the ground.

Ji Shan, Mingyu, and Zhiqing didn't know about this, and this news stunned them, but Long Chen clearly knew about it. That's why he made him change the baskets between him and Mu Fan.

"Sigh, I didn't expect this from you. I wouldn't have even known about this if I hadn't been before this basket," Mu Fan sighed.

"I'll decide your punishment later. Be glad that he didn't spread this news to others. I don't think you can even comprehend how damaging it would've been for the reputation of the Mu Clan. You would've been killed by Uncle if that had happened. You should thank Xu Shen as you would still get punished, but this news won't reach father," he told Nanli Gu.

"T-thank you for protecting our reputation," Nanli Gu thanked Long Chen.

"It's fine. I don't want to destroy anyone's reputation," Long Chen replied.

"Go back and make sure no one enters this room," Mu Fan told Nanli Gu.

Nanli Gu followed the command and left the place.

"I believe they are your friends? Let them leave if they are not close. I want to talk about some important stuff," Mu Fan said as he glanced at Long Chen.

"They are my family. They can know anything," Long Chen replied to Mu Fan.

Mu Fan nodded his head as he got ready to speak.

"Alright. I want to know if you have a special physique like me," he asked Long Chen.

"Special Physique?" Long Chen let out in confusion.

"Some people are born with a Special Physique that can give them some powers and specialty. These people are scarce and only a few people have special physiques which are also known as the ones blessed by heaven," Xun answered to Long Chen as her voice resounded in her head.

"Do you have a special physique?" Long Chen asked Mu Fan.

"I have. That's why I was able to see the truths of the crystals and find the right ones. I believe you have a special physique as well," Mu Fan said.

Chapter 485 - 485: Rich

"It might be similar to mine or completely different. I heard that the special Physiques are rare, but they have many different types. You're the first person I met that had a Special Physique," Mu Fan explained to him.

"Because I chose the crystals correctly?" Long Chen asked him.

"Yes. Nothing else can explain that unless you are a heaven realm Cultivator, which I'm sure you aren't. There are only a few heaven realm Cultivators on this continent, and they won't stoop down to betting to win the tickets," Mu Fan let out.

"Don't worry. This news isn't harmful. I also have a special physique. If our sect or any other sect knew about it, they would not harm you. They would simply try to recruit you. Even the True Dao Sect will take you in as a disciple and give you a nice position. If you want, I can tell the sect and help you join it. If you don't want to join, I'll keep it a secret and let you leave," Mu Fan explained to Long Chen.

"Why would you keep it a secret? Won't it be a service to the sect if you tell them that you found a person with a special physique?" Long Chen inquired.

"It would be a service, indeed, but I have promised my friendship to you. I won't break that promise. It depends on you if you wish to join the sect. Also, I don't believe the sect will force you even if they know that you have a special physique," Mu Fan replied.

"Thanks. But I don't want to stay on this continent. I will be leaving this place and going to the Light Heaven Continent. I don't wish to join the True Dao Sect or any other sect," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

"Alright. If that's what you want," Mu Fan smiled as he nodded.

"Can you tell me about your physique, though?" he asked Long Chen.

"My physique, ah, I don't know what it's called, but I named it the Truth Seeker Physique. I am able to see inside most of the things," Long Chen replied with a made-up name and a made-up power.

"Oh, It's similar to mine. My Physique is called the Elemental Judgement Physique. My physique also empowers my eyes. I am able to see the origin, the names, or the uses of the crystals, jewels, and other nature-related materials like rocks, etc. It's pretty useless and doesn't help with the combat.

But because I have this ability, I was assigned this Port City. I handle the verification and the separation of the items, jewelry, etc. that we receive," Mu Fan replied.

"So that's why you were so confident. You had the specialty in this field," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

"Wasn't that why you were confident either? That's why it was such fun—meeting a person that could see what I could see. Facing a person that could defeat me was fun," Mu Fan let out with a subtle smile on his face.

"It's your first day today, right? I believe I saw you guys outside the city. Did you find a place to stay?" he asked Long Chen.

"Yeah, We booked the rooms in the Grand Mu hotel, which I heard was owned by your clan as well. I haven't seen the rooms, but they should be good since I only heard praises about it," Long Chen answered.

"Good. The rooms are indeed good. Also, can you introduce the others to me? Since we're friends now, I should know your family as well," Mu Fan told Long Chen.

"Right. He's my brother Xu Shan," Long Chen said as he introduced Ji Shan.

He introduced Mingyu and Zhiqing as his wives.

"You have two wives? I guess you're quite romantic in that regard," Mu Fan smiled as he glanced at Long Chen.

"What can I say, the heart wants what it wants," Long Chen answered.

"True words," Mu Fan nodded his head.

"I have been curious about something. Why are you keeping your face behind that mask?" Mu Fan asked Long Chen.

"It's something personal. I did show my face to Master Nanli, though. But I do prefer keeping my face behind the mask," Long Chen answered.

"Alright. I won't force you to do what you don't want. Wait right here, I'll tell Nanli Gu to bring the things that you won," Mu Fan stood up and walked outside.

Long Chen relaxed after Mu Fan left.

Ji Shan was about to say something, but Long Chen gestured to him to stay silent. There was a possibility that others might be able to hear them in this place. He didn't want Ji Shan to believe that they were alone and spill out something unconventional.

Long Chen glanced at the folded paper that was in his hand, which contained Mu Fan's wish that he would need to do if Mu Fan had won.

Long Chen unfolded the paper and read the thing that was written inside.

He also started laughing as he read the contents of the paper.

"I believe I understand why he laughed after reading my wish," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

He folded the paper again and kept it in his pocket.

After a few more minutes, Mu Fan returned with Nanli Gu and a few servants.

Nanli Gu asked the same questions to Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing and recorded their answers and noted them on a register before he gave them a ticket each.

"You had seven 5-Winning streaks. That makes you win seven tickets. I gave the three, and the rest will be paid in Black Gold Coins. You will get 1.2 Million Black Gold Coins for four tickets. Also, because of your bet and the increment of your bet money, you will get an additional three hundred thousand Black Gold Coins. This ring contains 1.5 Million Black Gold Coins," Nanli Gu said as he gave Long Chen a storage ring.

Long Chen glanced inside the ring and found it filled with Black Gold Coins.

'Just four tickets are worth this much, no wonder it is said that the sects make a lot of money from Port Cities that offer intercontinental travel,' Long Chen thought as he shook his head.

"Is there something else you want to do here?" Mu Fan asked Long Chen.

"Not really. We were on an exploration of this city when we found this place. We would probably continue our tour," Long Chen replied.

"Alright. You guys can leave. I still have something to do here, which is why I came here in the first place. Here, this is my personal token. You wouldn't face any problem in the city as long as you show this token. You can also come to the Mu Clan with that token if you face any problem," Mu Fan said as he gave

Long Chen a 5-star token which had 'Mu' written on one side and Fan written on the other.

"Bye, guys. It was fun to meet you. I would probably meet you again," Mu Fan said as he walked away with Nanli Gu.

Long Chen also stood up and left the place with the others. He went back to the ground floor and found Xiang Limu standing in a corner.

They left the shop and continued on the trip to the city.

Xiang Limu showed them many places in Port City. He showed them the place that sold tickets of ships and explained the process people had to follow to get the tickets. He also showed him the other attractions of the city like the Mu Clan building and many more relevant places.

After that, he brought them to the place that was known as the food district of the city.

Chapter 486 - 486: I Was Defeated

The Food District was the place that was filled with restaurants that served dishes that were the specialty of various corners of the continent.

Long Chen was about to enter one of the restaurants when he noticed Xiang Limu stopping behind them.

"Are you not coming?" Long Chen asked Xiang Limu.

"I, ah, I don't think someone like me deserves to eat food there. The food is too expensive for me," Xiang Limu said as he shook his head.

"It's alright. I'm paying. Treat it as a thanks for being so patient with us and showing us around the places," Long Chen told the man as he gestured to him to follow them.

Long Chen and the others entered the restaurant. Xiang Limu also entered, but he looked somewhat hesitant.

A waiter came up to them to escort them to a table, but he was surprised to see Xiang Limu there.

"Xiang Limu, this is a place for the well-respected people and the wealthy. Don't dirty this place. Get out," the waiter told Xiang Limu, who was standing behind them.

"Ah, is this how this restaurant talks to their guests?" Long Chen asked the servant.

"This is to maintain our standard. We can't allow any random beggar to enter this place and lower our standards," the waiter answered Long Chen.

The manager was standing nearby, watching everything, but he didn't interfere.

"So the people that can afford to eat food here are beggars? That is insulting. Can I talk to someone else?" Long Chen asked the waiter.

"Everyone is busy. If the guests want to come, they can. But you guys can't bring your guide inside," The waiter replied.

"Sigh, he's not our guide. He is our friend at the moment. If you still don't allow him, then I can only leave," Long Chen said as he turned back to leave.

"I wonder how Mu Fan would react when I leave and tell him how we were behaved to," Long Chen let out, trying to make sure that the manager heard him.

He was also holding Mu Fan's token in his hand, which he kept in a position that it would be clear for the manager to see.

"Ah, wait, sir!"

The manager ran to Long Chen, to stop him.

Long Chen stopped as he glanced back.

"You idiot! Is this how you behave with guests? Go back and reflect on your actions. You're not getting any pay today," the Manager told the waiter as he sent him away.

The Manager looked at Long Chen with a flattering smile as he started talking.

"I would like to apologize for my subordinate. Please don't take it to heart. There are some idiots like him. I'll make sure to teach them properly. Please come with me; I'll escort you to your table."

Long Chen nodded his head.

'That's how the ones with power or reach are treated. So different from the weak ones. This is how the world is. The money will only give me respect in my small circle of people that depend on the ones that are influenced by it or me, but power is something that will deter everyone. I will get there one day,' Long Chen thought as he glanced at the token of the Mu Clan.

He kept the token back and followed after the manager. The hotel was filled with people. Long Chen didn't see any free table inside. They were brought to a private room, and the manager personally handed them the menu.

Long Chen and the others place their orders after going through the menu once.

"Go ahead. Order whatever you want. It would be disrespectful if you hesitate," Long Chen told Xiang Limu, who was still hesitating.

"How about I bring the most expensive dish for this little friend?" the manager asked Long Chen.

"Yeah, do that. I don't think he'll be able to select anything," Long Chen replied as he didn't get any answer from Xiang Limu.

They finished the dinner and left the restaurant. The exploration of the city was already completed.

Xiang Limu took them back to the Grand Mu Hotel before he bid his farewell.

"Thank you for showing us around," Long Chen thanked Xiang Limu before he gave him ten black gold coins more.

Xiang Limu initially refused, but Long Chen gave the coins anyway.

Long Chen and the others entered the hotel.

Ji Shan was living in a separate room while Long Chen and his women stayed in a different room.

The night filled with passion passed away again, but no voice left the room as the rooms canceled the noise from leaving. The room was filled with moans as Long Chen, and his girls used Dual Cultivation to increase their Cultivation.

The night passed away as the first ray of the sun fell on the land.

Long Chen and his women woke up and got dressed. The girls stayed in the room, while Long Chen left the room and went into Ji Shan's room.

"Are we going to go out today?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen.

"No. We will stay in the rooms for the next six days until it's the time to leave. There's no need to go out unnecessarily. Just stay inside and Cultivate."

Long Chen informed Ji Shan before he left his room and went back to his room.

He told the girls to cultivate separately and improve and assimilate the Cultivation they received from Dual Cultivation.

Long Chen, on the other hand, started to comprehend the skill that he had received from the Divine Heaven Sect.

It was a skill that could help him read the thoughts of people that were weaker than him. He found it useful and wanted to learn it so that he could understand what went on in the minds of the people before him.

Even if he faced a strong Cultivator whose mind he couldn't read, he would still know that something was wrong by reading the thoughts of their subordinates. He knew that it would be most useful in his quest for the Ghost

Temple. He didn't want to use force as he had found out that they were more strong compared to what he had assumed.

He wanted to infiltrate the Ghost Temple, and this ability was his trump card, which he thought would be one of the most useful skills for him in the Ghost Temple.

As long as he could read the thoughts of others, he could see what lines he needed to stay away from or if someone was suspicious of him.

Long Chen started comprehending the skill while the girls began cultivating.

Almost everyone was cultivating except Long Xue Ying, who was sitting inside the fake world in anger. She still hasn't calmed down from all this.

Time kept passing slowly while Long Chen kept comprehending the skill with all he got.

A day passed away, and they still stayed inside their rooms.

Back in the Mu Clan Mansion, Mu Fan was standing before his uncle. He was being asked about the things that happened between him and Long Chen.

"So, Nephew Fan, I heard that you were defeated by someone in the competition of the eye and luck?" his uncle asked him.

Mu Fan's uncle was in charge of this city. His father and grandfather were in the sect.

Even though Mu Fan's father's position was higher in the clan, and in the sect, they allowed his uncle to handle this place as they didn't want to burden his father with this. His father was a very important part of the sect. He couldn't be sent away to handle a city.

"Yes, Uncle. I was defeated. I was defeated openly and fairly," Mu Fan replied with a slight smile on his face. He didn't look even the slightest upset.

Chapter 487 - 487: Secret Master

"How is that possible? You have a special physique, which makes it impossible for you not to recognize the Red Spica Crystal. Also, how can another person get it right 36 times? Have you checked him?" Mu Fan's uncle asked him.

"It's a combination of luck and negligence, I guess. I was negligent and made a mistake while he was lucky and won. That's all there is to him. And yes, I checked thoroughly. He is a normal person," Mu Fan replied.

"Also, this has been a good thing for our business. It proved our trustworthiness, and it motivated others to try harder to win. Instead of buying five or ten tokens, people are now buying fifty or hundred trying to be like him. I believe it has only been beneficial for us that someone like him ended up in our shop. As long as he leaves this continent safely, he would become a legend that will inspire even more people to gamble here as people would be sure that we don't harm anyone who wins even if they win tons," Mu Fan explained.

"True. It's a good stunt for publicity. I will listen to your advice," Mu Fan's uncle said as he dropped the matter.

Six days passed. It was just one more day before the ship would leave for the Light Heaven Continent.

Long Chen had only once left the hotel in these six days. He left the sect to go and meet Mu Fan. He went there to talk to him and get more information about the journey and things related to it that Mu Fan was more knowledgeable about.

Long Chen had also learned the skill he was trying to learn, and he had gained the ability to read people's thoughts as long as he focused on the person he wanted to read. If the criteria were fulfilled, he would be able to read their thoughts.

Long Chen tried to test this skill.

He stood up and glanced back. Mingyu was still cultivating, but Zhiqing was in a shower.

Long Chen walked towards the shower. He took his clothes off and entered it.

Zhiqing's back was facing him. He stepped forth and hugged her from behind.

"Good morning, love," Long Chen greeted her.

"Good Morning," Zhiqing greeted back as she turned back and kissed Long Chen.

"Think of a number between one to ten," Long Chen asked her.

'Why?' Zhiqing thought, but she didn't ask Long Chen.

"Alright," She said as she thought of a number.

Long Chen smiled as he could see that it was already working.

"What was the number that you thought?" he asked her.

"Seven," Zhiqing replied.

"Perfect," Long Chen smiled as he kissed her again.

'What is happening? Is everything alright?' Zhiqing wondered.

Long Chen released her lips.

"Nothing is happening. Everything's fine," he told her.

"What?" Zhiqing asked with a stunned look on her face. "Did you answer my thoughts?"

"Yeah. I learned a skill that lets me read the thoughts of others around him," Long Chen replied to her.

'Oh my god. That would be so embarrassing at night,' Zhiqing looked blankly at Long Chen.

"Don't worry. I won't use that on you girls," Long Chen answered her. He realized that it would be embarrassing to know that someone could read their thoughts.

"It's a voluntary skill. I won't hear thoughts unless I wish for it, and I won't use it on my women. I was just testing," Long Chen answered her.

It was the seventh day, and the day of the departure.

Long Chen and his team left the hotel early in the morning and walked towards the Port.

They walked through the city and soon reached the long wall that prevented people from going to the bridge that was attached to the small island where the ships were parked.

There were three gates in the walls where guards were standing. They checked the tickets and only then allowed for people to pass through.

The line was long, but it was moving fast as the tickets were special. It didn't take much time to check them.

Long Chen and his friends soon passed through the entrance.

Mu Fan was sitting in his room, looking at the clock before him.

"They should've reached the ship by now. I wish I could go to a new place as well. It would be fun to go on a journey with friends," he muttered as he shook his head.

"Are you talking about someone you met?" a voice came from behind.

Mu Fan turned back only to find a young boy standing there.

The boy was wearing the twentieth token of appreciation of the Divine Heaven Sect.

"Master!" Mu Fan dropped down on his knees as he greeted the boy.

"How was your time without me? Did you slack off?" the boy asked with a subtle smile on his face.

"The progress has been good master. The skill that you gave me is improving daily," Mu Fan replied.

"Good. Don't disappoint me. Also, we would soon be leaving this place. There is nothing here for me," The boy said as he raised his head.

He disappeared into thin air.

Long Chen and the others walked through the bridge and towards the island

They were able to see a giant ship standing at the distance. The ship was so big that it could comfortably house tens of thousands of people.

Long Chen and the others reached the island.

There were guards standing before the ship with a book on their hands.

"Another checking. Aren't they being too strict?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen as he saw the checking happening at a distance.

"This is to ensure the safety of people. With this much checking, no one would dare to pretend to be someone else or steal other's tickets," Long Chen answered.

Soon, they reached the ship. It was Long Chen's turn to enter.

The guards asked him to show his ticket. Long Chen showed his ticket to the guard.

"Number 27261," the guard told another guard.

The second guard opened a book and turned pages until he found a specific page.

"Found it," he said as he stood near the first guard and showed him the page.

"Take off your mask," the guard said.

Long Chen activated the mask of mischief and took off the fake mask.

The guards matched the facial features to the description that was written on the page.

They asked his name and other details, and only after making sure that everything matched, they allowed him to enter.

Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing went through the same process before they were allowed inside.

They were led to the cabin that they were assigned. Each of them had a separate cabin.

"They gave us four cabins. Aren't two of them going to go to waste?" Ji Shan let out as he glanced at Long Chen.

"You can enjoy the extra rooms. The journey will be long. Live in a different room every night," Long Chen joked as he unlocked his room.

He entered his room. Ji Shan and the others also entered his room even though they had different rooms.

The attendant informed them that if they needed anything, they could ask the attendant that would be assigned for this block of the ship before he left.

Long Chen locked the door.

The cabin was a decent size. There was a king-size bed and two chairs there. The carpet was made from beast skin, and the walls were painted by professional painters.

"The room is decent, but now that we are here, let's focus on the plan. You said that we have two targets: the Light Heaven Continent and the Ghost Temple."

"The main problem is that we don't know the location of the Ghost Temple."
Ji Shan let out.

Chapter 488 - 488: Fear

"All we know is that it's on an island between the Dongxia Continent and the Light Heaven Continent."

"Are we going to get off the ship in the middle of the journey to search for Ghost Island, or are we going to go to Light Heaven Continent first?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen.

"I want to know the exact plan that you have in mind," He said to Long Chen.

"The plan was to get off the ship and to find the Ghost Island, but there's a slight change in the plan. We would leave the ship, but I want to find the pirates instead. It was said that the pirates attack the ships of the sects often. I want to infiltrate the pirate ship and get more information from them. As the pirates, they would definitely know the places to avoid, which include the Ghost Island," Long Chen explained.

"So you want to bully the pirates? It does sound like a better option than to just go around blindly in the sea, looking for an island," Ji Shan muttered.

"Can I ask why you want to go to Ghost Island, though? You don't have to tell me if you don't want to," he let out.

"The Ghost Temple kidnapped my father. I want to go there to see if he is alive and to help him escape if he is," Long Chen said as he explained about how his father was kidnapped before his accident.

"I know what you're thinking. I've already prepared myself for the worse. I won't lose myself if I find out that he has already been killed. I won't throw myself in the pit to die without proper strength," Long Chen let out as a subtle smile shrouded his face.

"Alright. Let's get your father out of there," Ji Shan said in a determined tone.

"There's one more thing. I want you to stay in this ship and not come with me to the pirate ships or the Ghost Temple," Long Chen suddenly said.

"What... why?" Ji Shan asked in surprise. This was the first time he heard this.

"I can take care of myself. I won't hold you back," Ji Shan insisted.

"That's not it. I want someone to go on the Light Heaven Continent."

Long Chen brought a talisman out of his storage ring.

He bit his finger and let a blood drop fall over the talisman. The blood drop disappeared as soon as it fell on the talisman.

"I found this thing in the treasury I looted."

"Here, you need to keep this. It would be difficult for me to find the way to the Light Heaven Continent after I get off of this ship. If you have this talisman that is marked with my blood, I would be able to find you, which in turn would mean that I would be able to find the Light Heaven Continent after I leave the Ghost Temple," Long Chen said as he gave him the talisman.

"So, you need someone to be your link on the continent. How about we give this to another passenger and tell him to keep it even after he gets off the ship?" Ji Shan asked.

"There are too many risks in that. Many things can go wrong. That person can throw the talisman in water, forget it, or whatever. The safest way is for you to keep it. Also, here. This ring contains five hundred thousand Black gold crystals to help you on the continent," Long Chen added as he gave Ji Shan a storage ring that was filled with five hundred thousand Black gold coins.

"Sigh, so I can't come with you. Fine, I'll hold the fort in the light heaven continent for you and collect the information about the continent," Ji Shan agreed.

'That's great. Thank you," Long Chen thanked the man.

They discussed more of the details about the plan and how everything would be followed. Long Chen also told Mingyu and Zhiqing that he would send them in the Fake World before he would infiltrate the pirate ships. He basically planned to keep them with him without putting them in danger.

He hadn't realized, but there was a subtle change in him.

Since he saw his family attacked, he was afraid. He was not afraid for his life or to be defeated, but he was afraid of losing the ones he cared about. He wanted to keep them with him without putting them in danger, which he himself found to be wrong, but he couldn't control that fear. He also felt like something was influencing his fear, making it stronger.

It's also why he exchanged the demon sheath for the fake world ring in an instant. He only had one weakness that was his close ones. He didn't want to lose them or put them in danger even if it meant losing a future opportunity to own a powerful weapon.

He felt like he could gain weapons any time he wanted. It had only been a few years since he started cultivating, and he had already reached such great heights in cultivation. He also believed that he would get more powerful treasures after passing the other bloodline trials. For him, there would never be a lack of treasures or skills in this world, but once he lost his family, he would never be able to gain them back.

Keeping them in the fake world was the safest he could keep them. The fake world was just like this current world. It was just as big and similar in a lot of ways. The only difference was that it didn't have anyone other than the people that Long Chen sent inside.

He knew that there were many instances where he could die, and there would be many more instances like that in the future. As long as his family was inside the fake world, they could live the rest of their lives peacefully even after his death.

No one other than him could access the fake world. Even if the ring was destroyed, the fake world would still exist as the fake world was not actually inside the fake world ring. He was told that it was in a different space, and the ring only established a link between him and that space.

Just like people were able to leave this world and go to higher worlds, people were able to leave the fake world as well once they were strong enough, which gave them an opportunity to leave the world but only after they were strong. If they were weak, they could stay inside peacefully and in the safety of the different space.

Long Chen didn't want to control his family, but his fear of losing his family was greater than anything, and the Fake World gave him the resources to make that happen.

If he were still alive as he reached the peak, he would be able to make them the ruler of the land. No one would harm God's family like someone tried to do before, and if he died, then also, no one would be able to harm his family.

After discussing everything, Ji Shan went back to his room.

The food was delivered to their rooms, which was pretty decent quality. The ships had professional chefs working to take care of the eating needs of the humans.

"Want to go to the deck? The sea should be beautiful," Zhiqing asked Long Chen and Mingyu.

"Let's go. I was also thinking about checking the ship out," Long Chen muttered as he glanced at her.

The journey between the two continents was said to take over a month to complete even when the ship traveled like the wind.

Long Chen also invited Ji Shan.

All of them walked towards the deck.

Chapter 489 - 489: From The Past Life

Long Chen and the others walked through the staircase to get over the deck of the ship.

The ship was long and wide filled with many people, all going to the light heaven continent in the hopes of finding a better life. The deck also didn't disappoint Long Chen.

Even though there was a barrier surrounding the ship, it wasn't preventing the wind from entering. The chilling wind was something that everyone was enjoying on the deck.

As soon as Long Chen stepped over the deck, he was greeted with a beautiful sky above his head. The sky was slightly yellow at the moment, which made it seem like it was evening even though it was still afternoon. A rainbow was also visible at the farthest edge of the horizon.

He could feel the cold sea breeze grazing through his skin, making him feel good.

There were already hundreds of people on the deck. Some of them were old while some were young.

"All of them are going to the Light Heaven Continent in hopes of getting a better life, unaware of the sad reality that most of them won't get it," Ji Shan muttered as he glanced at everyone.

"They can probably afford a life in the light heaven continent. I don't think there's anyone who's poor here. All of them would be able to live a decent life, even though it might not be what they thought for most of them. A good life is always more expensive," Long Chen responded.

"Most of them will be disappointed with what they see there," he added. "I think only a few of them would be able to achieve anything significant there."

"Huh, you talk like everyone else is stupid, and only you're smart—such a braggart. You can't even show your ugly face, and you think you have the right to claim that the others won't achieve anything. Who gives you the right to talk so big!"

Long Chen had casually commented, but his words were heard by a few people. They all frowned, but none of them said anything except a girl who was now glaring at Long Chen.

The girl looked like she was in her early 20s. She had a decent figure, which was attractive for most of the men, but Long Chen didn't care about that. He just looked at her face, which was more interesting for him.

Her face reminded him of someone that he had known long ago.

There was a girl in his previous life that was like the bully in the class. She also annoyed Long Chen some times. This girl reminded him of that girl. She looked exactly the same.

"Are you Li Na?" Long Chen asked her.

"What the fuck are you talking about? Have you gone crazy?" The girl asked him as she looked at him weirdly.

"You reminded me of someone I knew," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

"Hmph, you think I haven't heard lines like these before? All boys are like this. They see a pretty girl and start using these cheap lines. Scram, I don't waste my time on people like you. Control your mouth from next time," The girl said with a disgusted look on her face.

She was just about to turn back when she heard Long Chen's reply, which made her blood boil.

"I don't want to flirt with you. In fact, I want to stay away from people that look like you," Long Chen said to her. What he meant was that he wanted to stay away from people that reminded him of his previous life, but the girl took it as an insult.

"Are you claiming that I look ugly! You bastard! You must be looking to die!" the girl let out in anger as she turned back, but her blood boiled even more as she saw Long Chen ignoring her and walking towards the other side of the ship.

"Fine. Be arrogant. I will show you!" The girl stomped her foot on the floor before she left.

Long Chen and the others walked to the main deck and stood near the edge with their hands on the railings.

"The water is so dark. Why is that?" Zhiqing asked as she saw the black water.

"We should be in the region that's called the Black Swamp. This portion of the sea has black water. No one knows why exactly that is, but it's one of the

safest places in the sea. No ship was ever harmed when it was in the Black Swamp from what I heard," Long Chen explained to her.

"Oh, what are the other regions of the sea?" Zhiqing asked again.

"There's Clear Sea which is filled with sea monsters. That's one of the most dangerous places for the ship. The chances of the ship being attacked when in the Clear Sea are the highest. You will see when it happens. It is said that the ships face at least one attack in the clear Sea by a monster," Long Chen answered her.

There's also a chaotic sea that is not a part of the Clear Sea or the Black Swamp. That place is where the pirate ships roam. If we are lucky, we will see pirates there," Long Chen answered her. "But sometimes we can also find Pirates in the chaotic sea and black swamp as well, but they generally stay in the Chaotic Sea. The Chaotic Sea is shrouded with powerful winds, which makes it difficult for our large ship to move fast. They are able to utilize that to their advantage," he further said.

"Is there a pattern to these sea regions?" Zhiqing asked him again.

"There is, but it's quite tough to remember. It's not like three regions occur in an orderly manner. There would be hundreds of black swamps in the sea and hundreds of clear seas mixed in between which will have Chaotic Sea as well. The thing is that we are pretty safe on this ship unless things go wrong. The barrier will stop most of the disasters," Long Chen explained.

"But there are limitations to the barrier as well. In some cases, if the impact is too powerful, the barrier might break. And it can only stop things from entering, but not from leaving. If you fall off the ship, you will drop in the sea and won't be able to enter,"

"So Cultivators can't leave to attack the Beasts. They can just stay inside the bubble unless they don't want to come back," he said as he sighed.

"That sounds bad. So if there is trouble, people can just hope that the monster or the pirates will just get bored and leave? What's stopping them from continuously attacking the barrier since no one will come out?" Zhiqing inquired again.

"That's not all there is. The ship does have some attack formations carved on it. It can attack without anyone going out, but as long as the formation is damaged, people here will be like sitting ducks," Long Chen joked as he shook his head.

"Well, the attack formations of the True Dao Sect Ships and the Heavenly Slaughter Sect Ships are the best, so there shouldn't be problems like that," Ji Shan chimed in.

"There won't be, but we would be attacked. The pirates and the monsters don't care who the ship belongs to. It's safe, though. I'm just talking about the impossible scenario," Long Chen let out as he shook his head.

" There he is! That's the man!"

A girl's loud voice came from behind.

Long Chen glanced back and saw the same girl that he had met when he stepped on the deck. The same girl who left after getting insulted.

The girl was standing with a man in his late 20s who was wearing a Daoist robe.

Chapter 490 - 490: Effects Taking Place

"This friend... Were you the one that bullied my sister some time ago? Do you know how big of a crime you have committed? Hurry up and apologize to my sister and break one of your hands to apologize for your sins. Only then will we forgive you! Otherwise, you will be killed today!" The boy asked as he glanced at Long Chen arrogantly.

Long Chen ignored him as he continued talking to Ji Shan about the sea. He didn't find the boy to be worth his attention

"Did you not hear what I said?" The boy asked again.

Long Chen finally looked towards the boy.

"Let me tell you two things. First, I didn't do anything to offend her. Your sister is crazy. Second, even if I did something, You are too weak to do anything. Go back," Long Chen casually replied.

He could see the Cultivation of the boy, which was only in the first stage of the Earth Realm, which was weaker than his and his team's Cultivation.

Even Zhiqing was a second stage Earth Realm Cultivator Now. Ji Shan, on the other hand, was an 8th stage Earth Realm Cultivator and Mingyu was also in the 8th Stage, which was the same realm as Long Chen.

That boy was just too weak for them.

"You are too arrogant, but I would like to see what gives you the right to be so," The boy said as he punched towards Long Chen.

Long Chen casually moved his hand and caught the hand of the boy before flinging him in such a way that his back was resting against the railings of the ship.

"Just a single push, and you will die alone in the sea. Should I do it?" Long Chen asked as he caught his other hand as well.

"Stop you bastard!" The girl ran as well, but Ji Shan stepped forth and kept her back.

"Calm down, young lady. My friend is a little unorthodox. I don't believe that he would go easy on girls. For your own protection, stay back," Ji Shan let out as he held her hand, stopping her from going forth.

"Do it if you dare. I would like to see how you live after that!" the boy let out as he spit towards Long Chen's face.

Long Chen dodged it and saved himself from getting in contact with the boy's spit, but this was enough to make him angry.

He pulled the boy forth and gave him a loud slap.

The boy rotated 2 two times because of the impact before he fell down to the ground, unconscious. Two of his teeth were knocked out of his mouth.

"Kids these days don't know how to respect people," Long Chen muttered as he looked at the boy lying on the ground.

"Be glad that we are in the ship, or he would be lying there in tiny pieces. Take him back," Long Chen told the girl.

Ji Shan released the girl. The girl ran to her brother and picked him up.

"You will regret it," the girl venomously glared at Long Chen before she carried the boy back.

"Do you think you were too stern on the boy? This might cause some trouble," Ji Shan asked Long Chen.

"You don't know how hard it was for me to control myself from killing him. Insects like him deserve to die!" Long Chen let out as he clenched his fist.

Ji Shan just looked at Long Chen in confusion. It was as if there was something different that he hadn't seen before.

Long Chen turned back to look towards the sea.

"You need to control yourself. This is because of the effects of using Dark Sacrifice. First, you didn't care for the ones you killed, and now the effects are finally getting to affect your emotions about living strangers. You need to know that even if you believe that they are insects, you can't lose your sense of reasoning," Xun appeared near him and said.

Long Chen glanced back at her and simply nodded his head.

"I know that you can't go back to the way you were after the effects fully took effect, but you can at least pretend to care for them like a normal human would," Xun suggested.

"I will try," Long Chen muttered.

"Did you say something?" Zhiqing asked Long Chen. She was standing near him.

"Nothing," Long Chen let out as he smiled gently.

'At Least it doesn't affect them,' Long Chen thought.

He and the others kept appreciating the view before them. They were soon in the Clear Sea, which had Crystal clear water. The sea was really the most beautiful thing that Long Chen had seen so far. He could also see it sparkling at the end of the horizon.

"The clear sea is so beautiful. I would never have expected that it would be so dangerous. There might be monsters hiding anywhere, waiting to attack," Ji Shan commented as he looked at the sea.

"Just sit tight and enjoy. It'll be a good experience to see the sea monsters up close and personal," Long Chen chuckled.

He brought out four fruits from his storage ring and gave one each to Ji Shan, Mingyu and Zhiqing.

Long Chen also ate one of the fruits.

"Wearing a mask here sucks. I can't feel the nice air on my face," Long Chen complained, but he didn't take off the Mask.

They suddenly heard footsteps behind them. It sounded like a lot of people were coming here.

Long Chen turned back and saw a bearded old man standing there. The man looked like he was in his 60s. He had a head full of white hair and a long white beard. The same girl was standing behind him that had just gone back with her unconscious brother.

There were also ten more people around him that looked like the people of this old man.

The old man was a peak Earth Realm Cultivator while the other young men were Early Earth Realm Cultivators or mid-Earth Realm Cultivators.

"Did you hurt my grandson?" the old man asked Long Chen.

"Why does the grandson and the grandfather ask the same question. Didn't that idiot already tell you about me? Also, can you answer me one thing? I don't get it. I thought that the people who could afford this place would be at

least sky realm cultivators. How can someone like you afford this place? Did I underestimate the wealth of Cultivation Families in Empires?" Long Chen asked the old man.

"Am I right?" he asked Ji Shan's opinion.

"It's not that difficult to earn three hundred thousand Black gold coins after taking out all that you own and selling everything. Clans generally have thousands of years of history. It shouldn't be impossible for them to put everything on the line for an opportunity to go to the land of opportunities," Ji Shan answered Long Chen.

"You kids have grown arrogant. Today, I will punish you in place of your parents so that you learn some manners!" The old man said as he raised his hand.

He was just about to order his man to attack when Long Chen said something.

"Please don't make me do this," Long Chen said, stunning the old man. "I don't want to start a fight on this journey right after I promised that I would control myself."

"Break the bones of these bastards!" the old man commanded.

The ten men started running towards Long Chen and Ji Shan.

Long Chen sighed. He cracked his knuckles as he took his first step forth, but Ji Shan stopped him.

"Let us have a go as well. It's been so long since we got some good exercise," Ji Shan said as he walked past Long Chen.

Mingyu and Zhiqing also moved.

Long Chen couldn't help but laugh as he saw them getting excited over a fight.

He stayed back, watching them fight.

Chapter 491 - 491: Attack Of The Sea Monster

Zhiqing was fighting one of the Initial Earth Realm Cultivators while Mingyu and Ji Shan took care of the rest of them.

It had been quite some time since Long Chen saw them in action. Ji Shan was still subtle and attacked with a force that was just enough to break the defense of the enemy without affecting the surroundings, whereas Mingyu was graceful and precise.

With each step she took, she knocked out one of the enemies. She didn't kill anyone, though. Her control in her strikes was impeccable.

The old man was frowning as he watched his men being defeated. He finally took a step forth to join the fight since he was a Peak Earth Realm Cultivator. He believed that once he took part in the fight, it would be over, but as soon as he took his first step forth, a fist landed on his stomach, making him fly back. He crashed on the ground.

The old man coughed out a mouthful of blood as he sat up. He looked to the front only to find Long Chen standing there.

"When young people are fighting, old men shouldn't interfere," Long Chen let out.

Long Chen glanced at the girl who took a step back in fear before he glanced back towards the fight.

The fight was almost over, and all of the people brought by the old man were defeated. They were lying on the ground, but they were still alive.

"That was incredible. You have improved a lot since the last time I saw you. Keep practicing, and you will reach the peak," Long Chen said to Mingyu and the others with a praising look on his face.

He stood up and walked towards the old man.

The old man stood up and brought out his sword, but Long Chen still hadn't brought his weapon out.

"Go on, do it. Attack me," Long Chen said in a voice that sounded like a grim reaper.

The old man didn't know why, but he had a feeling that if he attacked, it would be the biggest mistake of his life.

Long Chen didn't stop as he continued moving towards the old man.

"The heck is happening here? Who dares to fight in our ship?"

A heavy voice came from behind as more footsteps were heard.

Everyone, including Long Chen, looked in that direction to find the Commander of the ship standing there in his spotless white uniform.

There were over 20 guards standing behind him.

"Sir, I'm glad you are here! This boy is destroying all rules and regulations of this ship! First, he attacked my grandson, and when I came to ask for answers, they attacked my men and me. You can see the conditions of my men already. They are the ones lying on the ground," The Old man immediately changed tones and put all the blame on Long Chen and the others.

"You know that it's a crime to fight on this ship?" The commander asked Long Chen.

"I do know that, but defending yourself against the attack is not a crime. Whether it was his grandson or him, both of the times, we were attacked first. We only retaliated in self-defense," Long Chen answered the chief guard.

"You need to come with me. Since you both are involved in this, you will both be punished, but first, we will need to interrogate to find out the truth. Put down the weapon and drop down to your knees," The Commander declared.

The old man instantly dropped down to his knees and threw the sword away. Long Chen, on the other hand, stayed standing.

"Is this not the ship of the True Dao Sect?" Long Chen asked the commander of the guards.

"It is," the Commander replied.

"Then why are you punishing the ones that defended themselves? The Mu Clan Young Master told me that defending yourself on the ship wasn't a crime. Are you telling me that he lied?" Long Chen asked the commander.

The Commander looked at him like he was looking at an idiot.

"Hah, Are you claiming that Young Master Mu talked to you and told you that? Who the hell do you think you are? He's the Prince of the True Dao Sect, who wouldn't stoop to a level low enough to talk to you. Young Master Mu is the most out of reach person for someone to get close to. I might have

believed you if you had said someone else's name, but now your lie is clear. I believe him more than you know," the Commander said as he rolled his eyes.

"Right right. He is a liar! He doesn't respect anyone as he even involved young master Mu in his lies," the old man said as he pointed towards Long Chen.

Long Chen shook his head as he brought out the token given to him by Mu Fan.

"I don't know who you insulted more— me or him," Long Chen let out.

"That token..." the commander was stunned to see the token. He stepped forth and took the token from Long Chen's hand. He observed it and realized that it was Mu Fan's personal token.

'He gave him the token? Just what is this identity of this man to be Young Master Mu's friend?' The Commander thought as he looked at the token.

"I'm sorry. It was my mistake. I didn't recognize Sir," the commander apologized as he gave the token back to Long Chen. Even though he still didn't know who Long Chen was, he decided that it would be clever to think of him at the same level as a disciple of the True Dao Sect.

The old man was sitting on his knees, looking at everything with wide eyes.

"Arrest them for inciting violence and attacking our guests," The Commander told his men to arrest the old man and the others that were still lying on the ground.

The Commander apologized to Long Chen once again before he left with the others.

"This token is quite useful. Was this why you weren't afraid of creating trouble?" Ji Shan asked Long Chen after he saw the others leave.

"Maybe," Long Chen muttered as he smiled. Long Chen had a long talk with Mu Fan about the token and what he could do with it when he went to meet him, so he knew that he was safe

They walked back to the edge of the ship as they continued looking at the sea.

After half an hour, Long Chen suggested that they should go back and Cultivate.

Long Chen and the others turned back to leave. A few seconds after they turned back, a tentacle came out of the water and stuck onto the ship.

Long Chen felt the ship jerk a little. He looked back in the water.

"Here it is... We are under attack," Long Chen let out as he noticed the tentacle.

Soon, another tentacle came out of the water.

One after another, 20 tentacles came out of the water and surrounded the ship.

"We need to tell the captain!" Zhiqing suggested in a concerned tone.

"The Ship Captain already knows. There are formations on the ship that alerts them whenever they are under attack. Don't worry and just enjoy the show," Long Chen chuckled as he held her hand and pulled her closer to the railing.

"Seems like a Sky Realm Beast. Isn't this just the start of the journey? If the weakest beast we saw is an initial sky realm beast, just what will we face in the future?" Ji Shan asked with a wry smile on his face. He knew that the beginning journey was the easiest generally, but even on the easiest journey, they faced a monster.

"That's why I said just wait and enjoy the show. This ship is prepared for the worse it could face,"

Chapter 492 - 492: Lang Jing's Father

"This sky realm beast is nowhere close to that level. It's like an insect trying to stop an Earth Shaking Elephant," Long Chen said.

Long Chen and the others watched the tentacles surrounding the ship with great interest, waiting to see the response from the ship captain.

There was a barrier surrounding the ship that was stopping the tentacles from entering the ship, but it didn't stop the tentacles from wrapping the whole barrier.

"It's about to start," Long Chen said as he noticed that the flow of energy in the barrier was increasing slowly.

The surface outside the barrier was suddenly electrocuted. Long Chen and the others could see the flickers of lightning with their own eyes.

The tentacles were electrified, and they lost their grip on the barrier.

The barrier was freed, and the tentacles again entered the water.

"So that was its defense. Amazing. Do you think it will attack again?" Zhiqing asked Long Chen.

"It most probably won't attack again. It's a weak Monster, and I don't believe that it would attack again. It's like a child who was trying its luck hoping to find weaker ships," Long Chen replied.

"The Monsters in the middle of the journey will be the most persistent ones," he added.

"If it attacks again, we will just get another good show to watch," Long Chen muttered.

They waited there for some more time, but the monster didn't come back.

"I guess that was it. Let's go back. We will be in the middle of the sea after 12-15 days. That's when the real fun will begin," Long Chen muttered as he looked back.

Long Chen and the others walked back to the living quarters. Ji Shan stayed in his room while Mingyu and Zhiqing lived in Long Chen's room.

The rest of the time was spent in Cultivation in the silence of their room. The only time the peace was broken was when the servants brought food to their rooms.

The day passed away in Cultivation, and the night passed away in dual Cultivation.

Long Chen and his girls grew strong with each passing day.

Long Chen also wanted to give the dual Cultivation to Ji Shan, but he didn't even have a girl yet.

Long Chen had decided that he would give a copy of the Dual Cultivation Manual to Ji Shan so that he would be able to use it when he goes to the Light Heaven Continent and if he finds a suitable girl there that he liked.

The next morning, Long Chen left the room and walked into Ji Shan's room.

He gave him the Dual Cultivation Manual copy and described it. He also explained that there were no side effects to it and that he would be able to grow after he finds a girl he likes.

"Is this why you guys were so active at night? I thought you had suddenly gone over to the lustful side of the spectrum," Ji Shan chuckled as he took the Dual Cultivation Manual copy and placed that in his storage ring.

"Something along those lines. This skill is really useful. Don't give it to anyone you don't trust. This skill has a certain history behind it. I found it in the Divine Heaven Sect. There are some remnants of that sect that are still alive. Some of them might come after you if it somehow reaches their ears," Long Chen warned Ji Shan.

He told him everything about Divine Heaven Sect and what he needed to be careful of when dealing with this skill and privacy.

After telling Ji Shan everything, Long Chen left the room.

He was about to enter his room when he saw someone at the other end of the hallway. That person was walking away.

'He is here?' Long Chen thought as he recognized that person.

That person was an old man whom Long Chen had met before coming to this ship.

He was Lang Jing's Father.

"Is he going back to the Light Heaven Continent? He must have realized that Lang Jing is dead. I wonder if his plan about the Dark Soul Sect was successful or not," Long Chen thought as he glanced towards the man.

The old man felt like someone was looking at him. The man turned back but found no one there. Long Chen had already entered the room.

"He's going in the same direction. I can probably find the place he belongs to if I don't leave the ship, but he's just not that important. The Ghost Temple is more important at the moment. I don't have anything to do with that old man anymore," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

He sat down on the ground and started cultivating in the silence of the room.

Days kept passing, and soon, two days passed away.

The ship again started shaking. Long Chen and the others opened their eyes.

"What is that?" Zhiqing let out as she stood up.

The shaking was increasing.

"Another Monster attack probably. Let's see," Long Chen muttered as he stepped out of the room.

Ji Shan was already standing out of his room. They moved towards the deck together.

The deck had quite a lot of people. They were all looking at the sky.

Two swan-like creatures were flying in the sky, firing balls of ice at the barrier of the ship.

"Frozen Trigger Swan?" Long Chen muttered as he looked at the beast.

It was a beast that looked like a swan, but it was blue in color. It also had a fish-like gill near his neck that was its specialty.

Because of the gills, it was able to breathe Underwater as well. This beast was as comfortable inside the water as it was outside the water.

"There's two of them, and they keep attacking from a distance. Can the lightning barrier of the ship take care of them?" Zhiqing asked.

"Don't worry, young lady; this ship is not as weak as you believe. It will be over soon," A person said.

Long Chen and the others looked in that direction and realized that they were standing near the commander of the guards.

"It should be starting soon," the Commander said as he glanced upwards.

A formation appeared at the edge of the ship, which started shining brightly. A beam of lightning left the formation and hit one of the swans, killing it instantly.

The other swan screeched in anger, but another beam of lightning came out of the formations and attacked the swan. The swan dodged the beam of lightning, but it was struck by a different ray of light that appeared from another formation.

The swan was also dead. It started falling down. It soon crashed into the ground, splashing a lot of water towards the sky.

"This one was slightly stronger. I understand what you meant by the fact that the monsters will keep getting stronger the further we go," Zhiqing muttered. The Swan was stronger than the monster that they had seen last time, but only by a little.

"That's how these things go. But no matter how strong they get, they will never be able to affect the ship. This ship has the best defense mechanism of them all, and it's designed to take on the strongest monsters one could face in the sea easily. We are not like the small sects who provide travel without security," The Commander proudly said as he smiled.

"The show is over, but it will only get better as we get to see stronger monsters. You can also treat it as an amusement ride where you'll get to see strong monsters being hunted with your own eyes," He added.

"It's a new experience, and it is fun to see how these things work. I am liking this ship ride," Ji Shan chuckled as he agreed.

Chapter 493 - 493: The Choice

"I'm more excited to get to the Chaotic Sea. The pirates will be a better sight to see," Long Chen commented as he smiled.

He wanted to find a pirate group, probably in the middle of the sea, as the ones in the center would be more prone to know about the whole sea compared to the ones that lived near the edge.

"Well, I've been working on this ship for a long time, and I can tell you that we will meet the pirates. Those bastards are always in the sea, waiting for ships from the continents or from the smaller populated Islands. I don't think there was ever a trip of this ship where we didn't face the pirates," The Commander of the guards commented.

"Have you seen the pirate ship being destroyed before?" Ji Shan asked the commander.

"A few times, but most of the time, they are able to escape. Whenever they see the situation going against them, they turn tail and escape. We don't bother with chasing them as our main purpose is not to battle with the pirates but to take the people safely to the Light Heaven Continent," the Commander replied.

"Oh right, I should inform you about the people that we arrested for attacking you. It turned out that they are a group of people that didn't know the rules, and they did break it. We have their confession, and they will be punished. Only the girl won't be punished because she didn't attack you from what we got. I was just about to come to find you to ask you if that was true, or did the girl attack you?" the man asked Long Chen.

"She's just stupid. Let her be, she didn't attack me," Long Chen answered as he shook his head, agreeing with the information that the man collected.

"Alright. We will deal with them the way the law dictates, but if there's something you want them to do to forgive them, you can also do that," the man reminded Long Chen.

"I don't care about those insects. Do what you want," Long Chen answered casually.

"Alright," the man agreed. He was quite impressed by Long Chen's demeanor and put him in an even higher position in his eyes, looking at his attitude.

"The show is over. We will take our leave now," Long Chen told the Commander before he started walking away.

"Thanks for explaining everything," Ji Shan and Zhiqing thanked the man before they started following after Long Chen.

Long Chen and the others were roaming on the ship, taking a tour of the unexplored regions of the ship like a full-fledged restaurant in the ship that served guests but they charged black gold coins.

The restaurant was half full. Long Chen could see that most of the people present in the restaurant had a Cultivation of the Sky Realm. Most of them were Initial Sky Realm Cultivators, while a rare few of them were the Mid Sky Realm Cultivators.

Long Chen didn't see any High Sky Realm Cultivator on the deck, but he knew that there were probably a few high Sky Realm Cultivators on the ship. He had already seen Lang Jing's father, who was a Half Step Heaven Grade Cultivator.

Fortunately, there was no way for Lang Jing's father to recognize Long Chen. Long Chen had activated his Heaven's Shroud, which was showing that he was an initial Sky Realm Cultivator. It also faked his aura. No one was able to match the new aura to the aura of Long Chen even if they had met him before.

There was also a small garden on the ship itself for people to take their morning walks in and to refresh their minds.

There were many more attractions on the ship, some of which were like people playing sports with other people on the ship and many more.

It was like a luxurious ship that tried to give the perfect trip to the travelers.

"No wonder their services are the most expensive. Even though they take a lot of money for their tickets, they do provide some nice features on their ships," Long Chen muttered.

They traveled to all the places that they could on the ship, even the captain's room. They weren't allowed to enter the room, though.

After the tour of the ship, Long Chen walked back to his rooms and again resumed his cultivation. The others also got busy in their cultivation, trying to break through while they could.

It was Long Chen's third day on the ship.

He looked inside the Fake World Ring like always to see if everything was alright or not.

Before today, whenever he looked inside the ring, he only saw the angry face of Long Xue Ying, but now she was finally looking somewhat calm.

She was talking with his mother. The anger was not visible on her face, unlike other times.

Long Xue Ying finished her conversation with his mother and went into her room.

Long Chen decided that it was the perfect time to talk to her since she might finally listen to him calmly.

Long Chen looked back and saw that Mingyu and Zhiqing were cultivating behind him on the bed.

He thought that if he was wrong and Long Xue Ying started yelling furiously, it might disturb the girls' Cultivation.

He stood up and left the room as he walked towards one of the empty rooms that were assigned to Mingyu and Zhiqing. Long Chen had the keys of all three rooms since Mingyu and Zhiqing lived in his room instead.

He entered the room that was assigned to Mingyu, as that was the room that was closest to him.

Long Chen entered the room and closed the door so that the voice wouldn't escape even after Long Xue Ying screamed in her anger.

Long Chen used his consciousness to bring her out of the Fake World and into his room.

Long Xue Ying was sitting on his bed when she found out that her surroundings were different. She was on a separate bed in a different room, and Long Chen was standing before her.

"Are you ready to listen to me now?" Long Chen asked her.

"You kidnapped me without listening to me, and now you want me to listen to you?! I heard the explanation from Patriarch and Aunt Ziyi, and I understand what happened. I still want to go back to my place! Let me leave!" Long Xue

Ying declared. She was controlling her voice, though. Even though it looked like she wanted to lash out on Long Chen, she was controlling her anger.

"It's impossible to go back. I can't go back there even if I wanted to, let alone you. It's impossible. We are on a ship that is in the sea outside our continent, and it's not going back. We will just be killed if I suggest going back because it's the ship of our enemy. We are hiding in the enemy's den. You need to understand that whatever happened has already happened. We can't change it, and we can't bring him back to life. We can't even take revenge without proper strength," Long Chen said as he shook his head.

"A..."

Long Xue Ying was about to say something, but Long Chen started talking again without giving her a chance to speak.

A small booklet appeared in his hand out of thin air.

"I am giving you the opportunity to get the strength that can help you get your revenge. As long as you get that strength, you can take that revenge for yourself and go back to the enemy's house. Think carefully. You can leave this room and die without achieving anything, or you can wait and let me help you get strong so that you will be capable of taking your revenge without dying. The decision is yours," Long Chen let out, without explaining what the booklet in his hand was.

Chapter 494 - 494: Pirates

Long Xue Ying got off the bed and glared at Long Chen, but she didn't move.

"I want the strength! I want to kill all the bastards that had a hand in what happened!" Long Xue Ying declared as she clenched her fist.

"Good. This is the skill that is considered to be one of the strongest cultivating skills of the Dongxia continent. Take it and get the strength that you want! Use this to reach the great heights in the path of Cultivation. A height great enough that makes everyone else before you look like ants," Long Chen let out as he glanced at her in full seriousness.

Long Xue Ying stepped forth and took the booklet from Long Chen's hand.

"I'll send you back so that you can begin your journey of Cultivation with this skill. Stay in the safety of that world and Cultivate inside. If you want to get revenge, this is your one and only option. Remember my words," Long Chen muttered before he sent her back to the fake world.

"Sigh, it's difficult dealing with emotional girls, but that went well," Long Chen let out as he shook his head. He stepped forth and laid on the bed.

"You think that is difficult? Try being the babysitter of a boy that keeps killing people and offending people left and right," Xun appeared near him as he started laughing.

"Why should I care if some insects get offended. What can they do now? I had only one weakness, and they can't get to it now. Those insects are not worth worrying about anymore," Long Chen let out as he smiled.

He was the most carefree he had ever been after the addition of the Fake World, which boosted his confidence as well. Along with the effects of the Dark Sacrifice, he was getting slightly affected. He was happy that he didn't need to worry about anyone either. Now he was able to deal with problems at his own pace without worrying about the safety of other people.

He was able to escape from the troubles or go all out when needed without caring for those around him. He felt like he was the safest he has ever been.

Long Chen rested on the bed for a few minutes before he left the room.

He happened to walk out of the room right when Lang Jing's father was passing by that place.

Lang Jing's father glanced towards Long Chen, who was wearing the Mask of Mischief and another mask on top of that.

He found the physique of the person before him familiar, but the aura and everything else was different. He shook his head before he walked away.

Long Chen also walked in the opposite direction and entered his room.

Mingyu and Zhiqing were still cultivating.

Long Chen also sat down on the ground near the wall and indulged himself in Cultivation.

Time continued passing, and with each passing second, Long Chen's Cultivation increased, whether it was the day or the night.

The Ship during the journey faced even more sea Monsters, but they were dealt with just as swiftly as the other beasts before them. They ship didn't need to stop for even a second during the journey because of the obstruction.

Ten days passed away in the safety of the ship. People felt some jerks and watched the attacks of the Monsters on them. Most of the passengers on the ship had confidence in the defense mechanism of the ship.

They just treated the monster attacks like an entertainment experience. There was something entertaining for them about watching the strong beasts being killed like weaklings right before their eyes.

Long Chen and the others only left their rooms to see the beast attacks once or twice in the last ten days and spent most of the time after that on the rooms.

Since the 10th day was over, Long Chen had started to actively go out of his room to keep an eye on the sea during the day.

He realized that they were almost in the middle of their journey, and it was almost the time where the ships often faced pirates according to the information that he had received.

For the next few days, Long Chen spent most of his time on the deck, waiting for the pirates to come.

He did see the girl on the deck that reminded him of the girl in his past life, but she stayed away from him as if she was scared now. Every time she came across Long Chen, she ran away.

More time passed, and it was the 14th day. Long Chen was standing at the edge of the ship when he saw a ship at a distance, coming towards them.

The Ship had a black flag on top, which had a skull symbol on it. Even though it was almost night, Long Chen was clearly able to see the flag.

Long Chen couldn't help but smile as he saw what he was looking for.

He hurriedly walked back to his room and informed Mingyu and Zhiqing that it was time to leave. He sent them in the fake world near his mother before he left his room.

The ship had started shaking, which meant that the ship was being attacked. Long Chen realized that the pirates had probably started their attacks.

Long Chen knocked on Ji Shan's door.

Ji Shan opened the door. Long Chen entered the room and closed the door behind him.

"Ji Shan, the pirate ship is here. It's time for me to leave. Here, keep this Mu Clan badge. It will help you. Also, keep the location talisman I gave you close to you. Don't lose it, or I might not be able to find the Light Heaven Continent. And use the Mu Clan badge, it will give you power in the ship. Stay safe and take care, brother. We will meet again soon," Long Chen let out as he stepped forth and hugged Ji Shan firmly.

"You too. Take care, man. I will never forgive you if you died on me. Remember that! You must come back. I would love to show you your sister in law that I will find there. Don't delay or you might miss our marriage," Ji Shan said as he chuckled.

Long Chen couldn't help but laugh as he heard Ji Shan's response.

"I won't miss your marriage at any cost. I'll even be there when your baby will be born. Don't disappoint me, though. I'll beat you up if you don't have a woman by the time I come back," Long Chen responded as he smiled.

"It's a promise," Ji Shan said as he nodded his head with a beautiful smile on his face.

Long Chen nodded his head before he left the room and walked back to the deck. Ji Shan also walked after him to see him leave.

Long Chen walked over the deck and noticed that the ship of the True Dao Sect and the Pirate Ship were engaged in battle. Both of them used their ship

battle formations to attack the other ship, but both of the ships had Defensive barriers as well.

Long Chen realized that this was the perfect time to leave now that everyone was engaged in watching the exchange of attacks.

Long Chen walked to the empty side of the deck and jumped out of the ship. He passed through the barrier with ease.

He brought his Spirit Sword out of his storage ring and landed on it.

He also activated the First skill of his law of darkness— Shadow Transformation. Long Chen disappeared and became invisible as he flew towards the pirate ship.

Ji Shan was standing in the back, watching everything.

"You never fail to amaze me," Ji Shan shook his head before he walked back.

Chapter 495 - 495: Infiltration

Long Chen was standing on his Spirit Sword while the Shadow Transformation was activated, flying towards the ship of the pirates. He could see the attacks of both sides, which he made sure to avoid.

Soon, he reached near the Pirate Ship, but he didn't try entering. He was sure that the barrier surrounding the ship probably had a similar mechanism that would stop and harm him if he tried to force his way inside.

Long Chen chose a much easier way instead. The barrier surrounding the pirate ship was semi-transparent, just like the barrier of the True Dao Sect Ship, which was made like that so that the people inside the barrier could see what was happening on the outside.

Because of the semi-transparent Barrier, Long Chen was able to see inside it without any difficulty, which made it easy for him to teleport on the ship, but Long Chen wanted to find the safest place to enter.

He flew around the pirate ship to find the location which didn't have pirates. Soon, he found the place as most of the pirates were standing towards the front of the ship. Only a few random Servants were standing on the other portions of the ship.

Long Chen teleported in one of the portions like that. He was in the Southwest portion of the ship, which was towards the back.

As Long Chen entered the ship, he used his Divine Sense to find the location of everyone in the ship so that he could see how many enemies he needed to face.

From what he noticed, there were 50 pirates and 150 slaves that worked on the miscellaneous stuff on the ship.

Long Chen mainly wanted to focus on the strong pirates, which could create problems for him. It was easy to handle the weak ones using fear and force, but that was only possible after finishing the strong Cultivators.

He knew who he needed to kill for that.

While his Shadow Transformation lasted, he walked towards the pirate cultivators that he found to be a threat.

The Shadow Transformation made him invisible and hid his aura, which made it impossible for the other to find out where he was unless the strength

difference was vast enough. The only side effect was that the skill didn't last for long.

Long Chen appeared behind the Pirate Chief of the ship that was looking towards the True Dao Sect Ship.

"Keep attacking! We will definitely break their defense!. Keep going! Once we break through their defense, we will get treasures, and we will get the Women! Fight for what you need! Use everything! Make the servants move the equipment faster so that the attack formation gets more powe..."

The Pirate Chief was in the middle of his sentence when a sword penetrated his chest from behind and came out of the front. Long Chen had intentionally missed the vitals of the Pirate Chief.

Long Chen pulled his sword out. The Pirate Chief dropped down to his knees.

Long Chen's Shadow Transformation stopped working; but he had already done what he needed to do. Most of the strong Cultivators were killed without anyone finding out. Only the pirate chief was left, and now, he was also dealt with.

Fortunately, the people on this ship had low Cultivation. They mostly depended on the ship's defense, and its battle formation.

Even the strongest person on the ship, the Pirate Chief, was only a mid-Sky Realm cultivator.

Long Chen became visible before everyone.

"I am the new chief of this ship! You will all listen to my commands from now on! Those who oppose will die," Long Chen declared before he swung his sword once again and cut off the right hand of the Pirate Chief.

He didn't stop and cut off the other hand of the Pirate Chief as well.

"You bastard! Leave our chief!" One of the pirates ran towards Long Chen, but Long Chen simply whistled. A sword came flying and cut off the head of that person.

"Anyone else have any doubts? You can step forward. I would love to deal with you at once. If you stay back, then I would take that as your support. If anyone betrays me after that, their deaths won't be as simple as his. Decide now!" Long Chen let out.

No pirate moved, and they all stayed back.

"Good. You understand. I hope you're just as sensible in the future," Long Chen let out as he smiled.

He walked ahead of the man.

Only Long Chen's eyes were visible through the mask that he was wearing.

"You want to know why I haven't killed you yet?" Long Chen asked the Chief.

"Y-you attacked me from the back, and you dare talk to me like that! Kill me like the coward you are. Don't pretend to be brave now," The Pirate Chief said in a weak tone.

"Don't misunderstand. The end result would still be the same, even if I attacked you from the front. It's just that I don't want to waste my time on that. I'm in a hurry," Long Chen let out.

Long Chen looked back towards the pirates.

"Stop the attacks and turn the ship back! We are leaving now! Start moving back!" Long Chen commanded the men.

The pirates followed his command and stopped the attacks. The ship was turned back, and it started leaving.

The people on the True Dao Sect Ship were surprised. Especially the people that worked on the ship.

The Commander of the guards of the True Dao Sect Ship, couldn't understand what was happening. The battle had just started, and the enemy was leaving? It was the first time this had happened so fast, especially when the enemy were the Pirates of the center sea.

The captain of the ship was also surprised, but he didn't let the fact of enemies leaving blind him.

He kept moving the ship forth while staying alert for another attack from another side. Whatever happened to the pirates didn't matter to him in the least. He didn't need to chase after them either..The only thing that he cared about was continuing on the journey so that he would complete it on time.

The Pirate Ship started moving back, but Long Chen was still focused on the Pirate Chief.

"Kill me!" the chief said to Long Chen again.

"No. I won't kill you, but I would ask you to work for me. If you do that, you will get all the Treasures you could possibly ask for, and I would give you a life-giving pill that will heal you and your hands. The decision is yours," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

"Who here knows about the Ghost Island?" Long Chen asked the pirates that were standing on the back.

These two words were enough to shock the pirates. Even the Pirate Chief was stunned. Fear was evident on their faces.

"Why are you asking about the Ghost Island?" The Pirate Chief asked.

"I am from the Ghost Island. I want to go back there. As long as you escort me back, I would give you the treasures that will make you all-powerful in the sea. You must already know the power of our ghost temple. And you must also know that your barrier couldn't stop me from entering, that should be enough for you to judge my abilities. If you still don't listen to me, I would just kill you and use the servants to handle the ship and take it to ghost Island."

"It's just easier with you guys around as I don't have to tell you the directions like a child since you must already know where our Island is. Tell me your answers," Long Chen let out as he roamed his gaze over everyone.

Chapter 496 - 496: Pirate King

He also showed the Life-Giving Pill to the Pirate Chief.

"I-i will listen to you," the Pirate Chief agreed.

"Good. Here, take this Life Healing Pill. It will heal your chest wound, but your hand won't be healed. Only the Life-Giving Pill can heal your hands, which I will give you after you take me back," Long Chen said as he threw the Life Healing Pill in the Pirate Chief's mouth.

As soon as the Pirate Chief ate the Life Healing Pill, his chest started healing, and his shoulders stopped bleeding. His hands didn't recover, though. He had no hands now.

"You will only get your hands back after you get me to the Ghost Island. Before that, you can forget about that," Long Chen let out, shaking his head.

"I will listen to you, but I can't take this ship near the Ghost Island. It's impossible with the Ghost Barrier that surrounds the whole place. Please forgive us, but the ship can't handle the attack of the ghosts near that barrier. We can take you closer to that barrier, but if we go further, our ship will be destroyed, and we will die," the Pirate Chief let out, shaking his head.

"As I said, I am from the Ghost Temple. I will handle everything. Take me there, or I will destroy your ship right now," Long Chen said, firmly.

"I... You have a way to protect the ship from the Ghosts?" The Pirate Chief asked.

"If the people of the Ghost Temple won't have the way to enter, then will you be the one to know? Just shut up and do as I say. You will be able to pass through the Ghost Barrier without any difficulty," Long Chen let out.

Even though he was lying, he made it convincing for them. Also, he wasn't afraid of ghosts since he already had some exchanges with the spirits and knew that they couldn't harm him.

The Pirate Captain seemed convinced.

"Turn the ship to the South!" he commanded his men.

Long Chen wanted to ask how long it would take them to get to the Ghost Island, but he knew that it was not something he could ask now that he was pretending to be a Ghost Temple disciple.

The ship changed its direction and started to move towards the south.

Long Chen got a chair and sat on the front of the ship, facing his back towards the sea so that he could keep an eye on the whole ship.

He also made the pirate chief sit before him to prevent him from coming up with a scheme behind his back.

The pirate chief had a small telescope, which he used to keep an eye on the sea while he sat before Long Chen.

The journey continued for half a day before the direction of the wind changed.

The wind also started getting colder.

"We are in their area. Slow down the speed. We don't need to attract their attention, or it would simply waste our time," the Pirate Chief told his men.

The ship slowed down considerably.

Long Chen looked around curiously. He couldn't see any ghosts nearby.

"Why are you slowing down?" Long Chen asked the Chief.

"We are in the sea of the pirate king. There are rules here that we can't break. If the pirate king gets annoyed, he will destroy our ship without even trying to talk to us. The best we can do is to stay humble," the Pirate Chief replied.

'The pirate king, huh, I guess the pirates do have a hierarchy,' Long Chen thought.

"Alright. Follow the rules," Long Chen muttered.

The pirate chief nodded his head, but he suddenly stood up as he saw something at a distance.

Long Chen also stood up after seeing his stunned expression. He glanced back in the direction the Pirate Chief was looking at and saw a Ship.

"It's the ship of the Pirate King. No matter what happens, please don't speak anything. You need to hide the fact that you're from the Ghost Temple," the Pirate Chief warned Long Chen.

Long Chen didn't understand why he was so scared and why he needed to hide that he was from the Ghost Temple. The Ghost Temple should be the

biggest power here. The Pirate King shouldn't take the risk of attacking a disciple of the Ghost Temple.

"Why?" he asked the Pirate Chief since he was the only one who could answer.

"The Pirate King's wife and child were killed by a Ghost Temple disciple. He couldn't even take revenge since the Ghost Temple is a giant when it comes to power, so he couldn't attack their island in fear, but his heart is still filled with hate. If he finds out that you are from the Ghost Temple, he will try to kill you at any cost without letting you escape. Just stay silent and let me deal with him. You will be my second in command before him," The Pirate Chief declared.

"What is his Cultivation?" Long Chen inquired.

"He is said to be at the peak of Sky Realm, but it's also possible for him to be stronger," the Pirate Chief replied.

"Alright."

Long Chen agreed to play the part since facing a Peak Sky Realm expert was not something he wanted to do when he was so close to getting to the Ghost Temple.

The ship of the Pirate King stopped before the ship Long Chen was standing in.

The Pirate King's ship was twice as large compared to the other ship.

In fact, it looked just as large as the Ship of the True Dao Sect.

The Pirate Chief used his Qi to enhance his voice.

"Greetings to the Pirate King!" he declared.

"Biming! What are you doing in my region?" the Pirate King let out from the other ship.

The pirate Chief was called Biming amongst the pirates.

"We were passing by this place to get to the other side of the sea. We ask for forgiveness for our transgression," Pirate Chief Biming replied.

"You came at the right time. I sent you an invitation before, but you were already out on patrol. Join me! We are going to war," The Pirate King let out sternly.

Pirate Chief Biming was stunned at the declaration. He finally noticed that more ships were coming from behind the ship of Pirate King that belonged to other pirate chiefs. It seemed like the Pirate King was actually ready for war.

'War? Is he going to war on the Ghost Temple?' Long Chen wondered.

Pirate Chief Biming was thinking of the same thing.

"War again whom?" the Pirate Chief Biming asked the pirate king.

"War against the Rebel Pirates! I received some information that a group of stupid Pirate Chiefs are planning a rebellion. Currently, there is a meeting going on between them. We are going to crash that party. Join us unless you are with them. In that case, I will be forced to subject you to the same punishment— Death!" The Pirate King declared.

Pirate Chief Biming looked towards Long Chen in confusion. He couldn't help but shake his head as if telling Long Chen that there was no other option.

"I apologize, but we have no choice but to follow them to the war. If I deny, our ship will be destroyed, and we will die. We can only go to your place after dealing with the rebels," Pirate Chief Biming said to Long Chen as he lowered his voice.

Long Chen couldn't help but fall into a deep thought. It meant that his trip would be delayed and he would be involved in other people's problems, but he couldn't leave either.

He depended on the Pirates to lead him to the Ghost Island, which was almost impossible to find in this big sea without help. If he left, he would waste much more of his time hoping to be lucky enough to find the island.

Chapter 497 - 497: Little Elder

Long Chen could force the Pirate Chief to reject the offer of the Pirate King, but he knew that it was impossible as well since it would create more problems. He knew that if the Pirate Chief did that, their Ship would be bombarded with attacks from all directions.

Their ship would be destroyed in that case, and Long Chen's plan of finding the island will be left in the dust.

"Alright," Long Chen casually replied as he agreed. "But be fast."

The Pirate Chief looked towards the Ship of the Pirate King.

He again enhanced his voice and responded to the Pirate King.

"We will come with you. We can delay our business for the glory of us, Pirates," The Pirate Chief Biming said as he voiced his opinion in favor of the Pirate King.

The pirate chief simply responded with a 'hmm'.

The ship of the Pirate King started moving ahead. Biming's ship joined up with other ships.

The Ships started advancing in the direction which was opposite to Long Chen's destination. Long Chen could see that they were going back in the direction they came from.

He was moving away after coming closer to the Ghost Island, but there was nothing he could do about this.

"Sigh, it's going to waste so much time," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

"How do you pirates fight? Do you fight like normal with the ships or do you infiltrate other person's ship to battle them?" Long Chen asked Pirate Chief Biming out of curiosity. He only knew how they attacked the ships from the continent, but he wondered if it was the same for the battle between their own brethren.

"We can't infiltrate their ships because of the barriers, and once the barriers are destroyed, there's no need to leave the ships anymore as it becomes easy to destroy their ships and kill them without leaving the comfort of our ship," Pirate Chief Biming let out, shaking his head.

"Alright. That's what I thought as well. As long as the ship's barrier is safe, everything's fine, but once it's done, the battle is over," Long Chen muttered.

"Keep our ship in the back and save our barrier. I don't want to have to go out to choose another ship to escort me. If this ship broke, you can already imagine how it would be," Long Chen let out, warning Pirate Chief Biming.

"I don't intend to have my ship destroyed either. For us, Pirates, our ship is equal to our life. I don't want to die so soon," Pirate Chief Biming responded.

Long Chen could see a few ships moving around them since they were now a part of a fleet, but since the ships were maintaining sufficient distance between each other, it was difficult to see the people of other ships. Still, Pirate Chief Biming had worn a robe-like thing that covered him completely, hiding the fact that his hands were cut off from the eyes of others.

The Ships moved through the water against the flow of the wind. A large ship was leading the charge while the small ships were following after.

There were a total of 23 ships of Pirate Chiefs and one Ship of the Pirate King.

After moving for over half an hour, they reached the Crystal Sea, where their ships were attacked by a sea monster, but since it was a whole fleet of Pirate Ships, it didn't take even a second before that Monster was killed.

Long Chen was pretty surprised by the power of these formations. It was amazing how a single formation like this was able to kill powerful beasts.

He also had the Basic level knowledge in Formation because of the Bloodline Temple reward, so he had some understanding of how it worked.

The formation needed a massive amount of power to work every time, and that power was collected using the servants. He realized that if he had the design of the formation, he would be able to carve it as well, but it wouldn't benefit him much.

This formation needed large manpower to work every single time. He would also need to carry a large vessel with him everywhere, which wouldn't be efficient.

He wanted to make something that was similar in attack power but wouldn't require the manpower, but his knowledge was not sufficient for that.

"Give me the blueprint of this attacking formation. It seems weak. Let me modify that pattern to make it stronger," Long Chen told Pirate Chief Biming.

He didn't ask directly since there was a chance that Pirate Chief Biming would lie and say that he didn't have the blueprint, but if Long Chen brought his greed out, he would have no problem showing Long Chen the designs.

"Ah, Sorry, We don't have the pattern or the blueprint. Even the Pirate King doesn't have the Formation Specifics," Pirate Chief Biming replied.

"How is that possible? How did you get those formations on your ships without any knowledge then? At Least make a believable lie," Long Chen told him.

"I am not lying. I am telling you the truth. These formations weren't carved out by us. Whenever a Pirate needs to have the attack formation carved on their ships, they go to the Little Elder's Island to ask for her help. She is the master of formation and the most well-known formation master in the sea," Pirate Chief Biming replied.

"You have a formation master here who carved these? Interesting," Long Chen muttered.

"Yeah, Ghost Island people probably don't know about her since they have their own formation masters, but Little Elder is like heaven's blessing for us," The Pirate Chief answered Long Chen.

"She is treated like a goddess by us pirates. Even the Pirate King respects her massively," he added.

"How old is she?" Long Chen asked.

"Even if you knew about her, you wouldn't be able to recognize her. She looks like she's in her early 20s, but she is so knowledgeable and kind. She is truly Heaven's Daughter. Even though Pirate King is the King of Pirates, if we go into depths, she would be considered as the real king, because Pirate King respects her so much, he would do anything she tells him to do. But Little Elder doesn't care about power. She lives on her island, researching on various formations," Pirate Chief Biming replied.

"A formation master who looks to be in her early twenties? Probably an old woman who used some method to keep herself looking young. It's possible once someone reaches a high enough Cultivation or uses any unorthodox method," Long Chen muttered.

"True, Even though she looks young, no one knows what her true age is. She appeared here around 15 years ago and changed our lives forever. That's when

the rise of Pirates started, all because of her help. She is definitely older, but no one knows how old. It's also impossible to see her Cultivation, but she is probably very strong," Pirate Chief Biming muttered, shaking his head.

"Interesting. I am quite curious about her. What's her name?" Long Chen asked the Pirate Chief.

"Her name is Xu Aoxin," The Pirate Chief replied.

"Xu Aoxin? Does she have red hair?" Xun appeared near Long Chen and asked. She had a shocked look on her face.

No one other than Long Chen could hear his words, though.

"Does she have red hair?" Long Chen asked the question she had in her mind.

"No, she has blonde hair," the Pirate Chief replied.

"Might be similar names, I guess," Xun muttered with a thoughtful look on her face before she disappeared.

Long Chen just stood there in confusion, wondering what it was all about.

"Maybe it would be interesting to meet her one day," Long Chen muttered.

Chapter 498 - 498: Xu Aoxin

"I might further my formation knowledge if she is better than me," he added.

His words had just come out of his mouth before Xun spoke in his head.

"Stay away from everyone named Xu Aoxin. Nothing good can come from the person having that name."

'Do you have a bad memory about someone having a similar name?' Long Chen asked her. He was curious about the name and the significance behind it.

"Don't remind me about that bit*h," Xun responded in an annoyed tone.

'We are on a long journey. I have some time to listen if it's a story. I can probably get some knowledge or learn to be careful of people like them if I know about that. Come on, tell me. You already made me curious about that,' Long Chen told her.

"Forget that. It's a past that I don't want to revive. What I can say is that you must not let yourself be fooled by innocent looking girls!" Xun said, to Long Chen.

'Let me guess. She is someone who fooled Tian Shen? Someone like a friend or a lover?' Long Chen asked again. It didn't seem like he was going to drop the matter that easily.

"It doesn't matter who it was to him. What matters is that it was not good. That's why it's good to listen to your brain before your heart. That's what I always try to teach you," Xun told Long Chen.

'I already know that. I'm not going to let a girl or a guy fool myself. Don't worry about that,' Long Chen responded.

"I wonder how you can say that with a straight look at your face. You are more worrisome than Tian Shen ever was," Xun chuckled, shaking her head.

'That sounded like a low-key insult,' Long Chen replied to her with a wry smile on her face.

"That's not an insult. I'm just saying that you have a habit of jumping into problems without thinking. You are short-tempered, and you let your emotions dictate your actions. I understand that everyone is imperfect. Tian Shen had a different imperfection, and you have a different imperfection. The

whole thing is if you are able to change that imperfection into a perfection, which only time can tell,' Xun said.

'You call this imperfection, but I call this being human. It's to be faulty, and I try to make the best out of what I am,' Long Chen replied. Everybody has a different way of thinking. One person's thinking will be stupid for me, while my thinking on the same matter will be stupid for them. There is nothing right or wrong when it comes to being a human. There is no right or wrong. There is no smart or stupid. It's just the perception.'

Xun and Long Chen continued there back and forth while the ship traveled ahead into the horizon.

After traveling for over a day and a night, the ship reached another portion of the Chaotic Sea.

Long Chen looked ahead and saw a group of 20 or so ships standing near an Island.

The Pirates of those ships were on the island, involved in a meeting.

While most of the pirates were on the island, some of them were on the ships, keeping an eye on the servants and guarding the ships.

Some were even keeping an eye on the sea.

The Pirates saw the ship of the Pirate King and the others coming towards them.

Some of them instantly ran out of the ship and started running towards the meeting place to inform the Pirate Chiefs.

20 Pirate Chiefs were standing in a circle, discussing something related to attacking the Pirate King.

Their men were surrounding the area and keeping an eye on the men of other captains.

The meeting was almost near its end when a man came running towards them.

He was the trusted aid of one of the pirate chiefs, but he was stopped by the men of other pirate chiefs and prevented from going forward, but the situation turned even more chaotic when the people saw more guys coming towards them. There were people from each of the teams that appeared here.

"We need to talk with the Chiefs! The Pirate King is coming!" they informed the people guarding that place.

This small announcement shocked almost everyone that was standing guard. They not only allowed them to go ahead but followed after them as well.

"Alright. I understand how it is. So it's decided, right? Tomorrow we will..."

The Pirate Captains were about to announce the results of their meeting when they heard shouts of their man that were running towards them.

The men were shouting about the arrival of the Pirate King.

"Master, We just saw the Ship of Pirate King coming in our direction. That ship was being followed by 23 ships of different Pirate Chief."

All of them informed their Chiefs.

"They are here? Did someone inform them about our meeting? It is not good. Guys, it looks like we can't make a surprise attack. We must face them in a frontal assault. Defeat is not an option. We can't be defeated, no matter what happens," One of the Pirate Chief declared in a firm tone.

"We have no other choice, do we? Since he already knows, he won't leave us alive. We can only go all out and kill him. Let's go to our ships and deal with them," The Pirates Chiefs let out as they started running towards their Ships

After five minutes, they reached their ships with their men.

The Ships of the Pirate King and the other enemies were still on the way.

"The Pirate King was right. Twenty Pirate Chiefs would never meet privately like this if they weren't planning something against the Pirate King and the others. This is probably an attempt of them to kill the Pirate King and then rule the sea with their union. I wonder how the pirate king found out," Pirate Chief Biming muttered.

As they reached closer, they saw the ships of the rebels had started moving towards them as well.

It was a battle that was about to be fought between the Pirate King and his 23 Supporters against the 20 rebel pirate chiefs.

The Ships stood before each other, facing the opposite side.

"Good. Very Good. You guys decided to disrespect the rules of the sea by plotting against other pirates. I declare you guilty of treason. Your Punishment is death! Silently stop your barrier and let me kill you all with your hands. Treat that as a mercy from me. Your ship and your crew will survive with your sacrifice."

The Pirate King was also amplifying his voice using Qi. His voice was heard in every ship. Even Long Chen was able to listen to his voice.

"It's not about us disrespecting the rules of the sea. It's about freedom. You monopolize the sea as the Pirate King and treat us all as dogs without any respect. When we started, it was decided that all pirates would be equal, but you decided to become the King just because you were stronger and forced us to obey you."

" This is a fight against that tyranny. This is not a fight against other Pirates, but this is a fight against a greedy bastard who pretends to be one of us while not respecting us in the least," One of the Rebel Pirate Chiefs replied.

"My fellow pirates! You are standing behind the Pirate King. Think again. Do you want to support a tyrant, or will you fight with us for a free sea and an equal relationship? We can only achieve that by killing the Pirate King! Support us against this tyranny," Another Rebel Pirate Chief let out in a firm tone.

Chapter 499 - 499: Hiding

"We don't betray our own! If you had a problem, you could've gone to talk to Little Elder to solve the grievance, but plotting against another Pirate is wrong. You went overboard! I will stand behind the Pirate King against you!"

"Being a pirate and scheming against another Pirate is the biggest crime you could commit! This crime itself is worthy of death as punishment. Even if you had a valid reason, it doesn't matter anymore since the path that you chose is wrong!"

"We stand with the Pirate King! Your decision to scheme behind our back was wrong!"

"We can never support the one that betrayed our most sacred rule!"

One after another, all the Pirate Chiefs that were behind the Pirate King berated the rebels. They showed their support for the pirate king.

Pirate Chief Biming also voiced a similar tone.

"You guys just don't understand! You have the mentality of living without freedom, but we can't live like that! Even if we die for our cause, we will be happy, but we won't die without killing the Pirate King. We will face you all if we have to! The day will end with either the Pirate King's death or our death! If you all want to jump in between, then we won't go easy on you either."

The Rebels continued their stern tone.

The Rebel ships fired the first attack, which was blocked by the barrier of the Pirate King's ship.

"Destroy them!" the Pirate King commanded his man.

Both sides started attacking each other. All the attacks were blocked by the barriers of the other side.

They all knew that it was going to be a long fight, which was more about whose barrier was able to handle more attacks, and whose attacks were powerful enough to break the barriers of the other ships. As long as the barriers were intact, the ships were safe.

Long Chen couldn't help but yawn as he saw this boring format of battle. He was the one that preferred frontal assault and killing the enemy with his own

hands, but the formation attack and defense battle were what bored him utmost.

Long Chen watched the battle for another hour before he got tired of watching this boring fight.

He walked back and sat on the chair, waiting for a conclusion.

Half a day passed away as these exchanges continued. It was when the first ship was destroyed. It belonged to the Rebel side. Now they only had 19 rebels remaining.

"Hey, I just thought about something. Biming, come here," Long Chen let out as he remembered something.

Biming walked back to Long Chen.

"Didn't you claim that the Pirate King could destroy our ship in one hit if he is offended or if he found out that I'm from the Ghost Temple? Doesn't that mean that his ship's attack should be strong enough to blow the other ship's barrier in one hit? Why does his attack seem to be only as powerful as our attacks then? He should've obliterated the ships. Did you exaggerate to me?" Long Chen asked the Pirate Chief Biming.

"No, the Pirate King's ship is special. He once helped the Little Elder with something. Little Elder returned the favor by carving a formation in his ship. The Formation is capable of releasing a powerful attack that can break the enemy ship's barrier in an instant," Pirate Chief Biming replied.

He kept glancing back and forth between the battle and Long Chen.

"So, he can break their barriers in an instant. Why isn't he using that then? He can end the war in an instant," Long Chen asked the Pirate Chief.

"That's because the formation is special. It can only be used a limited number of times. I don't know how many times it can be used, but the Pirate King has only used it once before. I think that after he uses it a few times, the formation will be destroyed and he won't be able to use it. Little Elder also told him that she wouldn't make this formation for him again," Pirate Chief Biming answered Long Chen.

"So that's how it is. He wants to save that for an absolute emergency. That's not a bad plan," Long Chen muttered.

"Whatever, it doesn't seem like he's going to lose. A few ships on our side will be destroyed as well," Long Chen muttered as he sat on the chair, watching everything.

The battle continued for over half a day. Almost half the ships were destroyed already.

While 12 ships from the Rebel side were destroyed, ten ships from the Pirate King side were destroyed as well.

The Rebel side now had only seven ships remaining while the Pirate King's side had twice the number. They had 13 ships remaining, excluding the giant ship of Pirate King.

Pirate Chief Biming's ship had also suffered a lot of damage. Long Chen could see some cracks developing over the barrier surrounding their ship.

"That's it. Move the ship behind another ship. Your ship will be destroyed if you stay at the front," Long Chen commanded the Pirate Chief as he saw their barrier weakening.

"I can't do that. My whole reputation will be destroyed if I hide behind another!" Pirate Chief Biming refuted Long Chen.

"I don't care about your reputation. Do as I say! If you stay here, your ship is as good as gone. You're taking most of the attacks. You need to move back, and that's an order. I don't care what people think of you! I'm not going to repeat my words again!" Long Chen told Pirate Chief Biming again.

The Pirate Chief looked around as he hesitated. He looked at his barrier and then at the enemies. Long Chen could see the unwillingness to hide behind another on Pirate Chief Biming's face, but Long Chen didn't care.

What mattered to him was the safety of this ship; otherwise, he would have to repeat everything again and force another ship chief, which might go wrong depending on the situation.

The Pirate Chief breathed deeply before he looked towards his men.

"Alright. I'll do it. Men, take the ship behind Pirate Chief Hestin's ship!" Pirate Chief Biming commanded again.

Pirate Chief Hestin's ship was the closest to their ship, and he decided to take his ship behind hestin's ship.

The Ship of Pirate Chief Biming started moving back subtly. Although it didn't attract the attention of many people, Pirate Chief Hestin noticed it.

He started frowning as he saw them moving behind his ship.

"What the heck are you doing! Why are you hiding behind my ship! Have you sold all your dignity?!" Pirate Chief Hestin amplified his voice and screamed as loud as he could. His scream attracted the attention of many.

Even the Pirate King looked back to see what was happening. He also started frowning at this behavior. He didn't say anything, though, and continued to place all his focus on the front.

"Our barrier is at the edge of breaking. Let me give it some time to repair it. I will let you place your ship behind mine then," Pirate Chief Biming told Pirate Chief Hestin, trying to calm him down.

"Hmph! I'll see you later," Pirate Chief Hestin snorted before he placed his focus back on the Battle.

Since the Ship of Pirate Chief Biming was behind the Ship of Pirate Chief Hestin, it was protected from most of the attacks, but it continued attacking the enemy.

The battle continued for another day before the battle was over. Everything happened according to expectations. The rebels were destroyed, and not a single one of them was left alive.

Now that the war was over, the Pirate king finally placed his attention on the ship of Pirate Chief Biming.

Chapter 500 - 500: Exposed

The Rebel Ships were destroyed, and their ships had already been swallowed by the Chaotic Sea, never to be found again.

The Pirate King turned his ship back to face it towards the Ship of Pirate Chief Biming that was still behind the Ship of Pirate Chief Hestin.

"Biming! What the heck were you doing? You really abandoned your post and hid behind another? If you are so scared of death, then you don't need to be a Pirate Chief! Let me decide on your punishment!" The Pirate King let out in a fierce tone.

Pirate Chief Biming looked towards Long Chen as if he was blaming Long Chen for what happened.

"Pirate King, As I said, my barrier was too weak. It would have been broken in a single attack if I had stayed at the front, and I wouldn't have been able to continue fighting. That's why I moved back so that I could continue the fight. I didn't run away! I just utilized the opportunity to kill the rebels with the best of my abilities!" Pirate Chief Biming gave an excuse.

The Pirate King started laughing in frustration as he heard Pirate Chief Biming's reply.

"Do you really think that it is a good excuse? Let me ask others then!" he let out.

"The Pirate Chiefs that believe that Pirate Chief Biming did nothing wrong can voice their support! If even two pirate chiefs come in his support, I won't punish him. What do you all say?" Pirate King declared.

"He is just a coward who is scared of death! He was ready to throw away all self-respect of pirates to save his own skin! He deserves the punishment!"

"He did wrong!"

"He needs to be punished! Our other brave pirate chiefs died for our glory while he hid behind someone else! Punish Him!"

There were seven Pirate Chiefs left excluding Pirate Chief Biming, and all of them voiced their opinions against Pirate Chief Biming. Not a single one of them supported him.

Long Chen was standing in the back frowning. He hadn't expected that they would go so far even after Biming fought with them against the rebellion.

'This seems to be getting out of hand. Why are pirates so unreasonable,' Long Chen thought as he looked around.

"It's over," Pirate Chief Biming let out as he dropped down to his knees.

The other pirates on the ships had also given up. It seemed like they had accepted the outcome.

'Stay ready. You might want to jump ships after it is destroyed,' Xun reminded Long Chen.

"Sigh, it's the same work all over again," Long Chen muttered as he shook his head.

"The other ships won't be able to take you to the Ghost Island. You would have to tell them the directions along the way," Pirate Chief Biming suddenly said as he saw Long Chen looking around, seemingly guessing his intention.

"Why?" Long Chen asked.

"They don't know where it is specifically. Only I and the Pirate King know about the specific location of Ghost Island. You said that you kept us alive because you didn't want to bother telling them directions every second of the journey, but that's what you will have to do," The Pirate Chief said, shaking his head.

"So it's either I save you or take control of the Pirate King's ship if I want to make the journey comfortable?" Long Chen muttered as he fell in deep thought.

Long Chen was still in thought when the Pirate King declared something.

"The Punishment is decided! Your ship will be destroyed for breaking the code of the Pirates!"

Long Chen heard the announcement and sighed.

"Looks like I'll have to choose the third option. I wouldn't be able to travel in peace and comfort anymore. What a bother," Long Chen muttered, shaking his head.

The other ships started attacking the ship of Pirate Chief Biming, further weakening his already weakened barrier.

Long Chen caught the collar of Pirate Chief Biming and pulled him towards the edge of the ship.

"Don't move too much. I'm going to help you escape through water," Long Chen muttered as he got ready.

He was standing on the backside of the ship. All the ships that were attacking were on the front side.

Long Chen jumped out of the ship and carried Biming with him into the water.

Both of them were swallowed by water, but Long Chen started swimming forward.

He brought out his Spirit Sword and held it with one hand while holding onto Pirate Chief Biming with another hand.

The Spirit Sword started flying forward inside the water and carried Long Chen with it.

"His barrier is about to be broken; why isn't he begging for forgiveness? Something seems to be wrong," Pirate Chief Hestin muttered as he watched Biming's ship being bombarded with attacks.

"Pirate Chief Biming! Aren't you going to say anything in your defense?" Pirate Chief Hestin asked again as he faced the Ship of Pirate Chief Biming, but there was no response.

"Something is really wrong!" his feeling was getting stronger. He could see that something was not right.

The Pirate Chief amplified his voice and started talking, expressing his doubts to the Pirate King.

"Pirate King! There is something wrong. There is no way Biming would stay so silent after what happened. He isn't even attacking back, nor is he asking for forgiveness. I believe that he has probably escaped from the ship, leaving it behind."

The Pirate King heard the theory and couldn't help but agree. The thing was definitely something that was attracting his attention as well.

The Pirate King commanded everyone to stop attacking.

"Biming! Are you there? Reply to me this instant!" Pirate King let out loud, but he didn't get a response.

"He is either dead or escaped. That bastard is a waste in the name of us, brave pirates!" The Pirate King snorted as he understood the situation.

"The people that are still left on the ship of Biming! I realize that your captain has escaped! Lower your barrier, and you won't be destroyed. We only want to punish Biming! Lower the barrier, and you can survive, and one of you will even be made the Chief of Biming's ship!" Pirate King declared.

The Pirate King's words seemed to have worked. The barrier of the ship was lowered.

The other Pirate Chiefs also lowered the barriers of their ships and started walking in the air to get to Biming's ship.

The Pirate King also stepped out of his ship, but he didn't lower his barrier. He moved to the ship of Biming as well.

As they stepped over the ship, they saw the Pirates and servants standing in the line.

The Pirate King used his Spiritual Sense to find Biming on the ship.

"He is indeed, not here. Which one of you can tell me what happened here?" The Pirate King looked at the men.

One of the men stepped forward and started explaining. He was Biming's second in command. His name was Dreka.

"It all happened because of the Ghost Temple disciple!" Dreka claimed.

"Ghost Temple?" Pirate King let out as he clenched his fist. His aura turned fierce suddenly, which gave the servants the feeling of suffocation.

"Tell me everything!" He let out in a gritty tone.

Dreka started explaining how their ship was infiltrated and how they were forced to carry Long Chen to the Ghost Temple.

He also talked about how Biming was forced by Long Chen to hide his ship behind Hestin's ship.

Everything that had happened was conveyed to the Pirate King.

"They jumped onto the water from there," Dreka let out as he pointed towards the back.

"Huh, so he's taking Biming to Ghost Island. Did he think he can leave alive after coming here and forcing a pirate?"